

Kings to Convicts

A family history of

The Briens of Parramatta

Neville Brien

This document is published for private family distribution only.
Copyright law renders this document unsuitable for sale.
All reproduction rights are fully reserved.

History gives a nation its bearing on what it is and how its people are affected by what has happened in the past.

Its kings and queens, its wars - with victories and defeats - these all mold a nation's culture into the way it views itself in the present.

In the same way, a family history presents how a family has survived and come to terms with the great social and cultural experiences of the ages.

Our family story is unique, and gives each member a foundation upon which they can develop an understanding of how we came to be what we are today.

1

For Peter, Emma, Florence, Nina & Lleyton

I am very grateful for all the wonderful help received in the course of this research from many sources - including family and professional historians, archive resources in Australia, UK & Ireland, the Project Groups at Family Tree DNA in particular project administrators Dennis O'Brien and Dennis Wright, Family Historian Hilary Whytock, Sylvia Dibbs of the Catholic Family History Society in London, Sid Hammell for providing the Hickey history, Graham Lum for providing the Hamill history, the libraries of Ireland and County Clare for providing O'Brien family letters & documents, all those who have written academic research papers etc. on subjects relating to our family as well as my relatives (close and distant) who have undergone DNA testing, your contribution has validated and in some cases proven connections in our family tree that otherwise would have remained unresolved. Sir Conor O'Brien 18th Baron Inchiquin deserves special mention for being one of the very few Clan Leaders to participate in a DNA Project and most of all thanks to my wife Ellen for her support and encouragement.

Contents

Introduction *6*
A SHORT HISTORY OF OUR BRIENS OF PARRAMATTA LINE (YDNA – DC310 & FTB68795) 9
HISTORY OF OUR DALCASSIAN (DÁL GCAIS) CLAN 15
DNA evidence *20*
Dalcassian (Dál gCais) culture *22*
Myth & Legend of the Dál gCais *26*
Legend of Lough Raha *27*
Irish pedigree-making. *28*
The Irish Annals *29*
BRIAN BÓRUMA MAC CENNÉTIG (BRIAN BORU) 941-1014 31
Battle of Glen Máma 999 ..... *33*
Brian Boru crowned King of Ireland 1002 ..... *34*
Battle of Clontarf 1014 ..... *34*
Inauguration of Thomond Kings *38*
Magh Adhair *39*
Béal Ború – Brian Boru's Fort *40*
The descendants of Brian Boru 1014-1167 ..... *41*
NORMAN INVASION OF IRELAND 1169 55
Donald Mór O'Brien 1140 - 1194 ..... *59*
Children of King Donald Mór O'Brien *67*
Donough Cairbreach O'Brien 1185 - 1242 ..... *68*
Conor Na Siudáine O'Brien 1210 - 1268 ..... *76*
Battle of Druim Dearg 1260 ..... *81*
King Brian Roe O'Brien c. 1230 - 1277 ..... *82*
Thomond civil war 1277-1317 ..... *86*
Scottish invasion of Ireland 1315-1318 ..... *93*
Battle Lough Rask 1317 ..... *98*
Battle of Dysert O'Dea 1318 ..... *100*
Battle of Dysert O'Dea re-enactment 2018 ..... *104*
Muirchertach Ó Brien 1285 - 1343 ..... *105*
The family of Muirchertach Ó Brien's mother - Orflath MacCarthy *107*
Bubonic Plague (Black Death) impact on Ireland 1347-1352 ..... *109*
GAELIC RESURGENCE PERIOD 1318-1543 111
Thomond Monarchs 1343 - 1455 ..... *118*
Turlogh Don O'Brien King of Thomond 1455 - 1528 ..... *128*
CONOR O'BRIEN THE LAST TO DIE AS KING OF THOMOND 1480 - 1539 139
Sir Donough O'Brien 2nd Earl of Thomond 1503 - 1553 ..... *153*
Conor O'Brien 3rd Earl of Thomond 1534-1580 ..... *158*
Battle of Spancill Hill 1559 ..... *161*
Donough, Teige & Daniel - the sons of Conor O'Brien 3rd Earl of Thomond 1565- 1664 ..... *166*
Battle of Kinsale 24th December 1601 ..... *170*
Carrigaholt Castle *173*
Eleven Years War 1641 - 1652 ..... *177*
Massacre at the Rock of Cashel 15th September 1647 ..... *186*
Teige Roe O'Brien - youngest son of Sir Daniel O'Brien and Mary Honora FitzGerald 1625 - 1700 ..... *194*
Irish Williamite War 1689-1691 ..... *198*
THE BRIENS IN LONDON 1694-1787 205
Donough O'Brien's activism in support of the Jacobite cause *211*
CONVICT DANIEL BRIEN'S TRIAL AND TRANSPORTATION TO AUSTRALIA 1791 231
Convict transportation to Australia *237*
Historic maps, publications and Sydney Gazette 1803 ..... *243*
Convict influence on Australian identity and culture *244*
Daniel Brien's journey to Australia *246*
Daniel Brien's arrival in Sydney 21st August 1791 ..... *248*

DANIEL BRIEN B. 1769 & MARY ANN PARKER B. 1789 253
The children of Daniel Brien and Ann Parker *275*
The Australia of our early Briens 1790-1840 ..... *296*
The Currency Generation *311*
DANIEL BRIEN JR B.1817 & MARY ANN BEST B.1820 313
The children of Daniel Brien Jr and Mary Ann Best *315*
Family Tree of Mary Ann Best *326*
Mary Ann Best's parents - Thomas Best b.1799 & Mary Beckett b.1800 ..... *327*
The Great North Road 1826 - 1836 ..... *328*
Mary Ann Best's grand parents - George Best b.1758 & Martha Chamberlain b.1775 ..... *335*
George Best and the Australian Wool Industry 1820 - 1890 ..... *346*
Mary Ann Best's grand parents - James Beckett b.1759 & Ann Calcut b.1771 ..... *356*
The 2nd Convict Fleet – The Grim Armada 1790 ..... *357*
James Beckett and Ann Calcut's life in Australia *362*
William Smith O'Brien - Australia moves to self government in the 1850s *370*
DANIEL JAMES BRIEN B.1842 & BRIDGET RYAN B.1842 375
The children of Daniel James Brien & Bridget Ryan *379*
Bridget Ryan's father - Michael Ryan Jr *384*
Bridget Ryan's grand parents Michael Ryan Sr & Elizabeth Moody *391*
Battle of Vinegar Hill 1804 ..... *394*
Bridget Ryan's grand parents James Cook and Bridget Kellahan *396*
GEORGE BRIEN B.1870 & MARY JANE FARRELL B.1873 409
George Brien and his wife Mary Jane Farrell *411*
The Children of George Brien and Mary Jane Farrell *415*
Mary Jane Farrell's father William Farrell b.1846 d.1927 ..... *432*
NSW Gold Rush 1851 ..... *435*
Mary Jane Farrell's mother Elizabeth Cornwall b.1849 d.1911 ..... *443*
GEORGE DANIEL BRIEN B.1893 AND SARAH JANE OSBORN HAMMELL (FLOYD) B.1892 445
The ancestors of George Daniel Brien and his wife Sarah Jane Osborn Hammell (Floyd) *447*
The Hunter River New Steamship Navigation Company est. 1852 ..... *464*
Wreck of the steamship 'Maitland' 1898 ..... *470*
William Hart – Australia's first licenced Aviator 1911 ..... *519*
The children of George Daniel Brien and Sarah Jane Osborn Hammell (Floyd) *545*
GEORGE WILLIAM BRIEN B. 1914 & MAISIE BEATRICE HICKEY B. 1914 551
George William Brien b. 1914 and his wife Maisie Beatrice Hickey *553*
Tree showing the descendants of George William Brien and Maisie Beatrice Hickey (2024) *567*
Maisie Hickey's father William (Bill) Joseph Hickey b. 1874 d. 1942 ..... *568*
The Great Strike of 1917 ..... *570*
The HICKEYs of Honeysuckle (by Sid Hammell) *574*
Maisie Hickey's mother Florence Annie Miller b. 1884 d. 1949 ..... *581*
Appendix 1 The O'Briens of Ballynalaken *595*
Appendix 2 The O'Briens of Ballycorrick *598*
Appendix 3 Line of the 5th to 8th Earls' of Thomond *603*
Appendix 4 Sir Donald O'Brien of Dough and the O'Briens of Ennistymon *611*
Appendix 5 Murrough 'the tanist' O'Brien and the annexation of Thomond 1543 ..... *623*
Appendix 6 The descendants of Murrough 'the tanist' – The Barons and Earls of Inchiquin *629*
Appendix 7 The descendants of Murrough 'the tanist' - The Dromoland O'Briens *639*
Appendix 8 The descendants of Murrough 'the tanist' - The Stone Hall O'Briens *654*
Appendix 9 The families of Anabella Burke and Catherine de Burgh *657*
Appendix 10 The family of Lady Catherine FitzGerald wife of the 1st Viscount Clare *663*
Appendix 11 Line of the Viscount Clare in France after 1691 ..... *675*
Appendix 12 DNA relationship between the YFS231286 lines *680*
Appendix 13 Our ancestors who arrived in Australia from overseas *681*
Appendix 14 Old Windsor Road families *682*
References *683*

Introduction

This document compiles information from many sources to provide a family history of our branch of the Irish 'O'Brien' line.

Our family are the descendants of the Dalcassian (Dál gCais) clan which resided along the Shannon river in west Ireland. We can trace our ancestry specifically to Brian Boru a Dalcassian leader who in 1002AD rose to become High King of Ireland.

The Dalcassian territory in west Ireland was known as Munster and after Brian Boru's death in 1014 his descendants maintained control of this region until 1118; after which Munster was divided. For the next 700 or so years our branch of the O'Briens held the area of north Munster known as Thomond which at its peak was approx. 10,500 Sq Km.

Our ancestors were titled Kings of Ireland, Kings of Munster and Kings of Thomond, and from the 1500s when some of our kin were more closely aligned with English monarchs, we were granted titles of Earls, Barons, Viscounts and Knights.

We know a great deal about our O'Brien ancestors in Ireland because as rulers of Thomond, which was essentially a sovereign state, their lives were recorded along with the affairs of state in documents known as the Irish Annals, that in some cases have survived for over a thousand years.

Our traditional O'Brien family motto of "Lamh Laidir In Uachtar" which translates to "The Strong Hand from Above" probably gives us some idea of what was involved in order for our O'Brien ancestors to maintain control over Thomond for centuries. Our forebears led the clans of Thomond and through their prowess repelled invasion after invasion, until finally our proud line succumbed to British coercion and Thomond was annexed.

Our specific O'Brien family line were forced to leave Ireland around 1694, and from that time on our story has evolved in exile from our native Thomond.

It is clear from surviving documents that it was difficult for our forebears to accept the loss of not only their traditional homeland and culture, but also their status. Especially since within three generations of leaving Ireland we find our ancestor Daniel Brien in chains aboard the convict ship Salamander bound for Australia. So, within a short period of time, our family story changed dramatically from one of Kings to one of Convicts.

Whilst our forebears spelt their name O'Brien, O'Bryan or O'Bryen amongst other variations, our branch removed the "O" around 1726, and settled on the spelling "Brien" in the early 1800s.

As well as the surviving documents of Thomond, we are indeed fortunate that some of our distant relatives, including Sir Conor O'Brien the 18th Baron of Inchiquin, have undergone a Y DNA test. Using these DNA results combined with years of extensive genealogical research has allowed us to identify our exact place within the O'Brien family.

Today we are uniquely identified through the Y chromosome DNA marker known as 'DC310' which we know convict Daniel Brien brought with him when he sailed into Sydney Harbour on the 21st August 1791.

Daniel Brien settled at Seven Hills, just north of Parramatta in New South Wales. In 1821 he married Mary Ann Parker and together they had eleven children. This document follows the descendants of Daniel and Mary Ann's 2nd son Daniel Brien Jr who was the progenitor of our branch of the Briens that remained in and around Parramatta for generations.

Along the way our Brien male ancestors married into other convict families and my ancestry includes a total of 11 convicts who arrived in Sydney between 1790 and 1823. Some of these family branches are notable for their contribution to the early NSW and Victorian colonies, predominantly in the areas of exploration and farming; where they were at the forefront of establishing the wool industry that during the 1830s transformed the public service gaol economy into the export power-house that underpinned Australia's standard of living until the 1970s.

The townships of Goulburn, Gunning, Wagga, Wodonga, Wangaratta, Seven Hills, Dural as well as Parramatta are all closely linked with our convict ancestors. If you wander through some of the old cemeteries, particularly St John's at Parramatta, Gunning cemetery, the Pearce family cemetery adjacent to Seven Hills Rd, St Felix cemetery at Bankstown or the Best family cemetery in Wagga, you will see a lot of the convict family names that appear in this document.

The Briens not only married into convict families. Some of our lines derive from free settlers the bulk of which arrived in Australia between 1836 and 1849. Typical examples of these are the Chilvers who crossed the Blue Mountains and settled in Bathurst before the gold rush of 1851 and operated a foot-ware business for generations and, the O'Keeffes who spread out across northern NSW and ran businesses in Grafton, Glen Innes and the Maitland / Morpeth area. This family was closely linked to steam shipping that provided vital transport infrastructure linking Sydney and the Hunter River region, as well as being involved in politics and the law.

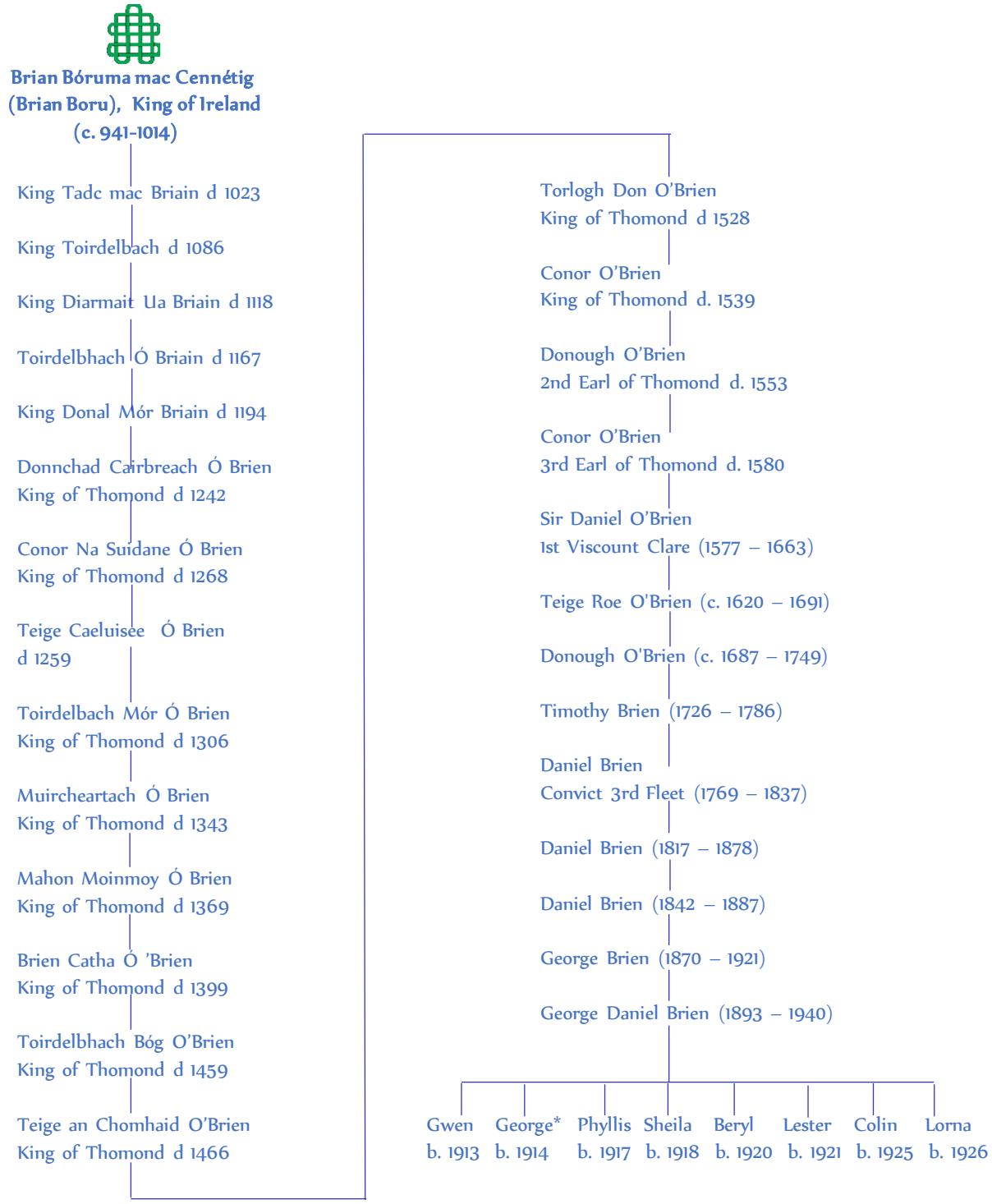
By the mid 1800s our Parramatta Briens had given-up farming and moved southwards from the Seven Hills area settling on the north side of the Parramatta River. They took up running businesses mainly involving hotels and as butchers. By 1900 they had moved to the south side of the Parramatta River and continued to be occupied as butchers and later in wholesale meat distribution; which were the occupations of my father & grand father.

In 1939 my grandparents - George Daniel Brien and his wife Sarah Jane Osborn Hammell - moved to Enid Ave Granville and this document concludes with the family of their eldest son George William Brien who married Maisie Hickey in December 1937. George and Maisie had five children of which I am the youngest.

The Briens of Parramatta have a remarkable family narrative that I have attempted to capture the essence of; so that the knowledge of our ancestors is retained for present and future generations.

Neville Brien
April 2026

This document traces our male line from the time of Brian Boru through to the 20th century; an un-broken pedigree some 30 generations in length. I've likened our pedigree to a river. Springing from our origin story, it flows down-stream with subsequent generations adding their contribution, they in turn are joined by tributary female lines with their ancestry stories adding to the flow.



Our male line from Brian Boru to the 20th century (George Brien* b. 1914 is my father).

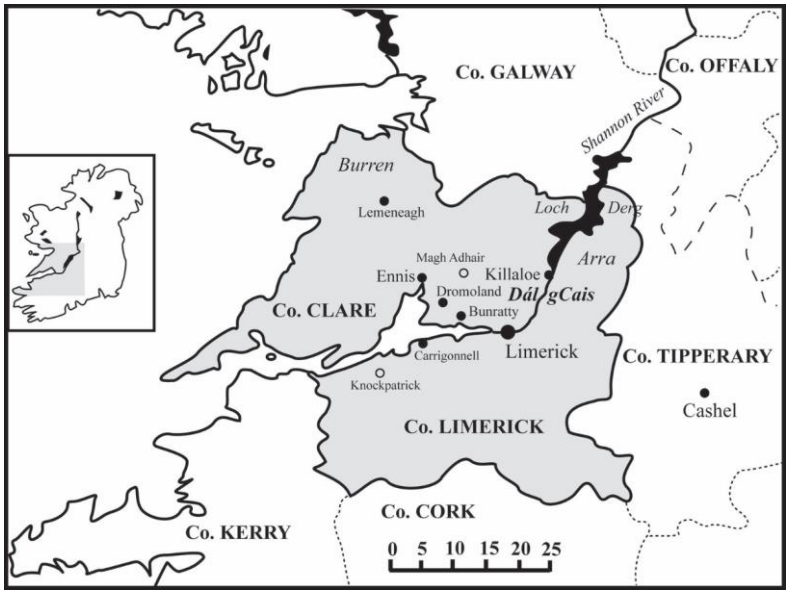
Chapter 1

A short history of our Briens of Parramatta line (YDNA – DC310 & FTB68795)

Our Brien name originates from the Celtic "Dalcassian" (Dál gCais) clan of west Ireland.[2] According to "Annals of the Four Masters" our ancestor was Cormac Cas, son of Oilioll Olum who was King of Munster in the 3rd century. In the 5th century Óengus mac Nad Froích King of Munster was baptised a Christian in the royal seat of Cashel by Saint Patrick. In the 10th century our clan, lead by Brian Boru, rose to the High Kingship of Ireland. From that time on our family have always been prominent in Irish history.

With the rise of Brian Boru our family took on the surname of O'Brien. Brian Boru was an outstanding figure whose remarkable career as High King of Ireland ended on Good Friday 1014AD with his death on the field of battle at Clontarf near Dublin. This battle marks the point the Vikings in Ireland were finally subdued and was celebrated as an Irish national holiday in 2014 to mark 1000 years since the event.

Following Brian Boru's death our family controlled vast areas of Western Ireland. Initially this territory was called Munster, but in 1118 a family dispute saw Munster divided into three Kingdoms. Our ancestors continued to hold the area in the north known as Thomond (pronounced "Toe-Man"), the area to the south became known as Desmond, and a third area in the east became known as Ormond.



Map of Thomond after the breakup of Munster in 1118.

In 1169 people who originated in Scandinavia and France (known as Normans) invaded Ireland and for the next 400 years much of Gaelic Ireland fell or was greatly reduced. The O'Brien Kingdom of Thomond however resisted the Norman invasion of Ireland, defeating them and their English (Anglo) allies in several notable battles.

In 1174 the O'Briens defeated a Norman army at the Battle of Thurles where over 1,700 were killed. [3] After several decades Norman families from outside Thomond started to advance and in 1257 another major battle took place in which Conor O'Brien and his son Tadhg defeated these Normans resulting in great loss of life.

Continuing conflict between the Irish clans over who should be King of all Ireland resulted in disunity and the O'Briens refused to support the O'Neill clan at the battle of Druim Dearg in 1260. The Ó Néills were defeated by the Normans and their leader Brian Ó Néill, King of Cenél Eógain was killed. This led to weakening of the Ó Néill influence within Ireland which in turn benefited the O'Briens both politically and financially.

English King Edward I saw the disunity between the Irish clans, in particular between the O'Briens and Ó Néills, as an opportunity to advance English influence within Ireland. Edward I funded his close friend Thomas de Clare to occupy and settle in Thomond. Thomas de Clare enlisted the support of Brian Ruad a deposed Thomond chief and together in 1276 they defeated our ancestor Toirrdelbach O'Brien, who escaped to Galway. Toirrdelbach O'Brien elicited the help of his cousin William de Burgh, and in 1277 their combined force defeated de Clare and Ruad's army. This left Toirrdelbach O'Brien the undisputed King of Thomond.

In the early 1300s Scottish King Robert the Bruce envisaged a 'Celtic alliance' between Scotland, Wales and Ireland. In 1315 he sent an invasion force led by his brother Edward Bruce to depose the English and Norman aristocracy in Ireland. After winning a series of battles Edward was proclaimed High King of Ireland on the 2nd May 1316. The Scottish invasion created a complex political situation that sparked a series of confrontations within Ireland known as the "Bruce Wars."

In western Ireland the Bruce Wars reached a climax on the 10th May 1318 with the battle of Dysert O'Dea. This was between the armies of our ancestor Muirchertach O'Brien, King of Thomond, and the Norman Lord Richard de Clare. De Clare's army had been marching north through Thomond raiding villages before a coalition of O'Brien, O'Dea and other clans engaged them near Dysert O'Dea castle.

In a military display more akin to Norman tactics, the Irish coalition forces comprehensively defeated de Clare. Richard de Clare was killed during the action and the surviving Normans were pursued driving them out of Thomond. This battle was one of the few resounding Irish victories gained during the Bruce Wars. Muirchertach O'Brien was hailed as following in the footsteps of Brian Boru and is regarded by many today as an early Irish national visionary.

Edward Bruce was killed in Oct 1318 at the battle of Faughart, thus ending Scottish rule in Ireland. The next 200 years saw stability in Thomond and the O'Briens flourished. Under their stewardship Thomond developed into a prosperous sovereign state and was a bastion of Catholic, Gaelic and Celtic culture. Evidence of this still exists with towns, castles, churches, abbeys, houses and other areas of cultural significance built by, or named after, our O'Brien family scattered across western Ireland.

By the 1540s the O'Brien monarchy in Thomond was coming under threat from English King Henry VIII. Henry had concluded that it would be easier to annex Thomond rather than conquer it through direct confrontation. With the assistance of Thomas Cromwell, King Henry VIII implemented the policy of 'surrender and regrant'. This extended royal protection to all of Ireland's elite without regard to ethnicity; in return the whole country was expected to obey the law of the central government; and all Irish lords were to officially surrender their lands to the Crown, and to

receive them back in return by Royal Charter. [4] In practice this involved the Irish Monarchs surrendering their title of "King" in return for English titles of "Earls" and "Barons." In addition, the Catholic Irish Monarchs were required to convert to the Anglican Protestant Church in a process known as "taking the King's shilling." [5]

So, it came to pass that on the 1st July 1543 the then King of Thomond, Murrough O'Brien, surrendered his crown in a ceremony at Greenwich England to Henry VIII. From that day on the main O'Brien lines were titled Earls of Thomond and Barons of Inchiquin, these became Protestant lines of our family. The Earls of Thomond eventually became extinct in 1741 when Henry the 8th Earl of Thomond died leaving no male heir. The Barons of Inchiquin however continue today, still living close to the traditional home of Dromoland in County Clare, represented by the head of the O'Brien clan, Sir Conor Myles O'Brien 18th Baron of Inchiquin.

Around 1604 our ancestor Sir Daniel O'Brien converted back to Catholicism and in 1662 he received the title "1st Viscount Clare" from English King Charles II. Sir Daniel O'Brien died in 1664 and Charles II died in 1685 and was succeeded by his younger brother King James II. In 1688 James II was deposed in the 'Glorious Revolution'. This initiated the 'Williamite War' between the English/Dutch forces of King William of Orange (known as Williamites) and the Irish/French forces led by James II (known as Jacobites; a name is derived from Jacobus, the Latin version of James).

In 1689 French troops landed in Ireland and a combined Irish/French force led by James II fought battles at Boyne River and Aughrim. The Williamites eventually won the war with the Jacobites surrendering Limerick in 1691. Our ancestors were Catholic Jacobites and for their part in the conflict were 'attainted' (lost all title and property) by King William of Orange. Following this our branch of the O'Briens left Ireland.

By 1692 the family of Conor O'Brien the 2nd Viscount Clare had left for France where they gained fame and reputation in battle and rose to the status of "Marshall of France" before that male line died out in 1774. We descend from Conor's younger brother Teige. I have little information on what happened to Teige but his son Donough (a.k.a Dennis) left Ireland as a young child and was taken to London by his mother Mary Honora FitzGerald.

In London Donough and his mother used the spelling 'O'Bryan' which was the common spelling used by all of the senior lines of the family at the time, and were known to be living there in 1694. Mary died in 1700 and is buried in a vault at St Dunstan in the West. In 1718 Donough O'Bryan (now using the anglicised version of his name i.e. Dennis O'Bryan) was indicted for treason after speaking out against King George I. His prosecutor, Anthony Cracherode was the King's solicitor, but in a stoke of luck Anthony Cracherode was detained out of town and the trial did not go ahead. There is evidence to suggest that Dennis O'Bryan posted bail and was released in early 1720.

Dennis O'Bryan is mentioned in letters dating between 1720 and 1726 relating to the activities of Jacobites in London, a number of which were addressed to senior magistrate Charles Delafaye (who was also known as the "anti-Jacobite Spy Master). In one such letter dated April 1726 Dennis is accused of recruiting Irish men to join the "Jacobite Clare Regiment" in France and is also

referred to in the letter as Daniel O'Bryan; the first such evidence of Dennis changing his name to avoid the authorities who were on his tail for his Jacobite activities.

Things got very serious in Dec 1726 when Thomas Townshend who at the time was the under-secretary of state wrote to Charles Delafaye requesting that an arrest warrant be issued for Dennis (Daniel) O'Bryan who was engaged in treasonous activities. It seems that Dennis got wind of this and went to ground; as no further letters, or other mention of him in relation to his Jacobite activities have been found.

We can now infer that Dennis henceforth remained known as Daniel Bryan, for he appears living at Spitalfields in East London and had a number of children to Jane Key starting from 1725. He died in 1749 and is buried at Whitechapel church yard under the name of Daniel O'Brian. His son Timothy Bryan married Catharine Edwards and their son Daniel (our ancestor) was born in 1769. Timothy Bryan died at Spitalfields in 1786 and his wife Catharine died in 1827 also at Spitalfields.

Daniel went to sea at age 13, his registration document shows his name as Daniel Brien. He gained the rank of Purser whilst serving on board the Royal Navy ship Porcupine in 1784.

Daniel Brien was indicted on the 7th February 1787 for stealing articles of clothing worth £7.6.0/- from a boarding house at 22 Clapton Square Hackney, a London suburb, the property of Susannah Walker (a crime he strenuously denied) and was sentenced to death but this was later commuted to seven years transportation to Australia in 1789.

Convict transportation to Australia (then known as New South Wales) began as a result of the outbreak of the War of Independence in 1775 and the American colonists ceasing to accept convicts; that led to overcrowding in English gaols. An alternate solution involving transportation of convicts to Australia was implemented, and in October 1786 Captain Arthur Phillip was appointed the first Governor of New South Wales.

After the necessary preparations had been completed the first convict fleet set sail from Portsmouth, England on the 13th May 1787 consisting of eleven ships arriving in Sydney harbour on the 26th January 1788 carrying around 1400 convicts, soldiers and free people.

The first fleet was then followed by two more fleets. The second (also known as the 'grim armada' due to the high number of deaths incurred during the journey) was a convoy of six ships arriving at Sydney in June 1790.

The third fleet of eleven ships followed with more than 2,000 convicts including our Daniel Brien - arriving in Sydney aboard the ship 'Salamander' on the 21st August 1791.

Daniel's story is curious at this point as there were 160 male convicts on board the Salamander all of which, apart from Daniel, were subsequently shipped off to Norfolk Island. Why Daniel was singled out to remain in Sydney remains a mystery.

After the third fleet convicts were transported to Australia on individual ships. In all, between 1788 and 1868 more than 162,000 convicts were transported to Australia. It is estimated that today more than 20% of Australia's population have a convict in their ancestry.

Our ancestor Daniel alternated his name between Bryan, Brian and Brien, but settled on the latter in the early 1800s. We have documents dating from 1823 and 1828 both containing Daniel's signature where he spells his name "Brien".

In 1807 Daniel purchased thirty acres of land on Vardy's Road at Seven Hills, just north of Parramatta, and over the years expanded his land holdings through further purchases and land grants.

Daniel Brien married Ann Parker, a convict from Bow in Devon England, at St John's Anglican church at Parramatta on the 29th January 1821. However, there is evidence to suggest Daniel and Ann married in a Catholic ceremony shortly before their Anglican marriage at St John's.

About this time Ann changed her name to the more Catholic 'Mary Ann' and she and Daniel Brien had 11 children; Catherine, Jane, Timothy, Mary Ann, Daniel Jr, Elizabeth, Clara, John Robert, Sarah, James, Eleanor.

Daniel Brien died in 1837 and his wife Mary Ann married for a second time to Bill Smith; one of the farm hands that had worked on Daniel Brien's property. Mary Ann died in 1865 after falling into a fire, in suspicious circumstances aged 76. Her husband Bill Smith was charged with her murder but later acquitted.

All of Daniel and Mary Ann's children married into other substantial land holding families, and appear to have done well during their lifetimes as squatters, farmers or business owners. Some remained predominantly within the Parramatta area while others had interests across south eastern NSW and Victoria.

Daniel and Mary Ann's 2nd son, Daniel Brien Jr, was our ancestor and progenitor of a line of Briens that were still residing in Parramatta well into the 1990s. They were a very well-known family in the area having been mainly involved in running hotels or were butchers. Some were involved with Parramatta Council politics.

In 1939 my grandparents - George Daniel Brien and his wife Sarah Jane Osborn Hammell - moved to Enid Ave Granville. Their eldest son was George William Brien, my father.

We are lucky as their lives can to a large extent be re-traced through the newspapers of the time, the houses they lived in were recorded in the yearly editions of the Sands directory and the registry office recorded their significant life events.

As family histories go; ours is very well recorded. Kings to Convicts provides a contiguous narrative of our male Brien line, virtually intact from the time of Brian Boru through to today; a period of over a thousand years.

Chapter 2

History of our Dalcassian (Dál gCais) clan

There was a Neolithic civilization in the County Clare area, their name is unknown, but these Prehistoric people left evidence behind in the form of ancient dolmen: single-chamber megalithic tombs, usually consisting of three or more upright stones.

Clare is one of the richest places in Ireland for these tombs. The most noted one is in the Burren area; it is known as Poulnabrone Dolmen, which translates to "hole of sorrows." The remains of the people inside the tomb have been excavated and dated to about 3800 BC.



Poulnabrone Dolmen is a Neolithic tomb located in The Burren dated to 3,800 BC

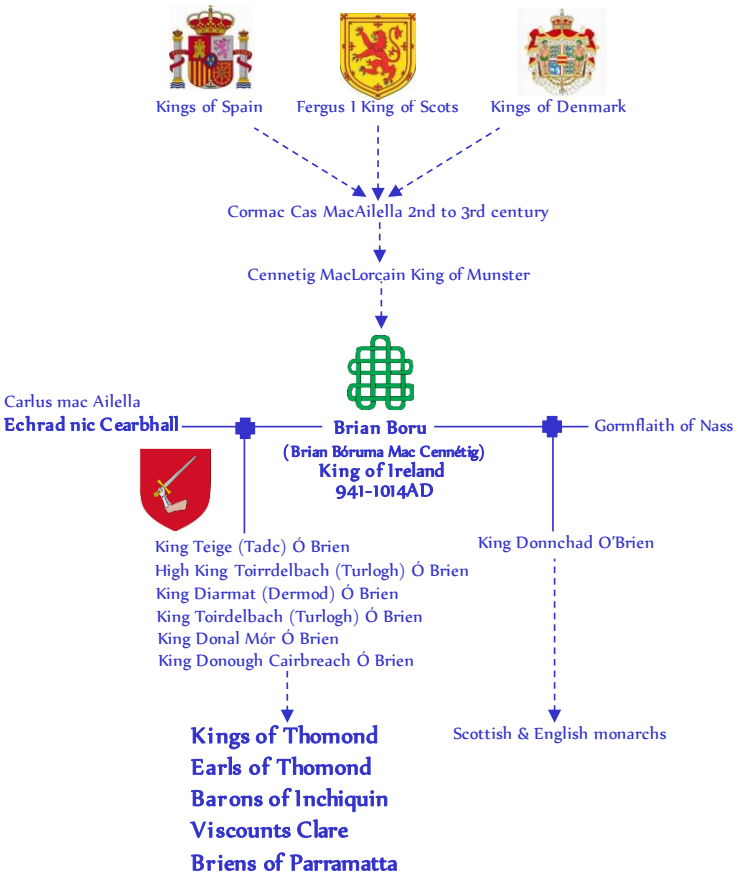
Ptolemy created a map of Ireland in his Geographia with information dating from 100 AD; it is the oldest written account of Ireland that includes geographical features. Within his map, Ptolemy names the Gaelic tribes inhabiting it and the areas in which they resided; in the area of Clare, he identified a tribe known as the Gangani.



Ireland as presented in the Ptolemy Geographia dating from 100 AD.

According to the Annals of Inisfallen which chronicles the medieval history of Ireland, the Dalcassian (Dál gCais) trace their line back to their eponymous ancestor and progenitor Cormac Cas MacAilella, who is said to have lived in the 2nd to 3rd century. They make him a second son of Oilioll Olum (a.k.a Ailiella Aulom) from the Deirgtine, a King of Munster and Leth Mogha.[6]

The Annals of Inisfallen describe the genealogy of Cormac Cas and among his ancestors are the royal lines of Ireland, Spain, Scotland, England and Scandinavia. [7] One of Cormac Cas's ancestors listed is Fergus I King of Scots. This Fergus was also an ancestor of the English Tudor monarchs and was used to support their claim to royal ancestry.[8]



The ancestry and descendants of Brian Boru - according to the Annals of Inisfallen

Historians have found the tribes on the west of Ireland the most difficult to identify with known peoples; however, historians William Camden and Charles O'Conor speculated a possible connection between the Gangani and the Concani, one of the eleven tribes in the confederacy of the Cantabri in the northern part of the Iberian Peninsula.[9]

This is consistent with theories that the Dalcassian tribe originated in Celtic territories in northwestern Europe (perhaps France or Spain) and migrated to Ireland about 1500 years ago.[10]

There is some evidence to suggest that the Dalcassian (Dál gCais) were a branch of the Déisi Muman tribe in Munster. These were significant in scope, consisting of what is today Waterford and its environs. Between the 5th and early 8th century; a branch moved north and settled around the River Shannon. It is from this northerly branch that the Dál gCais are said to find their true ancestors.[11]



Map of Ireland c. 1000AD showing the Major Kingdoms in Ireland and the location of the Dalcassian (Dál gCais) in Thomond.

The first recorded mention of their adoption of the name Dál gCais specifically is in the Annals of Inisfallen for the year 934, which records the death of their King Rebachán mac Mothlai. [12] In 942 there is mention of Cennétig mac Lorcáin King of the Dál gCais joining with other tribes in Munster to fight against the Viking settlement at Limerick.

The Annals describe a fierce battle at Sulcoit where the Danes were defeated. Cennétig's son was Brian Boru who rose to be High King of Ireland in 1002 a position he held until 1014 when he was killed following the Battle of Clontarf.

After Brian Boru's death in 1014, his sons identified themselves as "descendants of Brian" in doing so they left the Dalcassian name behind. In Gaelic naming convention, descendants of Brian translates to Ó Briain or sometimes Ua Briain. We generally use the anglicised version of O'Brien. Other Dalcassian families (or septs) followed a similar convention and developed their own unique family names.

In 1118 Munster was divided and the O'Briens gained control of the northern region known as Thomond. Under the leadership of the O'Brien dynasty Thomond remained a bastion of Gaelic culture throughout the middle ages.

The O'Briens ruled Thomond as an independent prosperous Sovereign State and weathered invasions from the Normans, English and other Irish clans and became one of the most important Gaelic Kingdoms in Ireland. Thomond was never conquered; however, the sovereignty of Thomond was annexed by the Tudors in 1543; ending centuries of Dalcassian independence.[13]

Our O'Brien family is one of the most documented of the ancient families of Europe. We are indeed lucky to have so much of our family history recorded for us in peerage documents and historical texts. What these documents tell us is not only are we descended from Brian Boru the High King of Ireland, but we have branches spreading into the royal houses of Europe, Britain and Scandinavia as well.

These links between our Irish male line and the European royal houses appear somewhat ironic. For hundreds of years our O'Brien ancestors fought to keep the English and the Norman (French and Scandinavian) invaders out of our territory of Thomond. While our O'Brien ancestors largely succeeded, these invaders did remain as settlers in other parts of Ireland and in later generations some of our male O'Brien ancestors inter-married with these very families who were descended from our former foes.

Donough O'Brien, author of 'The history of the O'Briens' wrote in 1949: "Notwithstanding the changes throughout the ages and the downfall of so many ancient families of the country, we find the descendants of Brian Boru still holding their own, while we may search in vain even amongst some of the royal houses in Europe for a line of greater antiquity, or one whose descent is more clearly traced through the historic records of their country."



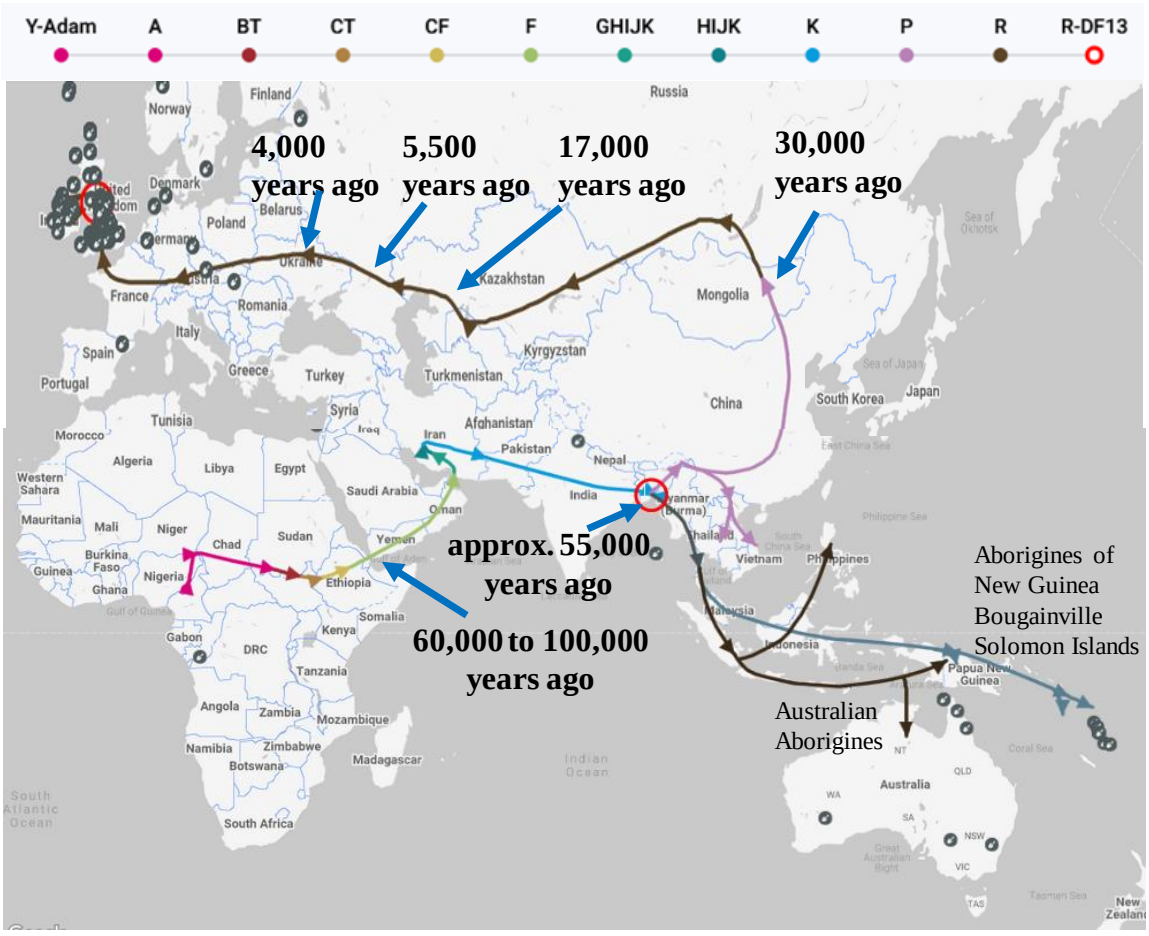
The Tau Cross at Roughan Hill near Corofin, County Clare, Ireland

DNA evidence

DNA evidence was used extensively in researching our Brien family history. The predominant DNA used was the Y chromosome. This is particularly useful as it changes very slowly through the generations, but as it is only possessed by males (being passed from father to son) it limits the research to the male line only.

Nonetheless Y DNA has provided rock-solid evidence for not only our pedigree back to Brian Boru, but through analysis we can also use it to trace the path our ancestors took right from the time they left Africa about 55,000 years ago, up to the point they entered Ireland some 1500 years ago, and onwards to the present day in Australia. [14]

Interestingly from our Australian perspective, the evidence points to our Brien male lineage being part of the same tribal group as the original peoples of New Guinea, Australia, Bougainville and Solomon Islands. [15]



Map 1. Showing the path our ancestors took from Africa to Europe [16]

(The RED circle marks the approx. location our Y DNA split from Australasian peoples)
(The symbols with spades show the location of archeological sites - not all are shown)

The red circle on the 'Africa to Europe' map (previous page) marks the approx. location where our ancestors split (went separate ways) from the original Australasian peoples. By comparing our Y DNA with Y DNA recovered from archeological remains, as well as persons living today, provides an estimation of when this split occurred i.e. somewhere between 53,000 and 36,000 years ago. [17]

This date fits well with the DNA study "A genomic history of Aboriginal Australia" published in 'Nature' 21st September 2016 which states: " We find evidence for a single out of Africa dispersal for all contemporary humans and estimate that Aboriginal Australians and Papuans shared a common ancestor with other Eurasians that lived 60,000 to 100,000 years ago…. suggesting that Sahul (Australia) was first settled between 47,500 and 55,000 years ago". [18]

"Australian Aboriginals and Papuans separated around 25,000 to 45,000 years ago, at the same time that Europeans and Asians split into two groups probably around the Middle East." [19]

After the split the original peoples of New Guinea, Australia, Bougainville and Solomon Islands moved down through SE Asia and made several major sea crossings. The lack of preservation of any ancient boat means we will probably never know what kind of craft was used for the journey, the most likely suggestion has been rafts made of bamboo, a material common in Asia. [20]

Conversely, our male ancestors essentially made a 'left-turn' and followed the purple line on Map 1 through eastern Asia where we remained for thousands of years, before moving westwards and pausing for about 10,000 years in what is known today as Kazakhstan. From there they moved westwards and entered Europe about 4,000 years ago. An amazing journey by any measure!

I've included time estimates on the map obtained from the Gene by Gene 'FTDNA Y DNA Discover' site and indications of roughly where our ancestors were located along this journey. This is an evolving science, and no doubt the dates will be refined as time goes on, but these are the best estimates I can find available today. [21]

There are some very good books on this subject, one I found very informative is "Who we are and how we got here" by David Reich. David is head of DNA research at Harvard University. [22]

As our ancestors approached Ireland, the Y DNA evidence points to a "bottle neck" event occurring prior to 500AD which led to only a small number of males responsible for the various Dalcassian (Dál gCais) family lines which exist today. One of these male lines made the journey from mainland Europe, possibly from France or Spain, and jumped first to the British Isles then to Ireland, arriving around 500AD. [23]

Once in Ireland the Dalcassian ultimately settled along the Shannon River valley and their numbers grew prolifically. We start to pick up their written history from the year 934AD, and we can follow our history chronicled all the way through our time in Ireland, England and arrival in Australia. Even though our family narrative is well documented, our Y DNA remains the one constant that we can always rely upon to verify this journey.

Dalcassian (Dál gCais) culture

Tanistry

Within the traditional Gaelic culture of Ireland, society rested on the pillars of the tribal nobility, bardic poet historians and priests. Different families had different roles to play and, in many cases, this was a hereditary role. However, the nature of the system known as ‘tanistry’ was aristocratic ("rule by the best") in the truest sense, in that if the tribe thought a younger male member of the family was more suitable to succeed to a role than an older sibling, then they could.

In this system the tanist is the office of heir-apparent, or second-in-command, among the (royal) Gaelic patrilineal dynasties to succeed to the chieftainship or to the kingship. The tanist held office for life and was required by custom to be of full age, in possession of all his faculties and without any remarkable blemish of mind or body. At the same time, and subject to the same conditions, a tanist or next heir to the Monarchy was elected, who if the King died or became disqualified, at once became King.

Most usually a former King's son became tanist (sometimes the son of the King simultaneously elected, however perhaps more often a son of a rival branch of the dynasty), but not because the English system of primogeniture was in any way recognized; indeed, the only principle adopted was that the dignity of chieftainship should descend to the eldest and most worthy of the same male-line blood of the clan.[24]

The roles of King and Tanist were elected by members of the ‘Derbfine’ which in Irish meant literally 'true kin'. Defined in the first written tracts in Early Irish law the Derbfine usually comprised all the patrilineal descendants over a four-generation group with a common great-grandfather. All other relatives outside the Derbfine were excluded from the vote. [25]

Note that the Norman and wider European concept of strict primogeniture was not completely adopted until after some of the families joined the peerage of Ireland.

Gavelkind

The Irish Chieftains did not own land their sept occupied, it belonged to all the members in common, which suited people practicing a semi-nomadic way of life. On the death of a chief the lands were put into a common stock and were parceled out amongst the members of the sept by the new head as he thought fit, in concert with other leading figures.

The system could be arbitrary and took little account of women; it was not abolished in western Ireland until the end of the nine years war in 1603, when judgements of the English court finally did away with it. [26]

Titles and Social Roles

The most powerful Dalcassian family of the hereditary Gaelic nobility were the O'Brien (Kings of Thomond), followed by MacNamara (Lords of Clann Cuilean), O'Kennedy (Kings of Ormond), MacMahon (Lords of Corca Baiscinn), O'Grady (Lords of Cinél Dongaile) and O'Dea (Lords of Cinél Fearmaic).

Some of these families later joined the peerage of Ireland after the surrender and regrant to the Tudors during the 16th century. The O'Brien were Earls of Thomond, Viscounts Clare and Barons of Inchiquin which they hold to this day. The O'Grady were Viscounts Guillamore, while the O'Quins became Earls of Dunraven. A branch of the MacMahon family became Marquis de MacMahon d'Eguilly in the Kingdom of France, later raised to Dukes of Magenta under Emperor Napoleon III.

The Clancy sept were the hereditary Brehons of Thomond and held a very powerful position when it came to law in the Kingdom. Even after the end of the Gaelic order, they continued to play a role, providing a High Sheriff of Clare in the form of Boetius Clancy.

Famously participating in the Contention of the Bards in support of the honour of the tribe, the MacBrody sept were the principal poets and historians of the Dalcassian over the course of centuries. The O'Hickey and Neylon sept would serve as hereditary physicians to the Dalcassians of Thomond.[27]

Surnames and prefixes

A male's surname generally takes the form Ó/Ua (meaning "descendant") or Mac ("son") followed by the genitive case of a name, as in Ó Brien ("descendant of Brien") or Mac Lochlainn ("son of Lochlainn"). A son has the same surname as his father. A female's surname replaces Ó with Ní. If a woman marries the Ní is replaced by Uí. Thus, a woman marrying a man named Ó Dónaill will use Uí Dónaill (Mrs. O'Donnell in English).

A first name may be modified by an adjective to distinguish its bearer from other people with the same name. A common example is Mór ("big") and Óg ("young") which are used to distinguish father and son, like English “senior” and "junior.”

Brehon law

Brehon laws were a civil rather than a criminal code, concerned with the payment of compensation for harm done and the regulation of property, inheritance and contracts; the concept of state-administered punishment for crime was foreign to Ireland's early jurists. They show Ireland in the early medieval period to have been a hierarchical society, taking great care to define social status, and the rights and duties that went with it, according to property, and the relationships between lords and their clients and serfs.

Castle halls would become courts of justice. When settling disputes, a MacCurtin or O'Brody (MacBrody) would be heard with respect, while reading out records of which he had hereditary charge, defining the rights of every member of the clan, and a MacClanchy sitting as "Brehon" (i.e. Judge) would deliver judgement from which there was no appeal.

The standing of the Clansman was one of singular and striking independence. The poorest man was of the same blood with his Chief, or Prince or King and had equal right to a share of the clan property. For this he paid no fixed rent as we understand it now. He was bound over however, to contribute a portion, adequate to his status, towards the general expenses, as well as to render military service when required.

This done – and Brehon law was there to regulate it – he was free as air. However, the system must have been at times oppressive as it imposed a check on individual energy and the accumulation of personal property. But it had grown out of the instincts and free will of the clan's people over a hundred generations. [28]

"Na céada san g-cath; na deigeanaca ar."

"The first into battle; the last out of it."

Townlands

In Ireland a townland is generally the smallest administrative division of land. Large townlands maybe further divided into Cantreds.[29] The concept of townlands is based on the Gaelic system of land division, and the first official evidence of the existence of this Gaelic land division system can be found in church records from before the 12th century.

It was in the 1600s that they began to be mapped and defined by the English administration for the purpose of confiscating land and apportioning it to investors or planters (immigrants) from Britain.

The term "townland" in English is derived from the Old English word tun, denoting an enclosure. The term describes the smallest unit of land division in Ireland, based on various forms of Gaelic land division, many of which had their own names.

The term baile, anglicised as "bally", is the most dominant element used in Irish townland names. Today the term "bally" denotes an urban settlement, but its precise meaning in ancient Ireland is unclear, as towns had no place in Gaelic social organisation. The modern Irish term for a townland is baile fearainn (plural: bailte fearainn). The term fearainn means "land, territory, quarter."

The Normans who invaded Ireland from 1169 left no major traces in townland names, but they adapted some of them for their own use, possibly seeing a similarity between the Gaelic baile and the Norman bailey, both of which meant a settlement.

The average area of a townland is about 325 acres (1.32 km2; 132 ha), but they vary widely in size. William Reeves's 1861 survey states that the smallest was Old church Yard, near Carrickmore, in the parish of Termonmagurk, County Tyrone, at 0.625 acres (0.253 ha) and the largest, at 7,555 acres (30.57 km2; 11.805 sq mi), was and is Fionnán (also called Finnaun) in the parish of Killanin, County Galway. [30]

O'Brien's Rental

As Kings of Thomond, the O'Briens were entitled to various privileges; among others, to a fixed rent arising from different sub-denominations of Thomond into which the Cantreds were divided. These rents included money and gold, produce such as wheat and corn as well as cattle.

Gold was mined in Thomond and the townland of Slieveanore, which roughly translates as 'Mountain of Gold', near Feakle in County Clare is thought to have been named in reference to the fact there was once an abundance of the mineral around the region.[31]

A mid 14th century O'Brien rental list names various townlands and the annual rent demanded; these include:

- Tullyderry 1 oz. of gold,
- Carrowmore 1 oz. of gold,
- Drumdigus 20 shillings,
- Inishtire 18 oz. of gold,
- Moyarta 2 marks,
- Doonaha 10 pence etc.



The River Shannon, the area where the Dalcassian (Dál gCais) grew in power.

Myth & Legend of the Dál gCais

Probably the most ancient and powerful guardian spirit of the Dál gCais clan was Aibell. In Irish legend she was the ruler of a sídhe in north Munster. Sídhes were earthen mounds, which in Irish folklore and mythology are believed to be the home of the Aos Sí (the people of the mounds). Aibell's dwelling place was Craig Liath, the grey rock, a hill overlooking the Shannon about two miles north of Killaloe.[32]

The name Aibell may come from Gaelic aoibh, meaning "beauty" or aoibhinn "beautiful" and sometimes Aoibheall (modern Irish spelling), also anglicised as Aeval. Aibell also had a lover called Dubhlainn Ua Artigan and a magic harp of which it was said "whoever heard its music did not live long afterwards."

In another guise Aibell appears as a Banshee. In Irish and Scottish mythology, a Banshee is a "fairy woman" or a "woman of the fairy mound" whose mournful wail heralds an imminent death. Aibell is said to rule 25 other banshees who would always be at her attendance. It is possible that this particular story is the source of the idea that the wailing of numerous banshees signifies the death of a great person. [33]

"Fairy Legends and Traditions of the South of Ireland", by Thomas Crofton Croker, 1825



An ancient deity that would have been familiar to the Dál gCais was "Cailleach." In Gaelic mythology the Cailleach is a creator deity. The word Cailleach means "hag" in modern Gaelic and has been applied to numerous mythological figures in Ireland, Scotland and the Isle of Man. Ceann Caillí or 'Hag's Head' located at the southernmost tip of the Cliffs of Moher in County Clare, is said to be named after her.[34] At Killinaboy church ruins in County Clare there is a 13th century stone carving similar to Cailleach known as "Sheela-na-gig" who it is said represents the land. [35]

There are many Irish legends involving a figure known as "Brigid." She is often associated with water such as a lake, well or spring. Sometimes her myth is incorporated into stories of Saint Brigid and pilgrimages to holy wells.

In two very old legends, sovereignty was bestowed on Irish Kings by a hideous hag who guarded a well; only the rightful King-to-be could bring himself to embrace and kiss her, whereupon she transformed herself into a beautiful woman and gave him to drink of the well. The King-to-be asks, "Who are you?" Since Brigid is the guardian of many wells in Britain and Ireland, we might expect her to answer "Brigid" but instead she replies "My name is Sovereignty." [36] In another similar legend involving a well "Sovereignty" appears only as a beautiful woman.

Legend of Lough Raha

Thomond has its own version of the Loch Ness monster known as the Brioch-sighe or Fairy Badger of Lough Raha near Corofin.

The Brioch-sighe is an amphibious monster in the form of a badger that first appeared in the area in the sixth century. As high as a tall tree, it was his habit to come out of the lough on a daily basis breathing fire from its mouth like a dragon. The lake was hence named Lough Broicsighe and a cave high up on a neighboring hill was named Poll-na-Brocuidh.

The dragon badger killed both cattle and men in the surrounding countryside, and was not subdued by the prayers of six local saints. While a general meeting of the local folk was being held, the monster suddenly appeared, driving droves of cattle before him towards the water. The people and clergy raised a great shout and rang the bells of nearby St. Blathmac church in an attempt to frighten off the monster, but he only became more ferocious.

It was with some luck that Saint Mac Creiche of Ennistymon was passing and he was able to bring the monster to heel. When Mac Creiche arrived, the monster was pursuing and killing people and discharging balls of fire from its mouth. The saint drove the monster into the waters of the lake, which turned red. The monster rose up again, and Mac Creiche took his cowl and threw it over the monster. The cowl grew so it was "like a cowl of smelted iron" that pressed the monster to the lake bed. According to the legend the dragon badger would not arise again until the eve of Judgement Day. [37]



Lough Raha (aka Lough Broicsighe) near Corofin, home of the 'Lough Raha monster'

The ruins of Rath Castle can be seen by the lake and St. Blathmac's church on the nearby hill.

Legend of Lough Inchiquin

Another fable from the same region of County Clare is the Swan Maiden of Lough Inchiquin also near Corofin, who, as the story goes was captured by, but later married a handsome chieftain of the O'Quins with tragic consequences. The story is mermaid-type tale which is found under various guises in the oral literature of many cultures.

Irish pedigree-making.

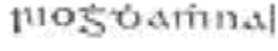
The Irish tradition of preserving a families Genealogy has a long history. In most cases Irish families maintained their pedigree through the diligence of a designated family historian who would provide a written document (often copied many times), sometimes these documents took the form of a Gaelic poem.

One such poem titled "The O'Davorens of Cahermacnaughten" concerning the ancestry of the O'Davoren family of the Burren (in Co. Clare), is of particular interest to our Brien research as it mentions the pedigrees of several O'Brien lines related to us.

The O'Davoren poem was translated to English sometime between 1754 and 1760 for the benefit of the local parish priest; who subsequently placed it in a draw and it was discovered still sitting there after his death.

Included in the document is an interesting perspective on this component of Irish life; I quote from the O'Davoren document below:

"I feel tempted here to say a word on what might be called the philosophy of Irish pedigree-making. Any person who has studied, even in a moderate way, the history of this country cannot fail being struck with the great importance attached by the old Irish, and the Normans who adopted Brehon law, to the proper recording and preservation of their true descent in the male line, the female descent being to all intents and purposes a negligible quantity.

It could hardly be otherwise, for every adult male member of the Pine or ruling family of a clan or sept was  or 'King Stuff' entitled to his proper share of the tribe-land, and was a possible chief.

He never knew the day nor the hour when cut of sword, or thrust of lance, or the coming of the dreaded plague, might not open up a gap for him to power, with all its privileges, by the sudden removal of his seniors.

Hence it was of the highest importance that a man, apart altogether from any feelings of pride of birth, should have incontestable proof of his right of succession. On this account the making and recording of genealogies became one of the most important duties of the tribal historians.

The custom of genealogy making in the end became by long-use so ingrained in the minds of the upper classes that, even when nothing was left to be inherited owing to confiscation, pedigrees continued to be carefully copied and preserved well into the 18th century.

Many examples of these, corrupted sometimes through repeated copying, lie on the shelves of the Royal Irish Academy, Trinity College, and elsewhere."

The Irish Annals

Much of what we know about our Irish ancestors comes from a series of documents known as 'The Irish Annals'. These documents constitute a substantial and unique collection of annual records of ecclesiastical and political events, as written in the Irish monasteries from the mid-6th century to the end of the 16th century.

They are derived from a series of documents produced across Ireland that include the 'Annals of the Four Masters', the 'Annals of Ulster', the 'Chronicon Scotorum' and the 'Annals of Innisfallen'.

The Annals of Ulster reflect the viewpoint of areas of Ireland where they had influence, including Armagh, Fermanagh, Londonderry and the northern part of the province of Connacht. It was authored by Cathal Mac Manus, a 15th-century diocesan priest, and is considered one of the most important, "possibly the single most important", record of events in medieval Ireland. [38]

The Chronicon Scotorum (as with the Annals of Tigernach, Clonmacnoise and Roscrea) reflects political and ecclesiastical events relevant to the monastery and environs of Clonmacnoise in Leinster.

The Annals of Innisfallen reflect the Munster viewpoint. It was written by the monks of Innisfallen Abbey, on Innisfallen Island on Lough Leane, near Killarney in Munster, but made use of sources produced at different centers around Munster, in particular the monastery of Emly in County Tipperary.

In the 1630s, the texts of these annals were compiled into a single, enormous compendium, known as the 'Annals of the Four Masters'.

In the 12th century the saga 'Cogadh Gaedhel re Gallaibh' was produced and includes a bardic poem commemorating the battles of Brian Ború and the Dál gCais dynasty. Although deemed to be biased towards the Dál gCais, historians still recognise it as the "most important of the Irish sagas and historical romances concerning the Vikings". [39]

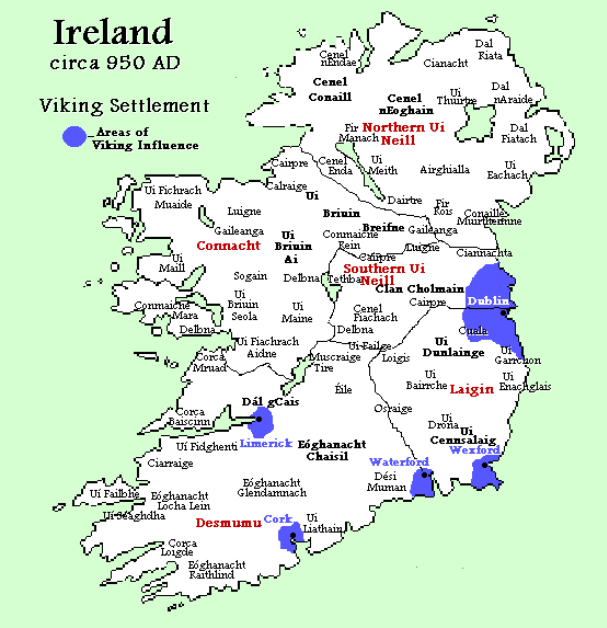
Chapter 3

Brian Bóruma Mac Cennétig (Brian Boru) 941-1014

Brian Boru was no legend although his life deeds were legendary. He was very much a real man, known as "Emperor of the Gael" he was in fact the leader of the Dál gCais and the last great High King of Ireland; perhaps the greatest military leader Ireland has ever known.[40]

Brian Boru was born in 941 at Kincora a town in modern County Clare. He was one of 12 sons of Cennétig mac Lorcáin (d. 951), King of the Dalcassians (Dál gCais in Gaelic) and King of Tuadhmhumhain (anglicised as Thomond) then a sub-Kingdom of Western Ireland known as Munster. His mother was sister to the mother of Conor, the King of Connacht.

Brian lived at a time when Ireland was under constant attack from Norwegian and Danish Vikings. The first Vikings arrived in Ireland around 795AD, initially plundering the gold, chalices, crosses and manuscripts of the monasteries and the corn harvests of the settled communities. Gradually they established Viking settlements around Ireland and engaged in trade, commerce and imposed taxes upon the native Irish.



By the middle of the tenth century Norse and Danish Viking coastal settlements and trading ports had been established at Dublin, Wexford, Waterford, Cork and Limerick.

Brian's brother, Mahon, had become King of Munster in 951, upon the death of their father, Cennétig. Together they fought against the invading "Vikingmen," who had imposed taxes in Munster. This struggle eventually led to the murder of Mahon in 975 by a group of Viking raiders and Brian avenged his brother's death by killing the Viking King of Limerick, King Ímar.

From this point onwards, Brian Boru held Munster as his own, including the pivotal trade-centre of Limerick. He marched into Connacht and Leinster and met Máel Sechnaill II in 997 in a royal meeting near Clonfert in Galway. The two Kings made a truce, by which Brian was granted rule over the southern half of Ireland, while Máel Sechnaill retained the northern half and high kingship. In honour of this arrangement, Máel Sechnaill handed over to Brian the hostages he had taken from Dublin and Leinster; and in 998, Brian handed over to Máel Sechnaill the hostages of Connacht. In the same year, Brian and Máel Sechnaill began co-operating against the Vikings of Dublin for the first time. [41]

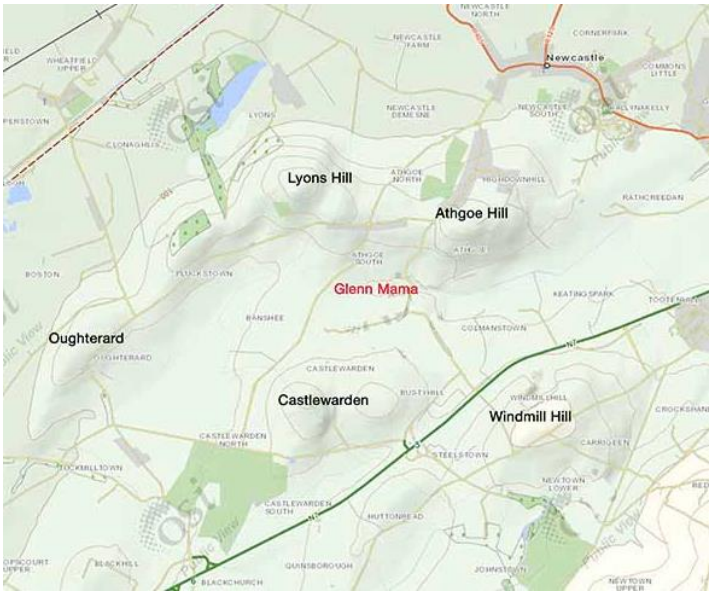
Battle of Glen Máma 999

Late in 999, the Leinstermen led by the King of Leinster Máel Mórda (a.k.a Máelmórda mac Murchada), historically hostile to domination by either the Uí Néills or the King of Munster, allied themselves with the Viking King of Dublin, Sitric Silkenbeard and revolted against Brian Boru.

The Annals of the Four Masters records that Brian Boru and Máel Sechnaill united their forces, and according to the Annals of Ulster, they met the Leinster-Viking army at Glen Máma, near Lyons Hill in Ardclough, County Kildare on "Thursday, 30th December 999." [42]

In what became known as the 'Battle of Glen Máma' the two armies met between Windmill Hill and Blackchurch, the location of an ancient stronghold of the Kings of Leinster. The battle took place in a narrow valley, causing a rout of Máel Mórda's army in at least three directions. They were pursued, and the main body of the army was slaughtered when they rallied at several fording points along the River Liffey. The main commanders were either killed or captured.

The Four Masters describe how the combined armies of Brian Boru and Máel Sechnaill defeated the Leinster-Viking army in a "crushing defeat." [43] During the battle Máel Mórda the King of Leinster was captured, the dictionary of English history says the battle effectively "quelled" the "desperate revolt" of Leinster and Dublin. Most importantly, the defeat left the road to Dublin "free and unimpeded for the victorious legions of Brian Boru and Máel Sechnaill." [44]



Glen Máma battle site 30th December 999

The battle resulted in the occupation of Dublin by Brian's Munster forces, and the submission of Máel Mórda and King Sitric Silkenbeard of Dublin to Brian Boru. The solution did not prove permanent, however, and eventually resulted in the second Leinster revolt against Brian Boru and the Battle of Clontarf in 1014. [45]

Brian Boru crowned King of Ireland 1002

In 1002 Brian demanded of his comrade Máel Sechnaill that he recognise him as King of Ireland. Máel agreed, partially because many of his own people viewed Brian Boru as a hero who had restored Ireland to greatness after the Viking invasions.

Brian was installed as High King of Ireland ending the rule of the UíNéill's, who had been rulers for over 600 years. Brian earned his name 'Brian of the Tributes' (Brian Boru) by collecting tributes from the minor rulers of Ireland and used the monies raised to restore monasteries and libraries that had been destroyed during the Viking invasions.

Replica Viking ship



Battle of Clontarf 1014

In 1013, Máel Mórda the King of Leinster went into revolt after inter-marriage alliances with Brian had broken down and attacked the Kingdom of Máel Sechnaill of Meath who in turn summoned King Brian's help.

Brian responded in early 1014 by setting off towards Dublin with 4,900 troops made up 2,000 Munster men, 1,400 Dalcassians (also Munster men), and 1,500 Connacht clansmen. Opposing them were Máel Mórda's army of 4,000 Leinster men allied to 3,000 Viking warriors from Dublin, the Orkneys and the Isle of Man led by Sitric Silkenbeard the Viking King of Dublin (who was also Brian Boru's son in law). They would meet in what is known today as the 'Battle of Clontarf' on Good Friday, 23rd April 1014. [46]

Although only a small segment of the battle was fought close to the seafront at Clontarf, a suburb of Dublin, the historic encounter on Good Friday 1014 entered the annals as the 'Battle of Clontarf', largely due to the considerable number of Vikings, some 2,000 of whom had by sunrise on the morning of April 23rd, landed in longboats at Clontarf.

As the two opposing armies faced one another that day, the Vikings and the Leinster men were lined across the sloping plains bounded by the sea and the River Tolka, while King Brian's army occupied the rising ground near Tomar's Wood in Phibsboro.

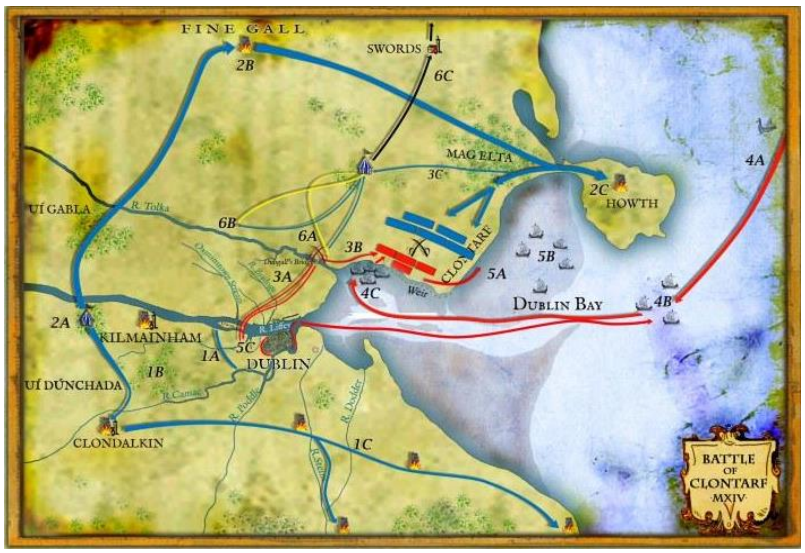
The most ferocious part of the battle was fought at ‘the Battle of the Fishing Weir’, located on todays Richmond Road just north of Dublin. Historic accounts of the battle also refer to the ‘savage encounters’ fought on the ‘Bloody Fields of Marino’ and what is today Phibsboro and Cross Guns.



Fresco at the Dublin City Hall titled “Before the Battle of Clontarf”

The result of the bloodiest day in ancient Ireland was a rout for King Brian, although some 4,000 of his troops lay dead on the battlefield. In contrast some 6,000 Leinster men and Vikings were slaughtered including virtually every Viking leader. King Brian’s army drove the fleeing Vikings back towards the sea at Clontarf, an account of which is descriptively told in a translation from the Gaelic manuscript by J.H. Todd in ‘The Wars of the Gaedhil with the Gaill’, (London, 1867).

“It was at the full tide the foreigners came out to fight the battle in the morning, and the tide had come to the same place again at the end of the day when the foreigners were defeated; and the tide had carried away their ships from them, so they had not at last any place to fly to, but into the sea; after the mail-coated foreigners had all been killed by the Dál gCais ….and the foreigners were drowned in great numbers by the sea, and they lay in heaps and in hundreds.”



Battle of Clontarf April 23rd 1014

Brian Boru’s army in blue and Vikings in red.

A French historical account written at that time tells us that: "The victory was won over the strangers and the Leinster people by the force of war, superior exertion and indomitable bravery."

Although Brian had won the greatest victory of his long career, he did not live long to enjoy it. As he knelt praying in his tent near Cross Guns, the Isle of Man Viking Leader, Brodir, who was hiding in the adjacent woods, ran into his tent slaying the 84-year-old Brian with his axe. Brodir was later captured and slaughtered by 'Wolf the Quarrelsome' younger brother of King Brian.

The Battle of Clontarf was the watershed of all the hatred, division and rivalries that had consumed Ireland for centuries. A period of relative peace followed where the Celtic chieftains and the Vikings lived together in a spirit of harmony with the emphasis on greater integration, co-operation and commerce.

After his death in 1014, Brian Boru's remaining sons Teige and Donough were embroiled in conflict. Although they maintained control of Munster, they were unable to assume the Kingship of Ireland which had been taken back by Máel Sechnaill.

Máel Sechnaill died in 1022 and the Dal gCais once again rose up to rule most, if not the whole of Ireland. Brian's sons Teige and Donough shared power over the Dal gCais until Teige was murdered in 1023 most likely on the orders of his brother Donough.





The Battle of Clontarf
Was re-enacted at Dublin in April 2014 as part of the Brian Boru millennium celebrations and attracted 40,000 spectators.

Brian Boru's legacy was not just his political and military leadership. There are reliable accounts of Brian building fortresses, roads and bridges throughout Ireland, and endowing the Church with lands and gifts, and it is likely that he was responsible for major initiatives in the area of taxation and military organisation.

At Tuamgraney in Co Clare a wooden monastery was built before 550, most likely by Saint Cronan. Despite looting by vikings in 886 and 949, the monastery thrived. The current stone church was built by Cormac ua Cillín around 949–964. In 1012, the church was repaired by Brian Boru,

High King of Ireland, whose brother Marcán was Abbot of Tuamgraney at the time. It is the only preserved building with a recorded link to Brian Boru. The building was extended in the 12th century. Ua Cillin also built a round tower on the site, but this no longer exists. [47]

St. Cronan's church, at Tuamgraney.



Perhaps Brian's greatest achievement was the continuation of his line as Kings of Munster and sometimes high-Kings, and his position as ancestor and name-giver of the great O'Brien surname. In a reference he wrote in the Book of Armagh in 1004 Brian Boru describes himself as "Imperator Scottorum" i.e. Emperor of the Irish.[48]

After the death of Brian Boru in 1014, our family took on the name of "O'Brien" and held onto our homeland as Kings of Thomond for the next 500 years.



Red triangles mark inauguration site

Inauguration of Thomond Kings

The ceremony of inauguration took place at Magh Adhair, situated within the Ui-Caisin tribal lands, upon the mound under which the last of the Firbolg chiefs of Clare was buried. On the day of inauguration the heads of the various Dalcassian septs assembled around Magh Adhair; the king-elect, his chief bard, and the head of the Macnamara sept then ascended the mound, the king-elect stood on a stone placed near its centre; his bard then recited certain laws which the chief promised to obey.

The chief of Clancuilein then handed the king-elect a straight white wand, a symbol of authority and an emblem of what his conduct should be, straight and without stain; the king promised to maintain the prestige and the customs of his tribe; and having put aside his sword and other weapons, and holding the wand in his hand he moved round the stone so as to view his territory from all sides, which he promised to protect from invasion; the Marshal (MacNamara) then in a loud voice proclaimed the chiefs surname and declared him to be King of Thomond.

Edmund Spenser states that the tanist was elected to office in the same manner as the chief, but only placed one foot upon the stone and then took the same oath as his captain. It is stated in the " black book of Christ Church, Dublin," that the kings of Ireland were neither ordained nor anointed, but were kings by election and by the right of arms. [49]

From 'The story of an Irish sept : their character & struggle to maintain their lands in Clare' Nottidge Charles McNamara

Inaugurations are believed to have taken place at the site until the mid 16th century. It appears Magh Adhair then became used a place where market fairs were held until around 1845, only stopping due to the decline in population during the Great Famine. [50]

Magh Adhair

Magh Adhair is a former inauguration site and place of archaeological significance located near the village of Quin, County Clare, Ireland.

Traditionally known as the place in which the Kings of Munster and of Thomond were installed, most notably the O'Briens. The site consists of numerous monuments, including a mound, standing stone, fulacht fiadh and a bullaun stone. Magh Adhair is a complex of great importance for Ireland as a site of cultural and historical significance.

According to Voices of the Dawn: "Magh Adhair was the inauguration site for the Dál gCais (Dalcassian) Kings of Thomond, including the illustrious Brian Ború. However, there is no consensus about what the site may have held in prehistoric times. Because the complex structure includes a cairn-like feature, some writers think there may be a kernel of truth to the medieval texts that describe it as the burial place of Adair the Firbolg, a brother of the legendary architect of Dun Aengus in the Aran Islands. The name "Magh Adhair," in fact, may be translated as Adair's Plain. To quote from Voices of the Dawn "Can it be possible that somehow a memory of a first-century warrior's grave so impressed itself upon the predecessors of the Dalcassians that they enshrined its sanctity for the inauguration of their own princes from the 5th to the 16th century?." [51]



1891 sketch of Magh Adhair



Recent photo of the site

At this spot in the year 1311, Dermot, the "tower-like hero" of the O'Briens, was inaugurated as their chieftain. With the other leaders of the clan assembled around him, his bard commemorated the event:

Let us give the title of King,
(Which will be of much fame
To the land which has chosen him)
To the valorous warrior
The son of the fair-formed Donogh
Of the sealed secrets
Generous heir of generous Blood.

Caithréim Thoirdhealbhaigh or Triumphs of Torlough, 14th century.

Béal Ború – Brian Boru's Fort

Brian Boru's fort is located overlooking Lough Derg on the River Shannon, about 1.5 Km north of the village of Killaloe in eastern County Clare.

Beal Boru, as it is more commonly known, stands on a spur of land which commands the point where Lough Derg narrows into the River Shannon. In ancient times cattle designated as tribute for the Dalcassian chiefs were driven across the river at this point.

Over 800 stone implements, including stone axes, hammer stones and perforated stone sinkers for lines and nets, have been found in the immediate neighborhood. Ten stone axes were found within the fort in 1936 so it is quite possible that a Stone Age settlement occupied the site of Beal Boru because of its position on the river, which could be forded at this point or used as a safe harbour by craft.

In 1961 Professor O'Kelly's excavations revealed an early ring fort which had been inhabited, abandoned and later built over. The larger structure was never completed, nor does it appear to have been occupied. The first habitation dated from the eleventh century until, possibly 1116 when Turlough O'Connor destroyed Boroma and Kincora. In 1207 the Normans tried to build a castle here, probably a motte and bailey type, but were driven off by the O'Briens. Geoffrey de Marisco, the Lord Justice, eventually succeeded in building a castle in Killaloe in 1216.

Except for some filling in of the ditch and the planting of trees at the start of the nineteenth century, the fort looks very much as it did during the thirteenth century.



The wall of Brian Boru's fort as it is today

The descendants of Brian Boru 1014-1167

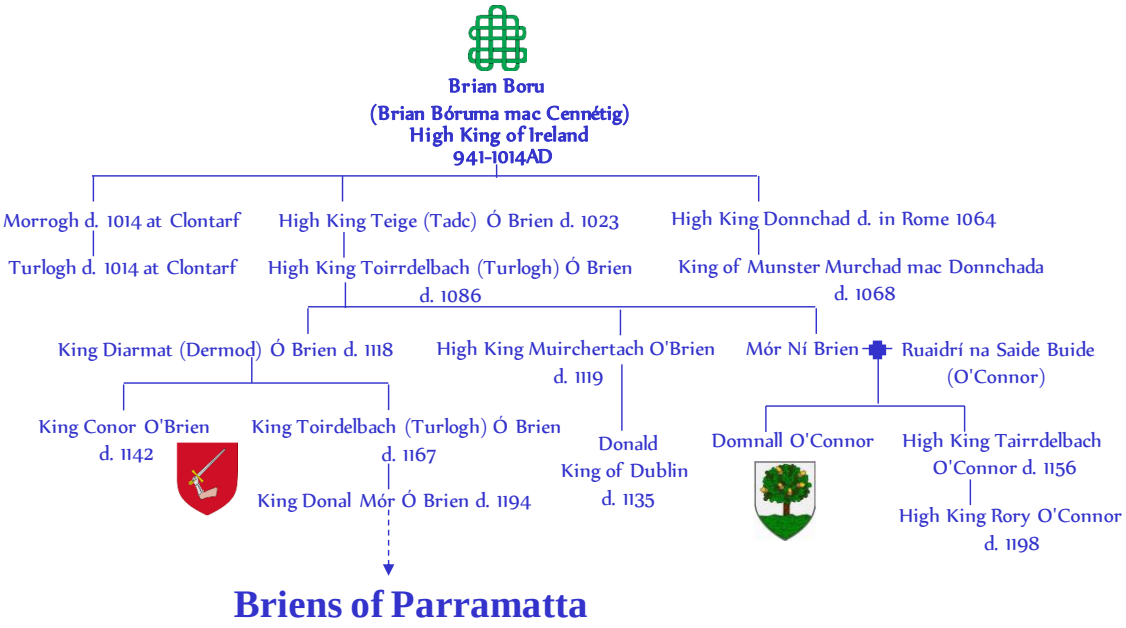


Chart showing some of Brian Boru's descendants

According to several sources, the period from Brian Boru's death in 1014 through to Muirchertach O'Brien who died in 1119 garnered no fewer than five O'Brien 'High Kings of Ireland'. If we count the two O'Connor High Kings, who descend from Brian Boru's great grand daughter Mór Ní Brien, the total comes to seven. [52]

This feat is even more remarkable because prior to Brian Boru, all of the High Kings of Ireland dating back to the 4th century had been from the Uí Néill (Ó Néill) family.



The Lia Fáil (Stone of Destiny) and symbol of Irish sovereignty on the Hill of Tara.

We are descended from Brian Boru's son Teige (aka Tadc). Teige's mother was Echrad nic Cearbhall, daughter of Carlus mac Ailella of Uí Áeda Odba. Almost from the time of Brian Boru's

burial; Teige and his half-brother Donnchad O'Brien became adversaries with sections of the Dál gCais clan aligning themselves to one or the other. This situation resulted in a major battle between the factions in which Teige was victorious; even though Donnchad commanded the greater forces. According to the Historical Memoir of the O'Briens; Teige being the elder, garnered more respect amongst the Dál gCais due to his seniority, and remained as leader. [53]

After the death of Mael Sechnaill in 1022 the Dál gCais clan were keen to seize the opportunity of the resultant power vacuum that now existed in Ireland and move once again to take control. [54] The divided loyalty of the clan was seen by Donnchad as an impediment to him claiming the throne of Ireland but this was solved in 1023 when his elder half-brother Teige O'Brien was assassinated.[55] Donnchad was said to have had a hand in his murder, [56] either way Donnchad O'Brien was able to lead a united Dál gCais and was said to have had a contested reign over Ireland until about 1060 when he was deposed by his nephew and our ancestor Toirdelbach O'Brien. [57]

Donnchad's 2nd marriage was to Driella, sister of Harold the last Saxon King of England. Harold visited Ireland around 1051 after his family had been expelled from Wessex by his brother in law 'Edward the Confessor'. King Donnchad O'Brien provided Harold with nine ships and a body of troops to help in his campaign against Edward in which he was successful in 1052. [58]

In the Royal Irish Academy in Dublin, there is a manuscript known as the 'Stowe Missal' which dates between 1027 and 1033. The book retains its book-shrine, a distinctively Irish form of reliquary case for books associated with an important religious figure; this is one of only five early examples. It is a box with metalwork plaques attached with nails to a wooden core of oak. The metalwork is elaborately decorated, with some animal and human figures, and the top panel reads: "Pray for Donnchad O'Brien, Pray for the King of Ireland." [59]



Book shrine for the Stowe Missal.

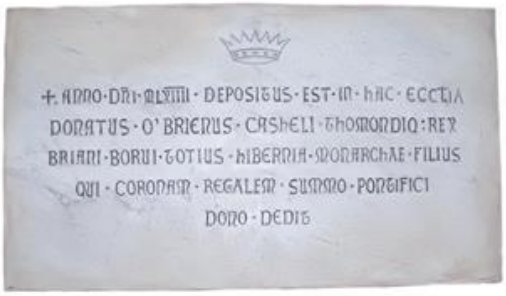
The top panel reads: "Pray for Donnchad O'Brien, Pray for the King of Ireland."

After he was deposed by his nephew Toirdelbach O'Brien around 1060, Donnchad left Ireland and travelled to Rome.[60] Some accounts state that this was to seek absolution from Pope Alexander II. [61] [62] Donnchad took with him to Rome the crown and regalia of Ireland as well as his fathers harp and deposited these with the Pope before entering the monastery of St. Stephen.[63] [64]

Donnchad was recognized as “King of Ireland” by the Pope who also granted Donnchad the title “Prince of Thomond” thereby defining the O’Briens as a true royal house on par with other world monarchies.[65]

A large stone on which is carved an inscription to his memory is set in the wall of the rotunda of St Stephens church in Rome. Donnchad was given a grant of a few acres of land by the Pope bordering on Lake Bolsano where he resided in preparation for entering the monastery.[66]

Donnchad O’Brien died in 1064 and was buried in the Basilica of Santo Stefano al Monte Celio.[67] On a nearby hill a stone monument commemorating Donnchad was erected in 1654 by Murrough O’Brien the 1st Earl of Inchiquin.[68]





The plaque referring to Donnchad mac Briain (L) [69] Basilica Santo Stefano al Monte Celio (R) [70]

Donnchad O’Brien was succeeded by his nephew (and our ancestor) Toirdelbach O’Brien. Toirdelbach (Turlogh) was the son of Teige O’Brien and was King of Munster and High King of Ireland (with some opposition) from around 1060 until his death in 1086.

Toirdelbach employed a divide and rule policy to maintain control and to prevent the emergence of a rival. In the north, he supported the Ulaid to weaken the Cenél nEógain Kings of Ailech (a.k.a Northern Uí Néil). This policy was successful in keeping Leinster pacified, but was less successful in dealing with the Cenél nEógain of the north and the Kings of Connacht [71] [72]

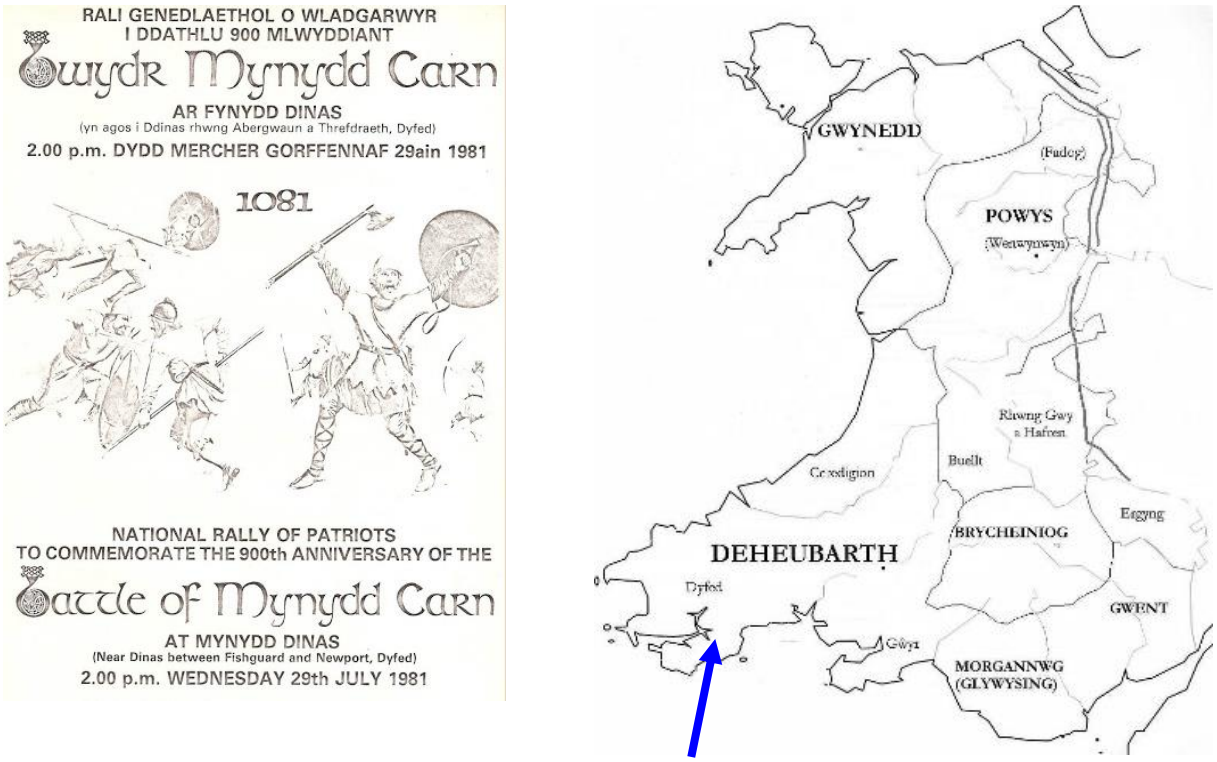
Toirdelbach fell seriously ill in 1085. The Annals of Ulster report that he "died in Kincora (near Killaloe) after great suffering and long repentance, and after receiving the Body of Christ and His Blood, in his seventy-seventh year in 1086.” Rarely given to over-praising southern Kings, this northern annal calls him "King of Ireland.” [73]

Toirdelbach apparently planned to divide his lands between his three sons. Tadc survived him by only weeks, dying of natural causes at Kincora, after which the half-brothers Muirchertach (pronounced “Mur-Ca-Toc” meaning mariner) and our ancestor Diarmait (Dermod) disputed the succession of Munster. Dermod was the loser and after Toirdelbach’s death he was banished from Munster by Muirchertach.

In 1081 Dermod was the commander of the Irish fleet that sailed to Wales in support of Gruffudd ap Cynan and Rhys ap Tewdwr at the battle of Mynydd Carn. This battle was part of a dynastic struggle for control of the Welsh Kingdom of Gwynedd and the southern states collectively known as Deheubarth. The result of the battle had a radical effect on the history of Wales.[74]

Gruffudd ap Cynan was a descendant of the traditional Welsh ruling house of Gwynedd and had previously made an attempt to claim his traditional homeland in 1075 but had been defeated by Trahaearn ap Caradog and forced to take refuge in Ireland.

The force led by Dermod O'Brien landed on the Welsh coast near St David's (in what would become the Paladin of Pembrokeshire). At the church of St David's, Gruffudd met with Rhys ap Tewdwr, King of Deheubarth who had shortly before been driven from power by Caradog ap Gruffydd. The two made a pact and set forth to give battle against the forces of Trahaearn ap Caradog and Caradog ap Gruffydd.[75]



Poster for 900th anniversary of the battle of Mynydd Carn and Wales in 11th century.

In the evening Gruffudd and Rhys came upon the forces led by Trahaearn and Caradog ap Gruffydd, who are reported to have had Norman cross bows in their army. Gruffudd insisted on an immediate attack, overruling Rhys who wished to wait until the following morning.

The battle probably took place southwest of the present-day village of Templeton (see map of Wales) and the result was a complete victory for Gruffudd and Rhys and their Irish supporters, with Trahaearn, Caradog and Meilir ap Rhiwallon all being killed. Dermod O'Brien eventually returned to Ireland and in 1093 he was reconciled with his half-brother Muirchertach and appointed Duke of Waterford.

Meanwhile Muirchertach O'Brien had consolidated and strengthened his position as King of Munster and moved to extend his authority throughout Ireland. Muirchertach went on forays into Meath and Leinster and in 1089 took the Kingship of Leinster.

In 1093, Muirchertach accepted the submission of Domnall mac Flainn Ua Maíl Shechnaill, the Uí Néill King of Tara, and also made peace with his half-brother Dermod O'Brien at the Rock of Cashel.[76] In 1094, Muirchertach fought the Kings of Leth, Cuinn and Gofraid Crobán, King of Dublin and the Isles. He led his army to Dublin and banished Gofraid who fled to Islay, resulting in Muirchertach extending his influence into the islands of the Irish Sea.

In 1101 Muirchertach O'Brien donated the fortress at the rock of Cashel in County Tipperary as a gift to the Catholic Church and moved his seat of power to Limerick, where he built a palace on the site of a Viking 'Thingmote' which dates to c.970. The 'Thing' was the center of a Viking settlement, a building where freemen met and the basic institution of government took place. [77]

The Rock of Cashel had been the traditional seat of the Kings of Munster for several hundred years. According to local mythology, it had originated in the 'Devil's Bit', a mountain 30 km north of Cashel when St. Patrick banished Satan from a cave, resulting in the Rock's landing in Cashel. Cashel is the site of the conversion of Óengus mac Nad Froích the King of Munster by St. Patrick in the 5th century.

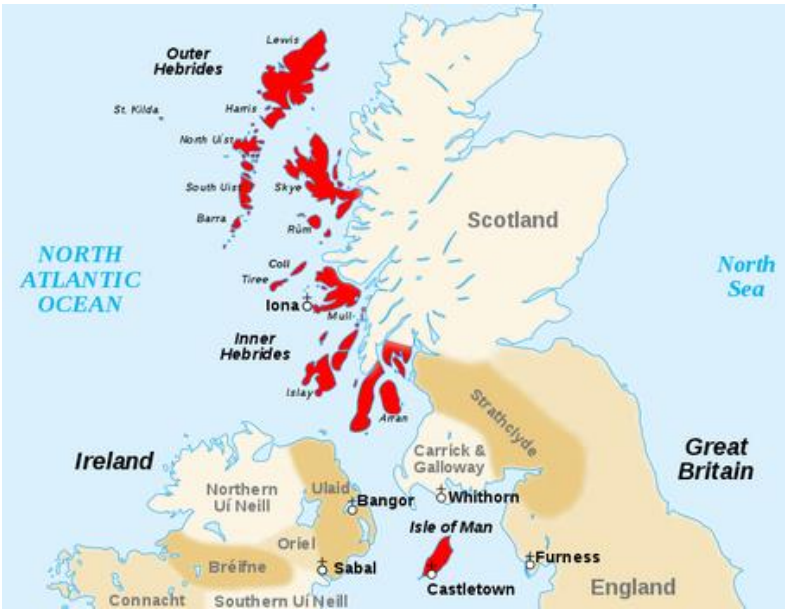


Rock of Cashel in County Tipperary Given to the Catholic Church in 1101

The picturesque complex has a character of its own and has one of the most remarkable collections of Celtic art and medieval architecture to be found anywhere in Europe. Few remnants of the early structures survive; the majority of buildings on the current site date from the 12th and 13th centuries.
The oldest and tallest of the buildings is the well-preserved round tower (28 meters high), dating from c.1100. The tower was built using the dry-stone method. Modern conservationists have filled in some of the tower with mortar for safety reasons.

In 1749 the main cathedral roof was removed by Arthur Price, the Anglican Archbishop of Cashel. Today, what remains of the Rock of Cashel has become a tourist attraction. Price's decision to remove the roof on what had been the jewel among Irish church buildings was criticised before and since. Queen Elizabeth II visited the Rock of Cashel during her 2011 visit to Ireland.[78]

Also, in 1101 Muirchertach O'Brien declared himself High King of Ireland and travelled the Kingdom of the Isles. The Kingdom of the Isles comprised the Scottish Hebrides, the islands of the Firth of Clyde, Iona and the Isle of Man.



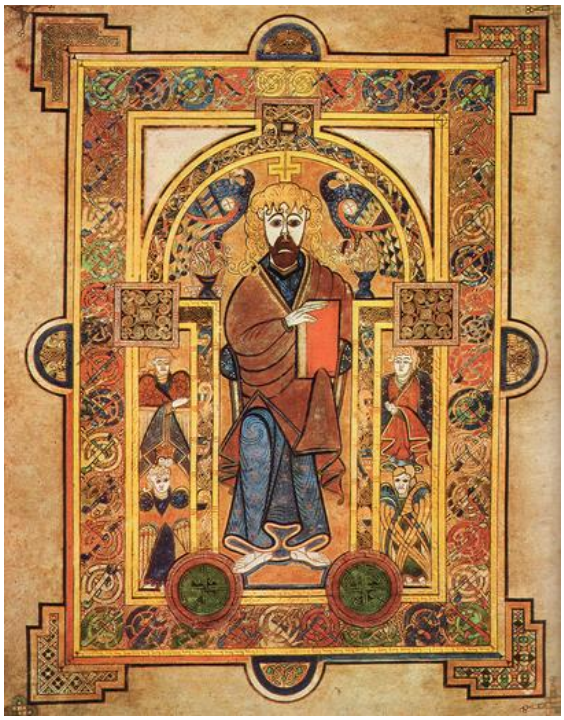
The Kingdom of the Isles (in red)

The presence of the monastery on the island of Iona led to this region being relatively well documented from the mid-6th to the mid-9th centuries. In 849 many relics were removed in the face of Viking incursions, including the Book of Kells which was probably produced by the monks of Iona, and taken to Ireland for safekeeping.

It is not clear the extent to which Muirchertach O'Brien's dominance was now asserted in the Kingdom of the Isles, but growing Irish influence in these seas appears to have brought a rapid and decisive response from Norway.

In 1093 Magnús Óláfsson had secured his position as King of Norway and began leading Viking raids from Scandinavia into Irish seas, intent on taking control of parts of Scotland and Ireland. Historians are undecided as to whether King Magnús intended to create his own Scottish and Irish empire, or simply take control of the territories in Scotland and Ireland that were already under some form of Norse influence.

Magnús arrived in Orkney in 1098, and began negotiating with Scottish and Irish kings of the lands he sought, while also killing or imprisoning any Viking nobles in control of those lands. Interestingly, Magnús adopted the attire of the Scottish locals, essentially a short tunic that was the forerunner of what we now call the kilt. His new tunic exposed his legs (as kilts do), earning him the nickname "Magnús the Bareleg, (or Barefoot)."[79]



A cover of the Book of Kells produced by the monks of The Kingdom of the Isles, probably on the island of Iona, now on display at Trinity Collage Dublin.

The Book of Kells is a masterwork of Western calligraphy and represents the pinnacle of Insular illumination. It is also widely regarded as Ireland's finest national treasure. [80]

In 1102 the Viking army led by Magnús attacked Dublin. In the ensuing battle Magnús appears to have gained the upper hand, although reports of the conflict are unclear. What we do know is that the conflict ended with Magnús Barefoot and Muirchertach O'Brien negotiating a peace agreement, sealed through the marriage of Magnús's son, Sigurðr (a.k.a Sigurd the Crusader) and Muirchertach 's daughter Bjaðmunjo. [81]

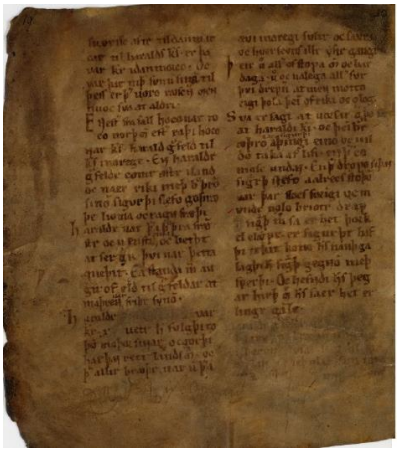
The marriage agreement turned Magnús from an enemy into an ally and is noted in several sources. The Annals of Inisfallen and the Annals of the Four Masters reveal that the marriage took place in 1102.

Muirchertach was skilled in diplomacy, and his negotiation with the dowries of his daughter may have been part of a political game. While he may not have planned to honour his agreements with Magnús, Muirchertach appears to have intended to exert influence through his new son-in-law and took part in a campaign during 1102/03 with Magnús to assert control over Ulster, successfully defeating opposing Irish forces. [82]

Magnús on the other hand seems to have been plotting all along to acquire the Irish throne and Muirchertach may have wanted him out of the way. According to the history of Magnús Barefoot the two agreed that Muirchertach was to bring Magnús and his men, cattle and provisions for their return journey to Norway; as this dragged on past the agreed time, Magnús became suspicious that the Irish planned an attack. [83]

An attack did eventuate on St. Bartholomew's Day 24th August 1103. Norse sources describe a large Irish force emerging from hiding places in an ambush. The Norwegian forces were taken by surprise, and were not in battle order. Magnús attempted to assert control over his disordered army, ordering part of his force to seize secure ground and use archery fire to slow the Irish.

In the melee Magnús was pierced by a spear through both thighs above the knees but he fought on, attempting to get his men back to their level campsite. An axe-wielding Irishman charged him, striking a lethal blow to his neck.



Norwegian chronicle Ágrip, a source for Magnús Barefoot's life

When his men said that he proceeded incautiously in his campaigns, Magnús is reported to have responded "Kings are made for honour, not for long life"; he was the last Norwegian King to fall in battle abroad.

According to the Chronicles of the Kings of Mann and the Isles, Magnús was “buried near the church of St Patrick, in Down.” The grave site is today marked with a runestone monument, erected in 2003 to commemorate the 900th anniversary of his death.

With Magnús's death in 1103, Sigurðr immediately repudiated his marriage with Bjaðmunjo and returned to Norway without her. The loss of Norwegian military support adversely affected Muirchertach’s hold on the Irish High Kingship and he eventually retreated to Munster.

In modern times a "Magnus Barelegs festival" has been held in Ireland and a beer named after his sword, Legbiter. In Norway, Magnús has "been reduced to a sigh" in history books; little remains to commemorate him.[84]

The Grave of Magnús Óláfsson (Magnús Barefoot) King of Norway in County Down



Also, around 1102 another daughter of Muirchertach O'Brien, Aifric, was married to seal an alliance with Arnulf de Montgomery of Pembroke. Arnulf was Lord of the Welsh Kingdom Deheubarth, the same territory Muirchertach's brother Dermod had fought over in 1081. Arnulf had occupied the territory in 1093 and by 1102 he and his brother, Robert de Bellême, were supporting a rebellion led by Robert Curthose, the Duke of Normandy as part of his claim to the throne of England against King Henry I. [85]

The 1102 Bellême-Montgomery rebellion ended bloodlessly with King Henry's forces taking Bridgnorth Castle in Shropshire virtually un-opposed, resulting in the Treaty of Alton in which Arnulf de Montgomery was banished to Ireland and lived out his life at Waterford (probably under the protection of Muirchertach O'Brien).

What specifically motivated Muirchertach to agree to an alliance with Arnulf is unknown. It certainly brought him into close contact with some of Europe's leading families. One possibility is that he was attempting to secure the valuable trade route from south Wales and the Bristol Channel to Waterford. His involvement may well have formed part of a larger plan to not only increase power in Ireland but further exert influence throughout the Irish Sea region.

As for Arnulf, the marital alliance could have been undertaken in an attempt to enhance his own status in society. On the other hand, the marriage may have been a path by which Arnulf or his brother attempted to gain access to Muirchertach's military might. Furthermore, the alliance may have been coordinated as a means to enlist assistance from the overseas forces of Muirchertach's powerful ally, Magnús Óláfsson. Either way the marriage between Arnulf and Aifric O'Brien produced no surviving children.



Bridgnorth Castle in the town of Bridgnorth, Shropshire.

There is a story that in 1110 a relic of the True Cross was presented to Muirchertach O'Brien by Pope Pascal II. This relic was later placed in the Abbey at Holycross, County Tipperary which then became a place of pilgrimage. By 1114 Muirchertach O'Brien had become very ill, to the point where he was described as becoming "a living skeleton."

In response to the King's misfortune, his half-brother Diarmat (Dermod) O'Brien returned and took control of Munster. In 1118 Muirchertach had recovered sufficiently to mount a challenge to Dermod and regain the Kingdom of Munster. Dermod moved to Cork where he died later that year. Muirchertach remained King until his death in 1119.

In 1118 a local dispute in south Munster between Tadhg Mac Carthaigh and Brian Ua Briain led to a battle at Glanmire in Co Cork in which the forces of Brian Ua Briain were defeated. Diarmat (Dermod) O'Brien's sons Conor and Tairrdelbach (Turlough) O'Brien fought alongside Tadhg and were part of his victorious army, Turlough is credited as the "one who killed Brian Ua Briain." [86]

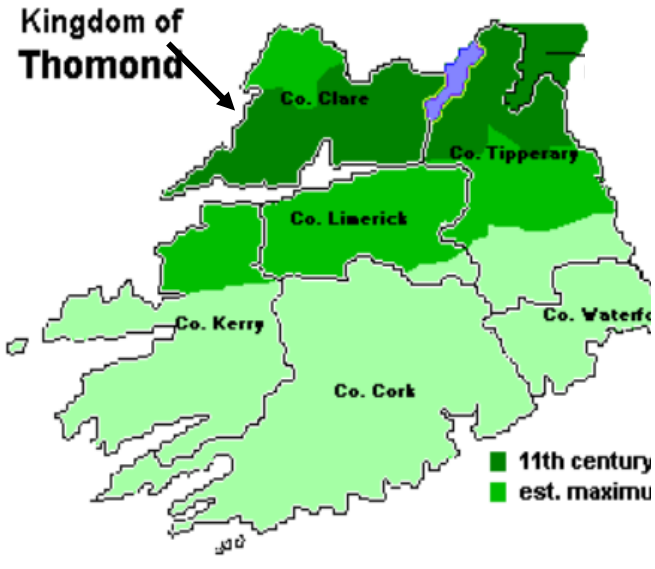
As a result of the battle at Glanmire, Munster was a state now divided into three. Thomond (pronounced "Toe-Man" derived from 'Tuadhmhumhain' the ancient name of north Munster associated geographically with present-day County Clare and County Limerick, as well as parts of County Tipperary around Nenagh and its hinterland), Desmond in the south of Munster and Ormond in the east. Thomond remained an independent entity until Tudor times. The latter two fluctuated in size and stature after the arrival of the Normans in 1169. [87] [88] [89]

The King of Connacht, Tairrdelbach Ua Conchobair (a.k.a Turlough Mór O'Connor d. 1156) now saw an opportunity to further his ambition to become King of all Ireland by weakening his O'Brien competitors in Munster. Turlough moved his troops into Munster with the aim of permanently dividing the territory and by using his larger force was able to impose "an enduring treaty" with Tadgh Mac Carthaigh, formally recognising him as the first King of Desmond, while the sons of our ancestor King Diarmat (Dermod) O'Brien d. 1118 were granted the northern region of Thomond. Another Dalcassian sept the O'Kennedys, were granted the region of Ormond.

With Munster divided, no one was strong enough to challenge Tairrdelbach and he was able to exploit his position and was crowned High King of Ireland in 1119.

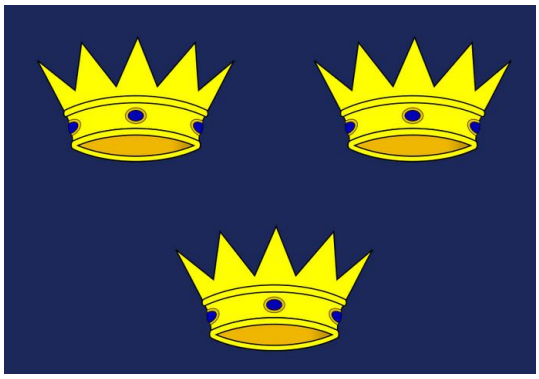


Irish Kingdoms, showing the extent of Munster before 1118.



After 1118 Munster split into the Kingdoms of Thomond in the north (dark green) and Desmond in the south (light green) and Ormond

The three crowns of the flag of Munster



Tairrdelbach was Muirchertach and Diarmat (Dermod)'s nephew, his mother Mór Ní Brien being their sister. His father was Ruaidrí na Saide Buide (Rory O'Connor) King of Connacht.

In 1092, King Ruaidrí was blinded by Flaithbertaigh Ua Flaithbertaigh, an incident which led to Muirchertach O'Brien invading Connacht and he took Tairrdelbach into his household to groom him for the day when he would be king of Connacht, so the two were obviously close.

In 1106, with the support of his uncle, eighteen-year-old Tairrdelbach deprived his older brother Domnall of the kingship of Connacht. Tairrdelbach carefully maintained his alliance with Muirchertach, sending troops to aid the High King against the Ui Ruaric of Bréifne in 1109.

Tairrdelbach constructed the fort of Dún Gaillimhe in 1124. A small settlement grew up around this fort and eventually developed into Galway city. The Cross of Cong, made at the behest of Tairrdelbach was designed to be placed on top of a religious staff or crosier. It was made for the Cathedral church at Tuam and was subsequently moved to Cong Abbey around 1135.



The Cross of Cong, a reliquary and processional cross that according to legend contains a piece of the True Cross.

It was commissioned by King Tairrdelbach Ua Conchobair and made at Roscommon before 1135.

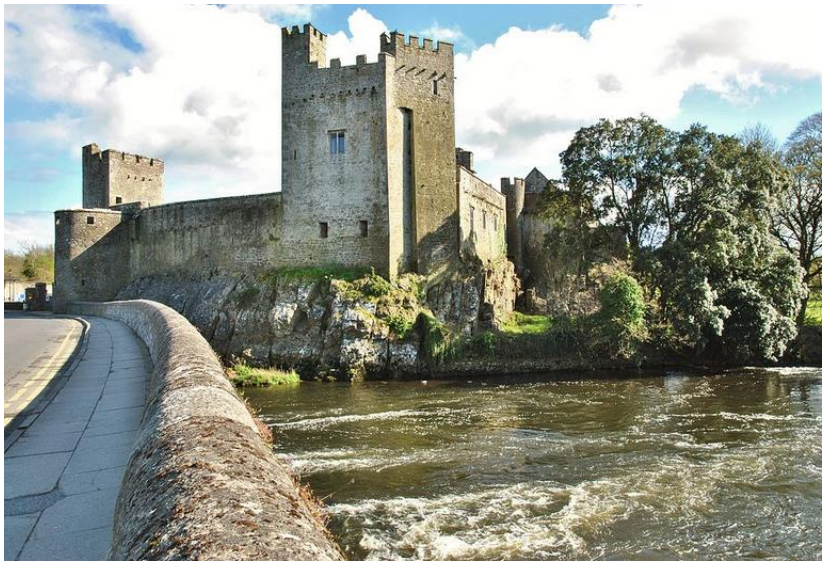
Tairrdelbach died at Dunmore, County Galway in 1156 having been King of Connacht for fifty years including the thirty-seven he spent as High King of Ireland, one of the longest reigns of any European monarch. He was succeeded as High King of Ireland by Muirchertach Mac Lochlainn.

Tairrdelbach dominated Irish politics leading armies and navies all over Ireland and subjugating entire kingdoms. A superb military commander by any standards, his victory at Móin Mór in 1151 was among the most decisive in Irish history. An innovative tyrant, his creation of castles was novel in Ireland as was his apparent wish to introduce male primogeniture. Commercial and political networks connected him with fellow-rulers in Britain, France and Scandinavia. Quite an achievement for what is perceived as the 'timeless' western 'fringe' of twelfth-century Europe, but in reality was a dynamic society ruled as aggressively as those in feudal' Europe. [90]

Meanwhile after Thomond was split from Munster, Dermod O'Brien's eldest son Conor O'Brien became its first King in 1118. King Conor O'Brien commenced building Cahir Castle in County Tipperary in 1142 and he died later that year. Cahir Castle (Irish: Caisleán na Cathrach) is one of the largest castles in Ireland, sited on an island in the river Suir it was completed by Dermod's younger brother Turlough O'Brien.

The castle was sited on an earlier native fortification known as a cathair (stone fort), which gave its name to the place. The core structure retains its impressive keep, tower and much of its original defensive structure. It is one of Ireland's largest and best-preserved castles.
Granted to the powerful Butler family in late 14th century, the castle was enlarged and remodeled between the 15th and 17th centuries. It fell into ruin in the late 18th century and was partially restored in the 1840s. The Great Hall was partly rebuilt in 1840.

During the Irish Confederate Wars in the 1640s, the castle was besieged twice. In 1647 George Mathew, the guardian of the young Lord Cahir, surrendered to Murrough O'Brien, 6th Baron Inchiquin (later 1st Earl of Inchiquin) following his victory at the Battle of Knocknanauss. In 1650 he surrendered again to Oliver Cromwell, during his conquest of Ireland without a shot even being fired. In 1961 the last Lord Cahir died and Cahir Castle reverted to the Irish state.



Conor O'Brien, King of Thomond began construction of Cahir Castle in 1142.

Conor O’Brien died in 1142 and was succeeded as ruler of Thomond by his younger brother Turlough O’Brien (our ancestor).

In 1151 the Thomond army under Turlough’s leadership was defeated by the King of Connacht, Tairrdelbach Ua Conchobair at Móin Mór near Glanmire Co Cork. In what was one of the most decisive battles ever fought in Ireland, according to the Four Masters Tairrdelbach defeated Turlough O’Brien, inflicting 7000 casualties.

The scene is described in the Annals of Tigernach: "Until sand of sea and stars of heaven are numbered, no one will reckon all the sons of the kings and chiefs and great lords of the men of Munster that were killed there, so that of the three battalions of Munster that had come thither, none escaped save only one shattered battalion."

Turlough O’Brien reigned for 25 years before his death in 1167 after which his 3rd son Donald Mór O’Brien succeeded as King of Thomond.

Chapter 4

Norman Invasion of Ireland 1169

The Norman invasion of 1169 was a watershed moment for our O'Brien ancestors. How they responded has become legendary and the effect of these events are still felt in modern Ireland.

The genesis of the invasion of Ireland can be traced to 1152 when the King of Leinster, Dermod Mac Murchada, eloped with Derbforgaill, the wife of Tigernán O'Rourke the King of Breifne. Derbforgaill took with her a substantial dowry including all her furniture and goods; while her husband was on pilgrimage. On his return Tigernán O'Rourke appealed to the High King of Ireland Tairrdelbach Ua Conchobair (Turlogh O'Connor) who forced Dermod Mac Murchada to return Derbforgaill along with her dowry.

In 1156 High King Tairrdelbach died and he was followed by Muirchertach Mac Lochlainn, a strong ally of Dermod. Muirchertach remained High King until his death in 1166 when he was succeeded by Tairrdelbach's son Ruaidrí Ua Conchobair (Rory O'Connor).

With the death of Muirchertach it seems that Dermod Mac Murchada had run out of friends. Unfortunately for Dermod, and the future of Ireland, Tigernán O'Rourke had not forgotten nor forgiven the dalliance of 1152. Still holding a grudge, in 1167 he and Rory O'Connor jointly marched on Leinster deposing Dermod and banishing him from Ireland.

Dermod fled to Wales and from there to England and France seeking the support of King Henry II of England in the recruitment of soldiers to reclaim his kingship.[91] Henry authorised Dermod to seek help from the soldiers and mercenaries in his kingdom. Those who agreed to help included members of the 'Norman aristocracy' such as Richard de Clare, 2nd Earl of Pembroke (later known as "Strongbow") and half-brothers Robert Fitz-Stephen and Maurice FitzGerald as well as Robert's half-nephew Robert de Barry.



This painting from 1864 by James Doyle portrays Henry II authorising Dermod Mac Murchada to seek help from the soldiers and mercenaries in his kingdom.

With his new Norman supporters, Dermod reclaimed Leinster in May 1169, this event has become known as the "Norman invasion of Ireland." The Normans obviously liked what they saw as in the summer of 1170 they expanded their presence in Ireland with two further landings, led by Strongbow.

Dermod Mac Murchada died in early 1171 leaving the leadership of Leinster in the balance. By May that year, Strongbow had assumed control of Leinster as well as seizing the city Kingdoms of Dublin, Waterford, and Wexford. That summer, High King Rory O'Connor led an Irish counter offensive against the Normans, who nevertheless managed to hold most of their conquered territory.

The name 'Norman' is derived from the territory in France called Normandie (or Normandy). This area was granted to our ancestor – Rollo 'the Viking' by Charles 'the simple' King of France in 918. Rollo received the title '1st Duke of Normandie' and encouraged many of his fellow Vikings to move from Norway and join him in this new land. Hence the name Normandie is derived from 'land of the Northmen'.

The following 140 or so years saw the descendants of the original Vikings marry into French, English and European royal families, convert to Catholicism (they became devout Catholics building many churches & abbeys) and expand their territory in France.

In 1066 Rollo's great great great grandson William 'the conqueror' led an army to England and defeated English King Harold at the battle of Hastings. William was crowned King of England and the Normans gradually replaced the old English aristocracy and were granted land and titles.

They dramatically influenced English culture by introducing a mix of French and Scandinavian language and customs. By way of example, old English names like Aethelred, Eadric & Leofric went quickly out of fashion replaced by Norman ones such as William, Robert, Henry, Alice & Matilda.



Chepstow castle in Wales, home of Richard de Clare, 2nd Earl of Pembroke a.k.a "Strongbow"

To defend the frontier border between England and Wales, successive English Kings appointed Norman nobles as barons and built castles as strongholds. These barons were known as "Marcher Lords" so named after the medieval European term of 'march' or 'mark' which described any kind of borderland separating regions where different laws might apply. The term later evolved into the title of 'Marquess' or in French 'Marquis'. [92]

The Marcher Lords eventually became powerful in their own right and increasingly independent of the King, who saw many of them as rebels. One of these rebel Marcher Lords was Richard de Clare the 2nd Earl of Pembroke. Richard de Clare's fortress was Striguil castle (now called Chepstow castle) and was the most southern marcher castle.

Henry II took this opportunity to intervene personally in Irish politics. Motivated more by Strongbow's success in Ireland than anything else, he set off in 1170 at the head of a large army, first into South Wales, forcing the Norman rebels who had held the area since 1165 into submission. He then sailed from Pembroke and landed at Waterford Ireland in October 1171.

Henry later argued that a Papal Bull known as a "Laudabiliter" supposedly issued in 1155 by Pope Adrian IV, the first (and only) English pope, gave him authority to invade Ireland as a "means of curbing ecclesiastical corruption and abuses." Many historians question whether such a document ever existed. No copy has ever been found and Henry II himself made no mention of it until 1175, three years after the 'Synod of Cashel' held in Ireland in 1172, and twenty years after it was supposed to have been written.[93]

The critical factor though appears to have been Henry's concern that the Norman nobles in Wales would acquire independent territories of their own in Ireland, beyond the reach of his authority. Some of the Irish clan leaders appealed to Henry to protect them from the Norman invaders. One of these was our ancestor Donald Mór O'Brien King of Thomond who met King Henry II at Waterford soon after he landed. Strongbow on the other hand offered to submit to Henry only if he was allowed to retain his new possessions.



This painting from 1864 by James Doyle portrays Henry II arriving in Waterford Ireland.

Henry's response was to side with the Normans and initiated a wave of castle-building during his visit in 1171 to protect what he saw as his new 'Norman territories'. The Anglo-Normans were outnumbered by the native Irish, but they had superior military technologies to the Irish, and castles gave them a significant advantage.

In 1172 Strongbow began to push out from his coastal strongholds. Emboldened by the reinforcements that had arrived with Henry, and a steady stream of new colonists that sought land and opportunity in Ireland. Strongbow now had a royal mandate to expand English power and he took around a thousand men into what we now call Offaly, building castles, seizing plunder and targeting anyone who didn't submit to his authority.

Donald Mór O'Brien 1140 - 1194

Donald Mór O'Brien (a.k.a 'Donald the Great') was the third son of King Toirdelbach (Turlough) of Munster (who reigned from 1142 to 1167). Donald Mór O'Brien succeeded as King of Thomond in 1167 and was the man in charge when the Normans invaded in 1169.

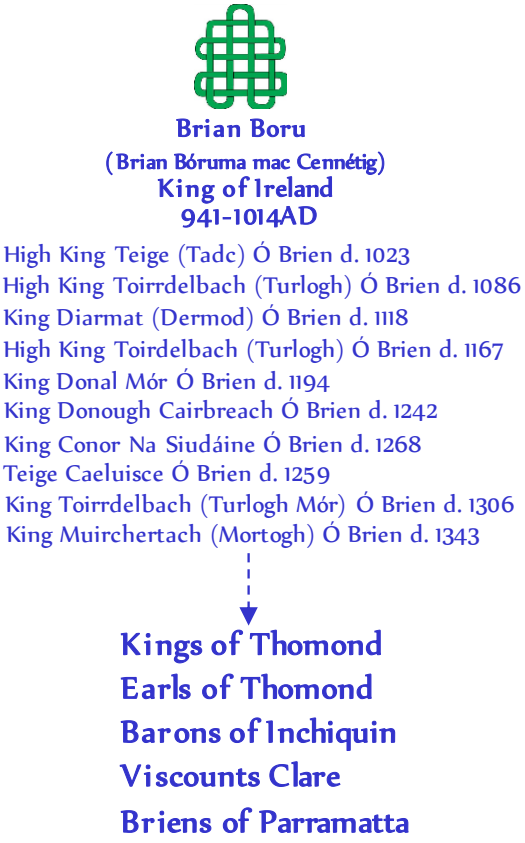


Chart showing our family line from Brian Boru to King Muirchertach Ó Brien d. 1343

In 1173 King Henry II attempted to deprive Donald Mór O'Brien of his Kingdom by granting all of Thomond to one of his knights, Philip de Braose. The following year Strongbow decided to chance his arm and together with Philip de Braose they organised a large-scale campaign to enforce this claim by invading Thomond.

By 1174 Strongbow had amassed an army of around 2000 English, Irish and Scandinavian soldiers and marched towards Cashel in co Tipperary. Several versions of the battle that followed exist, but what we know for certain is that Donald Mór O'Brien had intelligence of their approach and led his army from Limerick to meet them.[94] A fierce engagement took place in October 1174 at Thurles in co Tipperary in which the Normans were routed, suffering their first major defeat in Ireland. The battle left four of their commanders and over 700 of their men dead on the fields of 'Laghtagalla' (Thurles). Some estimates place this number closer to 1700. [95]

Strongbow's force fled in confusion to Waterford. Finding the news of the Thurles defeat had long preceded him, and the Waterford populace had risen up and killed the Constable of the town and some 200 of the garrison; Strongbow was forced to shut himself up, with the remnants of his forces, on the 420 acres 'Little Island', in the River Suir.[96]

The battle of October 1174 has become known as the 'battle of Thurles' and as a result of Strongbow's defeat his planned attack into Thomond was scrapped.[97] Archdeacon Giraldus Cambrensis wrote at that time, that "all Ireland was so heartened by the news of O'Brien's victory that there was a general uprising against the invaders whose castles and strongholds were burned and destroyed, right up to the outskirts of Dublin." [98]

When King Henry II received word that Donald Mór O'Brien had defeated Strongbow he decided to apply a strategy used previously in Scotland. Rather than rule Ireland directly he would set up a native puppet ruler, and through him achieve control and maintain stability in Ireland. This was enacted in the treaty of Windsor of 1175 under which Rory O'Connor was appointed the high King of Ireland but giving homage to Henry. This policy quickly proved unsuccessful, particularly as Rory O'Connor was unable to exert sufficient influence and force in areas such as Thomond.[99]

Donald Mór O'Brien found the arrangement of Rory O'Connor as puppet High King of Ireland completely unacceptable. As soon as he heard of the appointment, he retracted his homage to King Henry II and attacked Kilkenny castle in Ormond, but he was captured by Rory O'Connor's troops in the ensuing battle. O'Connor then replaced O'Brien with his half brother Murrough as King of Thomond. Things were very dynamic during this period and shortly after Donald Mór O'Brien was released, he formed an alliance with Rory O'Connor and re-claimed his position as King the Thomond.

At Knockmoy Abbey in Galway there are a series of interesting frescoes that depict the events of this period.



Frescoes at Knockmoy Abbey Galway (L drawing and R original)

In the drawing of the Frescoes at Knockmoy, the three figures in the top left represent three dead Kings of Ireland. The three figures on the top right are Rory O'Connor (in the middle) flanked by his Falconer (L) and Marshal (R). On the bottom row (L) is a judge pronouncing the death sentence to the man tied up with arrows in his body, he represents Rory O'Connor's half brother Murrough and he is being punished to atone for Rory siding with the English in 1175.[100]

In 1175 the Normans under the command of Raymond de Gros sailed a fleet up the Shannon and attacked Limerick. de Gros's force overpowered those of Donald Mór O'Brien's and captured the town.

In June 1176 Strongbow died in Dublin of a foot infection and de Gros, hearing of Strongbow's death, hurried back to Dublin. Donald Mór O'Brien seized the opportunity of de Gros's departure and in a surprise attack re-took Limerick.

In 1178 Donald Mór O'Brien drove out a rival clan in Limerick the Uí Fidgenti. In 1184, Philip de Braose, Robert Fitz-Stephen and Miles de Cogan, set out to take possession of Limerick, but on approaching the city and encountering Donald Mór's army and turned back in a panic. [101]

In 1185 Prince John of England (the future King John) made his first visit to Ireland, accompanied by 300 knights and a team of administrators. John infamously offended the local Irish rulers by making fun of their unfashionable long beards. Donald Mór O'Brien demolished the army of Prince John and his Norman allies in a battle at the River Suir in County Tipperary. Prince John returned to England later in the year, blaming the viceroy, Hugh de Lacy, for the fiasco. [102]

From about 1101 to 1210 the O'Brien seat of power was in Limerick. In 1168 Donald Mór built what seems to have been a temporary palace on a hill overlooking the Shannon River, which had been the site of a Viking settlement dating from about 970. This had been the Vikings most westerly European stronghold.

In 1172 Donald Mór built a new palace and used the site of the previous palace on the hill to build a Romanesque church known today as St Mary's Cathedral. St Mary's is the oldest, most historic and most beautiful building in the county of Limerick. The great west door is the original main entrance to the temporary royal palace. It is also believed that the stones around this doorway were used by defenders of the city to sharpen their swords and arrows (the marks are still visible today) during the many sieges of Limerick. [103]

The interior to the Cathedral is truly magnificent with thick rustic stone arches and beautiful tracery in the windows. In the 14th century, the 120-foot tower was added. In 1651, Cromwellian forces used the Cathedral as a stable and removed its 13 ft pre-reformation high altar. This was the largest altar of its kind carved from a single limestone block in all of Ireland and the UK. This altar was only reinstated in the 1960s.



St Mary’s Cathedral at Limerick, built by King Donald Mór O’Brien in 1172.



The great west door of St Mary’s Cathedral at Limerick (2018)

In 1180 Donald Mór laid the foundation for Corcomroe Abbey near Ballyvaughan in northern County Clare.

In 1182 Donald Mór O'Brien founded Holycross Abbey located on the banks of the River Suir in Co. Tipperary. It is a restored medieval Cistercian monastery and a fragment relic of the True Cross or 'Holy rood' was placed in the Abbey in the 12th century and this relic drew pilgrims from far and wide. [104]

There are two stories of how a relic of the True Cross came to be at the Abbey. One version is that Pope Pascal II presented the relic to Muirchertach O'Brien High King of Ireland and grandson of Brian Boru in 1110. When the charters affecting the foundation and land grants for the Abbey were drawn up in 1182, Donald Mór O'Brien King of Thomond entrusted the relic to the Lord Abbot.[105]

A second story involves a fragment relic of the True Cross being brought to Ireland by Queen, Isabella of Angoulême, the widow of John I King of England, around 1233 and placed in the "Abbey of Thurles." [106] The town of Thurles is quite close to Holycross Abbey, so it is assumed that the story relates to the Abbey at Holycross.

Around 1400AD the Butlers of Ormond were patrons and many renovations were carried out. A second relic, the Ormond Relic, was later enshrined in the Abbey.



View of Holy Cross Abbey with the River Suir and medieval bridge built 1424 AD.

There is a story written by John Hartry, a monk of Holy Cross about 1640 which describes the founding of the Abbey.

"Two very poor hermits', renouncing the world and the enticements of concupiscence, was not sufficient to draw a veil of darkness over their piety, regular observance, and good repute that spread abroad.

At this time a party of four robbers fell in with one of the two away from his cell, and wishing to put to actual test what they had heard reported by every one about the holy hermits, used threats and rough words to him, saying: Turn out your hoard of money.

You have a wrong notion about this, since I possess nothing of the kind/ Let us see then proofs of some virtues and of the heavenly favours given to you and reported of you among the people, in order that we, too, may be able to bear testimony to them.

Make,' says one of them, that large tree yonder bend down its top so as to touch the earth. The holy hermit begged them to refrain from tempting God without any reason. But they, seized with madness and anger, with an oath call God and the saints to witness that the servant of God should die on the spot, if he did not comply with their demand without further delay. When they had said these words, behold, to their astonishment, that huge, straight tree, bending itself, touched the earth with its top.

The aforesaid four robbers with their eight arms striving to resist the miraculous power of that tree, seizing it and hanging from it, thus powerless to help themselves with their hands, atoned to God there for the wicked deed.

For at that time Donald Mór O'Brien King of Thomond, seated on a fine horse, and accompanied by a great crowd moved by astonishment and wonder at such having examined the strangeness of the miracle ordered the bodies of the robbers be cut down. But the robber's hands clung so tightly that they had to cut off the hands that clung to the tree, to bring the bodies of the robbers to the ground, as an example and warning to the whole world.

King Donald Mór O'Brien, so impressed with the miracle, at once decided to found the monastery of Oghterlamhan or Eight Hands" [107]



Ancient effigy said to be King Donald Mór O'Brien in Holy Cross Abbey [108]

About 5 Km south of Ennis in County Clare is Killone Abbey built by King Donald Mór O'Brien. This was a nunnery situated on the banks of Killone Lake founded in 1190 it was dedicated to Saint John the Baptist.

Killone nunnery first appears in the Annals of Inisfallen when the death of its abbess Slaney, Donald Mór O'Bryan's daughter, was recorded in 1259. Today Killone is a National Monument. To the northeast of the nunnery at the edge of the lake lies St John's (the Baptist) well, which is a holy well and altar.



Killone Abbey on the banks of Killone Lake near Ennis County Clare

County Clare folklore tells how a member of the O'Brien family living in a large house close to Killone Lake noticed supplies of wine in his cellar were being inexplicably depleted. Convinced there was a thief and determined to catch the culprit, one night he stayed up late and discovered the perpetrator was a mermaid who swam upstream to the house from the lake. He shot the creature and wounded her (in other versions a servant scalded her badly with a pot of boiling water). Bleeding profusely and screaming in pain, the mermaid fled back to the lake, shouting a curse:

"As the return of the salmon from the stream,
A return without blood or flesh,
May such be the departure of the O'Briens,
Like ears of wild corn from Killeoin."

The land around Lake Killone was still held by our branch of the O'Briens up until the 1690s.[109]

According to the Annals of Ulster, Donald Mór O'Brien was the last King of Munster when he died in 1194. It is believed that he is buried within Saint Mary's Cathedral, Limerick. An ancient stone coffin lid, purportedly that of King Donald Mór, lies in the Chancel near the high altar.



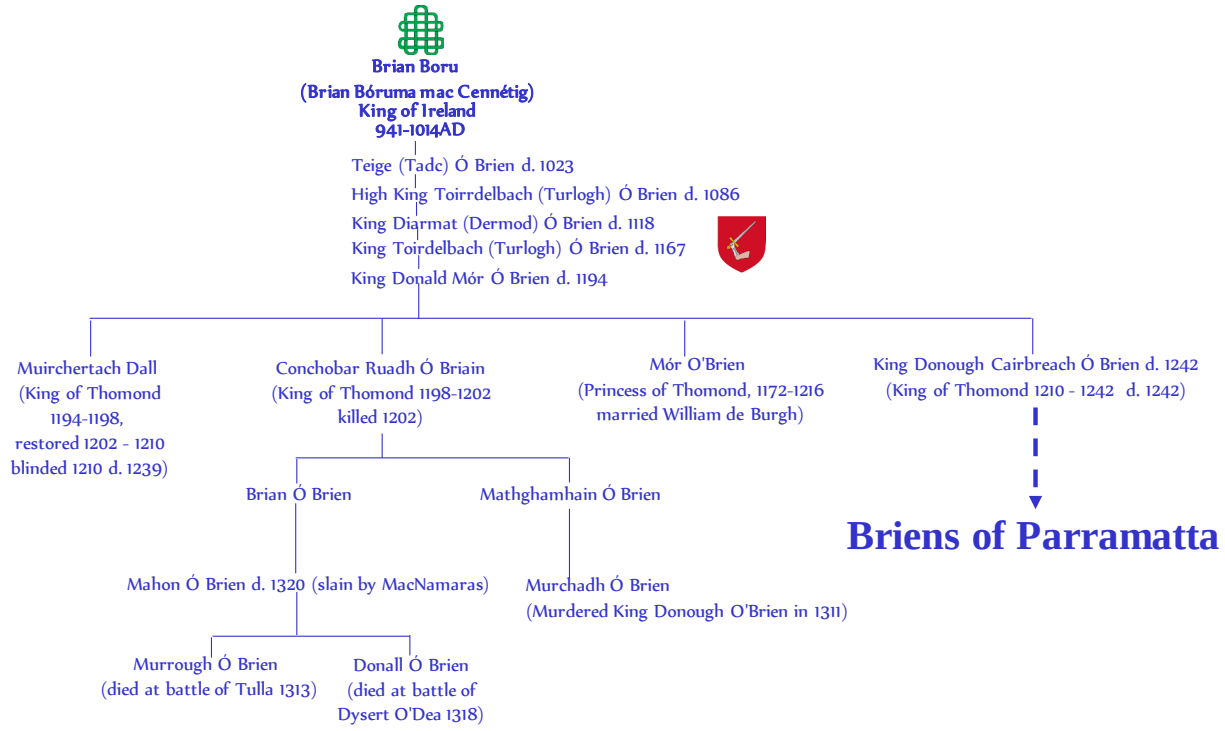
Stone coffin lid, purportedly that of King Donald Mór O'Brien at St Mary's Cathedral, Limerick (2018)

Children of King Donald Mór O'Brien

Donald Mór O'Brien married Orlacan (or curled hair), daughter of Diarmait Mac Murchada King of Lenister [110] and Sadb Ní Faeláin. He left three sons and one daughter.

His eldest son, Muirchertach Dall (a.k.a Murtogh Dall) succeeded him as King of Thomond in 1194, and is said to have been the first to introduce English into Munster in 1177.

Muirchertach Dall was succeeded as King of Thomond by his younger brother Conchobhar Ruadh ÓBriain (Conor O'Brien) in 1198 but he died in 1202 and Muirchertach Dall was crowned King of Thomond for the second time. He in turn was succeeded by our ancestor Donough Cairbreach O'Brien who became King of Thomond in 1210 and reigned until his death in 1242.



Children of King Donald Mór O'Brien d. 1194

Donough Cairbreach O'Brien 1185 - 1242

Donald Mór's third son Donough Cairbreach O'Brien became King of Thomond in 1210 upon the blinding of his brother Muirchertach Dall O'Brien. Donough was so named as he was educated in the district of Cair-Aodhbha near Kerry in Co Limerick.

In the summer of 1210 John I King of England landed at Waterford with a large navy. He had earlier ordered a castle to be built at Limerick, now known as King John's castle, and still stands today on the banks of the Shannon river.

Located on King's Island in the heart of medieval Limerick, King John's Castle was built between 1200-1210. The castle was built on the site of an earlier fortification and its purpose was to defend the bridge crossing the River Shannon and protect the Norman Kingdoms on the southern side of the river, from the Gaelic tribes on the northern side (i.e. the O'Briens).

The five-sided rectangular castle with its high curtain walls is unusual in that there was no keep. The walls of the castle were severely damaged in 1642 in the first of five sieges of the castle in the 17th century. A military barracks was built within the castle walls in 1791 and in 1935 Limerick Corporation removed part of the wall and erected 22 dwellings. These have since been demolished.

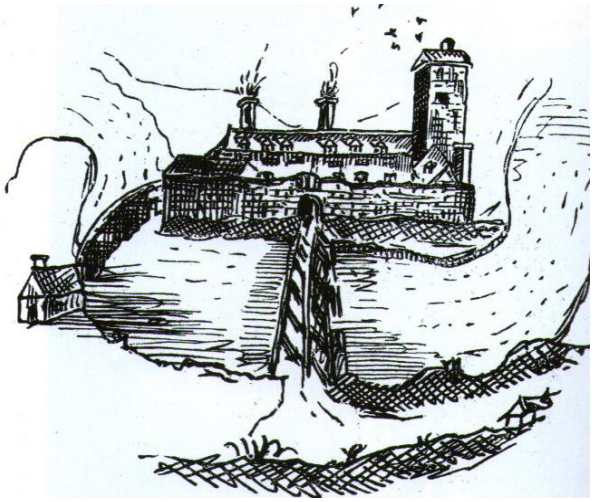


King John's Castle with Thomond bridge crossing the Shannon river at Limerick (2018).

King John at this time however was mainly focused on land division and created a number of new counties and served writs for the introduction of common law. All this helped to stamp John's authority on Ireland, even if he had largely failed to pacify the Irish beyond the border of the Anglo-Norman territories. Importantly for John, Ireland would now become a more productive source of revenue for him.

Throughout this period Donough Cairbreach O'Brien faced an almost constant level of simmering along the borders of Thomond, with the town of Limerick serving as the focal point of many of these conflicts. Norman raids into Limerick eventually took their toll and in 1210 Donough Cairbreach moved his family and administration to Ennis. Donough built a new residence known as 'Clonroad Castle' positioned on an island in the river Fergus.

Initially the structure was a ring fort enclosure, later developing into a stone castle and eventually a Tudor manor. The drawing below dates from 1680 and shows the castle straddling the roadway at the bridge, requiring all traffic crossing the bridge to pass through the castle complex.



Clonroad Castle at Ennis
drawn about 1680

Donough Cairbreach O'Brien eventually allied himself with the Normans and participated in raids against the Mac Carthaigh in the Kingdom of Desmond in 1210 and 1214. This was recognised on the 18th July 1222 by King John I when he signed an act at the Tower of London stating that Donough Cairbreach O'Brien was "confirmed in his Kingdom of Thomond, as against all others of his brothers, who may lay claim to his Kingship." [111] Donough's surrender to King John made him unpopular with his kinsman.[112] One version cites this as the main reason he left Limerick for Ennis.

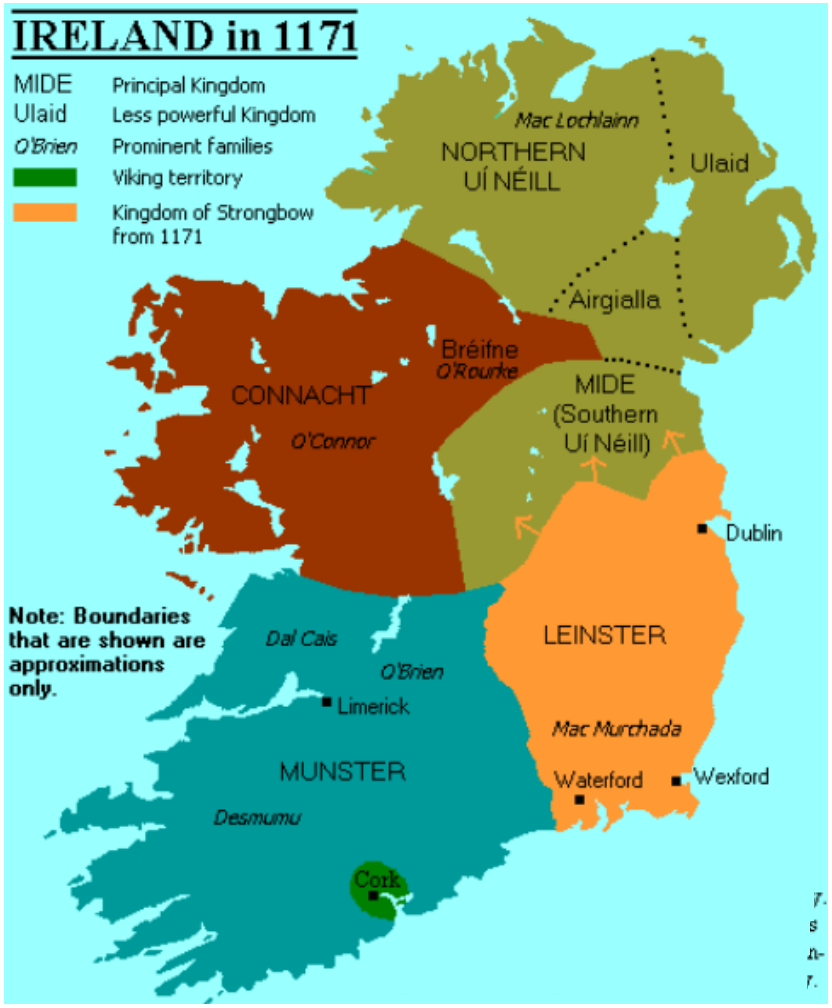
The King John act did however allow Donough Cairbreach's descendants to legitimately call themselves "King of Thomond" and that Donough Cairbreach was the first to style himself as "The O'Brien of Thomond" a term which signifies his Irish rank as the most senior O'Brien, a title which persists in our family to the present day. In a related arrangement, Donough Cairbreach purchased from King John for the "benefit of his heirs forever," the lands and castle of Carrigogunnell in Limerick.[113]

In terms of Irish politics however the English act of 1222 does not seem to have been of long-term benefit to Thomond. Successive English Kings fearing that the Norman Lords would establish a state outside English jurisdiction, attempted to maintain a tight grip over both the Lords and the Irish chieftains. This resulted in confusion over many of the land grants being bestowed to Norman Lords, particularly those in the western parts of Ireland, furthest from English control.

Jockeying for position over these land grants often saw the Norman Lords fighting as much amongst themselves as they did against the Gaelic tribes. It was not until 1235, more than sixty-five years after the arrival of the Normans in Ireland, that the English crown seriously allowed the conquest of western Ireland to take place. [114]

The first of these waves of conquest was the Norman invasion of Thomond in 1235, and this invasion was particularly ferocious. To put this event into context, the 1235 invasion was one of the largest and most spectacular military operations ever undertaken by the Anglo-Normans in Ireland.

Led by Lord Richard de Burgh, barons from virtually every part of the Lordship led forces into Connacht and Thomond as well as Breifne (Counties of Leitrim and Cavan) and Tir Conaill (County Donegal); Irish allies brought boats for the Anglo-Normans to use in the fighting that spilled over onto the islands of Clew Bay.

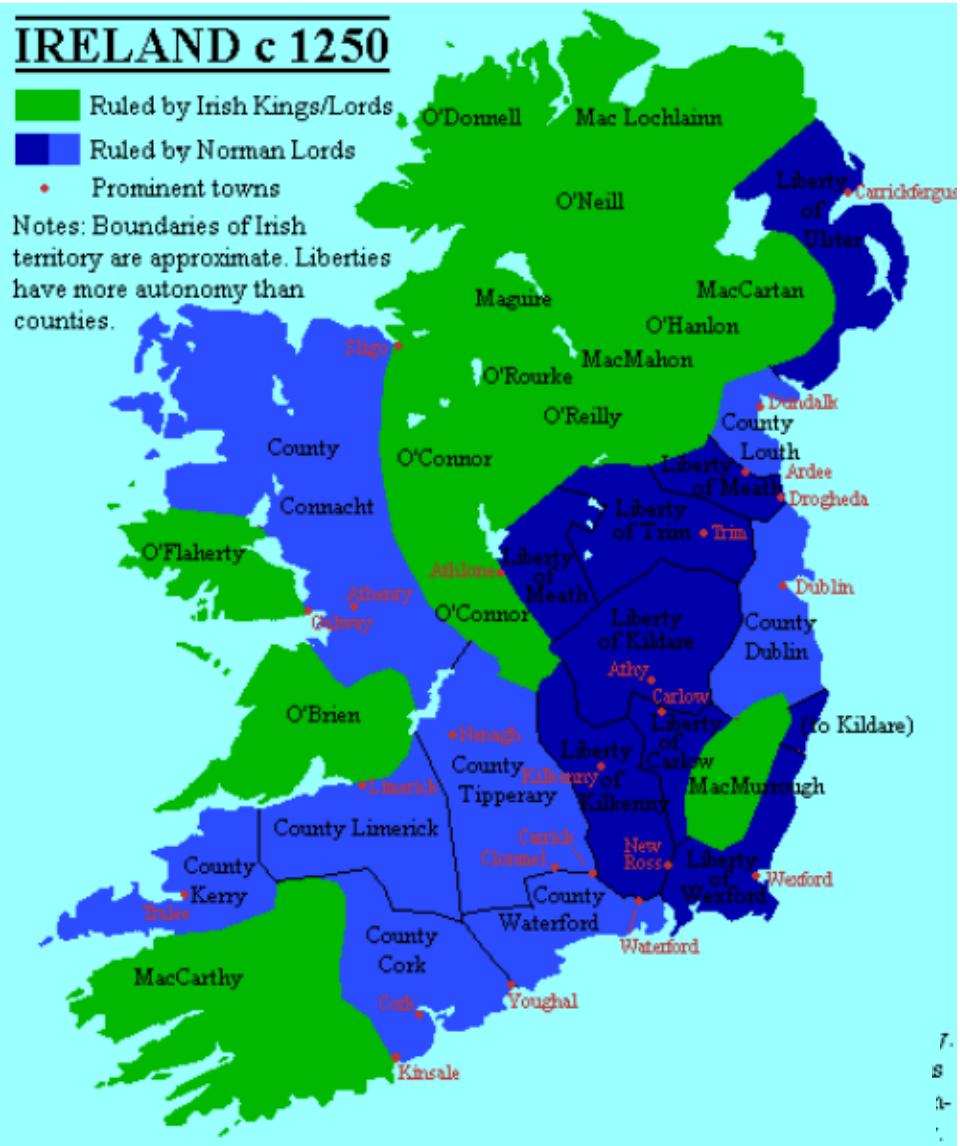


Map of Ireland in 1171, before the Normans invaded Western Ireland in 1235

Richard de Burgh was surprised by how much the Irish had developed their military technology since the time of Strongbow, it was a hard war to win and while de Burgh did emerge with most of Connacht in his hands securing Anglo-Norman settlement from east of Galway Bay to Killala Bay, it was not an easy victory.

The conquest of Connacht was a famous event for several centuries. In this same period, another prominent family of the future - the FitzGeralds, or Geraldines - took possession of north Kerry and Waterford.

Richard de Burgh was not as successful in invading Thomond and was repelled by the Donough Cairbreach O'Brien and allied Dál gCais clans but not until Thomond was almost completely devastated.



Map of Ireland from c. 1250 showing the aftermath of the Norman invasion of 1235

The above map makes a strong distinction between Irish and Anglo-French (Norman) lands. However, it would be a mistake to believe that these regions were anything like modern frontiers, with border guards peering warily across no-mans land. In practice, the borders were blurred, with a lot of everyday movement of trade and persons to-and-fro. Anglo-French and Irish clan leaders routinely signed agreements with each other against common foes. In later centuries, this interchange was to become so pronounced that it would be legislated against.[115]

Another side of Donough Cairbreach O'Brien can be seen through his commissioning in 1220 of a harp. It was made from willow and is one of the three oldest surviving Gaelic harps and was used as a model for the coat of arms of Ireland. There is a story that the harp was once owned by Brian Boru but this is not possible as it was made over 200 years after Brian's death. Still the harp is often called "Brian Boru's harp." The harp today is on display at the Trinity museum in Dublin.

Donough Cairbreach O'Brien only held the harp for a short time as in 1221 it was sent to Scotland to pay for the return of Muiredach O'Daly of Lissadil, a noted bard of the time. O'Daly had fled Ireland to Scotland after killing Finn O' Bradley, apparently O'Daly took exception to an insult O' Bradley made against the bardic profession. O'Daly was pardoned in his absence.



The O'Brien harp at Trinity Collage (left) and how it is depicted on the Irish coat of arms (right)

Donough O'Brien tried unsuccessfully to buy back his harp from Scotland in 1229. Sometime after this the harp was confiscated by the English and it reappears in 1543 when King Henry VIII of England presented it to Ulick MacWilliam de Burgo. MacWilliam de Burgo only kept the harp a short time and sold it to a Lady Huxley, the next owner was to be a Henry MacMahon of Clenagh, Co. Clare.

The next owner was a Councilor at Law named MacNamara from Limerick who received it in a will. The famous harper Arthur O'Neill played the harp through the streets of Limerick in 1760. Next the O'Brien Harp became the property of one Ralph Ouseley of Limerick in 1778, three years later in 1781 he passed it on to a Colonel Conyngham, the next year Conyngham presented it to Trinity College where it remains to this day.

In 1830 the harp was restored, but its shape was changed in the process. A harp (possibly the O'Brien harp) was depicted on the regimental flag of a Brigade of Irish infantry known as the Clare Dragoons. From 1702 to 1714 they fought in the War of the Spanish Succession under command of the 5th Viscount Clare, Charles O'Brien.

After the battle of Ramillies in Belgium (1706) the flag was left with a monastery of Irish Benedictine nuns at Ypres for safe keeping, where it hung until 1914. Today the flag is greatly faded, but the image of the harp is still visible.[116]



Harp as displayed on the Clare regimental flag of 1706 at Ypres Belgium



Recreation of the Clare Regiment flag of Ypres (Clare Library)

During this period Donough Cairbreach financed three monasteries, he rebuilt the Cistercian abbey at Inislounaght in Tipperary, built a house for the Dominicans at Limerick and in 1242 he began construction of the Franciscan Friary at Ennis which was to eventually serve as the family place of burial. One story is that he did so as penance to atone for a feud with his brother Muirchertach Dall O'Brien.

Donough Cairbreach O'Brien died in 1242 and was buried at Killaloe. The Annals of Ulster describe him emphatically as a "Tower of splendor and grandeur of the south of Ireland."[117] Donough was succeeded as King of Thomond by his eldest son Conor O'Brien (later to be known as Conor Na Siudáine O'Brien).



Franciscan Friary at Ennis Co Clare built by King Donough Cairbreach O'Brien in 1242





Part of the Franciscan Friary is a museum (L) O'Brien tombs are outside (R)

Conor Na Siudáine O'Brien 1210 - 1268

Conor Na Siudáine O'Brien succeeded as King of Thomond following the death of his father Donough Cairbreach O'Brien in 1242.

By the time Conor Na Siudáine came to the throne the O'Brien tenure of Thomond was becoming very insecure. In 1248 King Henry III wanted to progress Norman settlement in Thomond so he granted land at 'Tradaree' (see map below) to Robert de Muscregos, while in 1252 the area around Ennis was granted to John FitzGeoffrey, the Justiciar of Ireland.



Map of 13th century 'Cantreds' in County Clare. A Cantred was a Norman 'County'

Robert de Muscregos pursued his claim vigorously and immediately set about colonising Tradaree, building castles at Bunratty and Clare Castle. He was also granted the right in 1252 to establish fairs and weekly markets at these centres.

The fortresses at Bunratty and Clare Castle posed a major threat to O'Brien power in Thomond. King Conor Na Siudáine, urged on by his fiery eldest son Teig, turned against the Anglo-Normans in 1257 and slaughtered many of the settlers, however the fortresses at Bunratty and Clare Castle remained.

In 1259 Maurice FitzGerald of Desmond led an invading army across the Shannon river at Castleconnell. Conor Na Siudáine O'Brien formed a force comprising the MacNamara, O'Grady, MacInerney, Moloney, MacMahon, McGrath, O'Shaughnessy and O'Hyne septs and they gathered in the dense woods between Scariff and Feakle. When the army of Maurice FitzGerald with their heavy armor reached Coolreagh Bog, the Irish attacked and killed over 700 of them. The survivors were pursued as far as Castleconnell and O'Brien took the Castle and killed every man in the garrison.[118]

In 1258 a general meeting of the provincial Kings of Ireland was held at a place called Cael-Uisce next to Lough Erne, near Castle Calwell. [119] Conor Na Siudáine was unable to attend personally, but he sent his eldest son Teige O'Brien to represent him in the assembly. Teige O'Brien was later surnamed 'Caeluisce' to reflect the fact he had attended. At the meeting it was proposed that one supreme High King of Ireland should be acknowledged and command the forces of the whole country in order to combat the Anglo-Normans. [120]

This was agreed to, but when it came to selecting the supreme ruler, a contest arose between the Ó Néills and Ó Briens. It is suggested that Brian Ó Néill, King of Tir Eoghain had the majority support but Teige Caeluisce O'Brien would not yield, so the meeting adjourned without arriving at a settlement. [121] It has been stated that this was perhaps the best opportunity Ireland ever had to rise up united and face the Anglo-Normans and Teige Caeluisce O'Brien has been judged harshly over the ensuing centuries for his decision. [122] The truth of the matter is that in context the meeting had little relevance as both Teige Caeluisce O'Brien and Brian Ó Néill died soon after, no doubt sparking yet another round of discussions over who should be High King. [123]

Despite the continued presence of John de Muscregos at Bunratty, it seems that stability gradually came to the region. According to the annals of the Four Masters, during the latter part of Conor Na Siudáine O'Brien's reign, Thomond was not only at peace, but that the seasons were favorable and the people consequently prosperous.

John Magrath son of the hereditary bard, confirms this statement, and states that Conor O'Brien had "amassed great wealth in his fort at Clonroad," and that a large proportion of the inhabitants of the province had "grown over-rich and in consequence had become turbulent, refusing to pay tribute to their King." [124]

In 1268 Conor directed his brother-in-law, Sioda Macnamara, to "muster Clancuilein, and the Kineldunal led by Anselis O'Grady, and to proceed into Tipperary to quell the insubordination which had sprung up in that part of Thomond." Sioda seems to have speedily and effectually accomplished the duty he had been called on to perform. [125]



The Burren is an area located in northwestern County Clare.

It measures, around 500 square kilometers.

At the same time, Conor Na Siudáine O'Brien started off on a similar expedition into The Burren. With the support of the O'Dea's and O'Hair's they crossed the Burrren into northern County Clare. The Burren is celebrated for its rocky surface and lack of soil. It has been said of it "that there was no water to drown a man, no tree to hang one on, and no earth to bury him in." [126]

Many Neolithic tombs lie within the Burren area and remain undisturbed. The Irish clans obviously had a history of respecting these sites for thousands of years.

Having penetrated that part of his territory as far as the valley above Ballyvaughan, he was attacked by the army of Conor Carrach O'Loghlin at a place called Siudáine and defeated. King Conor O'Brien died in the battle together with his third son and a daughter. Following the battle "the body of the King was carried to the neighboring Corcomroe Abbey and was there buried." Conor was subsequently given the nick name "Na Siudáine" by the priory.[127]



Corcomroe Abbey near Ballyvaughan Co Clare

Corcomroe Abbey is close to Ballyvaughan and was built by Donald Mór O'Brien King of Thomond around 1182. Conor Na Siudáine had been a major benefactor of the Order of Cisterciansand monks and in recognition of these links with the monastic community Conor's body was solemnly interred in the Abbey with a stone monument and an effigy of him wearing a crown raised in his honor.[128]

Conor Na Siudáine's eldest son, Teige Caeluisce O'Brien, died in 1259 predeceasing his father. At the time Teige had several sons, all of whom were minors. The eldest was Turlogh Mór O'Brien who in due course would become King of Thomond. In the mean time however, the successor to Conor Na Siudáine was his second son Brian Roe O'Brien (the red headed one).



Effigy of Conor Na Siudáine O'Brien at Corcomroe Abbey who died in 1268





Close ups of Effigy. Conor Na Siudáine O'Brien who died in 1268

Battle of Druim Dearg 1260

Following the meeting of the Irish clan leaders at Cael-Uisce in 1258 the forces of Brian Ó Néill, King of Tir Eoghain (Cenél Eógain - Northern Uí Néill), allied with King Fedhlim O'Connor of Connacht, and raided Norman-held territory in Ulster in an attempt to assert their independence and form a coalition of the Irish against the Normans.

During the period 1258 to 1260 Brian Ó Néill claimed himself as High King of Ireland. This is interesting as ever since the Norman invasion of 1169 no one had claimed to be High King. Rory O'Connor was King when the Normans arrived and he died 1198. Consequently, Ireland had an Interregnum between Rory O'Connor's death in 1198 and 1258 when Ó Néill made his claim.

But Ó Néill's claim was never recognised by the O'Briens of Thomond resulting in them withdrawing support for Ó Néill in these raids. The situation was even more complex as after the meeting at Cael-Uisce it seems that some of the Irish clans now acted as mercenaries for the Normans in a bid to control Ó Néill's ambitions.[129]

According to the Annals of Inisfallen, the Normans had gathered an army of mostly Irish Gaelic mercenaries to fight against Brian Ó Néill's incursions, and the Normans themselves played only a small role in the fighting. Most of the battles between the Normans and Irish at this time would have seemed more like battles between the Irish themselves.

These series of battles came to an end when Brian Ó Néill together with a number of the Uí Catháin chiefs were defeated and killed in a battle that took place at Druim Dearg, near Downpatrick in County Down on the 14th May 1260.[130]

For centuries the Irish had disdained the use of armor, and went into battle with their finest tunics, beautifully embroidered and dyed golden with saffron. The Normans, on the other hand, were heavily armored, and this battle in particular made it apparent that courage, even of the highest quality, was not enough.

With the death of Brian Ó Néill the Northern Uí Néill clan was severely weakened losing considerable influence in Irish affairs. [131] Ireland entered another Interregnum until 1316-18 when Scot Edward Bruce was proclaimed High King of Ireland – and he was the last.



Norman armor

King Brian Roe O'Brien c. 1230 - 1277

Brian Roe O'Brien (the red headed one) was the second son of King Conor Na Siudáine O'Brien. While not our direct ancestor, he was the progenitor of the "Mac-I-Brien Arra" branch of our family and his story is very relevant to our line.

Brian Roe became King of Thomond when his father Conor Na Siudáine died in 1268. Brian Roe's elder brother Teige Caeluisce O'Brien had pre-deceased Conor Na Siudáine in 1259 and Teige Caeluisce's eldest son, Turlogh Mór O'Brien, was only nine years old when his father died and hence too young to succeed as King. Turlogh Mór was sent to live and receive his education with Donough O'Dea who fostered and raised him at O'Dea castle north of Ennis.[132]

Brian Roe O'Brien followed on as King as his father had done and continued attacking the Norman settlements. In 1270 he captured and burnt Clare Castle, which was never rebuilt by the Normans. John de Muscregos died in 1275 and his son Robert, perhaps finding the settlement too troublesome and unprofitable, returned the Manor of Bunratty to King Edward I in exchange for some property in Wales.[133]

King Brian Roe O'Brien reigned for nine years and "fought the English, governing with a strong hand." [134] By this time however his nephew Turlogh Mór O'Brien, now aged 17, was old enough to challenge him for the monarchy. Turlogh Mór saw himself as the rightful King of Thomond as his father had been the eldest son of King Conor Na Siudáine. In 1276 Turlogh Mór formed an alliance with the O'Dea and McNamara clans and as a united force they captured Clonroad castle and expelled King Brian Roe O'Brien from Thomond.

After a conference with his supporters, the vanquished King Brian Roe contrived a plan to win back power by seeking aid from the Anglo-Normans; and went to see Thomas de Clare. The following description of their meeting appears in the book 'The wars of Turlough': "Thomas, the Earl of Clare's son, who was of English race, a man of great consequence, then residing in Cork, who undertook to assist Brian Roe with all the English in Munster, if Brian Roe would grant him possession of all that part of Thomond between the Shannon and a line drawn from Limerick to Athsollus." [135]

(Incidently, Thomas de Clare's surname is derived from a place-name in Suffolk England, and unrelated to the manor of Clare, or Clar atha da charadh, in Thomond.) [136]

These terms having been agreed to, Thomas de Clare obtained the help of the FitzGeralds, the Butlers, and other Anglo-Norman barons, and together with Brian Roe's followers in 1277 they "sallied forth from Limerick to attack Turlough Mór O'Brien's base at Clonroad castle with the intention of placing Brian Roe at the head of affairs in Thomond." [137]

Several of the Dalcassian septs joined King Brian Roe and the Anglo-Norman forces along the way from Limerick to Clonroad. However, when they arrived at Clonroad they found Turlough Mór O'Brien was away to the west of the Fergus River receiving the fealty of the MacMahons, and so Thomas de Clare and Brian Roe O'Brien entered Clonroad castle unopposed.

Once at Clonroad King Brian Roe sanctioned the building programme proposed by Thomas de Clare which involved strengthening a fort located on the same site as the Franciscan abbey in Ennis. Some of the walls of the old castle and of the fort still constitute part of the existing abbey today. De Clare at this time also built a new castle at Bunratty, which in Gaelic means "dear harboured mouth of the River Raite." [138]

Upon hearing news that King Brian Roe and Thomas de Clare had captured Clonroad, Turlogh Mór O'Brien fled to the west coast and sought shelter from the hospitable Teige Aluinn O'Brien who resided at Tromora Castle just South of Quilty. [139]



Tromora Castle. This tower house was built in the 1400s but sits close to the site of the original castle which dates from the early 1200s.

From Tromora Castle Turlogh Mór O'Brien followed the ocean north to Galway where he elicited support from his cousin William Liath de Burgh, and together with assistance from Sioda Macnamara and the O'Deas, Turlogh Mór soon felt strong enough to take on the army of Brian Roe and Thomas de Clare.

While the Anglo-Normans were better armed and had more highly trained soldiers than the Irish, in a country like Thomond however their armor was an impediment to them, for the land was at this time was thickly covered with forest and there were few roads. Their Irish opponents were unencumbered with implements of war, their light shields, bows and arrows, with their favorite weapons the lance and spear, were all they carried.[140]

In 1277 Turlogh Mór O'Brien first passed to the north-east and ravaged the O'Grady's lands and other septs who had joined King Brian Roe and Thomas de Clare; he then led his forces southward and met the army of Brian Roe and Thomas de Clare in the 'fields of Moygreasan'. From contemporary descriptions Moygreasan appears to have been in the Slieve Aughty area north-east of Ennis. [141]

Thomas de Clare and King Brian Roe O'Brien's forces were were completely beaten at Moygreasan, and de Clare's brother-in-law Patrick FitzGerald and other knights were slain. Brian Roe and de Clare managed to escape to Bunratty. [142]



The Slieve Aughty uplands were the probable site of the battle of Moygreasan.

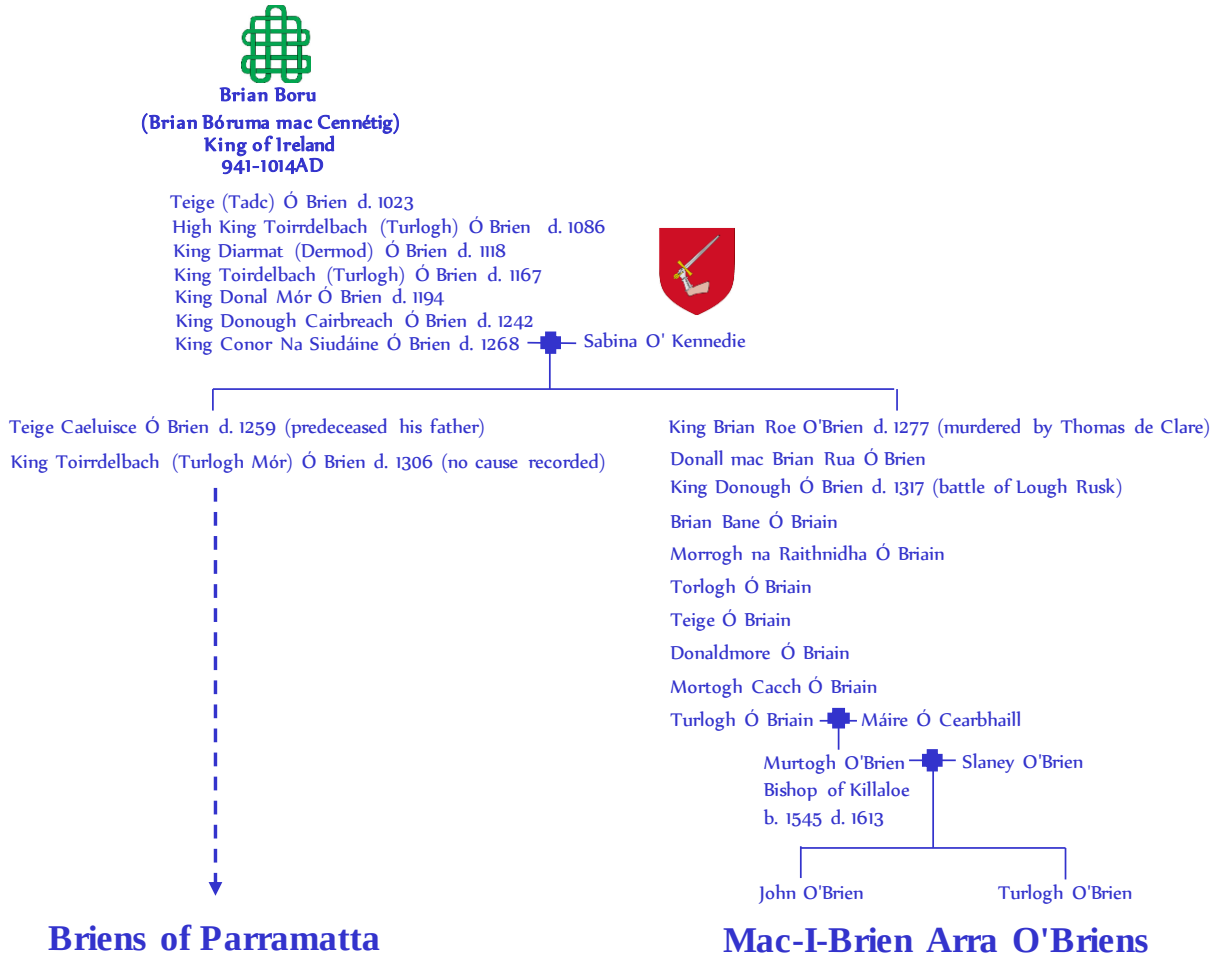
Several versions exist about what happened next, but a consistent theme is that Thomas de Clare's wife Juliana FitzGerald blamed Brian Roe O'Brien for her husbands defeat and the death of her brother at Moygreasan, and wanted Brian Roe murdered. The exact sequence of events is unknown, but their consequences were profound and lasted decades.

What has been recorded is that the parties had a feast where toasts, holy communion and other supportive gestures were shared. Despite these assurances, at some point Brian Roe O'Brien was taken outside "bound to a stern steed" and dragged to death, and his body was then suspended by its feet from the gallows.[143] Another text describes Brian Roe being tied between horses and torn apart at de Clare's command.[144]

The barbaric murder of King Brian Roe O'Brien horrified not only the O'Briens but all of the Irish Chieftains as well. They saw it as proof that the Norman/English were deceitful and untrustworthy, and made a nonsense of any notion that chivalry, as a medieval knightly system with its religious, moral, and social code, was any better than Gaelic law as practiced by the Irish clans.

To make a point of this, several years after Brian Roe's death the Irish Chieftains united in their dismay, presented an elegant memorial dedicated to Brian Roe O'Brien to Pope John XXII.[145]

King Brian Roe O'Brien was the progenitor of the "Mac-I-Brien Arra" branch of our family. They are named after the area in County Tipperary where they settled. Their descendants' tree is shown below.



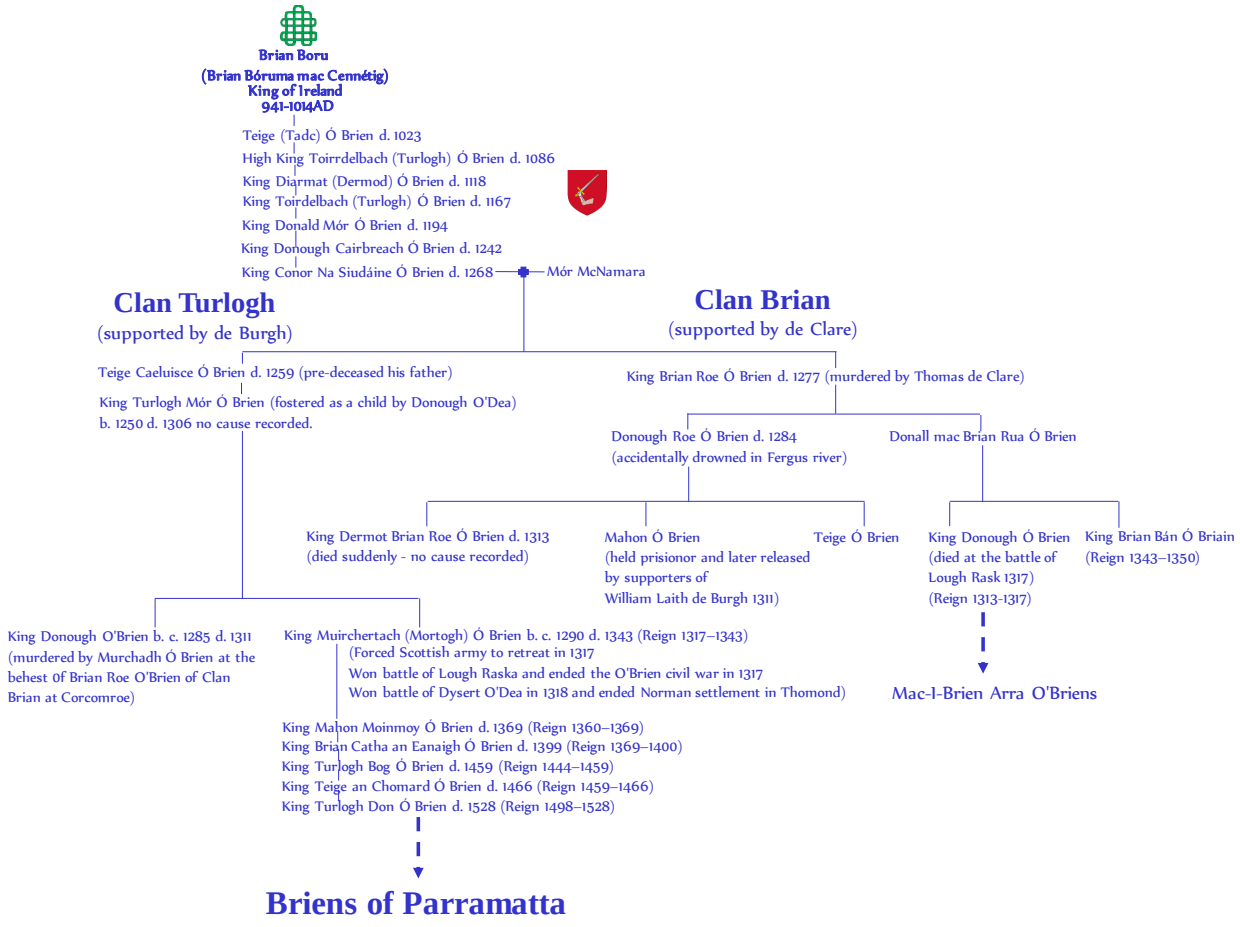
Line descending from King Brian Roe O'Brien known as the "Mac-I-Brien Arra" O'Briens

Thomond civil war 1277-1317

After the murder of King Brian Roe O'Brien Thomas de Clare thought he had no option other than to come to an arrangement with Turlogh Mór O'Brien, but Turlogh declined so much as to listen to him after what had happened to his uncle Brian Roe.

In late 1277 Turlogh Mór O'Brien proceeded with his victorious army to Magh Adhair and was inaugurated King of Thomond by Sioda Macnamara. The bard Rory Magrath states of the occasion "that the septs of Thomond were delighted to receive their rightful ruler."

The brutal death of King Brian Roe O'Brien and the battles of 1276 / 77 changed the power structure within Thomond and we see two opposing sides emerging, both vying for the Kingship. One clan formed with allegiance to Turlogh Mór O'Brien (known as clan Turlogh) and an opposition clan evolved who supported the descendants of Brian Roe O'Brien (known as clan Brian).[146]



Opposing clans of "Turlogh" and "Brian" during the Thomond civil war 1277-1317

In order to maintain the ascendancy, the new King Turlogh Mór O'Brien re-affirmed his alliance with his cousin William Liath de Burgh (nicknamed liath i.e. Gaelic for grey). [147] William Liath de Burgh was the son of William Og de Burgh who was of Norman descent. He was a nephew of Walter de Burgh, 1st Earl of Ulster who was killed at the Battle of Áth-an-Chip in 1270.

Other family connections further complicated the situation in Thomond. King Turlogh Mór's adversary, Thomas de Clare, was a younger son of the Earl of Gloucester and ultimately descended from Strongbow, Lord of Leinster and was a close friend of King Edward I of England. Through marriage with Juliana FitzGerald an heiress, de Clare already held estates in East Cork. [148]

English King Edward I also came into play at this point as on the 26th January 1276 he gave the title "Lordship of Thomond" to Thomas de Clare. When news of de Clare's defeat at Moygreasan followed by Brian Roe's death in 1277 reached Edward I, he directed Thomas de Clare to take any opportunity and "capture as much of Thomond as he could." [149]

Spurred on by King Edward's moral and financial support, de Clare embarked on a program of settlement and castle building. During this period Thomas de Clare maintained he had a royal claim over Thomond and regarded the O'Briens and other clans as tenants, imposing taxes and rent.



Redwood Castle in County Tipperary built by the Normans

By the late 1270s Thomas de Clare had built a thriving Norman community at Bunratty, but he had been thwarted in his ambition to acquire and control his land grants in greater Thomond by the Clan Turlogh alliance with the de Burghs. This clearly frustrated Thomas de Clare and he must have been feeling like the charter he had received from King Edward I granting him possession of Thomond, was of about as much value as the paper it was written on.

To counter this situation, Thomas de Clare decided to encourage divided loyalties between the O'Briens. His next move, therefore, was to send flattering and hypocritical messages to Donough Roe, the son of the Brian Roe O'Brien, "to induce this young man to throw in his fortunes with him" [150] and, surprising as it may seem, Donough Roe actually consented to co-operate with de Clare; the man who had brutally murdered his father just a few years earlier.

Thomas de Clare using his new alliance with Donough Roe O'Brien attempted to impose a partitioning of Thomond where Turlogh Mór O'Brien was to rule in the East while Donough Roe was to reign in West Thomond. Turlogh Mór however did not welcome the idea of ruling half a Kingdom and dismissed the offer out of hand.

Hostilities between 'clan Turlogh' and 'clan Brian' now escalated. A 'clan Turlogh' force in eastern Thomond led by the MacNamaras met de Clare's force on "the plain near Tulla" and completely overcame them.[151] King Turlogh Mór followed up this victory by marching through Tradree up to the walls of Bunratty Castle and demanded de Clare banish Donough Roe O'Brien into Desmond.

This pattern continued until 1284 when it was agreed that the contending chiefs should meet at 'Island Magrath' in the Fergus River, near Clare Castle, and try and settle their quarrels. One report of the event describes the scene: "Donough Roe was sufficiently well drunken with mead to make him noisy, and when he came to the river's opposite bank, he thence gave King Turlogh Mór O'Brien to feel the rough side of his tongue."

"Turlogh Mór's face grew red, and the chiefs who had been Donough's friends were so outraged that they passed over to King Turlogh Mór O'Brien. Donough Roe O'Brien hearing of this, mounted his beautiful horse and, followed by a few retainers, attempted to escape from his enemies, but when he reached the river Fergus and plunged into it, he sank under the river's surface away from his enemies." [152]



Ruins of Clare Castle next to the river Fergus near where Donough Roe O'Brien drowned in 1284.

How close to the truth that description is we don't know, but the Four Masters record that Donogh Roe O'Brien did accidently drown in the Fergus River near Clare Castle in 1284.

In September 1284, Thomas de Clare left Ireland for England. No sooner had he turned his back on Thomond than King Turlogh Mór entered Tradree in order to occupy the lands upon which several Norman families had settled.

De Clare on his return to Bunratty was enraged with Turlogh Mór O'Brien for his incursion into what he considered to be his own lands. In response he gathered his followers, and on the 29th of August 1287 met the forces of clan Turlogh just outside Bunratty and de Clare was defeated. [153]

During this battle Thomas de Clare was killed, along with some of his principal knights. Thomas de Clare left behind two young sons, Gilbert aged six and Richard. Gilbert died at a young age but Richard de Clare survived to adulthood (until his death in 1318 at the 'battle of Dysert O'Dea').

Around 1285 King Turlogh Mór O'Brien turned his attention to shoring up his Kingdom by building "six white castles of stone." [154] The first to be built, and most important, was at Clonroad (Ennis). Another was on an island in Lough Inchiquin of which only the foundations remain today. This castle was later occupied by Mahon O'Brien, a great grandson of King Turlogh Mór O'Brien. The locations of the other four white stone castles are uncertain. [155]

In 1304 King Turlogh Mór O'Brien marched the 'clan Turlogh' army "with his colours in the centre, and gilt shields outside, and cavalry in the rear." They passed through Cashel and ravaged the country as far as Thurles, and then turned north, reaching Nenagh.[156] At this point Turlogh Mór was persuaded by his friend Richard Óg de Burgh, 2nd Earl of Ulster to give up the idea of further conquest and to return to Clare.

As Turlogh Mór's army moved along the lovely wooded banks of Lough Derg, the bard Magrath informs us that "they were met by a lone woman who approached them, fair of face she was and of modest mien. From her strange aspect and beautiful form, the whole of Turlogh Mór's followers took heed of her: a maid with red lips and taper fingers, long and wavy flowing hair; her whole being commanded respect" She spoke to the King as follows: "My name is Ireland's Sovereignty, and if strangers had not caused thee to turn back, the sovereign rule of the whole of Ireland would have been yours."



Lough Derg in eastern Thomond where it is reported Turlogh Mór O'Brien saw the Irish Sovereignty vision

Such delight had the army in listening to her that they pressed close on her; but she disappeared in the semblance of a bright cloud, repeating as she passed away a long poem.[157] This sounds very similar to the 'Brigid Sovereignty story' outlined in Chapter 2. Particularly since it is linked to water (i.e. Lough Derg).

It is said that Turlogh Mór deeply repented having followed the Earl of Ulster's counsel and not engaged in further conquest; nevertheless, he ruled the whole of Munster, as his ancestors had done before him, for no less than twenty-nine years. Turlogh Mór reigned over this province during which time we are told "there was exceeding abundance in the country and every man was able to attend to and to perform the office of his station." [158]

Turlogh was married three times: first, to Sabina, daughter of Teige MacCarthy, of Dun-Mac-Tomain, by whom possibly had one son; [159]

- Donough who succeeded as King of Thomond.

He married secondly to Orflath, (or Aurnia), daughter of Donal Oge MacCarthy Mór, by whom he had three sons;

- Brian ancestor of the Siol Bhriain na Geall, of Glen Cean. [160]
- Muirchertach who succeeded as King of Thomond after the death of his brother.
- Dermot, who left no issue

His third marriage was to Sabina O'Kennedy, of Muscry Tir, by whom he had two sons;

- Conor
- Donal

Turlogh Mór O'Brien died in 1306 at his residence "Insi-an-Lasi" (located in north Thomond) [161] and was buried at Ennis Abbey. Turlogh Mór's eldest son Donough O'Brien became King and renewed the 'clan Turlogh' alliance with William Liath de Burgh.

Thomas de Clare's son Richard de Clare, now aged in his 30s, re-formed the 'clan Brian' alliance with Dermot Brian Roe (the son of Donough Roe O'Brien who had drowned in the Fergus River near Clare Castle in 1284).

So, by 1310 we see the re-emergence of the 'clan Turlogh' (led by Donough O'Brien) and 'clan Brian' (led by Dermot Brian Roe O'Brien) alliances.



Effigy of King Turlogh Mór O'Brien. Died in 1306 and is buried at Ennis Abbey.

In May 1310 the representative of English King Edward II in Dublin was so worried about the ongoing dispute between the O'Brien clans (i.e. clan Turlogh vs clan Brian) that he issued instructions that said: "The war in the parts of Thomond between Dermot Brian Roe O'Brien and Donough O'Brien, who calls himself "Prince of the Irish of Thomond", disturbs the peace throughout Ireland by its continuation. ORDER to prohibit Dermot and Donough from continuing that war and cause them to keep the peace for life" - which obviously both sides ignored!

On the 20th May 1310 the 'clan Turlogh' forces of King Donough O'Brien and his ally William Liath de Burgh met in battle near Bunratty castle against the 'clan Brian' forces of Dermot Brian Roe O'Brien and Richard de Clare. Clan Turlogh won the tactical battle but in the process William Liath de Burgh was taken prisoner by Richard de Clare and held at Bunratty. In the end both sides were forced to back-off.



Bunratty Castle.

Bunratty in Gaelic means "Castle at the Mouth of the Ratty"

King Donough O'Brien escaped but was pursued to his home at Cluanramhad (Clonroad near Ennis) by Dermot Brian Roe O'Brien and Richard de Clare. During the ensuing siege, Cluanramhad (Clonroad) castle was burnt to the ground but once again King Donough O'Brien escaped; this time he fled north to Corcomroe to seek shelter with the de Burghs. [162]

By about June 1311 Dermot Brian Roe O'Brien and Richard de Clare had caught up with King Donough O'Brien; before he could reach the safety of the de Burghs in Corcomroe. According to Mac Carthaigh's CELT Project (MCB1311), King Donough O'Brien was treacherously murdered by Murchadh O'Brien son of Mathghamhain O'Brien son of Connachtach O'Brien (i.e. the grandson of the 2nd son of King Donald Mór O'Brien). Carthaigh's book states the location of the assault was somewhere in the Burren co Clare (Irish Boireann). [163]

Meanwhile, William Liath de Burgh managed to escape from Bunratty and took advantage of Dermot Brian Roe O'Brien being in northern County Clare, captured his younger brothers Mahon Don and Teige O'Brien and took them to Corcomroe where they were held as prisoners of war. Differing versions of this event exist. The Historical Memoir of the O'Briens p. 122 (O'Donoghue) states that the brothers Mahon and Teige O'Brien were captured by 'Macconmara' and confined at Loughrea and possibly used to purchase the release of William Liath de Burgh from Bunratty.

Later in 1311 Richard de Clare arranged for Dermot Brian Roe O'Brien to be crowned King of Thomond at Magh Adhair. This was opposed by William Liath de Burgh who instead supported the deceased King Donough's younger brother (and our ancestor) Muirchertach O'Brien and backed him as ruler of Thomond. In response, Richard de Clare and his allies pursued Muirchertach O'Brien who had no choice but to escape into Corcomroe to avoid capture and seek shelter with William Liath de Burgh. [164]

For the next few years 'clan Brian' remained in the ascendancy. In 1313 King Dermot Brian Roe O'Brien died suddenly and his cousin Donough O'Brien succeeded him as King of Thomond, with the continued support of Richard de Clare. [165]

Meanwhile their adversary Muirchertach O'Brien remained in exile to the north in Corcomroe supported by William Liath de Burgh and his 'clan Turlogh' allies.



Map showing Ireland as it was in 1300AD.

As a backdrop to these and following events, a wider phenomenon in northern Europe known as 'the Great Famine' was also impacting Ireland. It began with torrential rains in late 1314, followed by a very cold winter and heavy rains the following spring that killed many sheep and cattle. The bad weather continued, almost unabated, into 1321, resulting in a string of bad harvests. [166]

Scottish invasion of Ireland 1315-1318

Thomond politics became even more complicated in 1315 when Ireland was invaded by Scotland. After defeating the English at the battle of Bannockburn in 1314, Robert the Bruce, King of Scotland was brimming with confidence, and planned to apply further pressure on England by disempowering the Norman and English aristocracy in Ireland and, in the process build a base to protect Scotland's southern sea border from attack.

Robert and Edward Bruce were themselves of Norman ancestry. Their grandfather was Robert de Brus (Norman French), 5th Lord of Annandale, so it could be argued that the Bruce brothers wished to replace one Norman aristocracy with another. The evidence suggests that our O'Brien ancestors saw them as no different to any other foreign invader.

Other motives were also at play, the Ulster Irish, under Domhnall O'Neill went as far as to offer an invitation for Bruce to invade Ireland, so as to gain the Scots support "in the hope that the prestige and the large army of this outsider might induce the other Irish chiefs to accept his leadership, as they would never have accepted O'Neill himself." [167]

Many of the Irish chieftains however were supportive of Robert Bruce because he promised to create a Celtic Alliance he described as the "Pan-Gaelic Greater Scotia" linking Ireland with Scotland and Wales and they welcomed his brother Edward Bruce at the head of a 6,000-strong force that arrived at Larne on the 26th May 1315. This was essentially the same army that had defeated the English at Bannockburn.

In early June, the Ó Néill clan and some twelve fellow northern Irish Kings and Lords met Edward Bruce at Carrickfergus and swore fealty to him as High King of Ireland. [168]



Portrayal of Edward Bruce as High King of Ireland.

For many of the Irish who were directly affected by Bruce's army, the Scottish presence felt more like an invasion than a 'Celtic Alliance'. Unfortunately for the Scots they chose a time to invade when famine gripped most of Ireland due to several failed harvests. Right from the start the Scots were desperate for food and reports of abuse, pillage and burnings spread and turned sentiment in many parts of Ireland against the Scots. This set off an internal struggle known as 'The Bruce Wars' and created a complicated political situation that took years to resolve.

William Liath de Burgh was one who opposed to the Scottish invasion and he was captured at the 'battle of Connor' in Ulster on the 10th September 1315, when an army led by his cousin the Earl of Ulster was defeated by Edward Bruce. William was sent to Scotland and 'clan Turlogh' had lost its greatest ally.

By July 1316 William de Burgh had returned from Scotland, having exchanged his son Edmond as hostage for his release. [169] He now assembled "a motley army of Anglo-Norman colonists and Irish chieftains who had remained loyal to him" and marched against the Scottish supporters of Edward Bruce meeting them near Athenry in Connacht.[170] One of the Irish chieftains at his side was the expelled Muirchertach O'Brien.



Athenry Castle in Galway. Near the site of the Battle of Athenry 10th August 1316

A battle took place on the 10th August 1316 known as the 'Second Battle of Athenry' between the pro Scottish force from Connacht, and the pro-Irish/Norman force led by William Liath de Burgh including his ally Muirchertach O'Brien. The result was a decisive victory to de Burgh and O'Brien who now with renewed confidence moved back into Thomond at the head of his loyal 'clan Turlogh' army.

King Donough O'Brien now made a brave decision. Along with his 'clan Brian' supporters he chose to sever their long-standing alliance with the de Clares and instead seek out an alliance with the Scottish leader Edward Bruce.

When Richard de Clare heard news that 'clan Brian' had broken their alliance, he left King Donough O'Brien in no doubt of his displeasure and made plans for retribution. Donough now in fear for his life fled Clonroad Castle and headed out of Thomond into Connacht where in exile he joined with others who were now actively supporting the Scottish army.

In early September 1316 Robert the Bruce, King of Scotland arrived at Carrickfergus in Ireland with a large force to support his brother Edward's Irish campaign. [171] King Donough O'Brien (of 'clan Brian'), who was still in exile, traveled to Ulster to meet directly with the Bruce brothers and cement their alliance. They planned to join their armies and march on Thomond and defeat the forces of de Burgh, de Clare and Muirchertach O'Brien. Presumably the plan was for Donough O'Brien to remain in charge as a puppet ruler.

The Bruce brothers agreed to King Donough O'Brien's plan and made preparations to march their army towards Thomond and rendezvous with Donough at Castleconnel on Thomond's eastern border, then cross the Shannon River and join with the 'clan Brian' army somewhere in Thomond. At the time this plan was made 'clan Brian' forces commanded Castleconnel and arrangements were made to receive the Scots. [172]



The Shannon River at Castleconnel.

Where the armies of Muirchertach O'Brien and the Scottish Bruce brothers faced off against each other.

As the Scottish army, now numbering some 20,000 troops marched towards Thomond, Muirchertach O'Brien received word of the impending invasion and moved to head it off. In a masterful display of strategy, he moved his 'clan Turlogh' army across Thomond to meet the Scots at the border. After a short struggle he took control of Castleconnel, then had his troops dig in and wait for the Scots to arrive.

In late March 1317 the Scottish army reached the Shannon River but King Donough O'Brien and the 'clan Brian' army were nowhere to be seen. Furthermore, the Bruce brothers found that the nearby Castle had been taken and was occupied by Muirchertach's 'clan Turlogh' troops.

If that wasn't enough, the Scots could see the 'clan Turlogh' army waiting across the Shannon River for a chance to attack. The Shannon is not very wide at this point and the sight of Muirchertach O'Brien urging his troops on must have been un-nerving for the Scots.

Portrayal of the brothers Robert and Edward Bruce in Ireland. [173]



It was at this point that Robert and Edward Bruce made the historic decision to turn the entire Scottish invasion force around and retreat in the direction they had come from.[174]

The Scots by this stage had over-extended their supply line from their base at Carrickfergus and had been counting on a swift occupation of Thomond to replenish their supplies. Even though they outnumbered Muirchertach O'Brien's army by more than 3:1, the Scots were certainly not expecting to be confronted by such a hostile force before they had even set foot in Thomond, and on this day in March 1317, Robert and Edward Bruce had no stomach for a fight. [175]

By all accounts this was a major turning point of the Bruce wars. The Scottish army led by the brothers Robert and Edward Bruce were now in retreat shadowed by an Anglo-Irish force under English King Edward II's Irish Justiciar Edmund Butler [176] and ceased to be a genuine invasion threat to Ireland. The Scots made their way back to Carrickfergus and Robert Bruce sailed for Scotland in May 1317 leaving Edward behind with only a depleted force.

Muirchertach O'Brien's stand at Castleconnel in 1317 had out-maneuvered both his 'clan Brian' adversaries and the Scots. But the battle over the future of Thomond was far from over however, the successful stand-off with the Scots must have boosted Muirchertach's confidence.



Map showing the Bruce invasion of Ireland 1315-1318. Arrow points to Castleconnel where the Scottish army were turned back by Muirchertach O'Brien in March 1317.

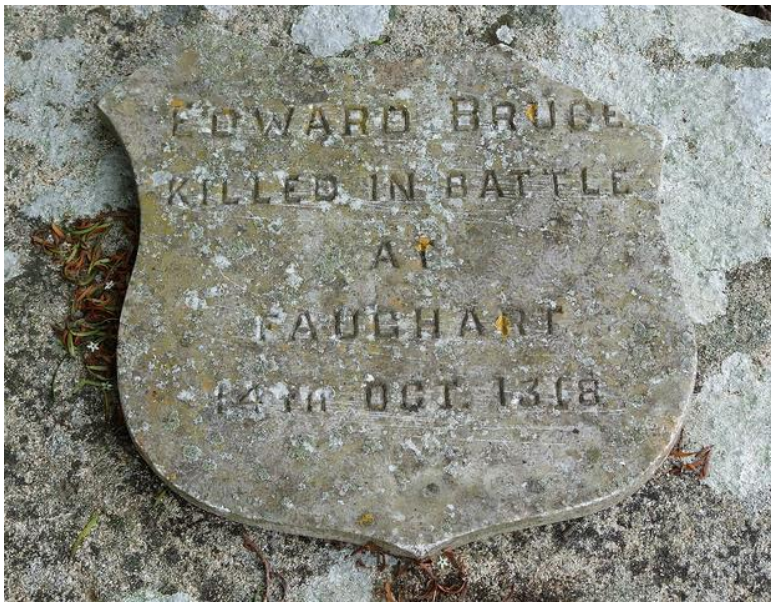
Following the Scots retreat at Castleconnel in March 1317, Muircheartach O'Brien attended a parliament held at Dublin in August that year which had been summoned by King Edward II's Lord Lieutenant, Roger Mortimer. Muircheartach had suspicions that Richard de Clare was about to petition in favour of granting a royal pardon for Clan Brian Roe, and he was anxious to forestall this by a counter-charge of treason against de Clare himself; for his involvement with the Irish supporters of the Scottish Bruce brothers.

Reports from that parliament indicate Muircheartach O'Brien was well-qualified and debated with the foreigners fluently in several languages, and that Muircheartach had a tall, commanding presence. However, the charge of treason against de Clare failed, but was seen as an intelligent attempt to win by legal means independence. If de Clare had been attainted, and his lands forfeited to the Crown, the status of the O'Briens would have reverted to the pre-1277 position. [177]

After Robert Bruce sailed for Scotland in May 1317, Edward Bruce continued the Scottish campaign of mobile warfare mainly on the east coast of Ireland but he and his allies failed to hold the areas they had previously conquered. The Scottish invasion of Ireland came to an end on the 14th October 1318 at the battle of Faughart where Edward Bruce met his death. [178]

Following the battle of Faughart, Edward Bruce's severed head was sent to King Edward II in England. [179] According to the Lanercost Chronicle after the battle "Edward's body was divided into four quarters, which were sent to the four chief quarters of Ireland."

Some accounts say that Edward Bruce was the architect of his own defeat, deciding to engage a larger enemy force (20,000 strong in his account) without waiting for reinforcements from Scotland, a view which finds some support in the Annals of Clonmacnoise, where it is recorded that "anxious to obtain the victory for himself, he did not wait for his brother." [180]



Memorial to Edward Bruce who died 14th October 1318

Battle Lough Rask 1317

Muirchertach O'Brien's 'clan Turlogh' army had stared down the Scottish army and the Bruce brothers blinked first and retreated, but just as importantly, by removing the Scots from the equation Muirchertach O'Brien had eliminated any possibility of them joining with Donough O'Brien and 'clan Brian'. On hearing that the Scots had retreated, the 'clan Brian' forces did likewise and withdrew to Corcomroe.

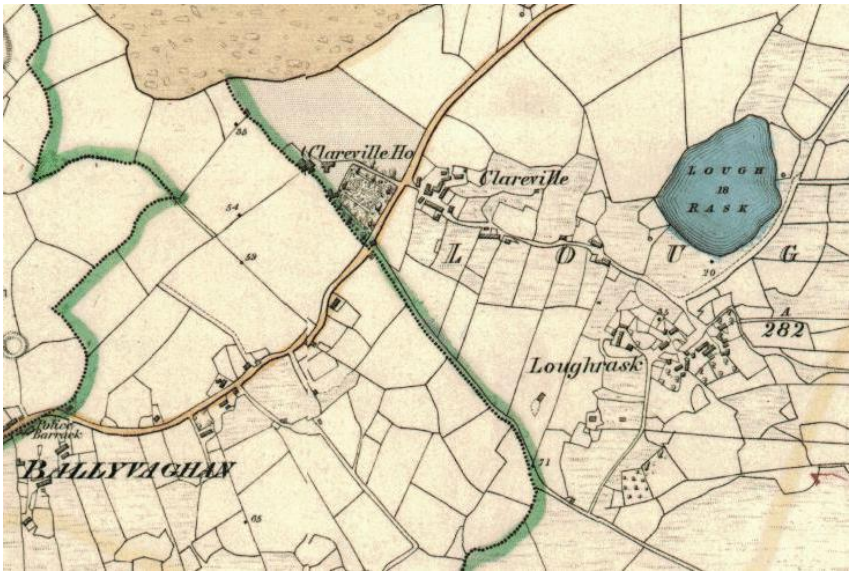
In August 1317 Muirchertach O'Brien was in Dublin attending the parliament summoned by Roger Mortimer. In his absence his brother Dermot O'Brien attended a great meeting of the Dalcassian chiefs loyal to 'clan Turlogh' held at Rathlaheen. It was decided that they would meet a week later at Ruan, and from there they would march northwards seeking out the 'clan Brian' army of Donough O'Brien. Dermot O'Brien of 'clan Turlogh' was now at the head of a force numbering around 9,000 men with many of the major and minor clans of Thomond amongst their ranks.

By mid-August 1317 King Donough O'Brien had renewed his alliance with Richard de Clare, and 'clan Brian' bolstered by the support of Mathghamhain Ó Briain, now numbered also around 9,000 men.

The two sides met near Lough Rask (a.k.a Druim Lurgain) on the 15th August 1317. Details of the battle, also known as 'The Battle of Corcomrua' are sketchy but we know that about 18,000 men were involved. A force this size must have drawn in virtually every fighting man in Thomond.



The Co Clare Library 'Monument Map' places the Lough Rask battle field 15th August 1317, near Bishopsquarter, NE of Ballyvaughan.



The 1842 ordinance map of Co Clare shows Lough Rask just to the East of Ballyvaughan

The outcome of the ‘battle of Lough Rask’ was emphatic, Dermot O’Brien at the head of the ‘clan Turlogh’ army was victorious with Donough O’Brien’s ‘clan Brian’ forces overwhelmingly defeated. After the battle “Dermot O’Brien encouraged and cheered his wounded; they rejoiced not in the victory, for death, they said, had that day made the Clan Brian their brothers.” [181]

Donough and most of the ‘clan Brian’ army were killed, his son Brian Bane O’Brien escaped with a few followers and went to Tipperary. With ‘clan Brian’ decimated, the civil war between the O’Brien clans had come to a bloody end, but the battle with the Normans for control of Thomond was still to be decided. [182]

When King Muirchertach O’Brien returned from Dublin in August 1317 almost all of Thomond rallied to him, with the exception of Richard de Clare and his ally Mahon O'Brien, the grandson of Donall Connachtach Ó Brien, son of King Donald Mór Ó Brien. Mahon O'Brien now occupied ‘the white castle’ located on an island in Lough Inchiquin, and was acting as Richard de Clare's agent in the west of the country. [183]

Muirchertach now sensing he had the upper hand refused any dealings with Richard de Clare and sent a force to removed Mahon O'Brien from the ‘white castle’ and banish him from Thomond. Mahon O’Brien had long held ambition to rule as King of Thomond, and had been active in his opposition to Muirchertach O’Brien.

Mahon had two sons, the elder Murrough was killed in a battle at Tulla in 1313 and Donall who died fighting for Richard de Clare in the battle of Dysert O’Dea in 1318. Mahon eventually met his end at the hands of the McNamaras in 1320 whilst trying to re-establish himself and his supporters in western Thomond. [184]

In the aftermath of the battle of Lough Rask, a direct confrontation between Muirchertach O’Brien and Richard de Clare now seemed the only solution to determine control of Thomond.

Battle of Dysert O'Dea 1318

The winter of 1317/18 passed peacefully, the warring factions of O'Briens and de Clare seemingly content to avoid conflict. This all changed in May 1318 when Richard de Clare marched his army of footmen, spearmen, archers and light cavalry out of Bunratty into Thomond in search of Muirchertach O'Brien. [185]

On the 9th May de Clare's army passed Ennis where according to legend de Clare beheld a woman dressed in white at the river's edge washing bloody clothing and armor. When he asked whose clothes they were she replied "yours" and then vanished. The woman was believed to be a banshee foretelling his death in the battle to be played out the following day. [186]

On the afternoon of the 9th May de Clare set up camp near Ruan just north of Ennis, close to Dysert O'Dea castle. The terrain between the castle and the camp included a narrow area of open ground that sloped downwards from the castle and was bordered on one side by a deep lake known as Lough Ballycullinan, and on the other by an almost impenetrable forest. At the lower end of the open ground was a swampy stream fed by the Lough that could be forded easily at only one place.

The timing of de Clare's army appearing at his front doorstep wasn't the best for the Gaelic chieftain of Dysert O'Dea castle, Conchobhar Ó Deághaidh (Conor O'Dea). O'Dea was aware that the main Thomond force led by Muirchertach O'Brien was some miles distant and was seriously alarmed at the size of de Clare's army camped nearby.

On the evening of the 9th May Conor O'Dea sent a messenger to de Clare offering to submit and pay tribute, but de Clare refused to make any terms with one whose past record "proved him an inveterate rebel." On hearing that his offer to de Clare had been rejected O'Dea gathered his cattle and people together and decided to make a desperate last stand in their defense.

O'Dea had already sent appeals for reinforcements to his neighbours Feidhlim O'Connor of Corcumroe and Lochlainn O'Hehir and he calculated that together the three chiefs might gather enough soldiers to hold out against de Clare's army, at least until they were granted more favorable peace terms.

The immediate problem, therefore, was how to delay the Norman attack until these reinforcements arrived. His plan was to keep his main forces out of sight but deploy a small troop of men out in the open near the swampy stream, to block the ford and prevent de Clare from crossing until the other two chiefs had arrived with their armies, and hope that the Irish side were strong enough to face a pitched battle.

When the attack came on the morning of the 10th May, nothing seemed to work out quite as anticipated. Instead of marching straight on Dysert O'Dea castle, Richard de Clare in a very Irish manner, divided his men into three smaller raiding-parties and sent them in different directions to plunder the territory. He apparently considered his force so overwhelming that even a third part could deal with O'Dea's soldiers where ever they met them.

Richard de Clare was in charge of the main section and saw O'Dea's small troop near the swampy stream ostensibly in the act of herding the last of the cattle to safety in the direction of the castle. De Clare pursued this small group so fast, they caught up with them before the ford was reached and killed many.



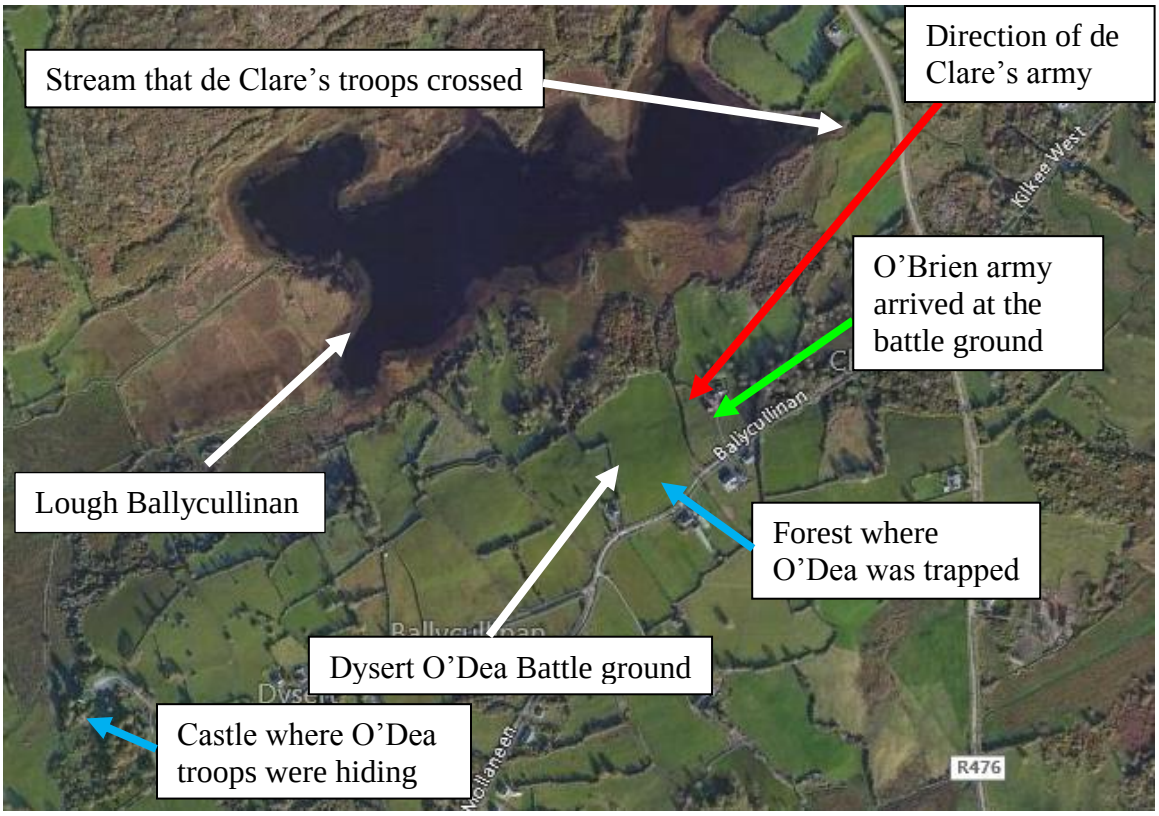
View today of the stream crossed by de Clare's troops at the battle site, near O'Dea Castle

This in itself was enough to endanger O'Dea's original plan, but at the same time O'Dea's troops realised their opportunity because they saw that Richard de Clare was present in person, accompanied by only a third of his total army. Instead of holding the ford, O'Dea's men deliberately retreated back over it to entice de Clare's army to follow.

O'Dea had hidden his main force behind Dysert Castle and when de Clare's troops were well into the open ground, he gave the signal and his troops rose up from their places of ambush and charged into the fray. The initial charge was very successful and had de Clare's army on the backfoot, but de Clare's forces were being continuously reinforced by detachments from the other two-thirds of his army.

Outnumbered O'Dea's troops were forced to take refuge in the forest, where they were surrounded by de Clare's men and remained trapped until Feidhlim O'Connor's troops arrived to provide some relief. O'Hehir's troops arrived soon after but this was not enough to turn the tide in favour of the Irish and it looked certain that de Clare's army would prevail.

It was only the totally unexpected appearance of Muirchertach O'Brien and the main army of Thomond that saved the day. O'Brien had been advancing towards the area on the basis of information as to de Clare's movements, but it was not until he and his men had crossed the river Fergus, from the direction of Spancill Hill that they realised a battle was already in progress. When they saw the burning houses and met fugitives from the fight they rushed towards the fighting.



The site of the Battle of Dysert O'Dea 10th May 1318 (de Clare in red, O'Dea in blue and O'Brien in green)[187]

Since O'Dea and O'Connor had sent no direct message for help to O'Brien, they thought at first that the new arrivals were coming to reinforce de Clare, a fear that was quickly changed to relief as they realised that victory was now certain.

Richard de Clare was killed by the O'Dea's during the clash and O'Brien forces pursued the surviving Normans back to Bunratty Castle. According to one version of events when they arrived, they found that de Clare's soldiers had set the castle ablaze and de Clare's wife and family had boarded a ship and were sailing down the Shannon estuary for England.

The battle of Dysert O'Dea was an overwhelming win for the clans of Thomond resulting in a resurgence of Thomond independence which lasted well into the 1500s.



Dysert O’Dea castle stands on a hill above the battlefield

Battle of Dysert O'Dea re-enactment 2018

In 2018 the 700th anniversary of the battle of Dysert O'Dea was re-enacted in a field close to the actual battlefield. The re-enactment was organized by the O'Dea clan and was attended by many clan members worldwide.





Muirchertach Ó Brien 1285 - 1343

Muirchertach O'Brien (aka Mortogh) was born around 1285. His parents were Turlogh Mór O'Brien, King of Thomond and Orflath (Aurnia) MacCarthy, a descendant of the FitzGeralds.

Muirchertach succeeded as King of Thomond upon the death of his 2nd cousin King Donough O'Brien who died at the battle of Lough Rask in 1317. The only description we have of him comes from documents relating to the parliament of 1317 where he attended. He was described as being educated, speaking fluently in several languages, and having a tall, commanding presence. [188]

In some ways Muirchertach may have felt divided as he was half Irish and half Norman. Not dissimilar to Robert the Bruce who was also of Celtic and Norman ancestry. In all likelihood he was someone who would have understood the concept of a Celtic Alliance, but to say he chose his Irish nationality over alignment with other members of the Gaelic world is too simplistic. While Muirchertach would have seen both the Normans and the Scots as Irish invaders, he also saw how other Irish clans aligned themselves with these invaders, and he was as much at war with them as the Normans and the Scots.

In effect Muirchertach O' Brien was surrounded by adversaries, which makes it all the more impressive that he was able to defeat these external forces whilst engaged in a very bloody civil war. The invasion by the Scottish army in 1315 created a political crisis in Ireland that pushed Muirchertach O'Brien into centre stage of Irish politics and an emerging nationalist struggle. But this was a complex situation as by the 1300s some Norman families had become indistinguishable from the Irish and no one group had sufficient strength to exert control over all of Ireland.

Even so Ireland was one of the first states during the Middle Ages where we find evidence of conscious nationalist feelings. Although politically Ireland had always been among the most sub-divided and loosely organized regions of Europe, its privileged learned classes of historians and poets had long enjoyed the hall marks of nation-hood i.e. a cultural unity, a common language and literature. From the early eleventh century at least, such learned men had fostered and encouraged the idea of one united Ireland, ruled by a high-King with real power.

When the Normans landed in 1169 followed by the Scots in 1315, they were immediately identifiable in the role of foreign tyrants which had earlier been created for the Vikings. Muirchertach O'Brien would have been well acquainted with the poem "Cogad Gáedel re Gallaib" (The War of the Irish with the Foreigners) that tells of the depredations of the Vikings in Ireland and Brian Boru's great war against them and could be read as urging the moral duty of resistance to the new foreigners. To quote Australian commentator Stan Grant "The cornerstone of sovereignty is borders. If a nation cannot defend its borders, it is not a nation." [189]

For the O'Briens this period culminated with the 'battle of Dysert O'Dea' in May 1318 which was the most resounding victory gained during the 'Bruce wars' of any Irish clan leader. If you look at it from a purely Irish viewpoint, Muirchertach O'Brien was a nationalist who defeated the Normans leaving them on the back foot, a position from which they never fully recovered. The victory also confirmed Muirchertach O'Brien as the undisputed King of Thomond.

Shortly after the battle the eminent bard 'Maolmhuire Bacach' wrote the poem 'Abair frim, a Eire ogh' in which he described Muirchertach O'Brien as a reincarnation of Brian Boru, fighting a

second “War of the Gaedhil with the Gaill” (Irish against the invaders) to abolish his people’s slavery. Even today Muirchertach is regarded by many as an early Irish national visionary.

Despite his many successes, King Muirchertach O’Brien still had to contend with loose ends resulting from the Thomond civil war (1277-1317). The aspirations of clan Brian had not been completely extinguished with their defeat at Lough Rask in 1317, and the grandson of King Brian Roe O’Brien i.e. Brian Bán O'Brien, was now on the rise.

In 1321 Brian Bán O’Brien formed an alliance with the Norman Lord Maurice FitzThomas FitzGerald of Desmond. This alliance was no accident as Brian Bán had fought on the side of the Normans with Richard de Clare in the battle of Dysert O’Dea. Brian Bán survived the battle and joined with FitzGerald, who had now been given possession of Richard de Clare’s lands in Limerick and Thomond.

In 1322, Brian Bán O’Brien, in an attempt to push back on English settlements in his territory, attacked and burned the English fortress of Atthassol on the River Suir. This raised the ire of William Donn de Burgh, the 3rd Earl of Ulster as Atthassol was under his protection. In July 1326 William Donn de Burgh was further enraged as Brian Bán O’Brien attended a meeting at Kilkenny, where a plot was devised to rebel against King Edward II, assume control of Ireland, and elect and crown Maurice FitzThomas FitzGerald as King of Ireland.

This was the last straw for William Donn de Burgh and the traditional FitzGerald vs de Burgh rivalry now came into play. He enlisted the support of King Muirchertach O’Brien, and thus Thomond was drawn into the conflict. In the summer of 1328, their combined forces marched south to engage the forces of Brian Bán O’Brien and Maurice FitzGerald.

The two armies met on the 14th July 1328 at near Thurles in County Tipperary. In what is known as ‘The Battle of Thomond’ (Irish: Áth an Urchair) the forces of de Burgh and Muirchertach O’Brien were decisively defeated by Brian Bán O’Brien and Maurice FitzGerald; who only lost 80 men in the whole battle. [190]

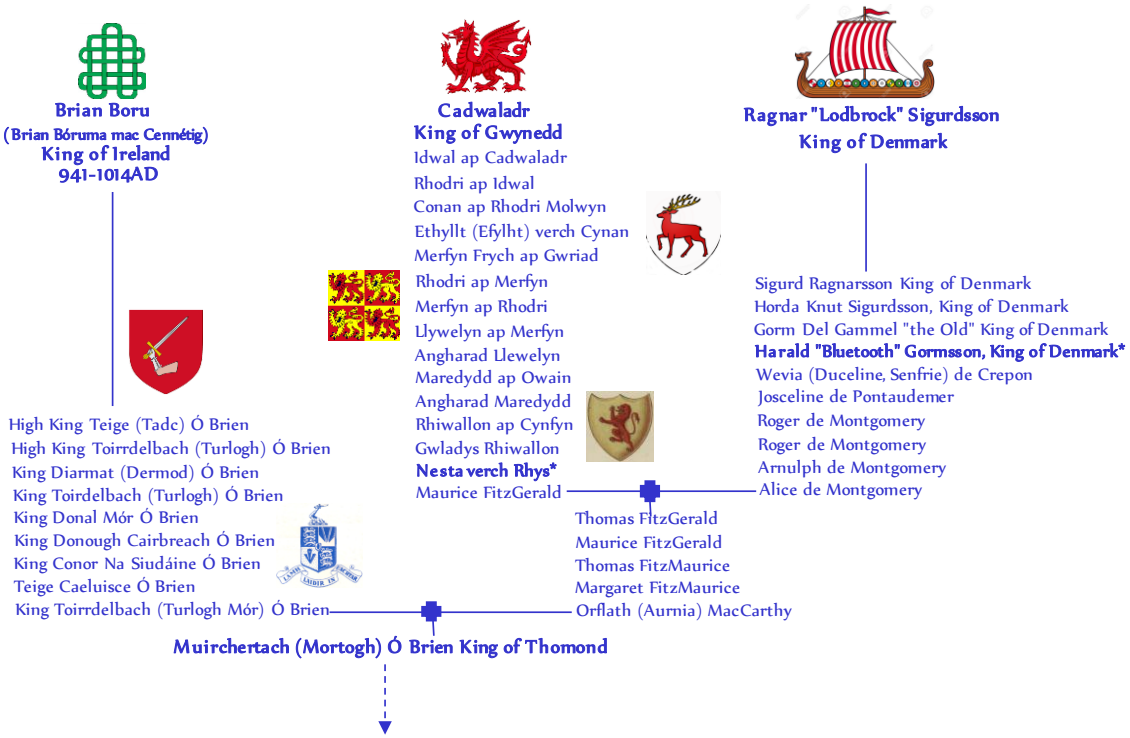
The Annals of the Four Masters records that in 1328, an army led by Murtough O'Brien and the Clann-Cuilein (i.e. the MacNamaras) fought against Brian Bán O’Brien; but Murtough was defeated, and Conor O'Brien, Donnell of the Donnells, the son of Cumara MacNamara, with many others, were slain. Another attempt by Muirchertach, with MacNamara support, to curb Brian Bán's excesses met with the same fate later in the year. [191]

However, despite these reverses Muirchertach O’Brien’s grip on Thomond never faltered. Indeed, it was Brian Bán O’Brien who came to peace with Muirchertach in 1336. In return, Muirchertach appears to have recognised his rival as his ‘tanist’ before his own death in 1343 after reigning for thirty-one years. Brian Bán O’Brien was his successor and reigned as King of Thomond until he died in 1350.

Muirchertach O’Brien married Edaouin MacGorman of which little is known. The annals are a little unclear at this point, they state that Muirchertach O’Brien had only one son who lived to adulthood i.e. Mahon Moinmoy O’Brien. However, we have records showing that Muirchertach O’Brien had another son i.e. Toirdhealbhach Maol O’Brien who as an adult was a contestant to the throne of Thomond between 1375 and 1398. [192]

The family of Muirchertach Ó Brien's mother - Orflath MacCarthy

Muirchertach O'Brien's mother was Orflath MacCarthy. If we look at her family history, we see examples of our heritage from outside Ireland entering the O'Brien line. Two interesting branches join our ancestry at this point, one from the royal line of Wales and the other from Scandinavia, consisting of Vikings from Denmark.



The Welsh line includes the likes of Nesta verch Rhys* (princess of Wales) of Cilgerran Castle, born around 1085. She persuaded her husband Gerald FitzWalter to escape an attack by her cousin Owain ap Cadwgan by sliding down a lavatory chute. After Owain's forces broke into the castle they could not find Gerald so they abducted Nesta and her children, and took them to Eglwyseg Rocks north of the Vale of Llangollen. This aroused the wrath of other Welsh land holders who had also been victimised by Owain. They combined their forces and attacked Owain and his followers. They succeeded in rescuing Nesta and her children and sent Owain to exile in Ireland.

This line stretches back to the Welsh Kings and includes Cadwaladr who was King of Gwynedd from 655 to 682. Legend states he was the first to use the symbol of a dragon on his coat of arms, and we see this carried over to the present day where Wales uses the same symbol. Cadwaladr is regarded as the the last in an ancient line to hold the title "King of Britain." After Henry VII defeated Richard III at the Battle of Bosworth Field and took the crown to become the first Tudor King of England, he used the symbol of the dragon on his coat of arms to reinforce his legitimacy by showing he was a descendant of Cadwaladr. [193]



Tudor Coat of arms.

The Scandinavian branch contains a number of interesting Viking names. Successive Viking invasions prior to the battle of Clontarf in 1014 resulted in many inter marriages between the Danes and local Irish women. One line that we can trace goes back to the Kings of Denmark and includes the likes of Harald "Bluetooth" Gormsson, King of Denmark* who died in 986. Harold is famous for uniting the Danish tribes and achieving a functioning society even though many different dialects were spoken across the tribes. His name lives on today as the name for the wireless protocol we use to connect phones & PCs called "Bluetooth" the symbol for which is based on Viking runes for his names[194]

Another interesting Viking in this line is Sigurd Ragnarsson King of Denmark otherwise known as Sigurd "Snake-in-the-Eye." Sigurd played a leading role in the Viking raids of Ireland and England. According to accounts, King Ælla of Northumbria killed Sigurd's father Ragnar Lothbrok, in about 865, by having him thrown into a pit of snakes. According to traditional accounts, Ragnar is reputed to have exclaimed, as he was dying, "How the young pigs would squeal if they knew what the old boar suffers!"

Sigurd and his siblings were reportedly informed of their father's fate by an envoy from Ælla. As he heard the news, Sigurd was supposedly so affected that he cut himself to the bone with a knife he held in his hand; his brother Björn Ironside supposedly gripped a spear so tightly that the imprint of his fingers was left in the wood. Sigurd and his brothers swore they would avenge Ragnar's death. [195]

In 866 the brothers crossed the North Sea with a "Store Hær" (Great Army) of over 3000 Vikings. Traditional accounts claim that the first attack on Ælla failed. Sigurd's older brother, Ivar the Boneless, devised a strategy in which the Great Heathen Army occupied and sacked York, to provoke Ælla into engaging on the Vikings' terms. Under Ivar's plan, the Vikings feigned retreat, leading Ælla to underestimate them and become encircled.

According to The Tale of Ragnar's Sons (part of the "Sagas of Ragnar Lothbrok") Ælla was captured alive and executed afterwards by a method called the "blood eagle."

Sigurd "Snake-in-the-Eye" married King Ælla's daughter, Heluna (a.k.a Bleja) "Princess of England" and one of their children, Horda Knut Sigurdsson who became King of Denmark, is our ancestor.

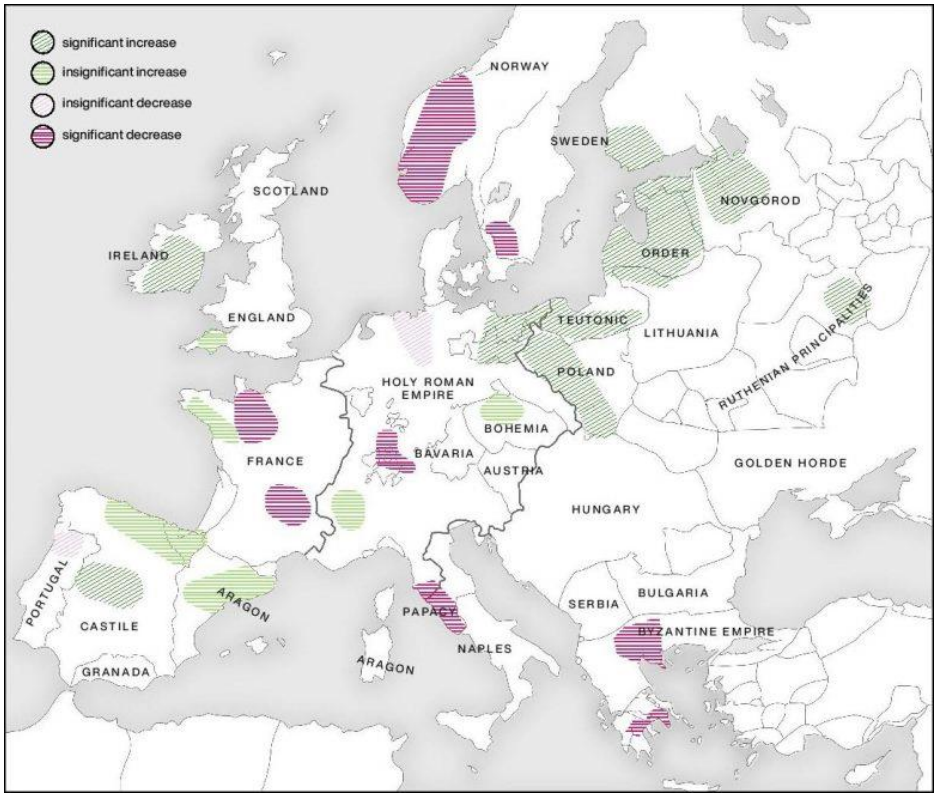
Bubonic Plague (Black Death) impact on Ireland 1347-1352

The Black Death, which plagued Europe, West Asia, and North Africa from 1347-1352, is the most infamous pandemic in history. It occurred right in the middle of the Gaelic Resurgence period but in the course of this research I can see no evidence of its presence or impact on the day to day lives of the Thomond population.

This appeared curious as historians have estimated that up to 50% of Europe's population died during the pandemic and credit the Black Death with transforming religious and political structures, even precipitating major cultural and economic transformations such as the Renaissance.

The lack of any visible impact of Bubonic Plague in Thomond seems to be explained by a recent study that showed mortality rates in Europe were not as universal or as widespread as long thought. The study analysed pollen from sites across Europe to determine how agricultural activity changed during the plague, the theory being that areas hit by plague would experience a significant downturn in agricultural activity; while those not affected would show no change or an increase.

Sharp agricultural declines in Scandinavia, France, southwestern Germany, Greece and central Italy support the high mortality rates attested to in medieval sources. Meanwhile many regions, including much of Central and Eastern Europe and parts of Western Europe including Ireland and Iberia, show evidence for continuity or uninterrupted growth. [196]



Map showing changes in agriculture across Europe during the Bubonic Plague 1347-1352

Chapter 5
Gaelic Resurgence period 1318-1543

The great battle of Dysert O'Dea in 1318, in which the forces of Thomond defeated the Anglo-Norman Lord Richard de Clare, contributed to a Gaelic Resurgence in western Ireland which lasted until the mid 1500s. During this period the O'Brien family managed to expand their territory and overlordship into areas which had been settled by the Normans. Over time the borders of Thomond were pushed outwards to include todays Counties of Clare, Limerick and Tipperary and beyond.

The Gaelic Resurgence was a period of prosperity and infrastructure building in Thomond. Skirmishes involving Anglo-Norman settlers and other clans as well as the occasional civil war still did occur, but at a much-reduced rate compared with earlier years. The building of tower houses and castles continued and being a more prosperous time, the quality of the building work improved.

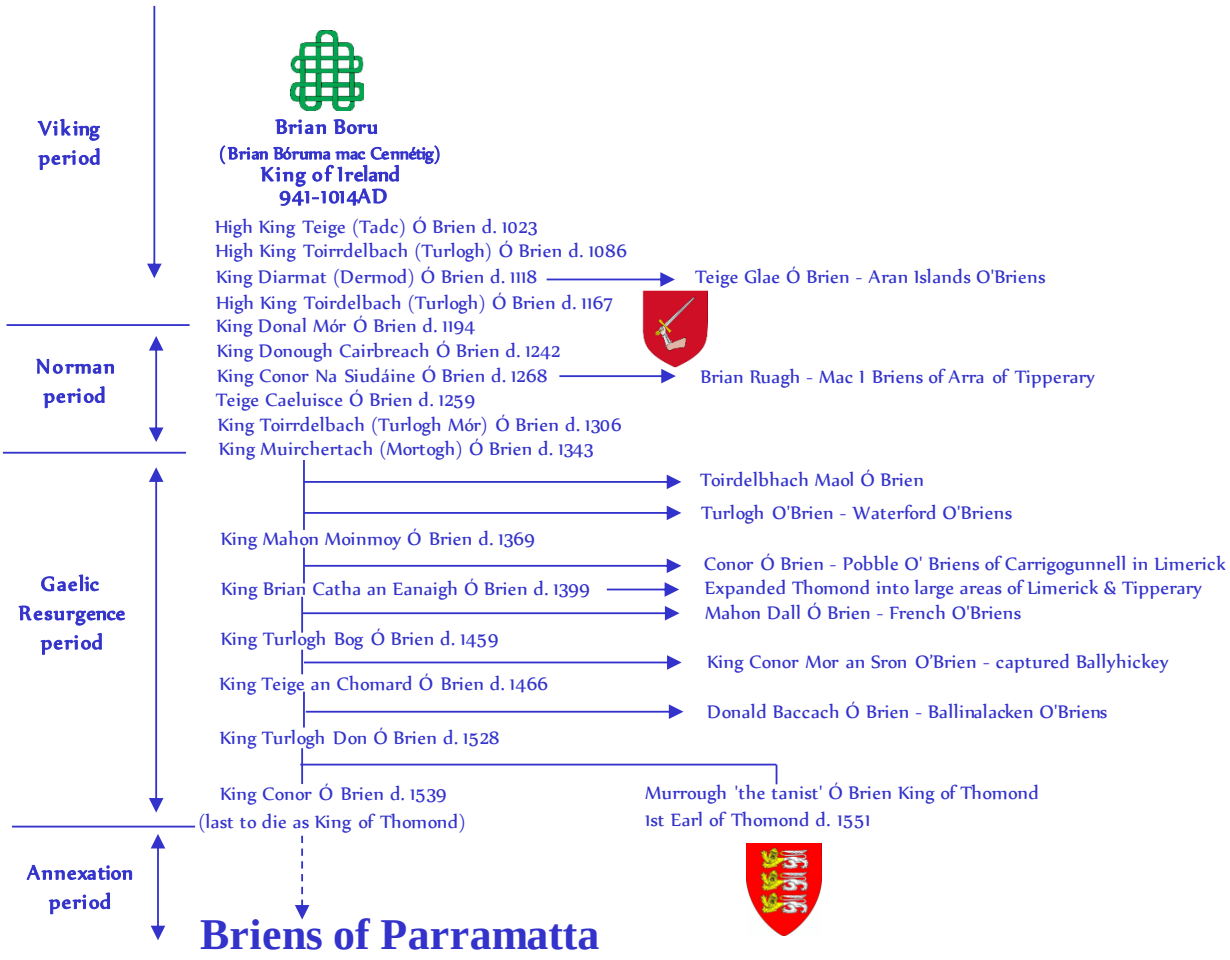
As time went on many of the established Norman families began to adopt the Irish language and customs, becoming known as the Old English, and in the words of a phrase coined in later historiography, they became "more Irish than the Irish themselves." Over the following centuries they sided with the indigenous Irish in political and military conflicts against England and generally stayed Catholic after the Reformation.

The English authorities grew so worried about the Gaelicisation of Ireland that, in 1366 at a parliament in Kilkenny, they passed special legislation known as the "Statutes of Kilkenny" banning those of English descent from speaking the Irish language, wearing Irish clothes or inter-marrying with the Irish. Since the English government in Dublin had little real authority outside the city walls - known as the Pale, the Statutes had minimal effect beyond the Pale. [197]

Some of the O'Brien branches that settled in previously Norman held areas include the O'Briens of the Comeragh Mountains, Co. Waterford who descended from Turlogh, son of King Muirchertach. This Turlogh died in 1380. Major O'Brien expansion into the east Limerick area occurred during the early 1400s, led by Conor, a younger son of King Mahon Moinmoy O'Brien. Conor's main base was at Carrigogunnell castle, and the surrounding territory gives its name to the barony of Pubblebrian, from Pobble Brien or Pobail Briain, 'the people of Brian'. Conor is the ancestor of the later O'Briens of Carrigogunnell. [198]



Remains of Carrigogunnell Castle in Co Limerick



The chart above includes some of the O'Brien family branches who re-settled areas previously occupied by Normans after 1169.

During the Gaelic Resurgence period, branches of the O'Briens also settled in the Arra district of Tipperary and the lush valleys of Aherlow north of the Galtees. These had similar names, the Mac I Brien Arra and the MacBriens respectively.

Other branches were the O'Brien rulers of the Aran Islands and, within Co. Clare, those of Shallee, Magowna, Ballymicooda, Ballyportry, Ballynalaken, Ennistymon, Coill O'bhFlannchadha (around Kilkeedy in northern Clare), Leamaneh and Dromoland.[199]

The noted antiquarian, T. J. Westropp, described this period as the "Golden Age of castle-building in Thomond" because of the high standard of construction which had been achieved by the masons of this period. The MacNamaras were prolific castle builders in Thomond during the Gaelic Resurgence period. Hugh MacNamara, or possibly his son Síoda, built Ballyhannon Castle located near Quin Co Clare about 1490. By the early 1500s it is mentioned as being owned by Donnell O'Brien.



Remains Shallee castle Co Clare. Home of the Shallee O'Briens

The O'Briens, also built castles. Just east of the town of Ruan in the Dromore Woods Nature Preserve lies Dromore Castle. Dromore Woods now occupies land once owned by Teige O'Brien, the 2nd son of Conor O'Brien 3rd Earl of Thomond. This Teige is discussed in more detail in Chapter 6. Dromore Castle was built in the late fifteenth or early sixteenth century and was later extended by Teige in the early seventeenth century. The castle and surrounding lands were granted to Teige's father at an inquisition held in Ennis in 1579.[200]

Ballyhannon Castle near Quin Co Clare built by the MacNamaras around 1490.

The MacNamaras and the O'Briens intermarried and remained allies for centuries.





Dromore Castle is located on a peninsula in the northern part of Dromore Lake, 1.8 km east of Ruan. It lies within the Nature Preserve of Dromore Wood.

Just south of Quilty stands the conspicuous Tromra Castle. It is a well-marked object in all wide views of the low central coast of Clare. It stands out, a sharp dark speck, whether we look from the open sea, from the summits of Moher, Callan or Kinnard, or stand on the high ground at the fort of Cahermurphy near Miltown Malbay.[201]

Tromra Castle is estimated to have been built between 1460 and 1490 (judging from the style of the foundations). The builder is unknown but the land on which it sits was owned by Teige Aluinn O'Brien in the 1270s and remained in his family for generations after that.

Tromra Castle near the town of Quilty Co Clare, sits about 1km from the Atlantic coast.

It is the site of the ambush on our ancestor Daniel O'Brien 1st Viscount Clare, and is discussed more in Chapter 6.



Teige Aluinn O'Brien was a member of the "Aran Islands" clan. Many of this clan lived off-shore from the northern Clare coast on one of the three Islands that make up the Aran group. These islands are described in the Clare Library as the "Isles of Aran where the lofty battlements of their 'castle of Inishere' rise over the prehistoric dry-stone walls of an early two-ringed fort." [202]



Inishere Castle set amongst prehistoric battlements.

Located on Inishere Island, the smallest of the Aran Island chain.

The Aran Islands clan was descended from Teige Glae O'Brien who died in 1170, son of Dermot O'Brien, King of Munster who died in 1120. They founded a Franciscan convent on the holy ground among the churches of Killeany on the great Isle of Aran about 1460.

These O'Briens were expert seamen, and the citizens of Galway were glad to pay the friendly power, entrenched across their bay, twelve 'tuns' of wine yearly for protecting their harbour from pirates. The alliance lasted unbroken from the fourteenth to the sixteenth century. [203]

Smithstown Castle situated next to the Deelagh River in Co Clare



Smithstown Castle (aka Ballynagowan Castle) is located between Lisdonvarna and Kilfenora Co Clare. The castle was probably built by Turlogh Don O'Brien and passed to Teige O'Brien 3rd son of Murrough O'Brien 'the tanist' when his father died in 1551.

Teige O'Brien married More O'Brien of Ennistymon and their daughter Honora (b. 1570) married Richard Wingfield and their line became the 3rd creation of the Viscounts Powerscourt. Smithstown takes its name from beal-atha-an-ghobhan, the "mouth of the smith's ford" and is mentioned in O'Brien family letters dated 1713 as the home of Captain Teige O'Brien, the nephew of Donough O'Brien 1st Baronet of Dromoland.[204]

The MacMahons were another castle building family and a fine example of their work can be seen at Carrigaholt Castle. Constructed about 1480. It is set on the verge of a cliff overlooking the Shannon Estuary. This tall well-preserved tower house stands in one corner of a turreted bawn, it has five-storeys with a vault on the fourth floor and most of the usual tower-house features, such as a murder hole inside the entrance, a mural winding stair and pistol loops.

The castle was occupied by Teige Caech `the short sighted` MacMahon, in September 1588 when seven ships of the Spanish Armada anchored at Carrigaholt. Although aid was refused by the MacMahons, the castle was nonetheless unsuccessfully besieged shortly afterwards by Sir Conyers Clifford.

Ownership later passed to Sir Daniel O'Brien 1st Viscount Clare who was responsible for inserting many of the castle`s windows as well as the fireplace on the fifth floor, which bears, the inscription "DB 1603." After the forfeiture of his extensive 57,000-acre estate in 1691, the castle was acquired by the Burton family who held it until 1906. [205]



Carrigaholt Castle, overlooking the Shannon estuary, close to the town of Carrigaholt Co Clare.

Thomond Monarchs 1343 - 1455

After King Muirchertach O'Brien died in 1343 the Kingship of Thomond ironically swung back to a member of 'clan Brian' i.e. Brian Bán Ó Brien; younger brother of King Donough Ó Brien who was killed at the battle of Lough Rask in 1317.

Brian Bán O'Brien had defeated Muirchertach O'Brien's army in 1328 in the 'The Battle of Thomond' however by the time King Muirchertach died in 1343 he and Brian Bán had patched up their differences and Brian was named Muirchertach O'Brien's tanist. King Brian Bán O'Brien remained on the throne of Thomond until his death in 1350 after which his cousin Diarmuid Ó Brien reigned until 1360.

After Diarmuid Ó Brien's death in 1360 Muirchertach O'Brien's eldest son (and our ancestor) Mahon Moinmoy O'Brien then became King of Thomond from 1360 until his death in 1369.

King Mahon Moinmoy O'Brien is known for initiating the 'cíos dubh' on the Anglo-Norman settlers. This was a kind of Gaelic pizzo, an annual tax known by the settlers as the "black rent". Mahon Moinmoy introduced this practice as the price of protection extended to the settlers "for the privilege of quite occupation of their holdings" [206]

Mahon Moinmoy O'Brien's son Brian Catha an Eanaigh O'Brien (aka Brian Sreamhach Ua Briain) followed and was inaugurated King in 1369 but had to withstand a challenge from his uncle Toirdelbhach Maol O'Brien for the monarchy of Thomond.

When his uncle tried to enlist the help of the Gerald FitzGerald, 3rd Earl of Desmond to wrestle back the realm, Brian Catha thoroughly routed them in a 'Battle at Croom' in Co Limerick in a key military success. This had the added benefit of winning back large parts of Limerick for Thomond.



Monasteranenagh Abbey (Mainistir an Aonaigh). Site of the 'battle at Croom' in 1369

The site of the 'Battle at Croom' of 1369 was near the the Monasteranenagh Abbey (Mainistir an Aonaigh) about 4 Km east of the present town of Croom in County Limerick. To recognise his success Brian Catha was known thereafter as 'Brian Catha O'Brien an Eanaigh' ("Brian of the Battle of Aonaigh").

In the autumn of 1394, English King Richard II left for Ireland, where he remained until May 1395. His army of more than 8,000 men was the largest force brought to the island during the late Middle Ages. After Richard returned to England any consolidation of the English position in Ireland proved to be short-lived. This forced Richard II to return to Ireland in May 1399. [207]

During this 2nd visit by Richard II Brian Catha O'Brien paid nominal homage to him at Waterford and was well received in return. This was due in part to the friendship between Brian Catha O'Brien and the de Burghs of Clanricarde in Galway.

Thomond was now in such a position that Brian Catha O'Brien's celebrated thirty-year reign was marked as a time of peace and plenty. [208]

King Brian Catha O'Brien died around 1399 and was succeeded as King of Thomond by his younger brother Conchubhar O'Brien (Conor O'Brien) who reigned until his death in 1426. [209]

During King Conchubhar O'Brien's reign another flare up of the Thomond civil war occurred and threatened to escalate into a protracted feud. For nearly a century the descendants of Brian Roe O'Brien (i.e. clan Brian descendants) had been living in County Limerick in the area around the Arra mountains. This branch of our O'Briens had obviously maintained a grudge towards the 'clan Turlogh' Kings for their defeat at the battle of Lough Rask in 1317.

In 1409 Teige and Morrogh O'Brien, the four times great grand sons of Brian Roe O'Brien (who had been murdered by Thomas de Clare in 1277) formed an army and marched into Thomond to take on King Conchubhar O'Brien. The annals are not clear on this engagement but it does seem that King Conchubhar O'Brien may have been taken by surprise and was defeated.

The victory by Teige and Morrogh O'Brien appears to have been comprehensive as King Conchubhar O'Brien was banished from Thomond, however there is no evidence that either Teige and Morrogh claimed the throne of Thomond during Conchubhar O'Brien's absence.

The deposed King Conchubhar O'Brien left Thomond after his banishment and headed straight to Desmond to enlist the support of James FitzGerald. James had been fostered to the O'Briens and raised by them during his childhood and he and the O'Briens remained on good terms.

In 1410 a combined force of James FitzGerald and the followers of Conchubhar O'Brien returned to Thomond and engaged Teige and Morrogh O'Brien, this time overwhelming them. Teige and Morrogh surrendered and by all account's peace broke out between these two O'Brien branches. [210]

James FitzGerald appears in his own well-known Irish saga, which also involves his nephew Thomas FitzGerald the 5th Earl Desmond.

It began in 1411 when Thomas FitzGerald was out hunting one day, but due to night falling he was obliged to seek shelter with a tenant on his Desmond property named MacCormac. It was on this over night stay that he met the tenant's daughter Catherine MacCormac, and instantly fell in love. Thomas and Catherine were married not long after.

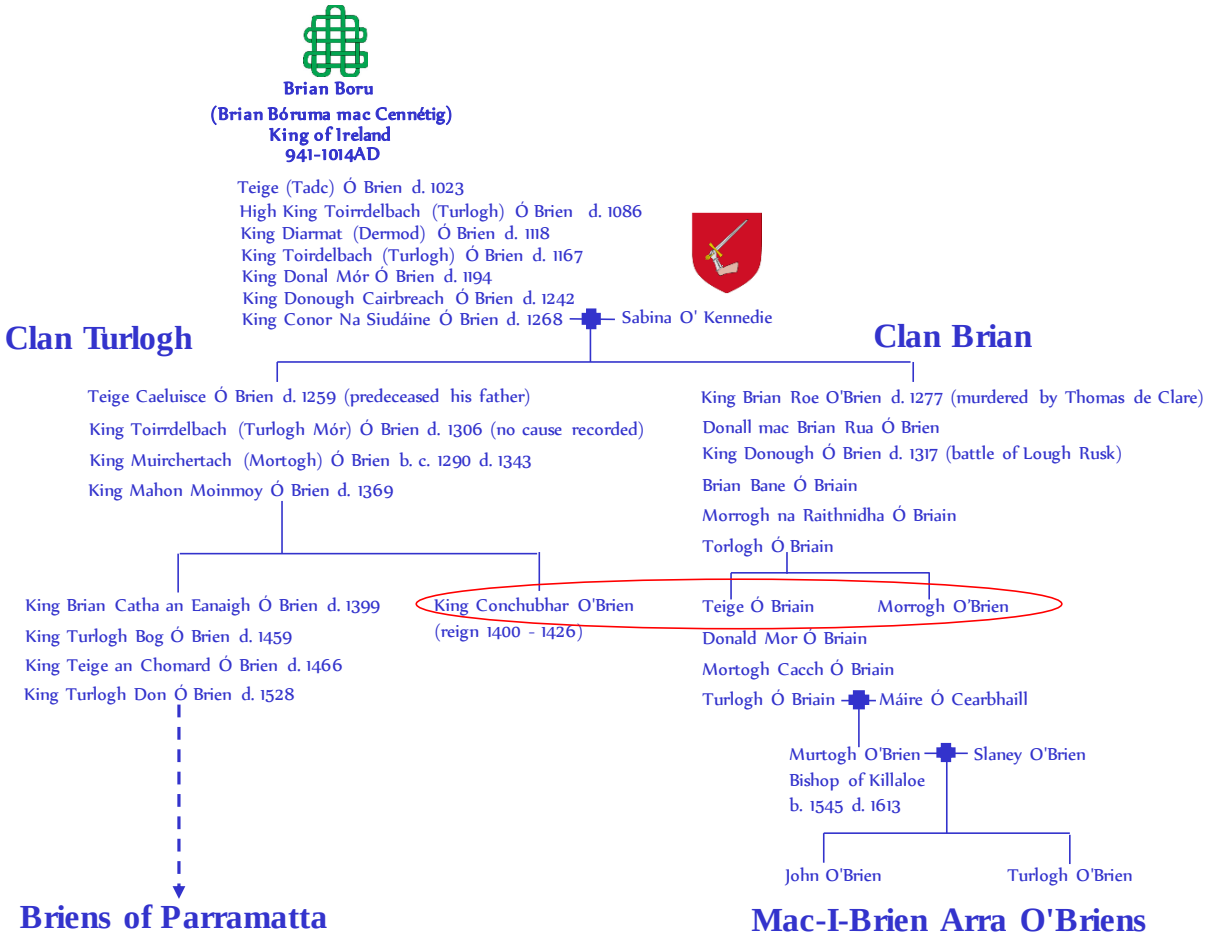


Diagram showing those involved in the dispute over the monarchy of Thomond in 1409

James FitzGerald was Thomas FitzGerald's uncle and he saw an advantage was to be gained by challenging Thomas and Catherine's marriage. At the time, marriage between a man of Norman ancestry and a woman of Gaelic blood was in violation of the Statutes of Kilkenny. James FitzGerald took a leading role in forcing Thomas and Catherine into exile in France, where Thomas FitzGerald died at Rouen two years later.

Through the courts, James FitzGerald was able to deprive his nephew Thomas of his earldom and disinherit him for marrying far below his station. In 1418 James was granted the title 6th Earl of Desmond along with the estates of Desmond.

In 1420 James FitzGerald founded the Franciscan friary at Askeaton Abbey, James was a prominent Irish supporter of the House of York and godfather to George Plantagenet, 1st Duke of Clarence. James FitzGerald died in 1462 and was buried at the Franciscan friary in Youghal.

This ill-fated romance between Thomas and Catherine FitzGerald was the subject of "Desmond's Song" by the Irish poet Thomas Moore.

Desmond's Song:

By the Feal's wave benighted,
No star in the skies,
To thy door by Love lighted,
I first saw those eyes.
Some voice whisper'd o'er me,
As the threshold I cross'd,
There was ruin before me,
If I loved, I was lost.

Love came, and brought sorrow
Too soon in his train;
Yet so sweet, that to-morrow
'Twere welcome again.
Though misery's full measure
My portion should be,
I would drain it with pleasure,
If pour'd out by thee.

You, who call it dishonour
To bow to this flame,
If you've eyes, look but on her,
And blush while you blame.
Hath the pearl less whiteness
Because of its birth?
Hath the violet less brightness
For growing near earth?

No — Man for his glory
To ancestry flies;
But Woman's bright story
Is told in her eyes.
While the Monarch but traces
Through mortals his line,
Beauty, born of the Graces,
Ranks next to Divine!

King Conchubhar O'Brien died at an advanced age in 1426 and his nephew Tadhg an Glemore O'Brien was inaugurated in his place. [211] The annals at this point state that hardly a word was recorded about the reign of Tadhg an Glemore O'Brien as in England the 'Wars of the Roses' having broken out, occupied the politics of the time and gave the Kings of Thomond a respite from incursions.

The next we hear is that King Tadhg an Glemore O'Brien was usurped by his brother Mathgamain Dall O'Brien in 1444. Mathgamain Dall O'Brien was inaugurated King of Thomond and he doesn't seem to have been that effective as King because two years later in 1446 the annals say "a great war broke out in Thomond by which all of Thomond was spoiled." [212]

King Mathgamain Dall O'Brien was taken prisoner and held somewhere within Thomond and it took the intervention of Ulick Ruadh Burke, 5th Clanricarde (aka Mac William Uachtar) of the de Burgh dynasty in Galway, to bring order to Thomond.

The settlement involved placing a new King on the Thone of Thomond i.e. Toirdhealbhach Bóg O'Brien (aka Turlough Bóg O'Brien - our ancestor).

Turlough Bóg O'Brien was married to Catherine a daughter of Ulick Ruadh Burke, and "Ulick Burke supported Toirdhealbhach Bóg throughout his reign." King Turlough Bóg O'Brien was King of Thomond from 1446 until his death in 1459 after which Donough O'Brien, the son of Mathgamain Dall was inaugurated King of Thomond. King Donough O'Brien had a brief reign of less than two years.

Turlough Bóg O'Brien and his wife Catherine Burke had nine sons recorded. The eldest was our ancestor Teige an Chomhaid O'Brien who became King of Thomond in 1461 after deposing his cousin King Donough O'Brien.[213]

On the shore of Lough Inchiquin near Corofin County Clare are the ruins of 'Inchiquin Castle'. Construction of the castle was probably commenced by King Turlough Bog O'Brien about 1445 and was completed by his son King Teige an Chomhaid O'Brien about 1461.

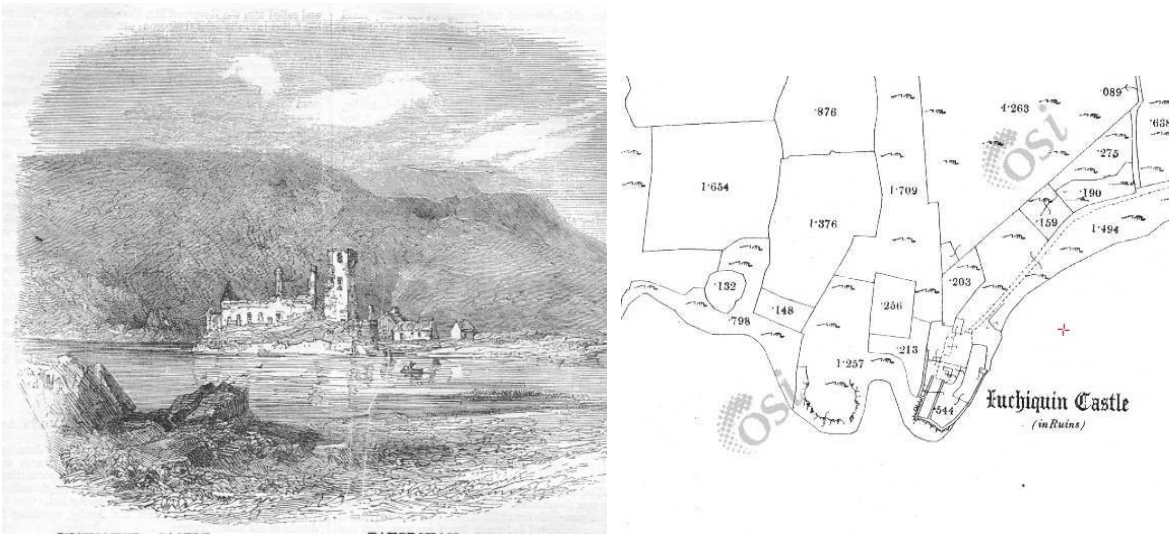
Inchiquin Castle was used as the family home and seat of power and gives us a taste of how the late 15th century Gaelic chiefs would have lived lives of privilege, culture, politics and warfare.

This castle is situated at the northern side of the Lough, though greatly dilapidated, is still a picturesque and interesting ruin, consisting of the remains of a barbican tower, keep, and old mansion-house attached to it. One description of it I found said "it sits on a rocky peninsula standing out in the water, with its grey walls relieved by the dark masses of the wooded hills behind, is eminently striking and imposing."

King Teige an Chomhaid O'Brien took his distinctive nickname (an Chomhaid) from the lands around Lough Inchiquin in which he had established his new seat of power. He built the tower of Inchiquin Castle shortly before his father's death in 1459 and made it his new residence.

Teige an Chomhaid O'Brien was by all accounts an outstanding warrior King who had the foresight to take advantage of England being distracted by the 'Wars of the Roses'.

In 1463 Teige an Chomhaid subjugated and collected tribute from the O'Neil clan. [214] In 1464 Teige led the Thomond army south through Desmond and his military prowess was such that Thomas FitzGerald, 7th Earl of Desmond was forced to give back to Thomond the entire territory of County Limerick. [215]



A drawing of Inchiquin Castle (L) and a map from 1887. [216]



Lough Inchiquin in County Clare (2018).

Following the campaign of 1464, Teige an Chomhaid O'Brien formed an alliance with the Ó Néil clan and together they were active in trying to drive the English out of Ireland. They drove their forces eastwards and whilst the alliance can be said to have failed in this objective, they did have considerable success and managed to restrict the English forces to just a small area surrounding Dublin known as 'the Pale'.

The Mac-Firbis annals record that the people of Lenister wanted "Teige an Chomhaid O'Brien as King of Ireland" and claims he was the "greatest Ó Briain since Brian Bóruma himself." [217]

He was described in the Annals of Loch Cé as "the torch of valour and the prowess of Leth-mogha" [218] [219]

Teige an Chomhaid O'Brien married Anabella Burke (de Burgh) and they had at least three sons. The elder son was our ancestor Turlogh Don O'Brien (our ancestor) who was born about 1455. Their second son was Donough O'Brien of Drumfinglas the progenitor of the O'Briens of Cahircorkran Rath parish and their youngest son was Donald Baccach O'Brien of Carrowduff who was the progenitor of the O'Briens of Ballynalacken, he died in 1503.

The families of Anabella Burke and Teige an Chomhaid O'Brien's mother Catherine de Burgh are covered in Appendix 9.

King Teige an Chomhaid O'Brien died at Inchiquin Castle in 1466 "of a feaver in his owne house" and was succeeded as King of Thomond by his brother Conor Mor an Sron O'Brien. [220]

King Conor Mor O'Brien immediately took steps to sure up his alliances with the de Burghs of Galway. Ever since the Thomond civil war 1277-1317, the O'Briens and de Burghs had been allies, and this alliance was particularly evident during the defeat of the Normans in the battle of Dysert O'Dea in 1318 to which the de Burghs had contributed.



Cloghan Castle a de Burgh strong hold.

Built in 1239, and now restored, it is situated in Galway half way between Loughrea and Gort, just outside the village of Kilchreest.

Conor Mor renewed the treaty with the de Burghs which committed Thomond to provide "offensive and defensive" support of the de Burgh land of Clanricarde and visa versa. [221] Soon after the treaty was ratified the forces of Thomond were drawn into a dispute between the de Burghs and the O'Kellys and Thomond troops were on the march north to Galway. In 1467 the combined forces of Thomond and Clanricarde defeated the O'Kellys at the battle of 'The cross of Moighecroin' in Galway. It was a decisive win for the O'Briens.

In 1469 Clanricarde once again came under attack, this time from forces loyal to the O'Donnells some of which were bent on extracting revenge for their defeat at Moighecroin two years earlier. The O'Donnell force known as "the northern army" were attacking settlements on the Clare / Galway border, in response King Conor Mor an Sron O'Brien dispatched a force who joined with MacWilliam of Clanricarde and they confronted the northerners at Glanog, a small river near Cargin Castle in County Galway.

During this skirmish "Donall the son of O'Conor of Corcomroe and many others not enumerated were slain. Mac William and the O'Briens however rallied their forces and placing themselves in battle array pursued with one accord the army of O'Donnell. But this was of no advantage to them for O'Donnell's army wheeled round on Mac William's and the O'Brien's cavalry at the river called Glanog and there defeated them again; they left many men, horses and valuable things behind and disgracefully fled. This battle was called the defeat of Glanog." [222]

After the defeat at Glanog, Conor Mor an Sron O'Brien undertook a programme of castle building which included Mountcashel castle built around 1470.



Mountcashel castle built by Conor Mor an Sron O'Brien around 1470. Located on the road north from Sixmilebridge south of Kilmurry.

In 1492 rival factions of the Butler family were at war with each other resulting in increasing hostilities across the countryside. Fighting also took place in the streets of Dublin culminating in the burning of many buildings in Ship Street where members of a Butler faction were living. Responsibility for law and order lay with the the Lord Justice, Gerald FitzGerald, 8th Earl of Kildare and it was clear that he had lost control of the situation.

In an attempt to restore calm across the country, King Conor Mor an Sron O'Brien joined with John Butler, 6th Earl of Ormond along with MacWilliam of Clanricarde and marched their combined forces into Lenister and Meath with very little opposition.

Their aim was to remove Gerald FitzGerald, 8th Earl of Kildare and replace him with Walter FitzSimons the ArchBishop of Dublin as Lord Justice. In this they succeeded and Gerald FitzGerald was sent to London as a traitor where he was imprisoned in the Tower of London. He was tried in 1496 and used the trial to convince King Henry VII that the ruling factions in Ireland were "false knaves." [223]

The Archbishop of Cashel accused FitzGerald of burning down his cathedral. FitzGerald responded, "I would not have done it if I had not been told that My Lord Archbishop was inside." This frankness delighted the King and Henry VII immediately appointed him as Lord Deputy of Ireland, saying "All Ireland cannot govern this Earl; then let this Earl govern all Ireland." Henry VII allowed him to marry as his second wife Elizabeth St. John, a distant cousin of the King. Gerald FitzGerald returned to Ireland in 1496 in triumph.

Upon returning to Ireland in 1496 Gerald FitzGerald marched his forces into Thomond to punish King Conor Mor an Sron O'Brien for supporting John Butler, 6th Earl of Ormond. Conor Mor O'Brien marched at the head of the Thomond forces to meet Gerald FitzGerald and they engaged near the castle of Ballyhickey in Co Clare.

Conor Mor O'Brien's army defeated FitzGerald's forces and, in the process, acquired Ballyhickey Castle along with other strongholds owned by the Finneen Macconmara. This was the last engagement of King Conor Mor an Sron O'Brien as he died in 1496 shortly after the battle at Ballyhickey. [224]

King Conor was followed by his younger brother Turlogh Oge O'Brien (nicknamed Gilladluv – the black-complexioned) who reigned as King of Thomond for three years. The monarchy of Thomond then passed to our ancestor Turlogh Don O'Brien who became King of Thomond in 1499. The story of Turlogh Don O'Brien is told in a later section.

The daughters of Conor Mor an Sron O'Brien married into noble families. Finola married Hugh Roe O'Donnell, prince of the Cinel Conall in todays county Donegal. According to the Four Masters; Finola was "a woman who, as regards both body and soul, had gained more fame and renown than any of her contemporaries, having spent her life and her wealth in acts of charity, and after having been twenty-two years in the habit (dress) of St. Francis, died on the first day of Lent, which fell on the 5th of February 1528, and was buried in the monastery of Donegal, which had been founded by her husband and herself in 1474." Finola's sister Margaret married Owen O'Ruarc prince of Breifney, in County Leitrim.

To illustrate how wealthy Thomond was in the 15th century; Domhnall Mac Gormáin who died in 1484 was described as the richest man in Ireland in terms of live-stock and goods.



Family septs of Thomond in the 1400s

Turlogh Don O'Brien King of Thomond 1455 - 1528

Turlogh Don O'Brien was the eldest son of Teige an Chomhaid O'Brien King of Thomond and Anabel Burke. Turlogh Don was born around 1455 and when his uncle Turlogh Oge O'Brien died in 1499, the Kingship of Thomond came to him.

Turlogh Don had hardly taken up the role when he was drawn into a conflict against Piers Butler the 8th Earl of Ormond, which ended with the Butlers defeated at Moyaliff in 1500.

Turlogh Don's victory at Moyaliff made an impact on the Lord Deputy of Ireland, Gerald FitzGerald, 8th Earl of Kildare, who described Turlogh Don as "a mortal enemy to all Englishmen and the most maliciously disposed of any that I have heard of." [225]



Map of Ireland in 1500

Not long after the Battle of Moyaliff, the Earl of Kildare and Turlogh Don would have their first encounter. In 1504 Turlogh Don marched the forces of Thomond north into Galway in support of his ally Ulick Burke of Clanricarde. Burke was a member of the powerful de Burgh dynasty and his influence in the region had grown in recent times, so much so that Gerald FitzGerald, 8th Earl of Kildare wanted to form an alliance with Burke and offered his daughter Estacia in marriage.

Burke refused and in an act of provocation moved his troops into Galway and occupied the town despite it having a Royal charter. Kildare being the Lord Deputy of Ireland, had to act and thus began his march westwards.

Kildare marched his army of some 6000 soldiers from Dublin across Ireland into Galway to engage Burke. Ulick Burke had mustered a force of 4000, comprised of his own troops plus those of his allies including Thomond.

The opposing forces met on the 19th of August 1504 at Knockdoe Hill near Lackagh. Known as the "Battle of Knockdoe" it was probably the largest and bloodiest battle fought in Ireland for hundreds of years.

The fighting continued unabated for many hours, until at last Burke's army began to be forced back. They eventually broke, always the most disastrous occurrence for any army of the period. Once one side began to flee, the slaughter proper began. The killing continued as far as Claregalway and to the banks of the Clare River. Folklore suggests that a number of skirmishes took place along this river's bank. [226]



Knockdoe Hill, site of the battle in 1504

Local tradition has it that one such remnant was routed in a place called Ballybrone or "Townland of the Sorrows." The following morning, Kildare marched to the town of Galway where the Mayor had the FitzGerald coat of arms set on one side of Lynch's Castle in honour of his victory.

Knockdoe is the first Irish battle in which a handgun is known to have been used. It is said to have been carried by a Dublin soldier, who used it to bludgeon an enemy to death. It is likely that this soldier was not the only combatant carrying a gun and that these others were probably used in a more conventional way.

Weapons from the period of the Knockdoe Hill battle.



Kildare's forces were victorious although his army suffered many casualties. Kildare also captured two sons and a daughter of Ulick Burke. The defeat saw the Clanricarde Burkes fade into obscurity for some decades, with their rivals, the Mayo Burkes, gaining influence as a consequence. Irish historian Gerard Anthony Hayes-McCoy said the Battle of Knockdoe led to "the death of Gaelic Ireland." Turlogh Don O'Brien survived unscathed but there is a description of two graves on the hillside that states; "the resting place of two sons of O'Brien of Thomond." [227]



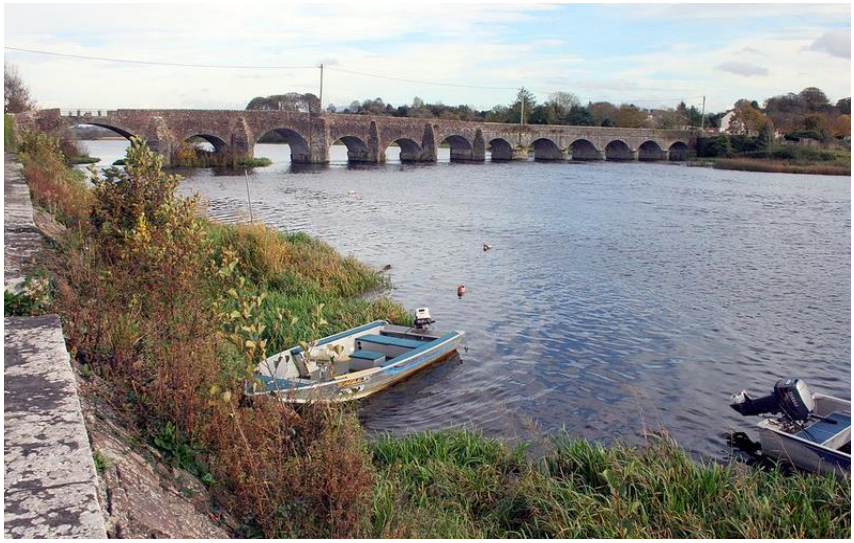
The fighting at Knockdoe spread as far south as Claregalway on the banks of the Clare river.

Claregalway castle was built by the Clanricarde Burkes.[228]

Shortly after the battle at Knockdoe, Turlogh Don O'Brien set about constructing a bridge over the Shannon river near Montpelier in County Limerick. Known as "O'Briens bridge" it was completed in 1506.

In 1510 Kildare was once more on the offensive, this time he saw O'Briens bridge as a major threat to his power and influence in west Ireland. He appealed to King Henry VII for troops to attack Thomond and a force was formed with assistance of the Earls of Desmond, O'Donnell and Tyrconnell and they marched towards Limerick.[229]

Kildare's plan was to attack and destroy the bridge, then continue into Thomond and attack the O'Carrolls and other clans in east Thomond to prevent them linking up with the O'Briens. After Kildare's men burned and rendered the bridge un-usable, they camped for the night near Móin na mBrathar (Montpelier).



O'Brien's Bridge near Montpelier in County Limerick.

Turlogh Don however had been given advance warning of Kildare's plan and managed to join with the MacNamaras positioning themselves out- of-sight near the bridge and waited for Kildare's army to arrive. In a bold move the combined O'Brien and MacNamara forces forded the Shannon river at night and surround Kildare's encampment.

At dawn the O'Brien and MacNamaras forces surprised Kildare in what became known as the "Battle of of Móin na mBrathar" (aka battle of the Shannon river). Kildare's forces were routed and Turlogh Don O'Brien, in what could be seen as revenging the defeat at Knockdoe, returned to Limerick city in triumph. It is said that this defeat initiated the decline of the The Lord Deputy's powers in Ireland, which ultimately led to wholesale changes in Irish government. [230]

The O'Briens rebuilt the bridge, this time erecting two castles, each with walls 12 feet (3.7 m) thick, one on each side of the river. The castles stood in the water close to shore and were connected by a 7-arch wooden bridge that rose to 15 feet (4.6 m) above the water.

In addition to building bridges, Turlogh Don O'Brien also undertook a program of castle building. One example is Ballyportry which was constructed from around 1499. Located on the Corofin to Gort road in Co Clare it is one of the finest examples in Ireland of a complete medieval Gaelic Tower House. It was lost to the O'Brien family after the end of the Nine Years War in 1603 and was in disrepair when American architect Bob Brown took on the task of restoration with careful attention being paid to retaining all its original features and style.

The name comes from a place name in Gaelic meaning "the place of the Harpists." The landscape surrounding Ballyportry is similar in many ways to how it was when it was built. The small hilly fields bounded by blackthorn and hazel hedges provide grazing for cattle and horses as they always did.[231] About the time Ballyportry Castle was built, Turlogh Don O'Brien also built Leamaneh Castle and nearby Smithstown Castle. [232]



Ballyportry Castle on the Corofin - Gort road in Co Clare. Built by Turlogh Don O'Brien around 1499.

Around 1475 Turlogh Don O'Brien married Raghnailt MacNamara, daughter of clan chief John (Rory) MacNamara. The MacNamaras were renown castle builders and Bunratty Castle in southern County Clare is quite likely the best example of their skill. Bunratty passed into the possession of the O'Briens around the time of Turlogh Don and Raghnailt MacNamara's marriage.

The current version of Bunratty Castle was constructed about 1425 during the golden age of castle building in Thomond and had been a strong hold for the MacNamaras. Bunratty Castle once stood on an island in a tidal creek with a view of the water-traffic entering and leaving the port of Limerick. Not surprisingly for such a strategic site, it has had quite a stirring history with a succession of castle buildings constructed on the site from 1251 onwards. [233]

The structure that stands today was restored in the 1960s and is now a major tourist attraction in County Clare.

Raghnailt MacNamara was born around 1455 and she died around 1489. Records suggest that Turlogh Don and Raghnailt had seven children; Conor (our ancestor) who succeeded as King of Thomond, Donough and Teigen who were both killed in battle. Sisters Móre, Finola and Ranelt who married and had families, Dermot who died young and Murrough the youngest who became known as Murrough the 'tanist'. The story of Murrough 'the tanist' is covered in Appendix. 5.

Around 1500 John (Rory) MacNamara died and Bunratty Castle remained in the possession of the O'Briens until 1644; when it was occupied by a Parliamentarian garrison during the Eleven Years War. The last O'Brien to reside there was Barnabas O'Brien, 6th Earl of Thomond who was under attack from the Parliamentarians and could not enlist enough support to defend it. At the same time, he was under attack from the Catholic Confederates. Not wanting to hand Bunratty to the Catholics, Barnabas O'Brien "flung open the gate" and left with his family for Billing in England.



Bunratty Castle located just off the Limerick / Ennis Road (N18)

Although of great size Bunratty Castle is essentially a tower house. While there are only three storeys in the main body of the castle - with vaulted cellars below the hall - the towers have many floors and small chambers approached by a profusion of winding mural stairs. Many were bedrooms with connecting latrines, the castle having no less than fifteen privies.

The castle's grandeur greatly impressed Archbishop Rinuccini who came here in 1646 and wrote of its great beauty, its ponds and 3,000 head of deer. But the property suffered during the 17th-century wars and towards the end of the 19th century the roof of the great hall was allowed to collapse. It was acquired by Lord Gort in 1954 and since his death the castle and its contents have been held in trust for the Irish nation.[234]



How Bunratty looked around 1450 [235]

Turlogh Don married for a second time to Shile MacCarthy who died around 1490, as far as I can tell there were no surviving children from this second marriage. Turlogh Don's third marriage was around 1495 to Ellen FitzGerald, daughter of Thomas FitzJames FitzGerald, 7th Earl of Desmond and his wife Ellice de Barry. They had at least four children; Margaret (who married Mulrony McShane O'Carroll of Ely), Amy, Honora and Slaney. Ellen FitzGerald died in 1534. [236]

Turlogh Don's third marriage to Ellen FitzGerald c. 1495 is noteworthy as this was the first union between our O'Brien line and the FitzGerald family since the 13th century. Past marriages as a rule had been between the O'Briens and Butlers (aka deBurghs & Burkes), but this marriage seems to mark a significant shift of allegiance from one powerful Irish family to another.

Why this is important requires some explanation. Through these families we have a direct connection with 'The Wars of the Roses' which was between the House of York and the House of Lancaster, and the result of these wars had a profound impact on our family fortunes.

During the 15th and 16th centuries the FitzGeralds and Butlers were the two most prominent families of Norman origin in Ireland. They had been inveterate enemies and supported opposite sides during The Wars of the Roses, the FitzGeralds supporting the House of York whilst the Butlers were on the side of the Lancastrians.

The Wars of the Roses effectively ended on the 22nd August 1485 when the Lancastrian leader Henry Tudor (the Earl of Richmond) defeated the House of York leader, King Richard III, at the Battle of Bosworth Field. Henry Tudor subsequently married Elizabeth of York therefore uniting the two hostile parties and he was crowned King Henry VII on the 30th October 1485 becoming the first Tudor monarch. [237]

King Henry VII
He defeated King Richard III at the
Battle of Bosworth Field 22nd August 1485
to become the first Tudor King of England



King Henry VII's son, also Henry, succeeded him as King Henry VIII on the 22nd April 1509 becoming the 2nd Tudor King of England. Henry VIII's reign was free of dealing with Yorkish insurrection and so he had more time to focus on issues in Ireland. Unfortunately, the recent wars still had an adverse influence over our family history, and a lot of this was due to Henry's ongoing grudge against the FitzGeralds; due to their perceived continued support of the House of York.

The FitzGeralds were regarded as "more Irish than the Irish" and seldom left the country unless summoned to London. They had been in Ireland longer than the Butlers having arrived with the initial Norman invasions prior to King Henry II's claim over their territory in 1171; to which they continued harboring some resentment.

Compared to the FitzGeralds, the Butlers were less powerful in Ireland at this time but they were usually present at the English court giving them opportunity to spread hostile propaganda against their enemies the FitzGeralds to King Henry VIII. The Butlers saw themselves as decidedly English and having always been loyal to the crown. Furthermore, they had supported Henry VIII's House of Lancaster during the Wars of the Roses. [238]

As Turlogh Don O'Brien was now married into the FitzGeralds it also follows that he saw the future of Thomond best served by an alliance with a powerful family who identified themselves as Irish rather than English. Regrettably for us, it soon became obvious that King Henry VIII didn't appreciate Turlogh Don O'Brien's new marriage relationship with the FitzGeralds. [239]

The O'Brien / FitzGerald alliance became tangible in 1523 when Turlogh Don O'Brien signed an accord with James FitzGerald 10th Earl of Desmond committing Thomond to be party to a treaty with France. As France at this time was an adversary of England, by consequence Thomond was as well. [240]

For the King of France, Francis I the treaty with the Irish was probably designed more to distract and irritate his arch enemy Henry VIII than for any other reason. It did however allow for French troops to move into Ireland if Henry attacked either Thomond or Desmond, whether this option would have been taken up by Francis I is another matter.

At around the same time King of England Henry VIII and Charles V of Spain were signing a treaty of their own to form an alliance against France. These treaties probably appeared benign to the O'Briens at the time as neither England or Spain were at war with France and France was occupied with defending its interests in Italy.

But the situation changed in December 1524 when a Spanish force landed near Genoa and were confronted and defeated by the French. The Spanish surrendered but to protect against further interference in Italy the French King Francis I signed a secret deal with Pope Clement VII in which the Pope pledged not to support Spain in exchange for France's help in the Pope's war with Naples. Against the advice of his senior commanders, Francis I detached a portion of his forces under the Duke of Albany and sent them south to aid the Pope's campaign.

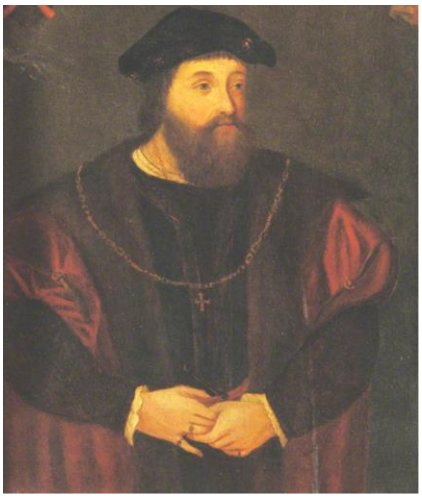
Meanwhile a larger Spanish force under the command of Charles de Lannoy arrived in Italy and attacked Albany's troops. Neither side could gain an advantage and by January 1525 both armies had retreated north and were positioned near Pavia.

The French King Francis I joined his troops there while they recuperated. Then on the evening of 23rd February, Lannoy's Spanish troops, with surprise on their side, attacked the French in what is known as the 'Battle of Pavia'.

In the action French King Francis I was captured by the Spanish and like a game of chess; the game was over. Spain had defeated France and in turn England, as Spain's ally, also had a victory. The Irish parties had not been called upon in this war but having sided with France against England, the situation between England and Thomond in the aftermath of the war was decidedly tense. [241]

As James FitzGerald 10th Earl of Desmond was a signatory to the French / Irish treaty and also was an English subject, Henry VIII charged him with treason.

In late 1525 King Henry ordered his Lord Deputy Gerald FitzGerald 9th Earl of Kildare to arrest him. The O'Briens were another matter as Thomond was a Sovereign State, the best Henry could do was to declare war on Thomond and the Earl of Kildare was tasked with subduing the O'Briens.



Gerald FitzGerald 9th Earl of Kildare

Gerald FitzGerald assembled a large force, and marched into Desmond, but not wanting to arrest his distant cousin James FitzGerald, he sent private instructions to James on how to keep out of the way. Afterwards it appears Gerald FitzGerald contrived a disturbance with the O'Neills so as to avoid marching on his new relatives and now allies, the O'Briens, and turned north instead.

For the moment at least Turlogh Don O'Brien's alliance with the FitzGeralds had managed to head-off a direct confrontation with England. But the peace was only temporary as Gerald FitzGerald's deception only added to the ever-deepening political crisis engulfing Thomond.

In 1526 Gerald FitzGerald's adversary James Butler, 9th Earl of Ormond charged him with secretly assisting his cousin James FitzGerald and the O'Briens as well as attacking innocent parties i.e. the O'Neills. King Henry VIII recalled Gerald FitzGerald to answer the charges and placed him in the Tower of London where he remained until 1532. Gerald FitzGerald's arrest would later have severe ramifications for the O'Briens.

In 1528 Turlogh Don O'Brien was again drawn into a conflict against Piers Butler, 8th Earl of Ormond. On this occasion Piers Butler had a grudge against Mulrony McShane O'Carroll of Ely and moved his forces into county Tipperary attacking that chieftain's territory. O'Carroll was the husband of Turlogh Don O'Brien's daughter Margaret, and so Turlogh Don immediately took up arms to defend O'Carroll.

A battle ensued at the ford across the River Suir at Camus, near Cashel in county Tipperary, with no clear winner. However, in the fighting Turlogh Don's son Teige O'Brien was killed "by the shot of a ball." His body was taken to Ennis and buried at the Abbey amongst his ancestors. [242]



Around 1575 a bridge was built across the River Suir at Camus, site of the battle of 1528 [243]

Not long after this clash with Piers Butler, Turlogh Don O'Brien died ending his reign of twenty-nine years as King of Thomond. His death is recorded in these words by the Four Masters: "The O'Brien, i.e., Turlogh, the son of Teigen, who of all the Irish in Leth Mogha had spent the longest time in acts of nobility and hospitality, the worthy heir of Brian Boroimhe, in maintaining war against the English, died after unction and penance." [244]

Following Turlogh Don's death in 1528 his eldest son (and our ancestor) Conor O'Brien succeeded him as King of Thomond. Conor O'Brien took up where Turlogh Don O'Brien had left off in defending Thomond against the English.

Turlogh Don O'Brien's brother Donal Bacach, a younger son of King Teige an Chomhaid O'Brien. Gave rise to a significant branch of our family known as The Ballynalaken O'Briens. Their story is given in Appendix.1.

Chapter 6

Conor O’Brien The last to die as King of Thomond 1480 - 1539

Conor O'Brien (Conchobhar mac Toirdhealbaig Ó Briain in Gaelic) succeeded to the throne of Thomond in 1528 following the death of his father King Turlogh Don O'Brien.

King Conor inherited a complex political situation that saw him thrust into the center of Irish politics. The treaty signed in 1523 between Conor's father King Turlogh Don O'Brien, James FitzGerald 10th Earl of Desmond and French King Francis I was in direct opposition to King Henry VIII of England. From France's perspective it created the option for them to invade England from an Irish base if the need or circumstance arose. For Thomond it meant they now had a powerful ally in France who would protect them from England.

What was not foreseen at that time was that the French King Francis I would be captured by the Spanish at the battle of Pavia in 1525 and that England with its alliance with Spain would be the victor and Ireland with its alliance with France would be the loser. And those signatories to the French/Irish treaty would be deemed as hostile and traitors by England.

In the wake of the French defeat King Henry VIII sought to arrest James FitzGerald 10th Earl of Desmond and ordered his Lord Deputy Gerald FitzGerald 9th Earl of Kildare to implement this. Gerald was reluctant to incarcerate his distant cousin James and gave ample warning of his approach so that James could evade capture. Unfortunately for Gerald his adversary James Butler, 9th Earl of Ormond saw through this tactic and informed King Henry VIII who in turn charged Gerald FitzGerald with treason.

Desmond Castle at Kinsale Co Cork, home of James FitzGerald 10th Earl of Desmond. He died 18th June 1529.



Gerald FitzGerald 9th Earl of Kildare was ordered to England where he was incarcerated in the Tower of London. Whilst there he had several serious arguments with King Henry VIII's chief adviser Lord Chancellor Thomas Wolsey who prepared an order for Kildare's execution. In desperation Kildare wrote in 1530 to Conor O'Brien urging him to attack Dublin with the aim of making his return to Ireland appear necessary. Conor presumably not wanting to directly attack Dublin and start an all-out war with England decided against such action.

Kildare eventually enlisted the aid of the Constable of the Tower to invoke an ancient law to force Henry VIII to personally attend the Tower and explain to the Constable the reason for the death sentence. Henry not wishing to comply was forced to release Kildare and in 1532 Gerald FitzGerald was allowed to return to Ireland and was ultimately reinstated to his position as Lord Deputy.

In February 1534 Gerald FitzGerald was again summoned to London and he left his 21-year-old son Thomas in charge as Lord Deputy, Governor of Ireland in his absence. In June that year Thomas heard rumors that his father had been executed in the Tower of London and that the English government intended the same fate for himself and his uncles. (At the time these rumors were untrue. However, Gerald FitzGerald 9th Earl of Kildare did eventually die in the Tower, supposedly of grief on the 2nd September 1534.)

In what seems like a self fulling prophecy Thomas FitzGerald reacted by summoning the Council to St. Mary's Abbey, Dublin, and on 11th June 1534, accompanied by 140 armored mercenaries (known as gallowglasses) with silk fringes on their helmets, rode to the abbey and publicly renounced his allegiance to his distant cousin King Henry VIII, Lord of Ireland.

The silk fringes on the mercenary helmets gave this event the name of "The Silken Thomas affair." The Earl of Desmond and many of his father's oldest and best friends tried to reason with him; but Thomas was not to be turned from his purpose. As he was Lord Deputy Governor of Ireland, Thomas FitzGerald had under his control most of Dublin's fortresses, and large government stores.

Initially Thomas FitzGerald had the support of most of the population of Dublin. But in the confused days that followed Archbishop Alen, who had been trying to mediate, was executed supposedly due to an order given in English that was mis-interpreted by Gaelic speaking soldiers. The death of Archbishop Alen lost Thomas FitzGerald much of his support and when he attacked Dublin castle in July 1534 his army was routed.



16th-century woodcut of Silken Thomas FitzGerald's attack on Dublin Castle July 1534
245

While the attack on Dublin Castle failed, it had directly threatened English rule in Ireland. King Henry decided action was required to place his realm on a more secure footing and made a priority the arrest of "Silken Thomas" FitzGerald.

Thomas now realising his life was in danger sought refuge with the O'Briens and King Conor O'Brien granted him sanctuary in Thomond. FitzGerald brought with him the treasures of his office including "silver plates and other goods" with the intention of using these as payment for his escape.

For nearly a year Thomas FitzGerald remained out of King Henry's reach hidden by the O'Briens in Thomond. If Henry VIII hadn't realised it before, he was certainly aware now just how little influence he had west of the Shannon river. Henry later said that "of all the clans in Ireland, the O'Briens are the ones who worry me the most." [246]

Thomas FitzGerald planned an escape to Spain, but this plan fell through and he was ultimately convinced by the new Lord Deputy, Leonard Grey the 1st Viscount Grane, to throw himself at the mercy of Henry VIII, and in October 1535 he gave himself up.

Despite Grey's assurances that FitzGerald would be treated fairly, King Henry was not in a forgiving mood and Silken Thomas FitzGerald was held captive in The Tower of London. While there Thomas wrote to Conor O'Brien describing his "miserable captivity" and asking for £20 as payment for a plate he had left with Conor at Clonroad Castle. [247] Silken Thomas FitzGerald along with five of his uncles, some of which were completely innocent, were executed at the tower of London on the 3rd February 1537.[248]

King Henry still wasn't finished. He wanted all of the Earl of Kildare line removed and this included Silken Thomas FitzGerald's younger brother Gerald FitzGerald.[249] Gerald was 12 years old at the time and obviously had nothing to do with the Silken Thomas attack on Dublin castle, but Henry wanted to eliminate any possibility that the young Gerald could be used as a rallying point for Irish clans and other branches of the FitzGeralds and inspire rebellion. Henry wrote in mid 1536 to the Irish council saying "seize him and his attendants with or without their will."

Friends of the FitzGerald family hid Gerald in a basket and transported him across Ireland to Thomond where King Conor O'Brien gave him shelter for over six months. [250] The Irish council wrote to Henry VIII saying "The King of Thomond was the chief succourer and maintainer of the fugitive, as he had been previously of his brother Thomas." King James V of Scotland wrote offering to take Gerald to Scotland (no doubt to antagonise his enemy Henry VIII) but the O'Briens and FitzGerald's politely declined the offer.

To make matters worse Conor O'Brien refused to release the treasures belonging to the English crown brought into Thomond by Thomas FitzGerald. This is mentioned in a letter written by the Irish council to Thomas Cromwell dated 22nd August 1536 "and as to OBrene, notwithstanding his letters and promises of subjection, we could neither get him to condescend to any conformitie, he yet to deliver Kildare's plates and goods … nor his second son."

Conor wrote to Henry VIII in 1536 to try defuse the situation regarding Silken Thomas "I insure you, that I never sent for him, but I could not… refuse him meat and drink." The letter had no effect and Henry moved to up the ante by sending the Lord Deputy Leonard Grey to attack Thomond as part of a campaign known as the 'Tudor conquest of Ireland'.

Grey realised that he needed to overcome the O'Brien / FitzGerald alliance if he was going to succeed and mentions this in his diaries. This was also clear from a letter Grey wrote to Henry VIII in 1536 saying "so as we might have entangled but with one of them at once." [251]

Grey marched his troops into Tipperary in July and first attacked Cashel. The FitzGeralds knew Grey was coming and took precautions at their castle next to Lough Gur by "removing the doors and windows of which had been carried away and the roof burned." Grey claimed the castle and gave it to James Butler, 9th Earl of Ormond.[252]

Grey's forces then marched to Carrigogunnell castle located within the territory of 'Pobble O'Briens' in Co Limerick. The 1536 attack at Carrigogunnell was particularly ferocious and was clearly a massacre. As Leonard Grey noted in his own account; "there were women and children among those we had killed." [253] It is the very fact that he included this information in his report to London, deeming it a piece of service fit to be recorded, that pinpoints his significance in the military history of sixteenth-century Ireland.

Grey (and other English officers of the time) now saw all killing as virtuous, an achievement worthy of commemoration and marked a new and frightening phase of English warfare in Ireland. [254]

The O'Briens were not used to seeing such callous and sustained aggression on their borders. King Conor O'Brien was appalled and obviously deeply affected by the carnage Grey's army had inflicted on the people at Carrigogunnell. Conor realised that if Grey's army were to cross the Shannon and continue their violent behavior in greater Thomond, then all men, women and children in his realm would be placed at risk. Seeing no other option King Conor met Grey at Limerick in July 1537 to negotiate a peace deal.[255]



Carrigogunnell Castle. Ruins of the upper bailey, west wall (2015)

A long-standing bone of contention for England was O'Briens bridge over the Shannon river. The bridge made it easy for the O'Briens to travel east and collect taxes known as 'black rent' from English settlers in Limerick & Tipperary. It is clear from the various texts that Conor proposed removing the bridge in return for "peace with your majesty for a yere." [256]



O'Briens bridge today looking from the Limerick side towards Thomond (Clare)

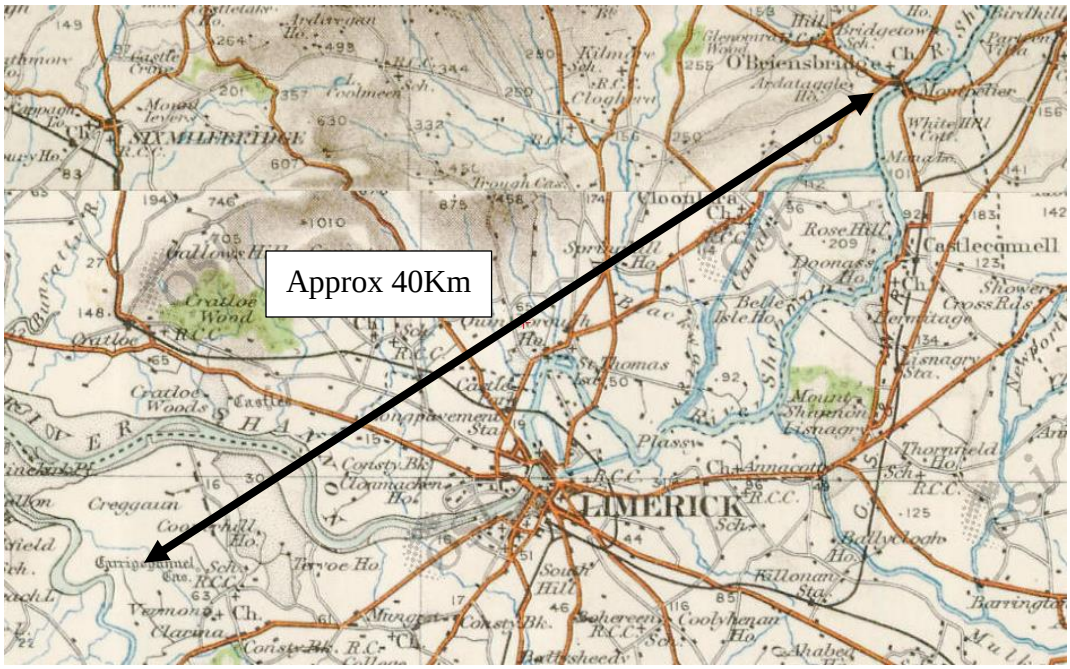
At this point we find evidence of dissention between Conor and his younger brother Murrough 'the tanist'. Conor agreed for Grey's troops to burn the bridge, but it seems Murrough was opposed to, or didn't know of, this policy of appeasement and attacked Grey's men when they approached the bridge. Grey's troops completed the task with what was described as "ineffectual resistance from the tanist."

Whether or not Murrough knew about the peace deal before Grey's troops arrived to break down the bridge is a key point. We know from Frost [257] that Murrough had land (and probably lived) near the bridge. And it is recorded in a letter from later in 1537 that Murrough was aware that a deal between Conor and Grey had been made, the question is when exactly did Murrough become aware of it?

There is about 40 Km as the crow flies between Carrigogunnell where the massacre occurred and O'Brien's bridge. So, the possibility exists that Murrough had no advance warning that Grey was going to attack and may have been placed in a life threating position by his brother's deal with Grey.

This may explain Murrough's resistance to Grey's troops and his later ill feeling towards his brother Conor. On the other hand, it would have been irresponsible for Conor not to take whatever action was required to prevent further massacres in Thomond.

The map below of southern Thomond shows the distance is about 40Km as the crow flies between Carrigogunnell where the massacre of 1536 occurred, and O'Brien's bridge which was burnt to appease Leonard Grey and prevent further massacres being perpetrated in Thomond.



With the bridge disabled to Grey's satisfaction he now wanted to take a hostage to ensure that the O'Briens wouldn't just repair the bridge after he had left. It was at this point that Conor O'Brien's 2nd wife and Queen, Ellice FitzGerald, stepped forward and proposed that her 2nd son with Conor, Turlogh, be handed over to her cousin James FitzGerald the 12th Earl of Desmond as hostage. [258]

Leonard Grey agreed and the treaty was signed. King Conor O'Brien then escorted Grey's forces through Thomond to Galway. The texts state that this was to ensure Grey's men safe passage through Thomond, but it seems just as likely that Conor's motive was to keep an eye on Grey to ensure his troops behaved.

When news of this peace agreement reached Henry VIII, he was "ill pleased" as he recognised the relationship between the parties and loudly declared "that the oaths and indentures of the Irish chieftains were not worth a farthing, as the Lord Deputy (Leonard Grey) had not taken their hostages."

The O'Brien brothers Conor & Murrough had their own issues and the depth of hostility between them at this time was on display. When Conor returned from Galway his brother Murrough, with the support of Conor's eldest son Donough, had a heated argument with Conor which resulted in them physically attacking him. A letter written to Henry VIII from the Irish Council in 1537 states that Murrough and Donough "assaulted him (Conor) coming homeward, whereon there is great dissension among them." They added "whereof we be nothing sorry."

The letter also describes the ill feeling between Donough and his father over the perceived preferential treatment of his step brother Turlogh (the hostage) at being given the opportunity to live with James FitzGerald the Earl of Desmond. In the letter Turlogh's mother Queen Ellice FitzGerald is accused of influencing Conor to "advance his children begotten of this Geraldine woman."

It is important to note that Donough and Turlogh had different mothers. Donough's mother Anabel de Burgh was from a very pro English family and it is likely he was being encouraged to push English values, particularly with regards to inheritance, and saw his half brother Turlogh as a rival. The letter's contents as well as Donough's actions against his father, indicate that the two were estranged at this time.

Meanwhile, in other parts of Ireland events were unfolding that would eventually overwhelm Thomond. Two powerful clans aligned with the FitzGeralds under the leadership of Conor O'Neil and Manus O'Donnell had established an alliance known as the 'Irish Confederacy'. Established largely in protest to the introduction of the ancient "Statutes of Kilkenny" laws forbidding the collection of 'black rent' and the banning of marriage between native Irish and English. The O'Neil and O'Donnell's formed an army intent on disrupting English settlement in Ireland.

The Statutes of Kilkenny were a series of thirty-five acts enacted by the Parliament of Ireland at Kilkenny in 1366, aiming to curb the decline of the English Lordship of Ireland. The prime author of the statutes was 'Lionel of Antwerp' the 3rd son of English King Edward III. Edward sent Lionel to Ireland in 1361 to try and arrest the Gaelic Resurgence, he was unsuccessful in his campaign and gave up and retreated back to England in 1366. [259]

By the later part of 1539 the O'Neil and O'Donnell army was raiding English settlements in County Meath and had successfully collected a sizable haul. The ease of their attacks led to complacency and on their return journey they had become a disorganised rabble. When confronted by Leonard Grey's troops at Bellahoe, the Irish Confederacy army was decimated. [260]

King Conor had ample opportunity to commit O'Brien resources to the Irish Confederacy had he so wished, yet he did not. Perhaps the events at home in 1536/7 had been more pressing, or maybe he didn't see the value of such an alliance. On the other hand, we can see from his brother Murrough's later actions that he was very keen for Thomond to join the Confederacy.

Even viewing these events from the distance of nearly 500 years, the decision of whether or not Thomond should join the Irish Confederacy appears as a major policy difference between King Conor and his brother Murrough the tanist.

As time went on the rift between King Conor his brother Murrough 'the tanist' and Conor's eldest son Donough continued to grow, and was creating a political crisis for Thomond. Possibly because of the attack they made on him, or perhaps Conor was now convinced that neither Murrough or Donough were up to the job of leading Thomond, for whatever reason sometime between 1537 and the time of his death in 1539 King Conor O'Brien removed the title of 'tanist' from his brother Murrough and in his place nominated Donald his 2nd son as tanist of Thomond.

Many texts agree that from that point on Donald O'Brien was the legitimate tanist and heir apparent of Thomond. [261] This was the situation when Conor O'Brien died in 1539 after being King of Thomond for eleven years. Conor was "interred in the O'Brien Chapel at Kilfenora Cathedral with great magnificence." [262]

Kilfenora is located in north west Co Clare quite some distance from the O'Brien seats of Clonroad and Bunratty. We know from various Inquisition documents that King Conor O'Brien possessed 'Tullagh' castle some 3Km south of Kilfenora. It is possible that he may have been living there at the time of his death.

As King Conor had maintained the O'Brien / FitzGerald alliance in the face of ongoing intrusion from Butler family supporters and he had succeeded in preventing further massacres in Thomond after Leonard Grey's campaign in Tipperary and Limerick. Conor O'Brien is remembered for being the "last of the descendants of Brian Boru who exercised to the close of his life the functions of royalty in Thomond." [263]



Kilfenora Cathedral dates from around 1190. Conor O'Brien the last man to die as King of Thomond was buried here in 1539.

According to the Annals of Kilfenora a number of other O'Briens of note were also buried at Kilfenora Cathedral. Quotes from the annals are shown below:

1557 Torlogh O'Brien, second son of Conor, last King of Thomond, by his second marriage, died without issue, and was interred in the O'Brien Chapel at Kilfenora.

1559 Teigen O'Brien, surnamed An-tSuaissan, of the Uncombed Locks, died in exile in Fermanagh, but his remains were conveyed to Kilfenora, where they were interred. He was second son of Sir Donald More O'Brien, Knight of Dough Castle, county of Clare.

1591 Murrough O'Brien fourth son of Conor, last King of Thomond, died and was interred at Kilfenora. He was ancestor of the O'Briens of Cahermenane, in the county of Clare, which family is now extinct, His death is thus recorded in the Annals of the Four Masters; "Murrough, the son of Conor, son of Torlogh, son of Teigen, son of Torlogh, son of Bryan of the battle of Nenagh, O'Brien died at Cathair Mionain on the 25th of February, and was buried at Kilfenora (Clare)."

1593 Murtogh O'Brien of Drumline, fifth son of Conor, last King of Thomond, died this year, and was interred with his ancestors in the O'Brien Chapel at Kilfenora.

Also, in 1593 Sir Murtogh O'Brien, Knight., died and was interred at Kilfenora. Sir Murtogh, was third son of Sir Donald More O'Brien of Duach Castle, had been married to Mary, daughter of Jasper Ffrench of Galway.



Carved effigy of a nobleman once placed on a tomb inside Kilfenora cathedral Co Clare. It is the only carving of a noble figure in the church (that has survived) and is difficult to date as it has been moved from its original position, but estimates place its age around the 14th century.

Despite the change in his tanist nomination to 2nd son Donald, after King Conor's death in 1539, Conor's brother Murrough O'Brien argued that Donald was too young to be King and was able to rush the inauguration and see himself crowned King of Thomond. [264] The general view is that in doing so Murrough O'Brien "usurped the sovereignty of Thomond" and has since gone down in history known as "*Murrough the tanist.*" [265]

Murrough O'Brien took on the role of King of Thomond at a crucial point in British history. Following the Silken Thomas affair Henry VIII resolved to bring Ireland under English government control so the island would not become a base for future rebellions or foreign invasions of England. In 1541, he upgraded Ireland from a lordship to a full Kingdom and Henry was proclaimed King of Ireland at a meeting of the Irish Parliament that year.

One of Murrough O'Brien's earliest decisions was to have Thomond join the alliance between Conor O'Neil and Manus O'Donnell known as the 'Irish Confederacy.' In 1540 Murrough assumed a role as one of the Confederate leaders and together with O'Neil and O'Donnell they planned a raid against the English into County Meath. But before they could organise their forces the English gained intelligence of their plan and an army of 8,000 under the command of Lord Brerton, marched to Fore in Westmeath and confronted the clan leaders. O'Brien, O'Neil and O'Donnell decided it was useless to challenge such a large force and backed down. [266]

The Irish Confederate organisation soon fell apart and by the end of 1540 Conor O'Neil had been forced to submit to Henry VIII. The defeat of the Irish Confederacy probably marked the point where Murrough O'Brien realised that as Sovereign, he could no longer defend his realm against an England in the ascendancy, and therefore could not offer protection to his subjects; both integral components of Sovereignty.

By the early 1540s English King Henry VIII knew he had the Irish clans on the back foot. With the assistance of Lord Deputy of Ireland Sir Anthony St Leger, Henry implemented a policy known as 'surrender and regrant' which opened the way to annex Thomond rather than conquer it through direct confrontation.

Surrender and regrant involved the Irish Monarchs surrendering their title of 'King' in return for English titles of 'Earls' and 'Barons' with the additional condition that they renounce the Catholic faith and convert to the Anglican Protestant Church in a process colloquially known as "taking the King's shilling."

Murrough O'Brien, probably thinking he would never get a better offer, engaged in correspondence with King Henry VIII indicating that he was willing to submit to the royal authority as the "King's liege subject for the future." [267]

In February 1542 Murrough attended the Limerick Parliament and discussed the arrangements with Lord Deputy Anthony St Leger. Murrough indicated his willingness to surrender his crown on the condition that both he and his nephew Donough O'Brien received peerages. This request recognised that Donough legitimately "was next to be O'Brien." St Leger passed the results of the meeting to Henry and recommended to that he "give a favorable reception to the requests of the prince of Thomond." [268]

King Henry VIII replied immediately that he accepted the terms and requested that Murrough and Donough O'Brien attend a surrender and regrant ceremony in person in London. To facilitate their passage King Henry instructed his treasurer to forward £100 in "harp grotes" (i.e. the highest coin then in existence) to Murrough and 100 Marks to Donough O'Brien. Murrough was also lent an ermine coat to ware during the ceremony. I'm told that Murrough retained the coat and returned to Ireland with it. [269]

The O'Brien surrender and regrant was formalised at a ceremony held on Sunday 1st July 1543 at Greenwich Castle London. During the ceremony King of Thomond, Murrough O'Brien surrendered the Irish crown of the O'Brien's to King Henry VIII of England. In return Murrough was granted the English peerage title of 1st Earl of Thomond for the term of his life.

Following Murrough's death the title Earl of Thomond was to go to his nephew Donough O'Brien and then to his male heirs in perpetuity. In addition, Donough O'Brien received the title 1st Baron of Ibrickan also to be passed down to his male heirs in perpetuity. Murrough O'Brien also received the title 1st Baron of Inchiquin which after his death was to his go to his male heirs in perpetuity. Today this title still exists with Sir Conor O'Brien 18th Baron of Inchiquin.

This event was held ten days out from Henry VIII's wedding to his 6th wife (and our distant cousin) Catherine Parr.

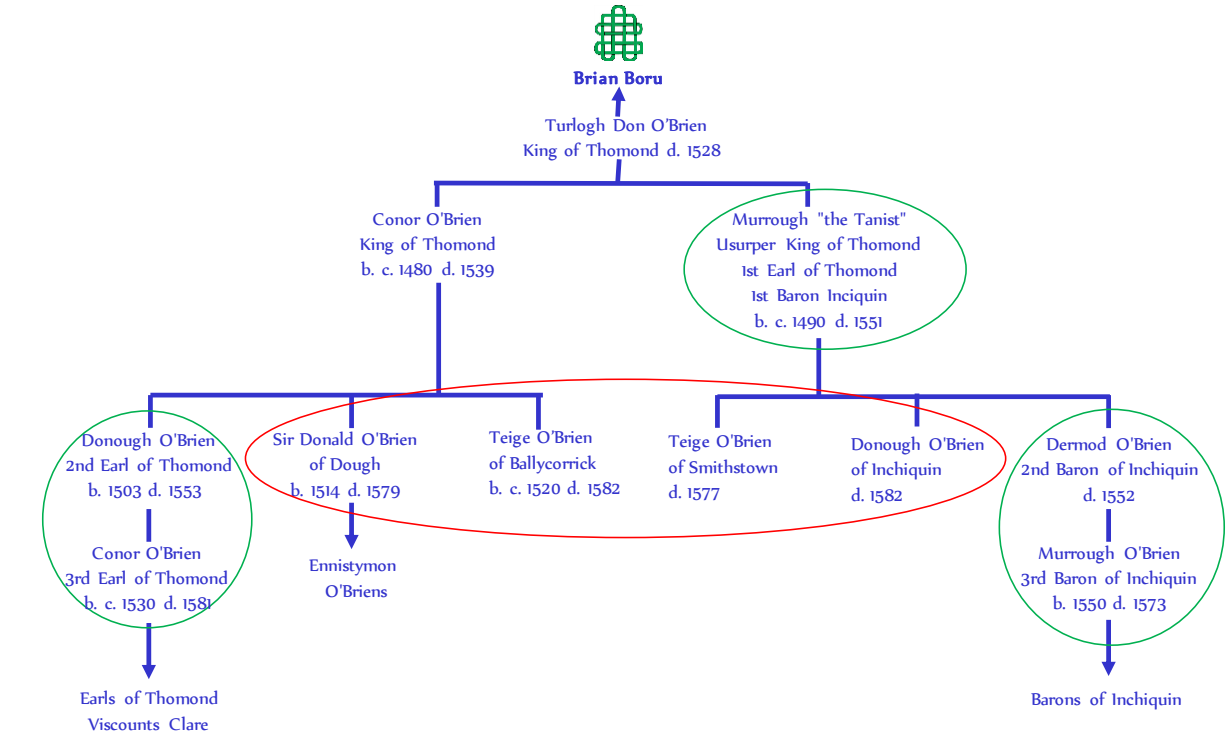


The O'Brien surrender and regrant ceremony 1st July 1543 at Greenwich Castle London [270]

Murrough O'Brien's actions in accepting the English titles had a sting in the tail that would only be noticed after Murrough's death. What was not fully appreciated by the O'Briens at the time was that the English titles went hand in hand with the English land and asset hereditary system known as Primogeniture. This had ramifications not only for the O'Briens, but also for all of the Gaelic clans, as the English system is completely different to the Irish Gaelic system of distributing assets to the next generation.

In Primogeniture, the firstborn legitimate child inherits the parent's entire or main estate; whilst in the traditional Irish Gavelkind system each of the sons has a chance of being clan leader and a share of their father's estate. [271]

Changing hereditary systems created winners and losers. The following diagram shows the dynamics at play amongst the O'Brien family. The O'Brien branches that Primogeniture favoured are shown in green, and the O'Brien branches disadvantaged by the change to Primogeniture are shown in red.



Briens of Parramatta

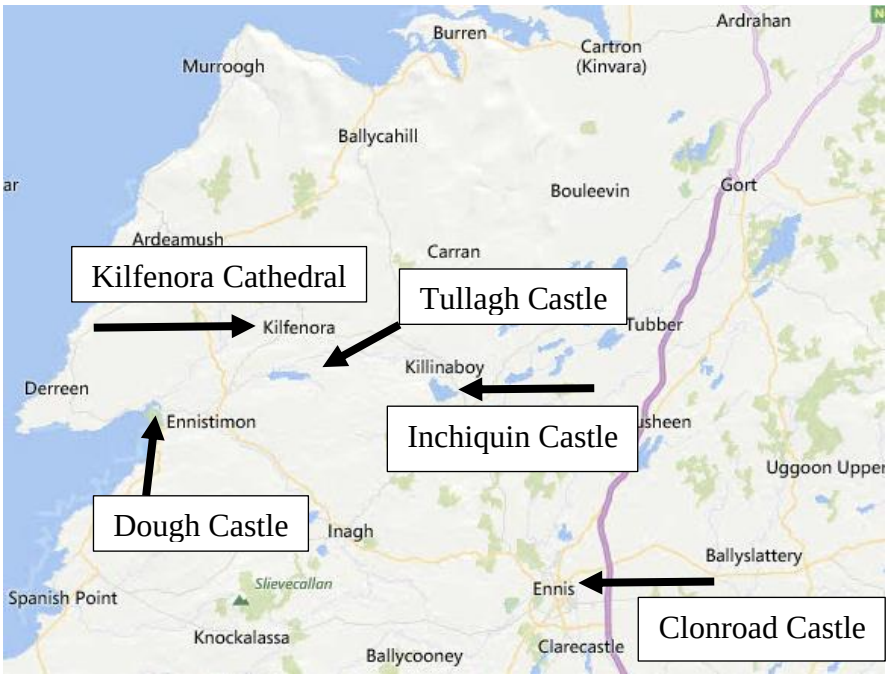
Rival O'Brien groups that formed after the surrender and regrant of the royal crown of Thomond

The act of 'surrender and regrant' set up a dynastic rivalry between the sons of Murrough 'the tanist' (Teige and Donough O'Brien) who joined with their cousin Donald O'Brien of Dough (the true tanist of Thomond). This group is shown above in red and were further linked through marriage as Teige O'Brien of Smithstown Castle was married to Móre O'Brien, the daughter of Donald O'Brien of Dough.

The red group pitted their resources against the line of Donough O'Brien the 2nd Earl of Thomond (our ancestor) his son Conor O'Brien who became the 3rd Earl of Thomond. The eldest son of Murrough "the Tanist" i.e. Dermot O'Brien the 2nd Baron of Inchiquin, and his son Murrough, shown in green.

Unfortunately, this split in the family created havoc in Thomond for decades and resulted in a new civil war, the details of which are covered in later sections of this document.

More can be read about Murrough O'Brien 'the tanist' and his descendants in Appendix 5.



Map of West Co Clare showing some key locations of the O'Briens at this time.

King Conor O'Brien's first marriage was to Anabel de Burgh daughter of Ulick Bourke, Lord of Clanricarde and took place around 1500. Anabel belonged to the powerful Burke dynasty who had a close relationship with the Tudor monarchs. Conor and Anabell had two sons, the eldest named Donough O'Brien (our ancestor) who later became the 2nd Earl of Thomond and the Baron of Ibrickane. Due to his de Burgh (Burke) connections he held strong anglicised views.

Conor and Anabel's second son was Donald O'Brien of Dough, was Knighted by Queen Elizabeth I around 1570 and was the progenitor of the 'Ennistymon branch' of the O'Briens. This Donald lived at Dough Castle near Lahinch Co Clare and, he had been named the 'tanist of Thomond' before his father's death in 1539.

Donald O'Brien of Dough was an ardent Gaelic Catholic and was a lifelong agitator against his uncle Murrough O'Brien (the tanist) who in his view had usurped the monarchy of Thomond from him, and his elder brother Donough who he disliked due to his alignment with the royalist Burke family. The story of Donald O'Brien of Dough is in Appendix. 4.

Conor and Anabel also had three daughters Margaret, Slaney and Móre.

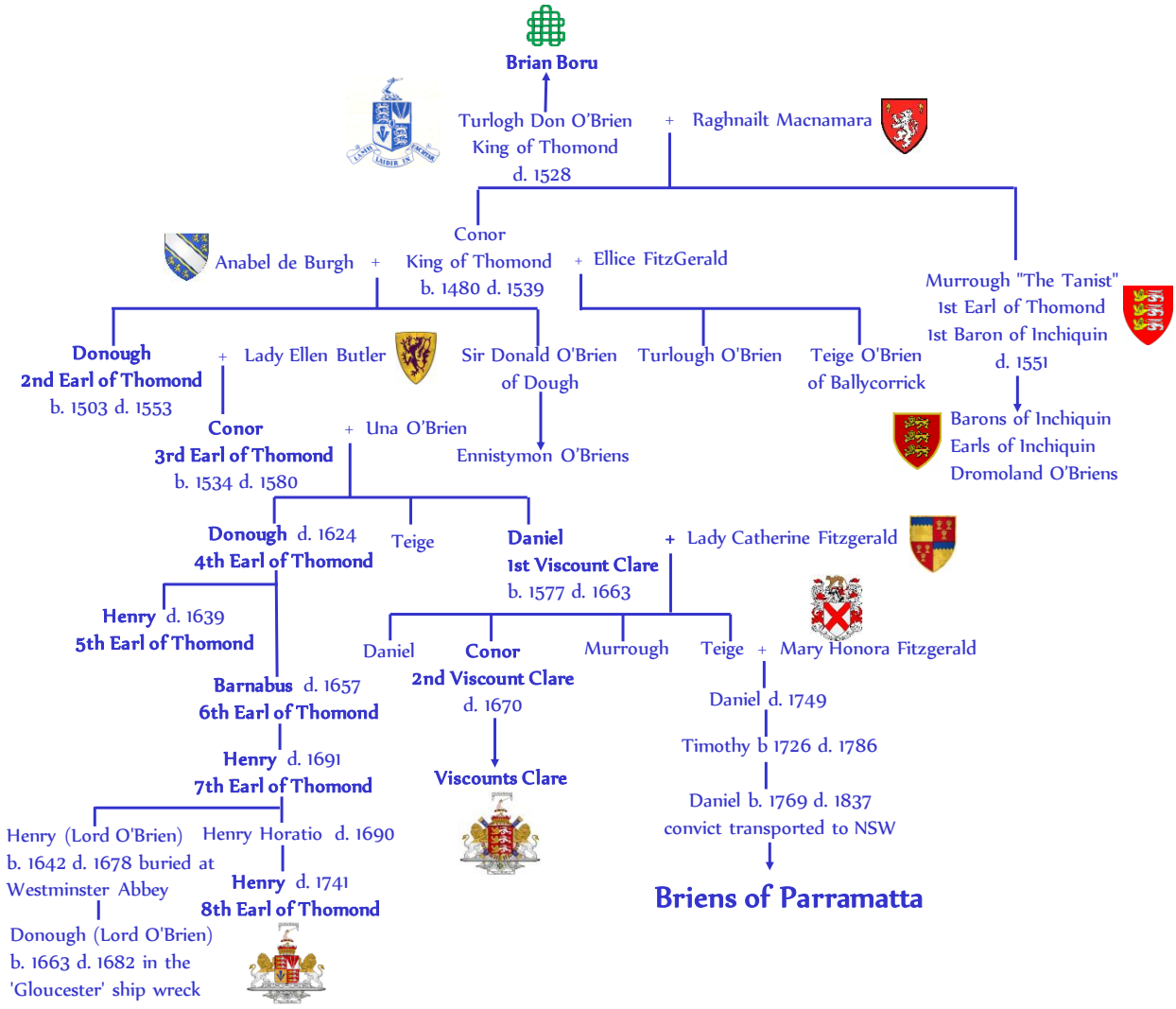
Anabel de Burgh died sometime before 1517 and King Conor O'Brien married for a second time around 1517 to Ellice FitzGerald, daughter of Maurice FitzGerald 9th Earl of Desmond, and they had four sons; Turlough, Teigen of Ballycorrick, Murrough of of Caherminaun and Murtough. [272]

The story of Conor and Anabel's son Teige O'Brien of Ballycorrick is in Appendix. 2.

The story of Donough O'Brien (our ancestor) the 2nd Earl of Thomond follows.

Sir Donough O'Brien 2nd Earl of Thomond 1503 - 1553

The eldest son of Conor O'Brien King of Thomond and Anabel de Burgh was Donough O'Brien who became the 2nd Earl of Thomond. Donough was our ancestor, he was born in 1503 and was involved in the changes that swept over the O'Briens and Thomond in the wake of Henry VIII's attacks on the Irish clans during the 1540s. Donough was the progenitor of the Earls of Thomond (3rd to 8th) and Viscounts Clare.



Donough O'Brien was the progenitor of the Earls of Thomond and Viscounts Clare

Donough O'Brien was born at a time when a series of titanic struggles were being played out between several groups. On one side were the O'Briens, who were custodians of the traditional Irish Catholic Gaelic clan system in west Ireland. On the other side was the English monarch Henry VIII who wanted to see the Irish clan system replaced by the English Primogeniture system. Also, in the mix were two powerful Irish / Norman families, the Burkes (a.k.a. Butlers) who were allied with Henry VIII and the FitzGeralds allied with the Irish Catholics.

The politics of the time also played out in Donough's family life. His mother, Anabel de Burgh was from the powerful pro-English Burke/Butler dynasty. Anabel's father was Ulick Burke, Lord of Clanricarde who held vast estates in Galway on Thomond's northern border. Anabel died when Donough was aged about 12 and his father, King Conor O'Brien then married Ellice FitzGerald, daughter of Maurice FitzGerald the Earl of Desmond who held vast estates in Cork on Thomond's southern border.

As the Burkes/Butlers/de Burghs and FitzGeralds were arch enemies, there was probably no middle ground for Donough. By 1517 his father King Conor had married Ellice FitzGerald. Ellice obviously had strong opinions and she is mentioned in letters written by royalists in Ireland to Henry VIII where she is described as "that Geraldine woman" amid complaints that she is favouring her children born with Conor over her step-son Donough whose mother was Anabel de Burgh.

Donough was the eldest son and as such he would have expected some respect and dignity even under the Irish tanist and gavelkind inheritance systems. But it seems at the very least Donough felt cut out of this and we also know that by the 1530s his relationship with his father was deteriorating. The favoritism shown to the children of Ellice FitzGerald appears to be the reason Donough's allegiances were towards the pro-English Burke family of his mother Anabel.

In 1528 Donough's grand father Turlogh Don O'Brien King of Thomond died and the role of King fell to his eldest son and Donough's father, Conor O'Brien. In the 'Memoir of the O'Briens' John O'Donoghue states that Conor's eldest son Donough was next in line but for some reason linked to his connection with the Burkes, Donough was overlooked for the role of tanist (heir apparent), which instead went to Conor O'Brien's 2nd son Donald O'Brien of Dough.

This Donald was usurped in 1539 by Conor's younger brother Murrough (who later became known as Murrough the tanist). Hence our ancestor Donough O'Brien was excluded from the succession line of Thomond even though he was aged about 25 at the time of his father's inauguration as King.

In 1533 Donough became formally affiliated with the Burke/Butlers family when he married Ellen the daughter of Piers Butler, 8th Earl of Ormond. The marriage was reported in a letter from the Irish council to Thomas Cromwell in London in July 1533 and mentions Donough "O'brene's eldest son, whoo is the most man of power emongis the Irishrie, hath married a daughter of the Erle of Ormond."

Donough undoubtedly saw marrying Ellen Butler as an act of defiance against his father King Conor O'Brien. In a speech Donough he gave in October 1535 to a Butler family gathering, speaking directly to his brother-in-law James Butler 9th Earl of Ormond, Donough said "I have maryd your syster, and for becaws I have maryd your syster, I have forsaken my father, my unkle, all my fryndes and my contrey, to come to you and to help to doo the king servys."

This speech was given during the period 'Silken Thomas FitzGerald' was being concealed from Henry VIII by Donough's father King Conor O'Brien. Donough makes it clear that he had tried to capture Silken Thomas whilst he was on his way to Thomond seeking refuge but had been wounded in the process "I have bin sore wounded, and I have no reward nor nothing to leve upon."

A letter to Thomas Cromwell dated 6th October 1535 appears to link Donough to the massacre that took place the following year at Carrigogunnell castle, the letter quotes Donough "come into the contrey, and bring with you a piese of ordnaunce to wyn a castell, the which castell is called Carygoguillin."

The massacre at Carrigogunnell in 1536 by the English army led by Leonard Grey was one of the events that forced King Conor O'Brien into a peace treaty with England. Part of the peace treaty involved the taking of a hostage and Donough's step-mother Ellice FitzGerald saw an advantage for her child Turlogh, and offed him as she knew he would be taken to live with her cousin the Earl of Desmond.

Donough was livid at what he saw as Ellice's actions designed to favour her children over him. This seems to have been a motive behind Donough joining with his uncle Murrough 'the tanist' in physically attacking his father King Conor O'Brien in 1537 after he had returned from seeing Leonard Grey off to Galway. We know that Conor was injured in the attack, but we don't know if the injury contributed to his death two years later. [273]

On the 14th March 1541 Donough O'Brien was Knighted by Henry VIII probably at the insistence of the Butlers. On the 2nd June 1543 Murrough 'the tanist' (the 1st Earl of Thomond) wrote to Henry VIII recommending that after his passing, Donough O'Brien should receive the title of 2nd Earl of Thomond. A request Henry VIII was happy to agree to. Following Murrough's death in 1551 the title of 2nd Earl of Thomond did pass to Donough, but the title was not stipulated as being hereditary, therefore as things stood the title would end at Donough O'Brien's death.

This seems to be the understanding shared by the rest of the O'Briens, that the dalliance with English titles was temporary and would come to an end after Donough had passed. As a consequence, the period between 1543 and 1552 was the most peaceful time in Thomond for many decades.

Sometime in 1552 however Sir Donough O'Brien, now the 2nd Earl of Thomond, was advised to approach the new English monarch the young Edward VI to see if his title of Earl could be amended so it could be passed to "heirs of his body." Donough wrote to Edward VI surrendering his initial title of Earl of Thomond, and applied to have a new title that was hereditary regranted in its place.

The young King Edward did all that and more; he granted to Donough not only the title but also the lands and hereditaments which had lapsed to the crown by the death of Murrough O'Brien 'the tanist'. These titles and lands were now to descend to Donough's heirs according to the course of the common law of England. The new title of Earl of Thomond (Ireland) was conferred via letters patent dated 7th November 1552.

This regrant of the title ‘Earl of Thomond’ leads to some confusion. As this was technically a new title with “Ireland” as the suffix, the numbering should revert to the 1st Earl of Thomond. But future O’Briens did not adhere to this and so Donough is shown in contemporary documents as the 2nd Earl (sometimes as both 1st and 2nd). Donough also received from Edward VI the title of 1st Baron Ibrickane to reflect his new Ibrickane estate which took in most of west County Clare.

It seems that what Donough received from Edward VI was more than he had expected. Donough certainly didn’t request to have the lands of his uncle bundled with the title, but this is consistent with the English Primogeniture inheritance system so he may well have known the consequences of his actions. What made things complicated was that through the letters patent Donough now possessed the lands of his uncle Murrough ‘the tanist’ and this immediately put him offside with Murrough’s sons Teige and Donough. [274]

More so, the lands stipulated by Edward VI also included those held by Donough’s younger siblings Donald and Turlogh. Added to this the fact that these titles were hereditary and to be passed down Donough’s senior male line into the future, and all of a sudden, the world as the O’Briens had know it under Gaelic law had been turned upside down.

The penny finally dropped for the O’Briens as they now realised that the traditional clan tanist and gavelkind systems, which gave each of the O’Brien sons a chance of being clan leader and a share of their father’s estate, was now seriously under threat. Furthermore, the general population of Thomond was becoming aware that the English system of land and title distribution was to replace their traditional constitution, resulting in fear and anger spreading quickly throughout Thomond.

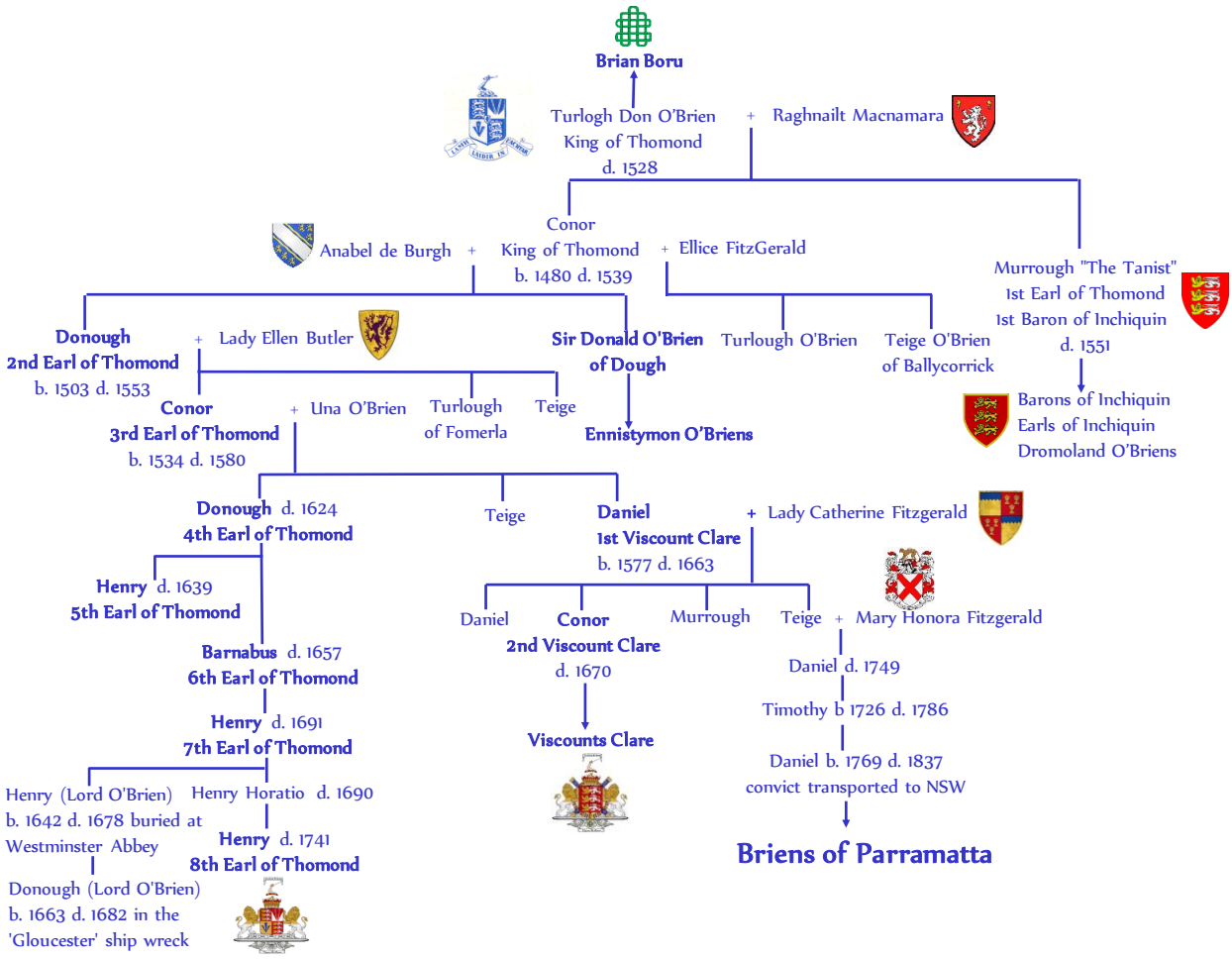
Donough O’Brien the 2nd Earl of Thomond was now very unpopular and was the subject of several attacks. One such attack in April 1553 (just a few months after he had received the letters patent) his brother Donald O’Brien of Dough and his half brother Turlogh, along with a number of troops gained access to Donough’s residence at Ennis and forced Donough to flee to his nearby castle at Clonroad for safety. Although it is recorded that Donough was un-harmed in the incident, he died a few days later on the 1st May 1553.

I can find no record of where Donough was buried but it was probably at Ennis Friary which is very close to Clonroad. Donough married Lady Ellen Butler the 6th daughter of Piers Butler, 8th Earl of Ormond and 1st Earl of Ossory, by his wife Lady Margaret FitzGerald. Ellen died on the 2nd Jul 1597 and is buried in St Canice's Cathedral, Kilkenny where there is a fine monument to her but there is a mistake in the text saying her husband was ‘Donald” not “Donough.”

Donough O’Brien the 2nd Earl of Thomond and Ellen Butler had three sons and four daughters:

- Conor O'Brien, later 3rd Earl of Thomond (our ancestor).
- Turlough O'Brien, of Fomerla, co. Clare who married Honora O'Shaughnessy.
- Teige O'Brien who married his cousin More O'Brien.
- Lady Margaret O'Brien who married her cousin Dermod O'Brien.
- Lady Honora O'Brien who married Donogh O'Brien, of Leamaneh.
- Lady More O'Brien who married Donal Reagh MacNamara, Chief of his name.
- Lady Mary O'Brien who married Theobald Bourke.

With Donough O'Brien's death in 1553 his son Conor O'Brien became the 3rd Earl of Thomond.



Lines of the Earls of Thomond, Viscount Clare and Ennistymon O'Briens

Sir Donough O'Brien the 2nd Earl of Thomond's younger brother, Sir Donald O'Brien of Dough, was the progenitor of a line known as the Ennistymon O'Briens. Their story is given in Appendix 4.

Conor O'Brien 3rd Earl of Thomond 1534-1580

Conor O'Brien was born in 1534, most likely at Clonroad Castle near Ennis. He was the eldest son of Donough O'Brien the 2nd Earl of Thomond and Ellen Butler. Conor succeeded to the title of 3rd Earl of Thomond at age 19 after his father died in 1553 under suspicious circumstances. Conor was our ancestor and somewhere along the way he acquired the nick-name of "Groibleach" which translates from Gaelic as the "long-nailed."

It is suspected (although not proven) that Conor's uncle, Donald O'Brien of Dough and Donald's half brother Turlogh O'Brien were responsible for his father Donough O'Brien the 2nd Earl's death. Donough the 2nd Earl of Thomond died on the 1st May 1553 and his demise was obviously seen as suspicious by his son Conor who apparently fearing for his own life, fled north from Ennis to Doonmulvihill Castle near the border with Galway.



Ruins of Doonmulvihill Castle in Inchicronan Parish, north of Ennis, close to the Clare / Galway border, where Conor O'Brien retreated here after the death of his father in 1553. [275]

Conor's fears were soon realised as his uncle, Donald O'Brien of Dough, in cahoots' with Teige O'Brien of Smithstown and Donough O'Brien of Inchiquin (the sons of Murrough O'Brien 1st Earl of Thomond) pursued him to Doonmulvihill and laid siege to the castle. Conor received assistance from his cousin Thomas Butler, 10th Earl of Ormond and they managed to rebuff Donald and his co-horts, after which they returned to Ennis and occupied Clonroad Castle. This was the start of unrest in Thomond that lasted until the 1570s.

Once inside Clonroad Castle Donald O'Brien of Dough had himself proclaimed "The O'Brien" and was inaugurated 'King of Thomond Chief of the Dál gCais'. Later in 1553 Donald O'Brien approached the Irish Lord Deputy Anthony St Leger to have his status of 'King of Thomond' ratified. St Leger was unable to grant this request but promised to write to English Queen Mary I in his favor. So, for a while at least, the man that had been proclaimed 'tanist of Thomond' by King Conor O'Brien on his death bed in 1539, did indeed become de-facto King of Thomond. [276]

In 1554 Anthony St Leger was recalled and was replaced as Irish Lord Deputy by Thomas Radclyffe, 3rd Earl of Sussex. Radclyffe was ordered to restore the "pacification of the island" and mustered an army for that purpose and in 1555 marched towards Thomond. [277]

Donald O'Brien of Dough (now de facto King of Thomond) had advance knowledge of Radclyffe's intentions and did not wait to be attacked in Thomond. Instead "putting himself at the head of the Dál gCais" marched his army more than halfway across Ireland to Hy Regan in County Offaly to encounter the English troops. [278]

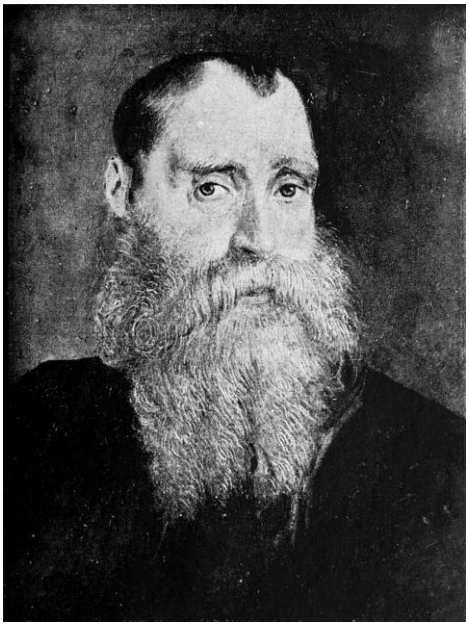
The formidable appearance of the Thomond Dál gCais army caught Radclyffe off guard and he baulked. Instead of engaging Donald O'Brien Radclyffe offered a peace deal whereby he would recognise Donald O'Brien of Dough as the ruler of the Irish in Thomond, whilst the English settlers would be governed by Radclyffe as Irish Lord Deputy. [279]

The peace deal was agreed to by Donald O'Brien and in the summer of 1555, he marched the Thomond army back towards their homeland beyond the Shannon River.

In 1557 Donald O'Brien's brother Torlough O'Brien of Dromoland died and so Donald lost a powerful auxiliary. Up until this point Donald O'Brien had maintained a somewhat hollow and insincere reconciliation with our ancestor Conor O'Brien, 3rd Earl of Thomond. Conor had been living at Doonmulvihill Castle since 1553 biding his time, and with the demise of Donald's brother Torlough he sensed he may have an opportunity to re establish himself within Thomond.

Conor O'Brien informed the Irish Lord Deputy, Thomas Radclyffe that Donald O'Brien may have been weakened. Radclyffe who obviously no longer wished to abide by the peace deal he struck with Donald O' Brien at Hy Regan in 1555 agreed. And so, in 1558 he marched at the head of his English army with the aim of reinstating Conor O'Brien as ruler of Thomond.

In June 1558 the Lord Deputy Radclyffe arrived in Limerick with a large army and proclaimed Donald O'Brien of Dough, as well as his co-horts Teige O'Brien of Smithstown and Donough O'Brien of Inchiquin (the sons of Murrough the tanist, 1st Earl of Thomond) to be traitors.



Donough O'Brien of Inchiquin, youngest son of Murrough the tanist, 1st Earl of Thomond.

Donough was arrested and hung in 1582 as a traitor. His death was subsequently deemed to have "taken place in error."

Donough also resided at Leamaneh and inherited the Dromoland estate from his father and he was the progenitor of the Dromoland O'Briens. Painted in 1577 on panel.

(courtesy Jack Kirrane)

Radclyffe's army crossed the Shannon and took the towns and castles of Bunratty, Clarecastle and Clonroad which he gave to Conor O'Brien 3rd Earl of Thomond, arguing that Conor had won his support through his "good execution of justice" within Thomond. Conor O'Brien was now placed in full and complete enjoyment of title and lands, and on the 10th July 1558 at St Mary's at Limerick, Conor O'Brien 3rd of Thomond pledged allegiance to the crown of England. [280]

Upon hearing of Radclyffe's arrival in Thomond, Teige O'Brien of Smithstown fled south and sought help from Gerald FitzGerald, 14th Earl of Desmond. His brother Donough O'Brien remained in Thomond and took up residence at Inchiquin Castle, whilst Donald O'Brien of Dough fled with his son Teige au Tsuasain O'Brien (so named due to his long uncombed hair) in the other direction and found refuge with the Maguires in Fermanagh. Teige au Tsuasain O'Brien was appointed 'tanist' of Thomond by his father Donald O'Brien of Dough.

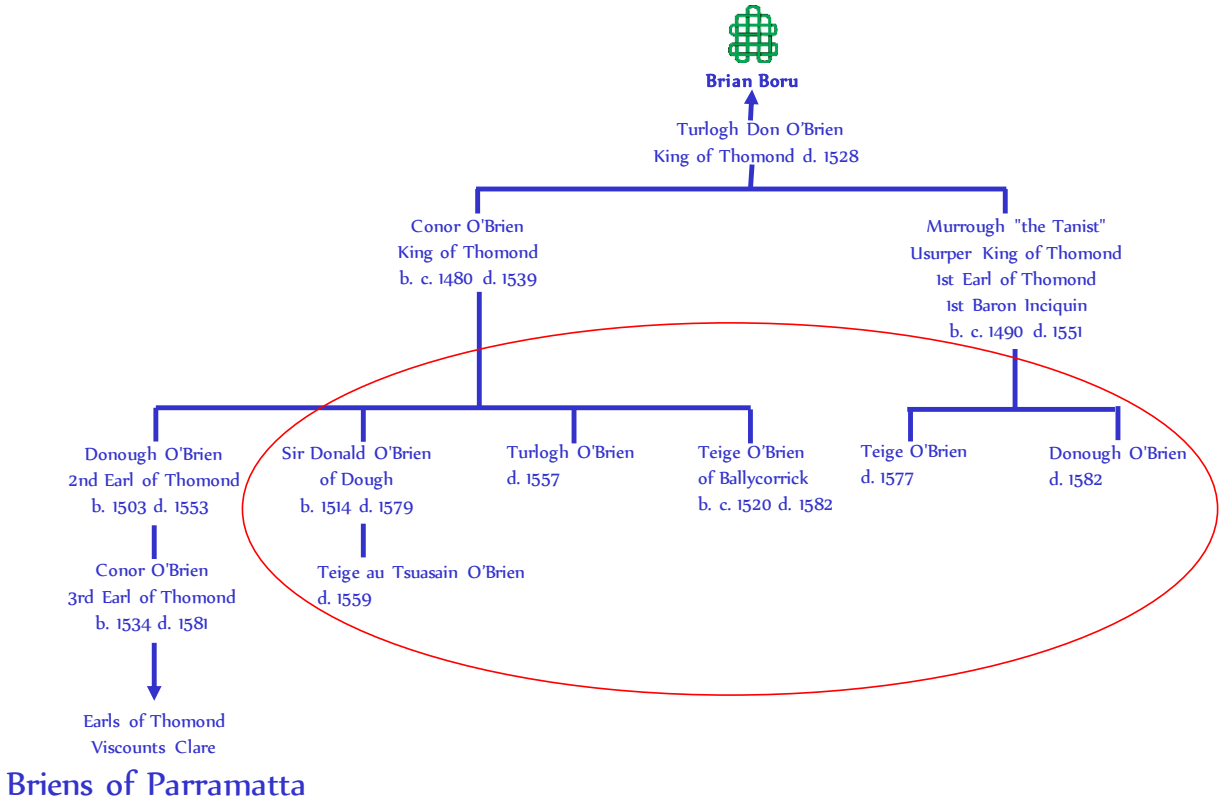


Diagram showing the opponents of of Conor O'Brien 3rd Earl of Thomond (in red)

In 1559 Teige au Tsuasain O'Brien died and was buried at Aghavea in Ulster. The Four Masters describe Teige as "the most distinguished of his age of the race of Cormac Cas, for agility, strength, martial feats and horsemanship." [281]

The banishment of Donald O'Brien of Dough, the military occupation of Thomond, the restoration of our ancestor Conor O'Brien 3rd Earl to his titles and possessions were the first practical proofs to the Dál gCais people that a revolution had actually taken place in the ancient territory of Thomond. The Four Masters records that the people of Thomond "were seized with horror, dread, fear and apprehension of danger, at this change." [282]

Battle of Spancill Hill 1559

In the spring of 1559 Conor O'Brien the 3rd Earl besieged Inchiquin Castle aiming to remove Donough O'Brien. What happened at this point is not entirely clear, but it seems that Conor was close to destroying Inchiquin Castle when he received news from Gerald FitzGerald, 14th Earl of Desmond that he was intent on intervening in Thomond on Teige O'Brien's behalf. Conor immediately abandoned the siege at Inchiquin and instead traveled to Galway to seek assistance from Richard Burke, 2nd Earl of Clanricarde.

The combined forces of Conor O'Brien and Richard Burke now marched south to Thomond. They set up camp near Spancill Hill and prepared for the arrival of the Earl of Desmond's forces. They didn't have to wait long, by June 1559 Teige of Smithstown returned to Thomond with his new ally Gerald FitzGerald at the head of the Desmond army. FitzGerald moved his forces to a location near Ballyalley Castle close to where he had learned Conor O'Brien and Richard Burke's combined army were camped. [283]

FitzGerald reached this position late in the evening and arose early the next morning to attack. In what is known as the 'Battle of Spancill Hill' the forces of Gerald FitzGerald, 14th Earl of Desmond with support from Teige O'Brien prevailed over those of Conor O'Brien, 3rd Earl of Thomond and Richard Burke, 2nd Earl of Clanricarde. [284]



Spancill Hill, County Clare - site of the battle in June 1559

The defeat of the Earls, Conor O'Brien and Richard Burke, at Spancill Hill was comprehensive and their combined forces suffered significant casualties. Although a local struggle, the immediate effect of Conor O'Brien's defeat at Spancill Hill was felt across Ireland as it was also seen as a notional defeat for Thomas Radclyffe, who had supported Conor by marching his army into Thomond the previous year.

On the 17th November 1558 Queen Mary of England died and she was succeeded by Queen Elizabeth I. Thomas Radclyffe attended her coronation at London held in January 1559 after which the new Queen promoted Radclyffe to Lord Lieutenant of Ireland.

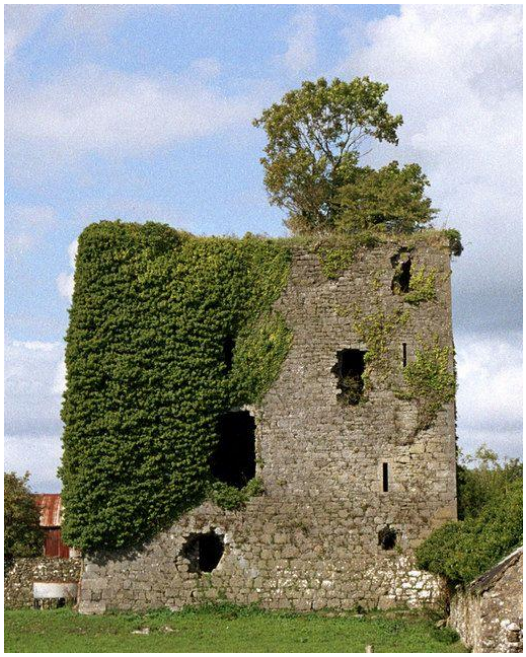
This promotion brought additional responsibilities along with added pressure for him to resolve the situation in Thomond. Consequently, Radclyffe was forced to request further English troops so he could mount another incursion into Thomond. This took place in 1560 and once again Radclyffe reinstated Conor O'Brien the 3rd Earl as protector of Thomond.

In the wake of the 'Battle of Spancill Hill' Teige O'Brien of Smithstown was captured by Lord-Justice Fitzwilliam and confined to Dublin castle. By early 1562 Teige had managed to escape Dublin and returned to Thomond and was reunited with his brother Donough and together they formed an army and went on the offensive. After initial set backs they regrouped at the hill at Scamhall and engaged Conor O'Brien's troops defeating them and capturing two of Conor's key allies i.e. Teige Oge O'Brien and Brian Duv O'Brien, both descendants of King Toirdelbhach Bóg O'Brien. [285]

The two brothers Teige and Donough, now took up residence at Ballyalley Castle and in 1563 they were besieged by Conor O'Brien the 3rd Earl. Conor's attempts at breaking into the castle were proving fruitless so he sought the assistance of Thomas Radclyffe and procured a canon, and the old castle designed to keep out armies using swords and axes, was no match for cannon balls.

Also, around this time Donald O'Brien of Dough returned from exile in Ulster and arrived back in Thomond. He reignited his alliance with Teige O'Brien of Smithstown and his brother Donough and this group was now bolstered with the addition of Donald O'Brien's brother Teige O'Brien of Ballycorrick. Teige of Ballycorrick was now appointed 'tanist' in lieu of his nephew Teige au Tsuasain O'Brien who had died in exile at Aghavea in Ulster in 1559.

In retaliation for the attack on Ballyalley Castle, Donald O'Brien of Dough and his co-horts spent the summer of 1564 raiding villages along the Ougarnee river. They chose this area as it was close to Rosroe Castle the current residence of Conor O'Brien the 3rd Earl of Thomond. [286]



Ruins of Rosroe Castle near Sixmilebridge, residence of Conor O'Brien 3rd Earl of Thomond in 1564.

The attackers used hit and run tactics and were difficult to prevent, and resulted in Donald O'Brien and his co-horts reaping great bounty which they took with them to the land north of the Fergus river. For those settlements along the Ougarnee river and surrounding districts they created great hardship. This was made even worse due to Donald O'Brien inviting mercenaries from Desmond to also participate in these raids.

The raids subsided during the winter of 1564 but great damage had been done. Conor the 3rd Earl of Thomond realised he had to stamp out the insurrection once and for all and proposed a solution to the new Lord Deputy of Ireland, Sir Henry Sidney.

In April 1565, Donald O'Brien achieved a significant victory when Sir Henry Sidney, proposed to grant Donald O'Brien of Dough the lands of Corcomroe (North West Co Clare) if he gave up his claim over the Kingdom of Thomond and surrender his title of 'Chief O'Brien'. [287]

Donald O'Brien accepted Henry Sidney's offer and acquired the lands of Corcomroe including the town known today as Ennistymon - from which name his descendants would be known. The Ennistymon O'Briens would continue to hold sway over Corcomroe for the next 300 years.

In 1570 Henry Sidney transferred Thomond from Munster to Connaught, in the process Thomond was shired; Thomond becoming henceforth known as County Clare. There are two main hypotheses for the origins of the county name "Clare." One is that the name is derived from Thomas de Clare who was deeply embroiled in local politics and fighting in the 1270s and 1280s. An alternative hypothesis is that the county name Clare comes from the settlement of Clare (now Clarecastle), whose Irish name Clár (plank bridge) refers to a crossing over the River Fergus. [288]



Map showing the general area of Corcomroe (in blue - approx. 250.2 km²)
granted to Donald O'Brien of Dough in 1565

However even with Corcomroe in Donald O'Brien's possession peace did not endure as in 1566 hostilities once again erupted between the parties, but this time resources on both sides were now so depleted it amounted to little. Conor O'Brien the 3rd Earl of Thomond was now coming under mounting criticism for not bringing peace to Thomond. When Sir Henry Sidney visited Limerick in April 1567, he described it as "utterly impoverished owing to the Earl of Thomond's insufficiency to govern."

Conor was deeply offended by these and other criticisms and when Sir Edward Fitton visited Ennis in February 1570 to preside over court hearings, Conor refused to attend and remained at his Clonroad residence a short distance away.

When Fitton sent messengers to let Conor know he had arrived Conor attacked them. At hearing what had happened Sir Edward Fitton left Ennis and traveled north seeking refuge in Galway. Conor pursued him but a force headed by Thomas Butler, 10th Earl of Ormond set out from Tipperary to protect Fitton.

After a few weeks Thomas Butler caught up with Conor and he submitted unconditionally to Butler. Butler saw an opportunity to gain territory in Thomond and gave Conor the option of handing over some of his castles for freedom. Conor signed away several of his properties including Bunratty and Clare Castle, but later was "seized with sorrow and regret for having surrendered his towns and prisoners" and determined never to "submit himself to the law, or to the mercy of the council of Ireland." Conor O'Brien fled in June 1570 to France.



Thomas Butler, 10th Earl of Ormond who pursued Conor O'Brien and tricked him into giving up his properties in Thomond.

On the 18th July 1570 Conor met Sir Henry Norris the English ambassador in France and, after protesting his loyalty, begged him to intercede with Elizabeth I Queen of England for a pardon. Norris, who thought Conor a "barbarous man" wanting "neither vain glory or deceitfulness, and yet in his talk very simple," soon became aware that Conor was in discussions with the French court and urged Elizabeth I to coax Conor home at any price. [289]

Queen Elizabeth I spoke of Conor O'Brien as a "person of small value" and declined to pardon him beforehand, but she was sufficiently aware to his power to do mischief and promised if he returned to give his grievances a favorable hearing. But Conor O'Brien showed no inclination to leave Paris, and Norris was forced to lend him a hundred crowns and make endless promises before he would consent to leave.

Conor O'Brien returned to Ireland in December 1570, and, having made a public confession of his treason to Sir Henry Sidney, he was pardoned. In April 1571 Conor surrendered all of his lands to the queen and in June 1573 a warrant was given for the restoration of his lands.

In 1575 Conor's uncle Donald O'Brien of Dough received a knighthood and also was appointed Sheriff of the newly proclaimed County of Clare. Conor found Donald's appointments hard to stomach and he was reputed to have said that he repented ever "condescending to the queen's mercy."

The dispute between Conor O'Brien and his uncle Donald O'Brien continued to simmer, and in 1577 Sir William Drury was compelled to place County Clare under martial government. On the 7th October 1577 Conor O'Brien the left for England with his son Donough after being summoned to attend the court of Queen Elizabeth I. Elizabeth issued a new patent containing the full effect of Conor's former patent, with remainder to his son Donough including the title of Baron of Ibrickane. By Christmas 1577 his Conor O'Brien had returned to Ireland whilst his son Donough remained in London at the court of Queen Elizabeth I.

In the following years Conor seems to have lived on good terms with the new president of Connaught, Sir Nicholas Malby. In 1579 Sir Donald O'Brien of Dough died and in December the following year Conor O'Brien the 3rd Earl of Thomond passed away; he was buried at Ennis Abbey. He was succeeded by his eldest son Donough O'Brien who became the Baron of Ibrickane and 4th Earl of Thomond. [290]

Conor O'Brien first married Eveleen MacCarthy, daughter of Donald MacCormac Ladrach MacCarthy Mor. His second marriage was to Una O'Brien, daughter of Turlough Mac-i-Brien-Ara, of Co Tipperary. From this marriage Conor and Una O'Brien had three sons:

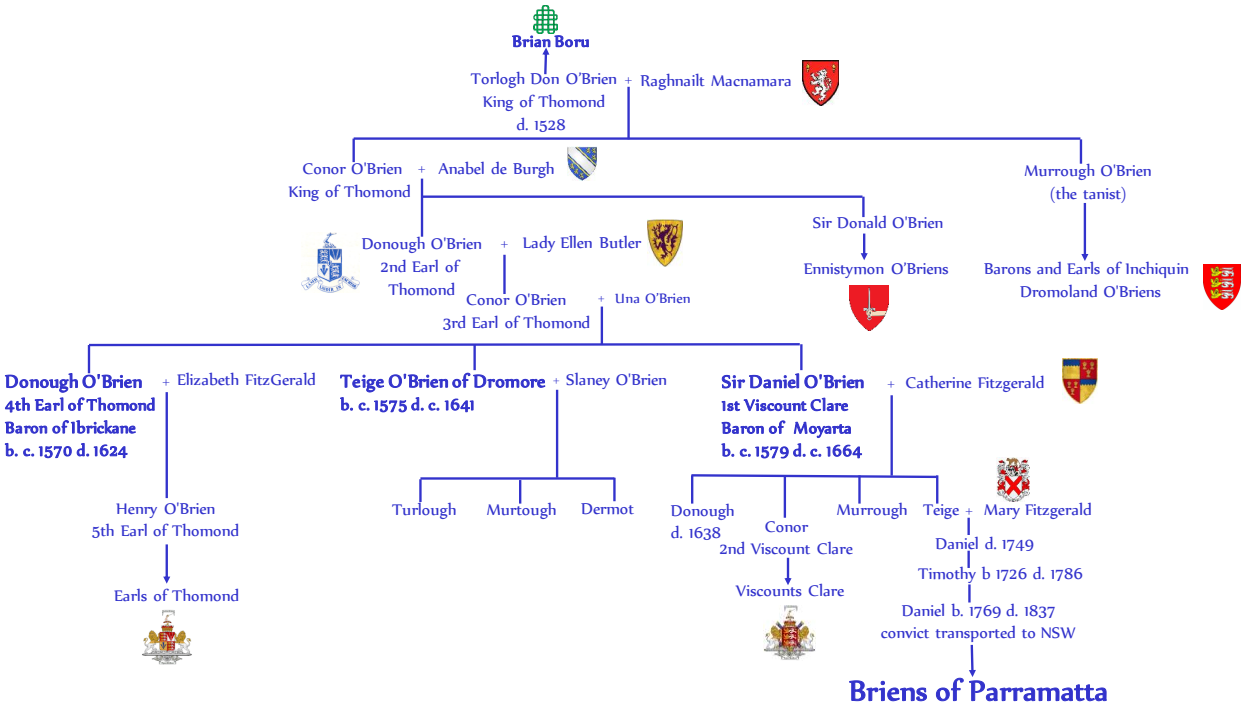
- Donough b. c. 1570 the eldest succeeded as the 4th Earl of Thomond in 1580.
- Teige b. c. 1575 betrayed his brother Daniel in 1599, but later joined with him to fight against the English during the eleven years war.
- Daniel b. c. 1579 (our ancestor) he was knighted and created 1st Viscount Clare in 1662.

Conor and Una O'Brien also had several daughters. One of which was:

- Mary O'Brien married Turlough Roe MacMahon and had a daughter Máire Rúa O'Brien.

Turlough Roe MacMahon and Mary O'Brien lived at Clonderalaw in Co Clare. They had a red headed daughter they named Mary who married Col. Connor O'Brien in 1640. Mary was more commonly known as Máire Rúa O'Brien (Red Mary) and her life is legendary in Ireland. Máire Rúa's story is covered in Appendix 7.

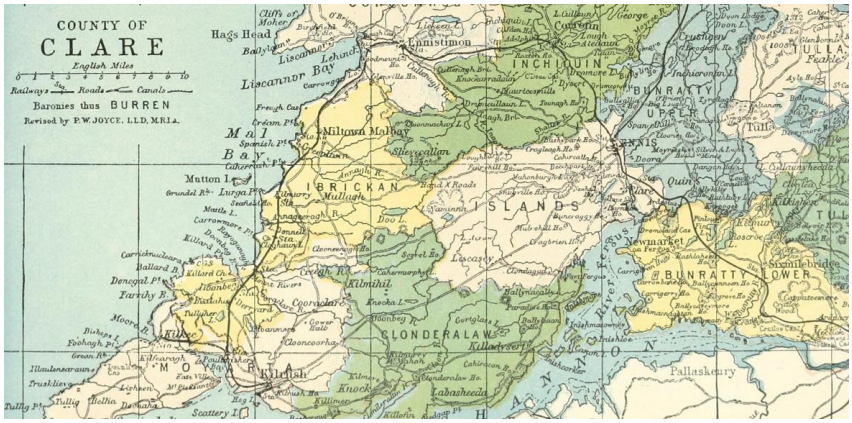
Donough, Teige & Daniel - the sons of Conor O'Brien 3rd Earl of Thomond 1565- 1664



Donough, Teige and Sir Daniel, the sons of Conor O'Brien 3rd Earl of Thomond

The eldest son of Conor the 3rd Earl of Thomond and Una O'Brien was Donough O'Brien. Donough was born about 1565, in October 1577 he travelled from Ireland to England with his father Conor the 3rd Earl who had been summoned to meet Queen Elizabeth I. It was during this visit that Conor had his patent specifying his title of 3rd Earl of Thomond renewed. The patent was issued on the 7th October 1577 and included Donough being named as Conor's heir as well being granted the title of 'Baron of Ibrickane'.

The barony of Ibrickane extends along the Atlantic coast of County Clare. It is bounded by the baronies of Corcomroe (north), Inchiquin (north-east), Islands (east), Clonderalaw (to the south-east) and Myrta (south-west). It has an area of 57,028 acres (23,078 ha). [291]



A map from the 1800s showing the location of the baronies of Ibrickane and Myrta

When Conor the 3rd Earl of Thomond returned to Ireland in December 1577 he left his son Donough behind to be educated and raised at the court of Elizabeth I. During this period the Court was wherever the Queen happened to be and was made up of all those who surrounded the Queen from servants to the courtiers themselves. Once a year the Queen would go on a progress to the southern counties, but most of the time she resided in one of her great royal palaces: Whitehall, Hampton Court, Greenwich, Richmond, St James, Windsor Castle, and Nonsuch.

Conor O'Brien the 3rd Earl of Thomond died in 1580 following which his eldest son Donough became the 4th Earl of Thomond. In 1582 Donough O'Brien returned to Ireland and in later years he was known as the 'Great Earl'.

Queen Elizabeth I receiving ambassadors at Court



Donough O'Brien and his brothers Teige and Daniel lived through a turbulent period in Irish history. Between 1594 and 1603, an Irish revolt took place led by Hugh O'Neill, Earl of Tyrone known as the Nine Years War. In the spring of 1599, Elizabeth I Queen of England sent Robert Devereux, 2nd Earl of Essex, to put the revolt down. To her frustration, he made little progress and returned to England in defiance of her orders. He was replaced by Charles Blount, Lord Mountjoy, who took three years to defeat the Irish rebels. Hugh O'Neill finally surrendered in 1603, a few days after Elizabeth's death.

Donough having been raised at the court of Elizabeth I was an ardent supporter of the English monarchy and remained so throughout his adult life. This would pit him against the middle brother Teige who had stayed in Ireland during his formative years. Teige was born about 1570 and was diametrically opposed politicly to Donough, and took a stand against English influence over Ireland by siding with Hugh O'Neill's Irish rebels.

The youngest brother Daniel was born about 1579. I'm unsure where he was educated but during his late teens at least he had sided with his eldest brother Donough in supporting the English.

Donough as 4th Earl of Thomond was a key protector of Queen Elizabeth's interests in Ireland and when O'Neill's rebellion broke out in 1594 Donough played a major part in its suppression. In command of a large force, he crossed the River Erne in July 1594 and invaded Hugh Roe O'Donnell's country, but retreated in August when a truce was signed. In the following September he was detached by Sir William Russell, with five companies of foot and 145 horse, for the defense of Newry. [292]

In 1597 Donough served in Thomas Burgh, 5th Baron Borough's campaign, but early next year went to England, arriving in London on the 19th January 1598; there he remained most of the year as a courtier. While in England Donough appointed his youngest brother Daniel to remain in Ireland and oversee the barony of Ibrickane. Daniel was aged about 18 at the time and took up a position at Tromora castle just south of Quilty in County Clare.

On the 14th August 1598 Hugh O'Neill, the Earl of Tyrone and the Irish rebels were victorious over the English led by Henry Bagenal at the battle of Yellow Ford. The revolt now spread across most of the country including County Clare where as usual the O'Briens were divided and took opposite sides. [293] On Queen Elizabeth's side was Donough O'Brien the 4th Earl and his youngest brother Daniel. The middle brother Teige O'Brien, joined the Irish rebels and kept Hugh O'Neill informed of what was happening on the western side of the Shannon river.

Also joining the Irish rebels was Teigen McMahon of Carrigaholt Castle and together with Hugh Roe O'Donnell's forces they invaded County Clare in early 1599, ravaging the country and capturing most of the castles.

On the 1st of February 1599 youngest brother Daniel O'Brien was defending Tromora castle [294] when Teigen McMahon's forces attacked. From all accounts Daniel was completely taken by surprise, but with a small number of defenders held off the rebel attack for some time. Eventually McMahon broke into the castle and Daniel was wounded in the fight. In the aftermath Daniel was taken prisoner and was removed to Doonbeg castle where he was confined for some weeks.



Ruins of Doonbeg castle near Quilty Co Clare.

Daniel O'Brien was confined here after being betrayed by his brother Teige in 1599.

Following the rebel raid on Tromora castle in Feb 1599, Teige O'Brien in an echo of what his great uncle Sir Donald O'Brien had done in 1553, proclaimed himself 'The O'Brien' head of the O'Brien clan, 'King of Thomond' and 'Chief of the Dál gCais'.

However, Teige's reign as 'The O'Brien' was short lived as by mid 1599 his elder brother Donough had returned from England and upon hearing the news of the rebel attacks he joined the Earl of Ormonde and assembled a force to revenge his brother Daniel's imprisonment and retake his lost castles.

Donough laid siege to the castles that resisted, generally capturing them after a few days' fighting; at Doonbeg where his brother Daniel had been held, he hanged the garrison in couples facing each other on trees. Donough confronted his brother Teige and clearly showed him more compassion than he did for other rebels he captured. Teige was locked-up in Limerick Castle and according to one account he bribed his way out and fled to County Down. [295] By 1601 he had been pardoned and took up land at Dromore near Ennis where he restored a castle and raised a family with his wife Slaney.

After a four-day siege Teigen McMahon surrendered Carrigaholt Castle but he managed to escape; only to die soon after when he was accidently shot by his son. Donough hanged all of the remaining defenders at Carrigaholt. By mid 1599 the rebels had been completely driven out of Clare and the neighboring country, after which the Queen Elizabeth I loyalists had their strongholds restored.

On 15th August 1599 Donough O'Brien was appointed governor of County Clare and was made a member of the privy council on 22nd September.

By mid 1601 Daniel O'Brien had sufficiently recovered from his injury that he could travel and his brother Donough took him England to present him to Queen Elizabeth I. Daniel was well received in the Queen's court and in a show of gratitude for his service Daniel was granted the title Baron of Myrta and was promoted to the rank of Captain.

The barony of Myrta lies on a peninsula extending between the Atlantic Ocean to the west and the Shannon Estuary to the south, terminating at the point of Loop Head. On the north it is bound by the barony of Ibrickane and on the east by the barony of Clonderalaw. It covers 83,151 acres (33,650 ha). [296]

In addition, Daniel O'Brien was granted Carrigaholt Castle along with other properties outlined in a letter from Queen Elizabeth I written at Greenwich Palace dated 8th July 1601.

"In consideration of the good service done to us by our well beloved subject, Daniel O'Brien, brother to our cousin, the Earl of Thomond, and of his hurts and maims received in our wars in that realme, whereof he have received good testimony, we are pleased, upon his humble suite, to grant him and his heirs, in fee simple, the castles and lands of Carrigaholt, Doonbeg, Ballykitt, Myrta and Goar."

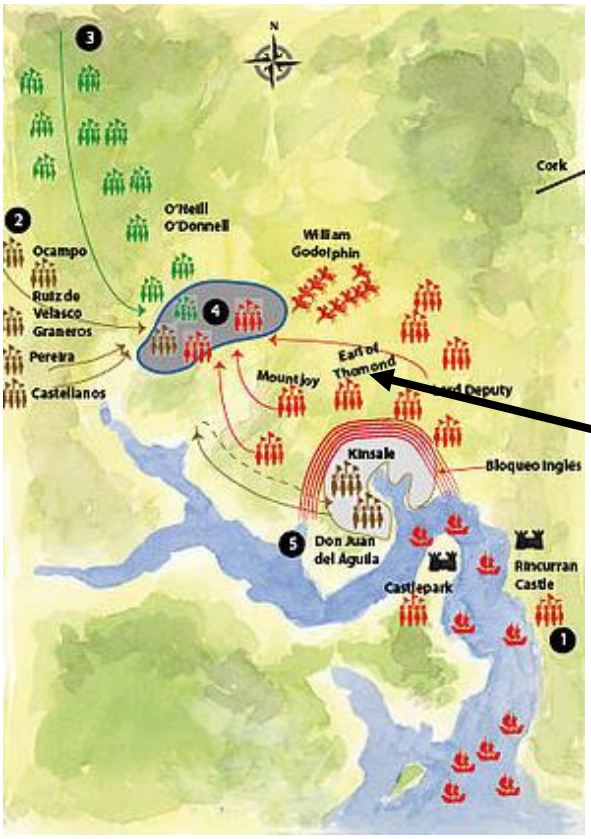
Donough O'Brien and his brother Daniel arrived back in Ireland landing at Castlehaven in County Cork on 11th November 1601, after which they proceeded to Kinsale, where they took a prominent role in the ensuing battle.

Battle of Kinsale 24th December 1601

By way of background to the Battle of Kinsale, Phillip II King of Spain had been supporting plots to overthrow Elizabeth I Queen of England and replace her with Catholic Mary, Queen of Scots. Phillip deemed Elizabeth a heretic and unlawful ruler of England as in the eyes of the Catholic Church; Henry VIII had never officially divorced his first wife Catherine of Aragon. As Elizabeth I was the daughter of Henry's 2nd wife Anne Boleyn; Elizabeth was therefore technically illegitimate. Elizabeth retaliated against Philip II by supporting the Dutch revolt against Spain, as well as funding privateers to raid Spanish ships across the Atlantic. [297]

Phillip's plans to replace Elizabeth were thwarted when Elizabeth I had Mary Queen of Scots imprisoned and executed in 1587. Phillip II now decided to take advantage of the situation in Ireland and join with Hugh O'Neill, the Earl of Tyrone and the Irish rebels in order to create a new front in the war against England. Spanish aid was offered to Irish rebels in the expectation that tying the English down in Ireland might draw even more English resources away from their allies the Dutch.

On the 2nd October 1601 3,500 Spanish soldiers landed at Kinsale Co Cork. The English led by Lord Mountjoy surrounded them with a force of 7,000 and they were bolstered by another 5,000 Irish soldiers commanded by Donough O'Brien 4th Earl of Thomond. The English/Irish force now numbering 12,000 prevented the Spanish from progressing into Ireland and aiding Hugh O'Neill's Irish rebels. [298]



Battle of Kinsale Christmas eve 1601.

The army camp of Donough O'Brien 4th Earl of Thomond.

In response, O'Neill marched his rebel army to Cork and together with the Spanish they managed to surrounded the combined English/Irish force. The English/Irish force might have been destroyed by hunger and sickness but the issue was decided in their favor at the battle of Kinsale on the 24th December 1601.

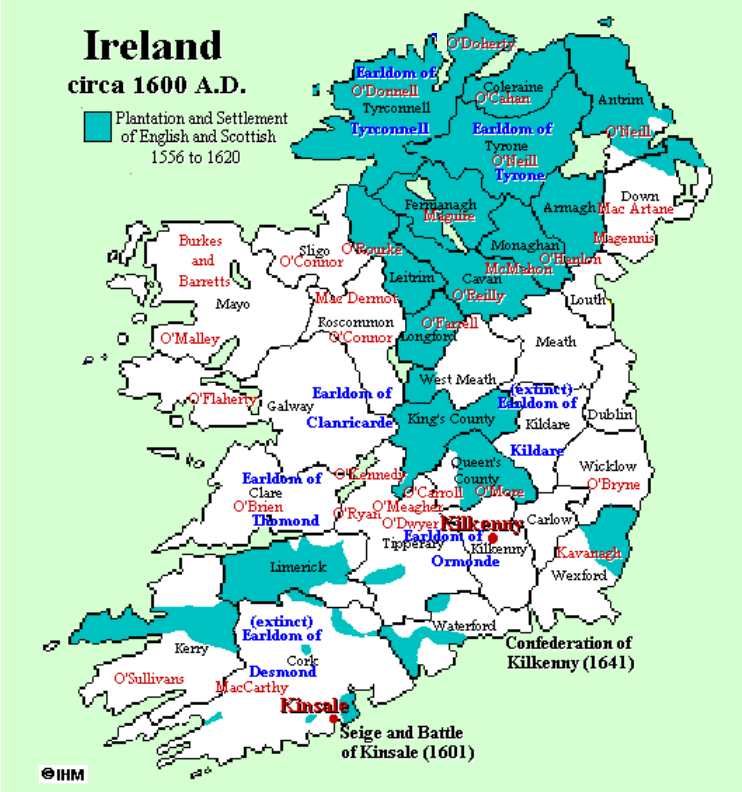
Against the wishes and advice of O'Neill, one of the rebel commanders (O'Donnell) took the decision to attack the English/Irish force. Forming up for a surprise attack, the Irish chiefs were themselves surprised by an English cavalry charge, resulting in a rout of O'Neill's Irish rebels. The Spanish in Kinsale surrendered soon after. Owing to Spanish involvement, and the strategic advantages to be gained, the battle of Kinsale is also considered part of the Anglo-Spanish War (1585–1604), the wider conflict of Protestant England against Catholic Spain.

The battle of Kinsale is seen as the ultimate battle in England's conquest of Gaelic Ireland, and the climax of the Nine Years War. The war came to an official conclusion on the 31st March 1603 with the signing of the Treaty of Mellifont between the English crown and Hugh O'Neill, the Earl of Tyrone. The terms O'Neill received were considered to be very generous at the time.

O'Neill returned to his native Ulster but in 1607 decided to go to Spain leaving from Rathmullan, County Donegal on the 4th September 1607. He was accompanied by Rory O'Donnell, 1st Earl of Tyrconnell, and about ninety followers, this exodus is known as the "Flight of the Earls."

Their intention was always to raise an army and oust English authority in their home province, but the territories they had left behind were soon divided up in the Plantation policy of Ulster, and they were never able to return.[299] These territories closely align with todays Northern Ireland.

Elizabeth I Queen of England imposed the Anglican faith upon a hostile Catholic populace. This map from 1600 shows the extent of English control over Ireland through what was known as the "Plantation settlement system"



The result of the battle of Kinsale was devastating to the existing Irish culture and way of life, as the old Gaelic system was finally broken. The 300 years of Gaelic Resurgence which began for the O'Briens after the battle of Dysert O'Dea in 1318, was now almost completely reversed after the battle of Kinsale.

A memorial was erected at Millwater on the 400th anniversary of the Battle of Kinsale and represents an Irish Chieftains chair. Created by sculptor Ken Thompson, it is composed of stones brought from the four Provinces of Ireland (Connacht · Leinster · Ulster · Munster) to acknowledge the participation of those who joined the chieftains at Kinsale in 1602.

The empty chair is a symbol of where Ireland lost its sovereignty and destiny and its heroes, the rule of its chieftains and the treasures of its ageless Gaelic civilization. It stands too for all the empty chairs in Irish homes as a result of famine and emigration in the years of the Empire. It stands for the Diaspora.



Memorial known as "The Stone of Destiny" at Millwater, site of the battle of Kinsale

In the wake of the "Flight of the Earls" Donough O'Brien was appointed constable of Carlow, and on 6th May 1605 he became President of Munster. In 1613 he strongly upheld the Protestant party in opposition to the Catholics who were disputing the speaker of the Irish House of Commons; and on 17th May 1619 he was reappointed governor of Clare.

Bronze sculpture commemorating the "Flight of the Earls" at Rathmullan, County Donegal



Carrigaholt Castle

Carrigaholt is important to our family story as it was home of our O'Brien ancestors for nearly a century. It was built about 1480 by the MacMahons and is situated over-looking the Shannon River estuary, a short distance from the fishing village of the same name. Today Carrigaholt Castle consists of a well-preserved tower house, but the surrounding buildings have not survived. The tower has been closed since 1906 and is listed as an Irish National Monument. There are photos of the interior which appear to be recent, so the tower has obviously had visitors. [300]

In a letter dated 8th July 1601 Queen Elizabeth I granted our ancestor Daniel O'Brien Carrigaholt and it remained in our family for almost 100 years. Daniel made improvements to the building, some of which can still be seen, like the fire place and chimney installed on the 5th floor (with his initials "DB" and date "1603" carved into it) and many of the windows were Daniel's additions.



Carrigaholt Castle

Home of Sir Daniel O'Brien
1st Viscount Clare.

William Penn (1621-1670) after whom Pennsylvania is named, stayed here on his way to America in 1646.[301]

Around 1603 Daniel O'Brien married Lady Catherine FitzGerald of Glin Castle, daughter of Gerald FitzGerald 15th Earl of Desmond. [302] Shortly after Daniel converted from the Protestant religion and was baptised a Catholic.[303] Why he made this significant decision is a mystery but it is not unreasonable to assume it was something to do with his marriage to Catherine - who was from an old Norman Catholic family, or perhaps it was in response to the treatment of the Irish following the Nine-Year War.

Daniel's religious conversion placed him on opposite sides to his brother Donough as not only did Daniel reject the Protestant religion, in converting to Catholicism he was also in effect renouncing his allegiance to the English monarchy. Daniel was now in league with his middle brother Teige. Even so there is evidence to suggest the three brothers remained on good terms.

The fireplace on the 5th floor of Carrigaholt Castle.

The inscription can still be read "DB 1603" [304]



On the 1st July 1604 Daniel was Knighted at Leixlip, County Kildare and was henceforth known as Sir Daniel O'Brien. [305]



Sir Daniel O'Brien

Baron of Moyarta 1600 by Elizabeth I
Knighted 1604 in the reign of James I
1st Viscount Clare 1662 by Charles II

Daniel held the office of Member of Parliament (M.P.) for County Clare from 1613 to 1614/15. In 1613, having confiscated most of Ulster and granted it to English and Scottish settlers in the Ulster Plantation, King James I called the first Irish Parliament since 1586. James I took no chances that the Parliament would have a Catholic majority and managed to outnumber the Catholic MPs, by creating new constituencies in the "planted" areas.

James I wanted to see the passing of anti-Catholic legislation, already approved in England in 1606, whereby those who did not attend Protestant services would have to pay the then-huge fine of 20 pounds a month. James was targeting those Norman families who were still Catholic and had integrated into the Irish culture. This group owned 60% of the land and were known as the "Old English."

If passed, the position of the Catholic "Old English" gentry would be untenable. They would either have to convert or face bankruptcy and see the Protestant "New English", who had arrived with the Tudor conquest supplant them as the country's ruling class.[306]

When the Parliament assembled, at Dublin Castle on the 18th May 1613, Protestants had a 32-seat advantage. Of the Catholics, 80 were Old English and 20 Gaelic Irish. The Protestants proposed John Davies as speaker, but the Catholics elected John Everard, one of their own and physically carried him into the Speaker's chair. The Protestants warned that, "they would be enforced to pluck him out" and a scrum ensued around the Speaker's chair.

Sir Daniel O'Brien was one of those involved in forcibly holding John Everard in the speaker's chair to prevent the Protestant Sir John Davies being appointed. The Protestants at first tried to lift John Davies onto Everard's lap and when this failed, hauled Everard off the chair and, "cast him to the ground, tore his gown and bruised him."

The Catholic members tried to walk out in protest, only to find that the doors had been locked and instead, "words of hate" were exchanged between the parties for over an hour. The Catholics eventually made it outside and declared that "those still inside the house are no house"

It was clear that James I tactic of introducing the anti-Catholic legislation had failed. In order not to completely ostracize the "Old English" Catholics James I backed down and in order to appease them he eliminated some of the newly created boroughs, so that the Protestant majority came down to six by the time the Parliament met again in 1614-15.

Those involved were not easily forgiven and in 1613 Sir Daniel O'Brien was summoned to England to answer to King James I for his conduct. By co-incidence Daniel's brother Donough O'Brien the 4th Earl of Thomond was also traveling to England on the same ship and was due to attend the parliamentary session where Daniel's conduct was to be dealt with. Based on the good word of his brother Donough, Daniel was dismissed with only a reprimand. It is obvious that at this time the brothers were on good terms.[307]

In November 1634 Sir Daniel O'Brien was again elected member for County Clare in place of, his nephew Barnabas O'Brien.



Sir Daniel O'Brien's brother
Donough O'Brien 4th Earl of Thomond

Also known as "the Great Earl"
He was the elder brother of our ancestor
Daniel O'Brien 1st Viscount Clare.

Donough O'Brien first married Ellen Roche, daughter of Maurice Roche, 6th Viscount Fermoy, and Eleonor FitzGerald. Ellen died in 1597 and they had one daughter Margaret who married Cormac the son and heir of Lord Muskerry.

Donough O'Brien's 2nd wife was Elizabeth FitzGerald the fourth daughter of Gerald FitzGerald, 11th Earl of Kildare and Mabel Brown and they had two sons:

- Henry O'Brien who became the 5th Earl of Thomond.
- Barnabas O'Brien who became the 6th Earl of Thomond.

Donough O'Brien died on 5th September 1624, at Clonmel County Tipperary, and was buried at St Mary's Cathedral in Limerick, where a monument with inscription was erected to his memory.[308] See Appendix 3 for the story of Donough's line, The Earls of Thomond.



Thomond memorial at St Mary's Cathedral Limerick

Eleven Years War 1641 - 1652

The Eleven Years War between 1641 and 1652 was the most destructive conflict in Irish history. It is estimated that up to 600,000 died from fighting, as well as war-related famine and disease. [309]

The conflict was initiated by the Irish revolution of 1641 which had its roots in the conquest and colonisation of Ireland policy (known as the Plantation policy) implemented by Queen Elizabeth I; which created a general state of oppression in Ireland that impacted most Anglo-Irish Catholics.

The spark that ignited the revolution of 1641 can be traced back to the appointment in 1632 of Thomas Wentworth, 1st Earl of Strafford as Lord Deputy of Ireland by King Charles I of England.

Wentworth was a firm leader and established a strong authoritarian rule. Under his administration Irish customs duties rose from a little over £25,000 in 1633–34 to £57,000 in 1637–38. Wentworth raised an army, put an end to piracy, instilled life into the Church of Ireland and rescued church property. His strong administration was seen in some quarters as reducing the tyranny of the wealthy over the poor. [310]

Yet these measures were all carried out by arbitrary methods which made them unpopular. Wentworth's aim was not the prosperity of the Irish but the benefit to the English exchequer. By way of example, Wentworth suppressed the trade in Irish cloth "lest it should be a means to prejudice that staple commodity of England."

Toward the native Irish, Wentworth had no notion of developing their qualities by a process of natural growth; his only hope for them lay in converting them into Englishmen as soon as possible. They must be made English in their habits, in their laws and in their religion. "I see plainly ... that, so long as this kingdom continues popish, they are not a people for the Crown of England to be confident of", he wrote. [311]

Throughout Thomas Wentworth's administration the Plantation policy, and associated confiscation of land from Catholics and subsequent transfer to Protestants, had continued.

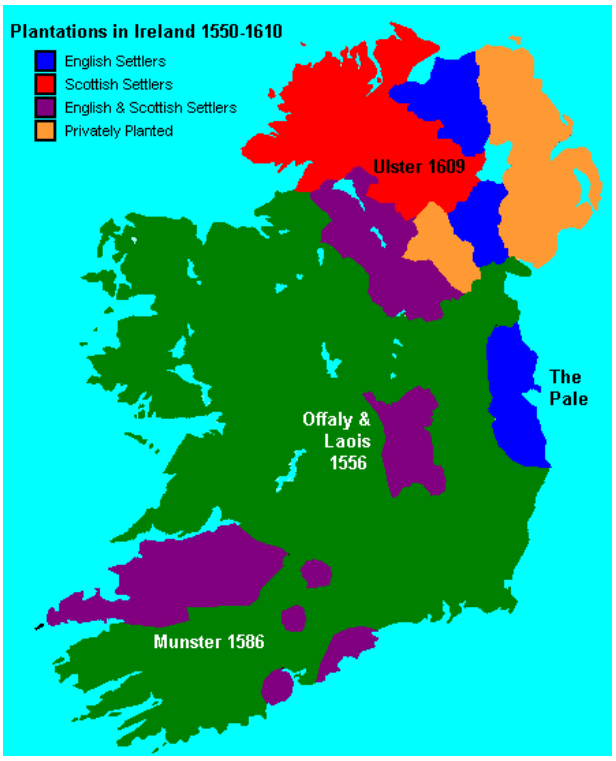
In September 1639 Thomas Wentworth was recalled to England by King Charles I to be his key advisor. At the time King Charles I was struggling to deal with an absurd and incredibly complex political situation involving his English parliament, who were supporting a group of Scottish Presbyterians known as 'Covenanters' who in turn were waging a war against England.

Wentworth soon realised that the situation was deteriorating and he would have his hands full dealing with these problems in England, so his position became permanent.

Wentworth was replaced as Irish Lord Deputy by Christopher Wandesford; who died in December 1640 soon after taking up the position. Robert Sidney, 2nd Earl of Leicester was his replacement but he was removed by King Charles I before he had set foot in Ireland, so this left Ireland basically leaderless as it moved into 1641. [312]

To put the situation into context; Ireland at the time had three main socio-political groups:

1. The Gaelic Irish, who were Catholic.
2. The Old English, who were descended from medieval Normans and were also predominantly Catholic.
3. The New English, who were Protestant settlers from England and Scotland. They had been arriving in Ireland as a result of the Plantation Policy since the time of Queen Elizabeth I.



Map of Ireland in 1609 showing the settlement of Gaelic Irish in green, and the major areas of Protestant settlement in other colours.

The lack of leadership in Ireland was very obvious to the three competing Irish sociopolitical groups who each sought to exploit the situation for their own benefit.

This manifested in a loose alliance between the 'Gaelic Irish' and 'Old English' who both supported King Charles I and were known collectively as 'Royalists'.

On the other hand, the 'New English' Protestant settlers aligned with the English Parliament against King Charles I and were known as 'Parliamentarians'.

A third group of significance were known as the 'Covenanters' who were aligned with the 'Parliamentarians', these were Scottish who supported a Presbyterian Church of Scotland; simply put, this was the group that initiated the civil war in England against King Charles Royalists.

Anti-Protestant sentiment amongst the Royalist 'Gaelic Irish' and 'Old English' had a long history, but it became more overt during this period when Ireland lacked the presence of a Lord Deputy. Calls for greater Irish self-governance, and the reversal of the plantations became louder. Rumors of a possible invasion or takeover by anti-Catholic 'Parliamentarians' also began to circulate.

This anti-Protestant sentiment turned into action on the 23rd of October 1641 with an assault by Royalist on Dublin Castle. In a case of history repeating itself, the attack was foiled (just has it had been during the Silken Thomas Affair of 1534) and the Royalist rebels fled Dublin. But rather than go into hiding, this time they went on the assault and were successful in capturing numerous towns, forts and fortified houses in the northern province of Ulster.

The conflict escalated when Royalist leader Phelim O'Neill issued a forged proclamation (known as the Proclamation in Dungannon) claiming he had the blessing of King Charles I to secure Ireland against the king's 'parliamentarian' opponents. When King Charles I heard news of this he condemned the Royalist uprising, but there was no turning back and the unrest spread across the land and soon most of Ireland was in rebellion.

News of the Royalist uprising arrived in Thomond on the 1st of November 1641. One of the first to hear of it was Barnabas O'Brien the 6th Earl of Thomond, who was in his residence at Bunratty Castle when a message arrived from Limerick stating that Protestant settlers had become the target of attacks from royalist Catholics.

Barnabas was the Lord Lieutenant of County Clare and had a duty to maintain law and order. In an attempt to get ahead of events, he called a meeting to be held on the 24th of November 1641 at Ennis "to consult as to the preservation of the public peace."

One of Barnabus's first actions was to invoke marshal law across County Clare and appointed some of his trusted friends and relatives with the task of seeing it implemented. These included his first cousin Dermot O'Brien (of Dromore Castle) [313] and Daniel O'Brien (of Dough Castle). [314]

Barnabus next took steps to establish a peace keeping force to which he assigned a line of control, that included Dermot O'Brien of Dromore (which he appointed the rank of Captain), and Conor O'Brien of Leamaneh.

The newly established peace keeping force led by Barnabus O'Brien was soon on the move as news of hostilities in southern Clare began to filter through. One of the reports received was that Murtagh O'Brien, son of Daniel of Annagh, had crossed the Shannon river from Tipperary and robbed the English in that area of most of their cattle. Murtagh also threated English settlers at Killaloe and Castlebank and caused the protestant Bishop of Killaloe, along with his English tenants, to flee to Limerick and seek shelter at King John's Castle. [315]

Barnabus led his army to Killaloe in pursuit of the cattle driven out by Murtagh O'Brien. This led to a confrontation resulting in a stand off between the groups. But this was the tip of the iceberg, soon afterwards Barnabus learned that Turlogh O'Brien of Turlaghmore, had plundered the English residing on the borders of the counties of Clare and Galway, of their cattle and other property. In response Barnabus dispatched a party of troops to capture Turlogh and his associates.

The number of reports of Irish hostilities against the English settlers grew and Barnabus was forced to raise several more companies of troops in an attempt to keep the peace. These were garrisoned within English settlements they were tasked to protect throughout County Clare.

The process of raising more & more peace keeping companies came at a cost and as Lord Lieutenant Barnabus was expected to foot the bill from his own estate. To cover expenses, Barnabus decided to impose a levy on each townland in which a garrison had been positioned for their protection. Understandably this was not a popular decision and by late December 1641 it was becoming apparent that many of the English settlers, wanting to avoid paying the levy, were leaving their houses and seeking shelter in nearby castles that had build in fortifications; as these didn't require a garrison for protection (and hence they didn't have to pay the levy).

Barnabus O'Brien was not impressed with this turn of events, and in an attempt to recoup this loss of revenue he now made an interesting decision. He ordered his Captains to seize the goods of "any English that should offer to forsake their dwellings." To quote James Frost "the command being obtained, his troops made full use of it."

This step by Barnabus O'Brien seems to have turned the whole peace keeping initiative on its head, more so as Captain Dermot O'Brien took this a step further and made the case that "the English had more arms than the Irish tasked with protecting them" therefore, the castles held by the English should be included in the order.

In late December 1641 a story began circulating that a cache of arms was being hidden by the English at Ballyallia Castle near Ennis. Eventually this came to the attention of Dermot O'Brien and he decided to take action, particularly as an Englishman named Maurice Cuffe was known to occupy the premises, whom he rented from Sir Valentine Blake 3rd baronet of Galway.

On the 4th February 1642 Dermot O'Brien enlisted the help of his brother Captain Turlogh O'Brien and together they arrived at Ballyallia Castle with a small force. Dermot sent a message to Maurice Cuffe offering to meet and the two had a parley on the 6th February. Dermot offered Maurice, and all other occupants of Ballyallia Castle, safe passage to Bunratty if they opened the castle gate.

Maurice Cuffe refused the offer pointing to a proclamation recently proclaimed in England that offered English settlers protection in Ireland. Dermot's brother Turlogh then spoke up with a lot less diplomacy and threatened Maurice Cuffe saying that Royalist leader "Pelim O'Neill with 40,000 soldiers, would come to Thomond and not leave a Protestant living." [316] We don't know what was said after that, but clearly the parley didn't go well for the O'Briens.

Valentine Blake who owned Ballyallia evidently saw the writing on the wall and wrote to Maurice Cuffe saying "we should give it up to Captain Dermot O'Brien and betake ourselves to some place of greater strength." To which Maurice replied saying that he had just started a 31-year lease on Ballyallia Castle and wasn't giving it up for anyone. [317]

After the confrontation with Maurice Cuffe, Dermot and Turlogh O'Brien left Ballyallia Castle and made their way to see their uncle (and our ancestor) Sir Daniel O'Brien at Carrigaholt. We have no record of their specific conversation but obviously Sir Daniel was receptive to his nephews cause as he, and his youngest son Teige Roe O'Brien, travelled to Ballyallia and were participants in the ensuing siege.

What is recorded is that Sir Daniel O'Brien, "after lighting a number of fires around the country, to distract the castle occupants, sent forty musketeers to force their way into the haggard" (an Irish term for an enclosure beside a castle in which crops are stored) to deprive the castle occupants access to food, water and other supplies. [318]

Those besieged in Ballyallia Castle put up strong resistance firing at the attackers and throwing down rocks which from all accounts was effective at keeping the O'Briens at bay. Finally however, water became scarce forcing a number of men from the castle to venture out. This was the turning point of the siege as a fight ensued outside the castle walls resulting in a number of deaths. Some of the castle occupants escaped by swimming across the nearby lough and a man named Abraham Baker was taken prisoner.

The loss of manpower in the castle now allowed Dermot O'Brien's forces to gain access, to at least part of the castle, and recover as many implements as they could find. The list of what was taken was documented by Maurice Cuffe and includes: "one great fowling-piece, one halberd, one sword, four skeanes, four pikes, three half pikes, two great iron sledges, two great iron bars, two pick-axes, four spades, five shovels, one great hammer, one borer, one pair quearns." Maurice Cuffe made a note saying "Notwithstanding this success, the enemy kept their camp and did not remove from us till the 12th of March" 1642.



Arrow shows site of the siege at Ballyallia Castle near Ennis County Clare

The following day Inchicronan Castle near Crusheen County Clare was besieged by Gilladuff O'Shaughnessy and the O'Gradys. One of the castle occupants, Anthony Heathcot, sent a letter to The Earl of Thomond Barnabus O'Brien, promising him "a rick of wheat if he would please to relieve him." The Earl, accompanied by Dermot O'Brien, and John MacNamara, rode to Inchicronan, with his own troop, and fifty Englishmen in arms, but finding that the besiegers had decamped, they returned to Bunratty.

Thinking the coast was clear Anthony Heathcot and other occupants ventured out only to be attacked by the O'Gradys and Roughans who forced Heathcot to open the castle gate. Anthony Heathcot escaped and according to James Frost made his way to Ballyallia Castle.

Meanwhile events on a national scale were taking shape. On the 17th March 1642 a meeting was held at Trim in County Meath initiated by Catholic bishop, Nicholas French, and lawyer Nicholas Plunkett to draft a document known as the "Catholic Remonstrance." It was addressed to King Charles I and in it they outlined their support for the king, and proclaimed that this was a Royalist uprising and as such was a "just war."

The sentiment that the Royalist uprising was a "just cause" was affirmed on the 10th May 1642 by a synod of Irish catholic clergy held at Kilkenny. Those who took the oath swore allegiance to King Charles I and vowed to obey all orders and decrees made by the "Supreme Council of the Confederate Catholics." The rebels henceforth became known as "Irish Confederates."

The plan was to establish a council (made up of clergy and nobility) for each Irish province, which would be overseen by a national council for the whole of Ireland. It vowed to punish misdeeds by Confederate soldiers and to excommunicate any Catholic who fights against the Confederation.

The synod sent agents to France, Spain and Italy to gain support, gather funds and weapons, and recruit Irishmen serving in foreign armies. Lord Mountgarret was appointed president of the Confederate Supreme Council, and a General Assembly was fixed for October 1642.

The first 'Confederate General Assembly' was held in Kilkenny on the 24th of October 1642, where it set up a provisional government. The Assembly was a national Irish parliament in all but name. Present at the first Assembly, representing Munster, was our ancestor Sir Daniel O'Brien 1st Viscount Clare.

The Confederate Supreme Council's first act was to appoint generals to command Confederate forces: Owen Roe O'Neill was to command the Ulster forces, Thomas Preston the Leinster forces, Garret Barry (a veteran of the Spanish army of Flanders) the Munster forces, and John Burke the Connacht forces. Ulick Burke, 1st Marquess of Clanricarde was named head general.



Confederation flag found in Rothe House Kilkenny.

Garret Barry's Confederate Munster forces were soon called into action as escalating violence in southern County Clare had forced about 600 English Protestant settlers to flee to Limerick and fortify themselves inside King John's Castle. Limerick however was predominantly Catholic and much of the populous saw the Protestant settlers holding up in the castle citadel as a threat, and sought help from the new Confederate Supreme Council to have them removed.

An army of about 1500 Confederate men under Garret Barry's control marched into Limerick and lay siege to King John's Castle. Barry's plan was cut the food & water supply and gain entry by digging under the castle, while distracting the occupants by placing snipers on the roof of St Mary's Cathedral, which was on higher ground than the castle, so he could fire upon them from above.

In the end the plan was unnecessary as those within the castle soon surrendered and were removed to Dublin. Once inside, Barry's Confederates dismounted a 32-pounder cannon that became the only mobile artillery then in use in Ireland. Using a team of oxen, the gun was dragged around Protestant outposts in County Limerick, which surrendered to him one after another upon sight of it.



King John's Castle at Limerick scene of the siege in 1642

Meanwhile in 1644 back in County Clare, Barnabus O'Brien the 6th Earl of Thomond had run foul of the Irish Catholic Confederation who sought to take over his stronghold at Bunratty Castle due to its strategic position on the Shannon river. Ironically the Supreme Confederate Council directed his uncle, Sir Daniel O'Brien to carry out the reclamation. Barnabus not having the funds to defend Bunratty against the Confederates, and not wanting to be seen siding with the Catholics, entered into negotiations with the Parliamentarians and threw open the gates and admitted their garrison; after which he went to live at Billing in Northampton shire England until his death in 1657.

Another O'Brien now enters the story. Murrough O'Brien, a descendant of Murrough "the tanist' and cousin of Barnabus and Sir Daniel O'Brien, was a major player in the Eleven years war. Murrough was born in 1614 and inherited the title of 6th Baron Inchiquin in 1624. He was later upgraded to 1st Earl of Inchiquin in 1654. Murrough was married to Elizabeth St Ledger, daughter of Sir William St Leger, President of Munster. From 1636 to 1639 Murrough was in Spain and Italy and studied military strategy; in 1641 he took command of the Irish Royal Army in Munster.

Murrough O'Brien's forces were loyal to King Charles I and were now in pursuit of Garret Barry's Confederate army. After his successful siege at Limerick, Barry's troops headed south to County Cork where Murrough O'Brien caught up with him on the 3rd September 1642, in what became known as "the battle of Liscarrol Castle." O'Brien's force was half the strength of Barry's but he was prepared to risk the outcome of the war in Munster on one decisive battle.

Barry's Confederate cavalry opened the battle with a charge that drove back the Protestant horse. Murrough O'Brien was captured by the Confederate cavalry commander Oliver Stephenson. However, Murrough was rescued when his brother Christopher O'Brien rode up and shot Stephenson dead. This was the turning point of the battle allowing Murrough to rally his troops, who drove back the disheartened Confederate cavalry then overran the infantry.

The defeat at Liscarrol was a major setback for the Confederates. 700 men were killed in the battle and the next day, Murrough O'Brien ordered a further 50 prisoners to be hanged, many of whom were officers. [319]



Liscarrol Castle in County Cork, site of the battle in September 1642

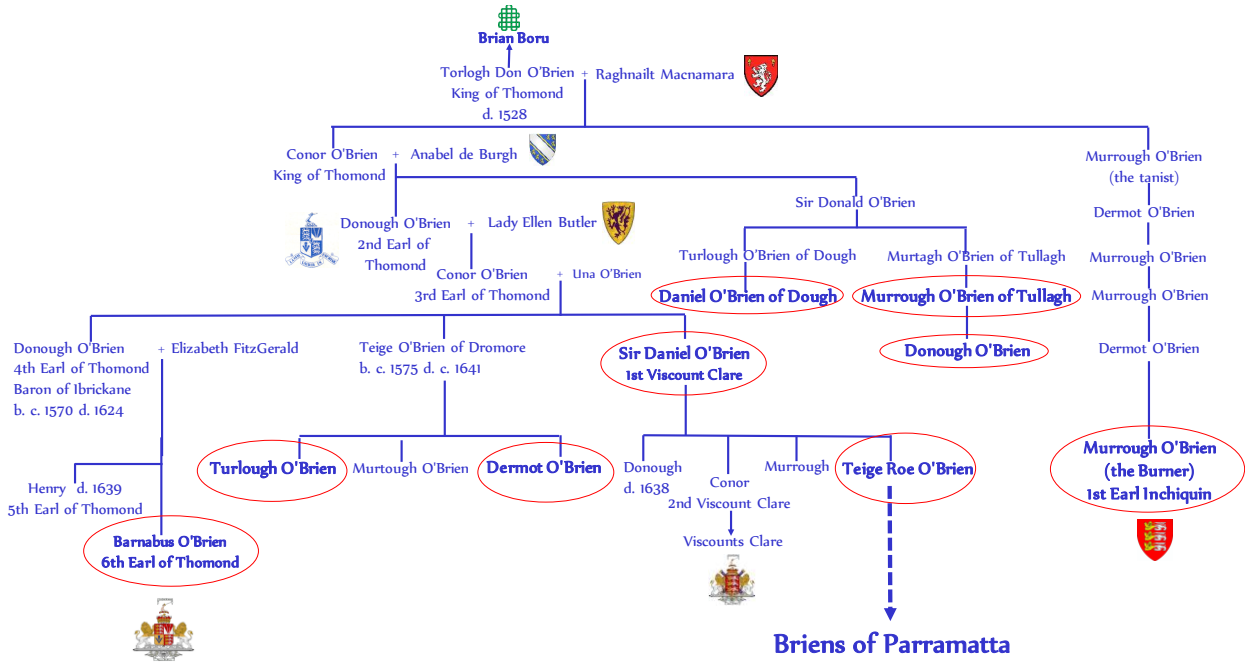
Meanwhile other developments were taking place in England. Civil war between the supporters of King Charles I and the Parliamentarians broke out in 1643. Charles, despite to bolster his Royal army decided to finally take up the Irish Confederate offer to join with him as a combined force against the Parliamentarians.

So, in September 1643 a Cessation of Arms was initiated between Murrough O'Brien's Royalist forces and the Confederate army. Negotiations began to bring the Confederates into the English conflict on the Royalist side. Due to factional in-fighting within Confederate ranks, negotiations took some time to arrange before an alliance between the Royalists and Confederates was actually signed in 1649.

In late 1643 Murrough O'Brien travelled to England with his forces to support King Charles army in the civil war. Expecting to be rewarded by King Charles, Murrough was left disappointed when he was over-looked for the presidency of Munster.

Murrough took this snub personally and after returning to Ireland in July 1644 decided to switch sides for the Parliamentarians. As the Cessation of Arms of 1643 was only declared between the Royalist and the Irish Confederates (not the Parliamentarians) Murrough O'Brien once again took up arms in Ireland, this time on the Parliamentarian side against the Confederates – and with great conviction.

Murrough O'Brien's Parliamentarian army won a series of battles during 1645/46 expelling the Confederates from Cork, Youghal, and Kinsale. The Parliamentarians in England took notice of Murrough's achievements and in 1647 appointed him president of Munster.



Relationship between the O'Briens mentioned in this section on the Eleven Years War
(those known to be involved are circled in red)

Massacre at the Rock of Cashel 15th September 1647

Being appointed president of Munster gave Murrough O'Brien new impetus and in the the summer and autumn of 1647, he mounted a major military offensive against the Confederates during which he stormed and captured Dungarvin, Cappoquin and other garrisons. The counties of Limerick and Clare were raided and he soon turned his attention to the bountiful eastern counties of Munster. In early September, his forces quickly took the Castle of Cahir in Tipperary. This strong castle was well positioned to become a base for Murrough's Parliamentarian Protestant army, and it was used to raid and devastate the surrounding countryside.

Murrough O'Brien had already launched two minor raids against Cashel, but the Irish defenders were unprepared for a major assault. The Parliamentarian forces first stormed nearby Roche Castle, putting fifty warders to the sword. This attack terrified the local inhabitants of the region, some of whom fled to hiding places, while hundreds of others fled promptly to the Rock of Cashel, a stronger place than the town itself.

Arriving with his army at the Rock, Murrough called for surrender within an hour. The defenders of the churchyard offered to negotiate, but that was refused, and on the afternoon of the 15th of September 1647 the assault commenced. The attack was led by around 150 dismounted horse officers (who wore more armor than the foot) with the remainder of the infantry following; troops of horse rode along the flanks of the advancing force to encourage the infantry. The Irish soldiers attempted to drive off the attackers with pikes while the civilians inside hurled rocks down from the walls: in turn the attackers hurled firebrands into the compound, setting some of the buildings inside on fire. Although many were wounded, the Parliamentarians gradually fought their way over the walls, pushing the garrison into the church.

Initially, the Irish defenders managed to protect the Church, holding off the attackers trying to get through the doors, but the Parliamentarians then placed numerous ladders against the many windows in the church and swarmed the building. For another half an hour fighting raged inside the church, until the depleted defenders retreated up the bell tower. Only sixty soldiers of the garrison remained at this point, and they thus accepted a call to surrender. However, after they had descended the tower and thrown their swords away, all were killed.

In the end all the soldiers and most of the civilians on the Rock were killed by the attackers. The Bishop and Mayor of Cashel along with a few others survived by taking shelter in a secret hiding place. Apart from these a few women were spared, after being stripped of their clothes, and a small number of wealthy civilians were taken prisoner, but these were the exceptions. Overall, close to 1,000 were killed, amongst them catholic scholar Theobald Stapleton. The bodies in the churchyard were described by a witness as being five or six deep.

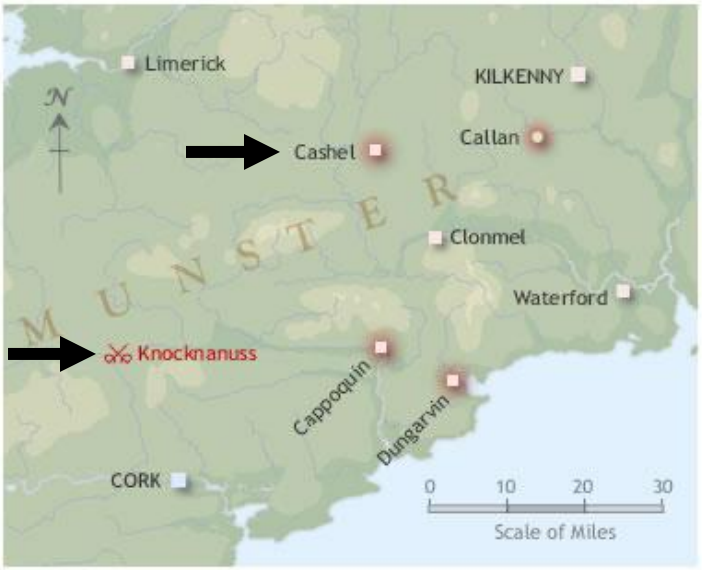
The slaughter was followed by extensive plunder. There was much of value inside, for apart from pictures, chalices and vestments of the church, many of the slain civilians had also brought their valuables with them. The sword and mace of the mayor of Cashel, as well as the coach of the bishop were captured. The plunder was accompanied by acts of iconoclasm, with statues smashed and pictures defaced. The deserted town of Cashel was also torched.

The atrocity at Cashel caused a deep impact in Ireland, as it was the worst single atrocity committed in Ireland since the start of fighting in 1641 and took place at one of the chief holy places of Ireland. The slaughter of the garrison at Cashel and the subsequent devastation of Catholic held Munster earned Inchiquin the Irish nickname, Murchadh na Dóiteáin or "Murrough of the Burnings." [320]



Rock of Cashel, where "Murrough the Burner" massacred the occupants 15th September 1647

Desperate to prevent Murrough O'Brien from joining forces with Colonel Jones' Parliamentarian troops at Dublin, the Confederates sent Viscount Taaffe into County Cork with six thousand foot and twelve hundred horse. Although heavily outnumbered, Murrough inflicted a decisive defeat on Taaffe at the "battle of Knocknanuss" in November 1647, which left him master of southern Ireland with only Limerick, Waterford and Clonmel remaining in Confederate hands.



Map showing the location of the Rock of Cashel (site of the massacre of September 1647)

And Knocknanuss (site of the battle of November 1647) [321]

By 1648 Murrough O'Brien's support for the Parliamentarians was wavering. He had no sympathy for the dominant Independent faction in London, which seemed intent on making fundamental changes to the English constitution, and his military position in Ireland was threatened because Parliament's preoccupation with the Second Civil War in England left him marginalized and short of supplies.

On the 3rd of April 1648, Murrough O'Brien did another back flip and renounced his support for Parliament and declared for King Charles I. He called for a truce with the Confederates - which was readily accepted by Sir Daniel O'Brien and the Anglo-Irish lords on the Supreme Confederate Council.

A treaty was quickly drafted and inked at Kilkenny on the 20th May 1648. But the "Inchiquin Truce" as it was known, caused deep rifts within the Confederacy between the Anglo-Irish lords including who supported the treaty, and Archbishop Rinuccini and his followers who vehemently objected to any agreement with "Murrough of the Burnings" who had slaughtered Catholics, murdered priests and destroyed churches.

By January 1649, after several years of in-fighting and indecision, the initial intent of the Cessation of Arms of September 1643 regarding an alliance between the Irish Confederates and King Charles' Royal Army could finally be ratified.

Known as "The Second Ormond Peace" it was signed on the 17th of January 1649.

In the King's name, James Butler, the Marquis of Ormond promised religious freedom to Roman Catholics in Ireland pending a full settlement after the English civil war had been won and King Charles restored to power, and a free parliament could be convened. In return, the Confederates agreed to supply 18,000 troops to continue the war against Parliament. With James Butler becoming Lord-General of the combined Irish-Royalist army and Murrough O'Brien as Lieutenant-General of Horse.

Three days after the Ormond Peace treaty was signed the situation was turned completely upside-down when the English Parliament charged King Charles I with "high treason against the people of England." The King's trial opened on the 20th January 1649 with Charles refusing to answer the charges, saying that he did not recognise the authority of the High Court, but he was found guilty of the charges against him and sentenced to death on the 27th January 1649. [322]

On Tuesday, the 30th January 1649 at about 2:00 p.m., Charles put his head on the block after saying a prayer and signaled the executioner when he was ready by stretching out his hands; he was then beheaded in one clean stroke. [323]

With the monarchy overthrown, England became a republic or "Commonwealth." The House of Lords was abolished by what was left of the parliament (known as the "Rump Parliament") and executive power was assumed by a Council of State.

On the 5th February 1649, the Covenanter Parliament of Scotland proclaimed Charles, the eldest son of King Charles I, "King of Great Britain, France and Ireland" giving him the title of King

Charles II. Even though this was an unofficial title, it intrinsically made Charles II a threat to the new Republic of England. Charles II eventually escaped England for France (via Scotland) in 1651.

King Charles I at his trial
by Edward Bower, 1649



The new English Commonwealth now turned its sight towards Ireland for a number of reasons. The first and most pressing was the "The Second Ormond Peace" alliance signed on the 17th of January 1649. Even after the be-heading of King Charles I the alliance still stood, under the command of James Butler, Earl of Ormonde and Lieutenant-General Murrough O'Brien.

As a supporter of the monarchy, James Butler made it clear that he intended to use the combined force to invade England and restore the monarchy. This was a threat the new English Commonwealth could not afford to ignore.

This brought Oliver Cromwell into our family story. Cromwell was an English general and statesman who, first as a subordinate and later as Commander-in-Chief, led armies of the Parliament of England against King Charles I during the English Civil War.

Cromwell was one of the signatories to the death warrant condemning Charles I in 1649, and dominated the short-lived Commonwealth of England as a member of the Rump Parliament (1649–1653). He was selected to take command of the English campaign in Ireland in 1649. [324] Cromwell set off and reportedly spent most of the voyage to Ireland being seasick. His forces known as the 'New Model Army' landed at Dublin on the 14th August 1649 with thirty-five ships filled with troops and equipment. A further seventy-seven ships landed two days later.

Fighting ensued between the Royalists Irish forces and Cromwell's mobile army throughout 1650. In January 1651 he set out to traverse Munster where most towns he came too gave up; and where there was serious resistance he usually hung the garrison. Kilkenny was attacked in March 1651 and Waterford surrendered in August. By early September 1651 Cromwell attacked and defeated Sir Daniel O'Brien's force at Clare Castle, from there they moved on to Bunratty which they took on the 8th September 1651.

Later in September 1651 a flotilla of Cromwell's gunships sailed into the Shannon estuary and attacked Carrigaholt Castle; the home of our ancestor Sir Daniel O'Brien. My understanding is that Sir Daniel wasn't there at the time but his troops defended the stronghold however they were out numbered, out gunned and they eventually succumbed. In the process Cromwell's troops captured canons, guns and ammunition from Carrigaholt.



Remains of the sea defenses at Carrigaholt Castle.

(2018)

From Carrigaholt Cromwell's troops sailed upstream along the Shannon estuary and next played a role in the siege of Limerick. This was the second siege of Limerick this decade and this time it was in Confederate hands, protected by troops under the command of Hugh O'Neill. The city was defended with great bravery but on the 27th October 1651 one of Hugh O'Neill's officers, colonel Fennel, betrayed the trust of his commander and opened the gates allowing Cromwell's troops to enter virtually un-opposed. From their base at Limerick detachments of Cromwell's troops were sent into the county side of Clare to "reduce its inhabitants into submission." [325]

Sir Daniel O'Brien lost his stronghold at Ballet Castle (near Kliros) and by the end of 1651 he had surrendered his entire 57,000-acre Myrta estate to Cromwell's forces. Sir Daniel O'Brien now aged about 72, left Ireland and sailed for France. Sir Daniel O'Brien was defeated but he remained loyal to the English monarchy and now joined with the exiled King Charles II who had recently escaped England via Scotland by disguising himself as a Scottish peasant and sailed to France on a fishing boat. Sir Daniel O'Brien remained with King Charles II as a court member and traveled with him around Europe while in exile.

It is recorded that Sir Daniel O'Brien's grandson, also Daniel (who later became the 3rd Viscount Clare) also joined King Charles II in exile. It seems reasonable that our ancestor Teige Roe O'Brien also accompanied his father to France. Teige was aged about 25 and unmarried at the time.

In another twist to out family story, when Sir Daniel O'Brien arrived at the court of Charles II in France he ran into his cousin Murrough O'Brien 'the Burner'. Murrough had left Ireland for France in December 1650 after his army's defeat by Cromwell at Mallow in County Cork. Mistrusted by the Catholic Confederates, Murrough decided to escape and had now found favor with Charles. Later in his life Murrough O'Brien unexpectedly converted to Catholicism following a period of acute illness. He died in Ireland in 1674. [326]

Oliver Cromwell maintained his Irish military campaign until 1651 by which time the Confederate Supreme Council had been dissolved and the English parliament assumed control of Ireland.

In England with the King gone, the "common cause" of the various factions in Parliament began to fight amongst themselves leading to the dissolution of parliament. John Lambert put forward a proposal to make Oliver Cromwell Lord Protector for life to undertake "the chief magistracy and the administration of government". Cromwell was sworn in as Lord Protector on 16 December 1653. He governed the English Republic until he died at age 59 on the 3rd September 1658.

After Oliver Cromwell's death his son Richard took over but that didn't work out so in 1660 the English Parliament resolved to proclaim Charles II king and invite him to return. Charles was still in exile when the message reached him at Breda in the Netherlands on the 8th May 1660. [327]

The painting below by Dutch artist Lieve Pietersz Verschuier hangs in the Rijks museum at Amsterdam. It depicts Charles II sailing into Rotterdam harbour in 1660 on his way to London after being summoned by the English parliament. Could our Sir Daniel O'Brien be in the picture?



Painting of King Charles II sailing into Rotterdam harbor in 1660, on his way to London after being summoned to return as King of England. [328]

Sir Daniel O'Brien returned to England with King Charles II arriving in Dover on the 25th of May 1660, and reaching London four days later. Daniel O'Brien was mentioned in the King's declaration as one of the "objects of his especial favor." [329]

In return for his services Daniel had all of the lands and estates that had been forfeited in 1651 restored to him. Carrigaholt Castle was then held by our line of the family until it was re-taken by the English after yet another siege of Limerick in 1691. Carrigaholt was eventually acquired by the Burton family who held it until 1906. In addition, Sir Daniel O'Brien was created 1st Viscount Clare in letters patient signed by Charles II King of England on 11th July 1662. Daniel died in 1664, aged at least 85. His grave site is unknown.

King Charles II is traditionally considered one of the most popular English kings, Charles is known as the 'Merry Monarch' a reference to the liveliness and hedonism of his court. He acknowledged at least 12 illegitimate children by various mistresses, but left no legitimate children and was succeeded by his brother, James.

Charles' passion for science translated into the patronage of the Royal Observatory at Greenwich under the first astronomer-royal, John Flamsteed. He also set up the Royal Society in London in 1660 with a view to "improving Natural Knowledge." Isaac Newton formulated his theories on gravity; Robert Boyle steered modern chemistry out of ancient alchemy; Richard Lower performed the first blood transfusion between animals and Edmund Halley correctly predicted the return of the comet that bears his name. It was the birth of a scientific reformation. [330]

King Charles II and his brother James are also noted for their active involvement in helping fight the great fire of London in 1666. The brothers took to the streets and fought the fires alongside the London towns people. "All day the King rode with the Duke of York across town with very few attendants. Joining those attempting to extinguish the fire. He laboured in person, and rewarded and encouraged the firefighters… The Royal brothers were a visible presence and seen by many as exceedingly active." [331]

Rebecca Rideal in the diaries of Evelyn and Pepys reported that "the King and Duke of York had extraordinary vigilance and activity and the people of London were glad of the sight of the King and Duke helping extinguish the burning buildings and offering advice." [332]

After the great fire Charles II appointed Sir Christopher Wren as "Surveyor-General and Principal Architect for rebuilding the whole city." Wren built the magnificent St Paul's Cathedral, Chelsea Hospital and other highlights of the age, like Wren's sublime Sheldonian Theatre, Oxford.



Charles II King of England.

Painted while he was exile accompanied by our ancestor Sir Daniel O'Brien c. 1653 [333]

Around 1603 Sir Daniel O'Brien married Lady Catherine FitzGerald. Catherine was born about 1580 and was the third daughter of Gerald FitzGerald 15th Earl of Desmond and his wife Eleanor Butler. The FitzGeralds were descendants of Norman invaders of Ireland from the 1100s and they had English and European royal ancestry. Many of the old Norman families in Ireland had remained Catholic and as I've mentioned elsewhere, were regarded as being "more Irish than the Irish." The story of Catherine's ancestral line is covered in Appendix 10.

One of the FitzGerald's ancestral homes was Glin Castle. It had been home to the Earls of Desmond and Knights of Glin for centuries. The last Knight of Glin was Desmond FitzGerald who died in 2011. Today Glin Castle is a hotel. During the 1970s the castle was rented out to guests such as Mick Jagger, Marianne Faithfull and Talitha Getty.[334]



Glin Castle (2015)

Home of the Knights of Glin and Earls of Desmond

Daniel O'Brien was Catherine FitzGerald's second marriage. She first married Maurice Roche, 6th Viscount Roche of Fermoy but he died in a riding accident on the 24th October 1600, a few weeks after their marriage. From this date we can assume that Daniel and Catherine married no earlier than 1601.[335]

Daniel and Catherine had four sons and seven daughters. I can find no information on their daughters but some information is available on their sons. Their eldest son was Donough O'Brien. He would have been born about 1603. He was a Captain in his father's army and he married Elizabeth Southwell daughter of Sir Thomas Southwell of Polylong Co Cork, they had no children. He died on the 6th Aug 1638 and is buried in the Earls of Thomond tomb at St Mary's Cathedral Limerick.

Their second son was Conor O'Brien who succeeded to the title of 2nd Viscount Clare in 1664. He married his 3rd cousin Honora O'Brien daughter of Daniel O'Brien of Dough & Ellen FitzGerald of Glin; they had a number of children. His line is covered in Appendix. 10.

Their third son was Murrough who married Eleanor Wingfield and had a daughter named Honora. There is however an alternate version of Murrough's line. O'Harts Pedigree 1892 says the male line of Murrough the 3rd son of Sir Daniel O'Brien continues, as does Burke's Peerage 1871. Conversely Burke's Peerage 1866 says Murrough's line was D.S.P. As does O'Donoghue's Historical Memoir of the O'Briens as well as Donough O'Brien (1949) p. 88. [336]

Teige Roe O'Brien - youngest son of Sir Daniel O'Brien and Mary Honora FitzGerald 1625 - 1700

The fourth and youngest son of Sir Daniel and Catherine O'Brien was Teige Roe O'Brien (the red headed). In all likelihood Teige was born at Carrigaholt Castle between 1625 to 1630. He was active with his father Sir Daniel O'Brien during the Eleven Years War and involved in the Catholic Confederacy opposing English settlement in County Clare, and later was a Lieutenant in the Clare Dragoons. [337] It is also very likely that Teige followed his father to France in 1651 in support of King Charles II in exile, and returned to Ireland in 1660 with the Restoration of King Charles II.

By the 1690s Teige Roe O'Brien appears in documents living at Ballykett Castle located near Kilrush County Clare (also close Carrigaholt Castle). A large manor house known as Ballykett was located near the Castle which survived into the mid 1800s. [338]



Ballykett house, last known home of Teige Roe O'Brien (by Thomas Dineley c. 1681)

Ballykett is described as having a building that is composed of two main storeys and a mansarded third storey, with a porch to the front. Outside the enclosing wall there are three simple buildings, distributed through the countryside, which is hilly with few trees. [339]

The original owners of Ballykett were the O'Donnells. The 1st patent for a fair in Ballykeight (i.e. Ballykett) was granted by English King James 1st to Teige Roe's father, Sir Daniel O'Brien in 1623. The site was later occupied by the Hickmans, and successive buildings erected there.

The Landed Estates database provides information regarding the Hickmans' occupancy of this site and successive buildings there. At the end of the nineteenth century the Westropp survey lists Ballykett, barony of Moyarta, among the towers which are more than 'mere sites or foundations'.

Mary Honora FitzGerald was born was born about 1650 and was the youngest daughter of Gerald FitzGerald of Ballygleaghan County Limerick (now known as Holly Park near Pallaskenry in Co Limerick). In 1659 the castle was listed as Ballyglahane and was at the time owned by the Knights of Glin. [340]



Ballygleaghan now called Holly Park near Pallaskenry in County Limerick.

Home of Mary Honora FitzGerald

This branch of the FitzGeralds were descendants of a Norman Catholic family who arrived in Ireland around 1350. They were descended from the "Knights of Glin" and one branch can be traced back Richard Fitzroy the Baron of Chilham, who was an illegitimate son of John I King of England.

Mary FitzGerald's elder brother was Colonel John FitzGerald who commanded an army of Charles II while he was in exile in Europe between 1651, and his restoration as King of England, in 1660. From 1663 to 1665 Col John FitzGerald was Governor of Tangier (in Morocco). Mary's niece, also named Mary FitzGerald, married Sir Stephen Rice a Privy Counsellor to James II King of England (brother and successor of Charles II) and held the office of Chief Baron of the Exchequer.

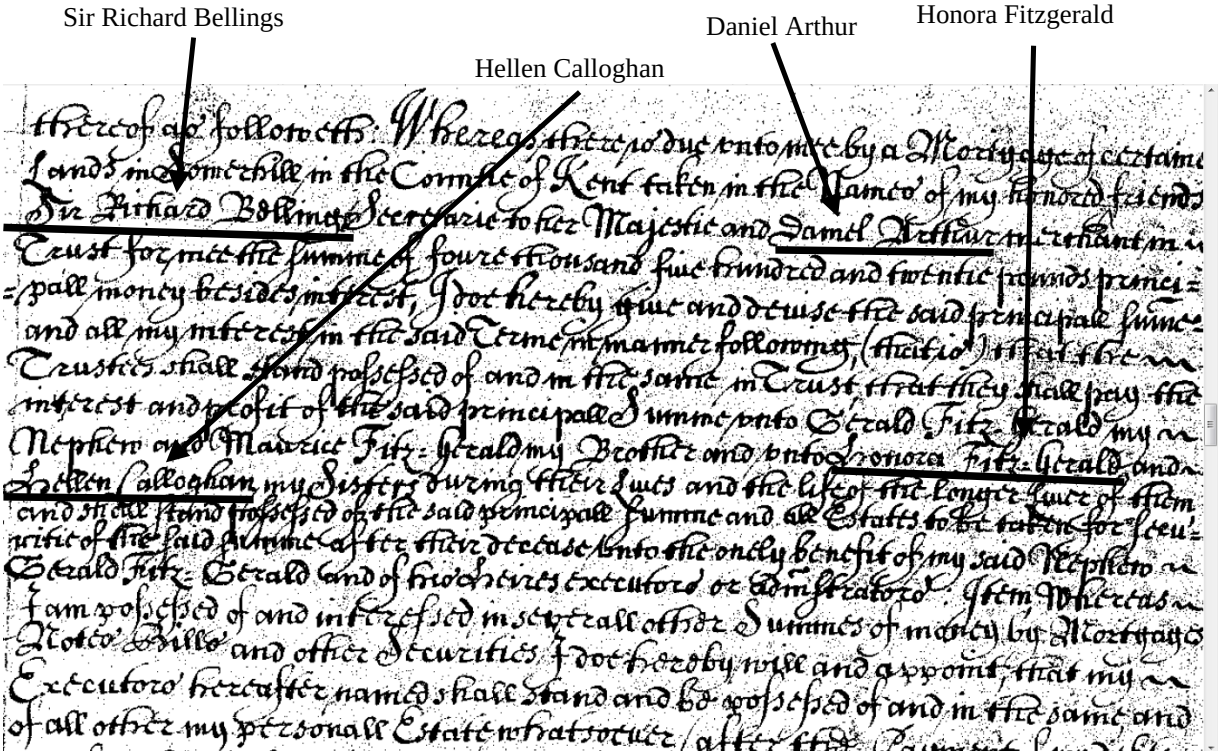
Both the O'Briens and the FitzGeralds were Catholic and they were supporters of King James II. Advocates of King James were known as 'Jacobites'; a name is derived from Jacobus, the Latin version of James. Both families were involved in the Irish "Williamite war" between the Jacobites and the supporters of William of Orange 'Williamites' 1689-1691.

We know from Peerage and other documents that Teige O'Brien and Mary Honora FitzGerald were married sometime after July 1682. They had one child, a son named Donough who was born sometime between 1683 and 1694. [341]

2*b* Mary, *m* Teige O'Brien, 4th son of 1st Viscount O'Brien of Clare, and had issue (*see* BURKE'S *Dormant and Extinct Peerages*).

From Burke's Irish Family Records. London, U.K.: Burkes Peerage Ltd, 1976

Mary Honora FitzGerald's name appears in several legal documents involving her brother Col John FitzGerald's will. The first document was the will itself drawn up in 1673. Mary was named as a beneficiary which stated that upon the death of her brother, she was entitled to the proceeds of investments her brother John had made in England. Also mentioned in the will is Mary's sister Hellen Calloghan and her other brother Maurice FitzGerald.



Excerpt from the will of Colonel John FitzGerald dated 17th July 1673 [342]

Two executors were named in the will, the first was Sir Richard Bellings (1622-1716) a Courtier to Charles II and Knight secretary to his Queen, Catherine of Braganza. Sir Richard was a signatory to the secret "Treaty of Dover" between England and France in which the French King Louis XIV (a Catholic) committed to provide military support to King Charles II if the English Parliament threatened to remove him.

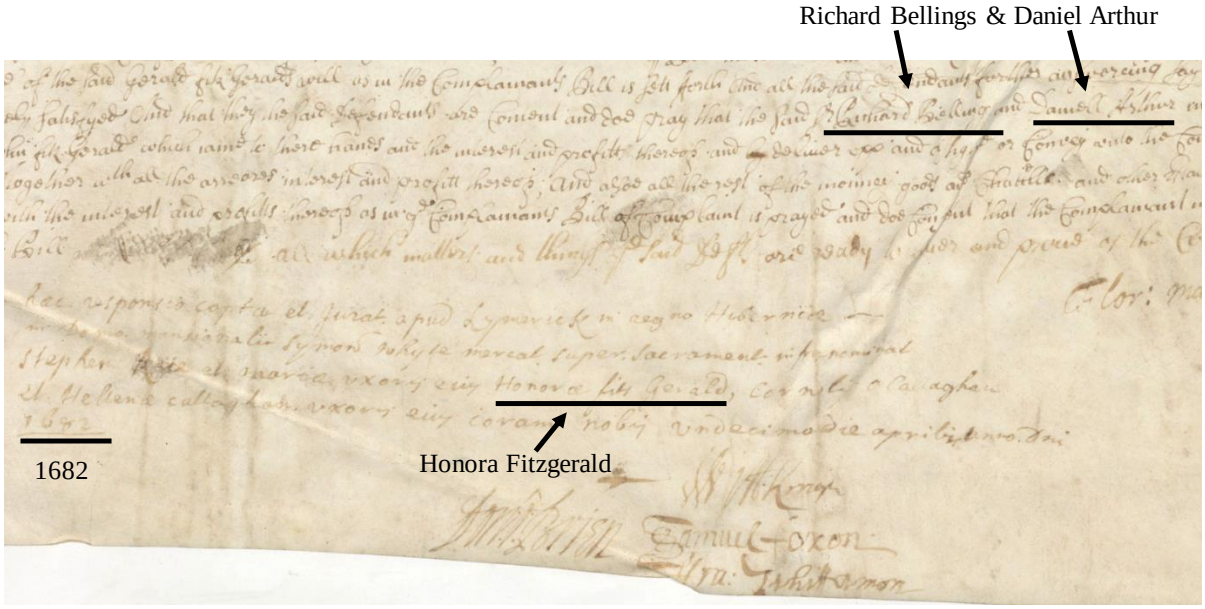
The second executor named was Daniel Arthur, (1620-1705) a Catholic Jacobite supporter from Limerick Ireland who is described in the will as a merchant. Daniel and his sons established a multi-national banking business which facilitated the movement of money between countries. Some of his clients were the monarchs of England, France and Spain. Daniel Arthur also helped many Irish Jacobites to move their money out of Ireland following the Williamite war 1689-1691.

Colonel John FitzGerald died at Nonsuch Park in south London in 1678. Nonsuch Park was a large estate developed as a hunting ground by King Henry VIII. Up to 1670 it had been the property of King Charles II before he passed it to his favorite mistress Barbara Villers. Following John FitzGeralds death Sir Daniel Arthur administrated the the investments listed in the will and in his accounts, are transactions showing where he distributed money to Mary Honora FitzGerald.

Around 1680 Sir Stephen Rice, the husband of Mary Honora's niece Mary Rice, contested Col John FitzGerald's will. The legal case ran until July 1682 before a ruling was handed down and Mary Honora FitzGerald is named in a number of the legal documents relating to this case.

The result of these legal proceedings saw Sir Stephen Rice successful in having the original reading of the will over-turned and instead of Mary Honora FitzGerald and her siblings benefiting from the proceeds of the will, it was instead Mary's niece Mary Rice who was named the true beneficiary.

In these documents Mary is referred to as "Honora FitzGerald" and it is clear that from comparing how other people are named in these documents, that at the time the documents were written, Mary Honora FitzGerald was still un-married. From this we can place her marriage to Teige O'Brien as taking place after July 1682. Hence, all things being equal, any legitimate child of Teige O'Brien and Mary Honora FitzGerald would not have been born until 1683 at the earliest.



Excerpt from legal documents relating to John FitzGerald's will July 1682. [343]

Irish Williamite War 1689-1691

The years between 1689 and 1691 were highly turbulent in Ireland. This was the period of the 'Williamite War' between the English Protestant supporters (the Williamites) and the Irish Catholic supporters of the exiled King James II (the Jacobites). Our O'Brien and FitzGerald families were on the Jacobite side and had their lives turned upside down by the proceedings.

The seeds of this war were sown when King James II came to the English throne after the death of his elder brother Charles II in 1685. The coronation of James II as King of England, Scotland and Ireland was held on 23rd April 1685 and from what I've read it was one of the most lavish events ever held for an English Monarch.

In 1687 James issued a 'Declaration of Indulgence' which suspended penal laws against Catholics and granted acceptance of some Protestant dissenters. Later that year James formally dissolved his Parliament and attempted to create a new Parliament that would support him unconditionally.

James's daughter Mary, a Protestant, was the rightful heir to the throne until 1688 when James had a son, James Francis Edward Stuart, whom James II announced would be raised Catholic. The birth of James's son changed the line of succession, and many feared a Catholic dynasty in England was imminent. James's elevation of Catholicism, his close relationship with France, his conflict with Parliament and uncertainty over who would succeed him on the English throne led to a revolt.

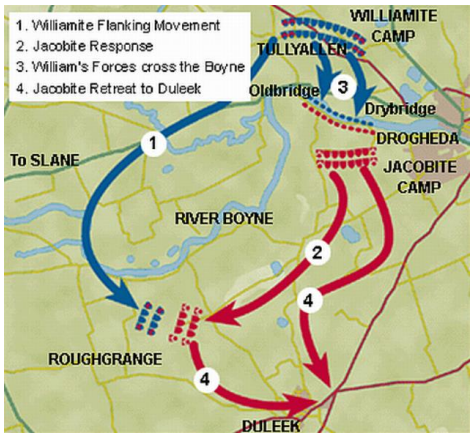
In 1688 James II was forced out by the Protestant English parliament in the 'Glorious Revolution' and deposed by his nephew and son-in-law 'William of Orange'. James feared for his safety and fled to France in exile. While in France James was presented a proposal for using Ireland as a springboard to regain his throne by Sir Stephen Rice (same person that married Mary FitzGerald's niece Mary Rice). James adopted this strategy and invaded Ireland in 1689 sparking the Irish Williamite War.

King James II arrived in Kinsale County Cork Ireland, with 6,000 French soldiers on the 12th March 1689. Many Irish Catholics joined his army as he promised religious freedom for Ireland if he regained the English monarchy. James's plan was to over-run William's army in a decisive victory and take back the English throne. His chance came in July 1690 at a ford on the Boyne River (near Dublin) when both William of Orange and King James II faced off against each other and led their armies into battle.

Our O'Brien family were very much involved in the proceedings. Daniel O'Brien the 3rd Viscount Clare (a.k.a Lord Clare) was a Jacobite officer and commanded an infantry division at the Battle of Boyne River. With the onset of hostilities in Ireland, he raised the Clare Dragoons (aka the O'Brien regiment), and formed two infantry regiments commanded by his sons.

Unfortunately for King James II his assortment of French and Irish troops were defeated by the English. While the battle itself resulted in a relatively small number of casualties, it was a turning point as King James realised that his French/Irish force was no match for William's forces.

James effectively gave up the fight and left Ireland returning to France. James's illegitimate son James FitzJames, 1st Duke of Berwick wrote in his memoirs that James fled to France to obtain fresh French support, but that never happened. James became known in Ireland as "Séamus an Chaca" or James the Shit.

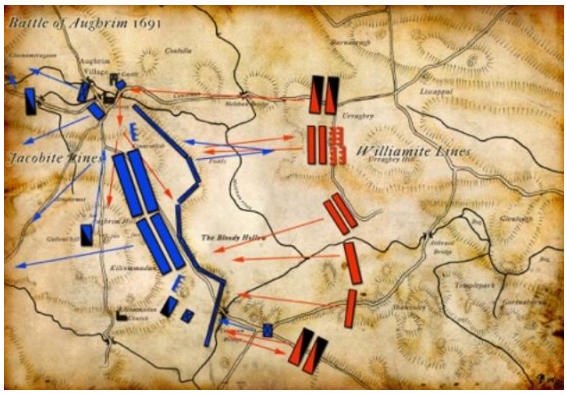




Battle of Boyne River, near Dublin 12th July 1690, Jacobites in red & Williamites in blue

For the next 18 months the fighting continued as the army of William of Orange pushed the Jacobites westwards across Ireland.

Twelve months to the day after the battle of Boyne River, the Williamite army engaged the Jacobites at the battle of Aughrim. This is regarded as the decisive battle of the Williamite war. It took place on the 12th July 1691 near the village of Aughrim, County Galway where 18,000 Jacobites faced off against 20,000 Williamites.





Battle of Aughrim 12th July 1691, Jacobites in blue and Williamites in red, and photo of the battlefield taken in 1942

For most of the fight the Jacobites held the upper hand until their leader, General Marquis de St Ruth was killed by a canon ball. At this point, the Jacobite position collapsed very quickly. Their horsemen, demoralised by the death of their commander, fled the battlefield and the Williamites soon overwhelmed the remaining Jacobites.

What was left of the Jacobite army retreated to the town of Limerick. On the 28th August 1691 the Jacobites were surprised by the approaching Williamite army and were unprepared for an attack. During the ensuring fight the Williamites massacred about 800 Jacobites who were on or near Thomond Bridge (named after our family the 'Earls of Thomond') which led to the gate of the walled city.

Those outside the wall were trapped when the French commander of the city lifted the drawbridge and refused to open the gate. The bodies of those killed were thrown into the Shannon River. This event is known as the "massacre of Limerick."

In the aftermath of the massacre it was obvious that the Jacobites could not hold out so they surrendered. A treaty of peace was signed on the 3rd October 1691, and the stone on which it was signed is still to be seen on a pedestal beside Thomond bridge at Limerick.

The treaty was confirmed by King William of Orange. This ended the War of the Revolution (Williamite War); and William and Mary were acknowledged sovereigns of Ireland. [344]

Treaty Stone located next to Thomond Bridge, Limerick (pictured in 2018)



The terms of the "Treaty of Limerick" were quite fair for Catholics but the way the treaty was subsequently implemented resulted in Catholics being subjected to continuous oppression and "Penal Laws" which discriminated against them right up to the early 19th century.

The treaty also resulted in some 20,000 Jacobites leaving Ireland forever. Many entered the French military service. This journey of the Jacobites has become known as the "Flight of the Wild Geese." [345]



The walled city of Limerick. The site of the siege and massacre of Limerick 28th August 1691. (Thomond bridge which crosses the Shannon River, can be seen on the left)



Map showing the battle sites of Boyne, Aughrim and the siege at Limerick

The Williamite war of 1689 – 1691 was the last straw for our O'Brien line in Ireland. For Teige Roe O'Brien and Mary Honora FitzGerald the massacre of Limerick in August 1691 heralded the end of nearly 800 years of Irish nobility for our line.

By 1693 our ancestor Teige Roe O'Brien (4th son of Sir Daniel O'Brien 1st Viscount Clare) had been attainted and his property at Ballykett (near Kilrush Co Clare) confiscated.

We also lose track of Teige at this time, if he was still alive, he would have been in his late 60s.

Mary Honora FitzGerald and son Donough O'Brien can be traced leaving Ireland for London by 1694. They appear in several documents including Burke's Peerage of 1866 shown below.

Teige O'Brien's nephew Daniel O'Brien the 3rd Viscount Clare died on the 19th November 1690; having been outlawed for high treason and his estate of 30,000 acres in County Clare was confiscated after the war. This Daniel's son, also Daniel O'Brien (the 4th Viscount Clare) had left Ireland for France on the 7th April 1690 having escorted King James II second wife, Marie Beatrice d'Este (Mary of Modena) to safety. [346] [347]

O'BRIEN—VISCOUNT O'BRIEN, OF CLARE.

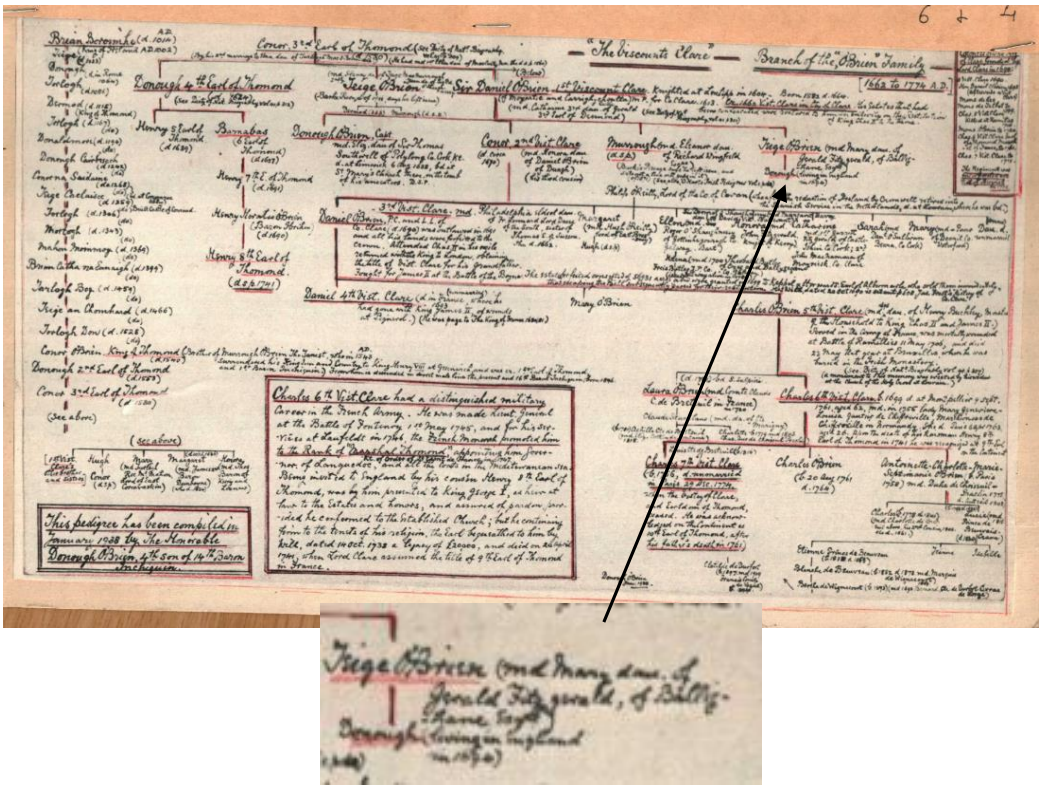
By Letters Patent, dated 11 July, 1662.

Lineage.

Sir Daniel O'Brien, Knt., of Carrigky Chouly, or Carrigcrole, 3rd son of Connor, 3rd Earl of Thomond, having performed signal service in the wars of Ireland, was created 11 July, 1662, Viscount O'Brien, *of Clare*. He *m*. Catherine, dau. of Gerald, 16th Earl of Desmond, and relict of Maurice, Viscount Roche of Fermoy, and had issue,

I. Donogh, *d. s. p.* 6 August, 1638, buried in St. Mary's Church in Limerick, *m*. Elizabeth, dau. of Sir Thomas Southwell, Knt., and relict of Sir J. Dowdall, Knt.
II. Connor, 2nd viscount.
III. Murrough, *m*. Eleanor, dau. of Richard Wingfield, Esq., and *d. s. p.*
IV. Teigueh, *m*. Honora, dau. of Gerald Fitzgerald, Esq., of Ballyglagiane, and had a son,
Donogh, living in England, in 1694.

From Burke's Peerages 1866 showing Donough (Dennis) O'Brien, son of Teige (Teigueh or Timothy in English) and Honora (Mary Honora) living in England in 1694. [348]



Another source: the above chart was drawn by the Hon Donough O'Brien of Dromoland in 1938.

The arrow points to Teige O'Brien, 4th son of the 1st Viscount Clare and says; "Teige O'Brien married Mary FitzGerald Daughter of Gerald FitzGerald of Ballyighane." Additionally, it refers to their son "Donough living in England in 1694." [349] As previously established, Donough O'Brien was not born until at least 1683, so in 1694 he was aged between 0 and 11 years. [350]

Chapter 7

The Briens in London 1694-1787

The Briens in London 1694 – 1787

Our Brien ancestors left a well-defined trail during their period in London. Teige O'Brien's wife Mary Honora FitzGerald and her son Donough can be traced to Lincoln in fields, a well-off part of London, with Mary's sister-in-law Ellen Browne, cousin Nicholas Plunkett and family friend Sir Richard Bellings all living nearby. [351]

During this period, the spelling used for our name was 'Bryan'. This is consistent with the Earls' of Thomond and Earls' of Inchiquin lines as well. In almost all the cases where I see them appear in English records, they use the same 'Bryan' spelling.

On a visit to Westminster Abbey in 2018 I checked the actual burial register located in the Henry VII chapel (Richmond Vault) for information on Henry, the son of the 7th Earl of Thomond who was interred there on the 9th September 1678, and sure enough his name was spelt Henry O'Bryan.

Same goes for the christening at St James, Piccadilly, London of George O'Bryan in 1725, son of William O'Bryan the 4th Earl of Inchiquin.

There is circumstantial evidence pointing to Mary FitzGerald being involved with other Jacobites during this time in London. A short distance from where Mary lived at Lincoln in fields was a hall known as St. Dunstan's Court; located in Fleet Street, it was the meeting place for a Jacobite congregation led by Matthew Bryan (no relation). [352]

Matthew Bryan was a minister who had refused to take the oaths on the accession of William III and Mary II hence this congregation was deemed to be an outlaw assembly. On 1st January 1693 a meeting of this group was raided and the names of those present, consisting of about a hundred persons, were taken. Matthew was arrested but details of any legal proceedings against him are unclear.

But records do show that when Matthew Bryan died in 1699, he was buried in a vault at St Dunstan in the West church. [353] The following year Mary Honora FitzGerald died (13th Dec 1700) and she was interred under the name of "Marey O'Bryon" in the same vault at St Dunstan in the West as was Matthew Bryan. [354]



"Mary OBryan out of Lincoln in fields in church vault" at St Dunstan in the West 13th Dec 1700
(if you look through the pages of this register you see the writer spells all Mary's as 'Marey')

At the time of his mother's death Donough O'Bryan was aged between 6 and 17. As he grew up he remained a Catholic and evidence proves he was also involved in the Jacobite cause. Donough appears in numerous written records which are covered later in this document.

View looking west down Fleet Street London with the clock of ‘St Dunstan in the West’ which dates from 1671, hanging over the street
355



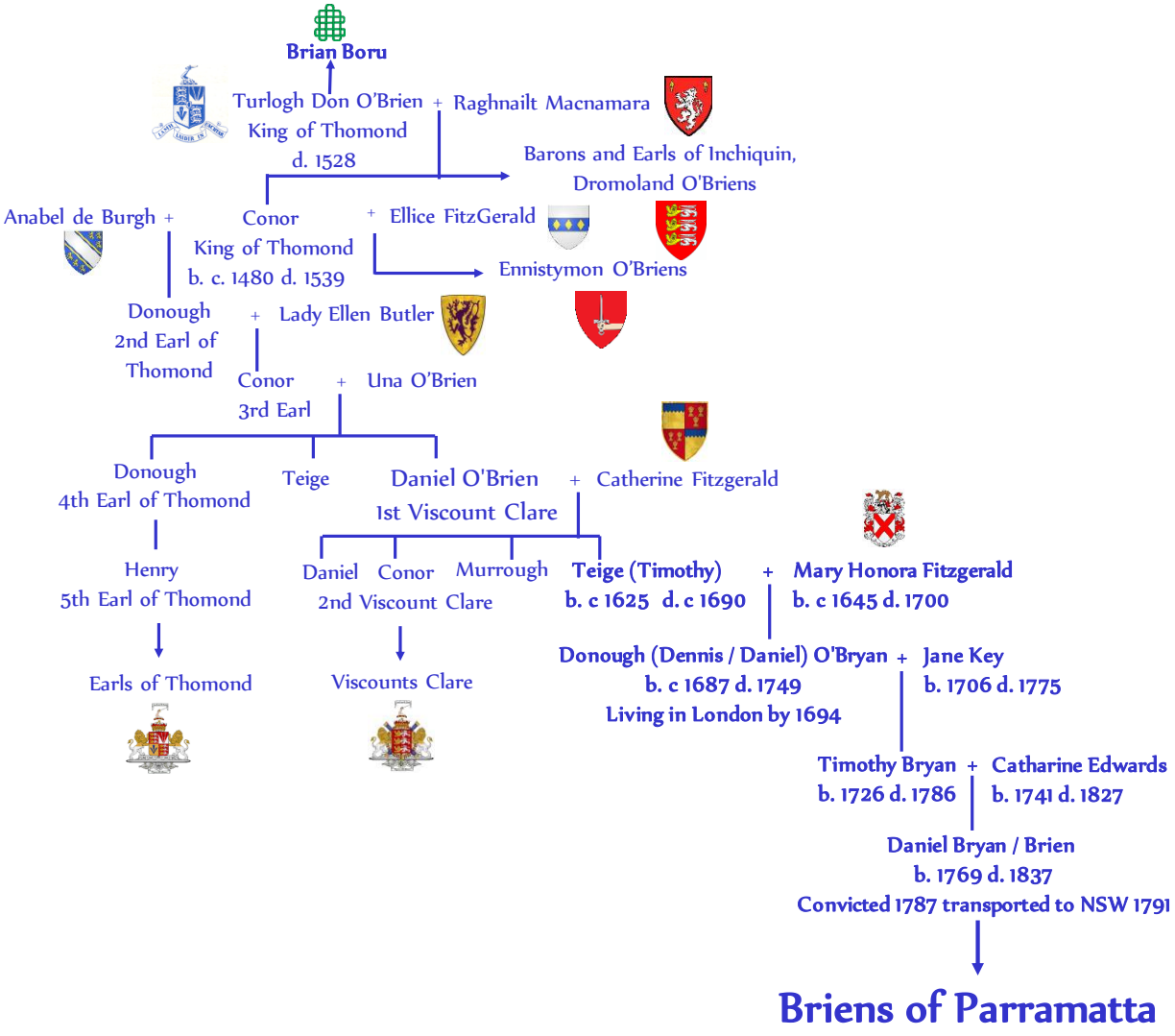


Chart showing our Brien ancestors in London 1694 – 1787 (in bold)

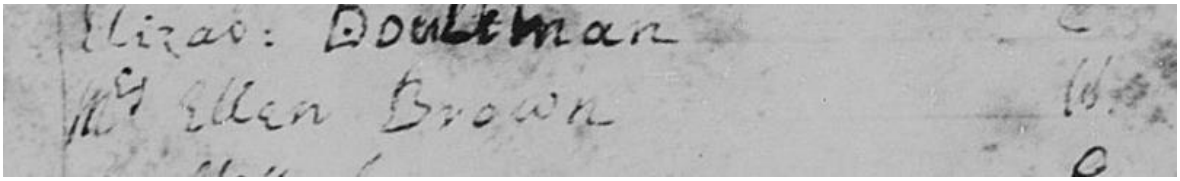
We can see other people associated with Mary Honora FitzGerald (O'Bryan) who were also in London around 1694. Firstly, we can place Sir Richard Bellings, who was co-executor of her brother Col John FitzGerald's will, renting accommodation at Somerset House. Somerset House is located next to the Thames River, only a short distance from St Dunstan in the West and Lincoln Inn fields.

Title	Sir
Forename	Richard
Surname	Bellings
Tax Levied on Rental Value in £s	0
Tax Levied on Personal Property in £s.	12
Tax District	Dutchy Liberty
Tax District Sub-division	Somerset House

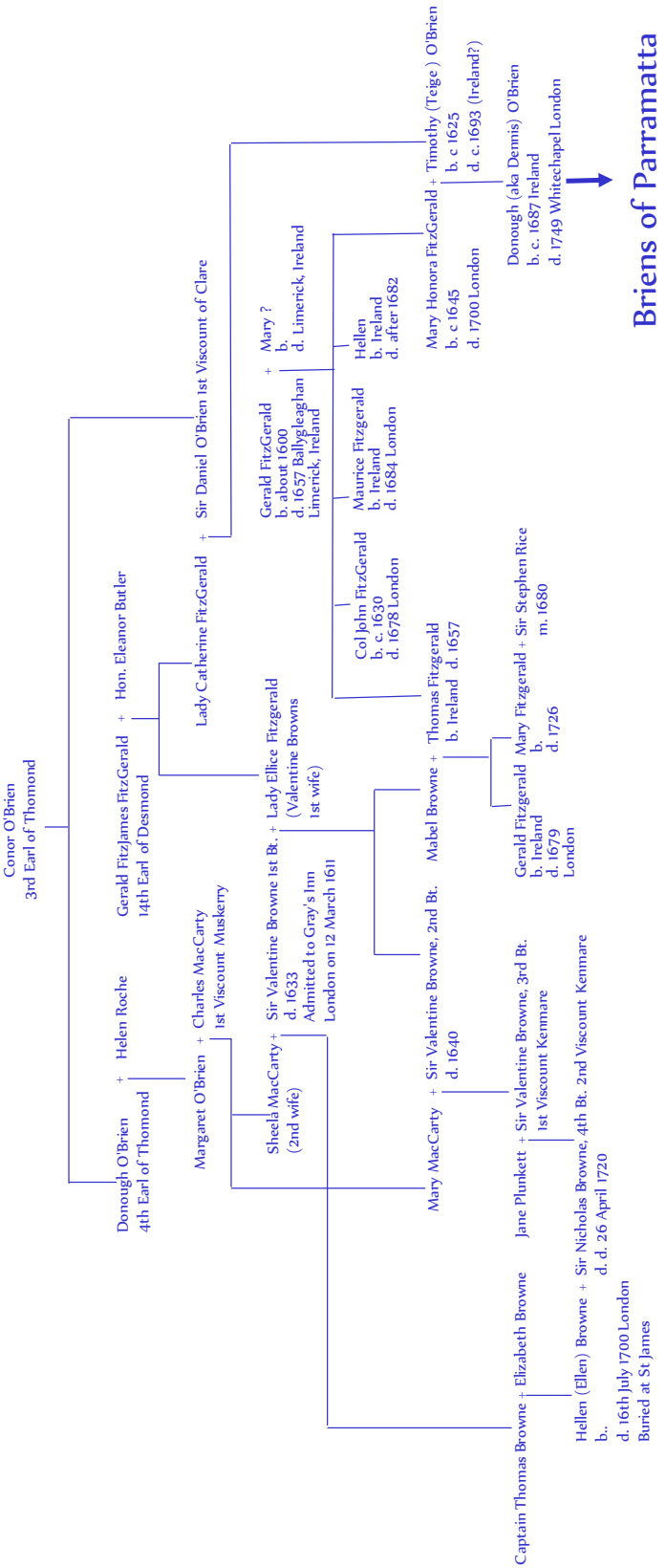
Extract from the "four shillings in the pound" tax records for the period 1693/1694.[356]

Secondly, we can place Mary Honora FitzGerald's distant sister-in-law, Ellen Browne and her husband Sir Nicholas Browne in London from at least 1698.[357]

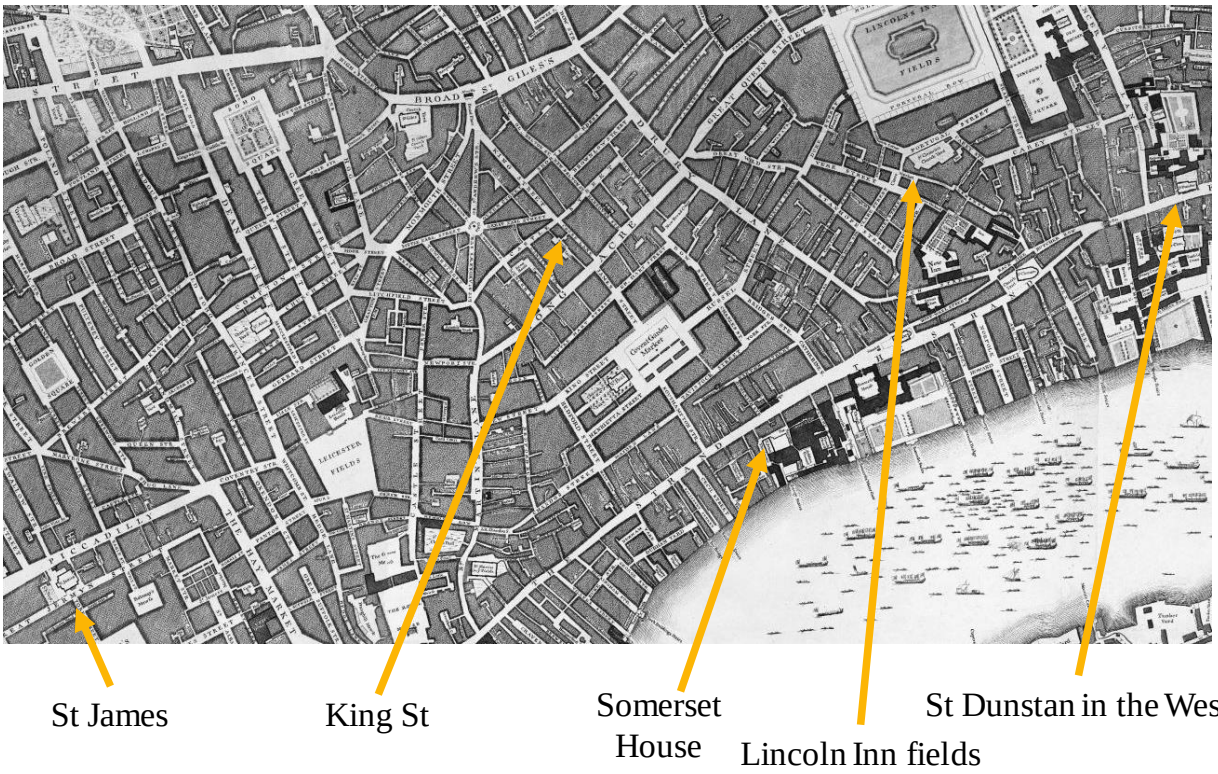
Ellen Brown died in July 1700 and was buried at St James churchyard, not very far from St Dunstan in the West. Her husband Sir Nicholas Browne remained in London for some years but by 1714 he had moved with his daughter Margaret to Belgium.[358]



Mrs. Ellen (Hellen) Browne, wife of Sir Nicholas Browne, buried St James 16th July 1700



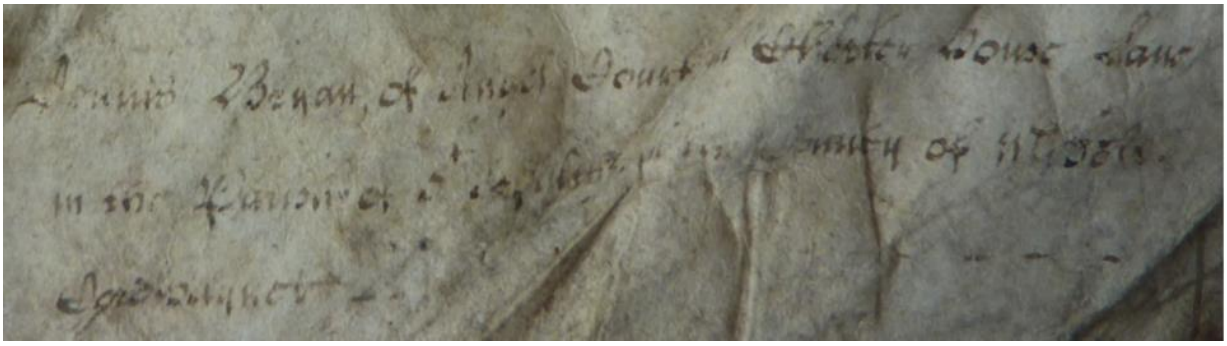
Connections between the FitzGeralds of Ballygleaghan, O'Briens (O'Bryans) and Brownes [359]



Map of London in 1746, showing the proximity of sites associated with Mary Honora FitzGerald and people she was connected too.[360] The O'Briens, FitzGeralds and Browns were closely related to Nicholas Plunkett who resided in Kings St Bloomsbury at the same time. It is likely that future research will uncover other members of this extended family who were in London around 1700.

When Mary O'Bryan died in 1700 her son Donough was aged between 6 and 17. Where Donough was living and who he may have been living with after his mother's death is unknown.

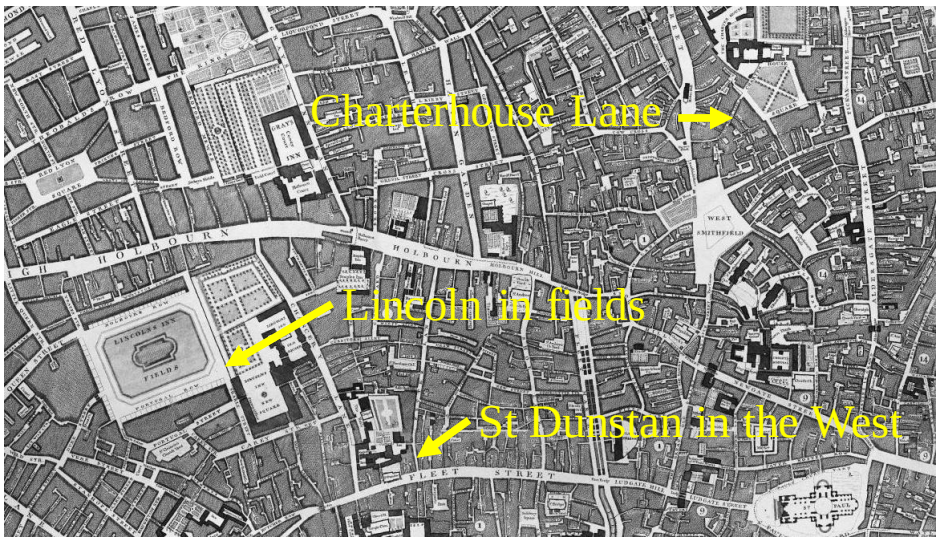
The next we see of Donough O'Bryan is in 1711. That year a survey of Catholics living in London was undertaken and even though the surviving document is difficult to read, he can be identified as living in Angel Court, off Charterhouse Lane, Smithfield, in London. Donough now aged 17-28 was using the name Dennis, the anglicised version of his Irish Gaelic name Donough.



Excerpt from the 1711 Catholic Survey (difficult to read in parts) "Dennis OBryan of Angel Court, Charterhouse Lane in the Parish of Smithfield in the County of Middlesex." [361]

Donough O'Brien's activism in support of the Jacobite cause

Locations in London associated with Mary Honora FitzGerald and Donough O'Bryan c. 1700 - 1711



The next we see of Donough (Dennis O'Bryan) is in 1718. Now aged between 24 and 35, he was indicted for "Speaking Treasonable and Seditions words against His Majesty." The King at this time was George I and knowing that Dennis was motivated to speak out against him may give us some insight into Dennis O'Bryan's thinking.

To get the picture, some background on English politics of the time is probably required. After the Williamite war ended in the defeat of the Jacobite army of James II at Limerick in 1691, King William of Orange (known as William III) held the throne of England and Ireland jointly with his wife Mary (the daughter of James II) until Mary's death in 1694; and then on his own until his death in 1702. [362]

James II died in 1701 whilst in exile in France. James II's 1st wife was Anne Hyde and their eldest surviving child Anne, became William's successor to the throne. Anne became Queen Anne of Great Britain and Ireland in 1702 and reigned until her death in 1714. Anne left no heir as her sole surviving child; the Duke of Gloucester had died at the age of eleven on the 30th July 1700.

To address the succession crisis and preclude a Catholic restoration, the Parliament of England enacted the Act of Settlement 1701, which provided that, the Crown of England and Ireland would go to Sophia, Electress of Hanover, and her Protestant descendants. Sophia was the granddaughter of James I through his daughter Elizabeth, who was the sister of Anne's grandfather Charles I. Over fifty Catholics with stronger claims were excluded from the line of succession. [363]

This resulted in the throne of England and Ireland going to Queen Anne's 2nd cousin George of Hanover, Germany, who was Anne's closest living Protestant relative; he became George I King of Great Britain and Ireland in 1714. By contrast the most popular choice amongst Jacobites for Queen Anne's successor was her half brother James Stuart, the son of James II and his 2nd wife Mary Of Modena.

James Stuart, known by his supporters as “James III” and to his detractors as “The Pretender” was at the time residing in France and had amassed significant support, particularly amongst the Irish who had been deracinated in the wake of the Williamite war.

An act was passed in 1698 which provided penalties for those who had served in James II’s army or who were in contact with his court. This was followed by a further proclamation issued in 1714, which not only forbid any Irish man from enlisting in the French army, but offered rewards for the discovery of any Catholic who had presumed to enlist, in order that "he might be turned out, and punished with the utmost severity of the law." [364] [365]

However, these actions were not enough to head off a Jacobite rebellion and in 1715 battles took place at Sheriffmuir in Scotland and Preston in England. This rebellion was put down reasonably quickly and in the aftermath many Jacobite prisoners were pursued in the courts by the King’s solicitor Anthony Cracherode, and some tried for high treason and sentenced to death.

In reality there was little appetite for severe punishments. Many of the Jacobite leaders in Scotland went into exile to escape charges of high treason. Punishment was confined only to leaders of the rebellion, a few of whom were executed or deprived of their estates. [366]

Neathertheless the English Parliament took the rebellion of 1715 very seriously and used the already established ‘Secret Department of the Post Office’ in particular its ‘Deciphering Branch’ where mail was intercepted and intelligence gained, to identify any future Jacobite related threats.



Deciphering Branch in the 1700s [367]

"The main role of the Secret Office was to intercept mail between Britain and overseas, and to read it. Foreign post and official dispatches passed between Britain and the rest of the world via the Packet Service: a fleet of fast ships sailing regular routes. Foreign mail bags were sent to the office, where on their arrival teams of translators and decipherers read through the contents to copy out any relevant information in English." [368]

The events of the time would have had considerable impact on our ancestor Dennis O'Bryan. While it is impossible to know exactly what he was thinking, we do know that he was raised in a very pro Jacobite household. In fact, it would be difficult to find a more supportive family per se.

His mother Mary Honora FitzGerald was a staunch Catholic and was herself descended from the Knights of Glin who resided at Glin Castle in County Limerick. Mary was related through marriage to Stephen Rice, one of King James II's advisors and her brother Thomas was married to Mabel Browne who herself was descended from the Earl's of Desmond. All extremely strong supporters of James II.

Dennis's father, Timothy (i.e. Teige) O'Brien, was the youngest son of Sir Daniel O'Brien 1st Viscount Clare and he experienced first hand the fluctuations in the family fortunes; where all title and property was lost in the 1650s during Cromwell's invasion of Ireland, only to have it all and more restored following the return of King Charles II to the throne in 1660.

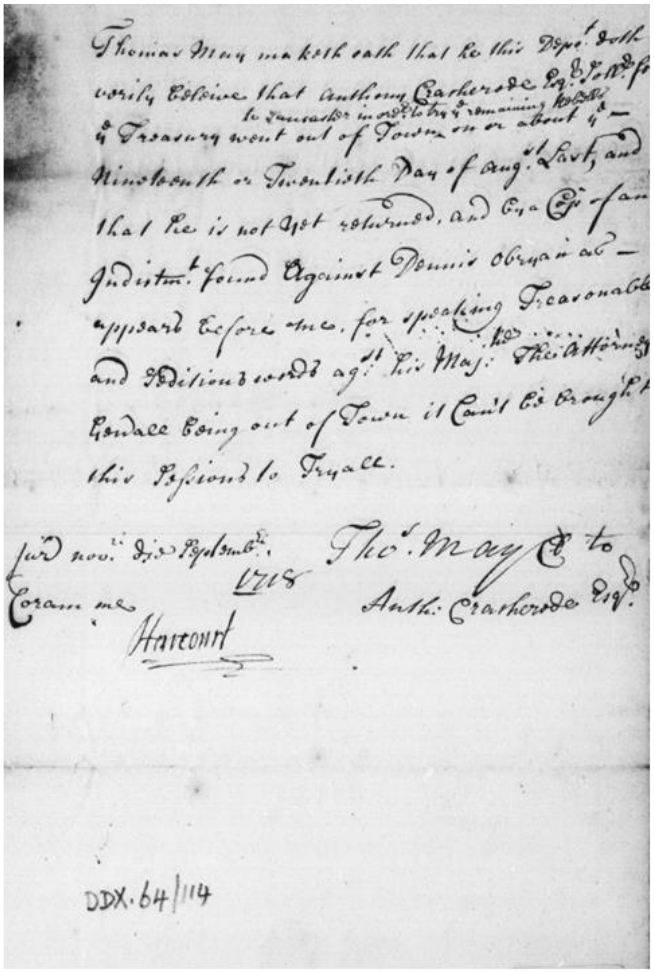
These stories of grandeur, loss and restoration would have been the diet fed to young Dennis O'Brien growing up in London during the 1690s. In 1718 when Dennis was indicted for "Speaking Treasonable and Seditions words" about King George I, his 1st cousin twice removed was Charles O'Brien, who held the title of 6th Viscount Clare in France. At the time Charles was a Captain in the O'Brien 'Clare Regiment' of the French army and closely connected to James Stuart (the son of James II and and his 2nd wife Mary of Modena).

It is difficult to say for sure but it certainly looks like at some stage between 1715 and 1726 Dennis was in contact with Charles. [369] We see evidence of this in later documents, and again it is only speculation, but it seems logical to assume that Dennis saw that somehow Charles's military and political actions would indeed eventually lead to the restoration of the Stuart line, and a future King James III of England and Ireland could (and would) restore the families fortunes in Ireland, just as had happened with the restoration of King Charles II 60 years earlier.

The death of Queen Anne in 1714 followed by the coronation of the Protestant King George I, followed then by the failed Jacobite rebellion of 1715, I'm sure would have been seen by Dennis O'Bryan as major spanners in the works, raising the ire of someone with strong Jacobite sympathy.

Although we don't know the exact words he said that were deemed so "treasonable and seditions" - the context must have been clear to Anthony Cracherode who was due to Prosecute Dennis O'Bryan at the Old Bailey on the 10th September 1718.

But in what appears to have been a stroke of luck, the trial could not proceed as Anthony Cracherode was away from London at the time. We know this as the Court Clerk submitted an Affidavit to that effect on the day the trial was due to proceed. [370]



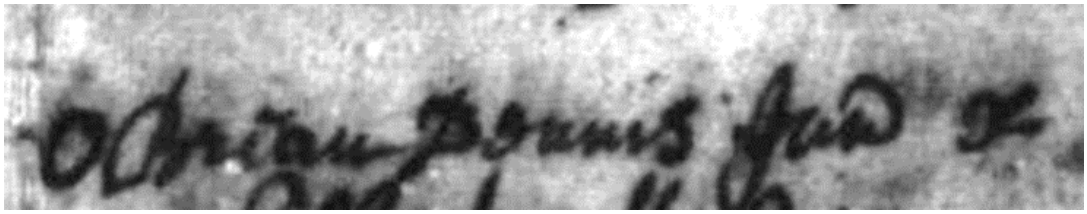
Translation

Thomas May maketh oath that he this Depot. Doth verily beleive that Anthony Cracherode Esqr . Sollr, for ye Treasury went out of Town to Lancaster in ordr. to try ye remaining rebells on or about Ye Nineteenth or Twentieth Day of Augst. Last , and that he is not Yet returned, And by a Cop of an
Indictmt. found Against **Dennis obryan** as appears before me, for speaking Treasonable and Seditions words agst: his Majtie: The Attorney Genall being out of Town it Can't be brought this Sessions to Tryall.

Jur novr. die Septembr.
1718
Coram me
Harcourt

Affidavit written by 'Harcourt' the Clerk of the Old Bailey court advising the case against Dennis O'Bryan cannot proceed on the 10th September 1718.

There is another record which shows Dennis O'Bryan (spelt O Brian) is still in custody at Newgate Prison and due back in court of the 10th January 1719. [371]

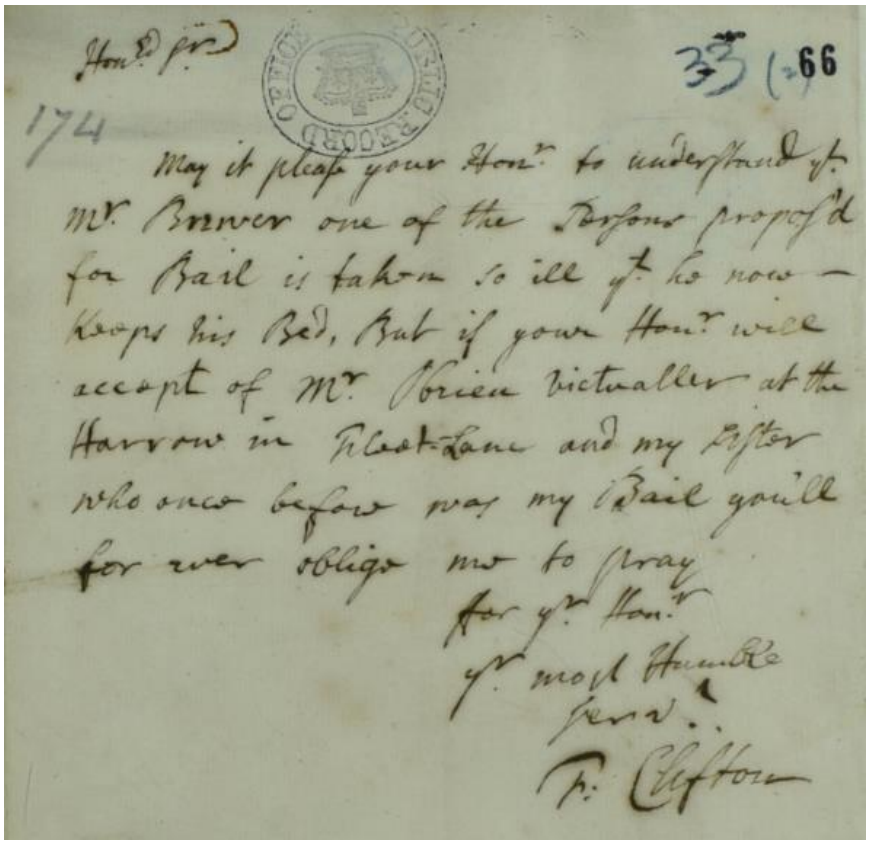


"Dennis OBrian Jan X" (10th) 1719 Middlesex Sessions Papers - Justices' Working Documents

I haven't been able to establish exactly how long Dennis O'Bryan was held in Newgate prison and no record of him ever going to trial has been found. Dennis was obviously released, but a letter written in Sep 1720 by a London Printer named Francis Clifton to the Secretary to the Lords Justices, Charles Delafaye might give us a clue.

The letter mentions a Mr. O'Brien a food merchant (Victualler) of 'The Harrow' in Fleet Lane London who is wanting to post bail; the letter requests that Clifton also be allowed to do the same.

This letter may be referring to our Dennis O'Bryan and might explain how he came to be released from Newgate Prison using Bail to purchase his release.



Hon.d Sir

174

May it please your Honr to understand yt Mr Brewer one of the Persons proposd for Bail is taken so ill yt he now keeps his Bed, But if your Honr will accept of Mr Obrien Victualler at the Harrow in Fleet-Lane and my Sister who once before was my Bail youll for ever oblige me to pray

for yr Honr

yr most Humble

Servt

F: Clifton

Letter from Francis Clifton to the Under Secretary of State Charles Delafaye mentioning bail for O'Brien 13th Sep 1720. [372]

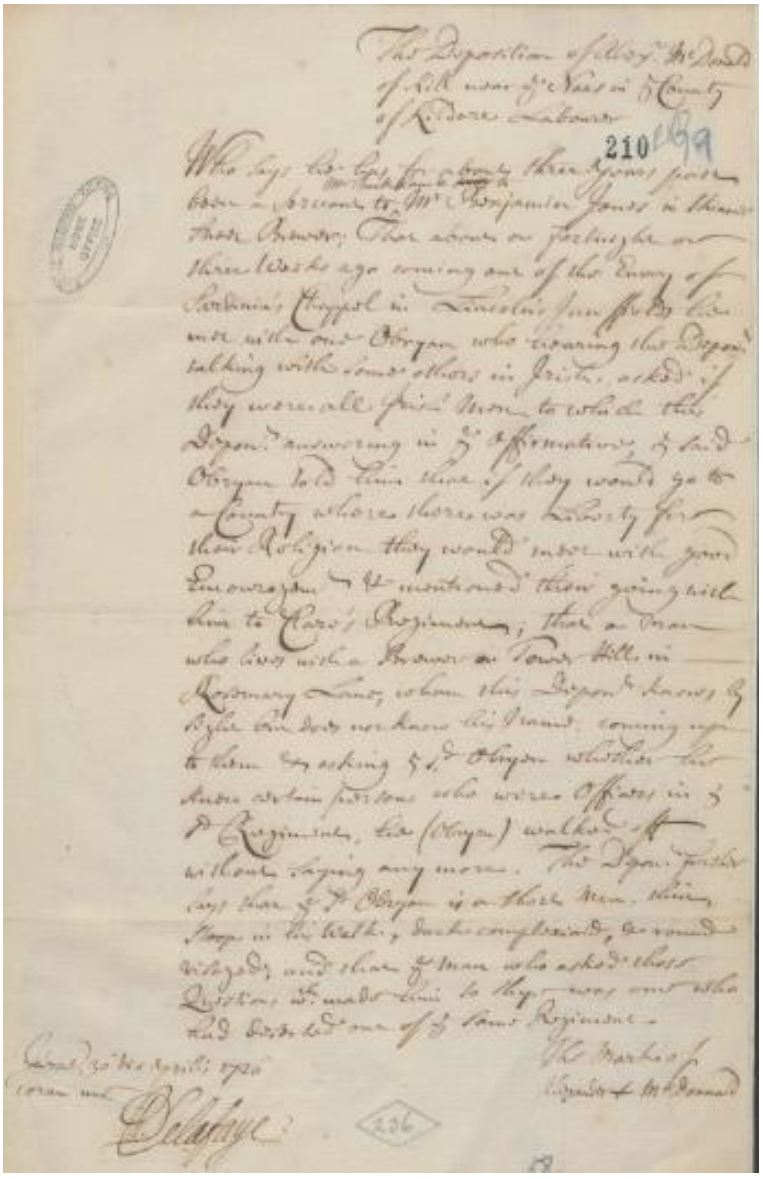
Dennis O'Bryan's brush with the law didn't dampen his commitment to the Jacobite cause. Documents obtained from the Kew Archives in London paint a picture of a man who even after his time in Newgate prison was operating in a similar vein to his father Timothy and grand father Sir Daniel O'Brien the 1st Viscount Clare; in his pro Jacobite activism against the English King George I.

In the mid 1720s Dennis O'Bryan was at the very least involved with a network of people located in England and France providing recruits for the O'Brien Clare Regiment in the French army.

During the early 1700s Charles Delafaye, Secretary to the Lords Justices, was responsible for the secret Deciphering Branch. [373] Many of the documents relating to the intelligence service are still available at the Archives and through these we can see that information relating to our ancestor Dennis O'Bryan passed the desk of Charles Delafaye.

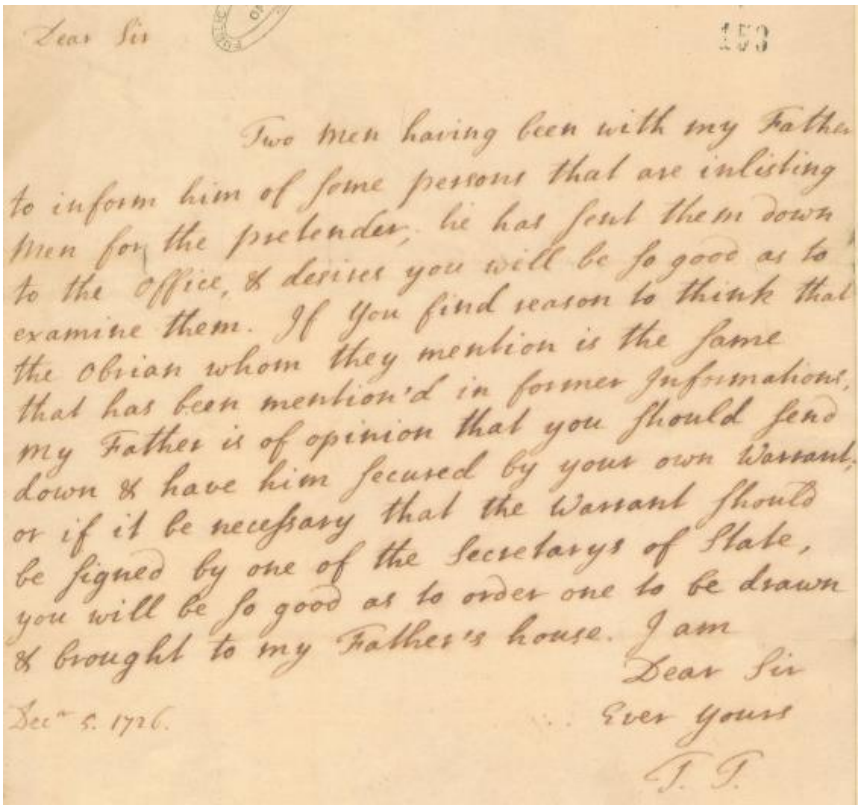
For example, in a deposition dated 30th April 1726 from an Irish man named Aloysius McDonald, we see Dennis O'Bryan named as having approached McDonald with the aim of recruiting him to join the Clare French Regiment in Spain. [374] An addendum to this document states that Dennis O'Bryan was also known as Daniel O'Bryan. This particular deposition includes a description of O'Bryan saying that he was: "short, thin, walked with a stoop, had a round face and a dark complexion." The link with Spain also fits as Charles O'Brien the 6th Viscount Clare formed a Spanish regiment of the French army in 1719 known as the Clare Regiment. [375]

In yet another deposition dated September 1726, it is stated that O'Bryan also sometimes goes under the name of 'Browne'. [376] It is interesting to note that when he was young, Dennis O'Bryan traveled from Ireland to England with his mother and her sister-in-law, Ellen Browne.



Deposition by Aloysius McDonald dated April 1726 providing a description of O'Bryan. [377]

Things appear to have come to a head in December 1726 when Under Secretary of State, Thomas Townsend, wrote a letter to Charles Delafaye, requesting an arrest warrant be drawn up for Dennis O'Bryan. This letter states that multiple reports have been received of "O'Brian" recruiting Irish men in London to join the O'Brien Clare Regiment in France.



Dear Sir

Two men having been with my Father to inform him of some persons that are inlisting men for the pretender, he has sent them down to the Office, & desires you will be so good as to examine them. If you find reason to think that the Obrian whom they mention is the same that has been mention'd in former informations, my Father is of opinion that you should send down & have him secured by your own Warrant, or if it be necessary that the Warrant should be signed by one of the Secretarys of State, you will be so good as to order one to be drawn & brought to my Father's house. I am

Dear Sir

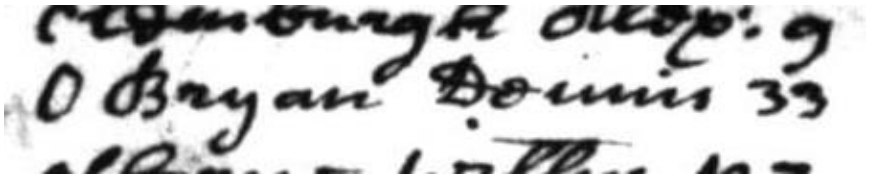
Ever Yours

T. T.

Dec^r 5. 1726.

Thomas Townsend to Charles Delafaye December 1726 re a warrant for O'Bryan (Obrian)

The next mention of Dennis O'Bryan's name I can find appears in the Middlesex Justices' Working Documents dated 20th January 1727. These documents are organised files of documents relating to the work of Justices of the Peace and kept by the clerk of the peace. They include several different types of documents, relating to the prosecution of criminals as well as other matters. [378]



O Bryan Dennis 33

Dennis O'Bryan mentioned in Middlesex Justices' Working Documents 20th January 1727
London Lives https://www.dhi.ac.uk/san/pl/SM/PS/LMSMPS50240/LMSMPS502400134.jpg

It is unclear if this mention relates to the warrant (for High Treason) discussed between Thomas Townsend and Charles Delafaye in December 1726, but whatever happened seems to have had a profound affect on Dennis O'Bryan.

It appears that Dennis O'Bryan, now facing the possibility of a charge (and possible conviction) for High Treason made the decision to lay low. This would explain why he now moved from central London to the semi-rural corner of East London called Spitalfields. This event coincided with Dennis permanently changing his name to "Daniel" and dropping the "O" from O'Bryan.

From mid 1727 onwards we see him appear as either Daniel Bryan or Daniel Brien and there is a sudden absence of him being mentioned in letters involving Jacobite matters. Again, it is impossible to tell what Dennis was thinking, but by this time he was aged in his late 30s to early 40s, and was once again facing a severe legal problem.

Perhaps Dennis realised that any return of the Clare O'Briens to Thomond was now beyond reach; if so, this would have been very disheartening. This time also coincides with the birth of Daniel's first two children Mary (1725) and Timothy (1726), and the responsibility of having a young family may also have been a contributing factor for him to take measures to evade the law.

I can find no record of Daniel Bryan's marriage, it was probably a Catholic ceremony and any records haven't survived, but he married a woman named Jane sometime around 1725. There is strong evidence to suggest that she was Jane Key, daughter of James Key (a silk weaver) and his wife Susannah.

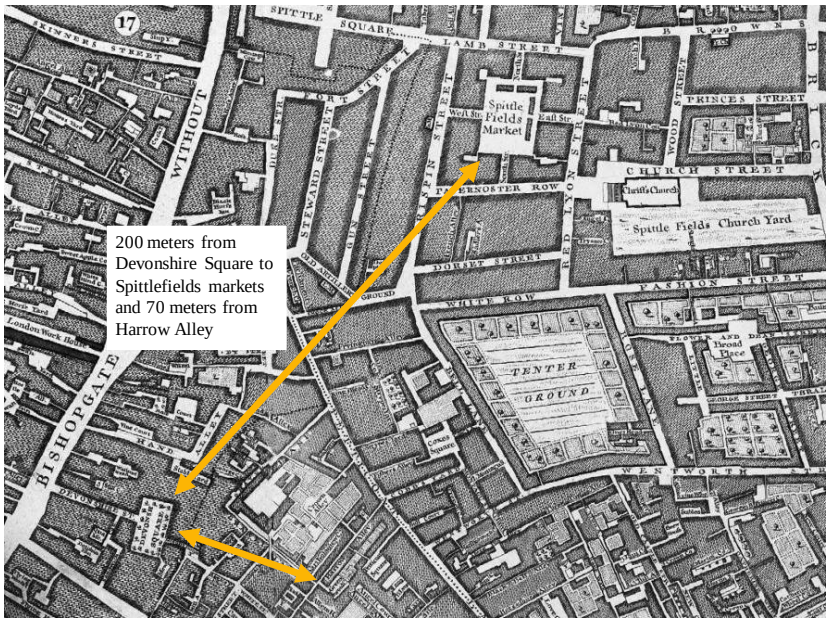
Jane Key was born in 1706 in Harrow Alley Spitalfields. The Key family moved there from Wheeler Street sometime between 1702 and 1706. Wheeler St is adjacent to Phoenix St Spitalfields where we can place our Bryans living in the 1730s.

We may have a clue as to why Daniel Bryan chose to move into the Spitalfields area. In the same vicinity there lived John Arthur, a close family friend of Daniel's mother Mary Honora FitzGerald. John's father was Sir Daniel Arthur who hailed from Limerick in Ireland and had established a banking business and was known to have helped many Irish Jacobite families with their finances when moving from Ireland. Documents show that the Arthurs had been close family friends of the FitzGeralds of Ballygleaghan in Limerick for decades. [379]

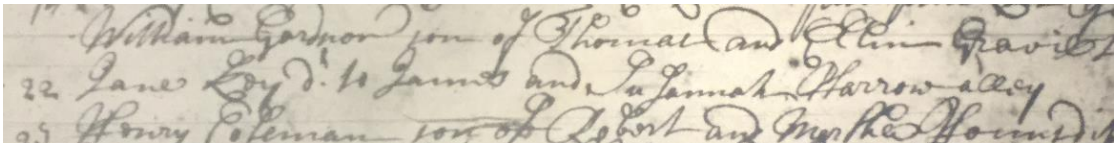
John Arthur lived in Devonshire Square at Bishopsgate about 200 meters from Spitalfields Markets.[380] We can see his location recorded in the Four shillings in the pound tax records for 1694.

Unique Project ID.	4646
Household ID	2
Title	Mr
Forename	John
Surname	Arthur
Tax Levied on Rental Value in £s	12
Tax Levied on Personal Property in £s.	6
Tax District	Bishopsgate Without
Tax District Sub-division	Second Division
Named Location.	Devonshire Square

1694 "Four shillings in the pound" tax record for John Arthur



Map from 1743 showing proximity of Devonshire Square to Spitalfields Markets (old spelling Spittlefields) and Harrow Alley (where James and Susannah Key & their daughter Jane lived.)

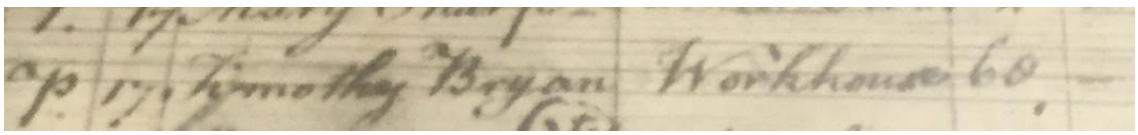


Jane Key's baptism 22/06/1706 "daughter of James and Susannah of Harrow Alley"

Daniel and Jane's first child was Mary. Born in 1725, we know little about Mary other than she died unmarried at Spitalfields in 1770 aged 45 under the name of Mary O'Brian.

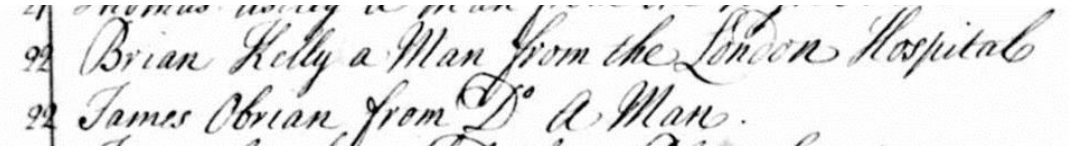
Daniel and Jane's second child was Timothy born in 1726. Timothy is our ancestor and he married Catharine Edwards around 1760. There is no evidence that Timothy was ever involved in any pro Jacobite activities. It appears that the previous zeal of his father did not carry down to his children. Timothy obviously heard stories of the O'Brien past glories, some echo of that must have been passed down the generations as my grand father George Daniel Brien in the 1930s told stories of how we came from a noble family that possessed (a now lost) coat of arms.

Timothy was 23 when his father Daniel died (in 1749). We can assume he took on the role as main bread winner for the family. Timothy died in poor circumstance at the Spitalfields workhouse in 1786 under the name of Timothy Bryan.



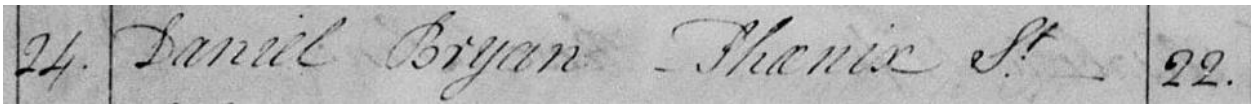
Timothy Bryan buried 17/11/1786 Workhouse Spitalfields age 60

Daniel and Jane's third child was James. It is likely James was named after Jane's father James Key. It is unclear exactly when James was born but it was certainly no later than 1735, but a gap in the births suggest that that the year could have been around 1728. James died at the London Hospital in Prescot Street Whitechapel on the 22nd June 1750 under the name of James O'Brian.



James Bryan buried 22nd June 1750 a man from London Hospital

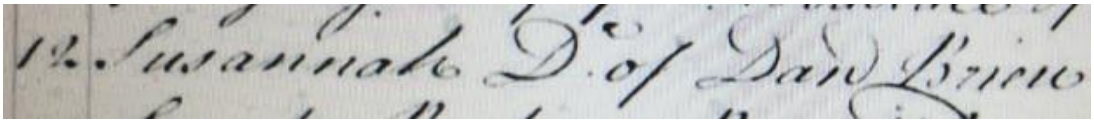
Daniel and Jane's fourth child was Daniel. He was born in 1730 and little else is known of him apart from he lived in Phoenix Street Spitalfields and he died in 1753 aged 22.



Daniel Bryan buried 24th Jan 1753 from Phenix St Spitalfields, aged 22

The fifth child we can find of Daniel and Jane was named Susannah. It is likely Susannah was named after Jane's mother, Susannah Key. She died young in what was then known as Bethnal Green and buried on the 12th Feb 1734 at St Dunstan Stepney. It is from Susannah's burial record that we get some confirmation of Daniel's age and circumstance as he is described as a Pensioner.[381]

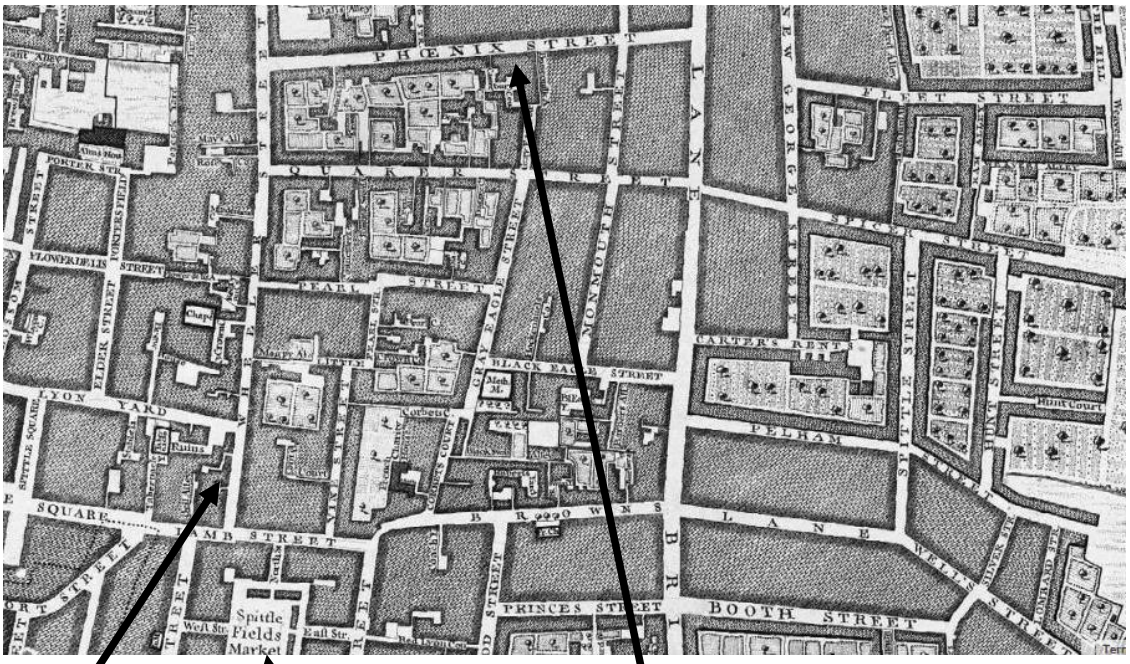
At this time Parishes performed the role of welfare-state and taxed parishioners for funds with a tithe (or similar) to support those in need. [382] Temporary funds could be dispensed to the head of a household usually aged 40 and over if they were sick or could not work. [383] If Daniel was born in 1694 he would have been aged 40 at the time of Susannah's death in 1734. [384]



Susannah daughter of Dan Brien buried 12th Feb 1734

From old London parish maps we can see that up to 1742 Phoenix street fell just outside Spitalfields but was inside the border of Bethnal Green, and this section of Bethnal Green fell inside the parish of St Dunstan Stepney. From 1743 onwards, Phoenix street was part of Spitalfields parish. [385]

It was customary for couples of the time to name their children after their father's parents or grand parents before using their own. In the case of Daniel & Jane's children, their eldest son and daughter, Timothy and Mary, match the names of Daniel's parents i.e. Timothy O'Brien and Mary FitzGerald.



Wheeler St Spitalfields Market Bryans in Phoenix St

The Bryans (Briens) were living in Phoenix St Spitalfields, they remained until at least 1783

The area that is now Spitalfields sits just outside the north-eastern London Wall city limits. The area was mainly fields and nursery gardens until late in the 1600s when streets were laid out. Many of the early occupants were French refugees known as Huguenots. A large number were silk weavers who hoped to avoid the restrictive legislation of the City Guilds by settling outside the bounds of the City of London.

During the 18th century there were periodic crises in the London silk industry. Bought on by imports of French silk (in a lull between the wars between France and England) and imports of printed calicos. The depression in the trade, and hence the prices paid to weavers, led to protests.



Spitalfields Market from a drawing dated around 1700

A down-turn in the market for silk took place in 1769 and sparked riots in Spitalfields when attempts were made to break up meetings of weavers called to discuss the threat to wages. This ended with an Irish and a Huguenot weaver being hanged in front of the 'Salmon and Ball' public house at Bethnal Green.[386]





Spitalfields laneway drawn around 1730 and an example of Spitalfields silk weaving

Daniel and Jane Bryan may have had other children, but finding them may be problematic, particularly as girls that marry and change their name can be difficult to trace. More so, as our Bryans, being Catholic they appear to have avoided the Anglican church to the point of obsession. The only Anglican records I can find of them are burial records. And we can see them in these records only because during the early/mid 1700s there was no option other than an Anglican burial. Another complication is that during this time the recording of stillbirths was optional, so we may well struggle to find any records for them.

For Catholics such as our Bryans, keeping a low profile was probably a wise move. To illustrate how dangerous it was for Catholics at that time in England, banker Sir Daniel Arthur was forced to flee London for Paris in 1679 after he was mentioned in a letter in relation to what was known as "the Popish Plot."

This plot was supposed to involve several Jesuit priests as well as high ranking Irish officials in a bid to remove King Charles II from the throne and replace him with his Catholic brother James. By 1681 it was proven that no such plot ever existed and this event has been largely forgotten, but between 1678 and 1681 many Catholic priests and several Catholic government officials were executed purely on suspicion they were involved.

An innocent Irish casualty was Catholic Archbishop of Armagh, Oliver Plunkett. Plunkett was arrested in Dublin on 6th December 1679 and imprisoned in Dublin Castle. He was tried at Dundalk but the trial soon collapsed, Plunkett was moved to Newgate Prison in London and faced trial at Westminster Hall. It took two trials before he was found guilty of high treason in June 1681.

Oliver Plunkett was hanged, drawn and quartered at Tyburn on 1 July 1681 and his body scattered. His preserved head eventually ending up in Ireland at Drogheda where since the 29th June 1921 it has rested in Saint Peter's Church. Oliver Plunkett was canonized as a saint in 1975. [387]

From around 1760 onwards some London Catholic records survive in the form of Priest journals. Many of these were collected and grouped together in the early 1800s under the title of 'Moorfields Catholic transcripts' as they were stored at the Moorfields Catholic church built in 1820. [388]

Daniel Bryan was buried at Whitechapel church yard on 11th April 1749 under the name Daniel O'Brian. He died at what was known at the time as the 'London Infirmary'. This was one of London's earliest hospitals and a year after Daniel's death it was re-named the 'London Hospital'.



London Hospital in Prescot St Whitechapel where Daniel O'Brian died in 1749.
At the time it was known as The London Infirmary.

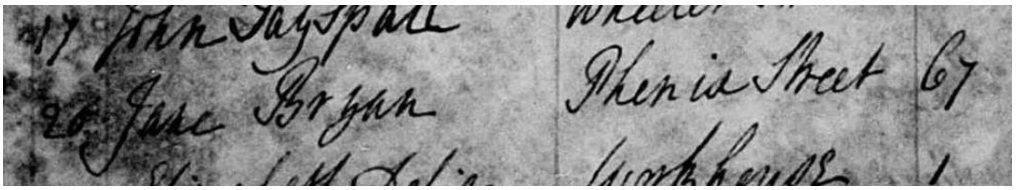
At the time of Daniel's death, the hospital was located in a series of terrace houses in Prescot St Whitechapel, about 1.5 Km from Phoenix St. Whether hospital staff assumed Daniel's name was spelt O'Brian and recorded it that way or someone informed them we can only speculate.



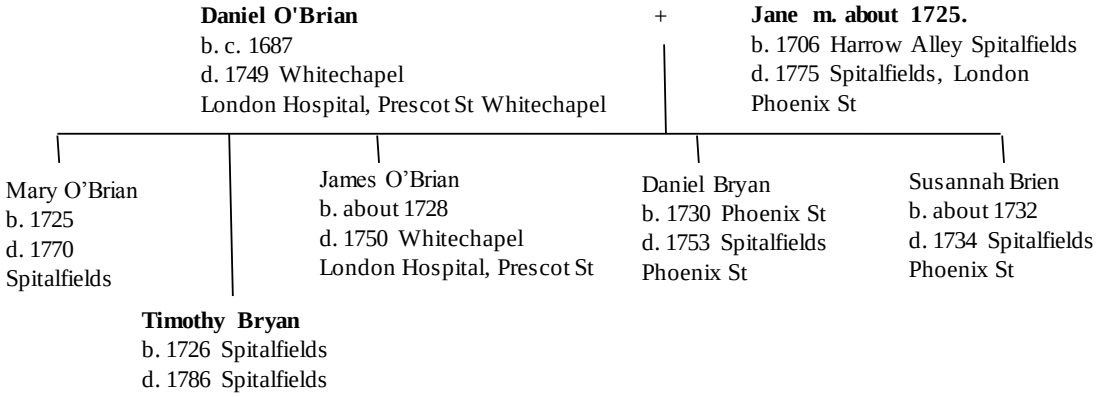
Daniel O'Brian "a man from the Infirmary" buried at Whitechapel 11th April 1749

There is an Old Bailey transcript from October 1753 which mentions a "Doctor Simpson" sending his patients living in Phoenix street Spitalfields to the London Infirmary in Prescot St Whitechapel. So, it is possible our Daniel O'Brian was admitted in this way. [389]

Twenty-six years after Daniel O'Brian passed away in 1749, his wife Jane Bryan died at Phoenix St. Her burial record of 1775 says she was aged 67. This aligns well with what we know from Jane Key's baptism record dated 22nd June 1706.



Jane Bryan of Phoenix Street, buried at Spitalfields 20th March 1775

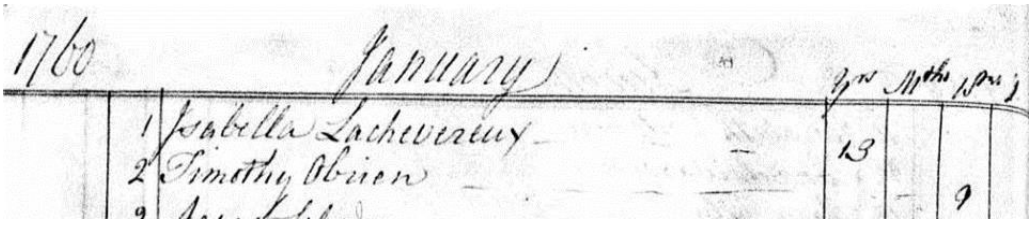


Family of Daniel and Jane O'Brien (Bryan) – as far as can be determined

Around 1760 Daniel & Jane's eldest son Timothy Bryan (our ancestor) married a woman named Catharine. There is a Spitalfields christening record dated 6th February 1742 for a Catharine Edwards that matches our Catharine and lists James and Elizabeth as her parents.

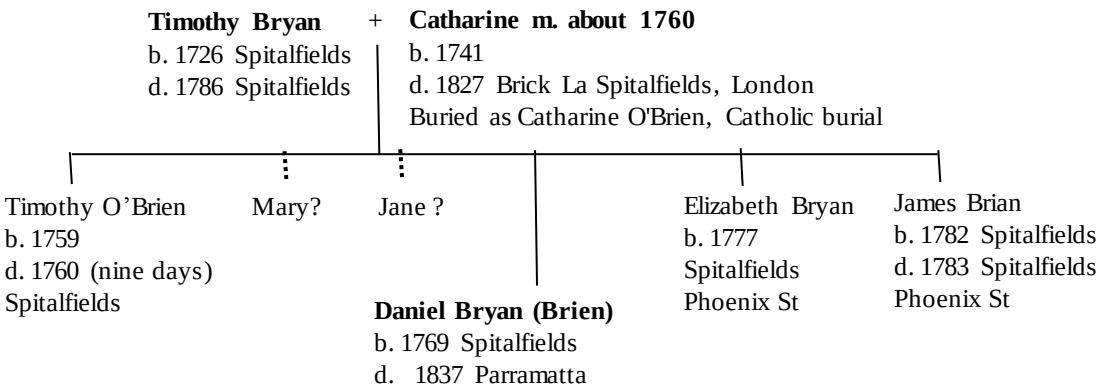
Timothy and Catharine continued to live in Phoenix St, presumably with Timothy's mother, Jane Bryan. To date I haven't been able to identify what Timothy's line of work was, living in Spitalfields in the mid 1700s it is reasonable to assume that Timothy was engaged in something related to the silk weaving trades.

Timothy and Catharine's first child was Timothy born about the 24th December 1759. He died after 9 days and was buried on the 2nd January 1760 under the name Timothy O'Brien.



Timothy Obrien died aged 9 days Christ church, Spitalfields 2nd January 1760

There were probably a number of children born, some possibly still-births after Timothy was born as there is a gap of nine years to the next child we can find. This is the time we start finding Catholic birth records and the next three children Daniel b. 1769, Elizabeth b. 1777 and James b. 1782 are present in the Moorfields Catholic transcripts. [390]



Family of Timothy and Catharine Bryan – as far as can be determined

In the 1700s the English government discriminated against Catholics and required them to pay additional taxation above what Anglicans were required to pay. For instance, Catholics were charged double land and property tax and they were taxed for attending church. This was an anomaly as in reality Catholic worship was illegal but was tolerated if those attending paid the tax. Priests established small chapels sometimes in commercial buildings, others in homes, and those attending mass had to pay a penny to attend. These became know as 'Penny Chapels' or in some cases they were called 'Penny Hotels'.[391]

There was a Catholic Penny Chapel in White Row very near to Phoenix St Spitalfields and it was here on the 12th April 1770 our ancestor convict Daniel Brien was baptised.

ST MARY MOORFIELDS Baptisms 8

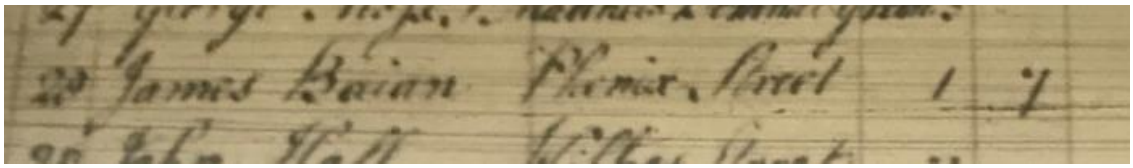
1770	1 Apr	Margaret	James	Catharine	OWEN	Patrick CARNEY Catharine WATERS
	8 Apr	Michael	William	Brigit	ANDERSON	Thomas DERMOT Margaret DELANY
	12 Apr	Daniel	Timothy	Catharine	BRYAN	Timothy TOOLE Mary SMITH

Daniel Bryan baptised 12th April 1770, parents Timothy and Catharine

1777					
20 Apr	Elizabeth	Timothy	Catharine	BRYAN	James CLARK Sara FORD
1782					
6 Jan	James (born 4 Jan)	Timothy	Catharine	BRYAN	William KIELAN Eleanor WELLDON

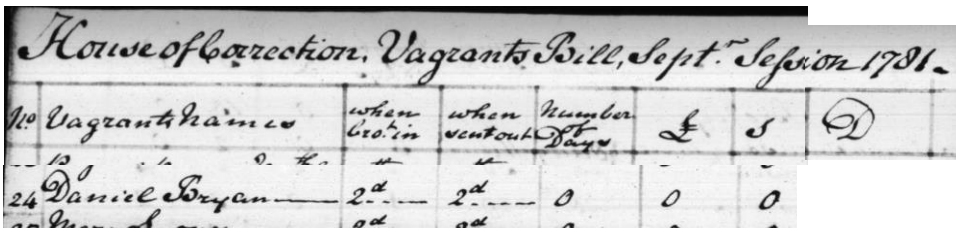
Daniel's younger siblings Elizabeth and James appear in the Moorfields transcripts 1777 and 1782 Elizabeth Bryan disappears from the records so either her burial record has not survived or she grew to adulthood and moved away, or married and changed her name. It is possible Elizabeth has descendants alive today.

James Brian died after one year and seven months. As sad as this is, it was James that led to positively linking his parents Timothy and Catharine Bryan to Phoenix Street Spitalfields. As we have both his baptism and death records for James, therefore we have corroborating records of his parent's names, dates, street name and location.



James Brian, buried 28th July 1783, Phoenix Street Spitalfields, aged 1 year 7 months

From the available evidence is seems clear that the Bryans of Phoenix Street were doing it tough. In September 1781 a record for a Daniel Bryan of Spitalfields then aged 12, appears showing him spending two nights in a vagrant's hostel. The hostel charged the Spitalfields parish church 2d for two nights accommodation and meals.


House of Correction. Vagrants Bill, Sept.r Session 1781.

No	Vagrants Names	when Brot in	when went out	Number of Days	£	s	d
24	Daniel Bryan	2d	2d	0	0	0	

Daniel Bryan listed in a vagrant bill Sep 1781

On Tuesday the 7th of May 1782 Daniel Brien was at the Finsbury Square Catholic church where he was a god father to Eleanor Desmond. Eleanor was the younger twin sister of Abigail Desmond, daughters of Bartholomew and Catharine Desmond. It is interesting to speculate that Daniel Brien's daughter Eleanor Grace Brien, born in 1832, may have been named after his god daughter (see below).

7 May	Abigail & Eleanor (twins)	Bartholomew Catharine (born same day)	DESMOND	John DESMOND/Ann CRONING Daniel O'BRIEN/ Mary O'L ?	

Catholic Baptism transcript for Abigail and Eleanor Desmond 7th May 1782[392]

The birth of James Bryan in January 1782 seems to have been a tipping point for the family as soon after his birth Catharine Bryan takes her son Daniel to the London docks and enlists him into the Marine Society. [393]

The Marine Society was established to teach boys 'the ropes' and prepare them for a career at sea. It was in effect an apprenticeship, and usually the boys would go to sea for some years on a light duties' British navy ship. Daniel embarked on the ship Porcupine from London docks on the 4th Nov 1782. Records of the RN Porcupine show she was built in 1777 at Limehouse, a Thames

docks suburb close to Spitalfields. It was nearly 35 meters in length, weighed 519 tons and had a crew of 160.

We gain some insight into Daniel's life from his Marine Society record. The main thing of course is that his name was recorded by the clerk on the day as Daniel "Brien" and from that point on Daniel's commission, pay, promotions and day to day records used the 'Brien' spelling. Whether this was intentional or just an accident we don't know but this event seems to have influenced why our family name is spelt 'Brien' today.

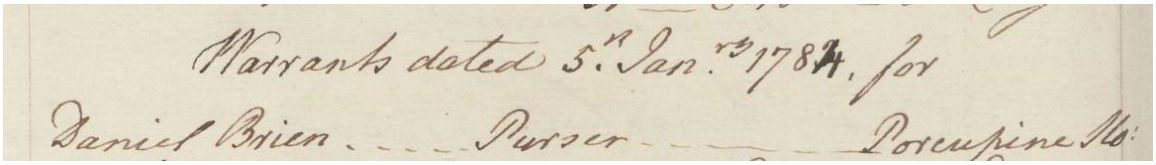
Unique Project ID	1233
Unique Individual ID	3484
Age	13
Year of Birth	1769
Height in Feet	4
Height in Inches	6
Reading Literacy, Yes=1, No=0	1
Writing Literacy, Yes=1, No=0	1
Smallpox, Yes=1, No=0	1
Date	1782
Surname	BRIEN
Forename	DANIEL
Nearest Named Relative	MO
Boy's Occupation	
Date of embarkation	04-NOV-82
Parish	SPITTLE FIELDS

Marine Society entry record for
Daniel Bryan (Brien)
4th November 1782 [394]

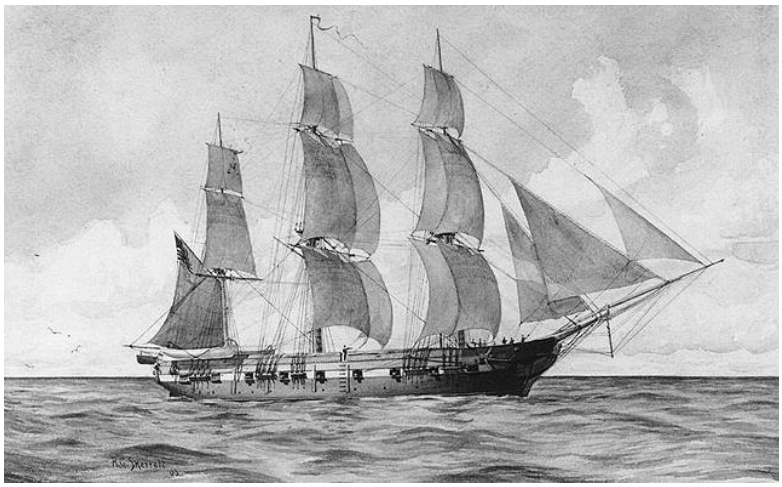
From the Marine Society record we can also get confirmation of Daniel's year of birth (1769).

This date also appears on Daniel's trial records in 1787. We can see Daniel had contracted small pox at some stage, he is described as being 4 feet 6 inches tall and lived at "Spittle Fields" (Spitalfields) and was literate.

In Jan 1784 Daniel received a warrant commission as a Purser on the ship RN Porcupine. During this time a Purser was an un-paid officer responsible for procuring the ship's food, clothing, maintenance materials and for managing the ships pay and expenses. [395]



In Jan 1784 Daniel received a warrant commission as a Purser on the ship Porcupine



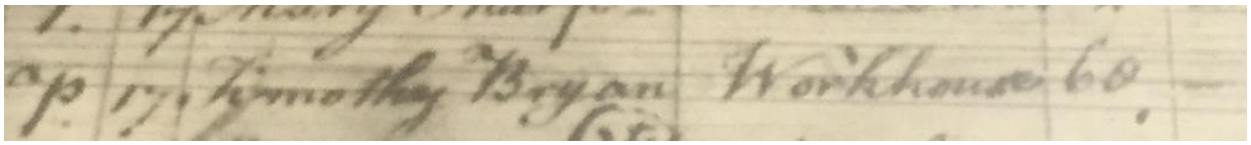
Three-masted Frigate
similar to the RN Porcupine
built in 1777

Purser's were lawfully allowed to make a mark up on their transactions and provide loans with interest. As the Purser knew the amount each sailor earned and had control over them receiving their pay, they were in a good position to determine the risk involved in any loan given.

The next I can find of the family is the death of Daniel's father, Timothy Bryan in November 1786 aged 60. Timothy was buried in the church yard at Christ church Spitalfields. At the time of his death Timothy was at the Spitalfields work-house located in what is now called Vallance rd. Spitalfields, a few blocks from Phoenix Street. [396]

We cannot be certain if Timothy Bryan was working there, residing there, or perhaps receiving medical attention at the work-house at the time of his death. But what ever the case, it seems likely the family had fallen upon hard times. The Spitalfields work-house employed a full-time teacher who conducted school lessons for the children of parents who worked there. It is speculation but perhaps Daniel Brien received his education there.

It seems likely that prior to his death in 1786 Timothy Bryan was one of, if not the most senior male of the royal O'Brien line alive.



Timothy Bryan buried 17th Nov 1786. He died at the work-house in Spitalfields London aged 60

According to Win Sinden, Convict Daniel Brien in Parramatta NSW received several letters from his mother before her death in 1827.

In the 'Sydney Gazette' of 30th April 1809 there is a notice stating that there were letters awaiting collection by Ann Parker and Daniel Brien, Settler, at the office of the Naval Officer's Assistant at the Hospital Wharf.

This is where letters arriving by ship were usually left. There was no postal service, even in England, until the one penny black postage stamp was invented. New South Wales did not have its own stamps until 1850. The letters from England had to be brought out by arrangement with the Master of a ship which was leaving for Australia. [397]

On the 16th October 1813 Postmaster Nichols placed a notice in the 'Sydney Gazette' that a letter had arrived for Daniel from England on the ship 'Earl Spencer'.

Timothy Bryan's wife Catharine Bryan died a short distance from Phoenix St in Brick Lane Spitalfields and received a Catholic burial under the name Catharine O'Brien on the 24th January 1827 aged 86.

24 Catharine O'Brien 86 Brick Lane.

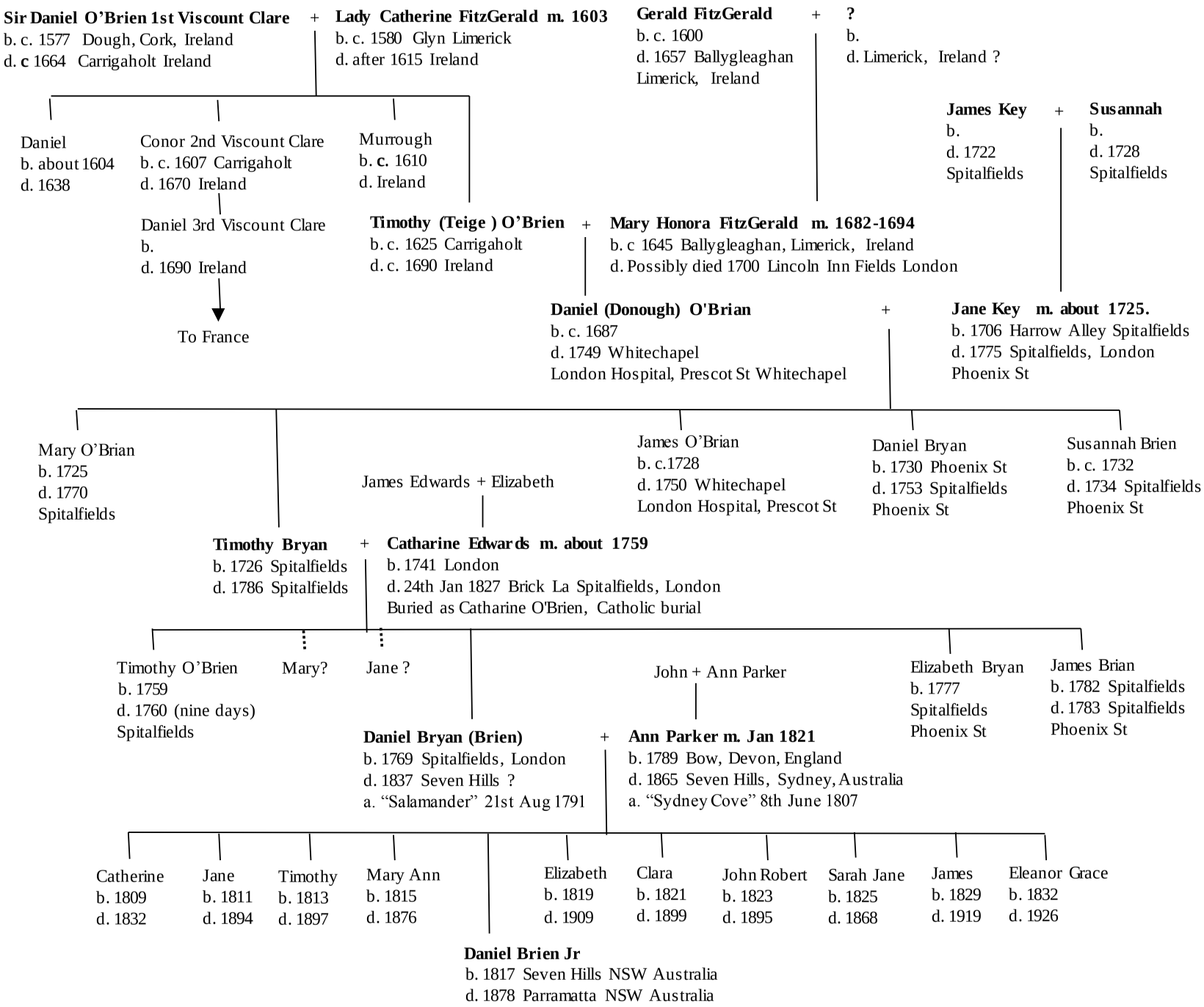
Moorfield's transcript of Catharine O'Brien buried at Spitalfields 24th January 1827

Spitalfields graveyard has not survived. At Christ church 84 burials/coffins were dug up and reburied but I can't find any records that say where they were moved to.





(L) Spitalfields church with the graveyard next to it before it was made into a public park
(R) Spitalfields church today with a park where the church yard used to be


Sir Daniel O'Brien 1st Viscount Clare
b. c. 1577 Dough, Cork, Ireland
d. c 1664 Carrigaholt Ireland
+
Lady Catherine FitzGerald m. 1603
b. c. 1580 Glyn Limerick
d. after 1615 Ireland
Gerald FitzGerald
b. c. 1600
d. 1657 Ballygleaghan Limerick, Ireland
+
?
b.
d. Limerick, Ireland ?
James Key
b.
d. 1722 Spitalfields
+
Susannah
b.
d. 1728 Spitalfields
Daniel
b. about 1604
d. 1638
Conor 2nd Viscount Clare
b. c. 1607 Carrigaholt
d. 1670 Ireland
Murrough
b. c. 1610
d. Ireland
Daniel 3rd Viscount Clare
b.
d. 1690 Ireland
To France
Timothy (Teige) O'Brien
b. c. 1625 Carrigaholt
d. c. 1690 Ireland
+
Mary Honora FitzGerald m. 1682-1694
b. c 1645 Ballygleaghan, Limerick, Ireland
d. Possibly died 1700 Lincoln Inn Fields London
Daniel (Donough) O'Brian
b. c. 1687
d. 1749 Whitechapel
London Hospital, Prescot St Whitechapel
+
Jane Key m. about 1725.
b. 1706 Harrow Alley Spitalfields
d. 1775 Spitalfields, London
Phoenix St
Mary O'Brian
b. 1725
d. 1770
Spitalfields
James O'Brian
b. c.1728
d. 1750 Whitechapel
London Hospital, Prescot St
Daniel Bryan
b. 1730 Phoenix St
d. 1753 Spitalfields
Phoenix St
Susannah Brien
b. c. 1732
d. 1734 Spitalfields
Phoenix St
James Edwards + Elizabeth
Timothy Bryan
b. 1726 Spitalfields
d. 1786 Spitalfields
+
Catharine Edwards m. about 1759
b. 1741 London
d. 24th Jan 1827 Brick La Spitalfields, London
Buried as Catharine O'Brien, Catholic burial
Timothy O'Brien
b. 1759
d. 1760 (nine days)
Spitalfields
Mary?
Jane ?
John + Ann Parker
Elizabeth Bryan
b. 1777
Spitalfields
Phoenix St
James Brian
b. 1782 Spitalfields
d. 1783 Spitalfields
Phoenix St
Daniel Bryan (Brien)
b. 1769 Spitalfields, London
d. 1837 Seven Hills ?
a. "Salamander" 21st Aug 1791
+
Ann Parker m. Jan 1821
b. 1789 Bow, Devon, England
d. 1865 Seven Hills, Sydney, Australia
a. "Sydney Cove" 8th June 1807
Catherine
b. 1809
d. 1832
Jane
b. 1811
d. 1894
Timothy
b. 1813
d. 1897
Mary Ann
b. 1815
d. 1876
Elizabeth
b. 1819
d. 1909
Clara
b. 1821
d. 1899
John Robert
b. 1823
d. 1895
Sarah Jane
b. 1825
d. 1868
James
b. 1829
d. 1919
Eleanor Grace
b. 1832
d. 1926
Daniel Brien Jr
b. 1817 Seven Hills NSW Australia
d. 1878 Parramatta NSW Australia

Chapter 8

Convict Daniel Brien’s trial and transportation to Australia 1791

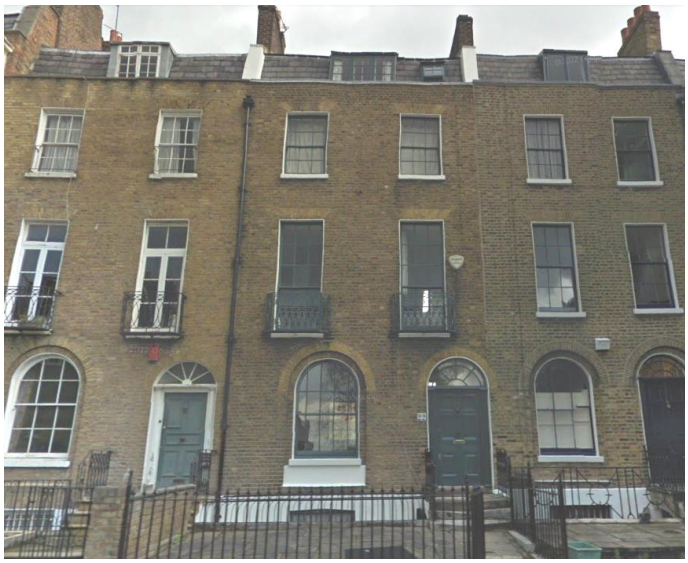
Daniel Brien's road to Australia started when he was indicted on the 7th February 1787 for being part of a group of boys who stole articles of clothing worth £7.6.0/- the property of Susannah Walker, from a boarding house at 22 Clapton Square, Hackney, a north London suburb.

A Mr. Armstrong swore that he had seen Daniel with the same group of boys earlier in the day near Shoreditch church and they were heading in the direction of Hackney. Those same boys were later seen with Daniel when he was apprehended heading back in the direction of Spitalfields.

At his trial before Mr. Justice Gould, Susannah Walker, boarding house keeper, swore that the articles were stolen from the hall of her dwelling where they were waiting for collection by the washerwoman. Jane Proctor, a servant, confirmed the theft of the items. William Sykes, brick maker, swore that he saw two young men walking through the brickfield towards Haggerstone on 7th February, carrying a bundle. He and another brick maker ran after the two and took hold of the prisoner who claimed they were taking the articles to be washed. The other thief ran away.

The two brick makers took the prisoner to Officer Davis's house at the Black Bull in Shoreditch and received a £10 reward. Thomas Wilkins, a brick maker, confirmed Style's evidence. The stolen items were secured at the watch house where Mrs. Walker and Jane Proctor identified them as those taken from the boarding house.[398]

In his defense Daniel (his name was spelt 'Brian' in the trial documents) stated that he was going past the brick-field and went to the assistance of a man carrying some washing and who was being chased by two men. He was apprehended by mistake.



22 Clapton Square Hackney London where Daniel Brien allegedly stole the washing

The witness statement of Susanah Walker and William Styles reads:

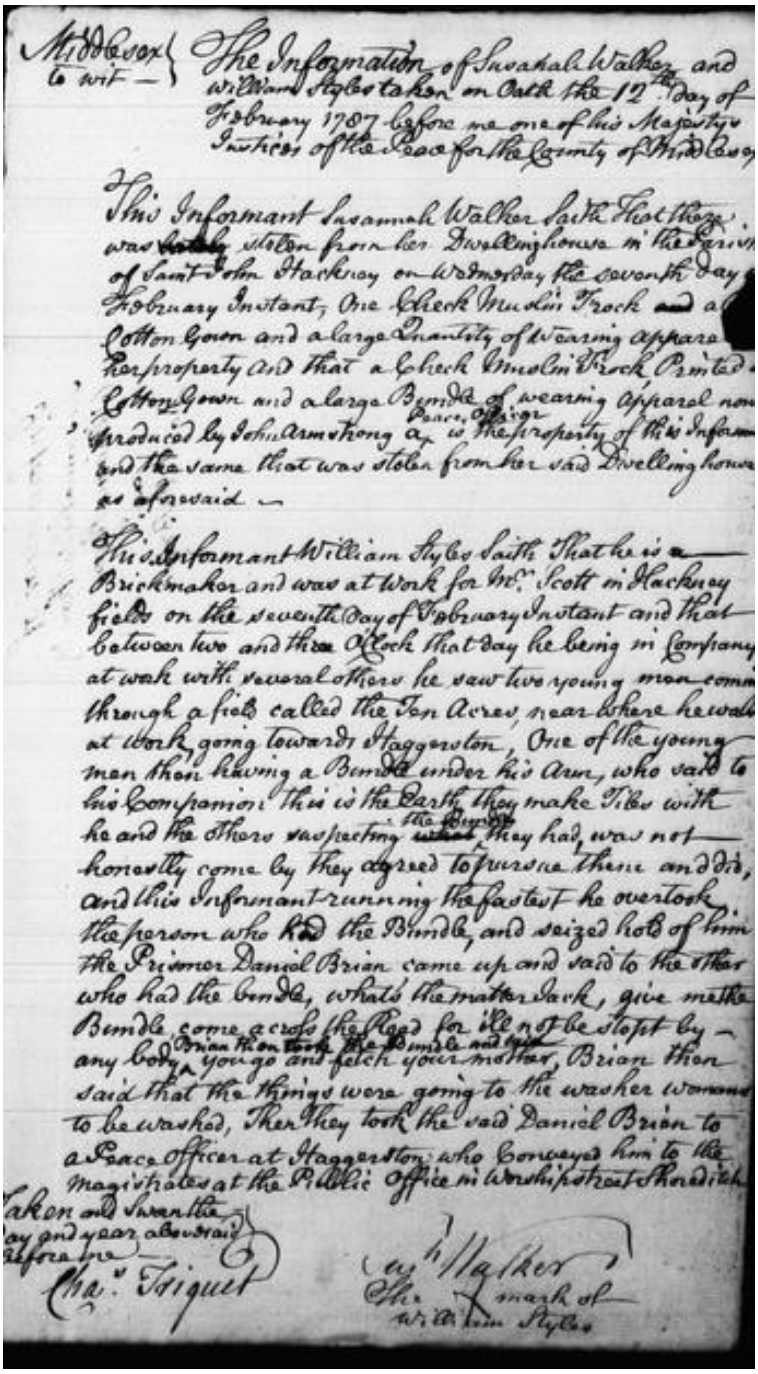
The Information of Susanah Walker and
William Styles taken on Oath the 12th. day of
February 1787 before me one of his Majestys
Justices of the Peace for the County of Middlesex

This Informant Susannah Walker Saith That there
was [..] stolen from her Dwelling house in the Parish
of Saint John Hackney on Wednesday the Seventh day
February Instant, One Check Muslin Frockanda [..]
Cotton Gown and a large Quantity of Wearing Appare
her property and that a Check Muslin Frock, Printed
Cotton Gown and a large Bundle of wearing Apparel now
produced by John Armstrong a Peace Officer is the property of this Informant
and the same that was stolen from her said Dwelling house
as aforesaid

This Informant William Styles Saith That he is a
Brickmaker and was at Work for Mr. Scott in Hackney
fields on the seventh day of February Instant and that
between two and three O'Clock that day he being in Company
at work with several others he saw two young man coming
through a field called the Ten Acres, near where he was
at Work, going towards Haggerston, One of the young
men then having a Bundle under this Arm, who said to
his Companion this is the Earth they make Tiles with
he and the others suspecting thewhatBunder they had, was not
honestly come by they agreed to Pursue them and did,
And this Informant running the fastest he overtook
the Person who had the Bundle, and seized hold of him
the Prisoner Daniel Brian came up and said to the other
who had the bundle, What's the matter Jack, give me the
Bundle, come across the Road for i'll not be stopt by
any body Brian then took the Bundle and said You go and fetch your mother, Brian then
said that the things were going to the washer Womans
to be washed, Then they took the said Daniel Brian to
a Peace Officer at Haggerston who Conveyed him to the
Magistrates at the Public Office in Worshipstreet Shoreditch

Mr. Walker

The [mark] Mark of
William Styles



Middlesex } The Information of Susanah Walker and
to wit — } William Styles taken on Oath the 12th Day of
February 1787 before me one of his Majesty's
Justices of the Peace for the County of Middlesex

This Informant Susannah Walker Saith That she
was [illegible] stolen from her Dwelling house in the Parish
of Saint John Hackney on Wednesday the seventh day
February Instant, One Check Muslin Frock and a
Cotton Gown and a large Quantity of Wearing Apparel
her property and that a Check Muslin Frock Printed
Cotton Gown and a large Bundle of wearing Apparel now
produced by John Armstrong a Peace Officer is the property of this Informant
and the same that was stolen from her said Dwelling house
as aforesaid —

This Informant William Styles Saith That he is a
Brickmaker and was at Work for Mr. Scott in Hackney
field on the seventh Day of February Instant and that
between two and three O'Clock that Day he being in Company
at work with several others he saw two young men coming
through a field called the Ten Acres, near where he was
at Work going towards Haggerston, One of the young
men then having a Bundle under his Arm, who said to
his Companion this is the Party they make Piles with
he and the others suspecting that the Bundle they had was not
honestly come by they agreed to pursue them and did,
and this Informant running the fastest he overtook
the person who had the Bundle, and seized hold of him
the Prisoner Daniel Brian came up and said to the other
who had the bundle, what's the matter Jack, give me the
Bundle come across the Road for ile not be stopt by —
any body, Brian then took the Bundle and said
you go and fetch your mother, Brian then
said that the things were going to the washer woman
to be washed, Then they took the said Daniel Brian to
a Peace Officer at Haggerston who Conveyed him to the
Magistrates at the Public Office in Worship Street Shoreditch

Taken and Sworn the
day and year aforesaid
before me —
Chas. Triquet

his
Susannah Walker
mark
William Styles

Daniel's statement reads: "I was going across the field and saw two men came running past. I thought I knew one of them, and I saw three men running after them. I ran up to see what was the matter, and said 'Jack. What is the matter?' He said that he had some things to take to the washer woman for his mother, and these men would not let him, and I said, 'I will take care of these things while you fetch your mother.' He went away and never returned. And they kept me."

Daniel was found guilty and was sentenced to death.

PRISONER's DEFENCE.

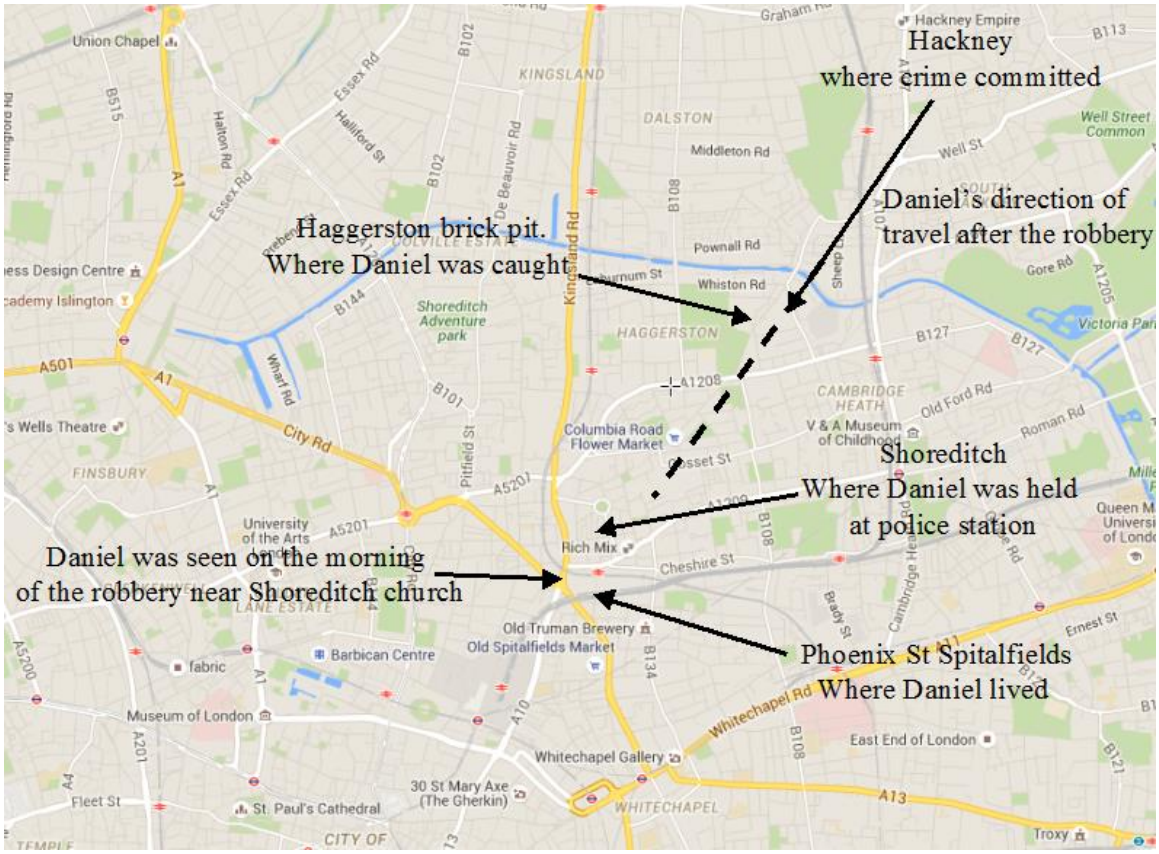
I was going acroſs the field, and two men were coming paſt; I thought I knew one of them, and I ſaw theſe three men run after them; I ran up to ſee what was the matter; I ſaid, Jack, what is the matter? he ſaid, he had ſome things to take to a waſherwoman for his mother, and theſe men would not let him; and I ſaid, I will take care of the things while you fetch your mother; he went away, and never returned; and they kept me.

The priſoner called one witneſs to his character.

GUILTY, Death.

Tried by the ſecond Middleſex Jury before Mr. Juſtice GOULD.

Draw a line on a map of London between Spitalfields and Hackney and you will see that Haggerstone sits about midway between the two. It seems Daniel Brien was heading home when he was apprehended.



On 19th September 1789 Daniel accepted the King's pardon on condition of transportation for 7 years. Note Daniel's name is spelt 'Brien' in this gazette.

The following capital convicts were offered his Majesty's pardon, on condition of Transportation to the Coast of New South Wales, for seven years, which they accepted, viz.

William Clay, George Wallis, Daniel Brien, Thomas Wood, Jacob Jonas, Thomas Johnson, George Lovell alias Gipsey George, James Shirley, Charles Berkley, Thomas Tusk, James Bebbin, Robert Fawcett, William Tanner, Thomas Holyoake, Samuel Crofts, William Johnson, Edward Collins, Walter Ferguson, William Harper, Robert Cox, William Caddie, Thomas Ward, John Harper.

On the 19th December 1789 Daniel Brien was conveyed by Gaoler Richard Akerman on board the Ship 'Douglas' in the River Thames and was delivered by him to James Bradley the Overseer of the Convicts on board the 'Dunkirk' Hulk at Plymouth.

Daniel then spent the next 15 months on the prison hulk "Dunkirk" in Plymouth harbor waiting for a ship to become available to take him to Australia.



Prison hulk typical of those moored in Plymouth harbour.

Convict transportation to Australia

As I write, some branches of our Brien family are now 12th generation native-born Australians. In reality this would not have been the case if not for a series of decisions made in England nearly 250 years ago to send convicts to Australia. Convict transportation to Australia (then known as New South Wales) began largely as an attempt to solve problems resulting from the industrial revolution in Britain. The two events have a causal correlation (the cause: Industrial Revolution in Britain; effect: our family line in Australia).

To understand how these events link; some back ground is helpful. "As Britain moved from a primarily rural society to become the world's first urbanised, industrialised nation in the 18th and 19th centuries, the justice system underwent its own transformation. In the rural communities and small towns of the mid-18th century, informal sanctions were often effective and the criminal justice system was a last resort. There were no professional police, and justices of the peace were amateurs - justice was administered quickly and with little protection for the offender.

By the late-18th century, the legal system had become much more formalized. Anxiety about the dangers of crime (mostly by the propertied classes) grew as the rural poor moved to the growing cities where they were no longer under the social control of the squire, parson and village community. This eventually led to the implementation of a professional police force and a specialised legal system staffed by trained, professional lawyers. The court system also evolved to meet the changing needs of society." [399] The result was overcrowded prisons; one solution adopted was to transport convicts to other parts of the world including America.

With the outbreak of the War of Independence in 1775 American colonists ceased accepting convicts; this led to renewed overcrowding in English gaols. An alternate solution was sought and a proposal made before a committee of the House of Commons by Botanist Sir Joseph Banks in 1779, who stated that in his opinion "the place most eligible for the reception of convicts was Botany Bay. [400]

Banks had been aboard the ship 'Endeavour' on Lieutenant James Cook's first great voyage during which the east coast of Australia was mapped for the first time. On that voyage the Endeavour anchored in Botany Bay located just south of Sydney Australia on the 29th April 1770.

Endeavour replica under sail



Based on Banks testament Botany Bay was selected, and in October 1786 Captain Arthur Phillip was appointed the first Governor of New South Wales.

After the necessary preparations had been completed the first convict fleet set sail from Portsmouth, England on the 13th May 1787 consisting of eleven ships. Phillip's contemporaries described the enterprise as "going beyond the seas". The journey of just more than eight months, an amazing navigational feat of its time, deserves to be celebrated in its own right. [401]

Upon arriving at Botany Bay on the 21st January 1788 Phillip deemed the site unsuitable due to the lack of sufficient water, poor anchorage and sandy soil so, he embarked with a longboat and two cutters to explore another harbour a few miles to the north labeled on Cook's map as 'Port Jackson'.

Phillip spent 3 days of reconnaissance in Port Jackson where he noted a bay with a stream of fresh water which he named Sydney Cove; after the British Home Secretary, the 1st Baron Sydney.

Phillip described Port Jackson in his journal as follows. "We had the satisfaction of finding the finest harbour in the world, in which a thousand sail of the line may ride in the most perfect security...." Phillip then returned to Botany Bay on the afternoon of the 24th January and readied the fleet carrying around 1400 convicts, soldiers and free people to sail the approx. 8 miles along the coast to Port Jackson. [402]

On the 25th January 1788 a working party from the ship 'Supply' came ashore on the eastern side of Sydney Cove and cleared a landing site. The fleet anchored in Sydney Cove on the 26th January 1788 and that evening the British Grand Union flag [403] was raised, and possession of the land formally taken in the name of King George III. [404] Phillip himself wasn't officially sworn in as 'Governor in Chief' until the 7th February 1788'. [405]



Depiction of Sydney Cove 26th January 1788.
(Note: the flag raising occurred in the evening, the painting makes it look like the afternoon)

The ‘British Grand Union flag’ raised was commonly known as ‘The Union Jack’ in the 18th century as it was flown on the jack staff in the bows of war ships, hence this was its proper name. [406]

On the 2nd November 1788, Governor Arthur Phillip took a detachment of marines along with a surveyor and, in boats, made his way upriver heading west from Port Jackson to a location about 25Km (15 miles) from Sydney Cove that he called The Crescent, a defensible hill curved round a river bend, now in Parramatta Park.

As a settlement developed, Governor Phillip gave it the name "Rose Hill" after British politician George Rose. On the 4th June 1791 Phillip changed the name of the township to “Parramatta” approximating the term used by the local Aboriginal people.



Map of Parramatta river and Botany Bay drawn by Watkin Tench in 1791 [407]
(note the location of ‘Rose Hill’ later changed to ‘Parramatta’)

The first fleet was followed by two more fleets. The second fleet (also known as the “grim convict armada” [408] due to the high number of deaths incurred during the journey) was a convoy of six ships arriving in Sydney June 1790. The third fleet of eleven ships followed leaving Plymouth in March, 1791 with more than 2,000 convicts including Daniel Brien who arrived in Sydney aboard the ship ‘Salamander’ on the 21st August 1791.

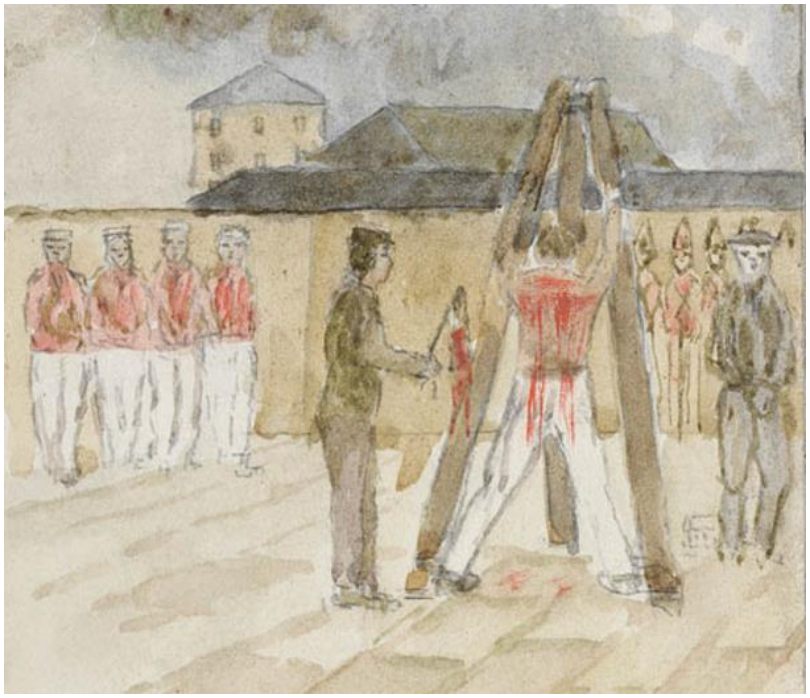
After the third fleet, convicts were transported to Australia on individual ships. In all, between 1788 and 1868 more than 162,000 convicts were transported to Australia.

Convicts were initially assigned to an overseer but after a period they often obtained a 'ticket of leave' which allowed them to work for their own benefit and to purchase (or be granted) property on the conditions that they resided within a prescribed area, attended a muster every few months and attended church weekly. The tickets had to be renewed annually and permitted convicts to marry or bring their families over from England or wherever they lived.

Once a convict had served their sentence it was difficult for them to return due to the cost and availability of passage, some did manage to make the return trip, but the vast majority remained in Australia - it is estimated that today more than 20% of Australia's population have a convict in their ancestry.

Step out of line and convict discipline was invariably harsh and often quite arbitrary. For those who committed further offences in the colony there was a variety of brutal punishments awaiting them.

The government magistrates regarded flogging as a most effective punishment for both men and women because convicts dreaded the pain and humiliation of a visit to the 'triangles. This involved being tied to a wooden A-frame, stripped to the waist and lashed with a 'cat o' nine tails' - a multi-tailed whip that often also contained lead weights. [409]



Flogging at the 'triangles' (State Library of NSW) [410]

Fifty lashes was a standard punishment, which was enough to strip the skin from someone's back, but this could be increased to more than one hundred lashes. In 1797 male two convicts received eight hundred lashes spread over two days, [411] in 1804 several convicts received 1000 lashes. [412] Some convicts died under the ordeal, others were so deeply affected that they either committed suicide or took to the bush and lived like savages. [413]

Just as dreadful as the cat o' nine tails was a long stint on a chain gang, where convicts were employed to build roads in the colony. During the day, the prisoners were supervised by a military guard assisted by brutal convict overseers, convicts who were given the task of disciplining their fellows. [414]

At night, they were locked up in small wooden huts behind stockades. The work was backbreaking, and was made difficult and painful as convicts were shackled together around their ankles with irons or chains weighing 4.5kg or more. [415]



Convict leg irons.

Known as "darbies" or "slangs" in the convict 'flash' slang language, leg irons were used widely as a way of punishing convicts who had committed crimes and misdemeanors after arriving in the colony. The basils (rings) were fitted around the convict's ankles and then hot rivets were put in place by a blacksmith, so the irons could not be removed.

Leg irons chafed the ankles, made loud clinking noises with every movement, and made working difficult and tiring. Running at any speed in irons was almost impossible - unless of course the convict could find a way to remove them. [416]

Worse than the cat or chain gangs was transportation to harsher and more remote penal settlements in, Newcastle, Norfolk Island, Port Macquarie and Moreton Bay.

Records from the time also show a significant number of executions were carried out. Browsing through the Sydney Gazette you come across many examples where death sentences were handed down; pretty much on a weekly basis. One example from the edition dated 18th August 1821 describes where 23 convicts were sentenced to death during just one court sitting.

SATURDAY.—This morning an awful portraiture of the determined depravity of man was exhibited to a crowded auditory—a circumstance unprecedented in our colonial jurisprudence—that of no less than 23 fellow creatures placed, by reiterated crimes, at the bar of justice, to be visited with its heaviest penalty—DEATH! William Williams, Gilbert Brown, John M'Guire, John Whalan, John Read, William Geary, Thomas Smith, Charles Young, William Whiteman, John Cochrane, John Mills, William Kennedy, Francis Pasco, Pasco Haddycott, George Grover, Robert Maggs, Thomas Fitzsimmons, John Squires, Peter Burns, John Brown, Edward Farrell, John Ryan, and Miles Jordan, severally received Sentence of Death. Our particularly confined limits will not permit remarking on the excellent and judicious speech with which His Honor the JUDGE ADVOCATE addressed twenty-three dying men! It was delivered with that energy and pathos so peculiar to the Mind from whence pure sympathy flows; and seemed to have that impression on some of the culprits, which, it is fondly trusted, will inspire them with the well-grounded hope of seeking that benignant boon of mercy in another world, which the offended laws, and the justice of the country, necessarily preclude in this.

23 Convicts handed death sentences by hanging in one court sitting.
Sydney Gazette 18th Aug 1821 p.4

One of those listed as sentenced in the above article was William Geary. The following week the Sydney Gazette reported that just prior to Geary's execution he admitted to committing another earlier crime for which an innocent man (George Bowerman) had already been executed – rough justice!

On the verge of eternity, Geary solemnly exculpated George Bowerman (one of the three brothers that were executed some months since for a robbery on the Windsor-road) from all knowledge of the transaction for which he had innocently paid the forfeit of his life. He (Geary) declared himself to have been the man, in company with the other Bowermans that had perpetrated the robbery; and that George Bowerman was the unhappy man identified in the place of Geary.—We must leave the Public to judge

George Bowerman- wrong man hung
Sydney Gazette 25th Aug 1821 p.4

Historic maps, publications and Sydney Gazette 1803

Maps of the Sydney / Parramatta settlements and environs were produced from 1788 onwards. We are fortunate that many of the old 'Parish Maps' have been scanned and retained for our viewing by the NSW Land Registry Service, via their Historical Land Records Viewer. [417]

The maps were produced using a high level of surveying and cartography skill and are on par with similar English documents. Importantly, they show the full extent of town planning across the colony. Roads and building construction, maritime operations and navigation as well as farming and food production are all evident. Also marked on these maps are government and non-government services such as military, policing, hospitals, education, commerce and religion. In addition, we have government records and journals written by individuals that are of equal quality and nature to those produced in England at the time.

When looking at these documents the uniformity and sophistication of the early Sydney / Parramatta settlement on display is striking.

The British arrived in Australia during the middle of the Industrial Revolution aboard three large fleets, disembarking a population numbering in the thousands. These and further arrivals over subsequent years represented a cross section of society who brought with them virtually the entire suite of Industrial Revolution and Western based experience, knowledge, history, culture and technology. In one fell swoop they established a British / Western off-shoot on the other side of the planet without missing a beat.

The scale of this undertaking is amazing by any measure. In the process the British brought to Australia the same Innovative culture that went on to be embraced by most of the world's population. Because of Australia's direct ties with Britain, we experienced the impact, and benefited from, the Industrial Revolution earlier than many countries. Britain's burgeoning textile industries would soon have an insatiable desire for Australian wool products; some branches of our family were at the forefront of this new global Industrial economy and took great advantage of this during the wool-boom.

When the eleven vessels of the First Fleet reached NSW in January 1788, among the cargo was a small printing press. This was operated initially by convict George Hughes who was replaced in 1800 by another convict George Howe, who in turn was replaced in 1821 by his son Robert. [418]

The first newspaper in Australia (The Sydney Gazette) was produced from the 5th March 1803 and ran until the 20th October 1842. From 1824 it was a free press without any government censoring or editing. Our ancestors are prominent throughout its pages giving valuable insights into our history. The Sydney Gazette has been scanned and can be viewed via TROVE. [419]



Masthead of
1st edition Sydney Gazette
5th March 1803

Convict influence on Australian identity and culture

Australia's Convict past left some indelible marks on our identity and culture. An obvious example is the Australian accent (known as General Australian) which my research indicates evolved by the 1820s. [420]

The early convict settlers in Sydney originated from locations across Britain; bringing speakers of different accents and dialects together for the first time.

An unconscious process known as 'levelling' took place to reduce the major differences in the way they spoke. Gradually over time these differences are reduced and the speech sounds which are most common among them become characteristic of their accents. [421]

Most of the accent levelling takes place when children socialise, most likely at school. It is children that drive the process and research into colonial accent development suggests that the community which possesses the largest number of speakers of a particular accent will eventually see their accent become dominant.

Within early Sydney the community with the largest number of school children were those settlements along the Hawkesbury river, north west of Sydney. As adults this cohort spread out across the country-side taking the new Australian accent with them. General Australian became the 'Foundation' accent of Australia and remains largely unchanged today. [422]

During the 1890s when Australia was still six separate British self-governing colonies, a series of Constitutional Conventions were held to debate and develop what became the Australian Constitution. Speakers at these conventions often referred to the common language spoken right across the continent. The Commonwealth of Australia was proclaimed on the 1st January 1901, and it could be argued that the children of convicts influenced the creation of Australia as a country.

Another instance of convict influence on Australian culture is what we call our egalitarian society.

The origin for this can be traced back to convicts transported to Australia who resented the inequality of their treatment. They and their descendants were strongly in support of removing any aristocratic barriers to working-class political participation.

Some of the convicts sent to Australia were Irish political activists; one of which was William Smith O'Brien - William and our convict Daniel Brien were 4th cousins.

William Smith O'Brien was arrested in August 1848 on a charge of high treason and sedition and transported to Australia aboard the ship 'Swift' to Hobart Town Tasmania; arriving on the 27th October 1849. [423]

William was incarcerated for a period in solitary confinement on Maria Island off the Tasmanian coast. While in exile on Maria Island (and afterwards at New Norfolk, Tasmania) William Smith O'Brien wrote a book titled "Principles of Government" in 2 vols. Published in 1855; in it O'Brien drafted what he suggests as the "ideal democratic constitution", based on the "Chartist demands".

These sentiments prevailed amongst the general population when Australia was granted self rule in 1856 (and expanded by Electoral Reform in 1858) resulting in the establishment of State governments based on the 'Chartists demands'. [424]

These included the elimination of property requirements to vote, use of the secret ballot, the right of all males to stand for election, and salaries for Members of Parliament. These elements were radical for the time and, in many ways unique, and changed one of the least-free jurisdictions on the planet to one that was quite free and quite democratic for the time.

Australia is often called a 'Chartist's democracy' because these initiatives were realised in the very first Victoria and New South Wales parliaments - well in advance of the UK which had to wait until 1872 for the secret ballot and 1914 for universal manhood suffrage. [425]

In practice, this egalitarian sprit did mean that the children of convicts or poor immigrants were able to rise to positions of importance in politics, business and the arts. What counted most under **A**ustralia's egalitarian social system was hard work, risk-taking and an ability to make the most of the land's opportunities. [426]

More information about William Smith O'Brien is provided in Chapter 10 and Appendix 7.



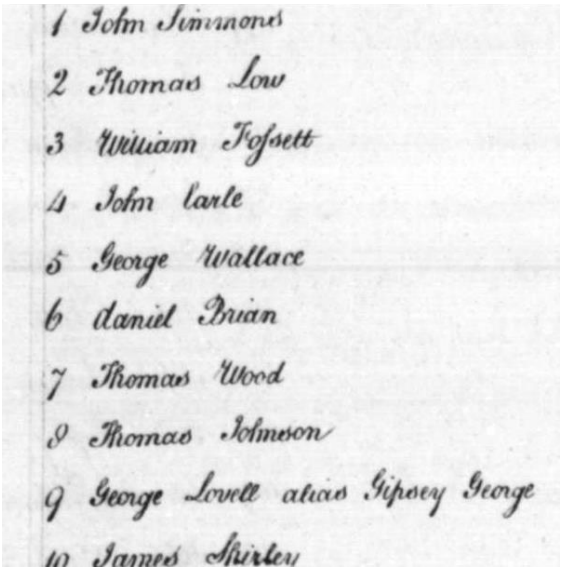
William Smith O'Brien (Portrait by George Francis Mulvany) [427]

Daniel Brien's journey to Australia

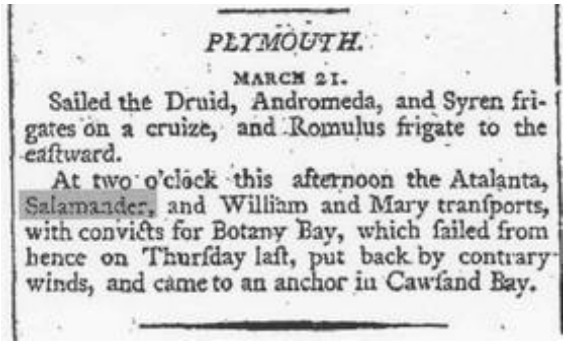
Daniel Brien was assigned to the convict transport ship 'Salamander'. Built at a Thames shipyard in 1776 it was a vessel of 320 tons. Originally named 'The Shark', it was renamed 'Salamander' in 1778. [428]

The Ships Master for the journey to Australia was J Nichol and Lieutenant Richard Bowen was Naval Agent. A total of 160 males embarked, during the journey there were 5 deaths aboard, and 155 disembarked.

Daniel's name appears as prisoner No. 6 in the account of names "delivered for transportation" beyond the seas. Dec 1789.


1 John Simmonds
2 Thomas Low
3 William Josett
4 John Earle
5 George Wallace
6 daniel Brian
7 Thomas Wood
8 Thomas Johnson
9 George Lovell alias Gipsey George
10 James Shirley

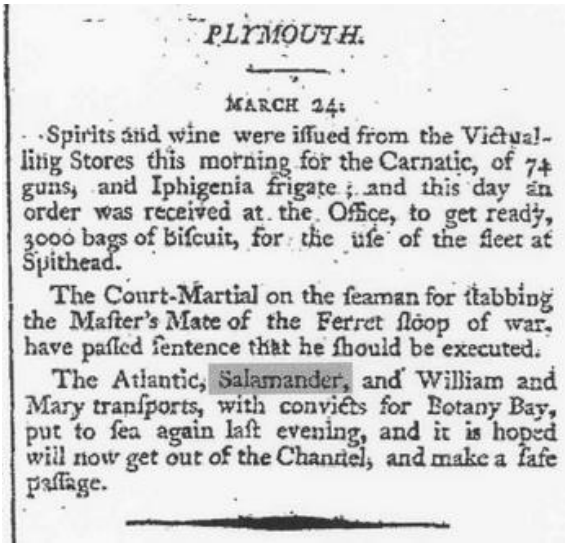
It appears that the 'Salamander' and the other ships of the 3rd fleet made several attempts at leaving Plymouth before they succeeded as these two articles from 'The Times' dated March 25th 1791 and March 28th 1791 indicate.


PLYMOUTH.

MARCH 21.

Sailed the Druid, Andromeda, and Syren frigates on a cruize, and Romulus frigate to the eaſtward.

At two o'clock this afternoon the Atalanta, Salamander, and William and Mary tranſports, with convicts for Botany Bay, which ſailed from hence on Thurſday laſt, put back by contrary winds, and came to an anchor in Cawſand Bay.


PLYMOUTH.

MARCH 24.

Spirits and wine were iſſued from the Victualling Stores this morning for the Carnatic, of 74 guns, and Iphigenia frigate; and this day an order was received at the Office, to get ready, 3000 bags of biſcuit, for the uſe of the fleet at Spithead.

The Court-Martial on the ſeaman for ſtabbing the Maſter's Mate of the Ferret ſloop of war, have paſſed ſentence that he ſhould be executed.

The Atlantic, Salamander, and William and Mary tranſports, with convicts for Botany Bay, put to ſea again laſt evening, and it is hoped will now get out of the Channel, and make a ſafe paſſage.

The Salamander sailed with the Plymouth Division of the 3rd fleet accompanied by the ships, William and Anne and the Atlantic.

Another 3rd fleet ship the 'Britannia' (painted by Thomas Whitcombe in 1798).

Probably similar to Daniel Brien's ship the 'Salamander'



The main group of the 3rd fleet sailed in two divisions; the Atlantic, Salamander and William & Ann left Plymouth on 27th March 1791 while the Albemarle, Active, Admiral Barrington, Britannia and Mathilda left Portsmouth on the same day. The Mary Ann had sailed more than a month earlier and HMS Gorgon had made her departure on 15th March 1791. However, the ships reached Port Jackson over a period which extended from 9th July 1791 (Mary Ann) to 16th October 1791 (Admiral Barrington).

While the ships of the Plymouth division stayed together until the Salamander parted company near the equator, those of the Portsmouth division were soon scattered by stormy weather almost from the first night at sea. With the fleet scattered miles apart, a mutiny erupted on the Albemarle which resulted in summary execution for two of the convicts. They were hanged at the yardarm on the day of the mutiny, 9th April 1791.

The Plymouth division regrouped at Rio de Janeiro and sailed from that port together. However, they soon became separated in a heavy gale. All three ships sailed directly from Rio to Port Jackson, thus making them the first ships to forego a stopover at Cape Town. The 'Atlantic' can claim to be the first to sail non-stop from Rio de Janeiro to Sydney. The 'Salamander' can claim to be the second ship to do it.

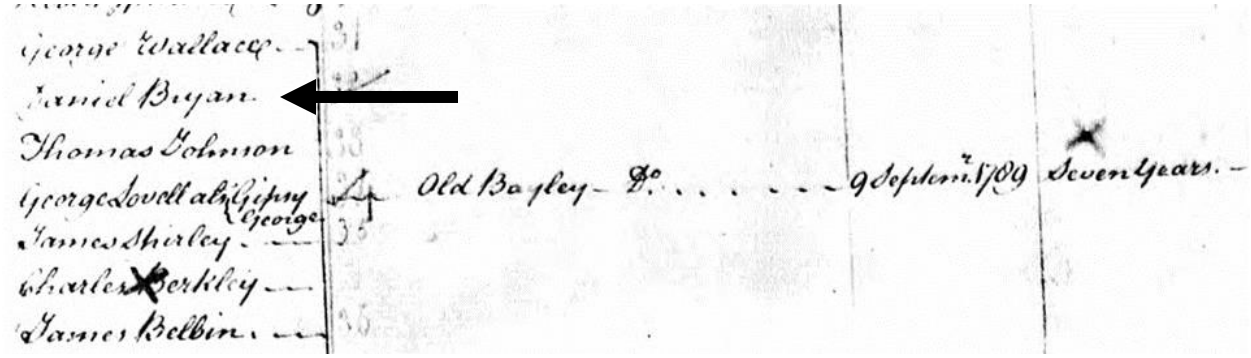


The journey of the Salamander from England to Australia

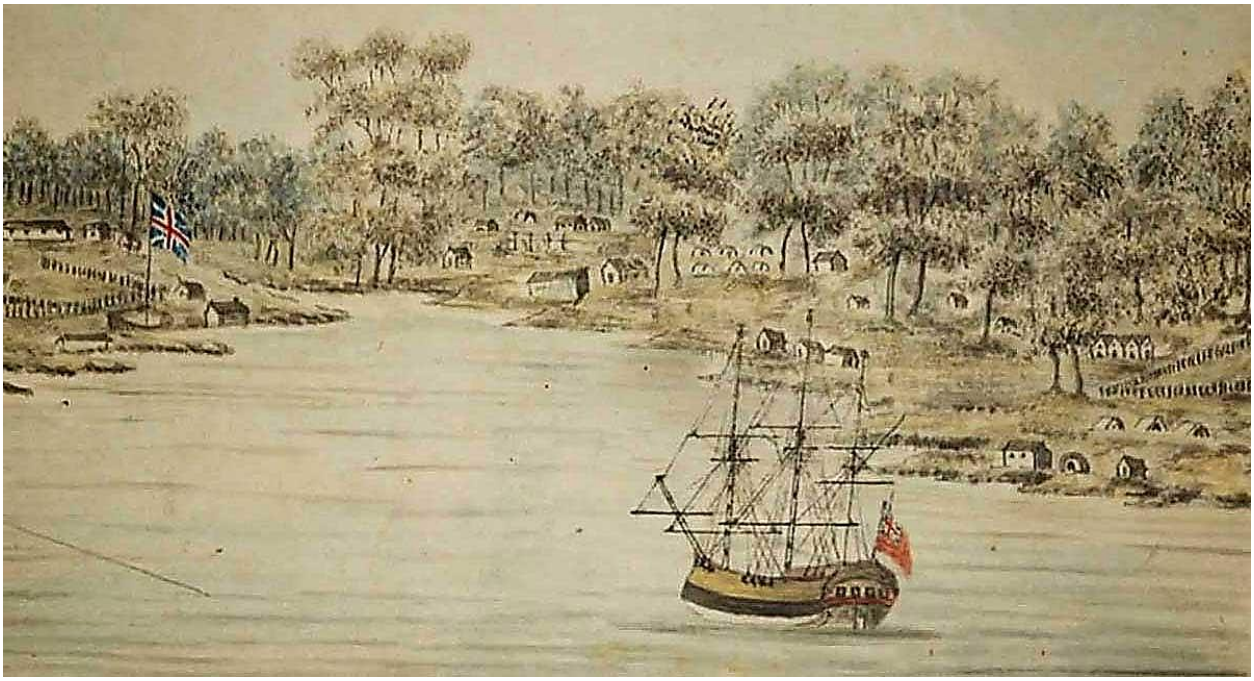
Daniel Brien's arrival in Sydney 21st August 1791

Daniel Brien arrived at Port Jackson on board the convict transport ship Salamander on the 21st August 1791 after a journey of 147 days out of Plymouth. Daniel was one of 160 convicts who boarded the Salamander. During the voyage 5 convicts died and so 155 disembarked in Sydney. On the 4th September 1791 the Salamander left Sydney bound for Norfolk Island (Daniel Brien not among them). On that voyage the Salamander was the first known vessel to enter Port Stephens. Salamander Point and Salamander Bay and the associated suburb were named after her.

Why Daniel Brien remained in Sydney and did not embark for Norfolk Island with the other convicts on the Salamander remains a mystery.



Daniel Bryan's name appears on the list of convicts arriving on the Salamander in 1791.



Sydney Cove, soon after the arrival of the First Fleet [429]

The new settlement of Sydney initially struggled to grow enough food to support the population, largely due to Governor Arthur Phillip's plan to bring skilled tradesmen on the First Fleet's voyage being rejected. However, by the time Phillip left the colony and returned to Britain on the 11th December 1792, the colony was taking shape, with official land-grants, systematic farming, and a water supply in place. [430]



Captain Arthur Phillip
first Governor of New South Wales

Arthur Phillip's first step on arrival at Sydney Cove was to fortify the entrance to Sydney Cove, as much to provide defense should there be a convict uprising as to engage any enemy ships that might came in close to the town in a hostile manner. He gave the task to Lieutenant William Dawes, an Officer of Engineers and Artillery in the staff of Major Robert Ross of the detachment of Marines. Dawes had impressed Phillip on the journey out with his positive, outgoing attitude, knowledge of astronomy and abilities in cartography.

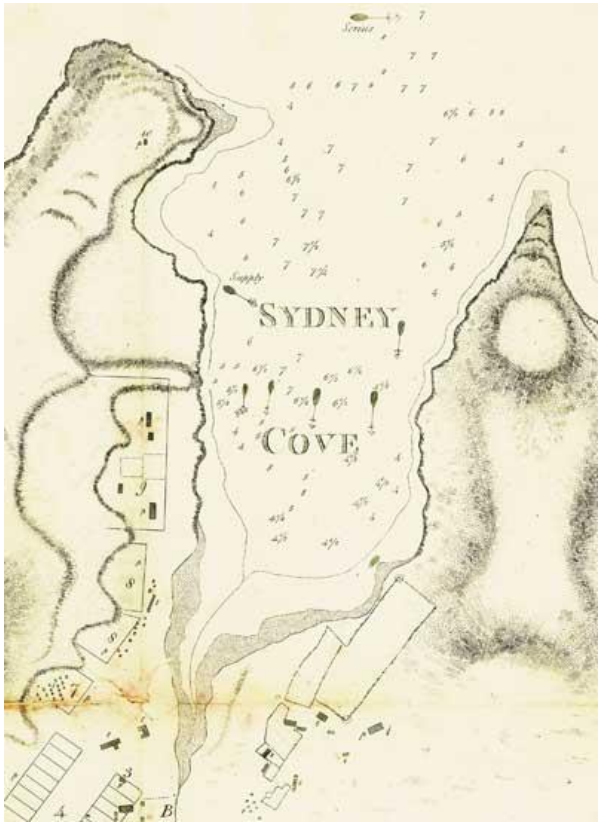
Entrusted with a telescope by the Astronomer Royal, Dr Maskeleyne, for the observing a comet that would appear towards the end of 1788 but only in the southern hemisphere, Dawes was given permission to set up his observatory on the tip of the rocky point to the west of Sydney Cove which was named in honour of Dr Maskeleyne. Upon completion of the task he was instructed to build a simple mud redoubt for the storage of explosives near his observatory, which he did. A similar fort was erected on Bennelong Point. [431]

One of the major influencing factors in Arthur Phillip's choice of Sydney Cove above other bays in Port Jackson for the site of the settlement was a little ferny creek. It flowed north from swampy high ground located within the area bounded by todays Market, Park, Elizabeth and Pitt Streets through a small, closed valley and into the cove through a tidal estuary.

A small weir was built to catch the water and to stop rising tides from making the water salty where Pitt and Crane Streets intersect today. Later large holes (they called tanks) were cut into the sandstone creek bed to retain the water; hence the stream became know as the Tank Stream.

A simple log bridge was built across stream at the place now known as Bridge Street. In 1804, Governor Philip Gidley King had the log bridge replaced by a sturdier stone bridge. It was remodeled in 1810 by John O'Hearne whose labour was paid for with 675 gallons of rum.

By 1826, the Tank Stream had ceased to be used as a water supply, being replaced by an underground channel which brought water from Lachlan Swamps in Centennial Park to a reservoir in Hyde Park. As there was no need to retain what was left of the stream, the land around it was sold and developed, and what was once the lifeline of the town became an underground drain. The system of tunnels through which Tank Stream flowed into Sydney Cove still exist today, taking away the excess rainwater from Sydney's streets.

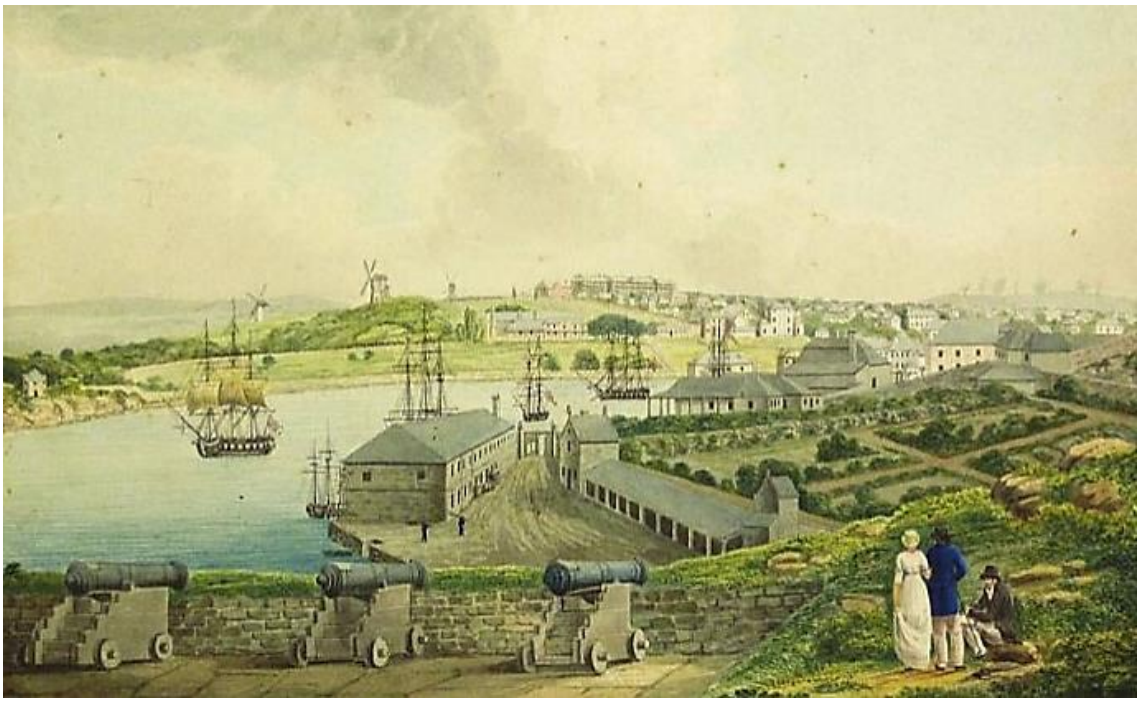


Early map of Sydney showing the Tank Stream entering Sydney Cove

Over the next two years, the colony's agricultural development was concentrated around the banks of the upper Parramatta River. Consequently, Parramatta grew much faster than Sydney. Governor Phillip built a second Government House at Parramatta and gave serious consideration to making Parramatta the main settlement and maintaining Sydney only as its port.

Initially all travel by officials of the colony between Sydney and Parramatta was made by boat along the Parramatta River and the early governors actually discouraged cross country travel between the two locations. But the building of a road was inevitable as the first land grants outside of Sydney itself were between Sydney and Parramatta and a road was needed to gain access to them.

A road was cut through the bush from Sydney to Parramatta between 1789 and 1791 and improvements over the years saw it grow into one of Sydney's busiest roads. In spite of the success of the Parramatta farms, governor Phillip knew the land could have produced more if he had been given the skilled manpower to make it happen. When he left Sydney on the 11th December 1792, there were only 11 supervisors skilled in farming and mechanics in the whole of New South Wales.

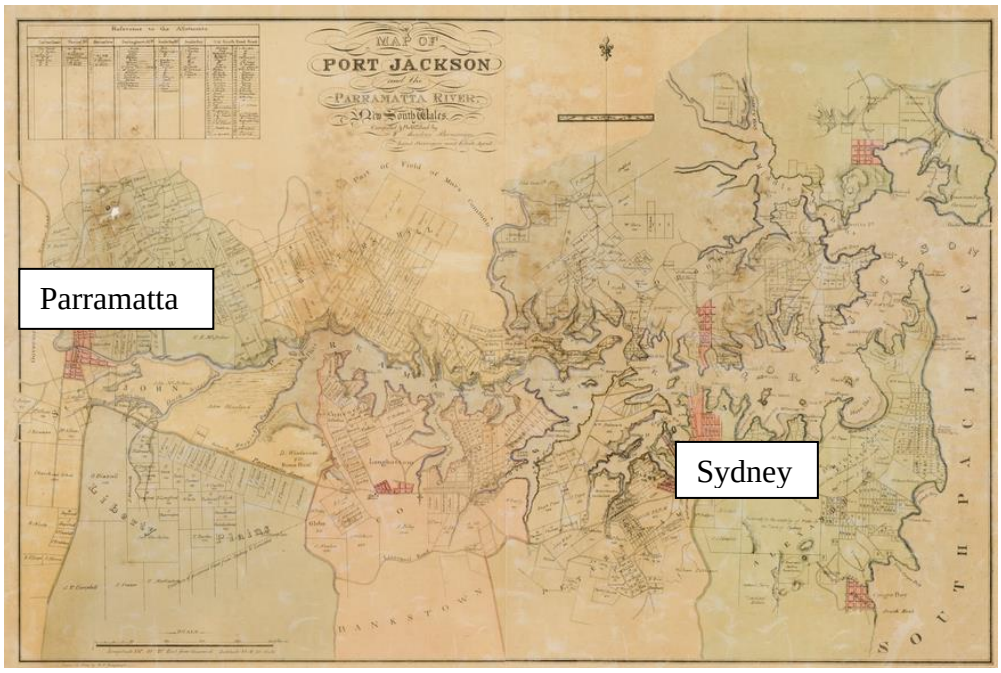


Sydney Cove in 1818, attributed to convict artist Joseph Lycett

Parramatta is the only surviving town in Australia which was laid out by First Fleeters. Planned on a grand scale by Baron Augustus Alt and Lieutenant William Dawes on instructions from the Governor early in 1789, its main street (High Street, later George Street) was to be 1.5 kilometers long and 62 meters wide, on an east-west axis from Government House to the public wharf. A second street parallel to the High Street and 33 meters wide was also laid out, called South Street (now Macquarie Street). [432]

Wide cross streets at right angles to the main axis were laid out in front of Government House; one by the church, ending at the north end in an open plaza big enough for a Town Hall as its focus (now O'Connell Street); another further to the east, which was the crossing point over the river (now Marsden Street).

The town allotments were larger than those in Sydney and were designed to provide gardens which could be worked by convicts and others to supplement the scarce food supplies of the colony. The generous scale of the main street was described by Watkin Tench during a visit to, the settlement in 1790 as being “of such breadth as will make Pall Mall and Portland Place hide their diminished heads.” [433]



Map dating from 1850 showing Parramatta located 25 Km (15 miles) west of Sydney.



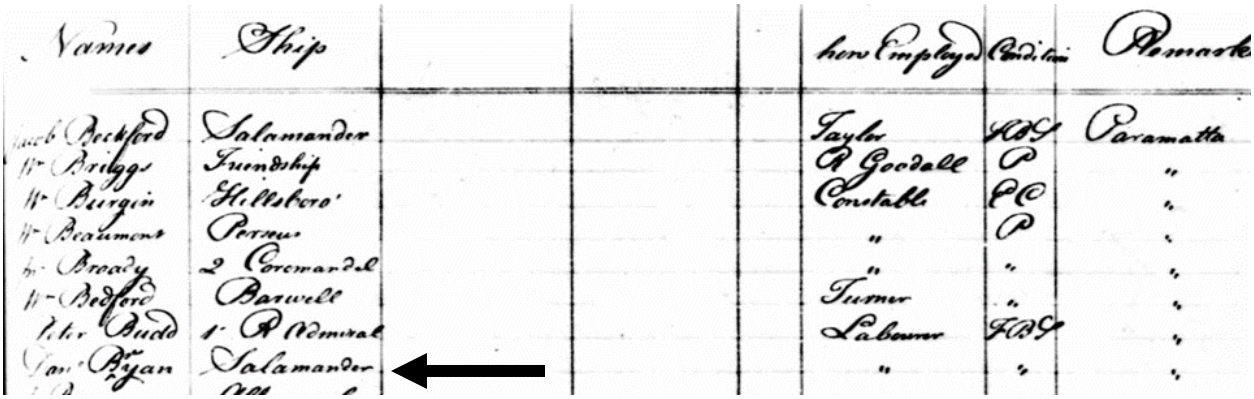
Engraving of Parramatta in 1812, attributed to Philip Slanger

Chapter 9

Daniel Brien b. 1769 & Mary Ann Parker b. 1789

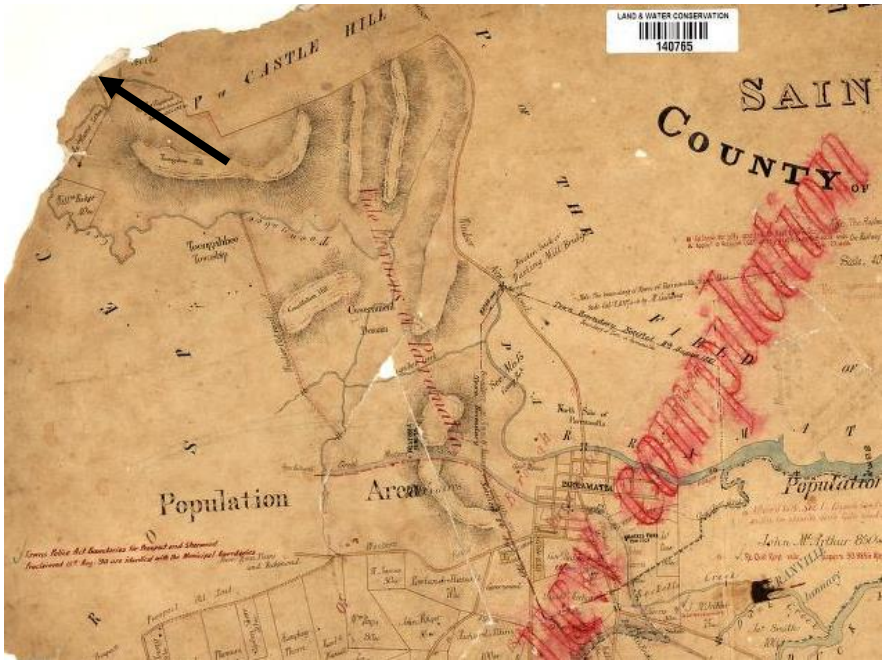
The evidence suggests that Daniel made his way to Parramatta quite soon after he arrived in Australia as his name appears as a witness on a wedding record dated 4th March 1792 held at Parramatta for Thomas Smith and Mary Martin. [434]

By 1805 we can see that Daniel Brien was definitely living at Parramatta as his name appears in the Muster sheet dated that year. Daniel gives his occupation as "Labourer".



1805 Muster showing Daniel Brien (Bryan) living at Parramatta

On the 23rd Feb 1807 Daniel purchased 30 acres of land in Vardy's Road at Seven Hills, from Hugh Doherty for £35. The remains of an old chimney which is believed to be part of a house on the 30-acre property was visible up until the late 1950s before the current sub division. The closest house to that site today is 15 Brett Street, King's Langley. [435]



Early map of the Parramatta area. The arrow points to the approx location of Daniel Brien's Vardy's Road property.

The purchase of the Vardy's Road land seems to have been the catalyst for Daniel selecting a partner. Daniel was now aged 40 and by the following year (1808) he had met Ann Parker and they were living on the 30 acres in Vardy's Road.

Ann Parker was born at Bow in Devon England in 1789 and she was baptised in Bow church in 1791. Some accounts I've read say her father's name was John, but her baptism register describes Ann as a "base child." Her unmarried mother, a pauper, aged about 30 and also called Ann Parker, had herself been born in Bow. Two years later her mother married Edward Wilcox, a widower from North Tawton, again in Bow church.



Bow church in Devon

On 2nd May, 1806, Mary Ann, then 16, was in the village of Tamerton Foliott, four miles from Plymouth. For some reason or another, she was in the house of William Hulls. She might have been his servant girl, or she may have been in his house without permission. But she stole two bank notes, one for £5 and the other for £10, and she was arrested and taken before Mr. John Hawker, the Mayor of Plymouth, in the Guildhall.

Standing in the dock, he said to her, "It is my painful duty to pronounce that you, Ann Parker, be taken from hence to the place from whence you came, and thence to the place of execution and there to be hanged by the neck until you are dead. And may the Lord have mercy on your Soul."

Ann was taken off to the Exeter prison to wait for her hanging to take place. Fortunately for Ann they were desperately short of women and girls in New South Wales that she was selected for transportation and sailed on the ship 'Sydney Cove' as one of 109 women on board, arriving on the 18th June 1807. Ann's 'certificate of leave' in 1826 describes her as: "Height 5 feet. Complexion Sallow & pock pitted. Hair Brown. Eyes Blue." She could neither read nor write. [436]

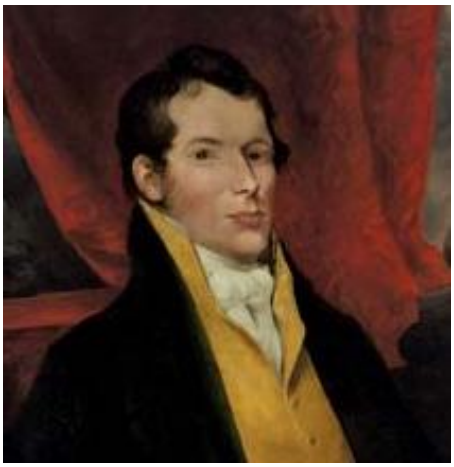
No details exist of how Daniel Brien and Ann Parker met, but it is likely Daniel selected Ann from the Parramatta 'Female Factory' which up until 1821 was located within Prince Alfred Park. The usual practice was for the matron to suggest suitable women to be introduced and couples decide after they had met if they wanted to continue with a relationship.



A ship similar to the "Sydney Cove" Which brought Ann Parker to Australia

Shortly after Ann Parker's arrival in Sydney political events were engulfing the town. On the 26th January 1808 a dispute between Governor of NSW William Bligh, and pastoralist John Macarthur escalated into an incident known as the 'Rum Rebellion'. The background to this event involved the military regiment sent to NSW on the First Fleet known as the NSW Corps. Ever since they landed, the NSW Corps had wielded ever increasing power over the economic life in the colony. This dispute centered on the control of the importation of spirits, which had gotten out of hand, and Governor Bligh put his foot down in an attempt to bring it under control.





Portraits of William Bligh and John Macarthur [437]

The spark for the rebellion was an incident involving the schooner 'Parramatta' in which John Macarthur held part ownership. [438] Convict James Horne had stowed away aboard when she sailed to Tahiti and as a consequence Macarthur was required to forfeit a bond; to which he refused.

Bligh had Macarthur arrested but Judge-Advocate Richard Atkins (who owed Macarthur money) refused to try Macarthur. [439] Macarthur then petitioned Major George Johnston, commander of the NSW Corps, to release him and Johnston complied.

Johnston took this a step further and decided to intervene and led the NSW Corp "with flags flying and playing The British Grenadiers" marched on Government House, where Major George Johnston placed Governor Bligh under arrest, and was held on his ship for more than a year. [440]

This was indeed a coup and what involvement our Daniel Brien had in this event is unknown. But due to the close proximity of his Vardy's Road property to that of John Macarthur's Seven Hills farm, it is difficult to envisage the two not did know each other.

Also, the previous holder of Seven Hills farm, Major Joseph Foveaux, was the person who assumed administrative control of the colony after Bligh's arrest. Hence people key to the rebellion were closely linked with Parramatta.

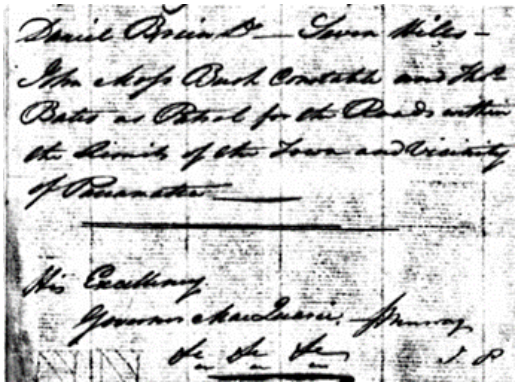
Governor Bligh was eventually released and returned to England. Joseph Foveaux was relieved as administrator in January 1809 by William Paterson and he remained in charge until the arrival of Brigadier General Lachlan Macquarie as Bligh's replacement as Governor on the 1st January 1810.

Macquarie brought with him the 73rd Regiment of the Royal Highlanders as the garrison force of the colony. The NSW Corps was disbanded, effectively ending their infamous reign.

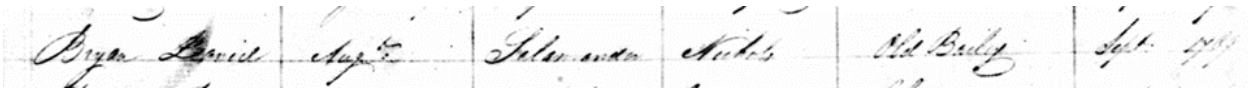


Governor Lachlan Macquarie. He appointed Daniel Brien constable of the Seven Hills on the 13th Jan 1810

Daniel Brien was obviously not tainted in Macquarie's eyes by the Rum Rebellion, as on the 13th Jan 1810 he was appointed constable of the Seven Hills district in the first cohort of appointees by Governor Lachlan Macquarie; 12 days after Macquarie had been installed as Governor.



Document signed by Governor Lachlan Macquarie swearing Daniel Brien in as constable of the Seven Hills 13th Jan 1810



Daniel's name appears on the 1816 Muster sheet



Daniel's name appears on the 1818 Muster sheet (as Daniel Bryant)

On the 15th Jan 1818 Daniel Brien purchased 100 acres from William Randel (who had only acquired it by grant 3 days before) and later that year on the 10th Sep 1818 Daniel received a land grant of 100 acres on the south side of Meurant's Lane.

PARRAMATTA.

Sept. 4	Mr. Morgan Poor.....	5000	Seven Hills
	Mr. John Boulton... ...	3000	Parramatta
11	Mr. Samuel Thorn.....	4000	
	Mr. Daniel Brien.....	4000	Seven Hills
18	G. T Palmer, Esq.....	4000	Parramatta
	Lieutenant Palmer.....	4000	
25	Mr. John Thorn.....	4000	
	Mr. Hugh Kelly.....	4000	Seven Hills
Oct. 2	Lieutenant Fagar.... ...	4000	Sydney
	Colonel O'Connell.....	4000	Hawkesbury
9	Mr. Robert Kable.....	6000	Parramatta
	Mr. Timothy Beard.....	1500	
16	Mr. Henry Baldwin ...	6000	Wilberforce
	John M'Arthur, Esq ..	1500	Parramatta
23	Mr. James Cleaver.....	1500	Prospect
	John M'Arthur, Esq...	6000	Parramatta
30	Mr. James Cleaver.....	1500	Prospect
	James M'Arthur, Esq.	6000	Parramatta

Daniel Brien appeared in the Sydney Gazette on Saturday 28 August 1819 in a list of land holders supplying meat (4000 lbs.) to the Government Stores

The official record says that Daniel Brien and Ann Parker were married at St John's Anglican Church on the 29th Jan 1821. We know that Daniel and Ann had six children before this date and the question has often been asked "why did he wait so long before marrying Ann Parker?"

One theory I have heard mentioned is that Daniel had previously been married and he waited until his first wife had died before marrying Ann. After researching Daniel Brien for many years I'll make a prediction and suggest that there was another reason for Daniel delaying marriage in an Anglican church.

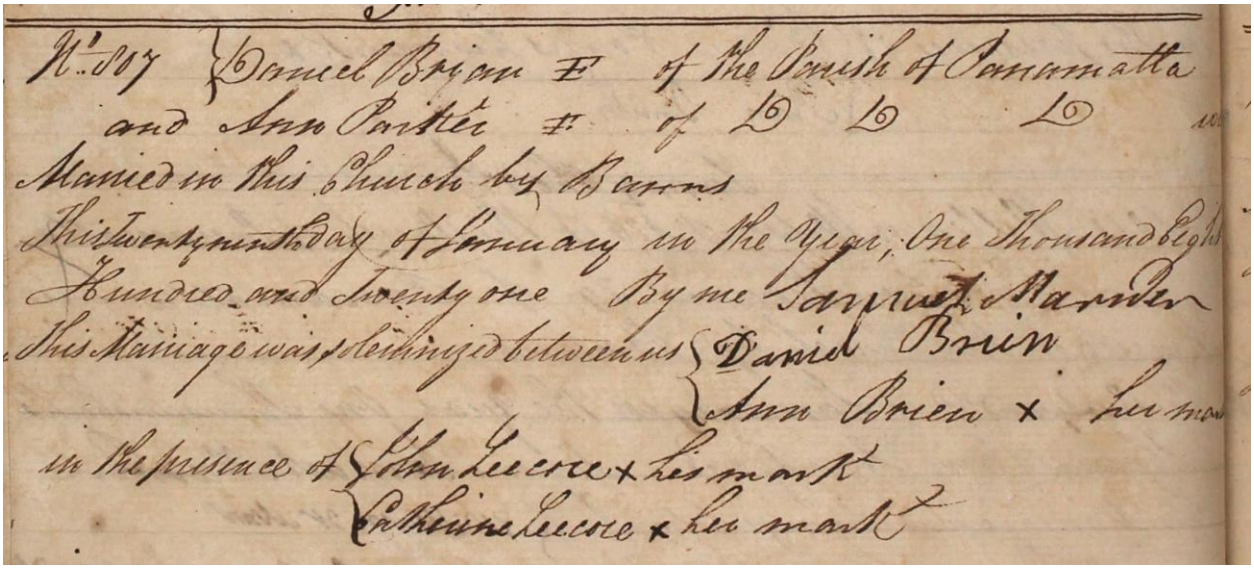
I speculate that prior to their Anglican marriage in Jan 1821, Daniel and Ann Parker had been married in a Catholic ceremony by father Therry, a Catholic priest who arrived in NSW in 1820.

For nearly 20 years before father Therry arrived, NSW had no Catholic priest, so father Therry had his work cut out for him.

Father Therry traveled around Sydney performing Catholic baptisms and marriages from 1820 onwards. Few records of these Catholic ceremonies survive as NSW was operating at this time under strict Anglican law where being Catholic was considered "Non-Conformist" and technically illegal. The date however fits perfectly and I propose that Ann was baptised a Catholic prior to her marriage to Daniel in a Catholic ceremony held sometime in 1820 or very early 1821. Around this time Ann changed her name to the more Catholic 'Mary Ann' a name she stuck with for the rest of her life.

Daniel Brien came from the most Catholic of families and I'm sure he knew very well what was expected from him as a descendant of the Viscount Clare. Once Daniel and Mary Ann had married as Catholics, Daniel would have looked at the practical aspects of life under English rule. Between 1754 and 1837 English law stipulated that a couple must marry in the Church of England in order for their marriage to be legal and their children to be considered legitimate, hence Daniel and Ann's marriage at St John's C of E church on 29th Jan 1821 was enacted to legitimise his family.

The record of their marriage in the church register can be seen below. Daniel Brien married Ann Parker at Parramatta in St Johns church by Rev Samuel Marsden. Daniel's name is spelt "Brian" by the church official, but Daniel signs his name "Daniel Brien". Ann placed a "X" next to her name. John and Catherine Leecore were witnesses.



Entry in the marriage register of St John's church Parramatta 29th Jan 1821
when Daniel Brien was married to Ann Parker by Rev Samuel Marsden.
Note: Daniel signed his name using the "Brien" spelling.

It is speculation, but perhaps using the 'Brien' spelling in lieu of 'Bryan' could have been a way for Daniel to distance himself from being permanently identified as a 'convict'. Many convicts changed their names to break links from their past. [441]



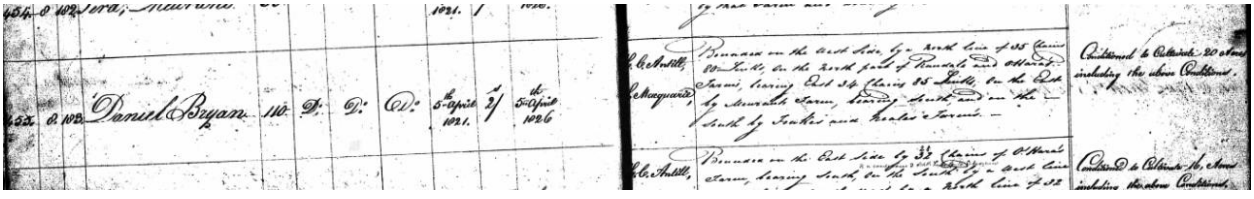
St John's church Parramatta. The oldest section of the building are the towers dating from 1817. [442]

Across from St John's church is the Parramatta Town Hall completed in 1883.

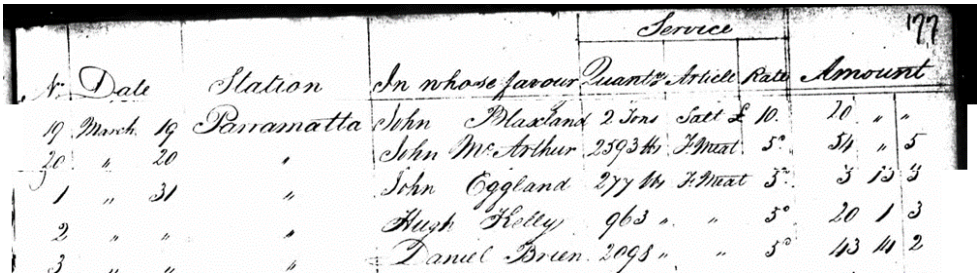
Between the two buildings was the Parramatta market place which today is a public garden, with some market stalls occasionally still operating.



On the 5th April 1821 Daniel received a land grant of 110 acres on the South side of Meurant's Lane. There is some suggestion that Daniel and Mary Ann may have been using this property since around 1810. Daniel named the farm on Meurant's Lane 'Exeter Farm' (after the prison in England where Mary Ann had been held) and some of the old buildings remain today in Heritage Pl Seven Hills. These are some of the oldest buildings in Western Sydney. [443]

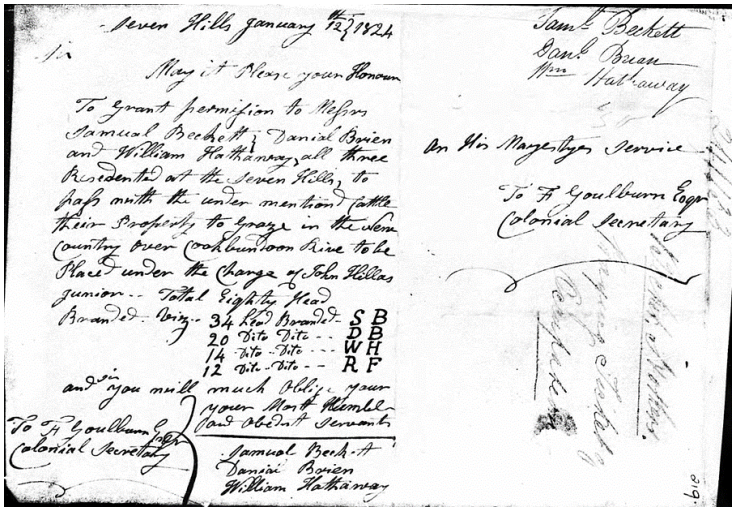


Daniel Bryan Land Grant 110 acres approved 5th April 1821



Nr.	Date	Station	In whose favour	Quantity	Article	Rate	Amount
			Service				177
19	March 19	Parramatta	John Blaxland	2 Tons	Salt	£ 10.	20 " "
20	" 20	"	John McArthur	2393 lbs	F. Meat	3d	34 " 5
1	" 31	"	John Eggland	277 lbs	F. Meat	3d	3 13 3
2	" "	"	Hugh Kelly	963 "	"	3d	20 1 3
3	" "	"	Daniel Brien	2093 "	"	3d	43 11 2

Government store receipts of for fresh meat supplied by Daniel Brien on the 24th May 1821



Seven Hills January 12th 1824

May it Please your Honour

To grant permission to Messrs Samuel Beckett, Daniel Brien and William Hathaway, all three Residents at the Seven Hills, to pass with the under mentioned Cattle their Property to graze in the New Country over Cookbundoon Range to be Placed under the Charge of John Hillas Junior -- Total Eighty Head Branded - Viz - 34 Head Branded S B
20 Ditto Ditto -- D B
14 Ditto Ditto -- W H
12 Ditto Ditto -- R F

and in you will much Oblige your your Most Humble and Obedt Servants

Samuel Beckett
Daniel Brien
William Hathaway

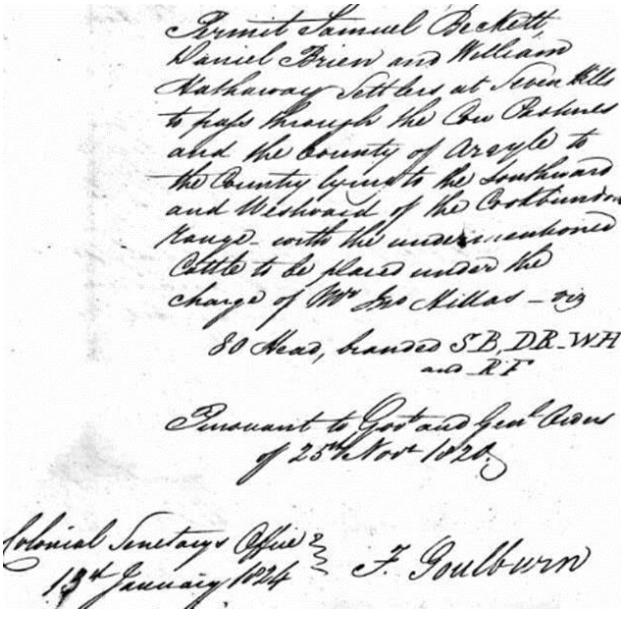
To F. Goulburn Esqr
Colonial Secretary

Saml Beckett
Danl Brian
Wm Hathaway

On His Majestys Service

To F. Goulburn Esqr
Colonial Secretary

On the 12th Jan 1824 Daniel signed a Petition requesting to be issued a ticket of occupation so as to graze cattle through the Cowpastures - and the next day received permission to do so.



Permit Samuel Beckett, Daniel Brien and William Hathaway Settlers at Seven Hills to pass through the Cow Pastures and the County of Argyle to the Country beyond to the Southward and Westward of the Cookbundoon Range with the undermentioned Cattle to be placed under the charge of Wm Jno Hillas - viz

80 Head, branded S B, D B, W H and R F

Pursuant to Govt and Genl Orders of 25th Novr 1824

Colonial Secretarys Office 13th January 1824

F. Goulburn

13th Jan 1824 Daniel Brien received permission to graze his cattle through the Cowpastures.

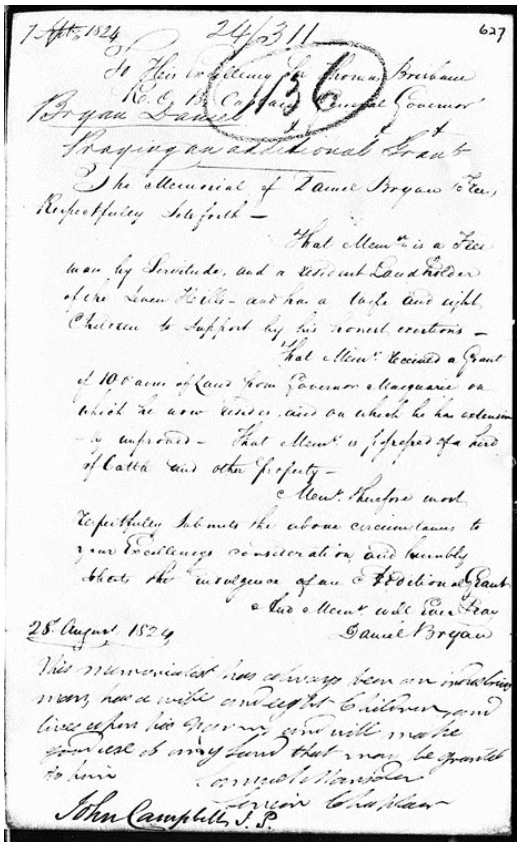
The early cattle brought to the Sydney settlement were most likely Afrikaners procured from South Africa by the First Fleet en route to Australia. This was a small herd, no one seems to know exactly how many (first fleet marine Watkin Tench mentions 5 cows and a bull) [444] but they strayed in June 1788 when their convict herdsman lost attention and slipped quietly off and found the Nepean River. They moved up-stream until they found the Camden Cowpastures where they stayed. Five hundred men searched for them but they weren't found until 1795, by which time their number had grown to sixty-one adults and calves. [445]

These cattle formed the basis of the government herd and many were later distributed to convict settlers and formed the basis of their herds. [446]

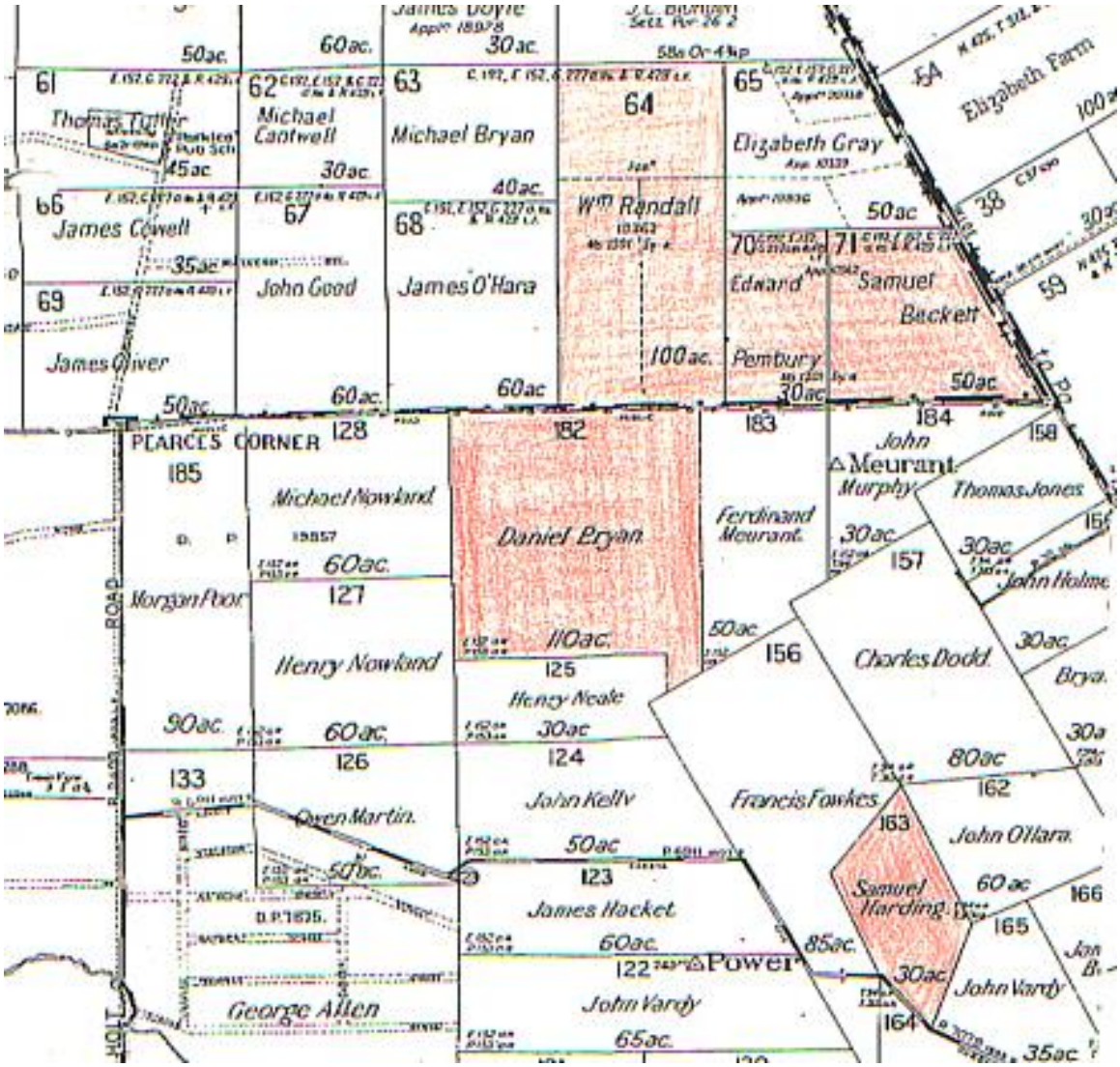


Afrikaners formed the basis of many settler herds [447]

On the 28th Aug 1824 Daniel Bryan sent a request to be considered for land grant which was supported by the Rev Samuel Marsden



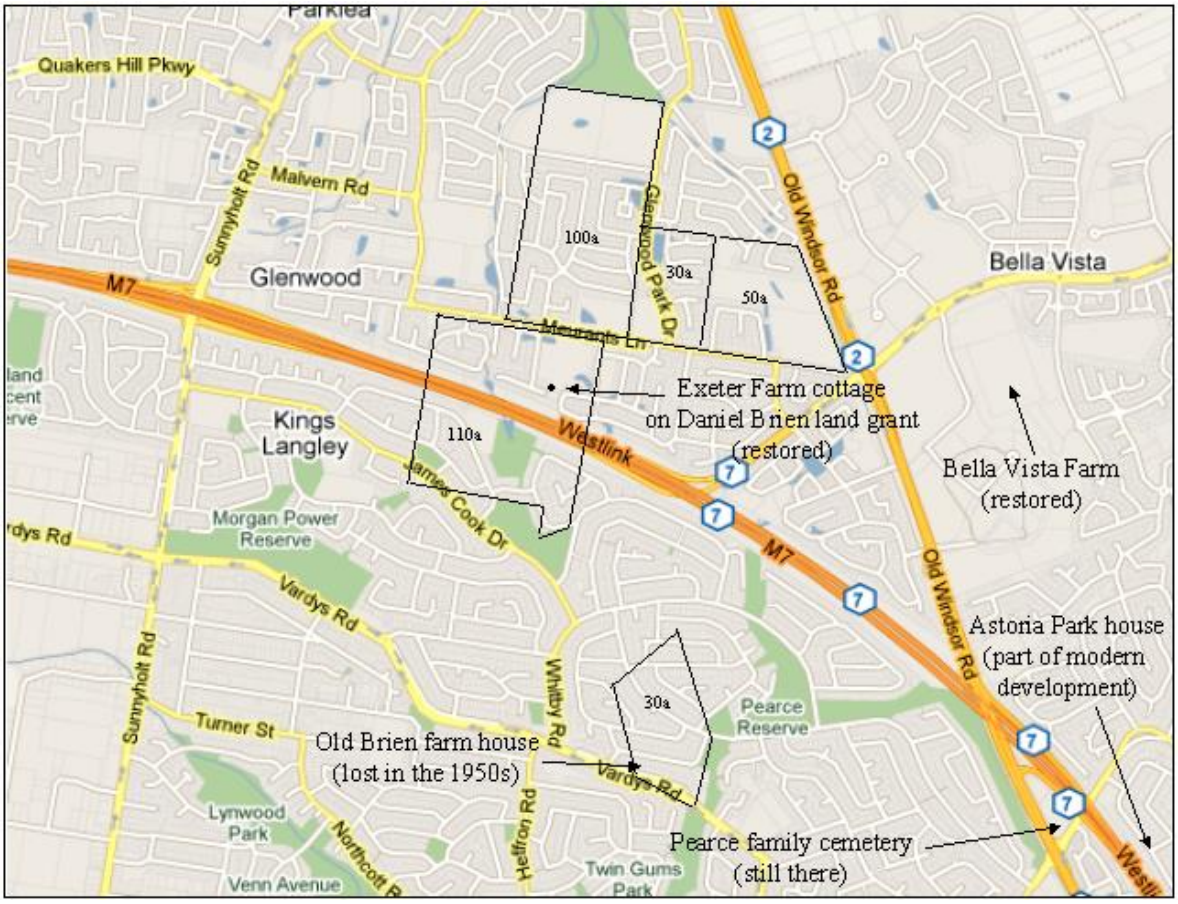
Daniel and Mary Ann ultimately owned 180 acres on the north side of Meurant's Lane and as well as the 140 acres on the South side. When Daniel died in 1837, he willed approx. 50 acres to each of his four sons. His wife Mary Ann was given the original 30 acres on Vardy's Road. There is no official record of Daniel Brien's death and unfortunately, we don't know where he was buried.



The above land division diagram dates from 1821. Daniel Brien's properties (highlighted).

The coloured properties on the above map show Daniel's but the names of the original grant holders are shown. Note the original land title for the 110 acres was listed under Daniel Bryan, the same name spelling Daniel's family used when living in London.

According to our distant cousin William Cahill, the name 'Exeter Farm' was given to the property by Daniel Brien as a tongue-in-cheek reference to Exeter prison where Ann Parker was held prior to her being transported to Sydney in 1807. [448] The name appears in the will of Peter Brien 1913. [449]



Today's map showing the outline of Daniel Brien's properties and related sites.

In 2010 a dilapidated house known as 'Exeter Farm' on the Daniel Bryan 110-acre property was restored. The house is believed to have been owned by Daniel's son John Robert Brien but there are suggestions that it could have been built as early as 1820 and therefore lived in by Daniel and Mary Ann Brien.



Historic houses trust sign at Exeter Farm in 2010

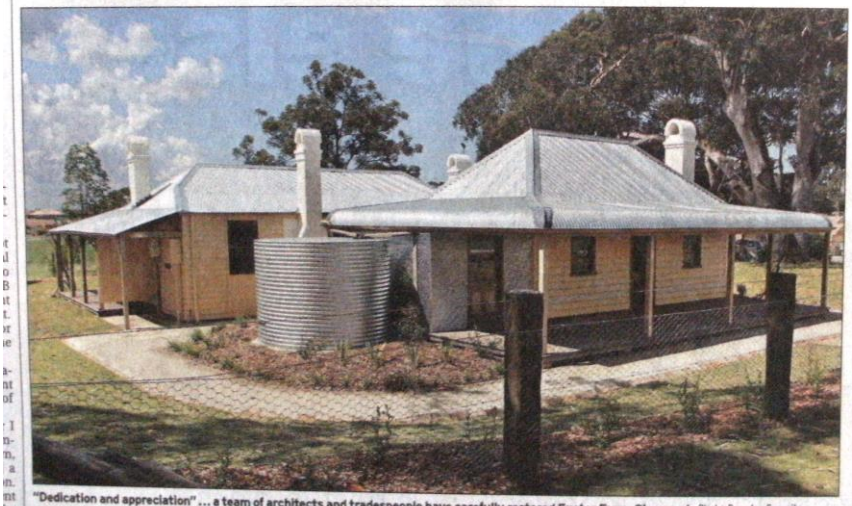


Exeter Farm before restoration in 2005



Exeter Farm after restoration in 2010

From the ground up, a new lease of life for historic homestead



"Dedication and appreciation" ... a team of architects and tradespeople have carefully restored Exeter Farm, Glenwood. Photo: Brendan Esposito

Kelsey Munro
URBAN AFFAIRS

"IMAGINE amputating a building at ankle level, raising it up a foot or more with hydraulic jacks, then putting a new structural system beneath while holding it in the air, then putting it down again," says the architect Richard Silink.

That was how a group of conservation architects, specialist builders and tradespeople set about restoring Exeter Farm, a timber-slab homestead in Glenwood, near Blacktown, that dates back at least to the 1850s.

Vacant for more than half a century, the state heritage-listed farmhouse fell into deep disrepair. Its timber footings were rotten and riddled with termites, and the two buildings had partially sunk into the soft ground.

"It was a modest little settler's outpost on the north-western outskirts of the city and it sat quite happily in the rural landscape for many years," Mr Silink said. "Then the suburbs caught up with it, and we almost lost this remnant of the rural past."

The remarkable resurrection of Exeter Farm was funded by the NSW Historic Houses Trust's Endangered Houses Fund. The fund buys and restores derelict houses of historical value, then sells them to private owners with conditions that they will open the property to the public on a regular basis.

Mr Silink, who manages the fund, will not say exactly how much the work cost ("a lot!"), or what the house will sell for. But it was the sort of fixer-upper that regular private buyers would have run a mile from, Mr Silink said, requiring expert knowledge of historical construction techniques and a real investment in heritage.

Work started in 2008, and the last licks of paint were applied on Friday. One tradesman meticulously reassembled a door that had been virtually reduced to kindling. "That's the sort of approach you need from the builder in this sort of program – a dedication and appreciation of what they're working on," Mr Silink said.

The building was open to the public for the first time since its restoration on Saturday, and will be on the market in coming months.

Above is an article from the SMH paper describing the restoration of Exeter Farm.

In June 2012 the Exeter Farm restoration won the Heritage Greenway award. The Office of Environment and Heritage describes Exeter Farm as follows:

"Exeter Farm is a place of exceptional cultural significance at both local and state levels. It comprises a pair of rare, substantially intact and faithfully conserved, early 19th century timber slab cottages within the remnants of its original landscape and setting. This setting includes mature trees and other planting, remnant farm structures, original entry drive and remnant farm fencing. It retains evidence of its approximately 150 years of rural use, including some archaeological evidence. The extended curtilage of this item ensures a buffer between the item and nearby real estate development and reinstates and protects some of the landscape setting and significant views to and from the item. Exeter Farm dates from the first European settlement of the area and associations with the seminal years of agricultural development in New South Wales. The settlement of Exeter Farm is dated from the Macquarie land grant to Daniel Brien of 1821.

The cottages are rare in a metropolitan setting and substantially intact examples of vernacular timber slab construction, with evidence of an unusually sophisticated level of construction and finish. Their form and small scale is representative of cottages erected from the 1790s to the end of the Macquarie period and to a lesser extent to the 1840s.

This form and construction of cottage, once common in the areas of early European rural settlement, is now extremely rare. These are the only surviving examples of their type in the Blacktown Municipality and one of a few in a densely populated metropolitan area in NSW. Recent conservation works have indicated the construction of the cottages dates from around the 1850s but were constructed utilising techniques employed in the construction of utilitarian timber farm building from the 1790s to the mid to late years of the 19th Century." [450]

On the 27th December 1832 Daniel Brien wrote out his will, a copy of which is reproduced below:

Will of Daniel Brien 27th December 1832.

An office copy of the Probate file of Daniel Brien Senior, filed in the Probate Division of the Supreme Court of New South Wales, reads as follows:

"Daniel Brien) The last Will and Testament of Daniel Brien :
"I Daniel Brien Landowner of the district of Gidley in the Territory of New South Wales being at this present of sound dispo Mind, Memory and understanding knowing the uncertainty of Life do make this my last Will and Testament in manner and form following that is to say - I Bequeath my soul into the hands of Almighty Go humbly trusting that he will have Mercy on me thro' the atoning merits of Our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ and my body I give to Dust to be Interred at the discretion of my Executrix hereinafter named, and my worldly goods I dispose off as follows - viz - I gi devise and Bequeath unto my beloved wife, Mary Ann Brien the whol and Sole of my real and personal Estate of whatsoever nature and the same may be together with all Debts that may be due and owing me at the time of my decease to be enjoyed by her for and during natural life Subject to such limitations and restrictions as shall be herein hereafter mentioned and expressed and after the Decease my wife Mary Ann Brien - I give devise and bequeath the farms, La and appurtenances as are hereinafter mentioned and described as follows, viz To my eldest Son Timothy Brien I give devise and Bequeath the farm and Land on which I now reside purchased by me from Wm. Randall and known by the name of Randalls farm together Dwelling House and all other buildings now errected or that shall errected thereon with all appurtenances whatsoever on the conditic following, which are hereby solemnly enjoined and to be as strictl fulfilled (namely) that should my wife Mary Ann Brien die during t infancy of any of our children or before they are capable of providing for themselves then in that case my eldest son Timothy Brien on taking possession of the Land and premises hereby bequea shall pay or enter into proper security to pay such a reasonable of money for and towards the maintenance of such helpless child o children as may be considered just and equitable by two persons o of whom to be nominated by the Will of his Mother and the other chosen by himself - To my second son Daniel Brien I give devise a bequeath the farm and Land purchased by me from Samuel Beckett known by the name of Beckettsfarm containing 50 acres more or but as I am now about to bind my said Son Daniel Brien to a tr Business which he may hereafter find more lucrative and profit than agriculture and thereby be induced to sell Mortgage or o dispose of the Land hereby bequeathed to him now I do hereby enjoin and solemnly charge my said Son Daniel Brien not in a to sell or dispose of the said Land without first giving his Timothy the preference of becoming the purchaser of the said such a valuation as shall not only be equitable in the transf property between Man and Man, but as shall mark the affection Brothers consulting each others welfare and prosperity and wh hereby in the most solemn manner enjoin to live in peace and u To my third son John Robert Brien - I give devise and bequeath

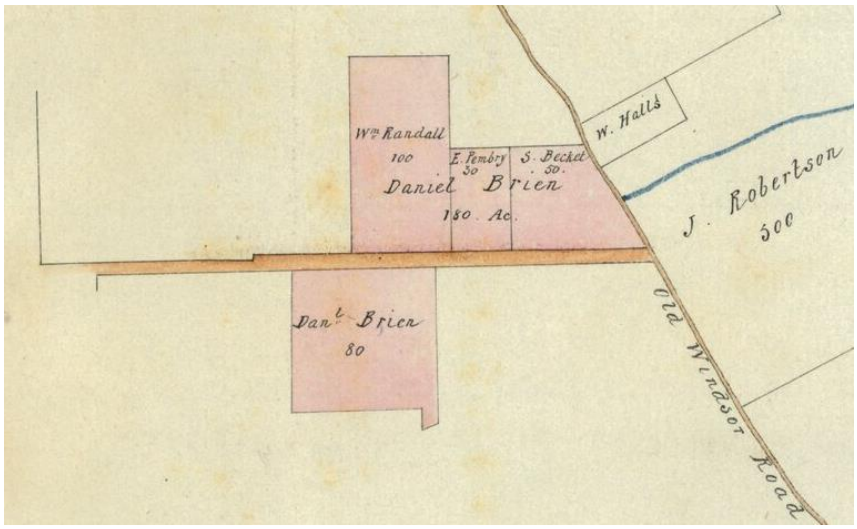
hundred and ten acres of Land, being a grant to me from Governm and commonly called or known by the name of the Eighty Acres - my fourth Son James Brien I give devise and bequeath Thirty acr of Land purchased by me from Edward Pembury, and known by the n of Pembury's farm, together with the appurtenances, And in case two sons John Robert and James Brien should hereafter follow an trade or Calling other than agriculture, and thereby be induced sell or dispose of the Lands hereby respectively Devised and bequeathed to them, then I will and direct that as in the case o my second Son Daniel, so shall they; give unto their Brother Timothy the first offer, or preference of becoming the purchaser the Lands hereby bequeathed to them, And in case either of my So above named should die unmarried or without children during the life of my wife Mary Ann Brien then I will and direct that the L hereby devised to such son or sons as may decease during the lif time of their Mother shall become her absolute property with pow to give devise and bequeath the same at her death to whomsoever shall think. And whereas my wife Mary Ann Brien may be induced alter her condition of widowhood and again to reenter the marrie state now altho I have the most perfect confidence in and reliam on her Maternal affection for our children yet in order to confi and secure to herself and to our children after her decease the Lands and properties hereby devised and bequeathed - I further Di and direct that altho I have and do hereby give and Bequeath unto my wife Mary Ann Brien the Lands and properties above mentioned f her sole use and benefit during her life yet the same must and shall descend unimpaired and unincumbered to our sons respectivel above named and in the order I have hereby devised and bequeathed at her decease nor shall the said Lands or premises become in any manner or way whatsoever responsible in Law or Equity for any deb Bonds Mortgages Actions or judgments for or by reason of any secc marriage or marriages my said wife may contract but that the same shall remain to her sole use and benefit during life and at her death to our sons respectively as aforesaid And also I being possessed of Ten acres of Land being a purchase by me of part and parcel of Hardings farm Do hereby Devise and Bequeath the same to my wife Mary Ann Brien and subect to her entire control and disposal - And I do hereby nominate and appoint Mr. Mathew Pearce to be joint Executor with my wife in order to the carrying into effect this my last Will and Testament according to the full inte: and purposes above clearly made known and specified - And I do hereby revoke cancel and annul all other Will or Wills Codicil or Codicils heretofore made by me declaring this to be my last Will and Testament -.- Daniel Brien (L.S.) Signed Sealed and delivere and declared to be the last Will and Testament of Daniel Brien Sen in the presence of - Matthew Pearce William Pearce - James Smith Duly Signed this 27 day of December 1832. C. L. Bridges Clerk -- Probate granted 5th March 1838 to Ann Brien and Matthew Pearce the Executrix and Executors Dated the 12th instant ----"

Beckett's farm of 50 acres, which was bequeathed to Daniel Brien, Junior, was the north-western corner of the Old Windsor Road and Mourant's Lane, being the south-eastern corner of the Parish of Gidley, and it adjoined Pembury's farm. Samuel Beckett was killed as a young man in a fall from a horse and, as he and Daniel Brien had been engaged in joint cattle enterprises, the acquisition by Daniel Brien of this land would not have been unlikely.

And Daniel did sell Beckett's farm to his brother, Timothy, for £200 on 3rd November, 1859.

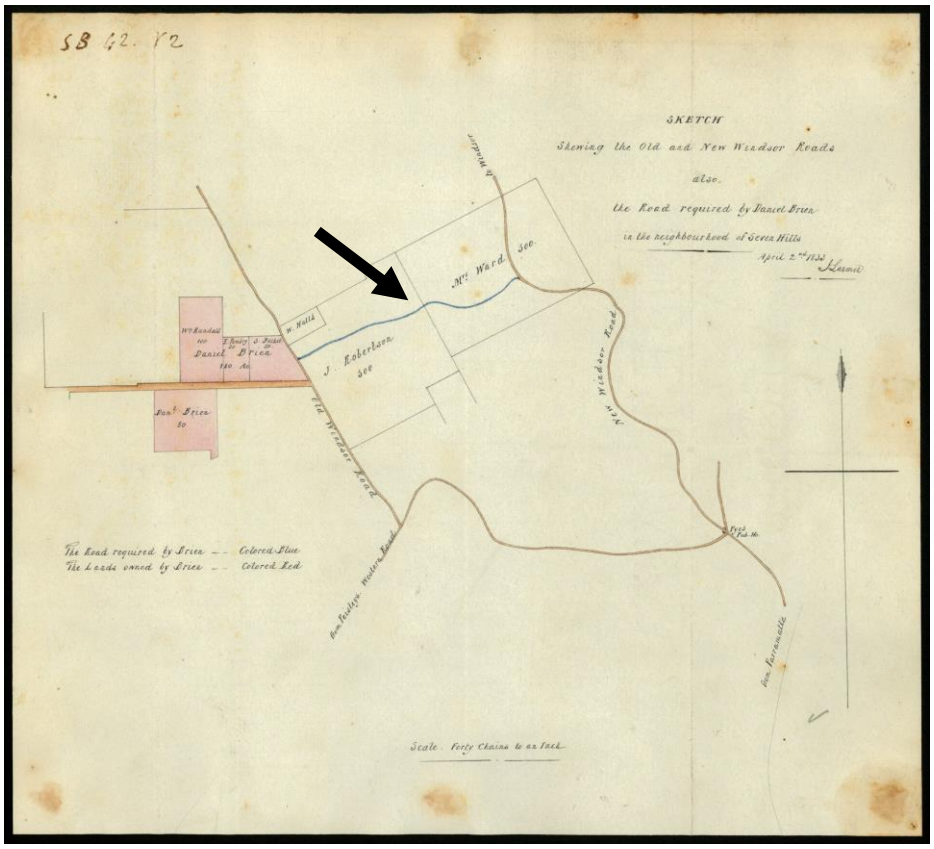
Seven Hills road proposal

A document survives dated the 22nd April 1833 describing a request from Daniel Brien for a road to be built between the Old and New Windsor roads – the road was never constructed.



Close up of the map showing Daniel Brien's properties on the corner of Old Windsor Road and Meurants Lane.

22nd April 1833



Copy of the submission from Daniel Brien for a road (shown in blue with an arrow) to be built between the Old and New Windsor roads.

22nd April 1833

Daniel Brien died in 1837. We only know this because his probate was approved in that year. He was most likely buried at St John's cemetery Parramatta, but as there is no surviving record, we cannot be sure of that.

Mary Ann Parker after 1837

After Daniel Brien died in 1837, his wife Mary Ann married Bill Smith, one of the farm hands that had worked on Daniel Brien's property.

Mary Ann died in 1865 after falling into a fire, in suspicious circumstances aged 76. Her husband Bill Smith was charged with her murder but later acquitted.

Below is an article from the SMH dated 14th Nov 1865 describing the inquest held into Mary Ann's death. A number of Daniel and Mary Ann's children were interviewed at the inquest and the article describes their various testimonies.

Those mentioned in the article include Timothy, John, Daniel (junior – our ancestor) and his son Daniel, Mary Ann (Pearce), Elizabeth (James) and Eleanor (but is attributed the name Elizabeth Howard).

Mary Ann Parker is buried at St John's cemetery Parramatta under the name Ann Smith. Her grave stone is facing upwards and is located to the left of the path as you enter the cemetery, about ten meters from the O'Connell St entrance.



Mary Ann Brien's grave at St John's cemetery Parramatta. The name on the grave is Ann Smith.

PARRAMATTA.

[FROM OUR CORRESPONDENT.]

CHARGE OF MURDER.

BEFORE Messrs. Holroyd, N. Stewart, Gibbons, and G. Langley, J.P.'s

William Henry Smith, of Seven Hills, farmer, appeared on Saturday, on summons, to answer the charge of having, on the 13th July last, murdered one Mary Ann Smith, his wife.

The death of Mrs. Smith, which resulted from injuries received from burning, was the subject of a magisterial inquiry in July last before Mr. M'Crae, J.P., acting for the Coroner.

John Kelly, sergeant of police, deposed: He served the prisoner with the summons to appear to answer this charge, at his residence; after being cautioned, prisoner said, "Who has done this?" Witness answered, "The Crown." Prisoner shook his head, and said, "No, it's some of Jack Brien's doings." Witness then said to defendant, "Will you show me the fireplace where Mrs. Smith was burnt?" He said, "Yes," and brought witness into the front room, and shewed him the fireplace; witness measured it and found it to be four feet wide, about three feet nine inches high, and three feet in depth, with a brick chimney. There were two iron dogs standing in the fireplace about twenty inches in height; witness asked the prisoner was the fender there on the night Mrs. Smith was burnt; prisoner said, "Yes, as it is now;" one yard from the fireplace there was a sofa, the end of which was towards the fireplace; prisoner said, "about 10 o'clock, as I was going to bed, the night Mrs. Smith was burned, a woman named White was lying on the sofa, and Mrs. Smith was talking to her; I was the worse for drink, and knew nothing that occurred until John Brien knocked at the door the following morning;" the cover that was on the sofa was burned that night; prisoner said he could not show the sofa cover; it was taken away with other things to get washed; witness found three holes burnt in the tick; prisoner showed where he slept in a room opposite—there being a passage between the rooms; he said his bedroom door was closed that night; the distance from his bed to the fireplace in the parlour was about seven yards; there were slight doors between, with apertures between the door and doorcase; prisoner said in answer to a question, that he heard no noise or screams on the night in question; he pointed out a bed in a small back room as the place where he first saw deceased in the morning; the room had a slight partition between it and his bedroom; prisoner said he had supper when he went home; his wife was sober; when witness served the summons there were three females in the house.

John Brien, farmer, Baulkham Hills, deposed: I know the prisoner, and knew the deceased Mrs. Smith; she was my mother; prisoner lived at Seven Hills, about seven miles from Parramatta, and four from my place; I last saw deceased before she was burnt, about two or three days; before I saw her again on the morning after she was burnt I called—not knowing that she had been burnt—as I fre-

quently did on my way to the farm, between 8 and 9 in the morning on the 13th July; I kicked at the back door, which was barred inside; it struck me as singular that the house was shut up at such a late hour; it was unusual; in about two minutes Smith unbarred it; he was dressed in his shirt and trousers; I asked him, "How is mother?" he said, "all right;" I went in and unlocked the front door, and saw burnt rags in the hall, part of an old gown she used to wear; there was a bundle of burnt rags on the grass out in front like flannel; I said, "Where is mother?" he said, "In bed;" I went into the front bedroom, where she ought to have been, and found she was not there; I then went into the back bedroom, and found my mother rolled up in a blanket in bed; before I went in, I said, "Oh, my God, mother's burnt to death wherever she is;" prisoner said nothing when I went into the back room; he was in the hall; I said to mother, "How did you get burnt?" she said she was standing by the fire and her clothes caught fire; I pulled part of the blanket from her shoulder, and found her fearfully burnt; I went out and found Smith; I said to him, "Smith, you've burnt mother to death—you'll get into trouble through it;" he said, "We'll see all about that;" I went out and called my boy, to get a man to gallop over to Mrs. Matthew Pearce, who lived two miles away, to come, and also to send for a doctor; I spoke again to my mother, and asked her to tell me how she got burnt; she said "Smith shoved me right into the fire;" prisoner was in the house but I don't know whether he could hear; I told him what my mother said; he said, again, "We'll see about it;" I saw no one else there; my mother was 72 or 74 years of age; she was streng and active; she used to take a glass; I have seen her frequently under the influence of liquor during the latter part of her life; they kept liquor in the house; Mrs. M. Pearce afterwards came, and was followed by Dr. Rutter; deceased was sick, but did not appear to be in pain; she died about three in the morning; I recollect making a deposition before Mr. M'Crae, J.P., who held a magisterial inquiry; the reason why I made no mention of what my mother said as I have now stated was, that I did not want to get Smith into trouble; prisoner was half drunk when he came to the door in the morning, he seemed to be deranged, but knew what I said; Mrs. Pearce sent over for Mrs. White, I told her she would get into trouble about it; I don't know what she said in reply; Mrs. Pearce asked her how it occurred; I don't know what else passed; there were appearances of a fire in the parlour, the dogs were as widely opened as they could be, the fender was in its place; pushing a person over the fire would move the dogs; the fender was two feet away, and it was a deep fire-place; I don't think it was possible for her clothes to have caught fire; she never wore crinoline; prisoner and deceased were sometimes on good terms and sometimes the contrary.

Mary Ann Pearce, wife of Matthew Pearce, of Seven Hills, deposed: I was sent for on the 13th of July to see Mrs. Smith; I found her lying on the bed in the back-room; I examined her a little and saw that she was dreadfully burnt; prisoned was either in the room or near the room door; I asked deceased how she got burnt; she said she was standing with her back to the fire, talking to Mr. Smith, and he pushed her, and she fell back into the fire;

I asked her how she got her clothes off; she said she got them off herself; I can't say whether prisoner was then within hearing; I asked prisoner how it happened he said he did not know anything about it; I saw remains of burnt clothing in front of the house and in the passage; there were no burns on the front part of deceased, except a spot on her right breast; the burns were confined to her back and sides up to the shoulders; her hair was not burnt; there was no trace of fire on prisoner's clothes; when I went there, a person named Mrs. White was not there; she did not live there; I took away the remainder of the burnt clothing to wash, and had them destroyed as useless, except the portions of the flannel petticoat; prisoner told me he had been into Parramatta the day before, and had been indulging in liquor, and did not get home till sundown; deceased was generally sober; she sometimes indulged; she was feeble; I never knew prisoner speak angrily to deceased; she would sometimes to him; she walked latterly with a stick; when I went to the house in the morning, prisoner seemed to be sober; prisoner was in and out of the room during the day, and asked deceased if she would have a drink; he said to her, "I can't remember kow it happened, but I'm very sorry to see you in the state you are."

Timothy Brien deposed: I am son of the deceased; I went to prisoner's house on the 13th, after my mother was burnt, and saw her, and looked partially at the injuries she had received; I saw prisoner, and asked him how it occurred; he said he couldn't tell at all; between 10 and 11 o'clock at night, I asked deceased how it happened; she said, Smith shoved her into the fire, but whether he did so wilfully or not she couldn't say; I don't think I mentioned to prisoner what deceased said; I was not satisfied with the inquest held, and I don't believe any of the family was.

Daniel Brien, junior, deposed: I went with last witness, and saw deceased between 10 and 11 p.m.; I heard the previous witness ask deceased how it occurred; she said Smith pushed her into the fire, but she did not know whether he did it wilfully or not; while she was speaking prisoner, who was standing near the door, came to the door with his hands together raised up, saying "For God's sake, Granny, tell the truth;" she said I will.

Daniel Brien, senior, son of deceased, deposed to having, about 12 o'clock, gone to his mother, and begged of her particularly to tell how it happened; Mrs. W. Pearce was in the room, and he (witness) saw the prisoner standing beside him; deceased said "Smith put me on the fire," and looking at prisoner she further said "Yes you did, and you know it;" prisoner then left the room and witness followed him and said, "Smith, you know something about this then;" prisoner said, "By —— I don't."

Eliza Pearce, widow of William Pearce, deposed to being present when the last witness questioned the deceased as to how it occurred; deceased said she was scolding Smith and that he gave her a push; prisoner was not present; she did not think he was near the room; witness's back was to the door; did not recollect a fire being mentioned.

Elizabeth James, another married daughter of the deceased, deposed: I saw the deceased, my mother, about 4 o'clock on the day in question; I heard my brother Timothy Brien question deceased; deceased said, "I must tell the truth; Smith fetched

old mother White home with him, and was talking about her, and she told him he ought to be ashamed of himself talking so, and that he then shoved her into the fire;" Smith was in the room a few moments before, but I don't know whether he was then.

Elizabeth Howard, wife of David Howard, and daughter of deceased, deposed to asking her about what had happened, and deceased said she was standing by the fire with Mr. Smith, and he gave her a push, and she fell in the fire; prisoner said he knew nothing about it; witness did not tell him what deceased had said.

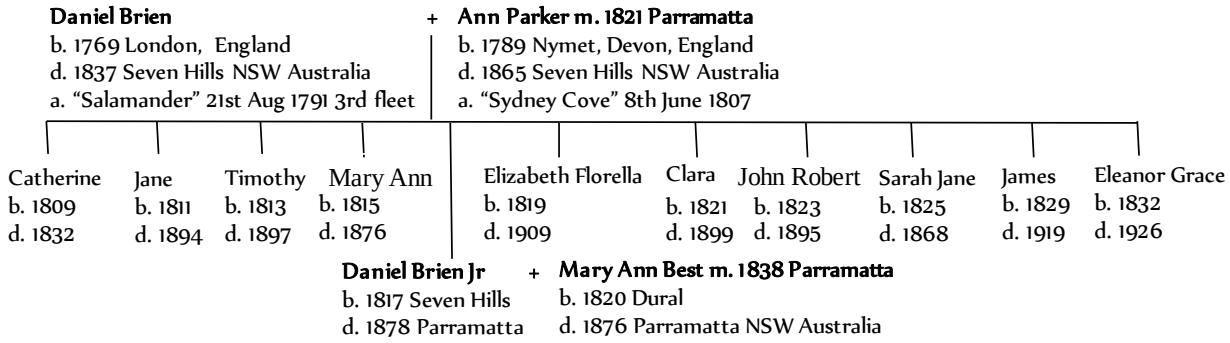
Dr. Rutter deposed to the nature and extent of the injuries, death resulting from the shock of the burning on her nervous system supervening upon a broken-down constitution; deceased was sensible; he asked deceased how it happened, and she said she did not know; prisoner appeared to be partially under the influence of drink.

Alice White, wife of John White, deposed: she was in Parramatta on the day previous to the 13th July; she returned with the prisoner to his house, between five and six in the evening; she had two tumblerfuls of ginger wine made hot in Parramatta, and was not sober; when she got to Smith's, she sat on the sofa in the parlour, and remained there all night; she went away at break of day; she had no supper at Smith's that night; saw burnt clothes about in the morning, in the passage and at the front; the front door was open when she went out; there was a slipper outside with the heel turned down; a white handkerchief, half-burnt and a loose bundle of burnt clothes; there were two steps from the front door to the ground; one on to the verandah and another below; when she left she did not see either Mr. or Mrs. Smith; she slept in her clothes that night, and slept very sound; nothing could wake her; produced the jacket she wore that night; there was a mark of a burn in the front of it which was not there before; she found it when she took the jacket off; she did not know how it came there; she heard no scuffling or screams in the room that night; she thought there were a few words between deceased and the prisoner just as she lay down; there were some sharp words; this was a few minutes after she came in; witness did not know whether there was a fire or a light in the room; she did not throw or push the deceased upon the fire.

Prisoner, after caution in the usual manner, said, "I am perfectly innocent." He was committed to take his trial for the wilful murder of Mary Ann Smith, at the next sessions of the Criminal Court, Darlinghurst. Bail refused.

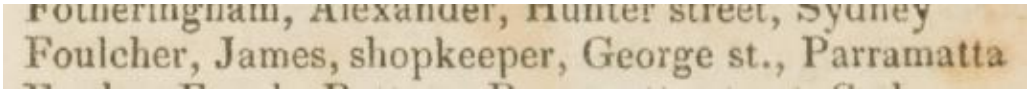
Inquest into death of Mary Ann Parker. SMH Tuesday 14th Nov 1865

The children of Daniel Brien and Ann Parker



Here is a summary of each of Daniel and Mary Ann Brien's children, from eldest to youngest; this generation are known colloquially as the 'currency generation'.

Catherine Brien was born in 1809. She married James Foulcher who became the publican of the "Native Companion" hotel in George Street, Parramatta. James is listed in the 1839 Post Office Directory as being a shop keeper in George St Parramatta..


Foulcher, James, shopkeeper, George st., Parramatta

James Foulcher was born in 1802 at Parramatta, he was the son of convicts Robert Foulcher (a blacksmith) and his wife Elizabeth Hutchins. Robert had arrived as a convict aboard the 'Albemarle' in 1791 and Elizabeth also a convict arrived aboard the 'Indispensible' in 1795.

James and Catherine Foulcher had two daughters Sarah Jane Foulcher, 1827–1849 (died aged 22 years), Susannah Foulcher, 1831–1852 (died aged 20 years) and a son who died young Henry James Foulcher, 1829–1834 (aged 4 years).

Catherine died aged 23 on the 11th December 1832 at Parramatta and is buried at St John's Parramatta in the Foulcher family plot: [451]

Sacred to the memory of
ROBERT FOULCHER
who died July 6th 1838
aged 77 years
ELIZABETH FOULCHER
who died July 10th 1848
aged 60 years

CATHERINE FOULCHER
wife of JAMES FOULCHER
who died Dec 11th 1832
aged 23 years
ANN FOULCHER
who died 12th June 1833
aged 68 years

Jane Brien was born in 1811. Jane was the third wife of Paul Huon whom she married on 5th July 1831 at Campbelltown.

Paul was the eldest son of Seigneur (Sir) Gabriel Louis Marie Huon de Kerilliau, described as a French noble from Brittany who had fled France in 1789, during the French Revolution with others of the Bourbon family to England when Napoleon dispersed and deported all relatives of the reigning dynasty in France.

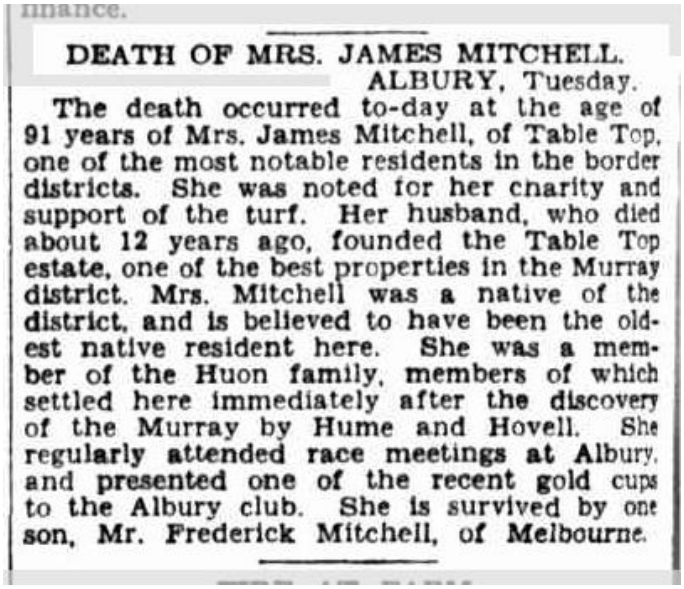
Gabriel Huon de Kerilleau was given a captaincy by the British Government, and sent to Sydney in the New South Wales Corps (102nd Regiment) arriving in 1794. He later was a tutor to the family of John Macarthur. [452]

Gabriel had an Uncle & Aunt with a Baronary de Penmarch and another uncle was le Compte du Rusquec with his Aunt marrying into this line. Both families had two daughters who married Counts. [453]

Paul and Jane lived in the Campbelltown area for some years before moving to Victoria. Paul and Jane, together with Paul's brother Charles were among the pioneers of the Wodonga District, setting up 'Wodonga run' in 1836. The town of Wodonga in Vic is named after their property.

Jane Huon (née Brien) died at Wodonga on the 7th April 1894.

Jane Brien and Paul Huon had a daughter named Sarah Jane Huon. Sarah married James Mitchell and they established 'Table Top' Estate just outside Albury. Sarah was very involved in the community right up to her death in 1932. This article from the SMH was published just after her death.



DEATH OF MRS. JAMES MITCHELL.

ALBURY, Tuesday.

The death occurred to-day at the age of 91 years of Mrs. James Mitchell, of Table Top, one of the most notable residents in the border districts. She was noted for her charity and support of the turf. Her husband, who died about 12 years ago, founded the Table Top estate, one of the best properties in the Murray district. Mrs. Mitchell was a native of the district, and is believed to have been the oldest native resident here. She was a member of the Huon family, members of which settled here immediately after the discovery of the Murray by Hume and Hovell. She regularly attended race meetings at Albury, and presented one of the recent gold cups to the Albury club. She is survived by one son, Mr. Frederick Mitchell, of Melbourne.

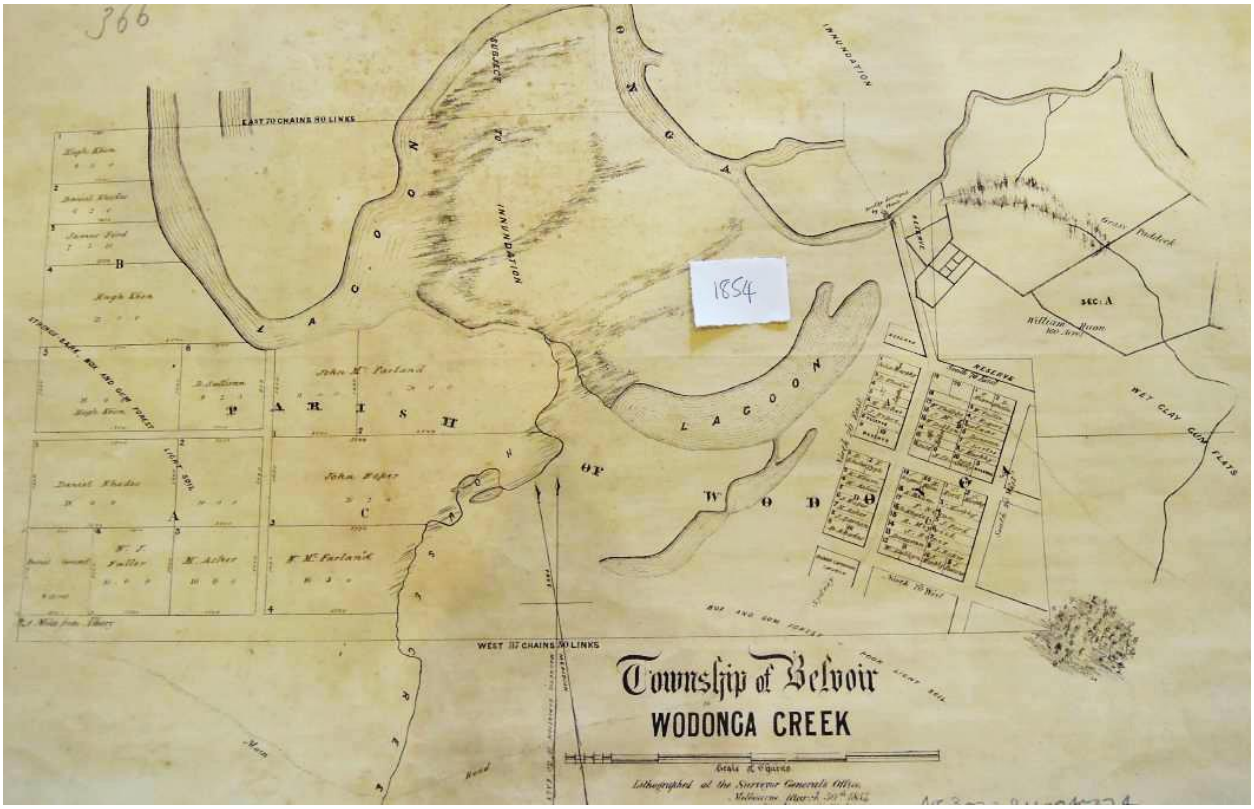
SMH Wednesday 2nd March 1932

LATE MR. JAMES MITCHELL.

ESTATE VALUED AT £143,229.

The estate of the late Mr. James Mitchell, of Table Top, near Albury, grazier, has been valued at £143,229. Testator, who died in April last, appointed as his executors and trustees his son-in-law, Mr. James Stephen, Albury, bank manager, and his sons, Messrs. Frederick Jas. Mitchell, Table Top, grazier, and Herbert Francis Mitchell, Mullengandra, grazier. To his wife, Sarah Jane Mitchell, he bequeathed, in addition to his household effects, carriage and horses, £300 for her immediate use, an annuity of £500 for life and the use of dwelling house at Table Top, free from all expenses of upkeep, rates and taxes. In the event of her not deciding to reside at Table Top, the annuity was to be increased to £1000. The trustees were directed to invest the sum of £12,500 for this purpose, and, should his wife reside elsewhere than at Table Top, the sum of £25,000 was to be invested to meet her annuity. At her death the sum invested was to become part of the residuary estate. A sum of £2000 was devised to the Bishop of Goulburn for the benefit of aged clergymen of the Church of England of Goulburn, and the trustees were directed to invest the sum of £4000, and pay income arising therefrom to the rector and curate for the time being of St. Matthew's Church, Albury, namely, three-fourths of the income to the rector, and the remaining one-fourth to the curate, to augment their present stipends. There was a direction empowering the trustees to keep the £4000 and investments and income under their control, unless they considered it would be better to pay £4000 over to any permanent body of trustees connected with the Church of England to be administered. The trustees were further empowered to postpone the setting apart of the £4000, and until such setting apart to pay the rector and curate in the proportions mentioned out of the general funds of the estate an income equal to 5 per cent. of the amount referred to. To Elenor J. Brown, manager of Table Top, testator bequeathed £500. He left £500 to Albury Public Hospital; £25 to Newtown Orphanage, near Albury; £50 to the Salvation Army at Albury, for the relief of cases of distress in Albury; £25 each to the Churches of England at Mullengandra, Thurgoona and Bowna, in Albury district; £10 to each of his employes who had been in his service two years prior to his death, and £5 to each of his employes less than that period. A certain sum was directed to be invested for the benefit of testator's grandsons, John Mitchell Hore and Douglas Keith Hore. To his grandson, Eric Huon Hore, he left his share in the estate near Germanton known as Good Hope. Sums of £1000 were bequeathed to each of certain grandchildren, and £4000 was left to his grandson, Reginald Mitchell Hore. Testator bequeathed the residue of his real and personal estate to his trustees upon trust for his sons and daughters in equal shares. He revoked by codicil a bequest to Albury Hospital, declaring that since making his will he had given to that institution moneys which exceeded the amount of the bequest.

Upper Murray and Mitta Herald Thursday 4 June 1914



Map of early Wodonga township

Timothy Brien was born in 1813. He married Charlotte Gilbert in 1833. Charlotte died in 1862 and Timothy married Ann Cole in 1867. Timothy was a publican at the 'Plough Inn' in Phillip Street, Parramatta, at the time of their marriage. [454] The 1839 Post Office Directory lists Timothy as residing in Phillip St Parramatta under the name 'Timothy Briant'.


Briant, Timothy, Philip street, Parramatta

In 1841 Timothy applied for a publican license for a hotel he wanted to call 'The Currency Lass'. On the death of his father, he succeeded to the 100-acre Randall's farm at Seven Hills and also bought further property in that area. Later in life he became a fruit grower at Seven Hills.

Timothy is buried at St Paul's Church of England cemetery Castle Hill.

Timothy's eldest son Samuel Best b.1836 d. 1837, is buried at St Johns Parramatta and is marked by a substantial monument.



Timothy Brien and Anne Cole

Upon Timothy Brien's death on the 15th January 1897, the "Cumberland Argus" published his obituary dated the 16th January 1897, which read as follows –

"It is with deep regret that we have to record the fact that on yesterday (Friday) morning another of the district's well-known identities passed away. We refer to the death of Mr. Timothy Brien of Seven Hills. The old gentleman has been ailing for a long time and his illness occasioned much concern among a wide circle of friends and has been referred to in the 'Argus'. Mr. Brien had reached the advanced age of 83 years and lately his health was breaking up fast. The funeral is arranged for 2 o'clock this afternoon and will move to Castle Hill Church of England Cemetery." (Ref: Cumberland Argus and Fruit Growers Advocate, 16th January, 1897)."

Timothy Brien (1813-1897) and Anne Cole (1813-1895) – gravestone at St Paul's Castle Hill Church of England Cemetery. [455]



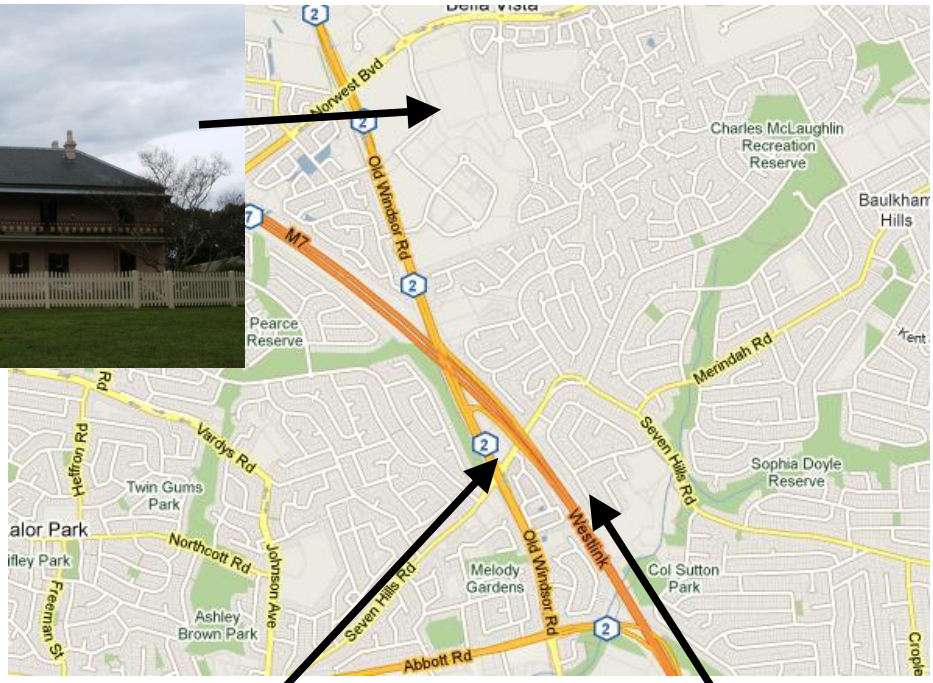
Mary Ann Brien was born in 1815. Mary Ann Brien married Matthew Woodward Pearce in 1834. Matthew was born in 1806 and his birth was registered in Parramatta. Matthew had a younger brother, William Thomas Pearce, born in 1808, the two brothers appear to have been close all their lives. Their father, Matthew Pearce Sr, was one of the earliest free settlers in Australia arriving aboard the 'Surprize' in 1794 with is wife Martha Parker, they initially settled in Parramatta.

In 1796 Matthew Pearce Sr received a 160-acre grant on Old Windsor Road which he named 'Kings Langley' after his home town in England. Matthew Sr described the local area as 'Seven Hills' as it is said he could see seven hills from his property. There is an alternate story that Matthew said he had to traverse seven hills whilst travelling along Old Windsor Road from Parramatta to his property. No matter the truth, the area acquired this name around 1800 and became the location of Seven Hills.

Below are shown some remaining land marks of the Pearce's' of Seven Hills.



Bella Vista





Pearce family cemetery

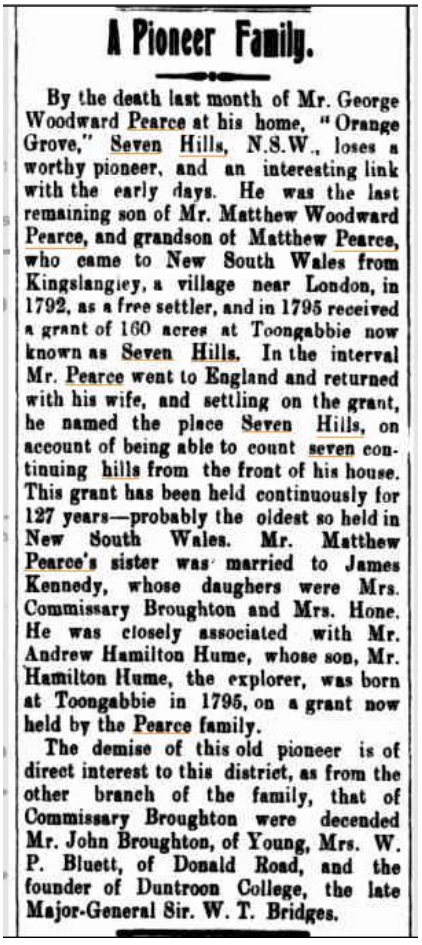


Astoria Park

In the images above: top left is ‘Bella Vista’ house. Located near Norwest Business Park, it is situated on land once owned by John Macarthur. Construction of Bella Vista house was commenced in 1842 by William Thomas Pearce. Bottom left is the Pearce Family Cemetery located on Seven Hills adjacent to the M7 freeway. Bottom right is ‘Astoria Park’ also known as ‘Orange Grove’. In 1834 Matthew Woodward Pearce built ‘Astoria Park’ house for his new bride Mary Ann Brien. Parts of Astoria Park remain today, incorporated into later development and still retains some original aspects of the early property.

Matthew Pearce Sr died in 1831 and Matthew Woodward Pearce received a portion of the Kings Langley estate as well as over 200 acres at Bannaby (near Taralga). [456] He also received several Crown Grants in the Riverina. Matthew and his brother William were active livestock farmers and established several runs around Albury and at Howlong on the banks of the Murray River. Mary Ann Brien died on the 19th Nov 1876 and is buried in the Pearce family private cemetery located near the NE corner of Old Windsor & Seven Hills Rd’s under the name Mary Ann Pearce.

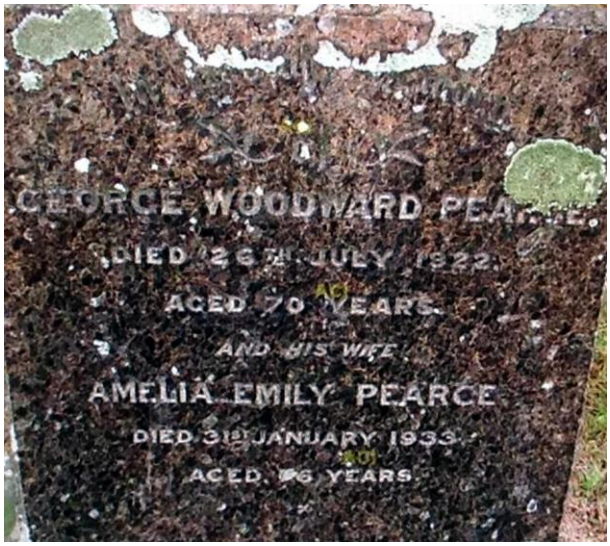
Matthew Woodward Pearce and Mary Ann Brien had twelve children, seven of whom reached adulthood. The last of this generation to pass away was their son George Woodward Pearce who was born in 1852 and died in 1922 aged 70. On Friday 15th September 1922 the Queanbeyan Age ran an article on him which described some of the history of his family, saying he was an interesting link with the early days of the colony.



A Pioneer Family.

By the death last month of Mr. George Woodward Pearce at his home, "Orange Grove," Seven Hills, N.S.W., loses a worthy pioneer, and an interesting link with the early days. He was the last remaining son of Mr. Matthew Woodward Pearce, and grandson of Matthew Pearce, who came to New South Wales from Kingslangley, a village near London, in 1792, as a free settler, and in 1795 received a grant of 160 acres at Toongabbie now known as Seven Hills. In the interval Mr. Pearce went to England and returned with his wife, and settling on the grant, he named the place Seven Hills, on account of being able to count seven continuing hills from the front of his house. This grant has been held continuously for 127 years—probably the oldest so held in New South Wales. Mr. Matthew Pearce's sister was married to James Kennedy, whose daughers were Mrs. Commissary Broughton and Mrs. Hone. He was closely associated with Mr. Andrew Hamilton Hume, whose son, Mr. Hamilton Hume, the explorer, was born at Toongabbie in 1795, on a grant now held by the Pearce family.

The demise of this old pioneer is of direct interest to this district, as from the other branch of the family, that of Commissary Broughton were decended Mr. John Broughton, of Young, Mrs. W. P. Bluett, of Donald Road, and the founder of Duntroon College, the late Major-General Sir. W. T. Bridges.



George Woodwood Pearce
Died aged 70
Pearce Family Cemetery
Bella Vista

(left) George Woodwood Pearce, son of Mary Ann Brien, Queanbeyan Age 15th Sep 1922

Through the Pearces we have several interesting connections with other early Parramatta families. Some examples include the sister of Matthew Pearce Sr, Lydia Pearce. Lydia (also sometimes written as Elizabeth Pearce) married James Raworth Kennedy around 1790. The Kennedys which included James, his wife Lydia and children John, Jane, Elizabeth and Louisa were originally from Kent, England and arrived in Parramatta from London in 1795.

Their eldest son John Kennedy married Caroline Catapodi in 1813 and their children married into the Brodribb, Broughton and Hume families (among others). Jane Kennedy married John Howe in 1811. John Howe was an early explorer into the upper Hunter region. Their children married into the Dights, another early explorer family who were some of the earliest to settle in the Hunter and Murray river regions as well as Melbourne. Elizabeth Kennedy married firstly Capt. Roger Simpson in 1802 and secondly to William Broughton in 1810. In 1805 William Broughton was appointed deputy commissary for NSW and the family held large land holdings in the Appin area which he named 'Lachlan Vale' after Governor Lachlan Macquarie who granted the land. [457]

Also arriving in 1795 was the sister of James Raworth Kennedy i.e. Eliza More Kennedy. Eliza married Andrew Hamilton Hume in 1790 and their eldest child was the explorer Hamilton Hume who married Elizabeth Dight in 1825. Other Hume children married into the Barbers, O'Neills and Mitchells. The Mitchells are linked to the Huons who are also connected with our Briens.

Martha Pearce, the sister of Matthew Woodward Pearce (who married Mary Ann Brien) married John Hillas in 1826. The Hillas family arrived in Parramatta from Yorkshire in 1801. The Pearce and Hillas families remained close and held adjoining properties near Taralga. Hillasmount homestead remains today near Bannaby.

Another sister of Matthew Woodward Pearce, Eliza Sophia Pearce married George Bowman in 1820. The Bowmans arrived in 1798 from Scotland. They held a property at Richmond and followed the Howes into the upper Hunter in the 1820s. They established 'Archerfield' which remains a horse-stud today. They also held properties in the Southern Highlands.

George Bowman's sister Mary Bowman, made a flag in 1806 which very likely was the inspiration for the Australian Coat of Arms. Mary was aged nine and so probably had help from her parents to make the flag; using silk from her mother's wedding dress. It was was flown on their farm, Archerfield, at Richmond in April 1806 to commemorate the Battle of Trafalgar (21st Oct 1805).



The Bowman Flag of 1806. The shield on the design shows the rose of England, thistle of Scotland and shamrock of Ireland. It commemorates by the motto "England expects that every man will do his duty" the Royal Navy's victory at the Battle of Trafalgar (21st October 1805) a landmark event for Britain's Australasian colonies. [458]

Chart showing some of the connections between our Briens and other Parramatta families. Some of the early families who established the Seven Hills school in 1816 are also shown.

Daniel Brien Jr (our ancestor) was born on 17th July 1817 at 'Exeter Farm' Seven Hills. Daniel Brien (aged 11) in the census of 1828 in the household of Daniel Brien and Mary Ann Parker.

Under the distribution of the real estate of his father who died in 1837, Daniel then aged 20, received Beckett's farm of 50 acres on the N.W. corner of the intersection of the Old Windsor Road and Meurants Lane.

Daniel married Mary Ann Best on 20th February 1838 at St. John's, Parramatta. Daniel Brien and Mary Ann Best had three children, Sophia, Daniel James (our ancestor) and George. It is likely that Daniel and Mary Ann lived on the 50 acres for some time but they eventually moved to Harold St Parramatta.

About 1845 Daniel Brien Jr became the publican for the 'Rising Sun' hotel located in Church St Parramatta next to Hunt's creek. [459] This painting of the 'Rising Sun' hotel hung until recently in the Parramatta library, perhaps one of the men depicted in the doorway is Daniel Brien Jr.



This painting of 'The Rising Sun' hotel hung for many years in the Parramatta library

Later Daniel Brien Jr held publican licences for the 'Golden Fleece' the 'Peacock Inn' in 1858, and the 'Sportsman's Arms' in 1860, all in Parramatta. In 1855 Daniel is recorded as providing refreshments for the celebrations at the arrival of the first train in Parramatta.

On 3rd November 1859 Daniel sold the 50-acre farm (he had inherited from his father) to his brother Timothy for £200. Daniel also aspired to politics and in 1875 stood for election to the Parramatta Council, beaten by John Pye from another of the Seven Hills pioneering families.

Daniel Brien Jr erected a substantial memorial to his wife Mary Ann Best when she died in 1876, also on that memorial he paid tribute to his brother in law George Best who died in 1854. They are buried in St John's cemetery Parramatta.

Daniel Brien Jr died on 15th March, 1878 at Parramatta. The lives of Daniel Brien Jr and Mary Ann Best are covered in greater detail in chapter 10.

Monsignor Rigney, the fifth Parish Priest of St. Patrick's, was looking to build a church in North Parramatta when a public house, variously known as the Green Gate, The Rising Sum and finally, Waitematta House, became available for £300. It became the first presbytery, school and teacher's residence.

In 1994, we celebrated 100 years of St. Monica's becoming a parish, although the first church had been built as part of St. Patrick's Parish, Parramatta, in 1889, and stood for 71 years.

In 1894, St.Monica's became an independent parish with Fr. James Mahoney as its first Pastor. Fr. Roger Wynne came to the parish in 1957 and in 1960 our present church was built on the site of the Ancient Inn, which had been pulled down.

The above article from the parish news of St Monica's Catholic church Parramatta was sent to me by Veronica Brien. [460]

It describes how in 1889 the former 'Rising Sun' hotel was purchased and formed part of the first St Monica's church complex. In 1960 a new (and existing) church was built on the same site to replace the 1889 building.



St Monica's church in Church St Parramatta – site of Daniel Brien Jr's 'The Rising Sun' hotel

Elizabeth Brien was born in 1819. She married John James, the son of Samuel James and Ann Bean on the 4th April 1836 at St John's church Parramatta. They had a property on Castle Hill Road just south of the Castle Hill village. Both were well known and respected in the fruit district.

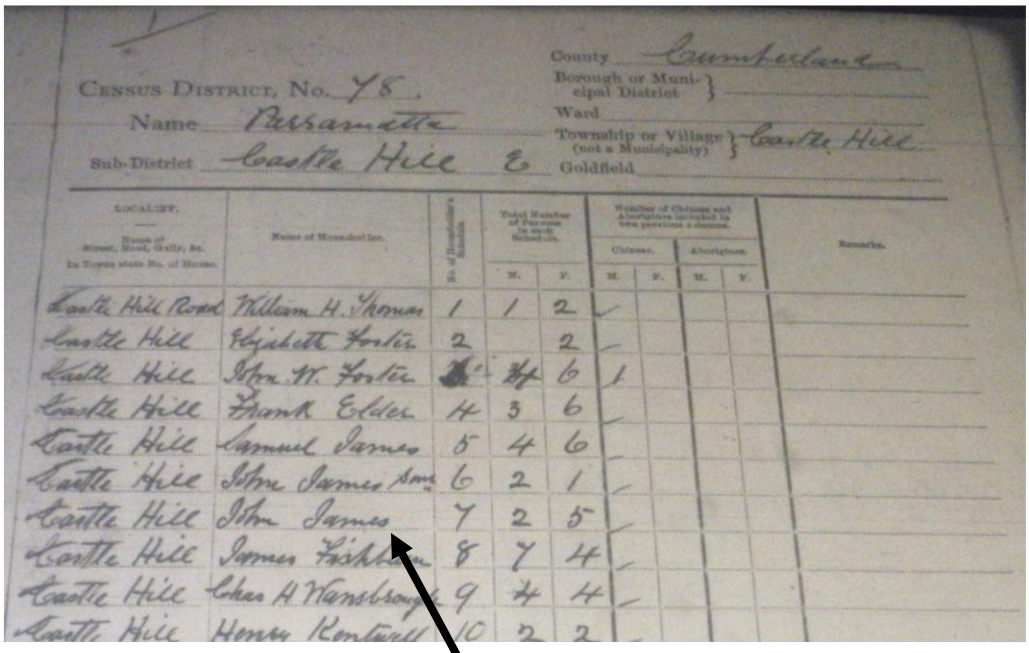
In an interesting coincidence; the property Ann Bean grew up on was a land grant to her father James Bean that in the 1880s was sold to John Williams Foster and his wife Catherine Curtis. The property was later re-named 'Southleigh' and is the same property on which my grand mother Sarah Jane Osborn Hammell (Floyd) was born in 1892.

In 1844 John James was elected to the committee formed to organise the building of St Paul's Church of England at Castle Hill. In 1851 his parents drew up a deed of gift to their son John assigning all their premises, the cottage they resided in together with land and tenements belonging to the farm, about 50 acres providing they reside there. John was a farmer and orchardist and he and Elizabeth had 13 children. Elizabeth Brien died at Castle Hill on the 13th July 1909 aged 89.

DEATH OF AN OLD IDENTITY.

Mrs. Elizabeth James, a very old district identity, died at her residence, Kellyville, on Tuesday morning, aged 89 years and 10 months. She was the mother of Messrs. James, Edward, Albert, Henry and Samuel James, Mrs. William James (Castle Hill) and Mrs. King (Fairfield), all well known and respected in the fruit district. The funeral will take place this afternoon.

The Cumberland Argus Wednesday 14 July 1909



County Cumberland
Census District, No. 75.
Name Parramatta
Sub-District Castle Hill E
Borough or Municipal District
Ward
Township or Village (not a Municipality) Castle Hill
Goldfield

Locality	Name of Household	No. of Household's Schedule	Total Number of Persons in each Household			Number of Chinese and Aborigines included in two previous columns				Remarks
			M.	F.		Chinese M.	Chinese F.	Aborigines M.	Aborigines F.	
Castle Hill Road	William H. Thomas	1	1	2						
Castle Hill	Elizabeth Foster	2		2						
Castle Hill	John W. Foster	3	4	6	1					
Castle Hill	Frank Elder	4	3	6						
Castle Hill	Samuel James	5	4	6						
Castle Hill	John James Jun.	6	2	1						
Castle Hill	John James	7	2	5						
Castle Hill	James Fisher	8	7	4						
Castle Hill	Chas H Wansbrough	9	4	4						
Castle Hill	Henry Kentwell	10	2	2						

1891 Census showing the family of John & Elizabeth James living in Castle Hill Road



Grave of Elizabeth James (née Brien) dau of Daniel Brien & Mary Ann (Parker); b. 1819 Seven Hills, NSW, Australia. Buried at St Paul's Castle Hill (just south of Cecil Ave) [461]



St Paul's Castle Hill NSW (photo: Australian Cemeteries Index)

Clara Brien was born in 1821. Clara married Robert Holt Best in 1836. In 1832 Robert Holt's father George Best established a cattle run on the south side of the Murrumbidgee River named 'Wagga Wagga' after the Aboriginal term for a water hole on the property where crows congregated.

After George Best died in 1836 his son Robert Holt Best took up the running of Wagga Wagga. Around this time Robert Holt and his brothers were the first to occupy lands on the Murrumbidgee river below Wagga. They built a hut and established 'Buckingbong' cattle run near Narrandera, but Robert Holt passed the property to John and Frank Jenkins in 1839. The Jenkins continued to hold Buckingbong for generations.

In 1846 Robert Holt Best brought his wife Clara Brien and older children to live on Wagga Wagga run which now consisted of 43,000 acres. Their sheep station was on the sandhill west of present Australia Hotel and another about where Railway station is, the main cattle camp was on small sandhill in the centre of the present racecourse which at that time was shaded by a number of honeysuckle trees. [462] Their house was 300 yards north of the lagoon forming Warby Island.

On the 25th June 1852 the Murrumbidgee River flooded reaching 10.67 meters. Robert Holt Best built a small punt which he had brought all the way from his home near Parramatta by bullock dray and when the water rose all the family, as well as their school tutor, got into the punt which had been tied to a tree, and they huddled inside until the water subsided.

Their lives were saved but the flood destroyed the early buildings including their old homestead on the river bank two miles below Wagga Post Office, they also lost their stores and a quantity of wheat. [463]

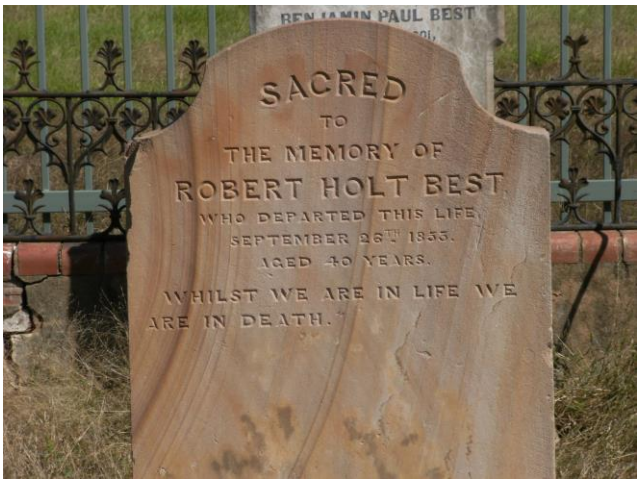
After the 1852 flood the family built a new house they named 'Flowerdale' located in Truscott Drive on southern side of today's Sturt Highway. This house with many additions still stands not far from the Carmelite Monastery.

In Sep 1853 Robert Holt Best suffered a riding accident in which his horse carried him under a leaning tree while he was rounding up some bullocks on the family property, close to where the Wagga cemetery is located today.

Robert Holt Best died on 26th September 1853 and is buried in the Best family cemetery. Robert left Clara with ten children to raise, the youngest were the twins Ben & Frank, both 9 months old.

Robert Holt Best was instrumental in promoting services in the area and in 1849 a town was proclaimed on their pastoral run and assumed the name Wagga Wagga.

Their son Matthew Best was involved with the local aboriginals and learned the Wiradjuri language and in 1849 was adopted into the Wiradjuri tribe. [464] On 3rd April 1855 Robert Holt and Clara's eldest son, Robert aged 13 was killed while riding alone, returning form Wagga to Mundawaddera, the horse fell and crushed him to death.



Grave of Robert Holt Best died 1853

After Robert Holt Best died, Clara took over the running of Wagga Wagga station herself. In 1856 Clara married Edward Pearson of Parramatta and passed the ownership of 'Wagga Wagga' station to him.

They later purchased the adjoining 'Sandy Creek' station and amalgamated the two properties and in later years Robert & Clara's twins (Ben & Frank) managed the property running 40,000 sheep.

Clara Brien had at least nine children and she died at Wagga Wagga on the 6th September 1899, she was highly regarded in the community and is referred to in several texts as "the mother of Wagga." Her funeral procession is said to be the "longest ever seen in Wagga." [465]



Grave of Clara Brien (Best / Pearson) died 1899

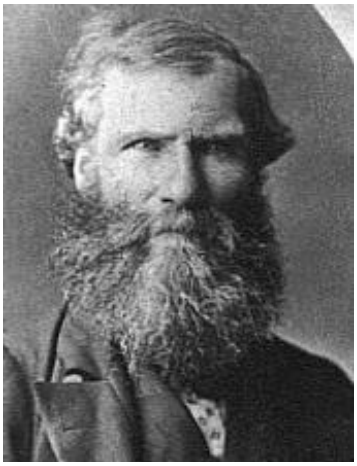
Clara Brien is buried in the Best family cemetery located in Truscott Drive Wagga Wagga, under the name Clara Pearson.

John Robert Brien was born in 1823. From around 1846 John Robert Brien lived with Sarah Best (dau. of George Best and Martha Chamberlain), they had several daughters and a son Peter John Robert Brien. One of their daughters, Harriet Brien married Robert James Meurant. Another was baptised Catherine Grace Bryan and who, as Catherine Grace Pye, married her cousin, James Pearce.

John Robert Brien established an orchard in Kellyville. Sarah Best died in 1882 and the following year John Robert married Mary Elizabeth Johnson. John Robert died at Rouse Hill in 1895.



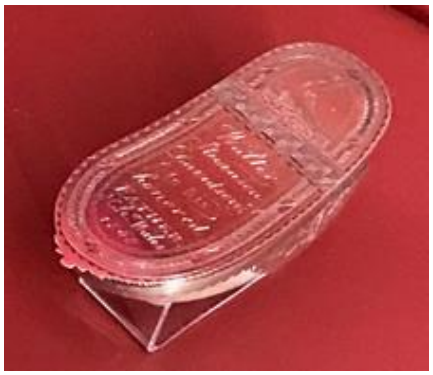
Grave of John Robert Brien at Rouse Hill Cemetery



John Robert Brien died 1895

Harriet Brien married Robert James Meurant in 1882. The Meurants lived on an adjacent property to the Briens and todays Meurants Lane is named after them. Robert was the grandson of Ferdinand Charles Meurant who was born in France and escaped the French Revolution by moving to Ireland.

Ferdinand was an engraver by trade and used his his skills to forge banknotes. He was tried at Kilmainham Dublin in 1798 and sentenced to life, and was transported to Australia on the ship Minerva. Ferdinand received his conditional emancipation in 1801 and a full pardon was granted in 1803 after he gained favour with Governor King. It is said that he discounted the price of a necklace he made for Governor King's wife by 500-pounds. [466]



A snuffbox made from gold and turbo shell, the making of which is attributed to Ferdinand, was acquired by the Powerhouse Museum in 1987. It was commissioned by Walter Stevenson Davidson, a London merchant and early landowner and banker in New South Wales, as a gift for his father Reverend Patrick Davidson in Scotland. The box is inscribed "Walter Stevenson to his honoured father, N.S. Wales 1808".

Sarah Brien was born in 1825. She married Benjamin Warby in 1846 at St. Bartholomew's church at Prospect. Benjamin Warby was born at Campbelltown in 1825 and was the son of Benjamin Warby who was born at Prospect in 1805. This Benjamin Warby's father was convict John Warby.

Shortly after Benjamin Warby was born in 1825, the Warbys moved south and became the first to settle in Gundagai. The Warbys were livestock farmers and they continued to move their herds further inland to find suitable grass land. Ben's father (also Ben Warby) purchased a 23,000-acre property in 1844 just south of the Murray river in Victoria and bequeathed it to Ben & Sarah, they called it 'Taminick station'. [467]

Taminick is close to present day Wangaratta and the station gave its name to the present-day location of 'Taminick' and the Warbys gave their name to the nearby 'Warby Ranges'. Also named after them is 'Warby street' in Wangaratta.

There is a bush ranger story that describes Ben Warby being away from Taminick leaving Sarah home alone with the kids in 1865 when bush ranger "Mad Dog" Daniel Morgan called and bailed her up. Daniel ordered her to make breakfast for him and also wanted to borrow a horse, for his was knocked up. But there was no horse for him and after breakfast he left.

The next morning, he held up the nearby town of Peechelba and rounded up all of the people there, but he missed one young girl who was able to send a message to the Police, who rushed to Peechelba and shot him. [468]

Benjamin Warby had a strong interest in race horses and was responsible for importing a great deal of racing blood stock into the colony.

Benjamin Warby's race horse 'Cardinal Wiseman' won the two-mile Melbourne Jockey Club race in 1857 in record time. From 1861 this race was called the Melbourne Cup.

Benjamin and Sarah had at least six children, Sarah died at Wangaratta Vic on the 21st July 1868.

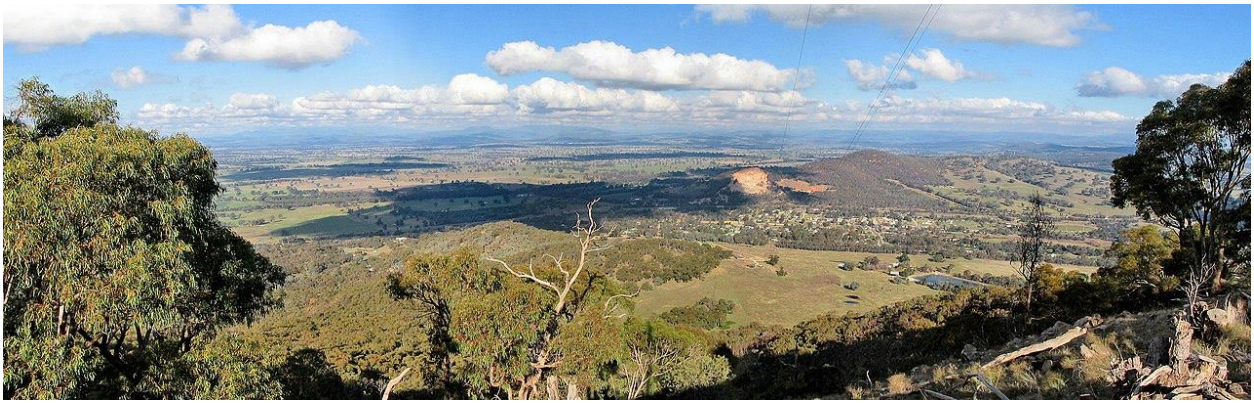


Taminick Homestead [469]



Melbourne Jockey Club Cup 1857

Situated on Taminick is a hill that overlooks Glenrowan township (known as Mt Glenrowan). Mt Glenrowan is perched a top the Warby Ranges which was often frequented by bush ranges; including Ned Kelly & his gang. [470]



The Kelly gang hid-out in the Warby Ranges in 1878 after the shooting at Stringy Bark Creek. The Warby family was one of the many families that were harassed by the police during the Kelly Outbreak. Legend has it that the Warbys were friends with the Kelly family and it is believed that Ned Kelly and his gang visited the Warbys at their Taminick farm in 1878. [471]

Another story circulating is about a man saying he was Dan Kelly (Ned's Kelly's brother) who appeared in Australia in 1932 (52 years after Ned Kelly was hung). He was in possession of a photo of the Kellys and there was a resemblance between this man and the photo of Dan Kelly. He said that he had survived the fire at the Glenrowan Inn and escaped Australia and went to India where he hid for the next 50 years. This man told his story to a number of people. [472]



Glenrowan Inn (Mick Roberts) [473]

John Warby

John Warby was an interesting character in early Australian history. Born at Hertforshire, England around 1767 arriving as a convict aboard the ship 'Pitt' in 1791. In 1792 he received a 50-acre land grant at Prospect next to Prospect Creek and initially farmed wheat.

In 1796 John Warby married convict Sarah Bentley, together, they had nine sons and five daughters. Their 4th son Benjamin was the father of the Benjamin Warby who married Sarah Brien in 1846.

In 1803 John Warby was appointed stockman of the wild cattle grazing in the Cowpastures, the site of modern Camden. The track he used between his farm at Prospect and Camden is still known in parts as Cowpasture Road.

John Warby gained increasing respect in the colony as a guide and assistant to various exploration parties. Under Governor Bligh, he was appointed a constable, as well as a superintendent of the Cowpastures region. As an amateur explorer, he was one of the first to check out The Oaks, Bargo and Burragorang Valley, and continued to be in demand as a guide. [474]

In 1802 he accompanied Ensign Barrallier in his attempt to find a route along the Nattai and Kowmung Rivers and Christy's Creek across the Blue Mountains; and later, in 1806, he assisted the naturalist George Caley in his endeavours to retrace Barrallier's route.

John Warby had an extensive knowledge of the Camden/Appin area and Governor Lachlan Macquarie requested his assistance as a guide during his travels around the colony in 1810 and again in 1815.

In 1810 Macquarie wanted to personally thank John Warby for his assistance and visited him at his Prospect farm and met his family. On that visit Macquarie praised John Warby on the state of his house and farm and promised him an additional land grant which he received in mid 1816; located at the newly opened settlement of Campbelltown.

John Warby's land grant was located just north of present Campbelltown shopping centre and was called 'Leumeah'. When the railway came through in 1882 the local platform was named Leumeah and that became the name of a surrounding suburb.

After the end of World War 1 the Mossberry Estate in Campbelltown where the Warby property was located, was sub divided. One of the new roads created was Warby Street, recalling pioneer settler John Warby, whose family still owned large parcels of land in the district.

John Warby died at Campbelltown in June 1851, his wife living a further 18 years. [475]

James Brien was born in 1829. He married Elizabeth Ann Barrett in 1856. Elizabeth was born at Minto in 1836, her maternal side were the Crafts from Richmond, she died at Wangaratta in 1926.

James Brien inherited 30-acres known as Pembury's farm on Meurant's Lane from his father in 1837. He did not want it and he eventually sold it to his brother John for £250 on 13 Jul 1862. [476]

James followed his sister Sarah Brien and husband Ben Warby to the Wangaratta area and married Elizabeth Barrett in Albury in 1856. They moved to Wangaratta and lived on a site near Judd's Menswear located in Murphy St Wangaratta. James and Elizabeth set up a "calico" tent to live in, and James began his business as a wheelwright, blacksmith and butcher.

Around 1861 James Brien established the first commercial orange grove in Victoria on the eastern slopes of the Warby Ranges at 'Wangandary'. It proved to be a very successful undertaking and led to the establishment of many citrus orchards with most of the land selected on the eastern slopes of the Warby Range. [477]

In his first planting, James Brien used seedlings of the orange variety 'Parramatta', brought from Sydney by bullock wagon. According to the Argus newspaper, some of the original trees were still growing there in 1967. [478] James Brien and his wife Elizabeth had seven children and all births were registered in Wangaratta, Victoria.

James Brien is mentioned in a newspaper article on the 9th October 1885 where he was charged with laying very large rabbit traps around his orchard specifically to catch trespasses. One of his traps did catch a man on his property and the matter went to trial at Benalla. James was found guilty of laying a "man trap" and fined £20 after which he was free to go. [479]

James died on the 5th July 1919 at Green St Wangaratta.



James Brien 1829 – 1919



Some of James Brien and Elizabeth Barrett's children enjoying afternoon tea at Wangandary [480]

Eleanor Brien was born in 1832. She married Hiram Howard. They initially lived at Seven Hills but in 1851 they moved to Southern NSW to take charge of Howlong Station about 30Km west of Albury.



The Murray river at Howlong

Howlong Station was established by Eleanor's brother-in-law Matthew Woodward Pearce (who married Eleanor's sister Mary Ann Brien) and was estimated at 64,000 acres in 1848, but gradually the size was cut down to 38,400 acres. Matthew Woodward Pearce, who became an Albury businessman, sold Howlong station in 1866. The Albury newspaper records that the Howlong Hotel was opened on 1st January 1857 being built for Mr. Matthew Woodward Pearce.

The town of Howlong, located on the Murray river, was named after the property. Pearce Street runs along the Murray River and was named after the Pearces. Eleanor Brien died on the 30th April 1926 still living in the town of Howlong.



Eleanor Howard (née Brien) 1832 – 1926. Probably taken in the 1920s.

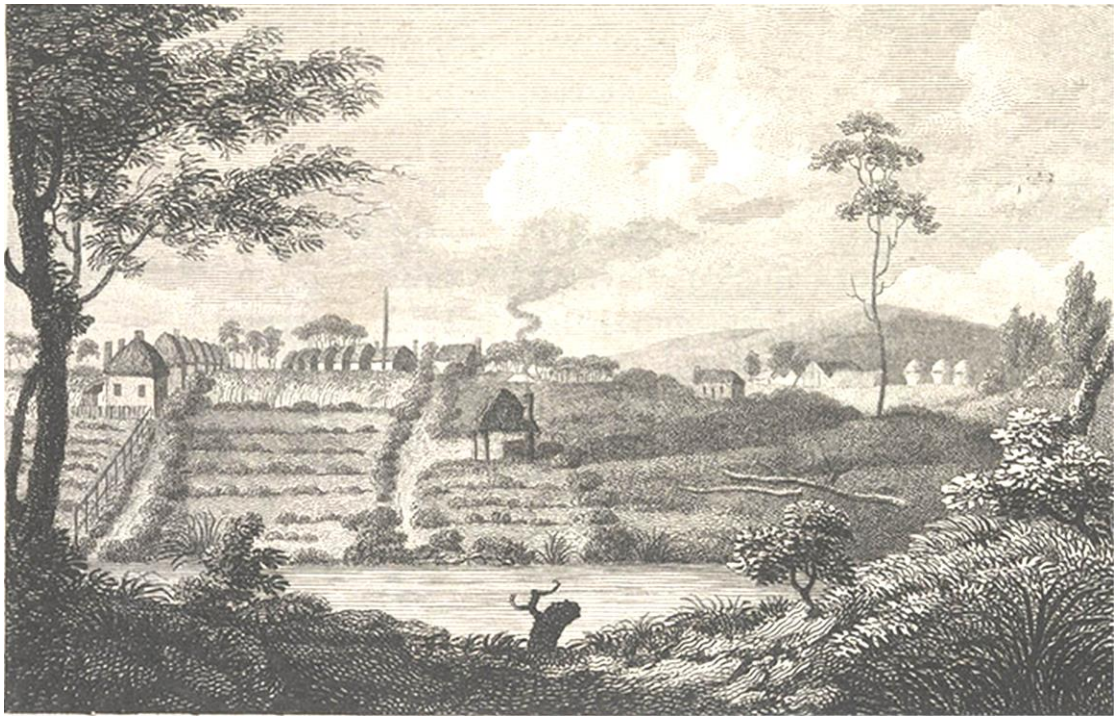
The Australia of our early Briens 1790-1840

Modern Australian Colonial History was divided into several quite distinct stages. The first was the early colony which commenced with the initial settlement in 1788 through to the changes brought about by the Bigge Royal Commission agricultural report of 1823. This first 35 years of Modern Australia has been dubbed "The convict's colony" [481] and it was clearly a period where Sydney was seen more as a settlement rather than a place of punishment.

Everybody knew this as fact, the government, soldiers and convicts. Even more than this, during the early years a symbiotic relationship existed between all of these groups. Starvation was never far away, and from inception of the settlement the government threw everything it could at solving the problem of food security.

In 1791 governor Arthur Phillip appointed Thomas Daveney to establish a government farm along Toongabbie creek. 500 convicts from the recently arrived third fleet were assigned to the task of clearing the land and planting crops. [482]

Our ancestor George Best had a role in this farm's operation and his story is covered later in chapter 10. The Toongabbie government farm was an immediate success and greatly helped in feeding the population. Over time food production in other areas, such as along the Hawkesbury river, picked up and the need for a centralised government run farm was reduced. Gradually the role of food production was assigned to private farmers, the majority of which were serving as well as ex-convicts, and the Toongabbie government farm finally closed completely in 1813.



Government Farm at Toongabbie established in 1791

Seven Hills

Many of those like our ancestor George Best left the government farm and were allocated land close by in the area known as Seven Hills. As a result of the experience acquired whilst working at the Toongabbie farm many of the farmers that ended up in Seven Hills possessed a high degree of skill farming in Australian conditions.

As you would expect this highly skilled population at Seven Hills generally went on to be highly successful farmers in their own right. Evidence also suggests that they passed much of their farming skill and knowledge onto other farmers in the area.

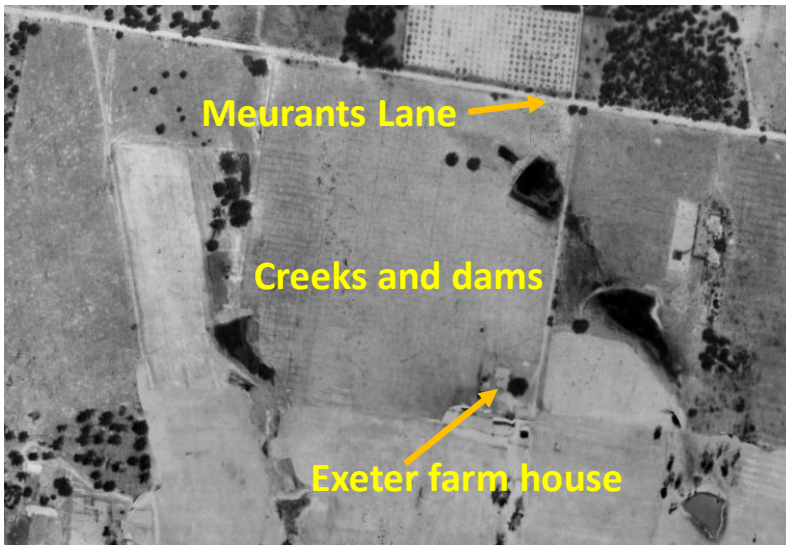
The first land grant in Seven Hills was 60 acres to John Redmond, an ex-Marine, by Lieutenant-Governor Grose on 1st April 1793. Within a few years' other portions of the forested land were granted to ex-convicts, emancipists, retired soldiers and a handful of free settlers.

Tracks crisscrossed the land between neighbours' properties and many of these early tracks became roads. By 1800 the name Seven Hills had become recognised for the district, particularly the land on each side of the recently built Hawkesbury Road (Old Windsor Road). The name Seven Hills was coined by Matthew Pearce who was granted land in 1794. The actual Seven Hills are situated along the Old Windsor Road between Westmead and Bella Vista. [483]



Map showing Seven Hills located on Old Windsor Road

Seven Hills as the name suggests is located on high ground, there were creeks running through area, some ran on our Brien 'Exeter Farm' and were clearly still evident in this 1947 photo below.





Left above, Aerial photo of Exeter Farm taken in 1947 showing location of farm house and water courses [484] Right above, corner of Old Windsor Road and Meurants Lane in the 1960s.

The land around Seven Hills at the time of our early Briens was generally dry and not suited for intensive long-term agriculture. Later generations discovered the land was suited to citrus farming but at the time of our early Briens they found it was mostly suited for live stock farming.

This is a key point as the early migrations out of Sydney were led by live stock farmers looking for more & more pasture to feed their mobs of cattle and flocks of sheep.

Our Briens initially farmed long horned cattle and we know this through surviving documents [485] that Daniel Brien and his neighbours John Hillas and Samuel Beckett received permission to move their cattle "southwest of the Cookbundoon Range" – today this is the area around Marulan NSW and is now named the "Cockbundoon Range".

Other relationships can be seen in the marriage pattens of the daughters of Daniel Brien and Ann Parker, most of whom married into other livestock farming families such as the Pearce, Warby and Huons.

As the Toongabbie government farm was winding down another government farm was established at Castle Hill. Castle Hill government farm is famous as Irish convicts who worked there were the instigators of the 1804 Castle Hill rebellion. But by the time the Castle Hill farm was up and running the move to rely upon private farms for the colony's food supply was well advanced.

In 1819 much of the land on the eastern side of Seven Hills Road South, part of what was known as the Prospect Common, was granted away by Governor Macquarie. There was not yet a clearly defined area for Seven Hills but the name had spread southwards to include the 1819 land grants.

When in 1860 the railway line was built to the south of Old Windsor Road, the Seven Hills name transferred to the new railway station and cemented the name of the growing village.

John Macarthur owned 2200 acres at Seven Hills from 1801 until May 1821, when this land was returned to the Crown as part of a deal to give Macarthur more land at Camden. His wife Elizabeth managed both the farm and the breeding of sheep at Seven Hills and other properties they owned.

Elizabeth Macarthur fondly called the Seven Hills property "My Seven Hills Farm". It can justifiably claim to be one of the first major Australian sheep breeding farms. The outstanding results later achieved at Camden with fine merino sheep only followed Elizabeth's sterling efforts at Seven Hills. [486]

The Seven Hills School

A number of surviving documents confirm that our ancestor Daniel Brien was well educated. This would have provided Daniel with an enormous advantage in the mostly illiterate early Sydney settlement. And so, it seems self evident that he would have wanted his children also to be educated.

Evidence of this is seen in The Colonial Secretary's Papers dated 15th June 1816 which includes a petition signed by Daniel Brien in support of Charles Wiltshire as a teacher for the children of Seven Hills / Toongabbie.

There are several documents relating to this school written over a period of 10 years and our Daniel Brien's signature is the only name that appears on all of these documents. Obviously, Daniel Brien was highly involved and invested in the school and quite likely was an instigator in establishing the school.

The exact location of the school building is unclear, but it was definitely located close to Exeter Farm, most likely somewhere close to the intersection of Old Windsor Road and Seven Hills Road, and was operating from at least 1816.

Another document describes a convict named Christopher Limebear Bridges who was teaching in Seven Hills from at least 1817. Bridges, at the time aged in his 30s, had been a bank clerk in Devon England before arriving in NSW aboard the ship Surrey in 1814. [487]

Another document includes a Petition dated 14th September 1823 written in support of Christopher Limebear Bridges being permitted to continue the school, and declaring that 17 children were attending his schoolroom situated somewhere "in the parish of Prospect in the location known as Seven Hills." Parents of those attending were paying Bridges fees of between half and one shilling per week. [488]

Each of those whose signatures who appear on the Petition were significant landholders in the Seven Hills area. They obviously valued education as well as had the means to support what was essentially a private school.

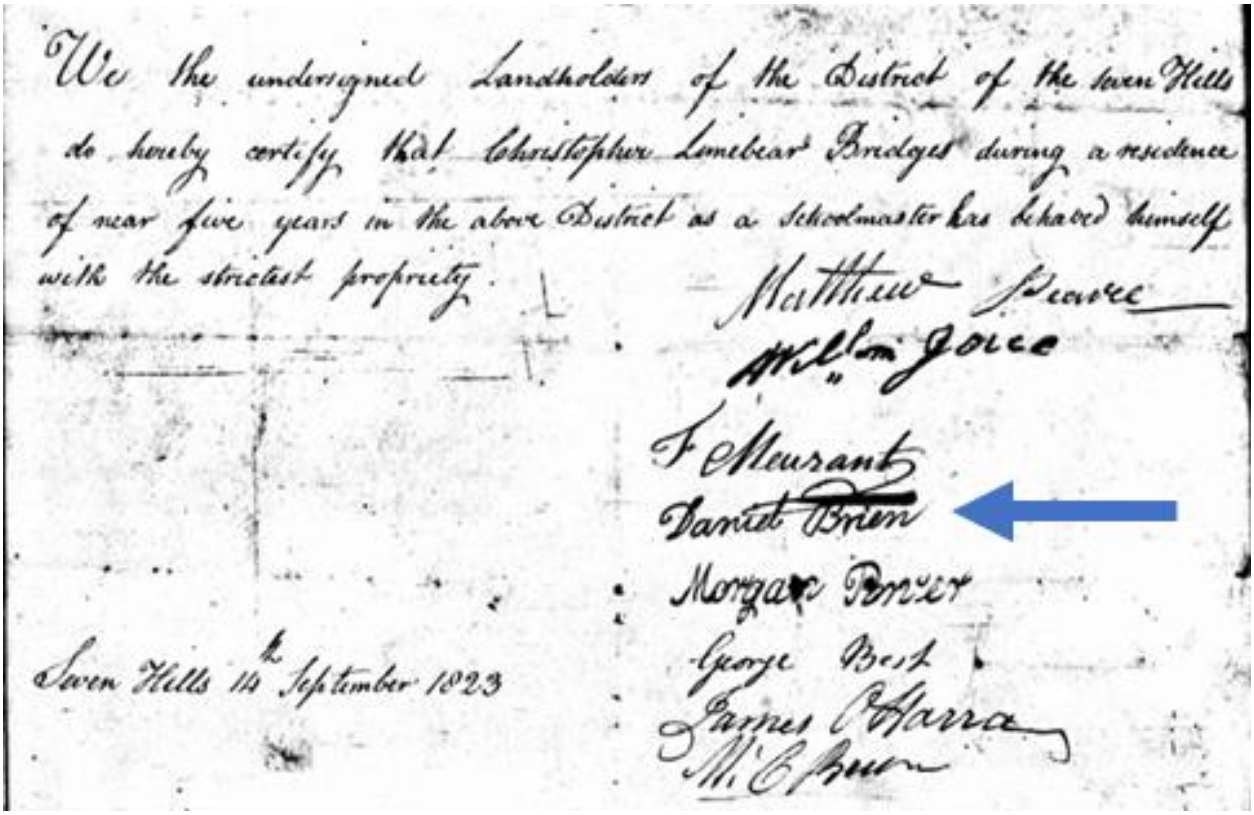
The signatories on this Petition (in order down the page) are Matthew Pearce, William Joyce, Ferdinand Meurant, Daniel Brien (our ancestor), Morgan Power, George Best (our ancestor) James O'Hara and Michael O'Brien. [489]

Another document states that in May 1825 14 children, both Protestant and Catholic, were registered at the Seven Hills school. [490]

This was a time when the vast majority of convict families were illiterate. The 1821 Bigge report found that less than 20% of children attended school and so having an education would have been an unbelievable advantage for their children. [491]

In 1828 construction of a new brick schoolhouse began to replace the earlier wooden one. This new building was situated on the eastern side of Seven Hills Road North near the junction of today's Abbott Road and Station Road.

The original wooden Seven Hills school closed in March 1829 after which the building continued to be used as a chapel. [492] The brick schoolhouse was still operating in 1863 with 54 pupils were in attendance. This building was replaced by a larger construction in February 1864. [493]


We the undersigned Landholders of the District of the Seven Hills do hereby certify that Christopher Limebear Bridges during a residence of near five years in the above District as a Schoolmaster has behaved himself with the strictest propriety.

Matthew Pearce
Wm Joyce
F Meurant
Daniel Brien
Morgan Power
George Best
James O'Hara
M. O'Brien

Seven Hills 14th September 1823

Daniel Brien's signature appears on the Petition supporting Christopher Limebear Bridges dated 14th September 1823.



Above, a composite map showing the location of the landholders listed on the 1823 petition regarding the Seven Hills school run by teacher Christopher Limebear Bridges. Documents show that the school was operating from at least 1817.

The road running at an angle down the map is Old Windsor Road. I don't know the exact location of the school in 1823, but it would have been close to where it is shown on the map. The landholder's properties are designated by the blue stars: (from left to right) Morgan Power, Michael O'Brien, James O'Hara, Daniel Brien, Ferdinand Meurant, Matthew Pearce, William Joyce and George Best. [494]

I explored this a little deeper to identify the children from the families that supported the Seven Hills school shown in the documents from 1823 and 1825, and then calculated the children's ages to determine who were attending the school, and in which years.

To illustrate this, I've produced the tables below. The children of school age have been highlighted, and their numbers fit perfectly with with the attendance figures given in the 1823 and 1825 documents describing the Seven Hills school i.e. 17 in 1823 and 14 in 1825.

In the tables below are shown the children's ages in red for the years 1823 & 1825, and green for other random years. I've assumed the children would have attended school only between the ages of 6 and 15. Also listed are their parent's names, their place of origin and where the children ended up later in life – the Seven Hills children certainly spread out across the country side!

Seven Hills School enrolments - Teacher: Christopher Limebear Bridges - Devon (1823: 17 pupils 1825: 14 pupils)

Parents: Thomas Davis - Devon & Harriet Taylor - Suffolk

1st Gen children	Year						Life after school
	1816	1823	1825	1828	1835	1840	
Thomas b. 1813	3	10	12	15			m. Elizabeth Leabeater d. Seven Hills 1896

Parents: William Hathaway & Mary Hooper (both from Gloucestershire UK)

1st Gen children	Year						Life after school
	1816	1823	1825	1828	1835	1840	
Robert b. 1805	11	18					m. Hannah Dalton d. Seven Hills 1836

Parents: Owen Martin - Ireland / Sarah Warport - London

1st Gen children	Year						Life after school
	1816	1823	1825	1828	1835	1840	
Rose b. 1796	20						
Thomas b. 1799	17						m. Sarah Knowland d. Kiama 1876.
Owen b. 1801	15	19					

Parents: (1st Generation) James O'Hara - Seven Hills / Elizabeth Ramsay - Seven Hills (Catholic)

2nd Gen children	Year						Life after school
	1816	1823	1825	1828	1835	1840	
John b. 1809	7	14	16	19			lived at Seven Hills d. Norfolk Is
James b. 1812	4	11	13	16			d. Dural
Mary b. 1814	2	9	11	14			d. Parramatta

Parents: William Joyce - Surrey / Sarah Jackson - London

1st Gen children	Year						Life after school
	1816	1823	1825	1828	1835	1840	
Unknown child b. 1806	10	17					

Parents: (1st Generation) Samuel Beckett - Parramatta / Hannah Dalton - Parramatta

2nd Gen children	Year						Life after school
	1816	1823	1825	1828	1835	1840	
Ann b. 1823				5	12	17	m. Morgan Power d. Singleton 1882.
Elizabeth b. 1825				3	10	15	m. David Howard d. Seven Hills 1899.
Jane b. 1827					8	13	m. Charles Horwood d. Parramatta 1909.

Seven Hills School enrolments - Christopher Limebear Bridges 1823 17 pupils 1825 14 pupils

Parents: George Best - Kent / Martha Chamberlain - London

1st Gen children	Year						Life after school
	1816	1823	1825	1828	1835	1840	
Thomas b. 1799	17						d. Gunning 1874.
George b. 1801	15						lived at Seven Hills d. 1823 Taralga D.S.P.
Mary b. 1803	13	20					d. Parramatta 1870.
Elizabeth b. 1806	10	17					m. Timothy Power d. Seven Hills 1876.
Sarah b. 1809	7	14	16				m. John Robert Brien d. North Rocks 1882.
John b. 1810	6	13	15	18			d. Gunning 1861.
Robert Holt b. 1812	4	11	13	16			d. Wagga 1853.
Peter b. 1814	2	9	11	14			d. Gunning 1878.
William b. 1816		7	9	12	17		lived at Wagga d. Parramatta 1902.

Parents: Morgan Power - Ireland / Bridget Byrne - Ireland

1st Gen children	Year						Life after school
	1816	1823	1825	1828	1835	1840	
Timothy b. 1805	11	18	20				m. Elizabeth Best d. Parramatta 1873.
Morgan b. 1808	8	15	17				m. Ann Good d. Seven Hills 1886.

Parents: John Good (Galway Ireland) & Ann Chipp (Norfolk Island)

1st Gen children	Year						Life after school
	1816	1823	1825	1828	1835	1840	
Anne b. 1811	5	12	14	17	24		m. Morgan Power d. Parramatta 1849
Edward b. 1812	4	11	13	16	23		m. Anne Murphy d. Seven Hills 1848
Catherine b. 1823			2	5	12	17	m. William Carroll d. Queens land 1863

Parents: David Jennings & Mary Enness

1st Gen children	Year						Life after school
	1816	1823	1825	1828	1835	1840	
Catherine b. 1814	2	9	11	14	21		m. James Kerwin d. Parramatta 1845

Parents: James Ridley - Bedfordshire & Martha Luke - London

1st Gen children	Year						Life after school
	1816	1823	1825	1828	1835	1840	
Sarah b. 1808	8	15	17				m. John Liquorish d. Orange 1879
John b. 1810	6	13	15	18			m. Maria Tait d. Seven Hills 1875
James b. 1813	3	10	12	15	22		m. Mary Leadbeater d. Seven Hills 1822

Seven Hills School enrolments - Teacher: Christopher Limebear Bridges - Devon (1823: 17 pupils 1825: 14 pupils)

Parents: Daniel Brien - London / Ann Parker - Devon (Catholic)

1st Gen children	Year						Life after school
	1816	1823	1825	1828	1835	1840	
Catherine b. 1809	7	14	16				m. John Foulcher d. Parramatta 1832.
Jane b. 1811	5	12	14	17			m. Paul Huon d. Wodonga 1894.
Timothy b. 1813	3	10	12	15			m. Charlotte Gilbert d. Castle Hill 1897.
Mary Ann b. 1815	1	8	10	13			m. Matt Pearce d. Parramatta 1876.
Daniel b. 1817		6	8	11	18		m. Mary Ann Best d. Parramatta 1878.
Elizabeth b. 1819		4	6	9	16		m. John James d. Kellyville 1909.
Clara b. 1821		2	4	7	14		m. Robert Holt Best d. Wagga 1899.
John Robert b. 1823			2	5	12		m. Sarah Best d. Seven Hills 1895.
Sarah b. 1825				3	10	15	m. Ben Warby, d. Violet Town Vic 1868.
James b. 1829					6	11	m. Elizabeth Barrett d. Wangaratta Vic 1919.
Eleanor b. 1832					4	9	m. Hiram Howard d. Howlong NSW 1926.

Parents: Matthew Pearce - London / Marther Parker - London

1st Gen children	Year						Life after school
	1816	1823	1825	1828	1835	1840	
Eliza b. 1797	19						m. George Bowman d. Richmond 1884.
Charlotte b. 1802	14	21					m. James Smith d. Parramatta 1854.
Martha b. 1804	12	19					m. John Hillas d. Parramatta 1854.
Matthew b. 1806	10	17					m. Mary Ann Brien d. Parramatta 1878 .
William b. 1808	8	15					m. Eliza Fletcher d. Parramatta 1865.

Seven Hills School enrolments - Teacher: Christopher Limebear Bridges - Devon (1823: 17 pupils 1825: 14 pupils)

Parents: Ferdinand Charles Meurant -France Rose Martin dau. Owen Martin -Ireland

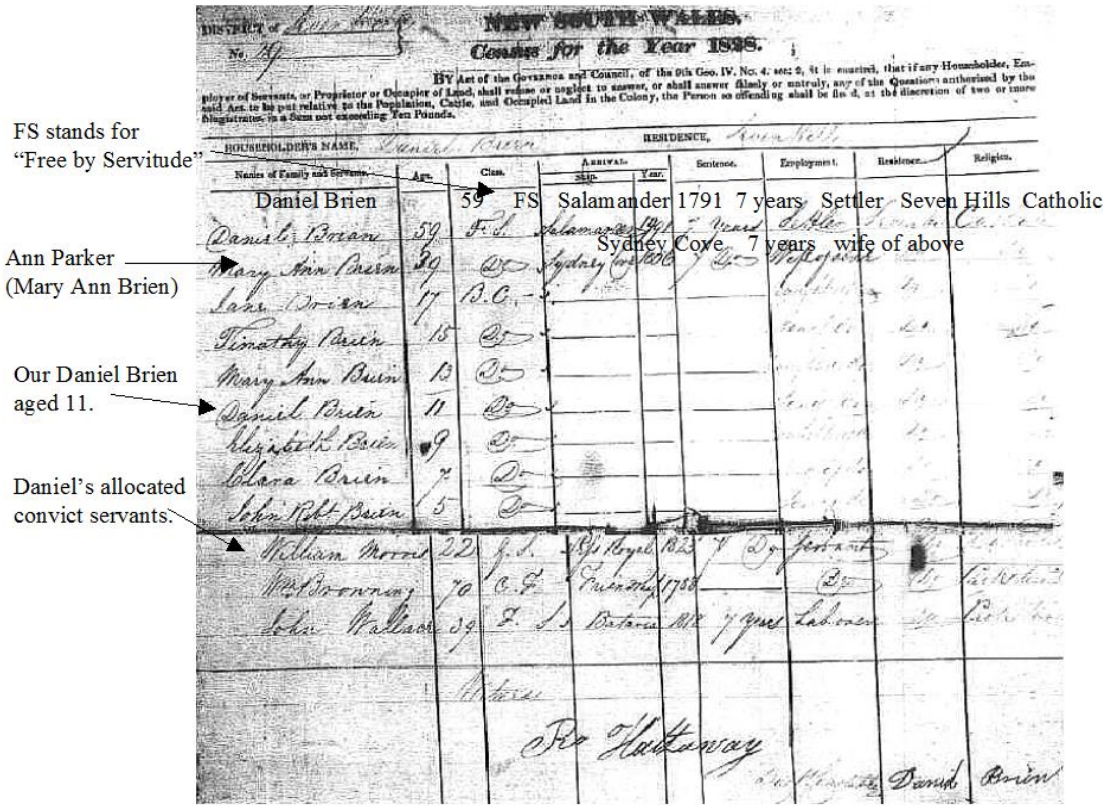
1st Gen children	Year						Life after school
	1816	1823	1825	1828	1835	1840	
Ferdinand b. 1811	5	12	14	17	25		m. Sarah Donohue d. Seven Hills 1884.
Albert b. 1815	1	8	10	13	20		m. Selina Jarvis d. Yackandandah 1864.
Elvira b. 1818		5	7	10	17		m. William Pike d. Junee 1891.
Juliet b. 1822		1	3	6	13	18	m. Henry Jarvis d. Orange 1898.
Mary Ann b. 1824			1	4	11	16	No details.
Augustus b. 1826				2	9	14	m. Mary Ann Fletcher d. Little Hartley 1896.
Sarah b. 1828					7	12	No details.
Louis b. 1831					4	9	m. Margaret Ann Stinson d. Wagga 1918.
Selina b. 1832					3	8	m. Thomas Neale d. Seven Hills 1907.
Emma b. 1834					1	6	m. John Stinson d. Sydney 1915.
Amelia b. 1836						4	m. Alfred Neale d. Coonabarabran 1865.

Of the eight signatures on the 1823 document, only seven are listed in the tables above. The odd one out is Michael O'Brien as I can find no children of his that match any of the students.

1828 Census

In November 1828 the first census of the population of NSW was conducted. A Government notice detailing the method in which the Census was to be taken, was issued on 1 September 1828. A copy of this notice, together with a quantity of household returns, was sent to all the Magistrates by the Colonial Secretary on 18 September 1828. It was the responsibility of the Magistrates to ensure that one was completed for each household and returned to the Colonial Secretary's Office.

A District Constable was sometimes accompanied to each household by a clerk. One of them completed all the details on the form from verbal statements submitted by the householder or individuals questioned. When completed, the householder signed the form or placed his or her mark on it, and it was witnessed by the District Constable. [495]



Census return from 1828 showing Daniel Brien and Mary Ann Parker's family

At the time of the 1828 census Daniel Brien was aged 59 and Mary Ann 39. Daniel and Mary Ann had 11 children. We are descended from their 5th child, Daniel Brien Jr who appears in the census aged 11. The census also tells us that Daniel and Mary Ann were living at Seven Hills with 300 acres in total, with 50 acres cleared and cultivated, 5 horses and 97 cattle. [496] Their eldest daughter Catherine is missing from the census return as she was already married to James Foulcher at this time. Also note the variation of the Brien/Brian spelling, it seems Daniel wasn't too particular about it.

Table 8: Population

Came Free		
above 12 years of age	Males	3,093
under 12	Males	295
Total	Males	**3,388**
above 12 years of age	Females	1,569
under 12	Females	253
Total	Females	**1,822**
Total Came Free		**5,210**
Born in the Colony		
above 12 years of age	Males	1797
under 12	Males	2452
Total	Males	**4249**
above 12 years of age	Females	1579
under 12	Females	2560
Total	Females	**4139**
Total Born in Colony		**8,388**
Free by Servitude	Males	5,127
	Females	1,854
Total Free by Servitude		**6,981**
Pardoned	Males	836
	Females	48
Total Pardoned		**884**
Total now Free	Males	13,600
	Females	7,363
Total now Free		**20,963**
Bond	Males	14,353
	Females	971
Total Bond		**15,324**
Grand Total	Males	27,953
	Females	8,334
Grand Total in Census		**36,287**

Snapshot of the population of NSW based on the 1828 census [497]

By the 1860s a large portion of Seven Hills was planted out with fruit trees, particularly oranges: the hills provided good natural drainage for fruit growing. Stone fruits soon became popular, although they required more attention. When the railway line came through Seven Hills in 1860, the fruit could be picked and transported to market quickly; a major advantage for Seven Hills orchardists. Many of the remaining stands of timber were felled in this period for railway construction, fuel and domestic use.

The Pearce family orchard at Bella Vista was situated on a large portion of what had been Macarthur's sheep farm. In 1889 it was said to be '…perhaps the largest producer of oranges and lemons in these colonies'.

In the early 1900s, trains from Sydney transported hundreds of people to Seven Hills during springtime, just to see the masses of pink and white blossoms. But it wasn't to last. When new irrigation schemes were opened in southern New South Wales, the orchardists of Seven Hills could not compete, and by the 1920s the fruit-growing industry was in rapid decline.

The Hawkesbury

In the early years the area that was seen as having the most potential for successful large-scale farming was along the Hawkesbury River. The earliest settlers along the Hawkesbury were ex-soldiers or people connected with the government who began establishing farms from 1788.

The extremely rich soils of the river flats made unsophisticated farming very productive, and news of the fertile lands spread. To encourage settlement along the Hawkesbury the government handed out land grants of 30 to 60 acres to convicts and ex-convicts. By August 1794, seventy settlers and their families were reported living in the Hawkesbury district and a track linked the small community to the settlements of Seven Hills, Parramatta and Sydney. Expansion continued and a log cabin was constructed to store the precious grain of the farmers.

The settlement continued to expand along the riverbanks and the population grew quickly. The inhabitants of the Hawkesbury were more self sufficient compared to the townships of Sydney and Parramatta. In 1805 the population for Sydney was 3,163; Parramatta 1,629 and Hawkesbury 1,953. At that time fifty three percent (53%) of Sydney and forty four percent (44%) of Parramatta's population were on rations compared to only twenty two percent (22%) of the Hawkesbury. [498] It wasn't long before the Hawkesbury became the bread basket of the colony. From this time until the mid 1820s the government encouraged an inflow of population to the area.



Wattle and daub house common in the Hawkesbury. Photo from the 1870s. [499]

The food output from the Hawkesbury farms was beyond expectations, but there was a catch. The Hawkesbury River has a nasty habit of flooding unpredictably. It is not so much that the river busts its banks from the large flow - it is that down stream of Windsor the river navigates a series of sharp bends and narrow gorges through which the flow is naturally restricted; the water just backs up at the Sackville Reach like a plug in a bath tub causing it to fill.

Ironically the reason the Hawkesbury was so productive was due to the silt deposited by the flood waters, but it did mean that living by the river was a precarious existence. The locals survived by building mud slab houses (known as wattle and daub houses) that could easily be repaired after a flood. They were easily built from locally available materials and could also double as barns with storage for grain in the roof area.

The original name for Windsor was Green Hills and the left bank of the Hawkesbury River (northern side) downstream of that point held some of the most fertile land. Governor Lachlan Macquarie mentions this in his journal when he visited the area in December 1810; many of the early families established their farms along this part of the river.

Also mentioned in Macquarie's journal is a school house built by local farmers located next to the river on the opposite bank to where Cattai Creek joins the Hawkesbury. Macquarie inspected this building and it was also on this occasion he named this settlement 'Wilberforce'. [500]

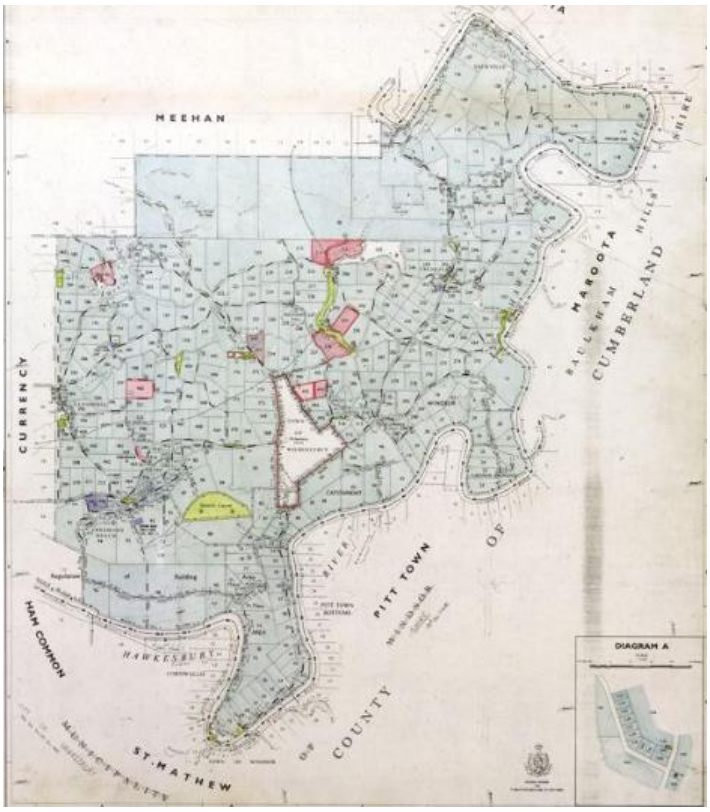
On his 1810 visit to the area Governor Lachlan Macquarie implemented a plan to reduce the risk of living by the river. He established five town areas above the high-water mark; Windsor, Wilberforce, Pitt Town, Richmond and Castlereagh. Macquarie was never a fan of the wattle and daub houses built by the Hawkesbury farmers and so he placed a covenant on the new town lots mandating that they be built from brick or stone. It's no surprise that when Macquarie returned to the Hawkesbury in 1815 that hardly any of the town lots had been taken up. [501]



Early painting of Windsor next to the Hawkesbury River. [502]

The backbone of the Hawkesbury during the first 35 years was the 270 or so permanent families and the myriad of itinerant workers that were assigned or paid for their labor. The Hawkesbury was not only fertile land for food production, but also fertile for the long-term families that resided there. Well over 1800 children were born to families living on the farms along the river whose eldest child was born between 1788 and 1813. [503]

One of these families was that of Samuel Craft (b. 1768) & Elizabeth Davies (b. 1766). Their youngest daughter Elizabeth Craft (b. 1800) married William Barrett. Their daughter Elizabeth Barrett married my GGG uncle James Brien in 1856. Their children became the Briens of Wangandary in Victoria and ran the first commercial citrus farm in that state.



Parish map of Wilberforce showing the early farm selections along the Hawkesbury river

The view of the government towards the Hawkesbury farmers changed dramatically after the release of the Bigge Royal Commission agricultural report in 1823. Bigge recommended an end to the 'Convict friendly' approach to settlement and advocated a more extreme punishment regime be implemented. In practice this meant a move away from the handing out of land to convicts to encourage them to be self sufficient, and towards moving convicts out of the population centers to large pastural farms in the regions where they would work as indentured labor. [504]

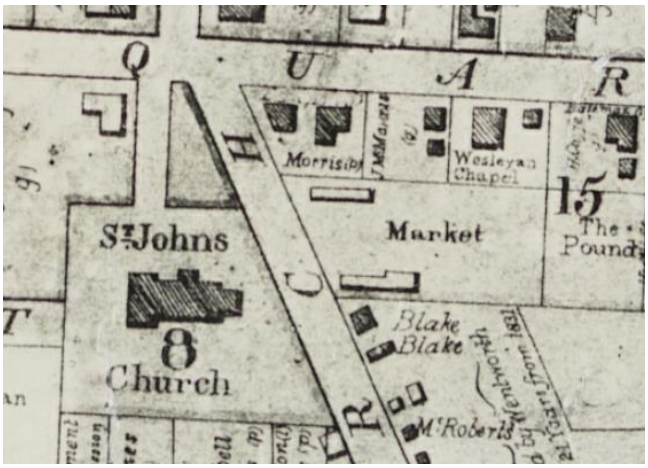
In 1825 the system of granting small farms to time-expired convicts ended. The system of 'land grants' ended in NSW in 1831. All land was thenceforth to be sold at public auction (HRA 1.16.22) and revenue from the sale of land was to go toward the immigration of labourers. Likewise, the practice of granting land as "marriage portions" to the children of colonists was discontinued (HRA 1.16.353, 793). The new regulations were notified in a Government Notice of 1 July 1831 and published in a Government Order dated 1 August 1831.

In addition, this new policy saw a reduction of female convicts sent to Australia. Between 1826 and 1840, 38,443 convict men arrived in Australia but only 6812 convict women. [505] Prior to this point there had been a concerted effort to send as many females as possible, because the settlement was the uppermost objective. After the Bigge report this all changed and there was a population net out flow from the Hawkesbury. Life along the Hawkesbury river had changed forever.

Parramatta

At the time of our early Briens, Parramatta was the nearest commercial centre. Even so, during the 1840s Parramatta was still surrounded by "long miles of bushland" [506] in every direction. To the north of Parramatta much of the land had been acquired by the Oakes family, to the south the Blaxcell 'Drainwell' estate, which included the future area of Granville, was still virgin bush. Sydney news papers of the period still listed Parramatta news as 'news from the interior".

Our Briens travelled to Parramatta to sell their produce at the markets. The early market site was opposite from St Johns church in Church St, where the Parramatta town hall is located today.





Surveyor W. Meadows Browrigg's Plan of the Town of Parramatta showing market site. [507]

In 1837 a police station and court house was built on the corner of Church St and George St. The court house also doubled as the post office.





Plan of the Town of Parramatta showing police and courts site. [508]

These landmarks would have been familiar to our branch of the Briens. Sometime in the 1850s we moved permanently to Parramatta where we became an established and well-know family.

The Currency Generation

The first native-born Australian generation of European descent were mainly the sons and daughters of convicts. These children were born from 1788 through to about 1830; our family are well represented in this generation including the children of Daniel Brien, George Best, James Beckett, Michael Ryan and John Hangan.

This generation of children were something new and quite unique on the scene; they were born in Australia and knew no other place to live. They grew up amongst the farms and the bush and learnt skills required to survive here. As children they played with the first nations children and each accepted the other as part of the landscape.

They grew up free of the 'convict stain' their parents had and saw themselves as quite separate from the penal society. They were totally free, and it seems obvious from how they behaved that they didn't see the penal government applying to them. Their actions later in life demonstrate that many of this generation were industrious, adventurous and often rebellious.

A surprising number of this generation were reasonably educated. There were schools dotted across the Sydney settlement before 1810 and where the government or church failed to provide one, there are examples of farming communities banding together to establish there own.

New arrivals from Britain didn't know what to make of these young colonial men and women and described them in disparaging terms. To distinguish people born overseas from people born here; one of the terms used was to describe native-born children as 'currency'.

This came about because English currency is known as 'Sterling' and at the time of the early colony, Australia used a mix of currencies from different countries; known simply as 'currency'. These terms became jibes; when describing people from 'old England' they were referred to as 'Sterling' and native-born Australians were referred to as 'currency lads and lasses'.

They were clearly an industrious, adventurous and rebellious cohort who, as the first free-born generation of European descent, regarded the penal government, and its restrictions to curtail the movements of convicts, did not apply to them.

History generally neglects this generation, but they were responsible for the initial migration and settlement of virtually every site that later became a town and city between Sydney and Melbourne. They provided much of the heavy-lifting in the establishment of the wool industry. Whilst John Macarthur and the Australian Agricultural Company get most of the credit, the truth is that the AAC operations were exclusively to the north of Newcastle. It obviously did contribute, but it was the currency generation who opened the great wool producing areas along the Hume Highway from Sydney to Melbourne where the bulk of the wool production took place.

The export income generated by their operations contributed significantly to the economic transformation Australian went through before the gold rush. During this period economy changed from supporting a public service gaol, to becoming a private sector export power-house in one generation. In today's terms this was the 19th century equivalent of the mining-boom.

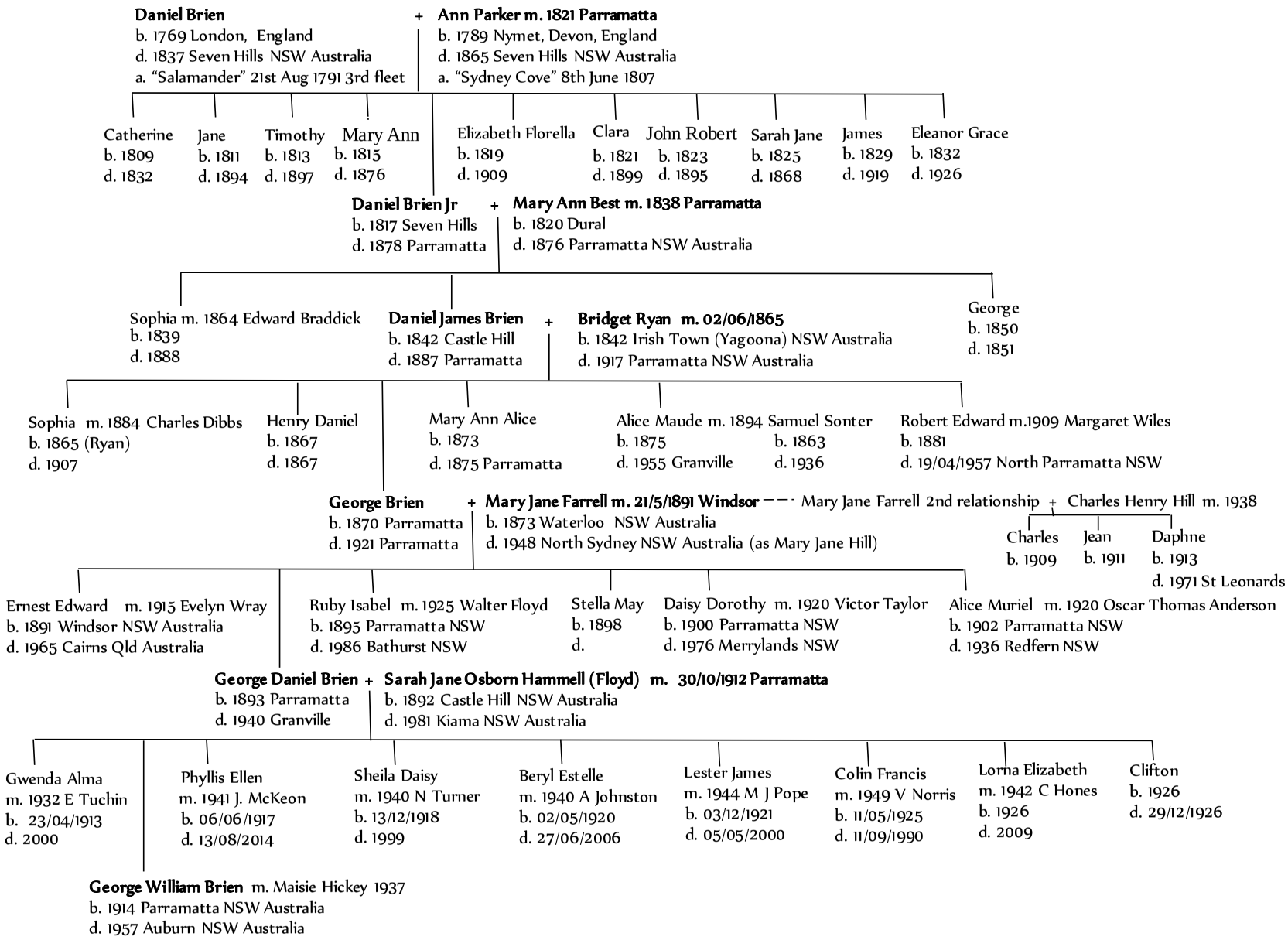
The currency generation were patriotic and politically engaged. The prototype of the Australian coat of arms was first produced and flown at Richmond in 1806, and many of this generation were in their prime when responsible government was established in the 1850s. During this period there was a push for an egalitarian society resulting in widespread support for the adoption of the Chartist's Demands in the NSW and Victoria governments; which saw secret ballots and universal manhood suffrage introduced in Australia decades before adoption in the UK.

It was the currency generation that created our General Australian Accent; probably the closest thing Australians have to a national identity. The Australian accent (or Australian language) was mentioned numerous times in the Constitutional conventions of the 1890s as a reason for supporting the Australian Federation.

The currency generation were the first Europeans to be born here. They saw themselves part of this land; they had no connection to any other land. They saw themselves separate from the convict system and they set out to explore and settle in every direction from Sydney. In their younger years they created an accent of their own, and through their journeys across the land they carried that accent. We speak it today and it remains a large part of our national identity and our culture.

Chapter 10

Daniel Brien Jr b.1817 & Mary Ann Best b.1820

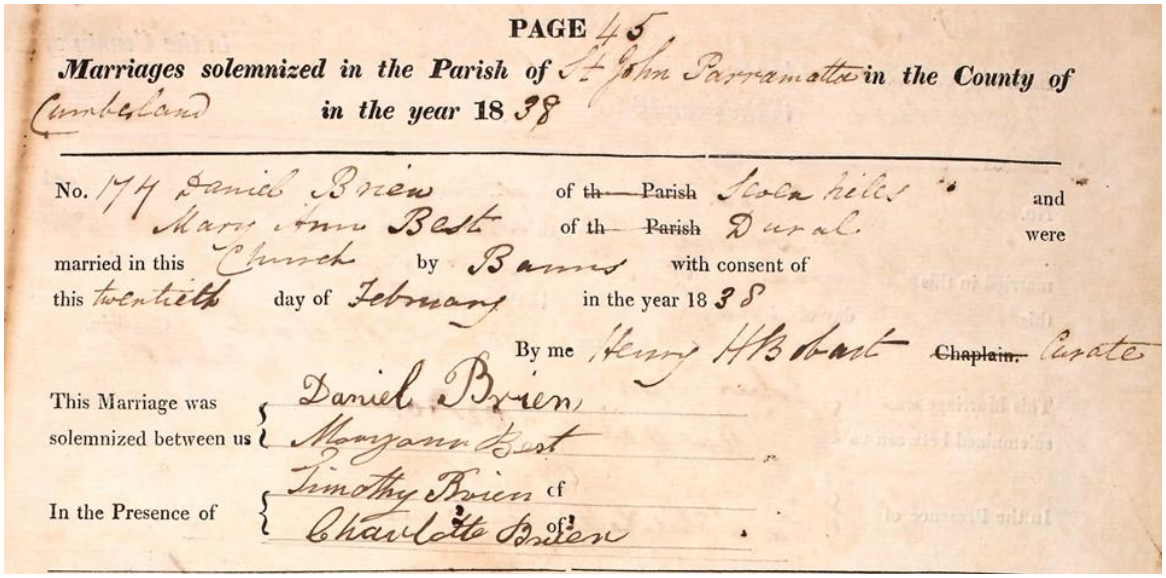

Daniel Brien
b. 1769 London, England
d. 1837 Seven Hills NSW Australia
a. "Salamander" 21st Aug 1791 3rd fleet
+
Ann Parker m. 1821 Parramatta
b. 1789 Nymet, Devon, England
d. 1865 Seven Hills NSW Australia
a. "Sydney Cove" 8th June 1807
Catherine b. 1809 d. 1832
Jane b. 1811 d. 1894
Timothy b. 1813 d. 1897
Mary Ann b. 1815 d. 1876
Elizabeth Florella b. 1819 d. 1909
Clara b. 1821 d. 1899
John Robert b. 1823 d. 1895
Sarah Jane b. 1825 d. 1868
James b. 1829 d. 1919
Eleanor Grace b. 1832 d. 1926
Daniel Brien Jr
b. 1817 Seven Hills
d. 1878 Parramatta
+
Mary Ann Best m. 1838 Parramatta
b. 1820 Dural
d. 1876 Parramatta NSW Australia
Sophia m. 1864 Edward Braddick
b. 1839
d. 1888
Daniel James Brien
b. 1842 Castle Hill
d. 1887 Parramatta
+
Bridget Ryan m. 02/06/1865
b. 1842 Irish Town (Yagoona) NSW Australia
d. 1917 Parramatta NSW Australia
George
b. 1850
d. 1851
Sophia m. 1884 Charles Dibbs
b. 1865 (Ryan)
d. 1907
Henry Daniel
b. 1867
d. 1867
Mary Ann Alice
b. 1873
d. 1875 Parramatta
Alice Maude m. 1894 Samuel Sonter
b. 1875
d. 1955 Granville
b. 1863
d. 1936
Robert Edward m.1909 Margaret Wiles
b. 1881
d. 19/04/1957 North Parramatta NSW
George Brien
b. 1870 Parramatta
d. 1921 Parramatta
+
Mary Jane Farrell m. 21/5/1891 Windsor
Mary Jane Farrell 2nd relationship
+
Charles Henry Hill m. 1938
b. 1873 Waterloo NSW Australia
d. 1948 North Sydney NSW Australia (as Mary Jane Hill)
Charles b. 1909
Jean b. 1911
Daphne b. 1913 d. 1971 St Leonards
Ernest Edward m. 1915 Evelyn Wray
b. 1891 Windsor NSW Australia
d. 1965 Cairns Qld Australia
Ruby Isabel m. 1925 Walter Floyd
b. 1895 Parramatta NSW
d. 1986 Bathurst NSW
Stella May
b. 1898
d.
Daisy Dorothy m. 1920 Victor Taylor
b. 1900 Parramatta NSW
d. 1976 Merrylands NSW
Alice Muriel m. 1920 Oscar Thomas Anderson
b. 1902 Parramatta NSW
d. 1936 Redfern NSW
George Daniel Brien
b. 1893 Parramatta
d. 1940 Granville
+
Sarah Jane Osborn Hammell (Floyd) m. 30/10/1912 Parramatta
b. 1892 Castle Hill NSW Australia
d. 1981 Kiama NSW Australia
Gwenda Alma
m. 1932 E Tuchin
b. 23/04/1913
d. 2000
Phyllis Ellen
m. 1941 J. McKeon
b. 06/06/1917
d. 13/08/2014
Sheila Daisy
m. 1940 N Turner
b. 13/12/1918
d. 1999
Beryl Estelle
m. 1940 A Johnston
b. 02/05/1920
d. 27/06/2006
Lester James
m. 1944 M J Pope
b. 03/12/1921
d. 05/05/2000
Colin Francis
m. 1949 V Norris
b. 11/05/1925
d. 11/09/1990
Lorna Elizabeth
m. 1942 C Hones
b. 1926
d. 2009
Clifton
b. 1926
d. 29/12/1926
George William Brien m. Maisie Hickey 1937
b. 1914 Parramatta NSW Australia
d. 1957 Auburn NSW Australia

Daniel Brien Jr born 1817 and Mary Ann Best born 1820

Daniel Brien Jr was born on 17th July, 1817 at Seven Hills. His parents were Daniel Brien and Mary Ann Parker. He married Mary Ann Best who was the daughter of Thomas Best and Mary Beckett. Her grand parents were George Best, Martha Chamberlain, James Beckett and Ann Calcut, all of whom were convicts.

Mary Ann Best was born on the 18th March, 1820 at her parent's property at Dural NSW. Mary Ann was the daughter of Thomas Best and Mary Beckett. Thomas Best owned over 200 acres of land which they had acquired via a land grant in 1824. In 1836 Thomas Best purchased a further 640 acres near Yass at Tangmangaroo, Thomas was a cattle and horse breeder, and also operated a hotel at Dural for a time.

Daniel Brien Jr married Mary Ann Best on 20th February, 1838 at St. John's church, Parramatta. Daniel was 21 and Mary 18 at the time.



PAGE 45

Marriages solemnized in the Parish of St John Parramatta *in the County of* Cumberland *in the year* 1838

No. 174 Daniel Brien of th~~e~~ Parish Seven hills and
Mary Ann Best of th~~e~~ Parish Dural were
married in this Church by Barnes with consent of
this twentieth day of February in the year 1838

By me, Henry H Bobart ~~Chaplain.~~ Curate

This Marriage was solemnized between us { Daniel Brien, Maryann Best

In the Presence of { Timothy Brien of Charlotte Brien of

Marriage record: Daniel Brien Jr and Mary Ann Best 20th February 1838

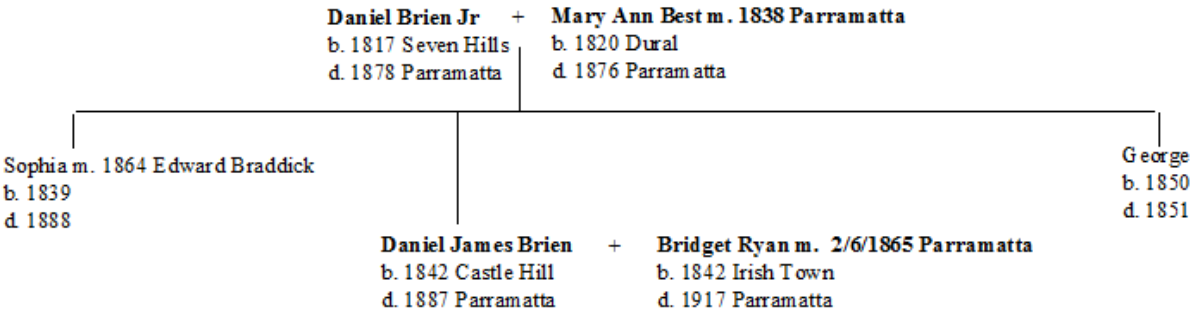
The children of Daniel Brien Jr and Mary Ann Best

Daniel and Mary Ann had three children.

Sophia b. 1839 who married Edward Braddick in 1864. Edward was a store keeper in Church Street Parramatta.

Daniel James b. 1842 (our ancestor), hotel keeper in Parramatta, married Bridget Ryan in 1865. Their story is covered in Chapter 11.

George b. 1850. George died as an infant in 1851.



Children of Daniel Brien Jr and Mary Ann Best

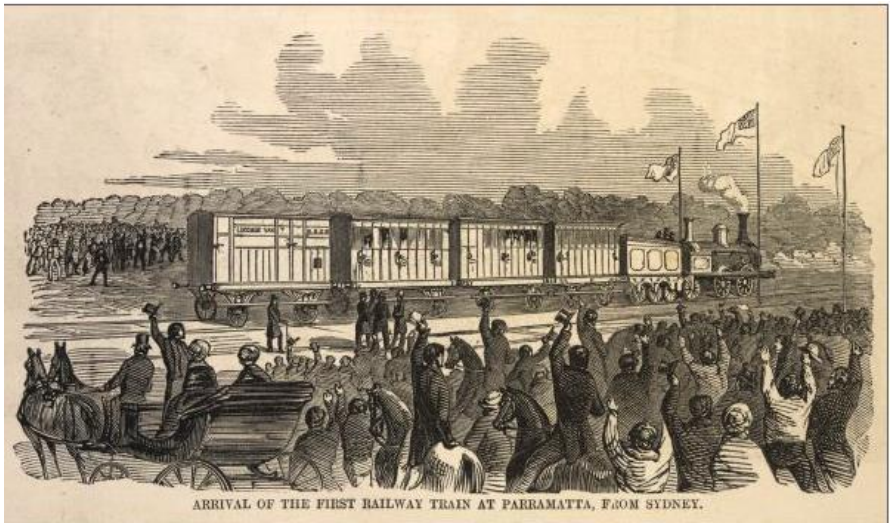
In 1832 when aged 15, Daniel Brien Jr's father bound him to a trade, as he thought Daniel Jr would be more suited to such an occupation rather than farming. Evidence suggests that Daniel Jr served his apprenticeship with a Boot Maker in Parramatta. [509]

When Daniel Jr's father, Daniel Brien Sr died in 1837, Daniel then aged 20 received through his fathers will 'Beckett's farm' a 50-acre property located on the N.W. corner of the Old Windsor Road and Meurants Lane, Seven Hills. The property was known by this name as the initial title holder was Samuel Beckett from whom Daniel Sr had purchased the property in the 1820s.

Also, in the will was a stipulation to Daniel Jr that if ever he decided to dispose of the 50-acre property, he was to offer its sale to his brother Timothy in the first instance. And so, on the 3rd November 1859, Daniel Jr sold 'Beckett's Farm' to his older brother, Timothy, for £200. Daniel and Mary Ann then moved to a house in Harold St Parramatta.[510] Daniel mentions in his will that he owned two houses in Harold Street Parramatta.

In 1853 Daniel Jr took up the lease of the Golden Fleece Hotel, the Peacock Inn in 1858, and the Sportsman's Arms in 1860, all in Parramatta. Daniel Brien Jr gets a mention when the railway from Sydney to Parramatta opened on the 26th September 1855. At the time Daniel Jr operated a hotel called 'The Golden Fleece' and he supplied refreshments to the crowd during the celebrations.

The first train from Sydney to Parramatta 26th September 1855


ARRIVAL OF THE FIRST RAILWAY TRAIN AT PARRAMATTA, FROM SYDNEY.

The following article describes the arrival of the first train service in Australia, between Sydney and Parramatta Junction; located south of Parramatta in todays suburb of Granville.

THE FIRST TRAIN.

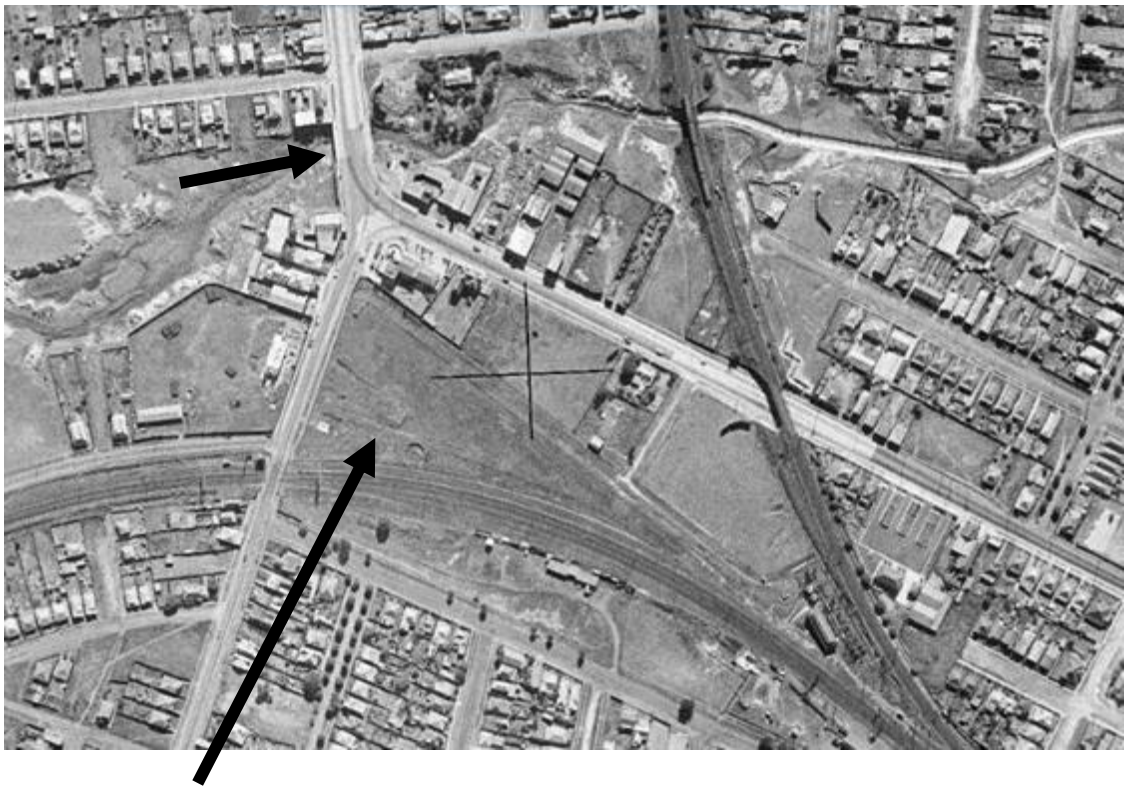
A correspondent of an exchange writes respecting the opening of the railway from Sydney to Parramatta. "On reaching Parramatta it was half-past 11 (the correspondent journeyed by steamer). Several booths for refreshments were put up—White Horse Cellar, Richard and Francis Teasdell; The Golden Fleece, by Daniel Brien. Quite a bush scene close at hand, with all kinds of vehicles from carriages to drays, horses hobbled, and tents as well as slab huts with wood fires burning; Punch's theatre, organ and hurdy-gurdy players, omnibuses, coaches, cabs, equestrians, a very gay company. Ladies at the station, which is somewhat rough at present. Streamers were flying on all sides. Precisely at 12, the train came into sight consisting of twelve carriages-first class, second class, third class. . . The amount of money taken at both stations was £485 11s. Tickets issued, 3554.

SMH 27th September 1855 describing the arrival of the first train at Parramatta Junction

The Sydney to Parramatta railway proved such a great success it was duplicated in 1857 and quadrupled 12 years later. In 1859 the train line was extended and a new station built at Parramatta.



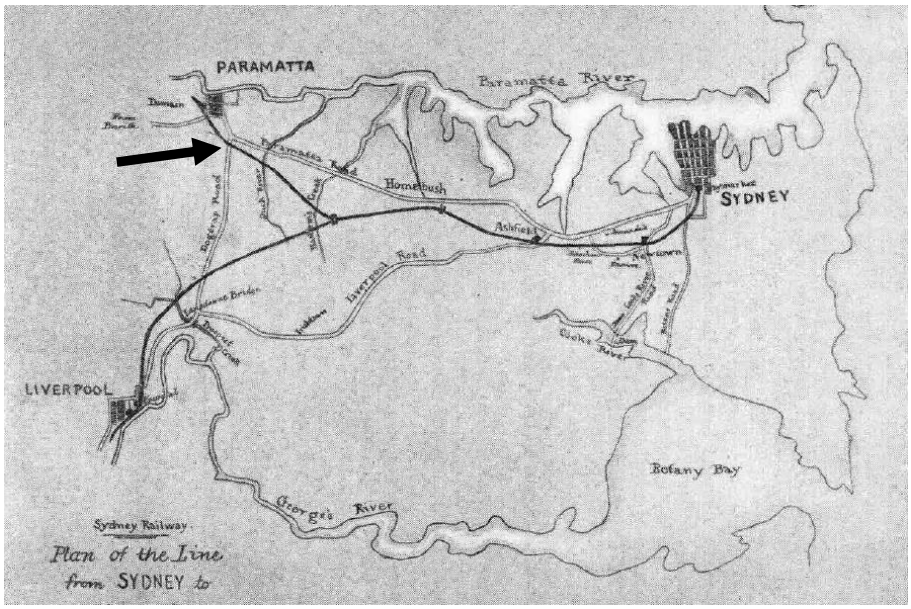
The first Sydney to Parramatta train on display at the Sydney Powerhouse Museum.



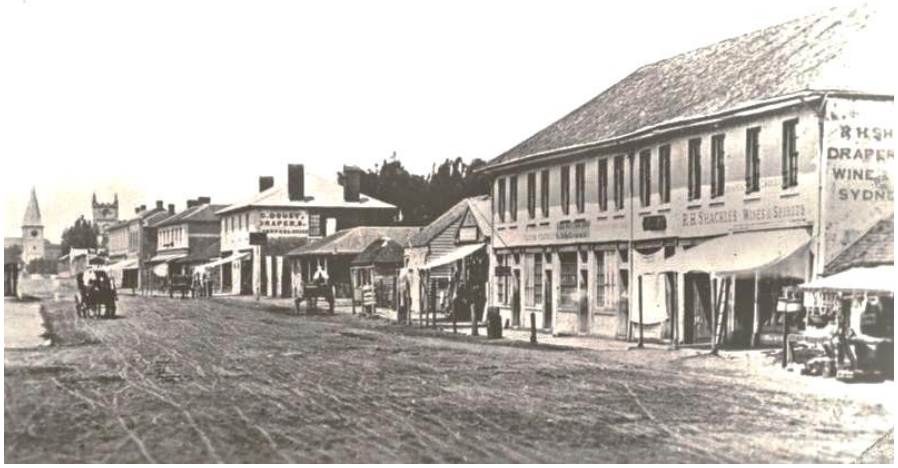
The Parramatta Junction site of 1855 could still be made out in this photo from 1943 (the top arrow points to Beckett's Bridge crossing Beckett's Creek)



Parramatta Junction station near Granville (dated after Parramatta line extension in 1860) [511]



Early plan for the Sydney rail network. Arrow points to the 1855 Parramatta Junction station site.



Church Street Parramatta with St John's church in the distance (taken about 1860) [512]

In 1862 the Parramatta Municipal Council was formed and one of their first initiatives was to light George Street with kerosene lamps. In 1873 the kerosene lighting system was replaced with gas and in 1913 an electric power station was established in Macquarie Street and distributed across Parramatta and western Sydney via newly formed Prospect Electricity. [513]

Daniel Brien Jr was active in the local business community and in 1875 stood for election to the Parramatta Municipal Council. He was beaten by John Pye, another member of the Seven Hills pioneering families. The news paper article from the SMH on 9th Sep 1875 is reproduced below.

ELECTION OF AN ALDERMAN AT PARRAMATTA. —The nomination of candidates to supply the extraordinary vacancy in Forest Ward, caused by the supervening disqualification of Alderman Pye, who, through a severe illness, had been absent from the meetings of the Council for more than three successive months without leave, took place on the 1st instant. The mayor of Parramatta (Mr. C. J. Byrnes, M.L.A.) read nominations of Messrs. James Pye, Daniel Brien, and Samuel Hill, and also a notice of withdrawal by the latter. The two contending candidates then briefly addressed the electors. The polling took place on the 4th instant, and was rather a spirited contest. About half-an-hour after the doors were closed the Returning-officer declared the result to be—Mr. James Pye 104, and Mr. Daniel Brien 84 votes. On the 6th instant, at noon, in the Court-house, the Returning-officer formally declared the return of Mr. Pye. Both candidates were present, and briefly gave expression to their feelings, after which a vote of thanks was given to the Returning-officer, and the few persons who had assembled quietly separated again.

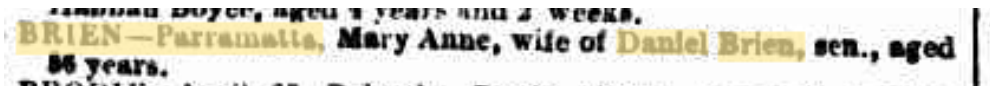
Parramatta Council elections SMH 9th September 1875

Daniel Brien Jr's wife Mary Ann Best died on the 6th April 1876 and is buried at St John's cemetery with a substantial monument dedicated to her.



Grave stone of Mary Ann Brien (née Best) at St John's Parramatta (2022)

Sacred to the memory of
MARY ANN
The beloved wife of
DANIEL BRIEN
died April 6th 1876
Aged 56 years



BRIEN—Parramatta, Mary Anne, wife of Daniel Brien, sen., aged 56 years.

Mary Ann Brien (née Best) Parramatta Argus 6th May 1876 -note that Daniel Brien Jr is described as Daniel Brien Sen (as he in turn had a son named Daniel Brien)

Shortly after Mary Ann Brien's death in 1876, a notice appears in the SMH for the sale of the 'Rising Sun hotel'.

FOR SALE, a Bargain.—PUBLIC-HOUSE, known as THE RISING SUN, adjoining Mr. French's tweed factory, Church-street, Parramatta North, now occupied by Mr. Daniel Brien, jun. Lease terminates 30th June, 1877. Terms:—One-third of the purchase money in cash, the remainder payable within two or three years by instalments. Apply to Mrs. W. GROVES, Church-street, Parramatta.

SMH Saturday 30th September 1876

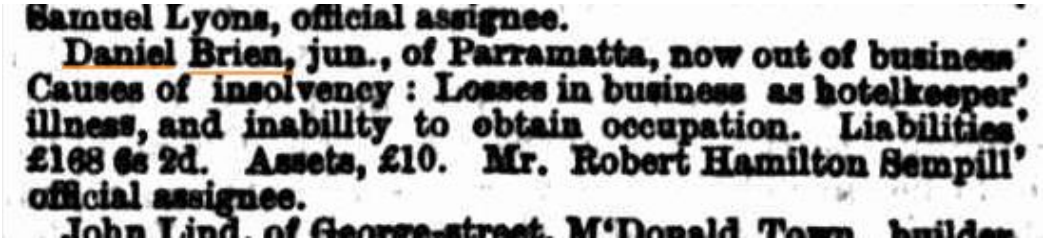


Drawing of the 'Rising Sun' hotel in Parramatta, The Illustrated Sydney News 6th May 1854

The Parramatta Archaeological Management Unit provides the following description: "The Rising Sun Hotel (on the northern outskirts of Parramatta near the bridge over Hunt's Creek) served travellers on the busy Windsor Road. It was the first inn reached by travellers from Windsor.

Offered for sale in 1854, it resembled a house with two wings and a central verandah. The northern room was the taproom and bar, entered from the stable yard or roadway. The central portion and the southern wing had suites of bedrooms and parlours. A verandah and flagged court led to the separate kitchen, scullery and hen roost. At the rear were stables for eighteen horses, a coach house and cesspit. Underneath were stone flagged cellars. The house was well supplied with water from nearby Hunt's Creek. In 1888, it became the site for the new St Monica's church and school."

In Jan 1878 Daniel Brien Jr's health deteriorated and a notice appeared indicating that Daniel was suffering an illness, unable to work & was insolvent.



Samuel Lyons, official assignee.
Daniel Brien, jun., of Parramatta, now out of business' Causes of insolvency : Losses in business as hotelkeeper' illness, and inability to obtain occupation. Liabilities' £168 6s 2d. Assets, £10. Mr. Robert Hamilton Sempill' official assignee.
John Lind, of George-street, M'Donald Town, builder

Daniel Brien Jr mentioned in the Freeman's Journal Saturday 19th January 1878

Daniel Brien Jr died at Harold St Parramatta on the 15th March 1878 and had a Catholic burial at St Patrick's cemetery Parramatta. The cause of his death was described as "Dropsy."

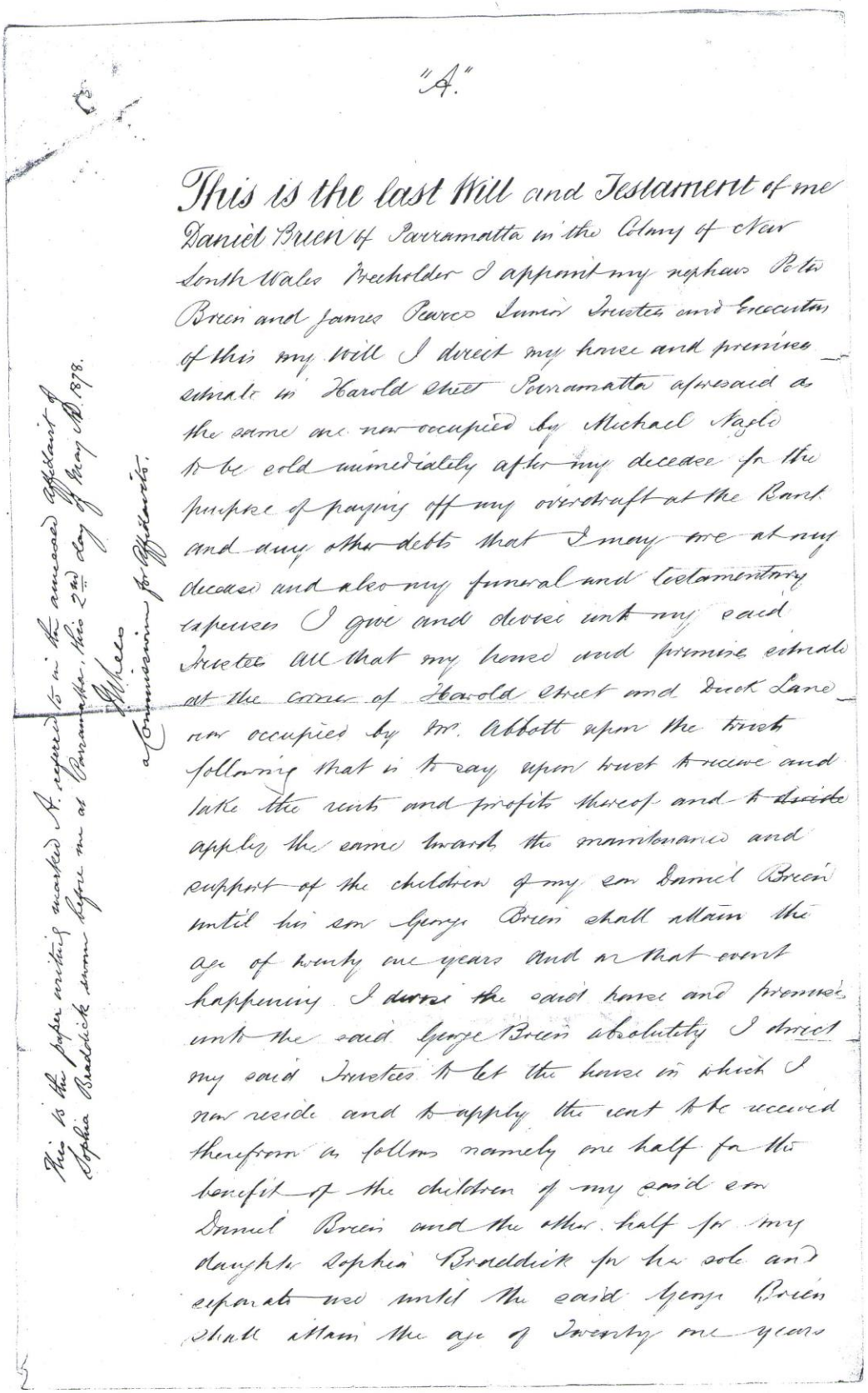
DEATH CERTIFICATE

Date and place of death	Name and occupation	Sex and age	Cause of Death Duration of last illness; medical attendant; when he last saw deceased	Name and occupation of father. Name and maiden surname of mother	Informant
15 March 1878 82 Harold St Parramatta	Daniel Brien	male 63 years	(1) Hepatitis, Dropsy (2) 10 weeks (3) Jno Butler (4) 15 March 1878	(1) Daniel Brien (2) Farmer (3) unknown	Certified by Sophia Braddick daughter Parramatta

Particulars of Registration	When and where buried; name of undertaker	Name and religion of Minister and names of witnesses of burial	Where born and how long in the Australasian Colonies or States	Place of marriage, age, and to whom	Children of marriage
(1) J. M. Lees (2) 9th April 1878 (3) Parramatta	16 March 1878 Roman Catholic Cemetery Parramatta Thomas Williams	John Rigney Church of Rome Robert Williamson William Ring	Ireland Hibernia unknown	(1) Rural (2) 23 years (3) Mayfield Rest	Daniel living Sophia living one male deceased No further information given

Death Certificate of Daniel Brien Jr 15th March 1878

Will of Daniel Brien Jr dated 6th February 1878



"A."

This is the last Will and Testament of me Daniel Brien of Parramatta in the Colony of New South Wales Freeholder I appoint my nephews Peter Brien and James Pearce Junior Trustees and Executors of this my Will I direct my house and premises situate in Harold Street Parramatta aforesaid & the same are now occupied by Michael Nagle to be sold immediately after my decease for the purpose of paying off my overdraft at the Bank and any other debts that I may owe at my decease and also my funeral and testamentary expenses I give and devise unto my said Trustees all that my house and premises situate at the corner of Harold Street and Duck Lane now occupied by Mr. Abbott upon the trusts following that is to say upon trust to receive and take the rents and profits thereof and to divide apply the same towards the maintenance and support of the children of my son Daniel Brien until his son George Brien shall attain the age of twenty one years and on that event happening I devise the said house and premises unto the said George Brien absolutely I direct my said Trustees to let the house in which I now reside and to apply the rent to be received therefrom as follows namely one half for the benefit of the children of my said son Daniel Brien and the other half for my daughter Sophia Braddick for her sole and separate use until the said George Brien shall attain the age of twenty one years

This is the paper writing marked A. referred to in the annexed Affidavit of Sophia Braddick sworn before me at Parramatta this 2nd day of May A.D. 1878.

A Commissioner for Affidavits.

and on that event happening I devise the said house and premises unto the said Sophia Braddick for life and after her death to such of her children as she may appoint I give and bequeath all my wearing apparel to my son Daniel Breen the feather bed upon which I lie to the said Sophia Braddick and as to the rest of my furniture and effects I give and bequeath the same equally between the said Sophia Braddick and Bridget Breen except the rest of the bedding which I give and bequeath to Bridget Breen the wife of my said son Daniel Breen. In witness I have hereunto set my hand this sixth day of February in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and seventy eight

Daniel Breen

Signed by the said Testator Daniel Breen as and for his last will and Testament in the presence of us present at the same time who at his request in his presence and in the presence of each have subscribed our names as witnesses

L. F. Billyard
Sol. Parramatta

F. M. Overton
Auctioneer Parramatta

House in Harold Street Parramatta

Daniel Brien Jr mentions in his will dated 6th Feb 1878 a house located on the Cr of Harold Street & Duck Lane Parramatta. Duck Lane today is known as Trott Street. [514] An old house still sits at this location. I have no information on whether it was Daniel Brien's, but it is of the correct era.



Old house located on the Cr of Harold and Trott Streets Parramatta.

This is the location mentioned in Daniel Brien's will dated 6th February 1878.

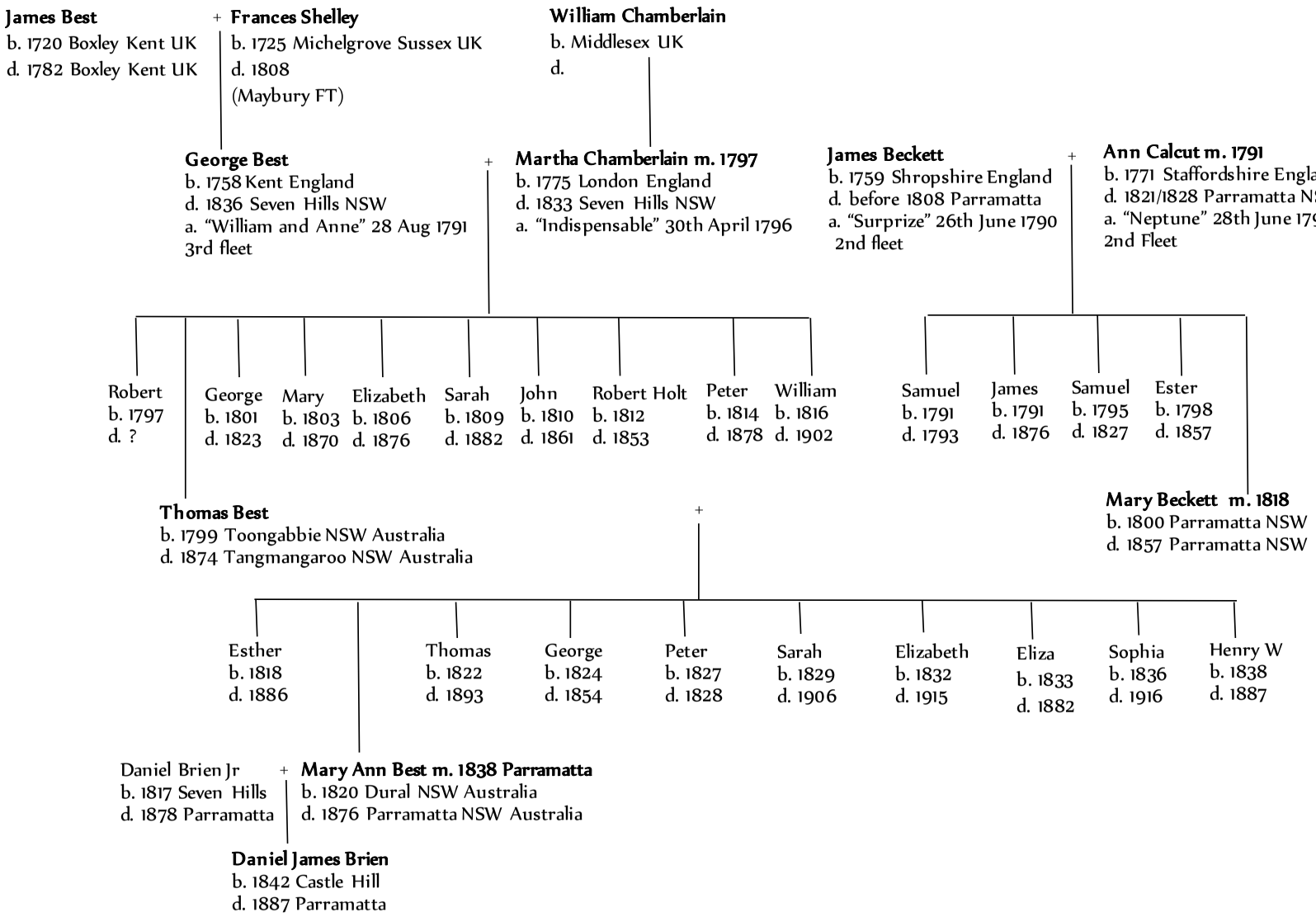
Notice relating to the death of Daniel Brien Jr 19th July 1878 NSW Gazette

In the estate of Daniel Brien, late of Harold-street, Parramatta, in the Colony of New South Wales, landowner, deceased.

PURSUANT to the Trust Property Act of 1862: Notice is hereby given that all creditors and others having claims against the estate of the abovenamed Daniel Brien, who died on or about the 10th day of March last, and administration with whose will annexed was on the 30th day of May last granted by the Supreme Court of New South Wales, in its Ecclesiastical Jurisdiction, to Sophia Braddick, the wife of Edward Braddick, of Parramatta aforesaid, publican, are hereby required to send in particulars of such claims, addressed to the Office of Sydney Farquhar Billyard, George-street, Parramatta, on or before the twelfth day of August next, after which date the said Sophia Braddick will proceed to distribute the assets of the said Daniel Brien, deceased, having regard only to the claims of which she shall then have notice.—Dated this 12th day of July, A.D. 1878.

SYDNEY FARQUHAR BILLYARD,
Proctor for Administratrix,
George-street, Parramatta.

The Sophia Braddick mentioned in the article is Daniel Brien Jr's eldest daughter (Sophia Brien - who married Edward Braddick in 1864).

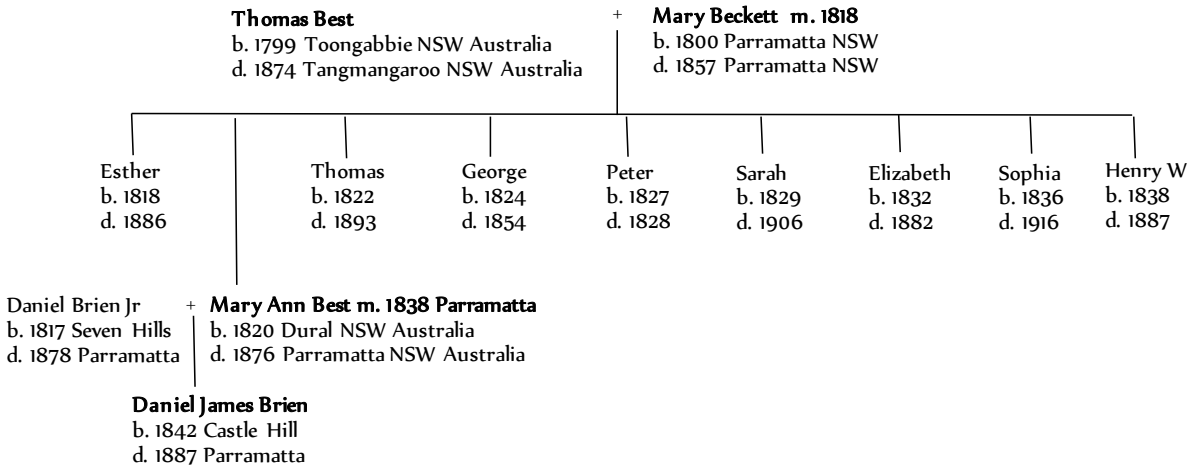

James Best
b. 1720 Boxley Kent UK
d. 1782 Boxley Kent UK
+
Frances Shelley
b. 1725 Michelgrove Sussex UK
d. 1808
(Maybury FT)
William Chamberlain
b. Middlesex UK
d.
George Best
b. 1758 Kent England
d. 1836 Seven Hills NSW
a. "William and Anne" 28 Aug 1791
3rd fleet
+
Martha Chamberlain m. 1797
b. 1775 London England
d. 1833 Seven Hills NSW
a. "Indispensable" 30th April 1796
James Beckett
b. 1759 Shropshire England
d. before 1808 Parramatta
a. "Surprize" 26th June 1790
2nd fleet
+
Ann Calcut m. 1791
b. 1771 Staffordshire England
d. 1821/1828 Parramatta NSW
a. "Neptune" 28th June 1790
2nd Fleet
Robert
b. 1797
d. ?
George
b. 1801
d. 1823
Mary
b. 1803
d. 1870
Elizabeth
b. 1806
d. 1876
Sarah
b. 1809
d. 1882
John
b. 1810
d. 1861
Robert Holt
b. 1812
d. 1853
Peter
b. 1814
d. 1878
William
b. 1816
d. 1902
Samuel
b. 1791
d. 1793
James
b. 1791
d. 1876
Samuel
b. 1795
d. 1827
Ester
b. 1798
d. 1857
Thomas Best
b. 1799 Toongabbie NSW Australia
d. 1874 Tangmangaroo NSW Australia
+
Mary Beckett m. 1818
b. 1800 Parramatta NSW
d. 1857 Parramatta NSW
Esther
b. 1818
d. 1886
Thomas
b. 1822
d. 1893
George
b. 1824
d. 1854
Peter
b. 1827
d. 1828
Sarah
b. 1829
d. 1906
Elizabeth
b. 1832
d. 1915
Eliza
b. 1833
d. 1882
Sophia
b. 1836
d. 1916
Henry W
b. 1838
d. 1887
Daniel Brien Jr
b. 1817 Seven Hills
d. 1878 Parramatta
+
Mary Ann Best m. 1838 Parramatta
b. 1820 Dural NSW Australia
d. 1876 Parramatta NSW Australia
Daniel James Brien
b. 1842 Castle Hill
d. 1887 Parramatta

Mary Ann Best's parents - Thomas Best b.1799 & Mary Beckett b.1800

Thomas Best was the eldest surviving son of George Best and Martha Chamberlain, both of whom were convicts. Thomas was born at Toongabbie on the 20th June 1799 and was baptised at St John's church, Parramatta.

Mary Beckett was the daughter of James Beckett and Ann Calcut both of whom arrived in NSW as convicts on the 2nd fleet in 1790. Mary was born at Parramatta on the 31st July 1800.

Thomas Best and Mary Beckett were married at St John's church Parramatta on 16th February 1818. Their second child, Mary Ann Best born in 1820 was our ancestor.



Children of Thomas Best and Mary Beckett

In 1802 Governor King reserved an area for a Government Farm, which approximates the boundaries of the Blacktown City area. This was known as the Government Stock Farm at Rooty Hill. In 1805 the area in the east of this land was proclaimed as a Common for the Prospect farmers. Known as the 'Prospect Common' it was situated in the Toongabbie area and in the years that followed, the area now known as Blacktown City district became a large grazing area for the Government's livestock. [515] Thomas Best was one who took advantage of the grazing land at Prospect Common.

From 1810 onwards Governor Lachlan Macquarie started granting large parcels of the Government Stock Farm to private ownership. By 1819 the area of the Common had reduced so much that Thomas Best decided it was no longer viable and he moved his family to Dural, becoming one of the earliest settler families in what is now Hornsby shire. [516]

In 1824 Thomas Best was granted 60-acres of land between "Castle Hill and Portland Head", near Middle Dural. The application had been supported by the Rev Samuel Marsden as well as Magistrate John Campbell and shows the good terms his father, George Best, had with influential people in the early colony. In the 1828 census return Thomas Best states that Thomas Best had 210 acres, with 100 cleared and 40 under cultivation. He owned 200 sheep, 50 horned cattle and five horses.

The Great North Road 1826 - 1836

The Hunter Valley was known by the Government in Sydney from as early as 1801 as a fertile area, but it was not until 1819 that Governor Macquarie considered opening the area to free settlement. At this time no road had been built from Sydney to the Hunter River region, and the only settlement in that area was at Newcastle, a place for convicts sentenced to secondary punishment.

In 1822 the Newcastle convicts were resettled at Port Macquarie and Governor Macquarie looked at ways to open up the Hunter region for settlement. Access to the lower end of the Hunter Valley was still by water, although a few rough cattle tracks existed, but they were arduous and circuitous and considered to be of little use to most of the settlers in the valley.

It became apparent to the Government that there was an urgent need for better overland access to the Hunter Valley from Sydney. The Great North Road was planned to fulfil this need.

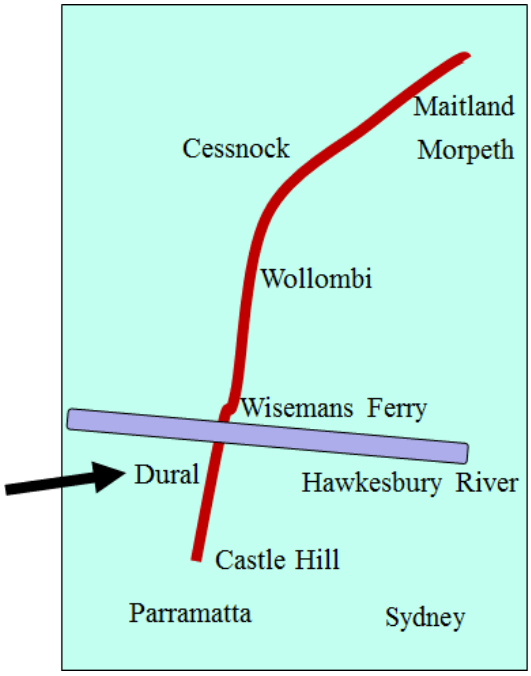
At the same time its construction would be able to utilise some of the growing numbers of convicts from the colony as well as remove them from settled areas. "The Great North Road was a signifier of the outlooks of early colonial society. Its magnificent structures were to be powerful, tangible symbols of the colony's perceived place and role in the course of the empire, unmistakable evidence that the 'civilised state' was being attained, and a triumph over the rugged and inhospitable landscape separating the centre of Sydney from the 'garden of the colony', the Hunter Valley." [517]

In September 1826 construction began of a road from Castle Hill North to Wiseman's Ferry by 67 convicts supervised by soldiers of the Royal Staff Corps. Known as the 'Great North Road' it was planned to connect Sydney with the growing towns of Cessnock, Maitland, Singleton and Morpeth.

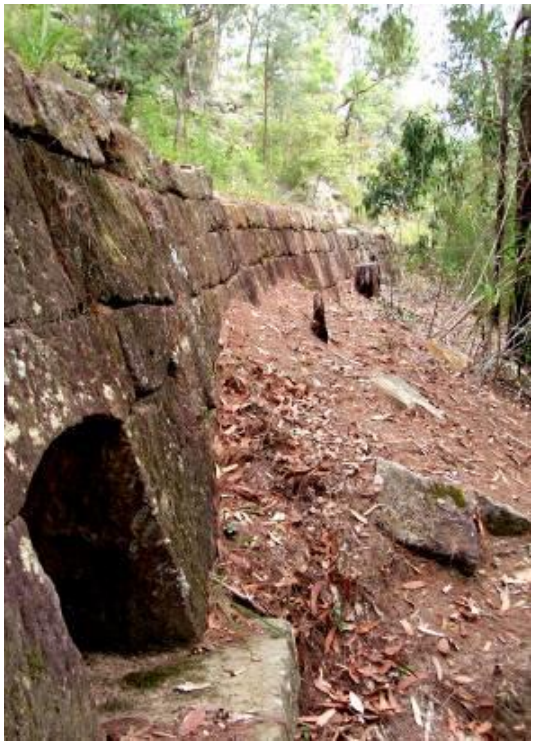
Simplified map of the Great North Road. It ran for about 150 Km from Parramatta through Castle Hill to the Hunter Valley towns of Cessnock, Maitland, Singleton and Morpeth.

It crossed the Hawkesbury River at Wisemans Ferry.

The arrow points to Dural where Thomas Best established an Inn known as the "Bird in hand" in 1829.



By 1827 convict numbers had risen to 200 and comprised of four groups. By 1828 the road was trafficable to Wisemans Ferry. By the end of 1828 up to 700 convicts were employed on the section north of Wisemans Ferry.



Sections of the Great North Road remain today

A correspondent from the 'Australian' traveled along it and wrote:

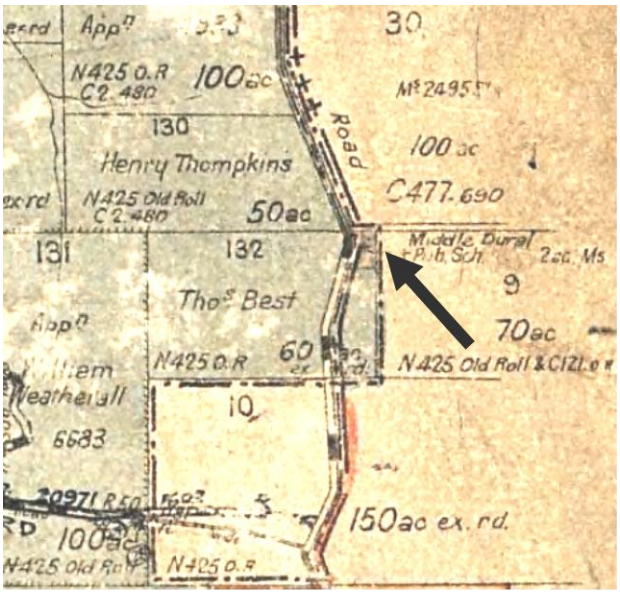
"Riding through the silent and thickly wooded forests of Dural the sudden crash of an enormous tree (ironbark) notified our near approach to the iron gangs making the road. About fifty men all with chains about their legs were employed a little beyond the huts at the Chain of Ponds under an overseer from the Prisoners' Barracks: some in felling, some in stumping and some in burning off, others with large handspikes were rolling the trunks of the prostrate trees to the side of the road.

It was a black and busy scene. The men touched their caps as I walked past them and before the clanking sound of their irons was lost it became necessary to look for the path and the marked trees."

Part of the road crossed Thomas Best's Dural property from north to south, and it gave Thomas the idea of opening an Inn to serve the passing travelers. In 1828 Thomas Best forwarded a submission to the Magistrates at Parramatta indicating that he had built a substantial house (with 6 rooms) and wanted to apply for a "Free license for an inn."

The correspondence indicates that the building was completed in 1828, but that Governor Darling presented obstacles in the granting of the license, largely on complaint of Solomon Wiseman (of Wisemans Ferry), who also was planning to establish an inn near where the Northern Road crosses the Hawkesbury River.

By 1829 Thomas Best had overcome all opposition to his inn and began trading as the "Bird in hand." He received a good reputation from travelers on the Great North Road to Newcastle.



Parish map of 'Nelson' parish, showing Thomas Best's 60-acre land grant with the Great North Road traversing the property.

Arrow points to the current location of the Middle Dural Public School which is the Approx. location of Thomas Best's 'Bird in hand' inn.

A correspondent to 'The Sydney Morning Herald' spent a night or two at Thomas and Mary Best's Inn in 1831 and had this to say: "It is much to be regretted there is not another Inn or some sort of accommodation for travelers between Best's and Wiseman's. It is a long ride with no other refreshment other than an elegant water-hole affords, which I was informed the other day I should find at the Finger Board, about ten miles from the latter place. A licensed house about there I think would answer well now the Great North Road is open and so much frequented.

The accommodation at Best's is certainly of the first order and the amiable hostess never fails by her polite attention and urbanity of manners to give the greatest satisfaction to all her visitors."



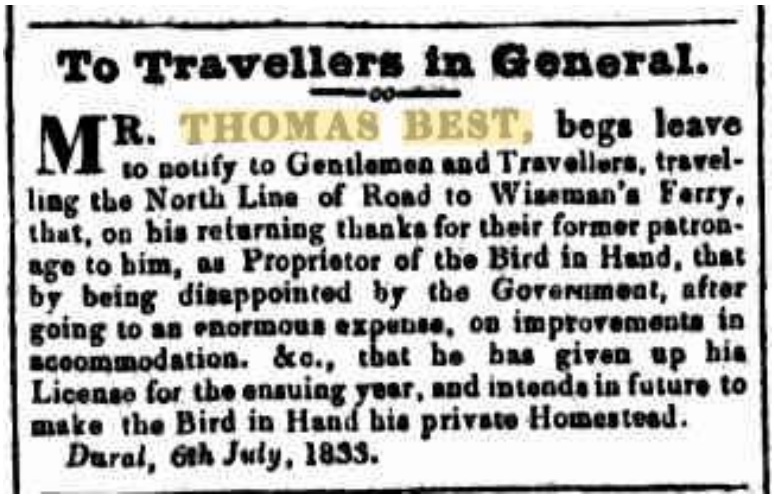
Middle Dural Public School today - close to where the 'Bird in hand' hotel was located

By mid 1831 however, steam ships were introduced between Sydney and the Hunter Valley. These were faster and more reliable than previous water transport and quickly became the preferred mode of transport to the Hunter Valley.

By 1836, as the few remaining convict gangs were completing the last, northern sections of the Great North Road, it had been almost entirely abandoned as a route to the Hunter Valley, and parts of the road fell quickly into disrepair through neglect. [518]

The writing must have been in the wall as by July 1833 Thomas Best had decided to close the "Bird in hand" inn and use the premises as a private residence for his family.

Notice to close the inn on the Great North Road
SMH 13th July 1833



To Travellers in General.

MR. THOMAS BEST, begs leave to notify to Gentlemen and Travellers, travelling the North Line of Road to Wiseman's Ferry, that, on his returning thanks for their former patronage to him, as Proprietor of the Bird in Hand, that by being disappointed by the Government, after going to an enormous expense, on improvements in accommodation. &c., that he has given up his License for the ensuing year, and intends in future to make the Bird in Hand his private Homestead.

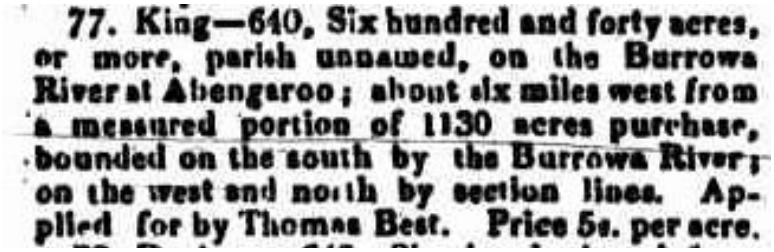
Dural, 6th July, 1833.

By 1835 Thomas Best had established an orchard on his Middle Dural property. [519]

On the 6th January 1836 Thomas Best purchased 640 acres for 5s per acre, at Tangmangaroo near Yass in the Parish of Crosby, Co. King, located in the Southern Tablelands of New South Wales, 27 Km south of the town of Boorowa. This land is close to where his brothers Robert & Peter Best had land on the Yass plains and Wagga Wagga.



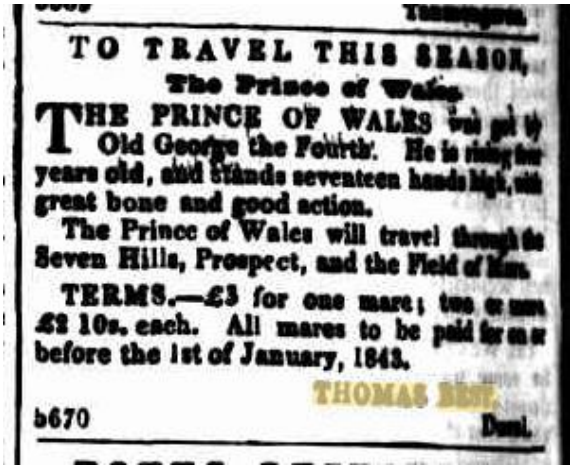
Tangmangaroo



77. King—640, Six hundred and forty acres, or more, parish unnamed, on the Burrowa River at Abengaroo; about six miles west from a measured portion of 1130 acres purchase, bounded on the south by the Burrowa River; on the west and north by section lines. Applied for by Thomas Best. Price 5s. per acre.

Thomas Best bids to purchase the Tangmangaroo property SMH January 1836

Thomas Best was a keen horse breeder and the SMH often contains adverts for services of his horses. Some examples from 1842 and 1843 are shown.



TO TRAVEL THIS SEASON,
The Prince of Wales.

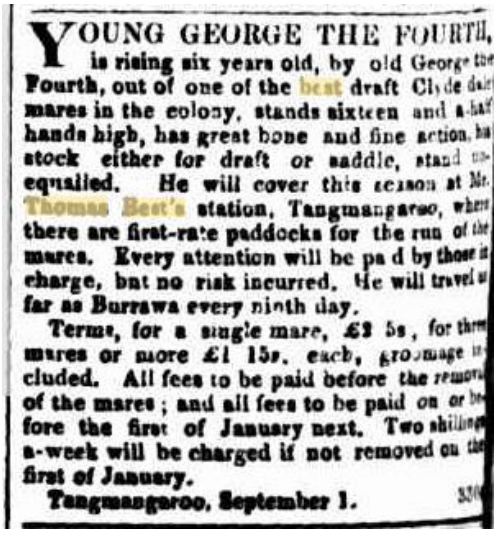
THE PRINCE OF WALES was got by Old George the Fourth. He is rising four years old, and stands seventeen hands high, with great bone and good action.

The Prince of Wales will travel through the Seven Hills, Prospect, and the Field of Mars.

TERMS.—£3 for one mare; two or more £2 10s. each. All mares to be paid for on or before the 1st of January, 1843.

THOMAS BEST.

b670 Dural.



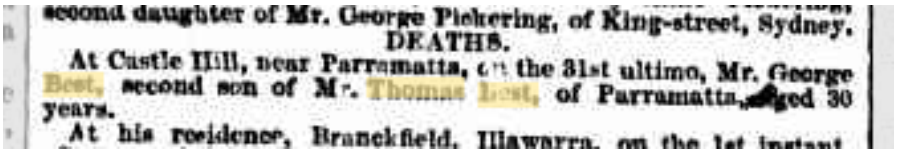
YOUNG GEORGE THE FOURTH, is rising six years old, by old George the Fourth, out of one of the best draft Clyde dairy mares in the colony, stands sixteen and a-half hands high, has great bone and fine action, his stock either for draft or saddle, stand unequalled. He will cover this season at Mr. Thomas Best's station, Tangmangaroo, where there are first-rate paddocks for the run of the mares. Every attention will be paid by those in charge, but no risk incurred. He will travel as far as Burrawa every ninth day.

Terms, for a single mare, £3 5s, for three mares or more £1 15s. each, groomage included. All fees to be paid before the removal of the mares; and all fees to be paid on or before the first of January next. Two shillings a-week will be charged if not removed on the first of January.

Tangmangaroo, September 1. 32[illegible]

On the 17th Jan 1846 The Cumberland Times reported that Thomas Best's horse 'Bailey' won a race against Mr. Coulton's horse. Coulton ran an inn called the 'Horse and Jockey' at Baulkham Hills and after the race they adjourned there for a drink.

In June 1854 Thomas & Mary's 2nd son, George Best died at Parramatta.



second daughter of Mr. George Pickering, of King-street, Sydney.

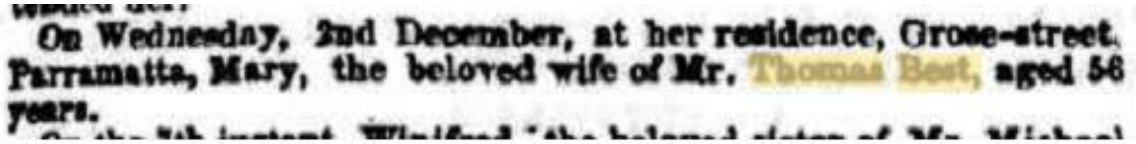
DEATHS.

At Castle Hill, near Parramatta, on the 31st ultimo, Mr. George Best, second son of Mr. Thomas Best, of Parramatta, aged 30 years.

At his residence, Branckfield, Illawarra, on the 1st instant

SMH 8th June 1854

Thomas and Mary Best owned a property in Grose St Parramatta. On the 2nd Dec 1857 Thomas Best's wife Mary Best (née Beckett) died at their property in Grose St Parramatta aged 57.



On Wednesday, 2nd December, at her residence, Grose-street, Parramatta, Mary, the beloved wife of Mr. Thomas Best, aged 56 years.

Death notice for Mary Best (née Beckett) SMH 8th Dec 1857

Sometime after the death of his wife Mary in 1857 Thomas Best appears to have made a permanent move to Tangmangaroo. I can't find any further references to him at Parramatta.

The Middle Dural orchard was then taken up by Thomas & Mary Best's son, Thomas Samuel Best. Thomas married Mary Ann Tuckwell in 1845 and they continued to work the property until Thomas died in 1893 aged 71. One of their sons, Henry Best, became one of Hornsby's first elected shire councillors and the family has descendants throughout the district. [520]

Henry Best, grand son of Thomas and Mary Best, became one of Hornsby's first elected shire councillors



By 1861 we find a reference to Thomas Best living with a widow, Ellen Buckley and her 2 children at Tangmangaroo.

In 1867 Ellen Buckley died at Thomas Best's Tangmangaroo property. One of his farm hands, Daniel McGregor accused Thomas Best of murdering her. At the inquest held at Yass Thomas was acquitted, testimony from doctor Morgan O'Connor states that he could not find any means by which Thomas could have committed the crime.

On the 26th January 1874 Thomas Best died at Tangmangaroo aged 75. His Brother & son were executors. Thomas Best is buried in plot 270 at the Gunning cemetery.



On 26th January 1874 Thomas Best died at Tangmangaroo. His Brother & son were executors.

The tomb of Thomas Best in plot 270 at the Gunning cemetery.

The location of Gunning township is very close to the 3849 acre property known as ‘Jerrawa’ that was purchased by Thomas Best’s father, George Best in 1834. County of King, Gunning Parish.

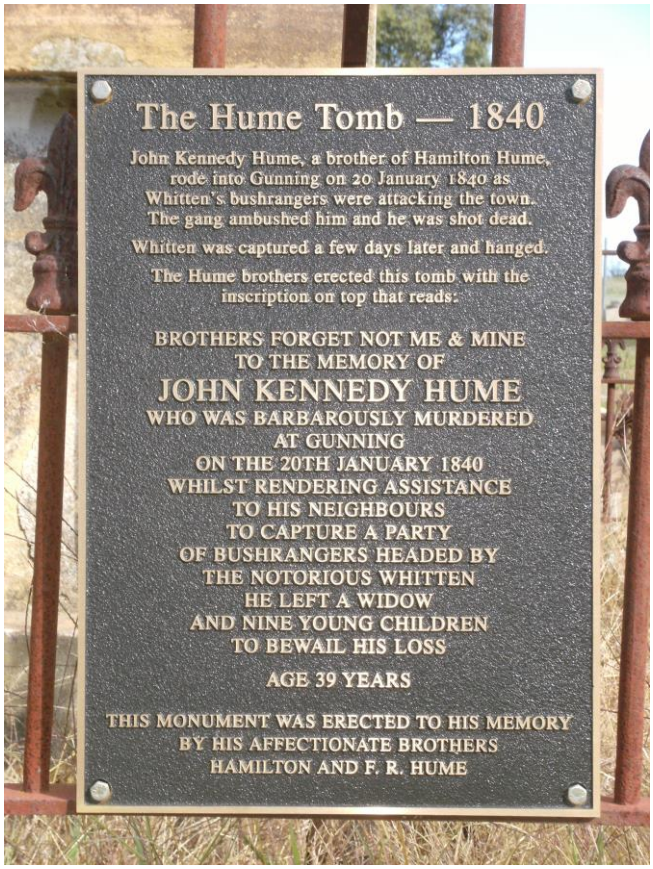
Many close relatives of the Briens and Bests are associated with the Gunning area, and some familiar names appear in Gunning cemetery. One notable grave is that of John Kennedy Hume (1800–1840); the brother of explorer Hamilton Hume.

John Kennedy Hume was murdered on the 20th January 1840 by the Bush Ranger gang known as “The Bathurst Mob” led by Thomas Whitton. Shortly before his death Kennedy Hume had heard shooting from his property a few Kilometers from Gunning and set off to provide assistance.

By the time Kennedy Hume reached Gunning township, the bushrangers had occupied Red John Cooper’s establishment. Kennedy Hume entered Cooper’s residence and was shot dead. He was just 39-years-old. [521]

We are related through marriage to Hamilton Hume in several ways. Two examples are through the daughters of Daniel Brien and May Ann Parker i.e. Jane b. 1811 and Mary Ann b. 1815.

1. Jane Brien - married Paul Huon, whose sister Elizabeth had a daughter Emma Huon who married Francis Rawdon Hume; the brother of Hamilton Hume.
2. Many Ann Brien - married Matthew Woodward Pearce, whose aunty Lydia Pearce married James Raworth Kennedy; the uncle of Hamilton Hume.



Plaque on the tomb of John Kennedy Hume (1800–1840) at Gunning cemetery NSW

Mary Ann Best's grand parents - George Best b.1758 & Martha Chamberlain b.1775

George Best was born about 1756 in Kent, England. Prior to arriving in Australia, he was a farmer in Sussex, England. George arrived in Australia on board the "William & Ann" on the 25th August 1791. He was convicted in 1790 at Sent Assizes, Kent, England, of stealing goods to the value of £5-0-3 of William Cheeseman the Elder. Almost immediately after arrival George was sent to the Government farm at Toongabbie which was run at the time by John Macarthur. In 1793 George became an overseer and seedsman.

Martha Chamberlain was born about 1776 in the parish of St Giles, Middlesex. England. She was found guilty of stealing goods to the value of 39 shillings, but not guilty of breaking and entering. She was sentenced to seven years in October 1795 and arrived in NSW on board the ship "Indispensable", arriving on the 30th April 1796.



Dyott Street London where Martha Chamberlain lived before being sent to NSW.

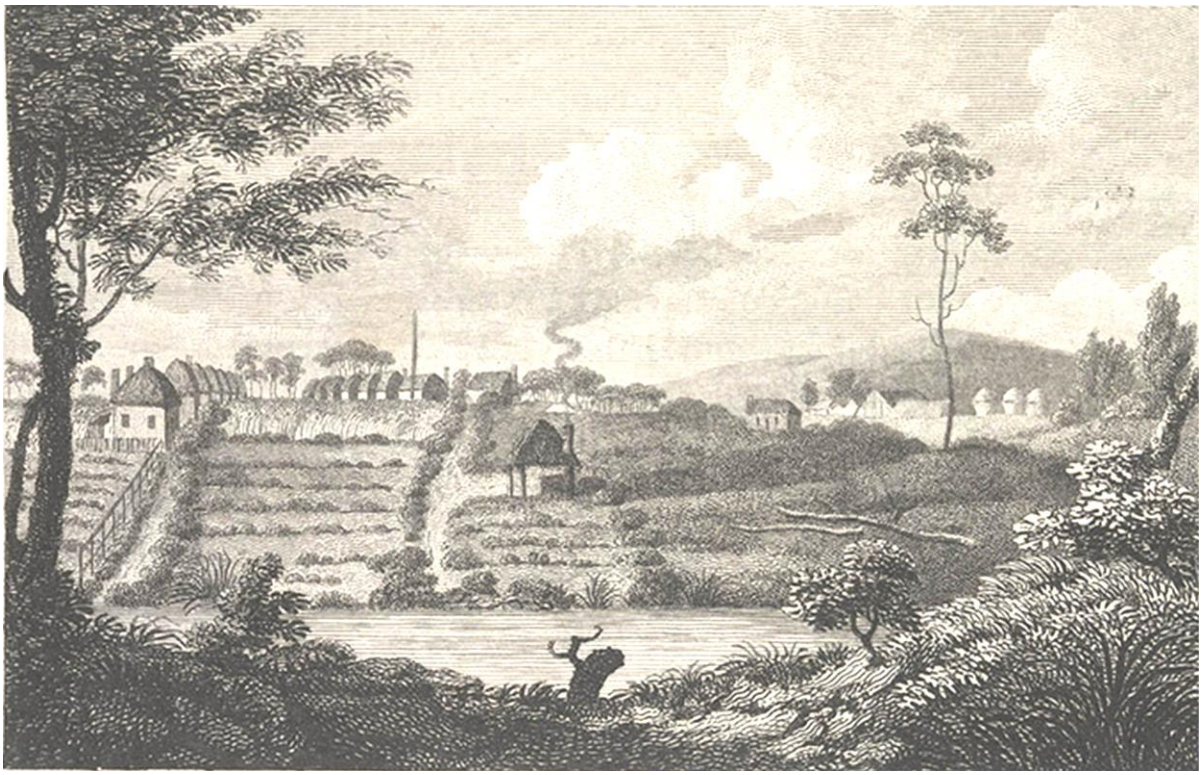


Bow Street Police Station in London where Martha Chamberlain was taken after being arrested.

In the early years of the NSW convict colonies, the fate of individual convicts turned largely on their perceived usefulness in creating a new society. George Best had an agricultural background gained in Sussex, a chiefly pastoral county noted for both its grain production and sheep farming industries.

In 1793, after having spent his first two years in the colony in 'government employ', George Best had come to the favorable attention of the authorities and was made a 'taskmaster' an 'overseer' as well as 'seed-master' at the Government Farm at Toongabbie, a position he held for seven years. At the time it was the principal farm of the colony and during Bests' period of tenure there were 1,000 acres under cultivation. [522]

It was during his time at the Toongabbie Government farm (1793-1800) that George Best met Lieutenant (later Captain) John Macarthur who was the farms administrator. It is unclear how close a relationship Best had with Macarthur, but within a few years they were neighbours with Best's 1803 property almost adjoining the Macarthur's 2200-acre Seven Hills farm.



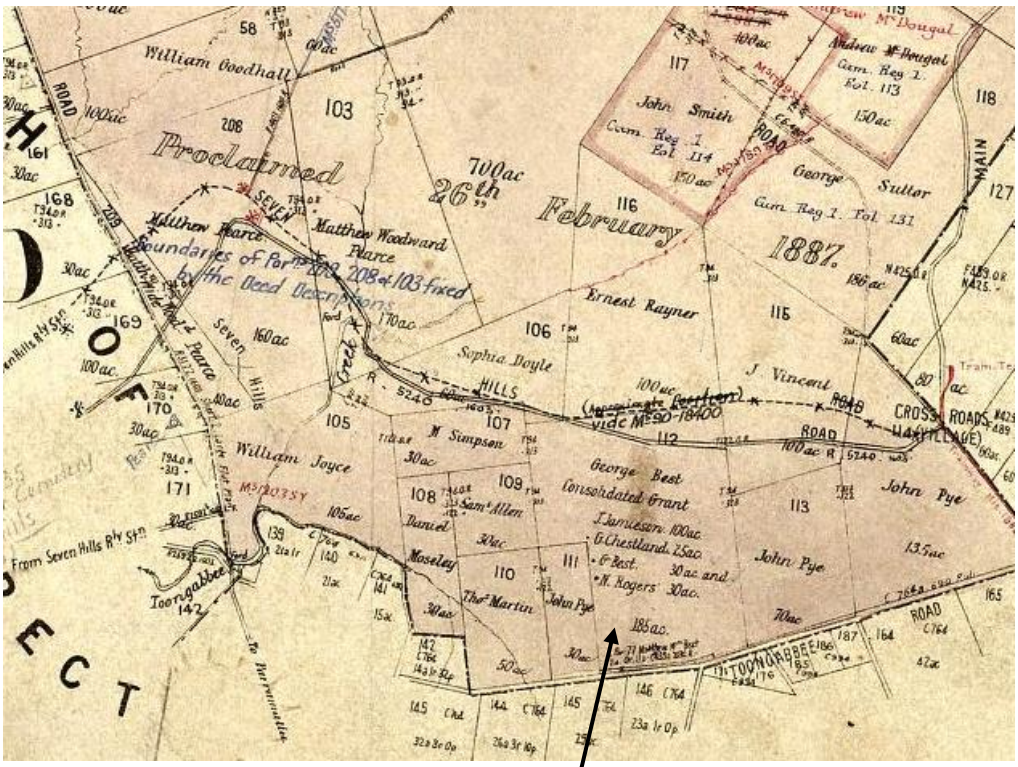
Government Farm at Toongabbie during George Best's time. Painted by William Lowry in 1798

On the 30th December 1796, while still working for the government, George Best received his first land grant; thirty acres on Seven Hills Road Toongabbie from Governor Hunter for which Best was to pay rent of one shilling per year commencing after ten years. George was also assigned a female servant named Martha Chamberlain. In 1800 George Best received a conditional pardon and an absolute pardon in 1804.

As often occurred after they were assigned as servants, Martha then married her employer on the 17th September 1797 at St John's church Parramatta. On the 20th June 1799 at Toongabbie, Martha gave birth to a son who was named Thomas Best, our ancestor. By the 10th April 1802, George was of such good character that he was permitted to possess one firearm and to have at least four convict servants assigned to work for him.

In mid-1801 Governor King allowed Nicholas Rogers to assign his thirty-acre Toongabbie farm to Best; the rental conditions being the same as those for Best's initial grant under Governor Hunter. Another grantee, John Jamieson, originally granted 100 acres, would eventually find his land consolidated into Best's growing holdings at Toongabbie, and together with further acreage granted on the 9th August 1803, Governor King consolidated Best's landholdings in the district to a total of 185 acres for a rent of three shillings per year commencing after five years.

The locality of George Best's 1803 farm was originally known as Toongabbie. This changed in 1960 with the opening of a new post office further west which took that name. The area surrounding the farm today is known as Baulkham Hills and a memory of his farm is marked by George Best Crescent. Some of his farm remains open space used as playing fields. [523]



George Best's 1803 185-acre consolidated land grant on Seven Hills Rd Baulkham Hills



The outline of George Best's 185-acre consolidated land grant is still evident today



Playing fields on Seven Hills Road Baulkham Hills lie within George Best's 185-acre land grant

George was a competent and industrious farmer. He was mentioned in the diary of NSW Governor, Lachlan Macquarie who on Tuesday 11th December 1810 wrote: "I proceeded to visit those remaining farms in the Baulkham Hills and Toongabbie Districts, which I had not seen in my first excursion to these districts at the commencement of my tour of inspection in November.

These farms are in general poor ones and not productive, but I was highly gratified with the appearance of two of them, namely those belonging to Best and Pye, two very industrious respectable settlers, who have their farms well cultivated and in most excellent order, with good offices, and comfortable decent dwelling houses." [524]

By 1810 George Best supplied wool to the Female Factory at Parramatta and received cloth in return. In 1811 George Best was granted a further 60 acres located near present day Seven Hills railway station by Governor Lachlan Macquarie. [525]



George Best 60 acres land grant by Governor Lachlan Macquarie dated 4th March 1811

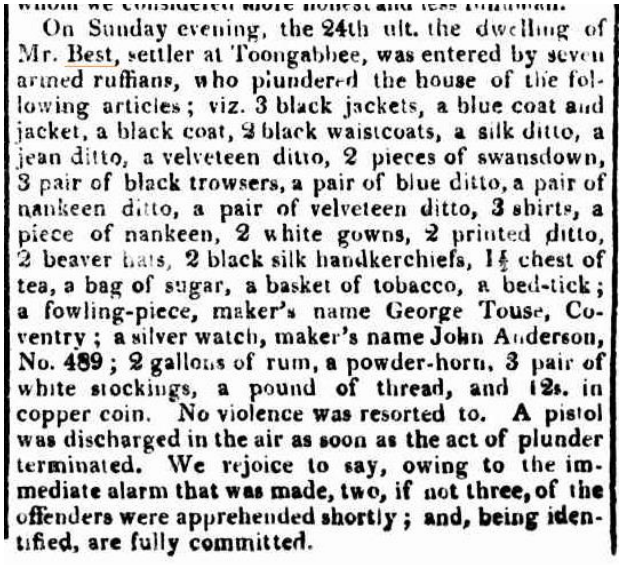
In 1813 a severe drought set in impacting the entire colony but by this stage George Best appears to have had sufficient resources to remain unaffected. By 1814 George was being issued with cattle from the government herds and he purchased a cart horse from the government in 1816.

By 1820, George had cleared one hundred and sixty of the four hundred and fifty-five acres he had accumulated at Toongabbie. By that time, four convicts were working for him on his land, while he was paying two free workers to put up posts and rails, one free man as a shepherd and two ticket-of-leave men to clear stumps.

George Best successfully allied himself with a number of early free settlers and members of the military establishment (NSW Corps). These people included soldier settlers Matthew Pearce, Jonas Bradley and Bradley's son William (later the Honorable William Bradley, pioneer landowner and industrialist), and Edward Smith Hall (landholder, banker, coroner and member of the Governor's Court). George Best engaged in numerous pastoral joint ventures with these individuals.

His alliances and dealings with those of even higher social standing were also noteworthy, such as those with Gregory Blaxland, free settler, explorer, and 'gentleman adventurer'. According to Blaxland's account books (Col Sec 1807), Best sold Blaxland twenty Merino sheep for the sum of £60 in 1807. A further important alliance was forged with the Reverend, later Magistrate, Samuel Marsden. Marsden had married George Best and Martha Chamberlain in 1797 and, together with Magistrate John Campbell, supported an application for a grant of land by Best's eldest surviving son Thomas Best (our ancestor).

George and Martha raised a family of nine children. Although uneducated themselves, they sent one daughter to a boarding school in Sydney and two sons were educated by William Crook at Parramatta. Their other children were educated at a private school that the Best's, along with a group of local landholders established at Seven Hills. Such luxuries were possible because George was one of the colony's most successful farmers. [526]



On Sunday evening, the 24th ult. the dwelling of Mr. Best, settler at Toongabbee, was entered by seven armed ruffians, who plundered the house of the following articles; viz. 3 black jackets, a blue coat and jacket, a black coat, 2 black waistcoats, a silk ditto, a jean ditto, a velveteen ditto, 2 pieces of swansdown, 3 pair of black trowsers, a pair of blue ditto, a pair of nankeen ditto, a pair of velveteen ditto, 3 shirts, a piece of nankeen, 2 white gowns, 2 printed ditto, 2 beaver hats, 2 black silk handkerchiefs, 1½ chest of tea, a bag of sugar, a basket of tobacco, a bed-tick; a fowling-piece, maker's name George Touse, Coventry; a silver watch, maker's name John Anderson, No. 489; 2 gallons of rum, a powder-horn, 3 pair of white stockings, a pound of thread, and 12s. in copper coin. No violence was resorted to. A pistol was discharged in the air as soon as the act of plunder terminated. We rejoice to say, owing to the immediate alarm that was made, two, if not three, of the offenders were apprehended shortly; and, being identified, are fully committed.

George Best was targeted by thieves, Sydney Gazette 6th September 1822

George Best participated actively in the life of the colony, as a leading emancipist he was one of four to give expert evidence regarding establishing an agricultural industry in NSW before the Royal Commission conducted by John Bigge between 1819-1821. George testified about the difficulties faced by small farmers that made wheat growing uneconomic - expenses in clearing and fencing, labor costs, blight, moths, weevils, grasshoppers, droughts, floods and the cost of transporting to the commissariat stores.

By 1820 over-cropping was also a problem. Land that had once returned twenty bushels an acre later produced just eight. George had the means to return to England several times, including in 1824 on the schooner "Sally" to give further evidence to the Bigge Commission. [527]

John Bigge praised George Best in his 1823 report titled: '*The State of Agriculture and Trade in the Colony of New South Wales*' issued on the 13th March 1823, stating "In the neighborhood of Parramatta, the most favorable instances that have occurred of the effect of transportation are exhibited in the persons as well as the properties of those men who were transported in the early period of the colony; their names are George Best, John Pye and William Mobbs; they have been distinguished for the propriety of their conduct in the colony; for their respectful characters; for their unremitting industries; and the state of their farms and habitations attest, in a conspicuous manner, the united efforts of good conduct in New South Wales, and of industry when well applied."

On the 15th March 1821 George was given permission to pass with cattle through the Cowpastures to the country lying to the South West of the Bargo Brush. George and his sons also took stock to the Goulburn Plains, as well as to a run called 'Jerama' close to the site of present-day Gunning.

In 1823 one of his sons, George Jr Best was drowned while crossing the Wollondilly River as he returned from their run in the county of 'Argyle' called 'Farther Out' (in the vicinity of Gunning).

George Best Jr died Sydney Gazette 17th July 1823

A letter informs us that Mr. George Best, settler at Toongabbee, has lately met with an afflictive domestic occurrence in the loss of his second son, by drowning: an amiable and interesting youth. He had been commissioned by his father, it appears, to visit the county of Argyle, for the purpose of inspecting a herd of cattle depasturing in that part of the country. He fulfilled the duties of his commission, and was in the act of returning home, when the melancholy event transpired. In attempting to ford the Wollandary river, which had risen several feet during their absence, the much lamented young man, accompanied by a servant, was carried away by the strength of the current. The horses, which were attached to a cart, lost their feet. Mr. Best, after contending for some few minutes with the stream, disappeared to rise no more; and both horses were also drowned. The man providentially gained the opposite bank. Every effect to recover the body proved unavailing; and Mr. Best has to deplore the loss of an excellent son.

On 5 September 1826, a Government order allowed Governor Darling to create the 'limits of location'. Settlers were only permitted to take up land within this area. A further Government order of 14 October 1829 extended these boundaries to an area defined as the 'Nineteen Counties.' [528]

The order by Governor Darling had implications for George Best, as finding insufficient land within the 'limits of location' for their heards and flocks, the Bests became 'squatters' and pushed out beyond the settled districts or the boundaries 'beyond which land was neither sold or let'.

At first, they settled in the Yass Plains, with pastoral runs being established around Gunning. By the late 1820s George Best & his sons had pushed beyond where Yass is today and in 1832, they moved their herds across the Murrumbidgee river and were the first Europeans to settle south of the river.

George Best & his sons established a pastoral station at the site of a natural ford in the Murrumbidgee river which they named 'Wagga Wagga' run (after the local Wiradjuri Aborigines pointed to crows flying overhead a water hole and uttered the word, "Wagga" meaning "crow.")

By 1834 George & his sons had pushed further west and established the 'Buckingbong' station south of present day Narrandera. This run was passed to the Jenkins family in 1839.

	1801 Settlers' muster	1801 King's muster list[4]	1802 Land & Stock Muster	1820 *Col Sec*[3]	1820 Bigge Comm. Evidence[4]	1822 Muster	1828 Census
Total land (in acres)		90	85		455	735	805
Cleared land (in acres)		55	80		160	210	340
Cultivated land (in acres)					63		70
Wheat sown (in acres)	30	53	32			40	
Maize/corn sown (in acres)	12		25			20	
Wheat (in bushels)			30			20	
Maize (in bushels)			300			40	
Number of cattle			1	200		221	340
Number of sheep	2	1	3	600	230	200	1,140
Number of pigs	63	70	33			80	
Number of goats	7	3	4				
Number of horses		1	2			9	19

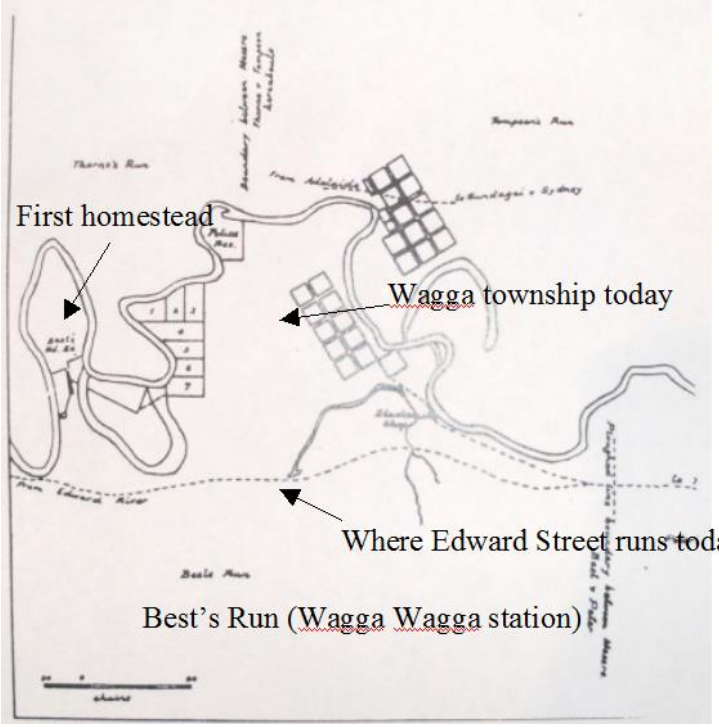
George Best's Assets 1801 – 1828 [529]

By 1836 Governor Bourke had to admit that it was impossible to restrain the advance of stockholders and in an effort to control the 'Squatting boom', an act of council was passed imposing an annual license of £10 on each squatter, which effectively made squatting legal.

At his death in 1836, George Best possessed 3,155 acres of land, in the Parramatta and Gunning / Yass districts as well as pastoral runs totaling 125,000 acres at Wagga and beyond. He left an estate valued at approximately £7,000 making George Best one of the wealthiest people to die in NSW before 1840. The family's pastoral holdings as squatters in the Riverina were ratified by license shortly after George Best's death. By 1839 the family's 'Wagga Wagga' station boasted 1,000 head of cattle, 1,400 sheep and 17 horses. [530]

After George Best's death the management of Wagga Wagga station was taken up by his son Robert Holt Best. In 1844 his wife Clara Brien and their children joined him on the property. By 1849 a settlement had been formally surveyed and established on this property and assumed the name "Wagga Wagga." Today Best Street runs through the town and Best Reserve and Flowerdale Lagoon are reminders of the Best family homestead called 'Flowerdale' located on the Western edge of the town.

There were other social dimensions to the lives of Best's children as a result of their father's wealth and success. Marriage patterns, were particularly evident among the sons and daughters of rural families and Best's children and grandchildren married others from prominent, land-owning families. His sons followed his example and became farmers and grazers, while his daughters became the wives of other successful landholders. Such links of the rural land-owning class, whether ex-convict or free, to the subsequent occupations of their children were well-established. [531]



Thomas S Townsend sketch of Wagga dated 27th April 1849 showing the proposed seven suburban allotments of Wagga Wagga township.

It also shows Best's run and the site of their first homestead named "Flowerdale."

In the 1830s and 1840s, squatters who had become licensed pastoralists held both economic and political sway. They represented the most influential pressure group in the colony. Particularly in the Wagga Wagga district, in the 1850s and 1860s the squatters maintained their supremacy politically, economically and socially, controlling the land, representing the district in parliament, as magistrates on the bench, and in establishing hospitals, schools and churches.[532]



Flowerdale homestead in Truscott Close Ashmont, Wagga.

Best Street and Best reserve, an area of parkland in Ashmont, both within the city area of Wagga Wagga have been named in honor of the Best family.



Signpost in Wagga pointing to the Best family cemetery.



Best Street Wagga Wagga

JOHN DILLON, Secretary.

THE Land advertised on the 19th February for Lease for one year, from 1st July, 1834, to 30th June, 1835, was purchased as under :—

Malmsbury parish, 4340 acres was leased to C. W. Wall

Bringellet, at Bathurst, 1280 acres to Thomas Collins

Jerrawa, 3849 acres to George Best

Somers, 1920 acres, to Thomas Collins

Marulan, 2750 acres to Enmund Lockyer

Limestone Plains, 640 acres to R. Campbell, senior

Nattai Creek, 6 sections to George Harper

Waibong, 2 sections to George Bowman

Lucan, 5 sections to Thomas Icely.

N. B.—The above Land was leased at 20s. for each section.

George Best's 'Jerrawa' property Sydney Gazette Saturday 19th Apr 1834

In 1834 George Best purchased 3849 acres known as Jerrawa, located at the present township of Gunning.

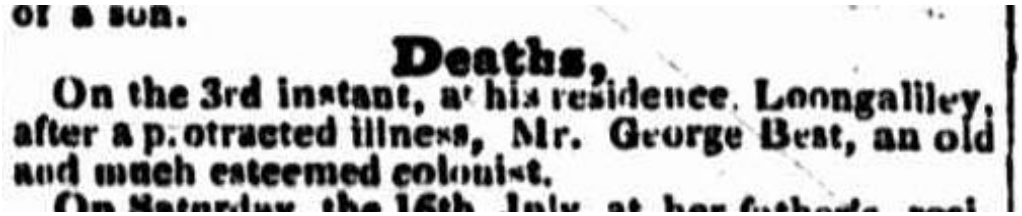
George Best was by any measure an extraordinary individual. With the support of his wife Martha he used his expertise, the wealth of the land, his industry, and his sobriety to pass from servitude to respectability. So much so that in many articles from the time George Best is described as a free settler.

He had clearly achieved so much that many people never realised that he had ever been a convict. George Best was one of a select group who rose to be members of Australia's pastoral ruling class known as the 'Squattocracy'. Even more than that, through educating, guiding and supporting his children he established a family dynasty of farmers and squatters that lasted well over 100 years. [533]

Martha Chamberlain (Best) died on the 14th March 1833 at Seven Hills. Her death was sudden and two days after her death an inquest was held at Toongabbie, the finding was that she "died by the visitation of god." [534] Martha was buried at St John's Cemetery, Parramatta.

George Best died on the 3rd July 1836 at Seven Hills. George was buried with his wife Martha on the 6th July at St John's Cemetery, Parramatta.

George Best's death notice in the 'Sydney Monitor' newspaper Saturday 23rd July 1836 states he died at a residence called "Loongaliley". I've not found any other reference to Loongaliley; it seems possible this was a typo in the newspaper in lieu of Toongabbie.



Deaths,

On the 3rd instant, at his residence, Loongaliley, after a protracted illness, Mr. George Best, an old and much esteemed colonist.

George Best's death reported in the Sydney Monitor Saturday 23rd July 1836



The Best family tomb at St Johns Parramatta (2022).



Best Family & Mary Ann Brien



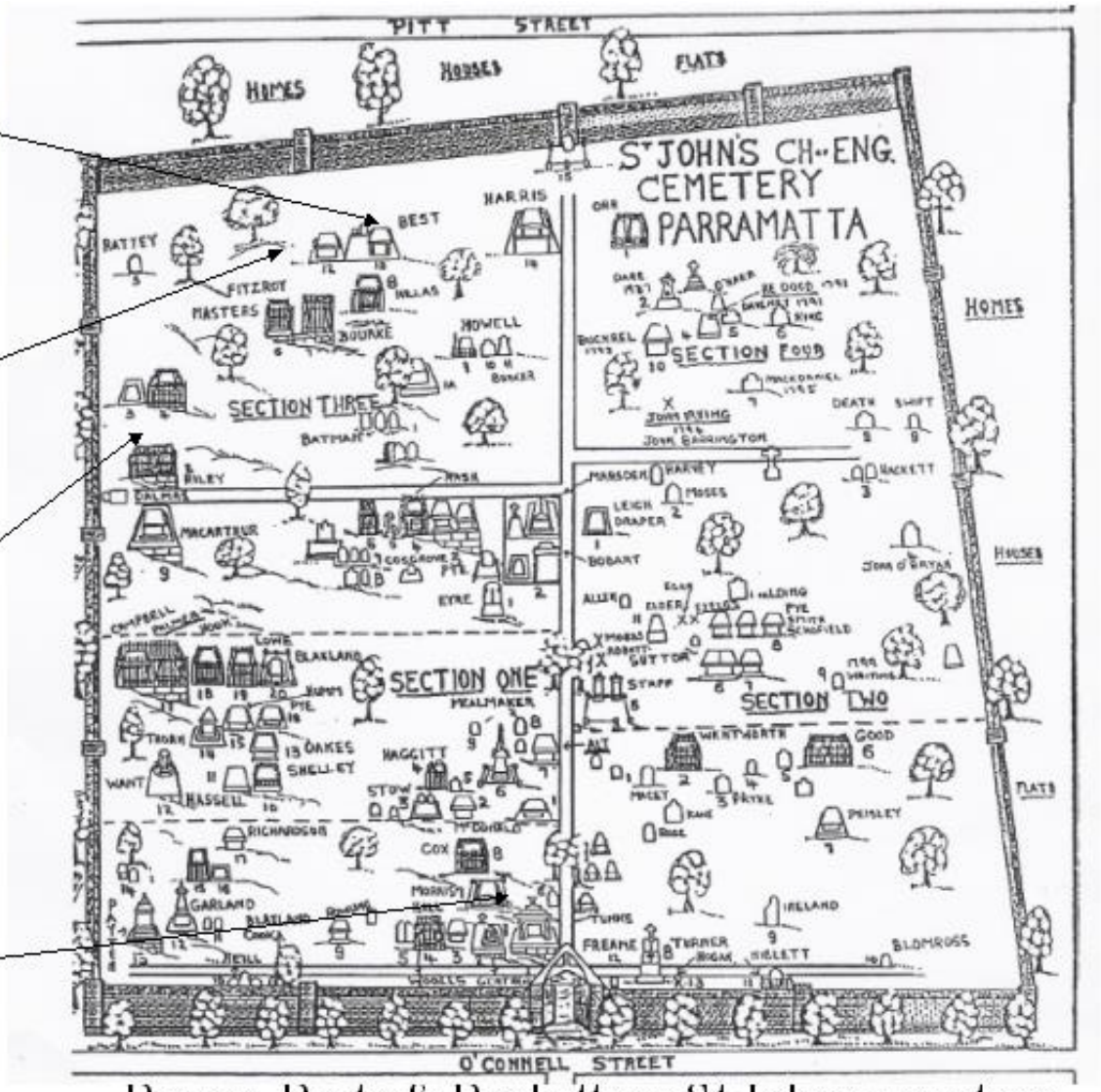
Samuel Beckett, son of James Beckett



Charlotte, wife of Timothy Brien



Ann Parker d. 1865
(Mary Anne Smith)



Briens, Bests & Becketts in St Johns cemetery

George Best and the Australian Wool Industry 1820 - 1890

Prior to 1820 the main exports from Australia were whaling and sealing, but these ocean-based industries provided little in the way of foreign income.

In 1797 British Captain Henry Waterhouse purchased thirteen Merino sheep in South Africa whilst journeying to Australia. These were no ordinary sheep, they were the finest pure Merino sheep and were direct descendants of the jealously guarded Escorial flocks, once owned by King Philip II of Spain. They had found their way to South Africa via the Dutch government and due to a dispute; they were forced to be sold. Henry Waterhouse brought the sheep to Sydney but only six survived the journey; Waterhouse then sold them to his friend Captain John Macarthur. [535] [536]

At this time John Macarthur was administrator at the Toongabbie Government Farm where our ancestor, convict George Best also worked as overseer and seed-master. About this time Macarthur purchased a farm at Seven Hills where he had been breeding Bengal and Irish rams & ewes. [537] Between 1796 and 1803 George Best acquired 185 acres at Seven Hills. Known as his 'consolidated property' it was located virtually adjacent to John Macarthur's Seven Hills farm.

By 1800 there were over 6,000 sheep in Sydney; mostly cross breeds. John Macarthur had the largest sheep flock in the country, many of which were penned at his Seven Hills property, but he had kept a small flock of pure Merinos separate. Interestingly, in July of that year he must have felt that there was no future in his breeding program as he offered governor King his entire flock at £5 per head. [538] [539]

Around this time George Best must have acquired some of John Macarthur's Merino sheep and was undertaking a breeding program of his own and was well advanced in breeding Merino sheep by 1807. The account books of the famous explorer Gregory Blaxland show Best sold Blaxland twenty Merino sheep for the sum of £60 in 1807. [540] Another document from 1810 states that George Best supplied wool to the Female Factory at Parramatta and received cloth in return. [541]

Whether George Best undertook Merino sheep breeding and wool production in conjunction with Macarthur, on behalf of Macarthur, or independent of Macarthur; we just don't know. [542]

Meanwhile, John Macarthur had a history of turbulent relationships with successive NSW Governors as well as his superior officers. In 1801 John Macarthur was involved in a duel with his superior, Colonel William Paterson, in which Paterson was wounded. As a result, in 1801 Macarthur was shipped back to England for Court Marshall.

While in London, Macarthur lobbied extensively for support of his wool production interests back in New South Wales. Macarthur had samples of the pure Merino wool and submitted them to a Committee of Manufacturers who reported that it was equal to any high-quality Spanish Wool. [543]

Macarthur arrived back in Sydney in June 1805 but more trouble struck soon after. In 1808 he was involved in the 'Rum Rebellion' against Governor Bligh. As a result of this event he again departed Australia for England arriving in London in 1809, and did not return until 1817. During this eight-year absence Macarthur's wife Elizabeth ran the Seven Hills farm.

Some of the sheep pens at Macarthur's Seven Hills farm are still standing. [544]



In 1819 English judge John Bigge held a Royal Commission into the state of the NSW colony, the commission ran until 1821, after which John Bigge returned to London. George Best and John Macarthur both gave similar evidence to the commission, so it seems likely they had shared their ideas. It also suggests the two had maintained their relationship since their time at the Toongabbie Government Farm.

In 1821 John Macarthur exchanged his Seven Hills property for land near Camden south of Sydney and in the following years established Camden Park stud; he was also a founding share holder of the Australian Agricultural Company. In 1832, Macarthur was officially declared a lunatic by Governor Richard Bourke and placed under restraint at his home in Camden; he died in 1834. [545]

Also, in 1821, George Best received permission to drive his cattle and sheep through the country lying to the South West of Sydney in search of better pasture. By 1823 he and his sons had reached the Goulburn Plains and established a run called 'Jerama' on the site of present-day Gunning.

In 1823 John Bigge released his report into the future of Australian agriculture and he promoted wool as a potential export business venture that could be successful economically. In the report George Best was praised for his knowledge, experience and success as a farmer. In 1824 George Best sailed for London to provide addition evidence to John Bigge, returning the following year.

Bigge also praised John Macarthur and recommended the proposals he put forward including the provision for using unpaid convict labour, allocated in proportion to the size of the land in use at the rate of three convicts per 200 acres, be adopted. [546]

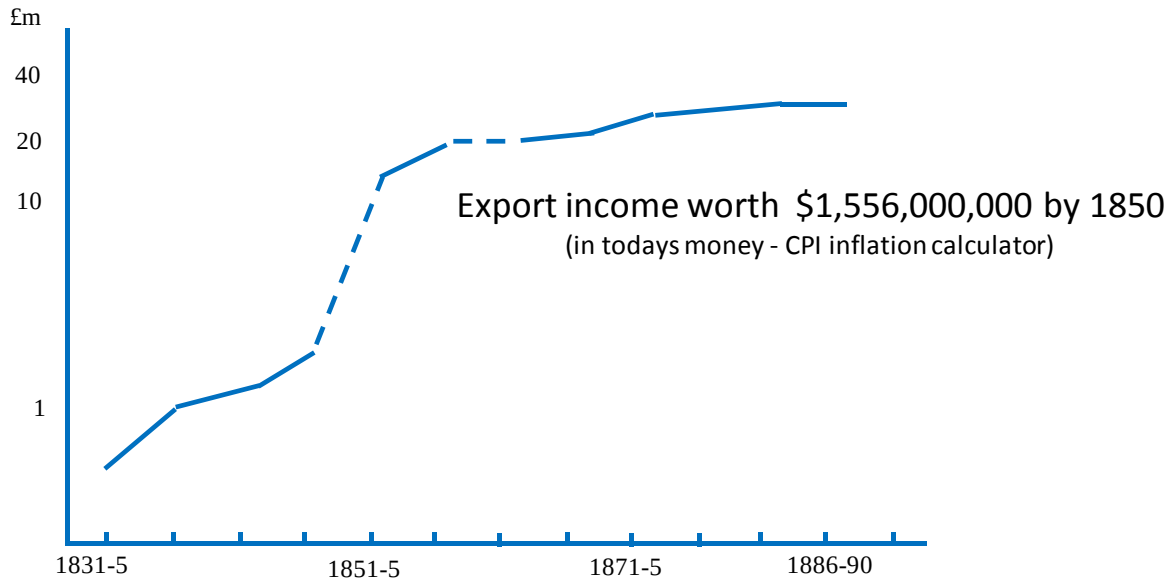
Despite the 1826 and 1929 proclamations by Governor Darling limiting settlement to the Nineteen counties; by about 1827 George Best & his sons had pushed beyond the defined settled area and were already past where Yass township is today. In 1832, they moved their sheep and cattle across the Murrumbidgee river and were the first Europeans to settle south of the river. George Best & his sons established a pastoral station at the site of a natural ford in the Murrumbidgee river which they named 'Wagga Wagga' run. This area later became the town of the same name.

George Best died in 1836 one of the wealthiest people in Australia and one of a select group of ex-convicts who rose to be members of Australia's pastoral ruling class known as the 'Squattocracy'.

His son Robert Holt Best and his wife Clara Brien (sister of our ancestor Daniel Brien Jr b. 1817) then took up the running of Wagga Wagga run; eventually growing their flock to around 40,000 sheep. Clara is still known today as "the mother of Wagga". The family's pastoral holdings as squatters in the Riverina were ratified by license shortly after George Best's death. [547]

The holdings of the Best and related families (Inc. Pearce, Huon and Warby) grew many times over, and our family maintained a sheep farming dynasty that stretched across southern NSW and into Victoria for over 100 years.

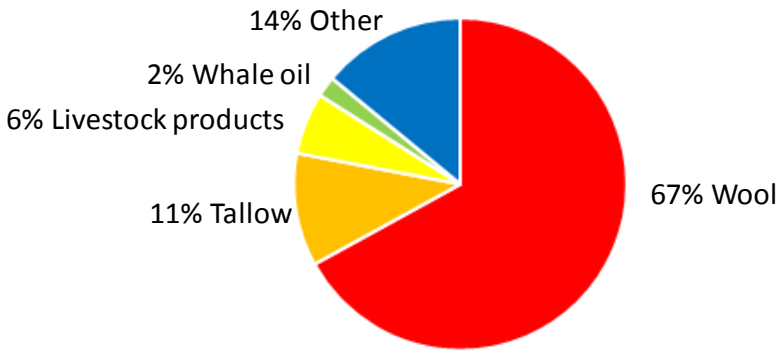
"Butlin (1953:225/314) characterised the 1830s as: a period of extraordinarily rapid economic growth in which immigration and capital input furnished the material for a vast geographic expansion of the wool industry." [548]



Graph showing Australia's export revenue growth between 1830 and 1890. [549]

The above graph tells a remarkable story. Virtually all of the growth in Australian exports up to 1849 was produced by the wool industry. By this time the Australian colonies had become the dominant supplier of wool to England, selling a staggering 16,300 tons of wool that year. This was more than all of Europe's production combined. Throughout most of the 1800s, wool was Australia's most important export; increasing many times over. [550]

Literally in one generation Australia transitioned from a public service economy supporting a gaol, to a wool based export powerhouse. Nothing in Australia would be as it is today with out that sort of capitol injection during this early period, and our family were significant contributors.



Australia's export income producing industries during the 1840s.

This period is known as Australia's 'pastoral age' during which the demand for Australian wool in Britain was insatiable. Through this period the British market was many times larger than the output of the infant Australian wool industry, and having virtually free access to vast tracts of land to farm, the pastoralists' expansion into the interior of eastern Australia was extremely rapid. [551]

Transport was the major issue as initially there was little to no infrastructure to transport the wool from farms to ports. The wool industry single handily drove the implementation of road networks (often built for little cost by convict labour), and later the rail networks known as "the pioneer lines."



Wool haulage during the 1800s (Power House museum)

But despite the transport costs involved, wool exports multiplied two hundred times between 1820 and 1850 as wool growing emerged from insignificance to become a powerful source of economic expansion. The growth in export income from wool quickly broke the limitations inherent in Australia's initial convict period reliance on the domestic market.

Transport between centers that later became capital cities was well established from the early period. Links existed between Sydney, Melbourne and Adelaide, with Wagga being a key settlement along those routes. These transport routes provided means for families to move into, and out from, centers such as Wagga.

The Wagga Urban Heritage study 1999 includes a 'Thematic history of Wagga Wagga' prepared by Ms Sherry Morris, some of which is reproduced below:

The major routes between Sydney and Melbourne and west to Adelaide had come into being during the period of first European settlement of the Riverina, 1832-1836, and by the 1840s these were well defined tracks or roads.

The route used by Sir Thomas Mitchell in 1836 became the main overland route from Sydney to Melbourne and was called the Port Phillip Road, an extension of the Great Southern Road from Sydney to Goulburn (later the Hume Highway), this route crossed the Murray River at Howlong, down stream from Albury.

Mail was carried once a week by horseback from the late 1840s between Tarcutta (on the Port Phillip Road) and Wagga Wagga, and this had been increased to twice weekly by the late 1850s. The Adelaide Road (later Sturt Highway) branched off from the Port Phillip Road at Lower Tarcutta, and the road followed the Murrumbidgee River through the sites of Wagga Wagga, Narrandera, Hay and Balranald.

Most of the pastoralists in the Wagga Wagga district transported their wool by bullock wagon to Sydney and purchased their supplies for the return journey. However, by the 1860s, some pastoralists in the Riverina were sending their wool on the safer, faster and much cheaper steamships to South Australia.

After the Victorian government completed the railway line to Echuca in 1864, Riverina pastoralists sent their wool on steamers or by bullock teams to Echuca from whence it was transported by railway to Melbourne; then after the railway line from Melbourne to Wodonga was completed in the 1870s, the wool was sent to Melbourne via Wodonga. Victoria thus managed to capture much of the trade of the Riverina.

The steamships returned with supplies and manufactured goods from South Australia and Victoria for the stations and Wagga Wagga shopkeepers.

When the NSW Government and Sydney merchants became aware that vast quantities of produce (and money) were flowing to Victoria, and to a lesser extent South Australia, it was decided that the railway line would be extended to the Riverina to recapture this lost trade.

The railway reached Cootamundra in 1877, North Wagga in 1878, Albury and Narrandera in 1881, Hay in 1882 and Jerilderie in 1884. After the line reached North Wagga the main traders at Wagga Wagga and adjacent towns procured their supplies from Sydney while pastoralists and farmers sent stock and wool via rail to Sydney.

The table below shows Australia's economic structure in 1850 prior to the gold rush of 1851.

	%
Share of workforce, 1851	
Shepherds and stockmen	20
Engaged in agriculture or horticulture	15
Engaged in commerce, trade or manufacturing	15
Mechanics and artificers	8
Domestic servants	13
Professional and educated persons	4
Labourers (unspecified)	15
Other occupations	10
	100
Share of exports, 1848-50	
Sent to Britain	82
Sent elsewhere	18
	100
Wool	67
Tallow	11
Livestock, salt meat, hides and leather	6
Whale oil and sealskins	2
Other exports	14
	100
Share of total population	
Metropolitan	29
Other urban	5
Rural	66
	100

Indicators of the economic structure of Australia, about 1850 [552]

By comparison, the gold rush which commenced in 1851 provided only a modest increase in export revenue and remained so until the end of the century.

The table below shows the state of Australia's economy some 40 years later in 1890.

	%
Share of workforce, 1890-1	
Rural	26
Mining	6
Manufacturing	15
Construction	14
Services	34
Other	5
	100
Share of gross domestic product, 1891	
Rural	25
Mining	6
Manufacturing	11
Construction	14
Services and other	44
	100
Exports (1886-90)	13
Imports (1886-90)	17
Share of exports, 1886-90	
Wool	66
Gold	14
Other	20
	100
Share of total population, 1891	
Metropolitan	36
Other urban	15
Rural	49
	100

Indicators of the economic structure of Australia, about 1890. [553]

Wool set Australia on its first genuinely capitalist phase of economic development, spurred on by the adoption of British Sterling as Australian currency in the 1820s (which facilitated international trade) the banking and finance systems that followed and self government in the 1850s, all providing key stepping stones towards establishing Australia's modern economy. [554]

It has been argued that Australia possessed some significant advantages over other regions of recent settlement in the nineteenth century. In particular, Australia had received the "purely capitalistic elements of Britain's economy" and was a place in which those elements could grow unimpeded "either by the heritage of the past, or by a resilient peasant society" to hold it back. [555]

While John Macarthur clearly deserves credit for establishing the wool export industry with Britain, there appears to be more to the story when it comes to the breeding, husbandry and wool production involving the Merino sheep that are the mainstay of Australia's wool industry. Perhaps our ancestor George Best deserves a nationally recognised chapter of his own in that story. Along with those first-generation children born here, the currency generation, who through their industry, adventurous sprit and independent thinking provided much of the heavy lifting in establishing the rural wool-based economies on which Australia relied upon well into the 20th century.

Fairholme homestead at Seven Hills

A link with our Best family of Seven Hills still exists in 'Fairholme' house, built by George and Martha Best's grandson – also named George Best. This George Best was born on the 15th August 1854 at 'Oaklands', Seven Hills and was the son of William and Susan Best (née Gilbert).

This George Best owned a number of citrus orchards near Seven Hills railway station and he built a house called 'Fairholme' around 1887.

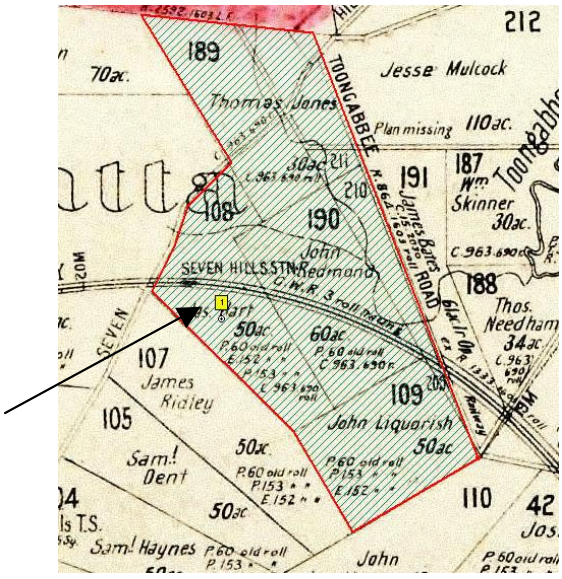


Fairholme in First Ave at Seven Hills (photo 2010)

Fairholme is located in First Ave Seven Hills and Best Road runs behind the property. The yellow square in the diagram below marks the location of 'Fairholme' on the original property owned by the Best family near Seven Hills station.

George Best property at Seven Hills in the 1890s (marked in green), overlaid on the Parish map showing the names of the original land grants.

Seven Hills railway station sits on the Best property and the location of Fairholme homestead in First Ave Seven Hills is marked in yellow.





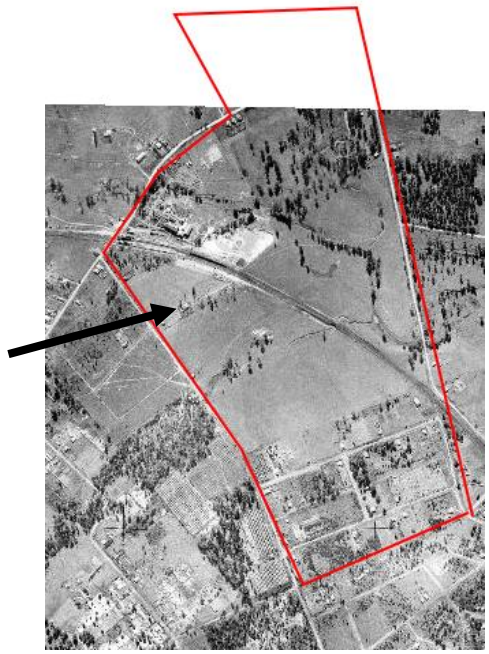
The above diagram gives an approximate outline of the Best property on today's street map. The arrow points to the location of the Fairholme homestead which is very close to Seven Hills railway station on the Parramatta to Blacktown line.

The 'Blacktown Memories' web site provides some information on Fairholme; the follow are selected quotes.

In 1908 George Best was elected as a councilor to the newly formed Blacktown Shire Council. He served from 1908 to 1917 and was President in 1914. [556]

The Best family donated a part of their land for the establishment of a branch of the Church of England. The Fairholme Mission Hall, built on the corner of Best and Alice Streets, Seven Hills, was known as St Peter's. The hall, officially opened by the Archbishop of Sydney, Dr Wright on 26 May 1915, served as a place of worship and a venue for Sunday School. During World War 1, the hall was used for fundraising events and to farewell local soldiers before they departed for the battlefields.

George Best died on the 23rd August 1923 and the 'Fairholme estate' was sold and subdivided in 1924. However, the family home remained in the hands of the Best family until 1957. Best Road and the Best Road Reserve at Seven Hills acknowledge the contribution of the Best family to their local community. [557]

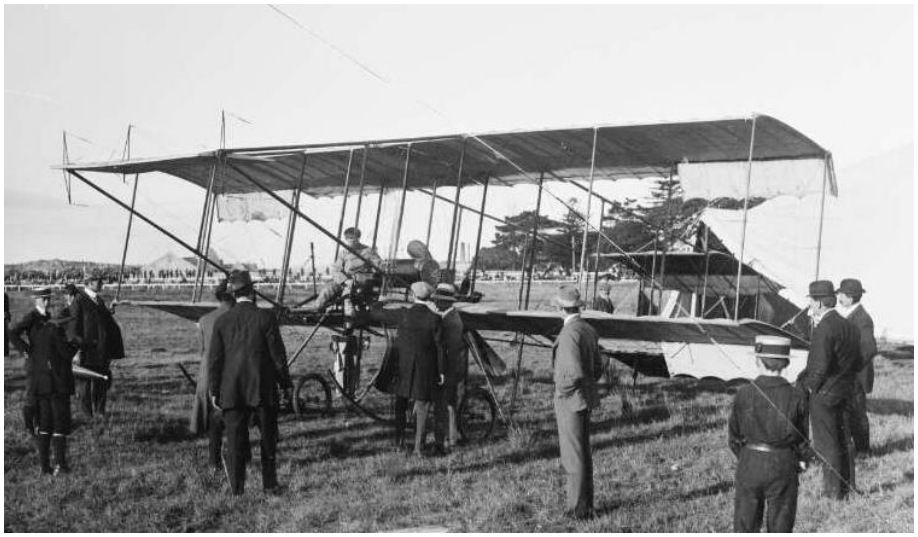


Outline of the Best family property at Seven Hills - placed on an aerial photo from 1943.

The arrow points to the location of the Fairholme homestead. The railway from Sydney to Penrith can be seen, and Seven Hills station is situated just above Fairholme homestead. Some of the sub-division that commenced in 1924 can be seen in the southern section of the property.

As a point of interest, on the 3rd November 1911 the Australian aviation pioneer William Hart landed his plane in a paddock on the Best property at Seven Hills whilst on his return journey to Penrith, after making his pioneering cross-country flight from Penrith to Parramatta earlier in the day. On his return flight from Parramatta to Penrith, William Hart was forced down due to adverse wind conditions which sprung up on the afternoon of the 3rd, and he stayed over-night in the vicinity of Fairholme. He completed his flight back to Penrith the following day.

William Hart was the first Australian pilot ever to make a cross-country flight, following which on the 5th December 1911 he was issued with Australian Aviator's Licence No. 1. [558]



William Hart in his "Bristol Boxkite" plane – photo taken around the time of his history making Penrith to Parramatta flight in Nov 1911. [559]

Mary Ann Best's grand parents - James Beckett b.1759 & Ann Calcut b.1771

James Beckett was born about 1751 possibly at Shrewsbury, England. He was a laborer and skilled brick maker of the parish of Holy Cross in Shrewsbury.

James Beckett was found guilty of robbing Joseph Tipson (which he denied) in the parish of Holy Cross and St Giles in the town of Shrewsbury and sentenced to death on the 26th July 1788. He was reprieved to transportation for life in October and remained in Shrewsbury Gaol until early November 1789 when he was sent with three other convicts to the Themes hulk Stanislaus.

He was 30 years old at the time. On the 20th November, he embarked on the ship "Surprize" part of the 2nd fleet arriving in Sydney on the 26th June 1790. "Surprize" is the correct spelling of this ship, although many references to it over the years use the spelling "Surprise."



St Alkmund's Church, Church St, Whitchurch, Shropshire, where James Beckett was christened on 10 June 1751

Ann Calcut (also spelt Cacutt or Caley) was described as "a spinster of Handsworth", and was charged with stealing a fan, a silver tablespoon as well as one cotton gown from Charles Sowter and his wife. Ann was held in the Stafford County Gaol until the 25th October 1789 when she was sent to Woolwich, London, along with four other convict women, for embarkation on the "Neptune" a ship which formed part of the 2nd fleet to Australia. Ann arrived in New South Wales on the 28th June 1790.

Ann Calcut was transported to Sydney on the most notorious 2nd fleet ship the "Neptune" where 1 out of 3 persons died.[560] Her name on the ships manifest is shown as Ann Caley. Ann shared the ship with John Macarthur and D'Arcy Wentworth, although I'm sure they had a much better time of it than our Ann.

The 2nd Convict Fleet – *The Grim Armada* 1790

Our ancestors James Beckett and Ann Calcut both arrived in Australia on the 2nd convict fleet in 1790. We therefore have a connection with one of the most horrific events in modern Australian history. Historian Michael Flynn coined the term "The Grim Armada" in 1990 to describe this "major and brutal part of our history that shouldn't be neglected." [561]

Some background to the 2nd Fleet.

The 1st Fleet, which departed England in 1787, had done little to reduce London's huge prison population so once word was received in London from Governor Arthur Phillip that the colony of NSW had survived, the decision was made to send a 2nd fleet consisting of six ships – the Scarborough, Neptune, Surprize, Justinian, Guardian and the Lady Juliana.

But the voyage was a total disaster.

Of the 928 male convicts on the three ships Neptune, Scarborough and Surprize, 26% died on the voyage and nearly 40% were dead within months of their arrival in the colony. This shocking mortality rate was nearly ten times that of the 1st fleet voyage.

According to Historian and author Michael Flynn, the major difference was that the 1st fleet was closely controlled by the British government and transports were monitored by Governor Phillip and his two naval ships the Sirius and the Supply.

"As a result, it was very expensive, and, for the Second Fleet, the British government decided to take on contractors who totally botched the voyage," Flynn said.

"The 1st fleet stopped three times along the way, so people were able to get fresh food and water, which made a huge difference. But, for the 2nd fleet, the private contractors cut corners and only stopped once, at Cape Town, South Africa.

"The captain was very security conscious and kept the convicts below deck for a long time in bad weather. It would have been horrific as the ships were over crowded.

"The 2nd fleet was combination of bad luck, mismanagement and wishful thinking in terms of being able to do the voyage on the cheap."

The 2nd fleet was a grim example of privatisation gone wrong in the most catastrophic way.

The 1st Fleet was an expensive exercise for the British government. When planning stages began for the 2nd Fleet, the government's penny-pinchers set up bidding for the contractors to be on a fixed-price per head basis, with the contract to be given to the lowest bidder.

But payment wasn't dependent on how many people reached Australia alive.

Most contractors refused to take that risk because, in those days, low standards onboard meant high death rates. Instead, the contractor was paid for the number of people who boarded the ships in Britain. In other words, there was absolutely no incentive for the contractors to treat the prisoners with care.

There was also a provision in the contract, allowing contractors to sell any leftover provisions at the end of the voyage. This saw the ruthless captains reportedly withholding food from the prisoners which they later sold "for a killing" to those struggling in the colony of NSW.

Neptune commemoration
at St Matthew's church yard
Windsor



Overall, out of 928 on board, 267 people died at sea and at least 150 died shortly after arrival.

The worst ship of all was the Neptune. Of the 499 onboard only 72 arrived in reasonable health. 158 died and 269 were incapacitated at the time of landing.

William Hill was a second captain in the New South Wales Corps who sailed with the fleet. He told officials conditions in the slave trade were better than the 2nd fleet. He wrote about the masters of the Neptune and the Scarborough, as being cruel men.

"The more they can withhold from the unhappy wretches, the more provisions they have to dispose of on a foreign market, and the earlier in the voyage they die the longer they can draw the deceased's allowance for themselves; for I fear few of them are honest enough to make a just return of the dates of their deaths to their employers."

The 2nd fleet ships set out for Australia in three stages, all arriving during June 1790, apart from the Guardian which had struck an iceberg in the Southern Ocean. This was devastating for the colony as the Guardian was filled with supplies such as stock and plants (it eventually made it to Cape Town where it was beached).

First to leave England was the Lady Juliana with its ship load of women. This ship had the longest voyage (just over 11 months) but the convicts arrived in good health. In fact, a seaman who witnessed the ladies' arrival wrote: "They were all fresh, well looking women".

The arrival of the Lady Juliana meant the ratio of women in the colony went from about 20 per cent to 40 per cent. There were seven babies born on the voyage and many more shortly after they arrived, obviously, due to ‘shipboard romances’.

But life was not so easy on the other ships.

Our ancestor James Beckett sailed on the Surprize which departed Plymouth, England with 254 male convicts on the 19th January 1790.

At 394 tons the Surprize was the smallest ship of the 2nd fleet, and was an unsuitable vessel for so long a voyage, proving to be a wet ship even in moderate weather. In rough seas and heavy gales, the convicts "were considerably above their waists in water", according to the commander of the guards.

The Surprize arrived at the Cape of Good Hope on the 13th April 1790, and spent sixteen days there, taking on provisions. She came in sight of Port Jackson on the 23rd June 1790. Contrary winds blew her out to sea again and she did not make port until the 26th June, 158 days after having left England. During the voyage 36 convicts died (14%), and 121 (48%) were sick when landed.

Our ancestor Ann Calcut sailed on the Neptune which left Plymouth, England with the Surprize on the 19th January 1790. On board the Neptune were 421 male and 78 female convicts (499 in total). The Neptune was built on the Thames in 1779 and at 809 tons was the largest ship of the 2nd fleet.

The original Captain of the Neptune was Thomas Gilbert but he was dismissed following a duel against John Macarthur who was traveling to NSW with his wife Elizabeth. Gilbert’s replacement as master was Donald Traill, a former navy master who had commanded a slave ship and was described by many as a sadist. Elizabeth Macarthur described Traill as “a perfect sea-monster.” [562]

The Neptune arrived at the Cape of Good Hope on the 13th April 1790, and spent sixteen days there, taking on provisions, and twelve male convicts from HMS Guardian, which had been wrecked after striking an iceberg. By this point John and Elizabeth Macarthur were fed up with Donald Traill and they left the Neptune and completed their journey on the Scarborough.

Heavy weather struck the fleet and the Neptune and Surprize were separated for most of the remaining journey. The Neptune finally came in sight of Port Jackson on the 28th June 1790, 160 days out from England. During the voyage 147 male and 11 female convicts died, for a total death rate of (31%) as well as 269 (53%) that were sick when landed. Estimates suggest about 150 more died shortly after arrival.

The treatment of convicts aboard the Neptune was nothing short of grotesque. Convicts suspected of petty theft were flogged to death and most convicts remained chained below decks for the duration of the voyage. Scurvy and other diseases were endemic and the food rations were pitiful.

First fleet Chaplain Richard Johnson, who witnessed the landing of the 2nd fleet on the 26th and 28th of June 1790 described the scene:

"I beheld a sight truly shocking to the feelings of humanity, a great number of them laying, some half, others nearly quite naked, without either bed or bedding, unable to turn or help themselves.

"Spoke to them as I passed along, but the smell was so offensive that I could scarcely bear it…. The landing of these people was truly affecting and shocking; great numbers were not able to walk, nor to move hand or foot; such were slung over the ship side in the same manner as they would a cask, a box, or anything of that nature.

"Upon their being brought up to the open air some fainted, some died upon deck, and others in the boat before they reached the shore. Some creeped upon their hands and knees, and some were carried upon the backs of others." [563]



The Neptune

Governor Arthur Philip and his officials were deeply shocked at the sight of such gross inhumanity. Phillip immediately sent a message to the British Government to condemn the handling of the transportation. [564]

The 2nd fleet ships returned to England arriving from September 1791 and British newspapers carried details of the horrendous abuse onboard. Several of the 2nd fleet crewmen deserted as the ships arrived.

Ships Captain Donald Traill was brought to trial in 1791 at the Old Bailey in the admiralty court – along with his chief mate William Ellington. The trial was initially about unpaid wages for some of the seamen on the voyage, but the issue was raised about the brutal treatment of the convicts.

Traill and Ellington were acquitted in that trial and the government defended them when it was raised in parliament. By that stage, the international scene was lurching towards war with revolutionary France, so as far as England was concerned, Australia's 2nd convict fleet faded into the background. [565]

An interesting postscript to the 2nd fleet story is that from the harsh treatment experienced by the convicts on board, many of those who survived prospered in their new homeland, making significant contributions to the growth of the colony. [566] Our ancestors James Beckett and Ann Calcut are outstanding examples of this.

It is clear from documents on the subject that the 2nd fleet experience left an indelible mark upon the fledgling colony of NSW. I think it is hard to overstate the impact of this event, particularly since the Sydney settlement was virtually starving when the 2nd fleet arrived, and chewed up even more of its scarce resources, which the inhabitants appeared willing to share.

Stories of what happened would have been passed down family lines for generations and possibly went on to influence and shape the identity of Sydneysiders. And as people spread out across Australia during the early 1800s, the legacy of the 2nd fleet may have unconsciously been transported by them Australia wide – and could even still exist in how we see ourselves today.





2nd fleet commemorative plaque located on a pillar at the western side of Circular Quay Sydney

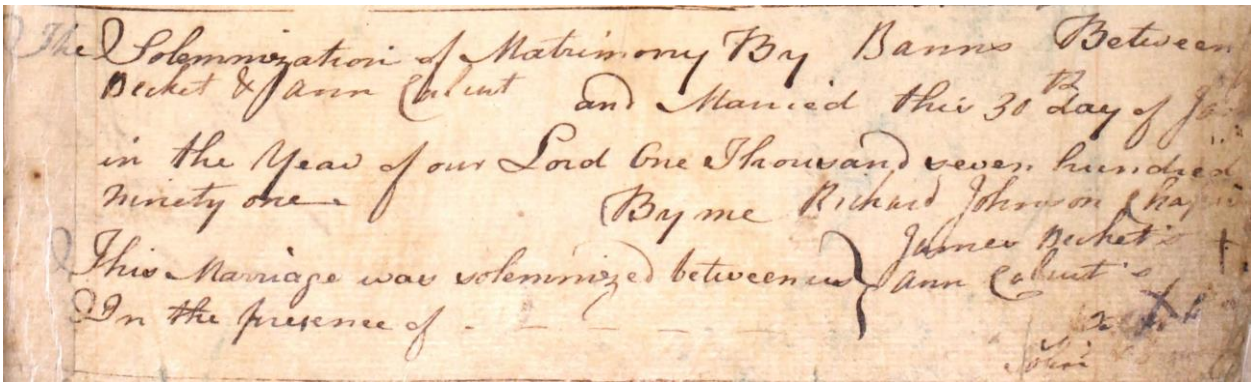
Hillsborough arrived Sydney 26th July 1799.

"From the point of view of the number of deaths on the passage to Australia, the most disastrous voyage was that of the convict ship Hillsborough. Typhoid, carried aboard by convicts from the fever-ridden hulks as Langstone Harbour, Portsmouth, caused the deaths of 95 of the 300 prisoners embarked, and several others died shortly after their arrival at Sydney.

...Governor Hunter, when the Hillsborough reached Sydney, described the survivors as "the most wretched and miserable convicts I have ever beheld, in the most sickly and wretched state." Almost every prisoner required hospital treatment. The frightful mortality was due primarily to the embarkation of the Langstone prisoners, but also partly to the harsh treatment of the convicts on the voyage. ...they were kept double-ironed, and when on deck were chained together, so that they could not walk about at all, but had either to stand up or lie down on the deck. They were inadequately fed, and, especially between the Cape and Port Jackson, the weather was so stormy that the prisoners were continuously damp and the convicts bedding seldom dry." 567

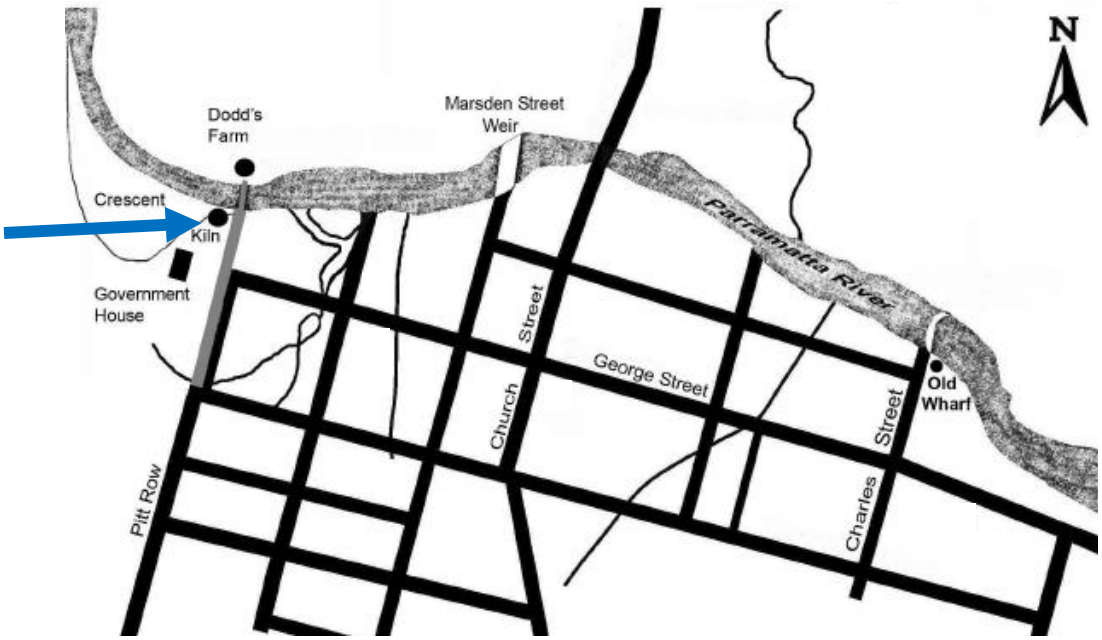
James Beckett and Ann Calcut's life in Australia

Six months after their arrival in NSW James Beckett and Ann Calcut married on the 30th January 1791 at Parramatta, both signing the register with an X. Their marriage record bears the names James Beckett & Ann Calcut.



Marriage record for James Beckett and Ann Calcut 30th January 1791 at Parramatta

James Beckett was a skilled brick maker and soon after arrival he was placed in charge of the brick kilns at Rose Hill (Parramatta). Writing in November 1790 the Marines officer Watkin Tench reported: "Brick kilns are now erected here and bricks manufactured by a convict by the name of Becket, who came out on the last fleet, and has fifty-two people to work under him. He says they are very good, and would sell at Birmingham, where he worked about 18 months ago, at more than thirty shillings per thousand." [568]



Map of Parramatta showing location of James Beckett's 1790 brick kiln next to old Govt House

James Beckett's original 1790 brick kiln was located adjacent to the Parramatta river just west of O'Connell St (first named 'Pitt Row') near old Government House. By November 1790 the operation was turning out some 25,000 bricks and an unknown number of tiles per week. [569]

James Beckett learnt his brick making skills in northern England where the local standard used were 'Birmingham Standard' size bricks. These were slightly larger than bricks made in southern England. As many of James Beckett's bricks were of this size, they are easily identified today in old Parramatta buildings.

Bricks from James Beckett's kilns are most evident in the first brick hospital built in Parramatta. Known as the 'Convict Hospital' it was built in 1792 and replaced an earlier hospital which consisted of two sheds (in the configuration of a long tent) that dated from 1790.

The 'Convict Hospital' has a connection with the Australian Indigenous Frontier Wars. In March 1797 a conflict between settlers and soldiers, and a group of about 100 Aboriginal warriors led by Pemulwuy, took place in George Street Parramatta. Known as 'the Battle of Parramatta' according to author David Collins, "Pemulwuy threw a spear at a soldier prompting the government troops and settlers to open fire. Pemulwuy was shot seven times and was wounded." The aboriginal warriors threw many spears, hitting one man in the arm but they suffered great losses and were forced to retreat. [570]

"To show compassion and appreciation, the soldiers took Pemulwuy to the hospital at Parramatta." This was the 1792 Parramatta hospital where according to Collins "Pemulwuy went in and out of consciousness for days and his death was thought to be indisputable." Against all odds, Pemulwuy recovered and when the opportunity arose he fled the hospital and out of Parramatta. [571]

The 1792 Parramatta convict hospital operated until 1818 and was located near the corner of George and Marsden Streets, close to the Parramatta river. The 1818 hospital was larger and located just to the north and closer to the river from the 1792 buildings. Today this is an archaeological site on the State Heritage Register and is of State heritage significance. [572]



Buildings of the 1818 Parramatta hospital by Joseph Lycett, 1824 [573]

The 1792 and 1818 Parramatta convict hospital sites were excavated from 2002–2006 as part of the site redevelopment for the new Parramatta Justice Precinct (PJP), the "Parramatta Children's Court" site (PCC). Parts of the old buildings and foundations were preserved and an exhibition open to the public is located on the site - where bricks from James Beckett's kiln can be viewed.



Some of the bricks produced by James Beckett at the 1792 Parramatta hospital site

It seems highly likely that bricks made by James Beckett were used to build one of Parramatta's most historic buildings – Elizabeth farm.

The house at Elizabeth farm was constructed in 1793 by John Macarthur and named after his wife Elizabeth Veale, and was described as a simple rectangle. built of hand-made English-size bricks set in clay and shell-lime mortar.



Elizabeth Farm homestead built in 1793, possibly using bricks made by James Beckett.

Bricks produced by James Beckett also remain in the footings of buildings associated with the Parramatta Government House. This building commenced as a country cottage for Governor Arthur Phillip, and developed over time into the building that remains in Parramatta Park today.



Old Government House in Parramatta Park, c. 1805



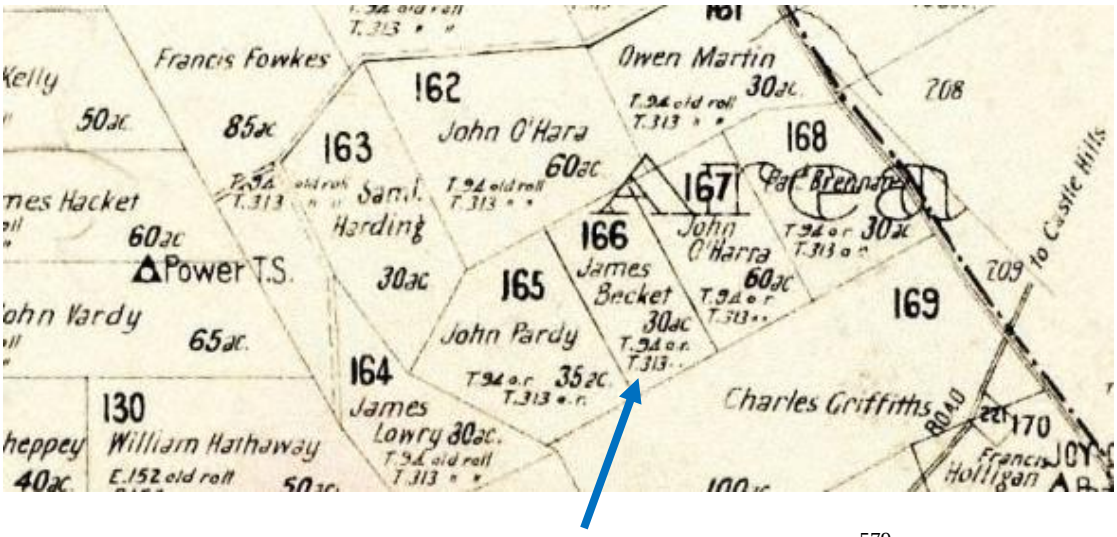
Parramatta c. 1812. Old Government House is on the hill at rear [574]

On the 31st July 1801 at Parramatta, Ann Calcut gave birth to James & Ann's second daughter whom they named Mary Beckett, our ancestor.

Although a prisoner for life, James Beckett was allowed to earn money and in July 1802, was recorded holding a 30-acre farm at Concord by purchase. Three and a half acres were sown in wheat, with another three ready for planting maize. He owned one hog and supported his wife and four children. [575] [576] In 1802 James Beckett appeared on a list of names of those in Parramatta given the right to bear arms and James was allowed a gun. [577]

It appears that James Beckett was also farming land at Toongabbie which had been granted to Edward Kelly by Governor Hunter on the 12th November 1799. The grant document bears a notation to the effect that the grant to Kelly was cancelled by Governor King because the land was sold contrary to a provision in the deed forbidding the sale of the land. The land in Kelly's grant was re-granted to Beckett in 1806 by Governor King and the delay in granting it to him was probably due to the fact that he had taken possession of it against government policy.

By 1806, James Beckett had received a conditional pardon and in August that year, the muster of landholders lists him as a settler on 30 acres near Parramatta (in the Toongabbie district - in the vicinity of Old Windsor Road and Vardy's Road). James was cultivating 11 acres in wheat, maize, barley and vegetables, owned five goats and nine hogs and held ten bushels of maize from a previous crop, and with three sons and two daughters. [578]



James Beckett 30-acre land grant at Toongabbie. [579]

The latest colonial record traced for James Beckett is his signature on an address from settlers to Governor Bligh dated 1st January 1808. We know James Beckett died in 1814 (or earlier) as in that year Ann Calcut was described as a widow who "as a country woman like so many of her contemporaries, managed the Toongabbie farm with the help of her two sons." [580]

No record of James Beckett's death or burial site has been found. Similarly, no further records of Ann's life or of her death have been found – although a family history web site places her death between 1821 and 1828. [581]

James Beckett & Ann Calcut had four children who grew to adulthood i.e. James (b. 1793 d. 1876), Samuel (b. 1795 d. 1827), Esther (b. 1798 d. 1840) and our ancestor Mary (b. 1800 d. 1857). [582]

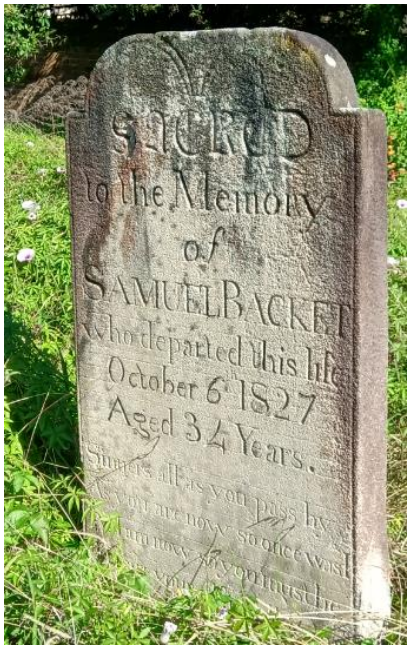
When James & Ann's son, James Beckett Jr died in 1876, the occupation of his father given on his death certificate was 'brickmaker'.

In 1820 our ancestor Mary Beckett's elder brother Samuel Beckett petitioned Governor Macquarie for land and was granted fifty acres on the corner of Old Windsor Rd and Meurants Lane Glenwood. In the petition he said he resided at Parramatta.

This fifty-acre block was known as 'Beckett's Farm' and was purchased by our convict ancestor Daniel Brien and willed to his son Daniel Brien Jr in 1837; who later sold it to his brother Timothy for £200 on the 3rd October 1859. [583]

Samuel Beckett died in 1827 and his grave is in St John's Cemetery Parramatta.

St John's cemetery at Parramatta was initially an "Inclosure for Cattle" and appears as such on a 1791 map. However, the first burial was recorded in December 1790, making it the earliest cemetery in Australia. It was originally a non-denominational 'general cemetery' until December 1857 after which it became exclusively a Church of England cemetery.



The grave of Samuel Beckett.at St John's Parramatta dated 6th October 1827.

Samuel was our ancestor Mary Beckett's elder brother

Note the spelling of his name as 'Backet'.

Misspellings such as these are common at St John's. Many of the convict families were illiterate and were often at the mercy of others when it came to recording their names.

Beckett's Creek enters the Parramatta River via Duck Creek and then Duck River, just east of the Parramatta township. It is not a long creek rising near Merrylands south of Parramatta, but in its upper reaches there were brick pits dating from the early 1800s. It seems likely that the creek known as 'Beckett's Creek' as well as the bridge carrying Parramatta Road that crosses it, called 'Beckett's bridge', were named after James Beckett.

In 1909 the Dept. of Main Roads changed the names of these locations to A'Beckett Bridge and A'Beckett Creek as to avoid confusion with similar names else ware in NSW.)

The first road between Sydney and Parramatta was cut through the bush from the Sydney Brickfields to Parramatta between 1789 and 1791. In 1793 it was described as a six-hour trip to cover the 28 km (17 miles) from Sydney Cove to Parramatta by land. The unsealed track travelled alongside the current alignment of Parramatta Road until Flemington where it then veered south to cross Duck River above the tidal limit nearer to the current Mona Street bridge in South Granville. After this the road turned northward crossing Duck Creek above the tidal limit, to enter Parramatta between current Church Street and Pitt Street. [584]

In 1797, Governor John Hunter made many improvements and commissioned Australia's first properly planned and constructed bridge to cross the Duck River. Supervised by Surveyor General Augustus Theodore Henry Alt.

Governor Hunter must have been impressed by the bridge construction, reporting back to England he described that Alt had: "Built an excellent framed bridge over Duck River, capable of bearing the weight of several heavy-laden carriages at one time."

The Parramatta Road was obviously much improved by 1802 as the French naturalist Francois Péron made the journey from Sydney to Parramatta and remarked:

"A large road leads from Sydney Town, to Parramatta; it is not paved, but is well made, and kept in good condition. It is almost everywhere wide enough for three carriages to pass abreast, and bridges have been thrown over such parts of it, as are interrupted by the waters; so that the traveller meets with no obstacle on his journey.

Having been opened through vast forests, that were never before assailed by the axe, this grand road appears at a distance, like an immense avenue of foliage and verdure. A charming freshness, and an agreeable shade always prevail in this continuous bower, the silence of which is interrupted only, by the singing and chirping of the richly plumed paroquets, and other birds which inhabit it."

Parramatta Road appears to have been well patronised, as in September 1805, tenders were called for the carrying out of repairs to the bridges over which it passed, and for the "erection of new bridges at the following locations: between Grove Farm and Major Johnstons; opposite Major Johnstons paling; corner of Whites Farm; at the foot of Prentices Hill; corner of Capt. Roleys paling; next to Hackings Creek; Hackings Creek; Blankets Ridge; Capt. MacArthurs Creek (Duck Creek) and Becketts Bridge." [585]

In 1810 a toll gate was installed near Beckett's Bridge to collect money from travellers along Parramatta Road. The toll gates were leased to individuals, with the fees used by the colonial administration to fund road maintenance.



1820s map with arrows pointing to Beckett's Bridge, Beckett's Creek and Parramatta Road

The above map shows some of the physical land marks still in existence today that link us to the lives of James Beckett and Ann Calcut.

In 1825 the system of granting small farms to time-expired convicts ended.

The system of 'land grants' ended in NSW in 1831. All land was thenceforth to be sold at public auction (HRA 1.16.22) and revenue from the sale of land was to go toward the immigration of labourers. Likewise the practice of granting land as "marriage portions" to the children of colonists was discontinued (HRA 1.16.353, 793). The new regulations were notified in a Government Notice of 1 July 1831 and published in a Government Order dated 1 August 1831.

Following this, land was sold by public auction without restrictions being placed on the area to be acquired. After 1831 the only land that could be made available for sale was within the Nineteen Counties. This restriction was brought about to reduce the cost of administration and to stem the flow of settlers to the outer areas. [586]

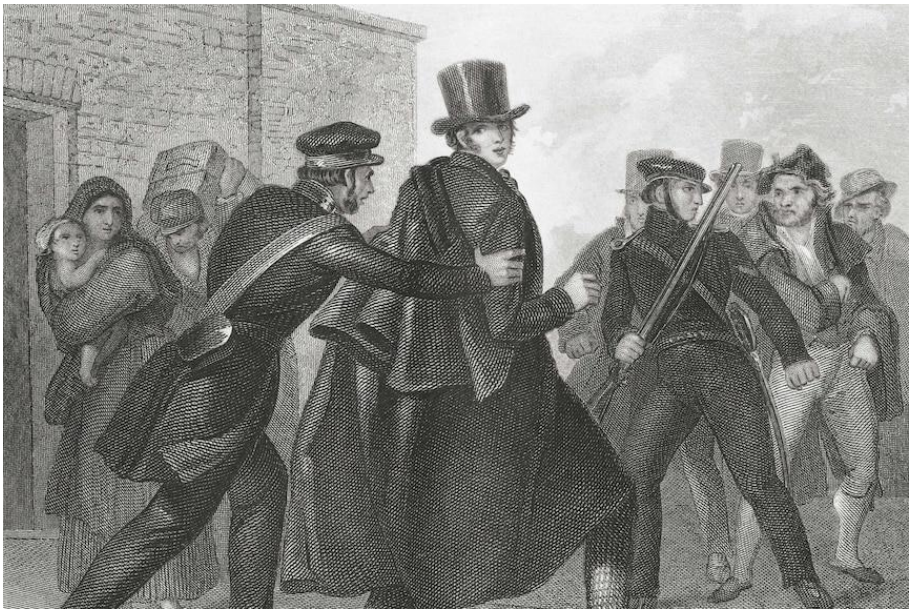
Despite these proclamations, by 1836 Governor Bourke had to admit that it was impossible to restrain the advance of stockholders and in an effort to control the 'Squatting boom', an act of council was passed imposing an annual license of £10 on each squatter, which effectively made squatting legal.

William Smith O'Brien - Australia moves to self government in the 1850s

While our ancestor Daniel Brien's family line were centered around Parramatta NSW, at the same time William Smith O'Brien (convict Daniel Brien's 4th cousin) was transported from Ireland to Hobart Tasmania. [587]

William Smith O'Brien was the second son of Edward O'Brien and Charlotte Smith. He was born on the 17th October 1803 at Dromoland, County Clare, Ireland. William was educated at Harrow and Trinity College, Cambridge; and became an Irish nationalist. [588] "His youthful commitment to Great Britain had not survived the government's tragic mismanagement of the famine. By 1851 at least a million and a half had died of starvation and disease, while a further million emigrated." [589]

This led to William being arrested in August 1848 on a charge of high treason and sedition. In October 1848 at Clonmel in County Tipperary Ireland he was sentenced to be hanged, drawn and quartered. The sentence was commuted to transportation to Australia for life and O'Brien sailed aboard the ship 'Swift' to Hobart Town Tasmania arriving on the 27th October 1849.



William Smith O'Brien was arrested in August 1848 charged with treason and sedition.
(Getty: Universal History Archive/Universal Images Group)

William Smith O'Brien, became a key figure in the fight to end convict transportation to Australia. According to historian Dr Tony Moore, while in solitary confinement at the maximum-security prison on Maria Island off the Tasmanian coast, William Smith O'Brien became, "a Nelson Mandela figure." [590]

From his prison cell on Maria Island, O'Brien emerged as a leader of the anti-transportation movement which called for an end to convict transportation to Australia. This was a popular movement gaining "support from the working class as well as business owners, who wanted Tasmania to move away from plantation servitude to a modern and fairer economy." [591]

While in exile on Maria Island and afterwards at New Norfolk in Tasmania, William Smith O'Brien wrote a book titled "Principles of Government" in 2 vols. Published in 1855; in it O'Brien drafted the ideal democratic constitution, echoing the 'Chartist demands' - a political reform movement from Britain that was the first mass movement driven by the working classes. It grew following the failure of the 1832 Reform Act to extend the vote beyond those owning property. [592]



Maria Island Tasmania prison accommodation. William Smith O'Brien was held here in 1849/50

The name 'Chartist' comes from the 1838 People's Charter drawn up for the London Working Men's Association which included the following six demands:

- All men to have the vote (universal manhood suffrage)
- Voting should take place by secret ballot
- Parliamentary elections every year, not once every five years
- Constituencies should be of equal size
- Members of parliament should be paid
- The property qualification for becoming a member of parliament should be abolished

In Australia the push for equality and what is recognised today as an egalitarian society, started in the mid-19th century, as convicts resented the inequality right from the start of settlement in 1788. This egalitarian sentiment was reflected in William Smith O'Brien's Chartist's writings - which the children, grand children and great grand children of Australian convicts really understood, and pushed for when the parliaments of Australia were being established.

Australia is often called a Chartist's democracy because when Responsible Government was implemented in the late 1850s, many of the key six points of the Chartists demands for working-class political participation had been realised in Victoria and New South Wales parliaments - well in advance of the UK which had to wait until 1872 for the secret ballot and 1914 for universal manhood suffrage.

According to historian Dr Tony Moore, Australia went from "one of the least-free jurisdictions on the planet to becoming quite free and quite democratic in the late 1850s and 1860s." [593]

As such, Australia's political system was largely home-grown, with many facets based on Labor movements and not the UK government as commonly believed. As historian Dr Tony Moore points out "We achieved democratic constitutions in advance of the UK in the 19th century, and we (in Australia) don't even celebrate or understand that." [594]

Our relative William Smith O'Brien was part of Australia's political history and even though he was a convicted political prisoner, he was eventually allowed to leave Australia and return to Europe. After being granted a free pardon in 1856 was allowed to return home to Ireland. He died at Bangor, in Wales on 16 June 1864.

Other convicts were transported for crimes of opportunity borne from poverty. Petty theft, even of the most menial items, was enough to be shipped to the other side of the world. In the face of unpaid labour, limited food and harsh punishments, many of these men and woman were politicised upon arrival and collective action became a method of resistance. [595]

Many of the freedoms and institutions that Australians enjoy today can be traced to the resistance efforts of convicts: some already radical, some radicalised upon arrival. [596]

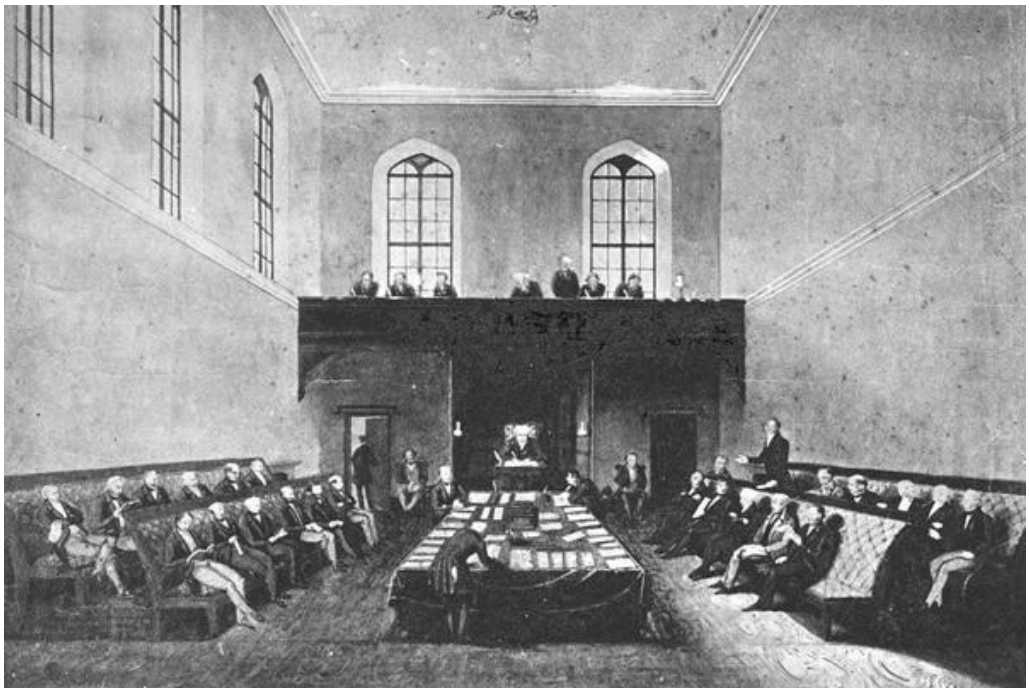
Michael Quinlan, a labour historian, estimates that there were at least 400,000 occasions on which convicts were tried for dissent - an astonishing stream of resistance. "On average a convict was brought before the courts on over six occasions," he says. "The great majority of those prosecutions were for work-related dissent."

Collective absconding, strikes and refusal to work were common. "Some of them tried to escape the colonies entirely by stealing boats but many just moved to different areas and just tried to obtain work and escape the binds, and earn a wage," Professor Quinlan says. "If you look at how democracy is built, it's not built by individual narratives - it's built by collective action by people demanding greater says."

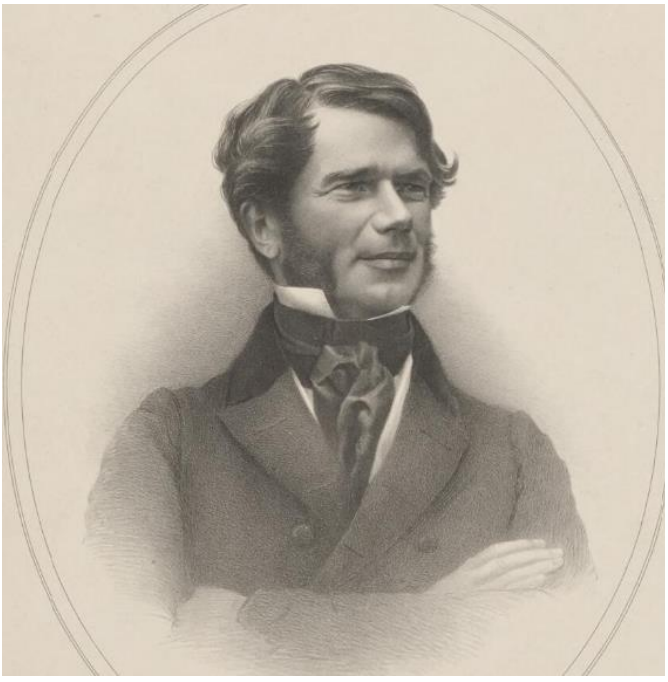
"The things that William Smith O'Brien stood for, legitimated through the global campaign for O'Brien's release, were gradually enacted in Victoria, New South Wales and Tasmania from the late 1850s" (but his native Ireland had to wait till the 20th century.) [597]

New South Wales Parliament House in 1856





New South Wales parliament sitting in the 1850s

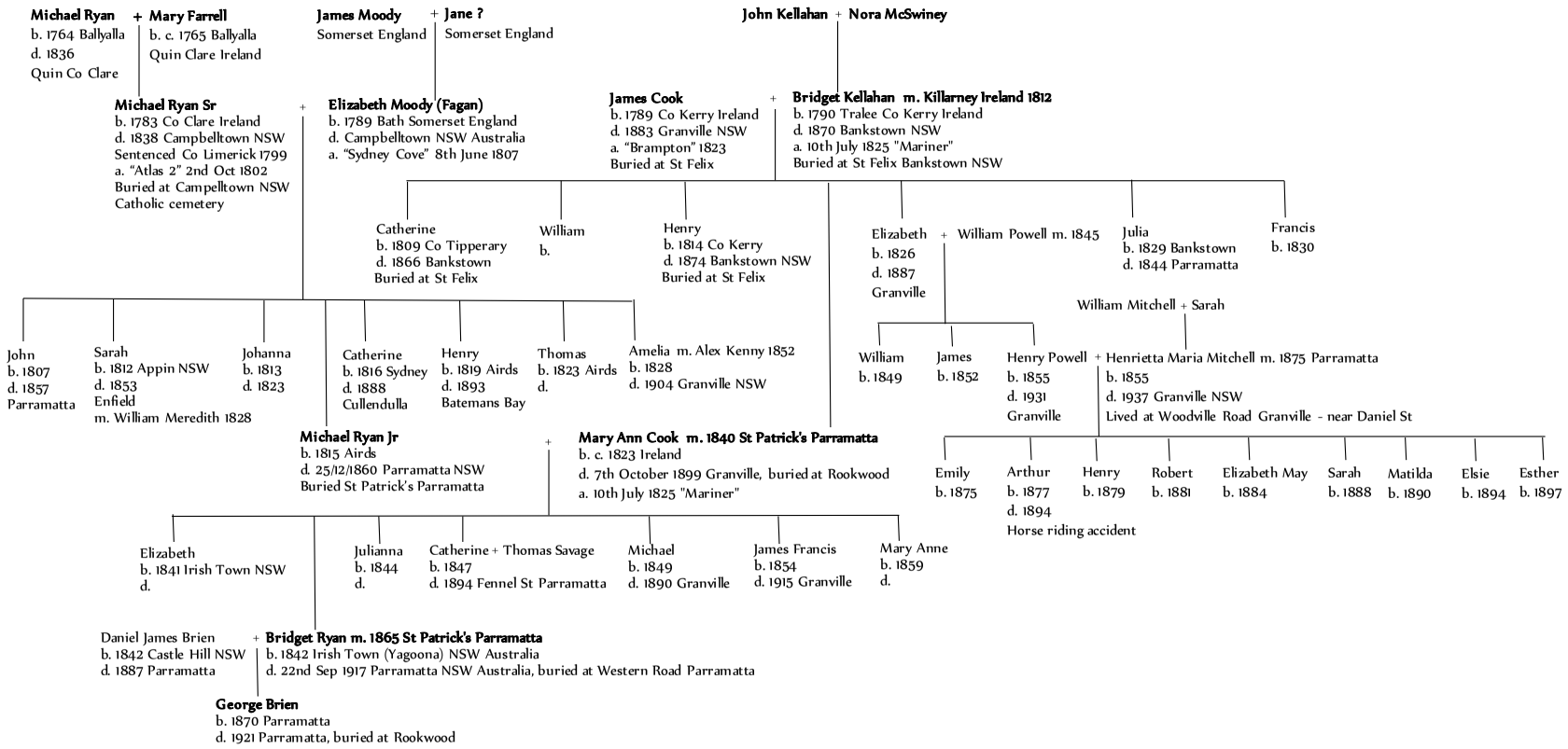


William Smith O'Brien (1803-1864), painting by Henry O'Neil

Chapter 11

Daniel James Brien b.1842 & Bridget Ryan b.1842

Family tree of Bridget Ryan



Daniel James Brien born 1842

Daniel James Brien was born on the 23rd Sep 1842 at Parramatta. He was baptised on the 23rd Oct 1842. His parents were Daniel Brien Jr and Mary Ann Best. On Daniel's birth record it states that his father (Daniel) was a shoe maker at Parramatta. [598]

It appears Daniel had numerous occupations during his life. At the time of his marriage in 1856 he described himself as a General Dealer, later he was a Hotel Keeper and at the time of his death in 1887 was employed as a Laborer.

Daniel is mentioned in the news papers of the time. In 1867 Daniel placed a notice in the SMH to let a house in Church St Parramatta that had formally been a hotel,


PARRAMATTA.—To LET, a HOUSE in Church-street, containing 9 rooms, formerly occupied by Daniel Brien as a public house. Apply to Daniel Brien

Nine room house to let by Daniel Brien SMH news paper Monday 9th September 1867

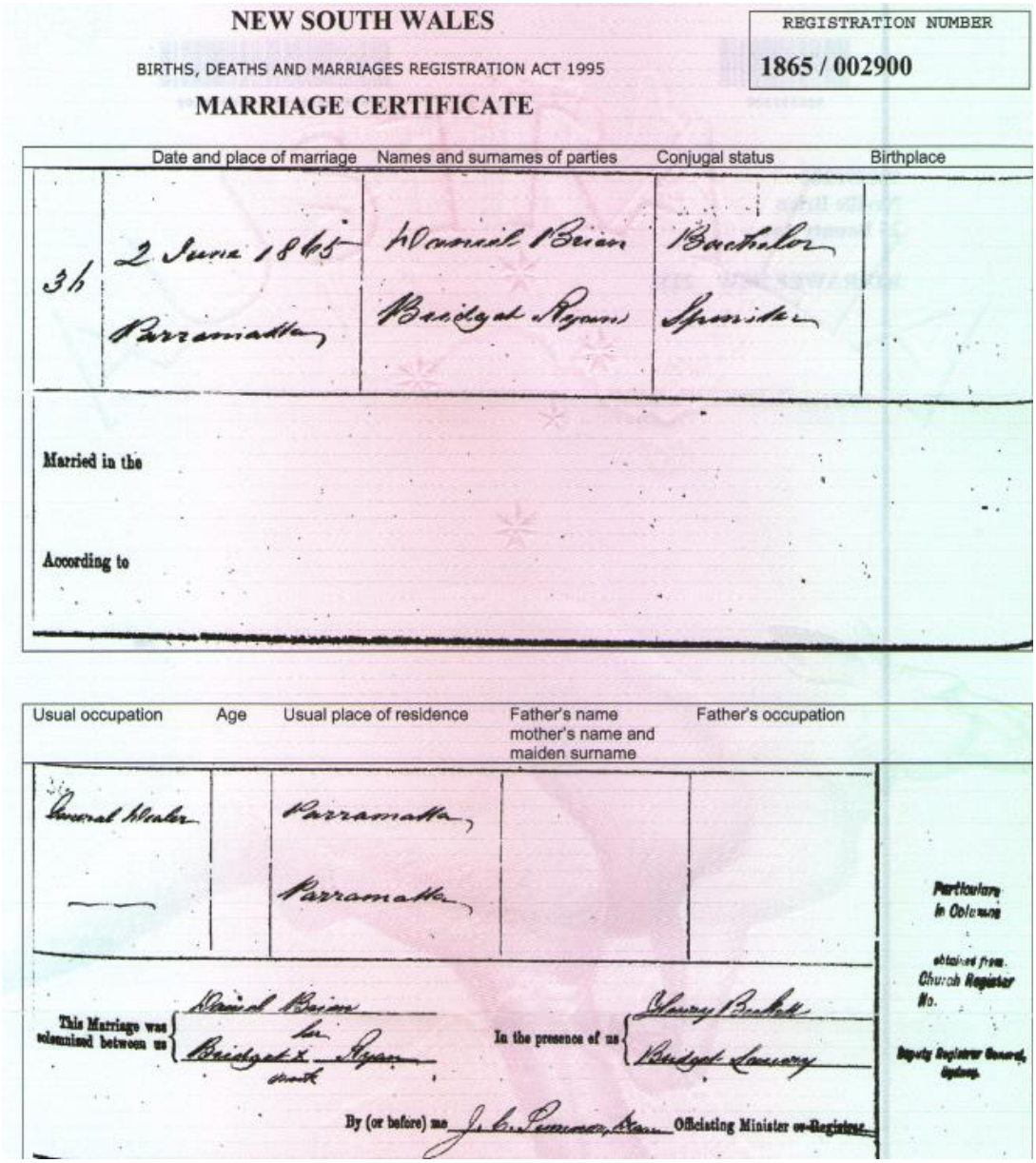
During Daniel's life Parramatta underwent significant changes. He was born at the end of the convict transportation era and he witnessed Parramatta develop from a public service town into a thriving commercial center.

By the 1870s Parramatta was surrounded by agricultural land that was the food bowl of Sydney. Wool, manufacturing and livestock industries were in full swing and factories and abattoirs sprung up along the Parramatta river. Transport was now key to growth and steam ships could navigate up the river to wharves built at the junction of Duck River. Daniel was aged 13 in 1855 when the first train service commenced between Sydney and Parramatta and in 1883 a steam tramway opened running along George Street connecting the town center to the wharves on the river.



The Parramatta steam tram crossed Church Street near Daniel Brien's hotel from 1883

On the 2nd June 1865 Daniel Brien married Bridget Ryan at St Patrick's Catholic church in Parramatta.



NEW SOUTH WALES

REGISTRATION NUMBER

1865 / 002900

BIRTHS, DEATHS AND MARRIAGES REGISTRATION ACT 1995

MARRIAGE CERTIFICATE

	Date and place of marriage	Names and surnames of parties	Conjugal status	Birthplace
31	2 June 1865 Parramatta	Daniel Brien Bridget Ryan	Bachelor Spinster	

Married in the

According to

Usual occupation	Age	Usual place of residence	Father's name mother's name and maiden surname	Father's occupation
General Worker		Parramatta		
—		Parramatta		

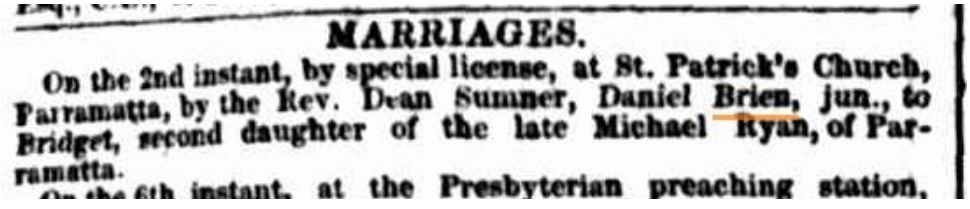
Particulars to Obtaining obtained from Church Register No.

This Marriage was solemnised between us { Daniel Brien / Bridget x Ryan (mark) } In the presence of us { Henry Burke / Bridget Sweeney }

By (or before) me J. C. Sumner, Dean Officiating Minister or Registrar

Deputy Registrar General, Sydney.

Marriage certificate Daniel Brien & Bridget Ryan at St Patrick's Parramatta 2nd June 1865.



MARRIAGES.

On the 2nd instant, by special license, at St. Patrick's Church, Parramatta, by the Rev. Dean Sumner, Daniel Brien, jun., to Bridget, second daughter of the late Michael Ryan, of Parramatta.

On the 6th instant, at the Presbyterian preaching station,

Daniel Brien and Bridget Ryan's marriage notice in the Sydney Morning Herald 9th June 1865

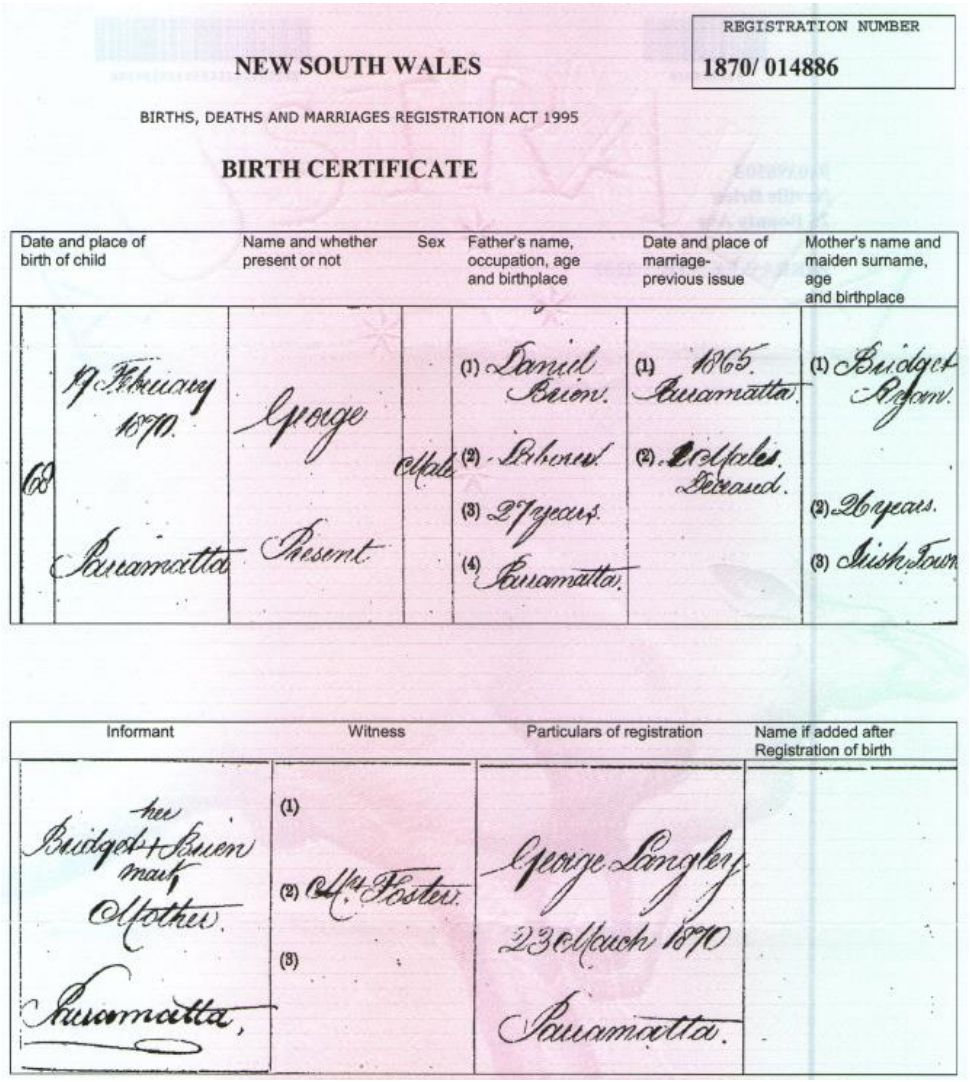
The children of Daniel James Brien & Bridget Ryan

Daniel James Brien and Bridget Ryan had nine children all up; but only four survived to adulthood.

Daniel James Brien + **Bridget Ryan m. 02/06/1865**
b. 1842 Castle Hill — b. 1842 Irish Town (Yagoona) NSW Australia
d. 1887 Parramatta — d. 1917 Parramatta NSW Australia

- Sophia — b. 1865 (born Sophia Ryan) — d. 1907
- Henry Daniel — b. 1867 — d. 1867
- **George Brien** + **Mary Jane Farrell m. 21/5/1891 Windsor**
  b. 1870 Parramatta — b. 1873 Waterloo NSW Australia
  d. 1921 Parramatta — d. 1948 North Sydney NSW Australia (as Mary Jane Hill)
- Mary Ann Alice — b. 1873 — d. 1875
- Alice Maude — b. 1875 — d. 1955
- Robert Edward — b. 1881 — d. 1957

Their third child was our ancestor George Brien, born at Parramatta on the 19th February 1870



REGISTRATION NUMBER
1870/ 014886

NEW SOUTH WALES

BIRTHS, DEATHS AND MARRIAGES REGISTRATION ACT 1995

BIRTH CERTIFICATE

Date and place of birth of child	Name and whether present or not	Sex	Father's name, occupation, age and birthplace	Date and place of marriage- previous issue	Mother's name and maiden surname, age and birthplace
68 19 February 1870 Parramatta	George Present	Male	(1) Daniel Brien. (2) Labourer. (3) 27 years. (4) Parramatta.	(1) 1865. Parramatta. (2) Wife Wales. Deceased.	(1) Bridget Ryan. (2) 26 years. (3) Irish Town

Informant	Witness	Particulars of registration	Name if added after Registration of birth
her Bridget + Brien mark Mother. Parramatta,	(1) (2) Mrs. Foster. (3)	George Langley 23 March 1870 Parramatta.	

Children of Daniel James Brien and Bridget Ryan who reached adulthood.

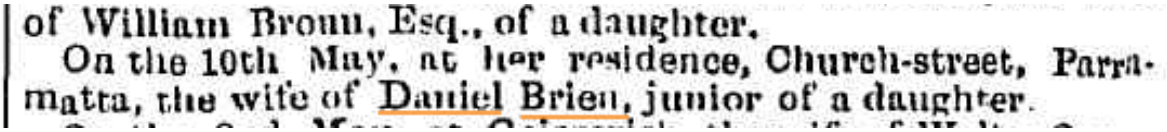
Sophia b. 1865 Sophia married Charles Dibbs in 1884, she died in 1907.

George Brien b. 19th February 1870. George married Mary Jane Farrell in 1891. He died in 1921 at Parramatta. George Brien was our ancestor and his life is covered in Chapter 12.

Alice Maude b. 1875 who married Samuel Sonter in 1894. Alice died in 1955 at Granville.

Robert Edward b. 1881 married Margaret Wiles, lived at Auburn. Robert died in 1957.

On Sat 31st May 1873 Daniel Brien placed a notice in a news paper announcing the birth of his & Bridget's daughter Mary Ann Alice Brien. This Mary Ann died in 1875 aged 2 years.



of William Brown, Esq., of a daughter.
On the 10th May, at her residence, Church-street, Parramatta, the wife of Daniel Brien, junior of a daughter.

Mary Ann Alice Brien born 1873 Town & Country Sat 31st May 1873

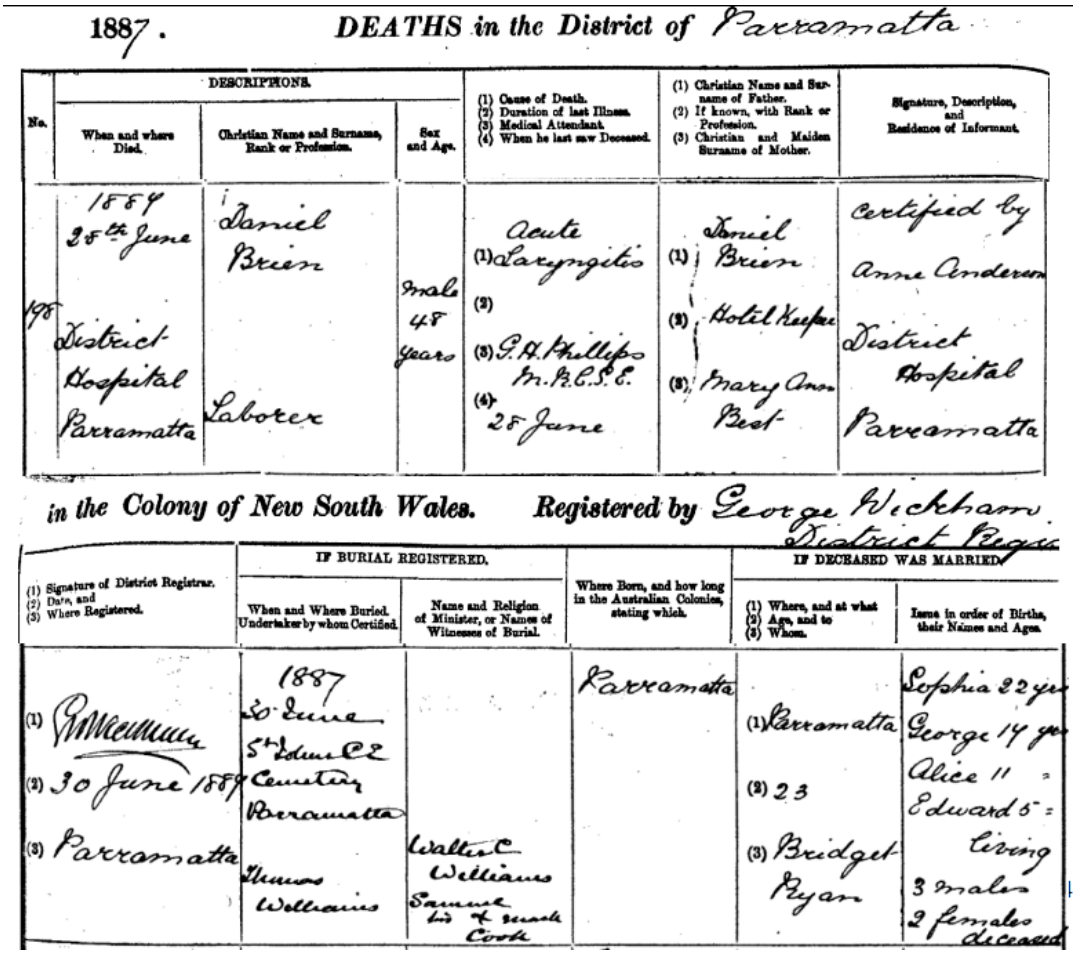
Daniel Brien and Bridget Ryan's daughter Alice Maude Sonter died at Granville NSW in May 1955. The following notice was placed in the Cumberland Argus on the 1st June 1955.



THE FAMILY of the late Mrs. Alice Sonter desires to sincerely thank all relatives, friends and neighbours for floral tributes, letters, cards, etc., in their recent sad loss of their dear mother. Especially would they like to thank Drs. Hilliard and Rosenfield for their kind attention; also the outdoor staff of Parramatta City Council, the employees of the Beef Department of State Abattoirs and members of the Royal Exchange Social Club. Will all please accept this as personal thanks.

Mention of Alice Maude Brien who married Samuel Sonter in 1894. Alice died in 1955.
Cumberland Argus 1st June 1955

Daniel James Brien died on 28th June 1887 at Parramatta hospital and was buried at St John's Church of England cemetery Parramatta. The cause of death was acute laryngitis.



1887. **DEATHS in the District of** Parramatta

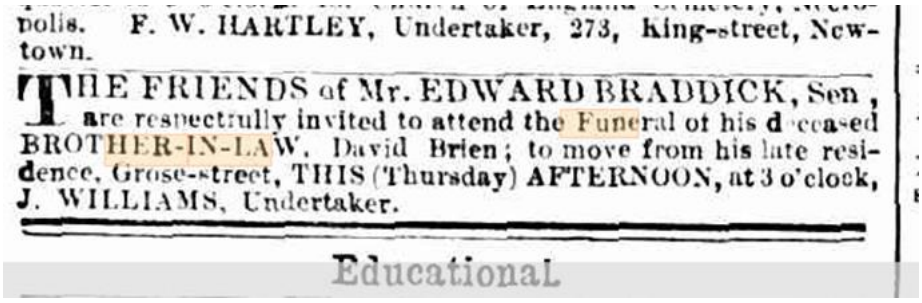
No.	When and where Died	Christian Name and Surname, Rank or Profession	Sex and Age	(1) Cause of Death. (2) Duration of last Illness. (3) Medical Attendant. (4) When he last saw Deceased.	(1) Christian Name and Surname of Father. (2) If known, with Rank or Profession. (3) Christian and Maiden Surname of Mother.	Signature, Description, and Residence of Informant.
198	1887 28th June District Hospital Parramatta	Daniel Brien Laborer	Male 48 years	(1) Acute Laryngitis (2) (3) G. H. Phillips M.R.C.S.E. (4) 28 June	(1) Daniel Brien (2) Hotel Keeper (3) Mary Ann Best	certified by Anne Anderson District Hospital Parramatta

in the Colony of New South Wales. **Registered by** George Wickham District Registrar

(1) Signature of District Registrar. (2) Date, and (3) Where Registered.	IF BURIAL REGISTERED. When and Where Buried. Undertaker by whom Certified.	Name and Religion of Minister, or Names of Witnesses of Burial.	Where Born, and how long in the Australian Colonies, stating which.	IF DECEASED WAS MARRIED. (1) Where, and at what (2) Age, and to (3) Whom.	Issue in order of Births, their Names and Ages.
(1) [illegible] (2) 30 June 1887 (3) Parramatta	1887 30 June 5th [illegible] Cemetery Parramatta Thomas Williams	Walter C. Williams Samuel [illegible] Cook	Parramatta	(1) Parramatta (2) 23 (3) Bridget Ryan	Sophia 22 yrs George 14 yrs Alice 11 = Edward 5 = living 3 males 2 females deceased

Death certificate of my two times great grand father Daniel James Brien, 28th June 1887 aged 45

On the 30th June a notice was placed in the Sydney Morning Herald by Daniel's brother-in-law Edward Braddick advising of Daniel's funeral. Edward's hand writing must have been difficult for the printer to read as he printed 'David Brien' instead of Daniel Brien.



polis. F. W. HARTLEY, Undertaker, 273, King-street, Newtown.

THE FRIENDS of Mr. EDWARD BRADDICK, Sen., are respectfully invited to attend the Funeral of his deceased BROTHER-IN-LAW, David Brien; to move from his late residence, Grose-street, THIS (Thursday) AFTERNOON, at 3 o'clock, J. WILLIAMS, Undertaker.

Educational

Daniel James Brien's death notice in 1887 (note mistake with his name "David")
Sydney Morning Herald 30th June 1887

Bridget Ryan born 1841

Daniel James Brien married Bridget Ryan who was born in 1841 in the Sydney suburb of Yagoona. In Bridget's day Yagoona was known as 'Irish Town', she lived her early childhood at a property on Liverpool Road that her father, Michael Ryan Jr received as part of his job as a Police officer.

Bridget's father Michael Ryan Jr was attached to the Parramatta Police division and over time he had several different postings.

When Bridget was about 10 years old her family moved to another house provided by the Police Dept located on Parramatta Rd at Homebush; and later they moved to O'Connell St Parramatta.

Bridget is mentioned in a newspaper article dated 17th March 1894 which relates to the death of her sister Catherine Savage who lived next door in Fennell St Parramatta. Catherine had a sudden illness resulting in almost instant death and Bridget was called to her house to attend to her.

Bridget Brien, widow, and sister of deceased, stated that about 5 minutes to 4 o'clock the last witness came to the fence and called her. She ran into Savage's and found the deceased lying on the side of the bed moaning. Went up and touched her and saw that her eyes were turned up. Savage said "What's the matter," and she replied "Oh! she's dead." Deceased and her husband lived on good terms together.

The jury returned a verdict in accordance with the medical testimony.

Cumberland Argus 17th March 1894

In October 1913 Bridget Brien placed a tribute to her grand daughter Katie Sonter who died in October 1912 aged 18. Katie was born in 1894, the daughter of Daniel & Bridget's daughter Alice Maude Brien who was born in 1875.

SONTER.—In memory of our dearly beloved grand-daughter, Katie Sonter, who departed this on 25th October, 1912.

Abide with Jesus.
She is not dead, but gone before.

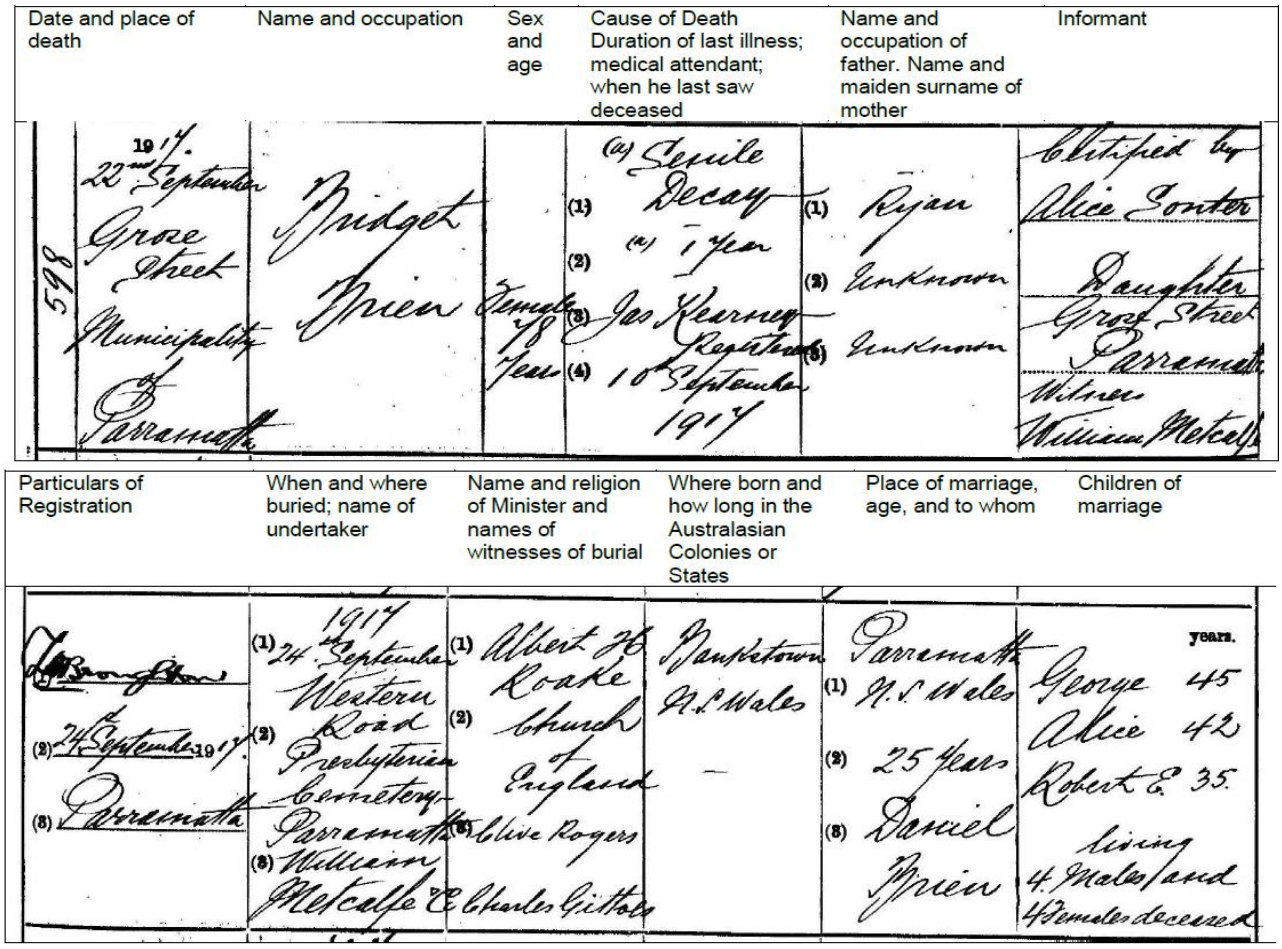
Inserted by her grandmother, Mrs. B. Brien.

Cumberland Argus 25th Oct 1913 (from Mrs. Bridget Brien)

Bridget Brien (Ryan) died in Grose St Parramatta at the house of her daughter Alice Sonter on the 22nd Sep 1917. She was buried at the Western Road cemetery Mays Hill, Parramatta.

Our ancestor George Brien is listed amongst the children of the marriage still living, aged 45.

DEATH CERTIFICATE



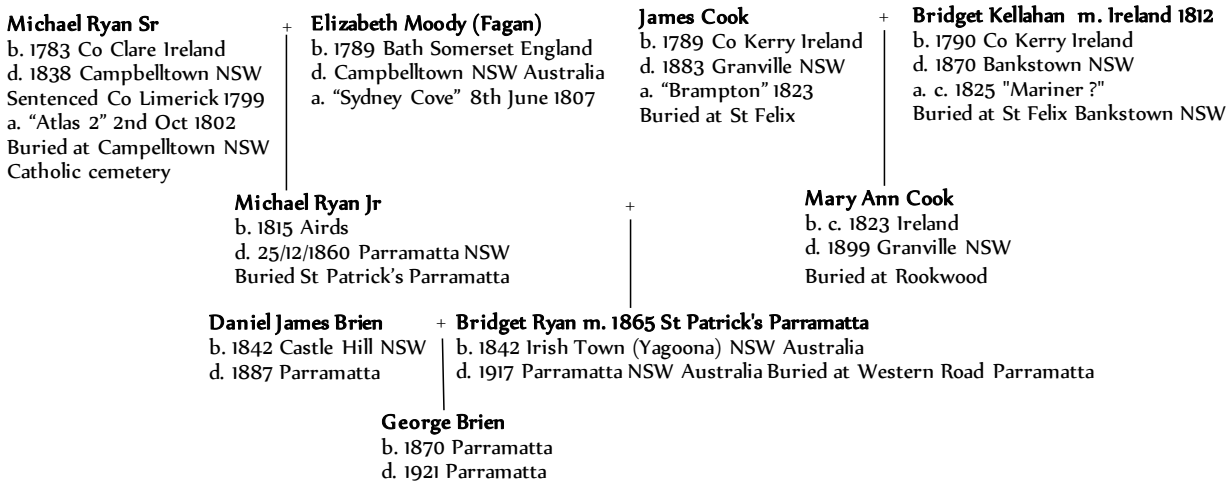
Date and place of death	Name and occupation	Sex and age	Cause of Death Duration of last illness; medical attendant; when he last saw deceased	Name and occupation of father. Name and maiden surname of mother	Informant
1917. 22nd September Grose Street Municipality of Parramatta 598	Bridget Brien	Female 78 Years	(a) Senile Decay (1) (a) 1 year (2) (3) Jas Kearney Registrar (4) 10 September 1917	(1) Ryan (2) Unknown (3) Unknown	Certified by Alice Sonter Daughter Grose Street Parramatta Witness William Metcalfe

Particulars of Registration	When and where buried; name of undertaker	Name and religion of Minister and names of witnesses of burial	Where born and how long in the Australasian Colonies or States	Place of marriage, age, and to whom	Children of marriage
(2) 24 September 1917 (3) Parramatta	(1) 24 September 1917 (2) Western Road Presbyterian Cemetery Parramatta (3) William Metcalfe & Charles Gittos	(1) Albert J. Roake (2) Church of England (3) Clive Rogers	Pamphletown N.S.Wales —	Parramatta (1) N.S.Wales (2) 25 years (3) Daniel Brien	years. George 45 Alice 42 Robert G. 35. living 4 Males and 4 Females deceased

Death certificate of my two times great grand mother Bridget Ryan, 22nd Sep 1917

Bridget Ryan's father - Michael Ryan Jr

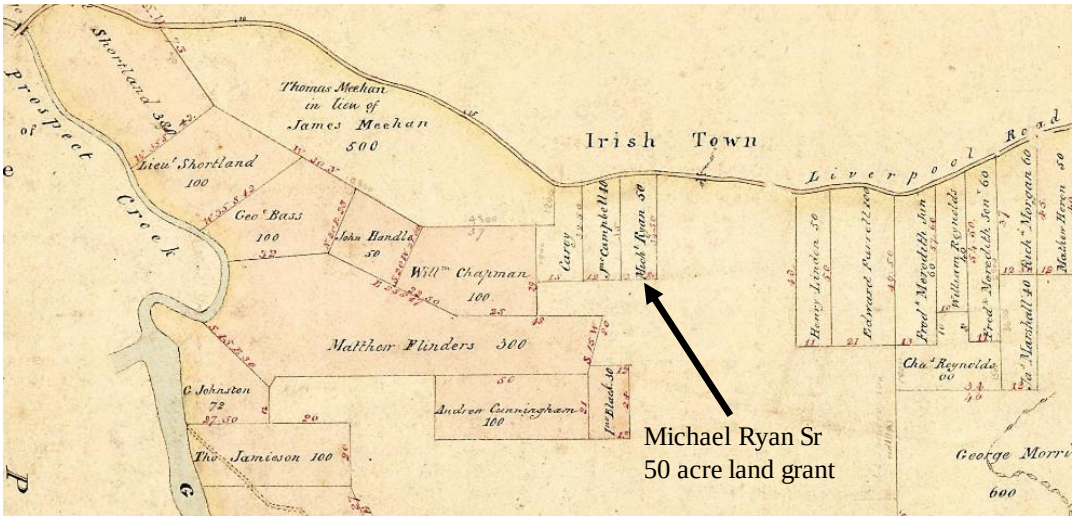
Bridget Ryan's parents were Michael Ryan Jr born in 1815 and Mary Ann Cook born about 1823.



Family tree showing Bridget Ryan's parents and grand parents

Bridget Ryan's father was Michael Ryan Jr. Michael Jr was born in 1815 at Airds near Campbelltown. In Nov 1825 Michael Jr's father (also Michael Ryan) received a 50-acre land grant on the southern side of Liverpool road, west of Chapel road near present day Yagoona. This area was known at the time as "Irish Town". Considering Michael Ryan Sr was born in Co Clare Ireland, it is temping to think that his land grant may have had something to do with the name given to the area.

Michael Ryan Jr may have grown up on this property, or at least lived there for some time. This seems the most likely explanation of how he came to meet his wife Mary Ann Cook who lived nearby on her parent's property on Punchbowl Road.



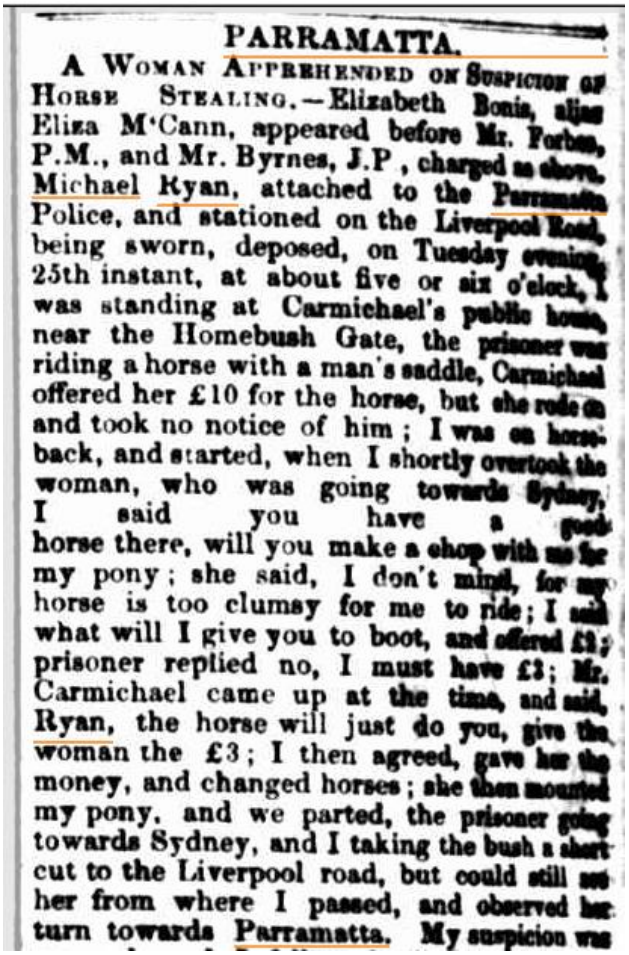
Land grant of Michael Ryan on Liverpool Rd Yagoona (then known as Irish Town)

Later Michael Ryan Jr joined the Police force and was stationed at various locations around the district. including Parramatta Rd at Homebush and around 1850 was posted at Parramatta.

Michael Jr's elder brother John Ryan was the Senior Constable of the Parramatta district and by 1839 was promoted to Assistant Chief Constable for the whole of Sydney. John Ryan was a very well known and respected figure. I have found records that indicate that Michael & John had business and land dealings. [599]

John Ryan died on the 20th January 1857 at his home in George St Parramatta aged 51. Sometime after this date Michael Ryan left the Police force and was employed as a Laborer.

Michael Ryan frequently appears in the local newspapers in his role as a Police Constable. I have included below an article from 1852 in which Michael describes making an arrest using some unorthodox procedures.



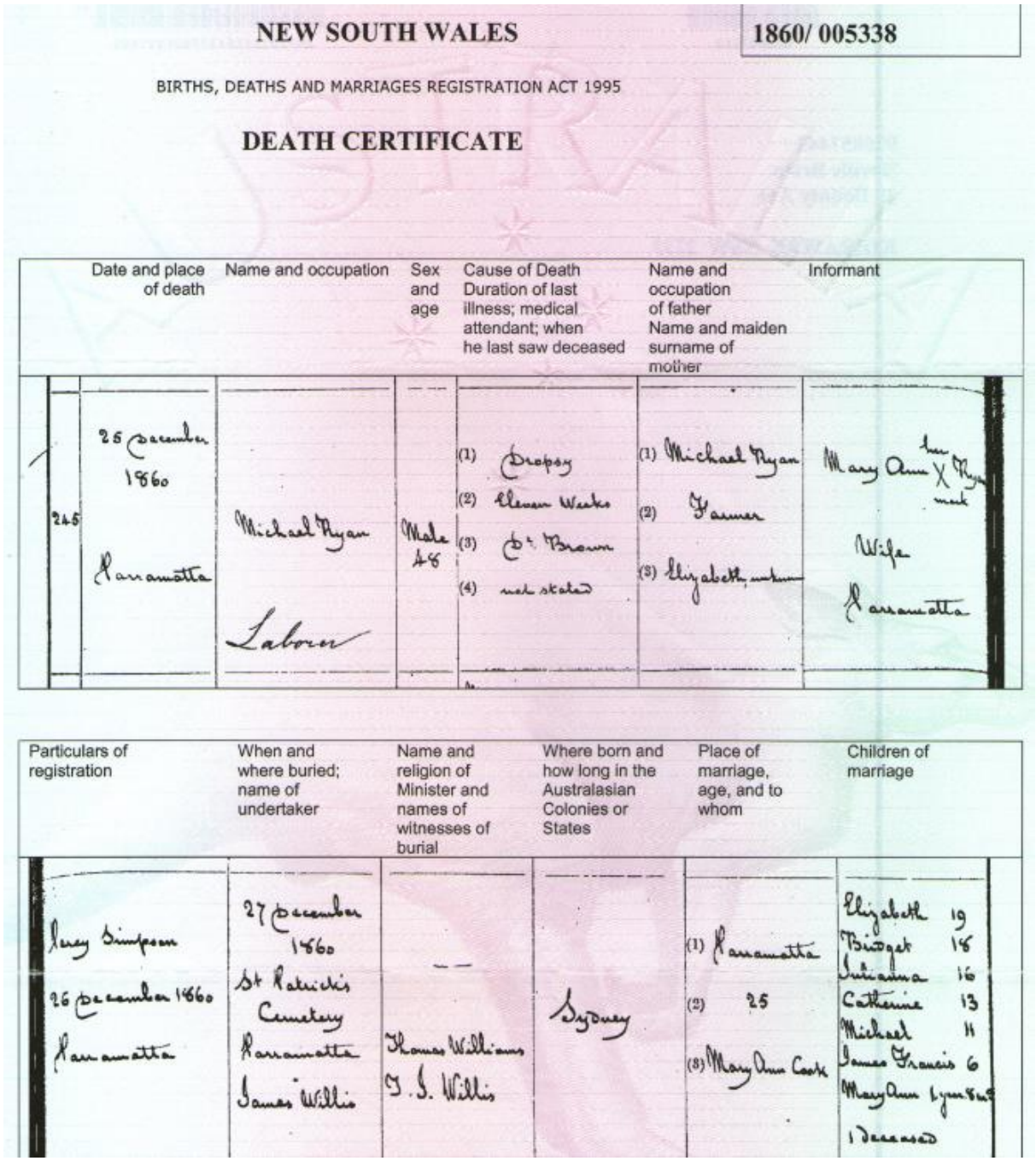
PARRAMATTA.

A WOMAN APPREHENDED ON SUSPICION OF HORSE STEALING.—Elizabeth Bonis, alias Eliza M'Cann, appeared before Mr. Forbes, P.M., and Mr. Byrnes, J.P., charged as above. Michael Ryan, attached to the Parramatta Police, and stationed on the Liverpool Road, being sworn, deposed, on Tuesday evening, 25th instant, at about five or six o'clock, I was standing at Carmichael's public house, near the Homebush Gate, the prisoner was riding a horse with a man's saddle, Carmichael offered her £10 for the horse, but she rode on and took no notice of him; I was on horseback, and started, when I shortly overtook the woman, who was going towards Sydney, I said you have a good horse there, will you make a chop with me for my pony; she said, I don't mind, for my horse is too clumsy for me to ride; I said what will I give you to boot, and offered £2; prisoner replied no, I must have £3; Mr. Carmichael came up at the time, and said, Ryan, the horse will just do you, give the woman the £3; I then agreed, gave her the money, and changed horses; she then mounted my pony, and we parted, the prisoner going towards Sydney, and I taking the bush a short cut to the Liverpool road, but could still see her from where I passed, and observed her turn towards Parramatta. My suspicion was aroused, and I followed till I overtook her; she said, I cannot get the pony along; I replied, nor can I get this brute to move, we had better exchange again; it was agreed, and the prisoner gave me my pony and the £3, and we changed horses again. I then said, I shall now take you in charge for horse-stealing. I accordingly brought her to Parramatta, and confined her in the watch house. She gave her name as Elizabeth Bonis, and on the chief constable saying to her is not your name Eliza M'Cann, she, the prisoner, admitted it to be so.—Mr. Ryan, chief constable, informed their worships that he had ascertained that the horse is worth about £15 or £16; Mr. Byrnes then asked Policeman Ryan whether he was in the habit of making such bargains in horse-dealing? As a constable, it is certainly your duty to be more alive to such transactions; and your suspicions ought to have been aroused, and you ought most assuredly not to have been in the capacity of a horse-dealer. You may think yourself lucky to have got your £3 back. The prisoner was remanded until Saturday next. The following is a description of the horse in charge of the police, viz.:—Bay horse, branded under saddle HL, four white feet, white on nose, very fat.

SMH Thursday 26 February 1852

Article from SMH in which policeman Michael Ryan gets a mention in 1852

Michael Ryan Jr died at Parramatta on Christmas day 1860 aged 48; he was buried at St Patrick's Parramatta. His death certificate states the cause was "Dropsy" and that he had been ill for 11 weeks. His wife Mary Ann Cook was left to raise 5 children under 18, including baby Mary Ann aged only 20 months old.



NEW SOUTH WALES 1860/ 005338

BIRTHS, DEATHS AND MARRIAGES REGISTRATION ACT 1995

DEATH CERTIFICATE

	Date and place of death	Name and occupation	Sex and age	Cause of Death Duration of last illness; medical attendant; when he last saw deceased	Name and occupation of father Name and maiden surname of mother	Informant
245	25 December 1860 Parramatta	Michael Ryan Labourer	Male 48	(1) Dropsy (2) Eleven Weeks (3) Dr. Brown (4) not stated	(1) Michael Ryan (2) Farmer (3) Elizabeth, mother	Mary Ann X Ryan mark Wife Parramatta

Particulars of registration	When and where buried; name of undertaker	Name and religion of Minister and names of witnesses of burial	Where born and how long in the Australasian Colonies or States	Place of marriage, age, and to whom	Children of marriage
Jury Simpson 26 December 1860 Parramatta	27 December 1860 St Patricks Cemetery Parramatta James Willis	Thomas Williams T. S. Willis	Sydney	(1) Parramatta (2) 25 (3) Mary Ann Cook	Elizabeth 19 Bridget 18 Julianna 16 Catherine 13 Michael 11 James Francis 6 Mary Ann Lyons 1 Deceased

Death Certificate of my three times great grand father Michael Ryan Jr, 25th December 1860

Our ancestor Bridget Ryan can be seen aged 18, her sister Catherine aged 13 would later marry John Savage and in 1894 these two sisters lived next door to each other in Fennell St Parramatta.

Bridget Ryan's mother – Mary Ann Cook b. c. 1823

Bridget Ryan's mother was Mary Ann Cook. I haven't so far located a birth record for Mary, but evidence suggests she was born around 1823, either in Ireland or aboard the ship 'Mariner' en route to Sydney Australia.

Mary Ann Cook grew up on 'Cook Farm' at Bankstown, a 50-acre property located near the corner of Stacey St and Canterbury Rd, Punchbowl NSW.

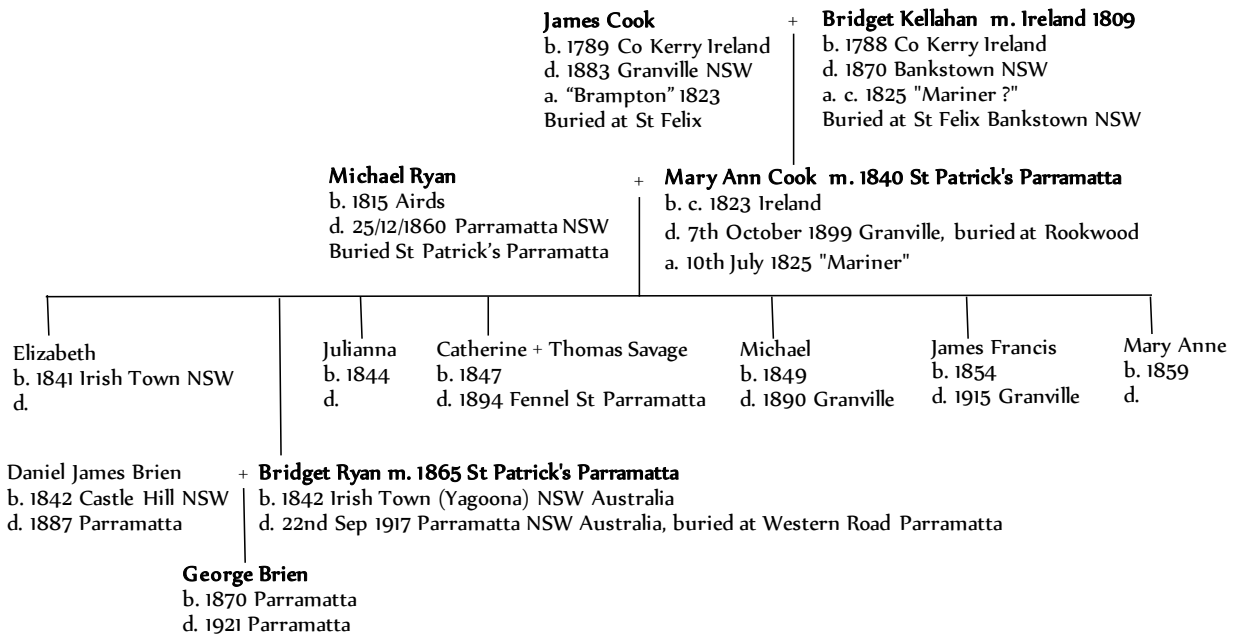
The first record I can find of Mary Ann Cook is when she married Michael Ryan Jr at St Patrick's church Parramatta on 11th February 1840. Michael was aged 25 and Mary Ann about 16.

MARRIAGES

Number	13, Vol 146
Grooms Details	
Name	Michael RYAN, his X mark
Member	Roman Catholic Church
Abode	Bankstown
Brides Details	
Name	Mary Anne COOK, her X mark
Member	Roman Catholic Church
Abode	Bankstown
When married	11th February 1840
Where married	Parramatta
Minister	Michael Brennan
Religion	Roman Catholic Church
Abode	Parramatta
Witnesses	Henry Cook William Meredith

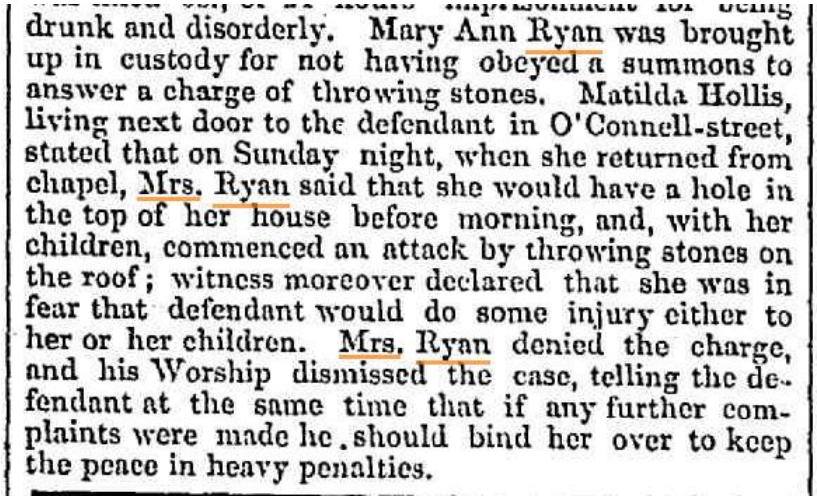
Marriage record of Michael Ryan Jr and Mary Ann Cook 11th Feb 1840

The witnesses to their wedding were Henry Cook (Mary Ann Cook's brother) and William Meredith (the husband of Michael Ryan Jr's sister Sarah).



Children of Michael Ryan Jr and Mary Ann Cook

Shortly before her husband died, Michael and Mary Ann were living in O'Connell Street Parramatta. Mary Ann Ryan gets a mention in the SMH on the 10th May 1859 having been charged with throwing stones at a neighbor's house.



drunk and disorderly. Mary Ann Ryan was brought up in custody for not having obeyed a summons to answer a charge of throwing stones. Matilda Hollis, living next door to the defendant in O'Connell-street, stated that on Sunday night, when she returned from chapel, Mrs. Ryan said that she would have a hole in the top of her house before morning, and, with her children, commenced an attack by throwing stones on the roof; witness moreover declared that she was in fear that defendant would do some injury either to her or her children. Mrs. Ryan denied the charge, and his Worship dismissed the case, telling the defendant at the same time that if any further complaints were made he should bind her over to keep the peace in heavy penalties.

SMH Tuesday 10 May 1859

The next record I can find regarding Mary Ann Cook is her death certificate dated 7th October 1899. Mary Ann died at the home of her son James Francis Ryan at 15 Bennalong Street Granville (in an area originally known as Parramatta Junction). Back in 1899 the spelling of Bennalong Street was "Binalong" Street, and this is what appears on Mary Ann Cook's death certificate.

James Ryan appears in the Sands Directory living at 15 Binalong Street Granville from 1892 through to 1908.

There are a few anomalies on Mary Ann's death certificate. Her son James Ryan was the informant, and he said her age was 84 years when she died in 1899. We can cross-check this as James Ryan also states that Mary Ann was aged 16 when she married Michael Ryan Jr in 1840. We have that marriage record, and if her age was indeed 16 in 1840, then she would have been aged about 75 at her time of death. James gets Mary Ann's mother's name incorrect (he says it's Mary Ann in lieu of Bridget) but he does get the names and ages of Mary Ann's children kind of correct.

Mary Ann Cook was buried at Rookwood Catholic cemetery, I checked the site in 2023 and I could find no sign of her grave. (Rookwood Register Number: 2227413 Mortuary 1, F, Grave 1188) [600]

DEATH CERTIFICATE

Date and place of death	Name and occupation	Sex and age	Cause of Death Duration of last illness; medical attendant; when he last saw deceased	Name and occupation of father. Name and maiden surname of mother	Informant
1899 7th October 271 Binalong Street Granville	Mary Ann Ryan —	Female 84 years	(1) Senile Decay (2) 5 Months (3) Thomas Harrison Registered (4) 6th October 1899	(1) James Cook (2) Labourer (3) Mary Ann [illegible]	James [illegible] Son Granville

Particulars of Registration	When and where buried; name of undertaker	Name and religion of Minister and names of witnesses of burial	Where born and how long in the Australasian Colonies or States	Place of marriage, age, and to whom	Children of marriage
[illegible] 7th October 1899 Granville	1899 (1) 9th October Roman Catholic (2) Cemetery Rookwood (3) William Metcalfe	(1) P. Power (2) Roman Catholic Henry Rogers (3) R.C. Glasdale	[illegible] England 83 years N.S. Wales	(1) Parramatta N.S. Wales (2) 16 (3) Michael Ryan	years. Elizabeth 56 Bridget 54 Julia 52 James Francis 44 Mary Ann 41 living 1 male 4 deceased 1 female

Death certificate of my three times great grandmother Mary Ann Cook, 7th October 1899 who died at 15 Bennalong Street Granville.

By way of interest, Numbers 15 & 17 Bennalong Street Granville appear in the 'Granville Heritage listings' as houses of local significance described as "Victorian Stone Cottages". [601]

I quote from the Statement of Significance:

"The cottages at 15 and 17 Bennalong Street are of local significance for their historic, associative and aesthetic values. Built c.1890, the dwellings were constructed in association with industrial and commercial development of Granville from 1880 to 1930s. The item has additional significance for its association with local builder and stonemason, Horace James Melville, who constructed the cottages with stones which had previously formed the wall around Parramatta Park erected during Governor Macquarie's residence 1811 to 1821. The items have some aesthetic significance as a pair of Victorian period cottages reputed to be the only stone houses in Granville.

The items consists of two, single storey stone cottages with hipped roofs clad with green Colorbond roofing and a brick chimney."



Stone houses at numbers 15 & 17 Bennalong Street Granville
(No. 15 on the left, was the last home of my three times great grandmother Mary Ann Cook)

Historical Notes:

"Granville was originally part of the land grant known as Drainwell Estate, given in 1806 to Garnham Blaxcell. This grant consisted of 1,125 acres which was used as collateral for Blaxcell's commercial enterprises. The estate was then mortgaged to Sir John Jamison, who took it over when Blaxcell fled the colony in 1817. The land was largely undeveloped until the 1860s when it was subdivided. Many of the first buyers were orchardists and farmers, although there were also some men who built middleclass villas. In the 1880s, the area became known as 'Granville', in honour of the British Foreign Minister, Lord Granville and in 1885 the Municipality of Granville was declared."

Bridget Ryan's grand parents Michael Ryan Sr & Elizabeth Moody

Bridget Ryan's family entered Australia from both Ireland and England. On her father's side, her grand father was Michael Ryan Sr. He was born in Quin, County Clare Ireland in 1783 to parents Michael Ryan (1764-1836) and Mary Farrell (b. c. 1765).[602] Michael was a carpenter and was involved in fighting against the English in the 1798 war called the "Wicklow Uprising."

In this document I refer to this Michael Ryan as "Michael Ryan Sr" as he later had a son who was also named Michael Ryan (I refer to him as Michael Ryan Jr).

Michael Ryan Sr was accused of being an Irish Rebel and arrested in County Limerick around 1799. There is no record of his trial and this is common for Rebels as they were seen as prisoners of war, rounded up & many were sent to NSW for life. Michael arrived on the "Atlas 2" in Oct 1802. Michael Ryan Sr never received a pardon and held a ticket of leave until his death in 1838.

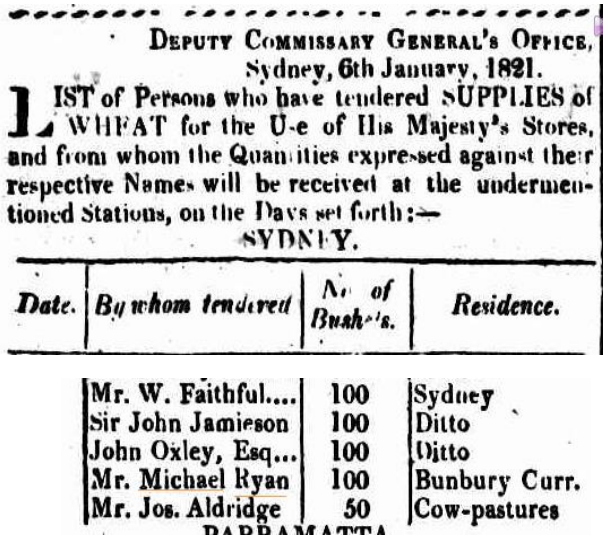
A number of sources state that about 1807 Michael Sr married an English convict named Elizabeth Moody, I can find no record of this marriage but it is clear Michael & Elizabeth were a couple.

Elizabeth Moody was born at Bath England and was tried on 15th July 1806 at Bridgewater Quarter Sessions for obtaining money on false pretenses and transported for 7 years. She arrived on the convict transport ship 'Sydney Cove' in 1807 (the same ship as our Mary Ann Parker arrived).

Elizabeth had had two previous marriages, one to Daniel Fagan, the other to Benjamin Moody, so her name changes over time from Fagan to Moody to Ryan. I can't say at this stage what her maiden name was. Elizabeth was accepted into the Catholic Church by Father Therry in 1820. Elizabeth along with the Ryan children are listed on Page 3 of Father Therry's book. The first Catholic baptisms in NSW were performed at Bunburry Curren near Campbelltown NSW. [603]

On the 6th January 1821 Michael Ryan Sr appeared in the Sydney Gazette re supplying wheat grown on his farm at Bunbury Curren to the Government Stores. This farm was in the vicinity of Macquarie Fields, Bunburry Curren creek still runs through the area.

Michael Ryan Sr mentioned in the Sydney Gazette re supplying wheat grown on his farm at Bunbury Curren Saturday 6 January 1821



DEPUTY COMMISSARY GENERAL'S OFFICE,
Sydney, 6th January, 1821.

LIST of Persons who have tendered SUPPLIES of WHEAT for the Use of His Majesty's Stores, and from whom the Quantities expressed against their respective Names will be received at the undermentioned Stations, on the Days set forth:—

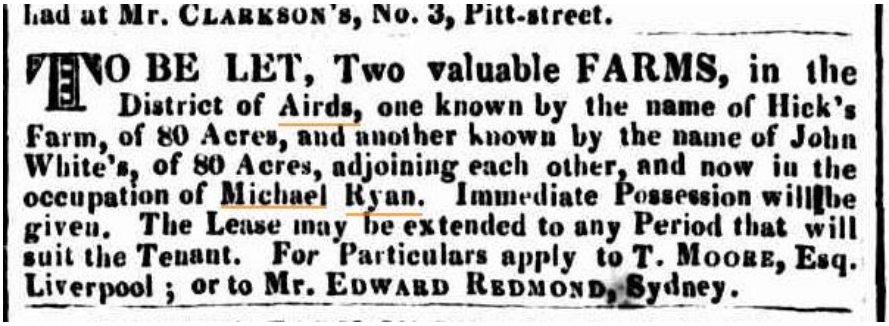
SYDNEY.

Date.	By whom tendered	No. of Bushels.	Residence.
	Mr. W. Faithful....	100	Sydney
	Sir John Jamieson	100	Ditto
	John Oxley, Esq...	100	Ditto
	Mr. Michael Ryan	100	Bunbury Curr.
	Mr. Jos. Aldridge	50	Cow-pastures

PARRAMATTA

In Nov 1825 the Colonial Secretary Index lists Michael Ryan Sr from the district of Airds as receiving a 50-acre land grant on Liverpool road in present day Yagoona.

On Saturday 29th April 1826 an advertisement in the Sydney Gazette lists two properties at Airds for lease, one known as Hick's farm of 80 acres and the other John White's farm of 80 acres. The article says that Michael Ryan Sr is the current lease holder.

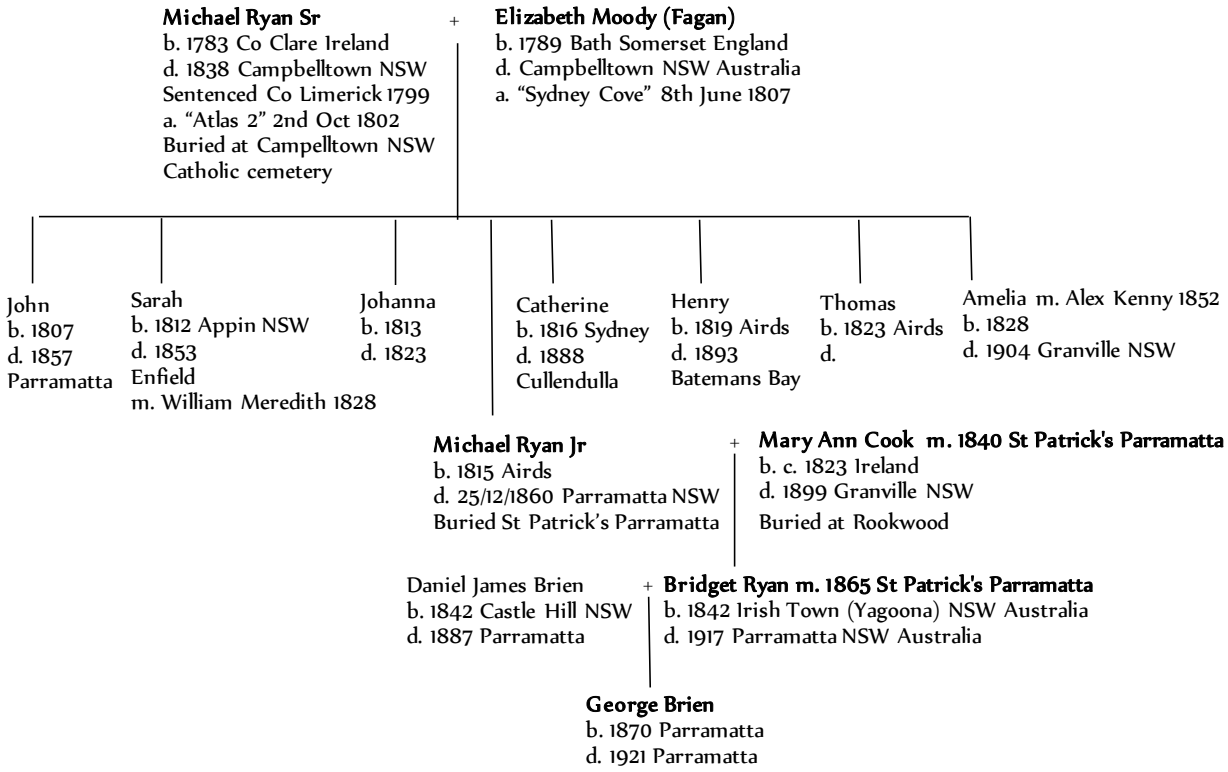


had at Mr. CLARKSON's, No. 3, Pitt-street.

TO BE LET, Two valuable FARMS, in the District of Airds, one known by the name of Hick's Farm, of 80 Acres, and another known by the name of John White's, of 80 Acres, adjoining each other, and now in the occupation of Michael Ryan. Immediate Possession will be given. The Lease may be extended to any Period that will suit the Tenant. For Particulars apply to T. MOORE, Esq. Liverpool; or to Mr. EDWARD REDMOND, Sydney.

Michael Ryan Sr mentioned in the Sydney Gazette Saturday 29 April 1826

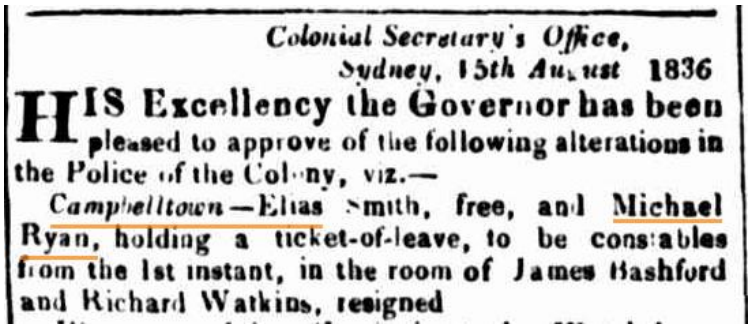
Michael Ryan Sr and Elizabeth Moody had eight children. We are descended from their fourth child; Michael Ryan Jr who was born near Campbelltown in 1815.



Children of Michael Ryan Sr and Elizabeth Moody

Towards the end of his life, Michael Ryan Sr made a career change from farming and joined the Police Force. On the 20th August 1836 an article appeared in the Sydney Gazette noting his appointment as a Police Constable at Campbelltown. It states that Michael held a "Ticket of leave" which indicates that Michael never became a free man.

This was typical of how Irish rebels were treated and as a consequence Michael had to carry his 'Ticket' with him at all times.



Colonial Secretary's Office,
Sydney, 15th August 1836

HIS Excellency the Governor has been pleased to approve of the following alterations in the Police of the Colony, viz.—

Campbelltown—Elias Smith, free, and Michael Ryan, holding a ticket-of-leave, to be constables from the 1st instant, in the room of James Hashford and Richard Watkins, resigned

Michael Ryan appointed Constable Sydney Gazette Saturday 20 August 1836

Michael Ryan Sr died on the 11th Feb 1838 aged 58. According to the Meredith family history documents, Michael Ryan Sr is buried at St John's pioneer cemetery Campbelltown. During my research I visited this cemetery but I could find no sign of his grave.

According to information up-loaded to the My Heritage web site, Elizabeth Moody died in the Parramatta area in 1886 aged in her late 90s however, to date I haven't been able to locate an actual burial record matching this information.

Michael Ryan Sr's daughter Sarah Ryan married William Meredith in 1828. William's father was Frederick Meredith; Frederick is a folk hero of early colonial life in Sydney. He arrived with the First Fleet as a steward to Captain John Marshall of the Scarborough in 1788. Frederick's initials are still visible at Garden Island where the crew were assigned to preparing a garden.

Frederick Meredith's name is associated with the removal of bush rangers from Liverpool and Dog Trap roads (now called Woodville road) and more significantly, the defense of Parramatta during the 1804 'Battle of Vinegar Hill' rebellion.

By 1800 Frederick Meredith had been appointed a member of the 'Sydney Loyal Association' set up in 1800 by Governor Hunter as a civilian police force. [604]

Frederick Meredith and his son William later formed a father & son team as the first Policemen to operate along Liverpool Road. In 1826 they caught the bush rangers Patrick Sullivan and James Moran and hanged them from gallows that were located where the water tower on Liverpool road at Bankstown is today.

Frederick Meredith's involvement with the 'Battle of Vinegar Hill' connects our family with this significant event of early Sydney.

Battle of Vinegar Hill 1804

Records show that Frederick Meredith had an involvement in an event known as 'The Battle of Vinegar Hill' in 1804. Also known as the Castle Hill rebellion, it was the first documented clash between Europeans on Australian soil. [605]

The uprising was initiated by a group of mainly Irish Convicts who were working on the government farm at Toongabbie. [606] Under the leadership of convict Philip Cunningham (himself an Irish Rebel) they planned to march to the Hawkesbury region and team up with other rebels, then on to Parramatta and finally Sydney where they had planned to commandeer a ship.

The uprising commenced at 8 o'clock on the evening of the 4th March 1804, John Cavenah set fire to his hut at Castle Hill as the signal for the rebellion to begin. While the fire was not seen by the convicts on the Hawkesbury River; Cunningham was unaware of this and activated the plan to gather weapons, ammunition, food and recruits from supporters in the surrounding districts.

Cunningham leading, about 200 to 300 rebels broke into the Toongabbie government farm buildings, taking firearms, ammunition, and other weapons. The constables and overseers were overpowered and the rebels then went from farm to farm on their way to Constitution Hill at Parramatta, seizing more weapons and supplies, including rum and spirits, and recruiting others to join their cause.

Many of the participants involved were convicted Irish Rebels (like our ancestor Michael Ryan) however our Michael appears at the time to have been away at Airds to the south of Parramatta.

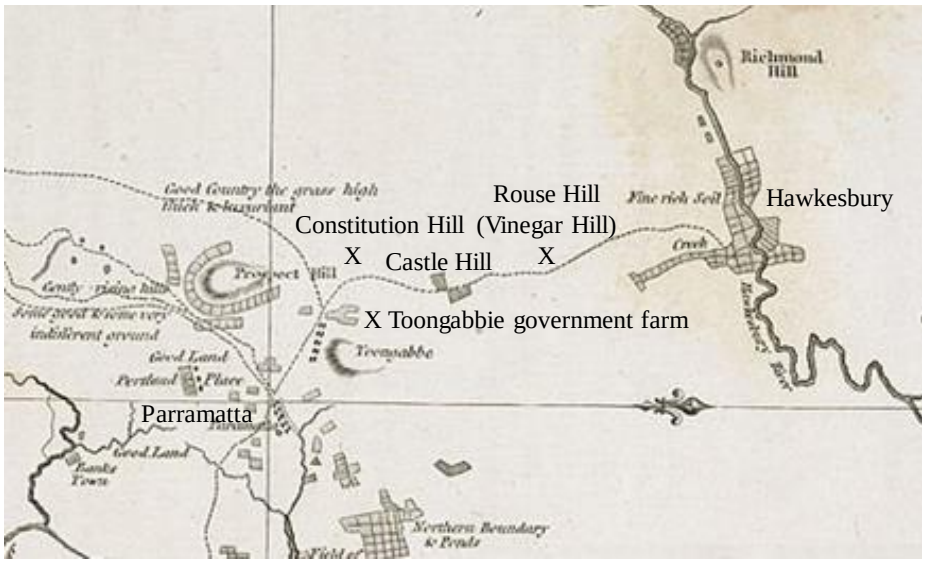
When news of the uprising spread there was great panic amongst the colony which had a population of around 5,000 inhabitants at the time. Officials such as Reverend Samuel Marsden fled the area by boat, escorting Elizabeth Macarthur and her children, because an informer had advised that an attack would be made on the Macarthur's Seven Hills farm so as to draw troops away from Parramatta.

On receipt of the news of the uprising, Governor King set off alone from Sydney for Parramatta to assume command, while Colonel William Paterson, the lieutenant governor, called out the guard. One hundred and forty men from HMS Calcutta, as well as the 'Sydney Loyal Association' militia including Frederick Meredith, took over guard duties, and a New South Wales Corps contingent of 56 personnel, including Lieutenant William Davies and Quartermaster Sergeant Thomas Laycock, were dispatched to march through the night to bolster the garrison at Parramatta.

While the main group were pillaging from the government farm, a party were sent to Parramatta where they were to set fire to buildings as a beckon to signal other conspirators to begin converging on Constitution Hill. But this group were turned away by Frederick Meredith and the Sydney Loyal Association police force guarding Parramatta; and the call out message failed to appear. [607]

After fruitlessly waiting for a signal of a successful takeover of Parramatta, and with the non-appearance of reinforcements, Cunningham was forced to withdraw to Rouse Hill to re-assess his strategy.

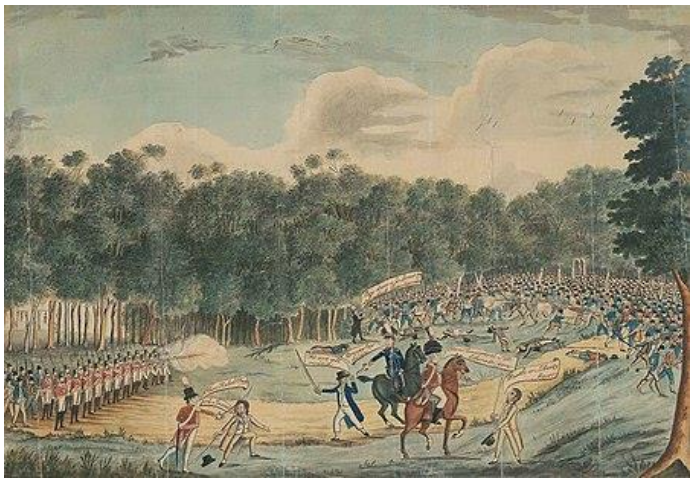
A contingent of over 100 NSW Corp and volunteers were placed under the command of Major George Johnston; under orders from Governor King to set out from Parramatta and pursued Cunningham's rebels. Johnston marched through the early morning of the 5th March 1804 and finally located the main rebel party of around 230 to 260 men near Rouse Hill.



Map showing key sites of the Vinegar Hill uprising 4th / 5th March 1804

After a number of unsuccessful attempts to coax the rebels to surrender, Johnston gave the order for his troops to engage, resulting in more of a massacre than a battle, with 11 rebels killed in the hunt that followed and a further nine court-martialled and hanged over the next few days. Some of the rebels were given up to 1000 lashes each and removed from Sydney to Newcastle. [608] Cunningham, at first thought to have died during the skirmish, was hanged without trial on the steps of the government store. His grave is located at Windsor, in Sydney's west. [609]

The battle became known as the 'Vinegar Hill Rebellion', or 'The Battle of Vinegar Hill', after an uprising at Vinegar Hill, in County Wexford, Ireland in 1798. The name "Vinegar Hill" became a catch-cry used at another uprising; the 'Eureka Stockade' at Ballarat, Victoria, 3 December 1854.



The Battle of Vinegar Hill
(Castle Hill rebellion)
4th and 5th of March 1804

(National Library of Australia)

Bridget Ryan's grand parents James Cook and Bridget Kellahan

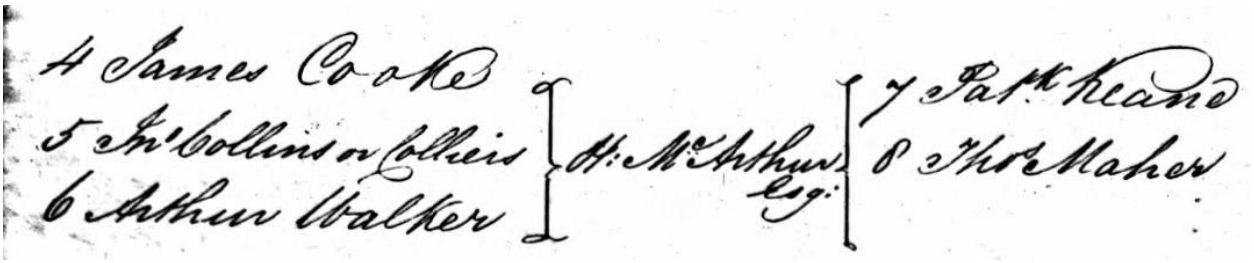
On Bridget Ryan's mothers' side, her Grand parents were convict James Cook and Bridget Kellahan. According to James Cook's Certificate of Freedom, he was born in 1789 at County Clare Ireland. Bridget Kellahan was born in 1790 in the adjacent County Kerry Ireland. They married in 1812 at Killarney Ireland.

The spelling of James Cook's name varies over time. In early documents he appears as "Cooke" but as time goes on, most documents I've found drop the "e" and spell his name as "Cook". To reduce confusion, I've used the spelling "Cook" through-out this document.

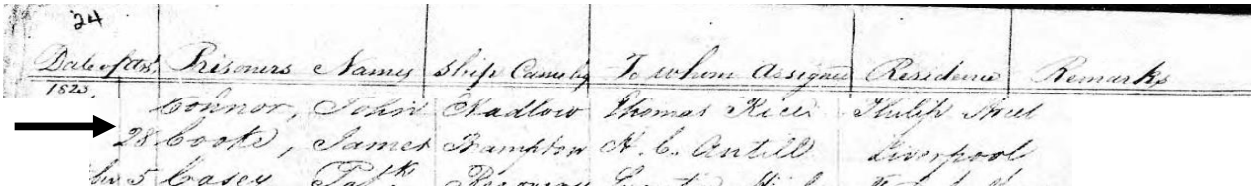
James was tried in 1822 at County Clare Ireland, but I can find no details of his offence apart from him being sentenced to seven years transportation to NSW.

James Cook sailed to Australian aboard the convict transport ship 'Brampton' which left Cork Cove in Ireland on the 8th November 1822. James Cook appears in the register of convicts who arrived from Ireland aboard the ship 'Brampton' landing in Sydney on the 22nd April 1823. James Cook is described as being a Labourer aged 33 from Co Clare.

The first record I found was his assignment to work for John Macarthur at Parramatta dated 28th April 1823.

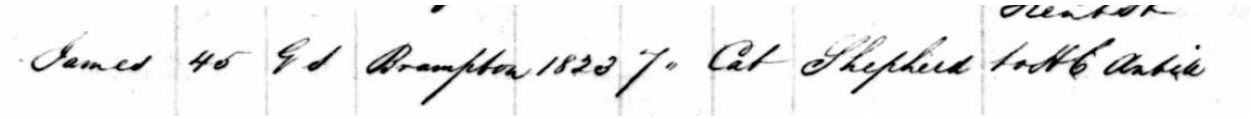


On the 28th April 1823 James Cook was assigned to work for John Macarthur at Parramatta. [610] The following year (1824) we see James Cook was re-assigned from Parramatta to the Liverpool property of Henry Colden Antill, who at the time was the aide-de-camp to Governor Lachlan Macquarie, later magistrate and superintendent of police for Picton district located south of Parramatta.



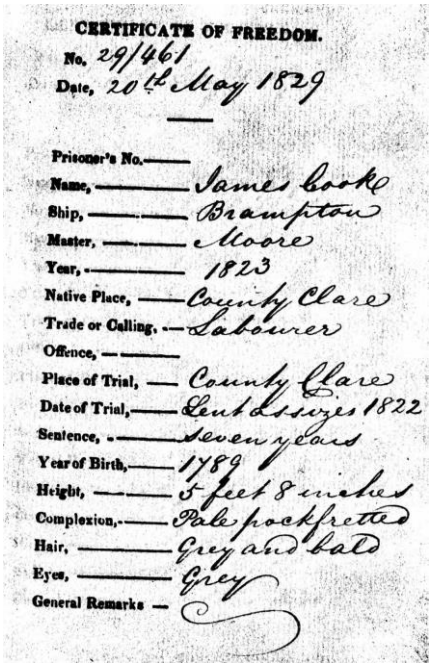
James Cook arrived on the 'Brampton' assigned to Henry Colden Antill 28th Sep 1824

James Cook appears in the 1828 census listed as a Catholic living at Camden south of Parramatta. James Cook's age is given as "45" but all other documents indicate that he was a few years younger than that. His occupation is listed as a "Shepard".


James | 40 | Gd | Brampton 1823 | J. Cat | Shepherd | took 6 Cattle

James Cook appears in the 1828 census

On the 20th May 1829 James Cook received his certificate of freedom and we get some more detail about him including his date of birth (1789) and he was 5 feet 8 inches tall.


CERTIFICATE OF FREEDOM.
No. 29/461
Date, 20th May 1829

Prisoner's No. —
Name, — James Cook
Ship, — Brampton
Master, — Moore
Year, — 1823
Native Place, — County Clare
Trade or Calling, — Labourer
Offence, —
Place of Trial, — County Clare
Date of Trial, — Lent Assizes 1822
Sentence, — Seven years
Year of Birth, — 1789
Height, — 5 feet 8 inches
Complexion, — Pale pockfretted
Hair, — Grey and bald
Eyes, — Grey
General Remarks —

James Cook's Certificate of Freedom dated 20th May 1829 [611]

James was aged about 40 years at the time

James Cook's wife Bridget Kellahan was born in County Kerry in 1790; the daughter of John Kellahan and Nora McSwiney. John Kellahan was a farmer in County Kerry. Evidence suggests that Bridget arrived in Sydney with their children Catherine, William and Henry in 1825 on board the ship "Mariner" (most likely) as part of the Convict family reunion scheme that ran in NSW between 1817 and 1840.

The scheme was established to send out certain wives and children of convicted men to join their husbands in New South Wales and Van Diemen's Land. Between 1817 and 1840 at least 508 men applied to have their wives and families sent out under the scheme, which appears to be the first assisted immigration scheme to the colonies. Under the scheme the women and children were sent out free of charge on the female convict ships. On the ship they were fed, clothed and on some ships the children received a rudimentary education.

The families were listed separately on the embarkation lists which often did not state numbers or names of the free women and children, but between 1820 and 1842 at least 297 wives and 643 children were sent out to join their husbands and fathers in Van Diemen's Land. It was thought that such a scheme would help to redress the imbalance of gender in the colonies and provide an incentive for good behavior among the male convicts.

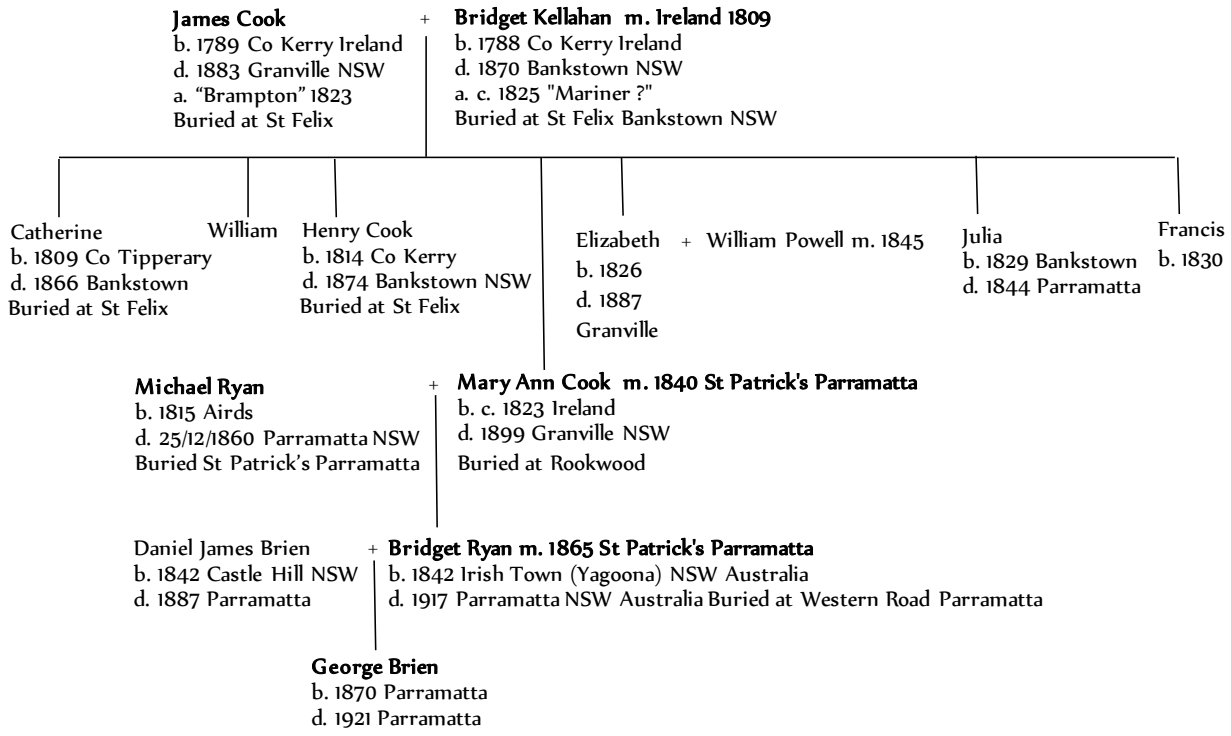
A convict who had received his ticket-of-leave was entitled to apply to have his wife and family sent out at government expense. He had to apply through his master, who forwarded the application to the Superintendent of Convicts, who applied to the Governor for approval. Applications were then sent to the Colonial Office in London and on to the Home Office.

Depending on the number of available berths on the female convict ships chartered at the time, certain families were selected and, if they wished to go were notified of the time and place of embarkation. Families had to get themselves to the point of embarkation at their own cost. On arrival they were released into the care of their husbands.

The complicated process of application and the inefficient administration by the Home Office in London led to a random method of selection. The scheme was discontinued in 1843 apparently due to the increased cost incurred sending women and children on to New South Wales after transportation to that colony ceased in 1840. The scheme was reintroduced in 1847 and continued until the early 1870s.[612]

Twenty-one men are listed who arrived in Australia on the convict ship 'Brampton' applied to have their wives and families join them in Australia.

James and Bridget Cook had at least seven children; we descended from their daughter Mary Ann Cook. I haven't found a birth record for Mary Ann but by all accounts, she most likely was born around 1823/24 either in Ireland, or on board the ship 'Mariner' en route to Sydney Australia.



Children of James Cook and Bridget Kellahan

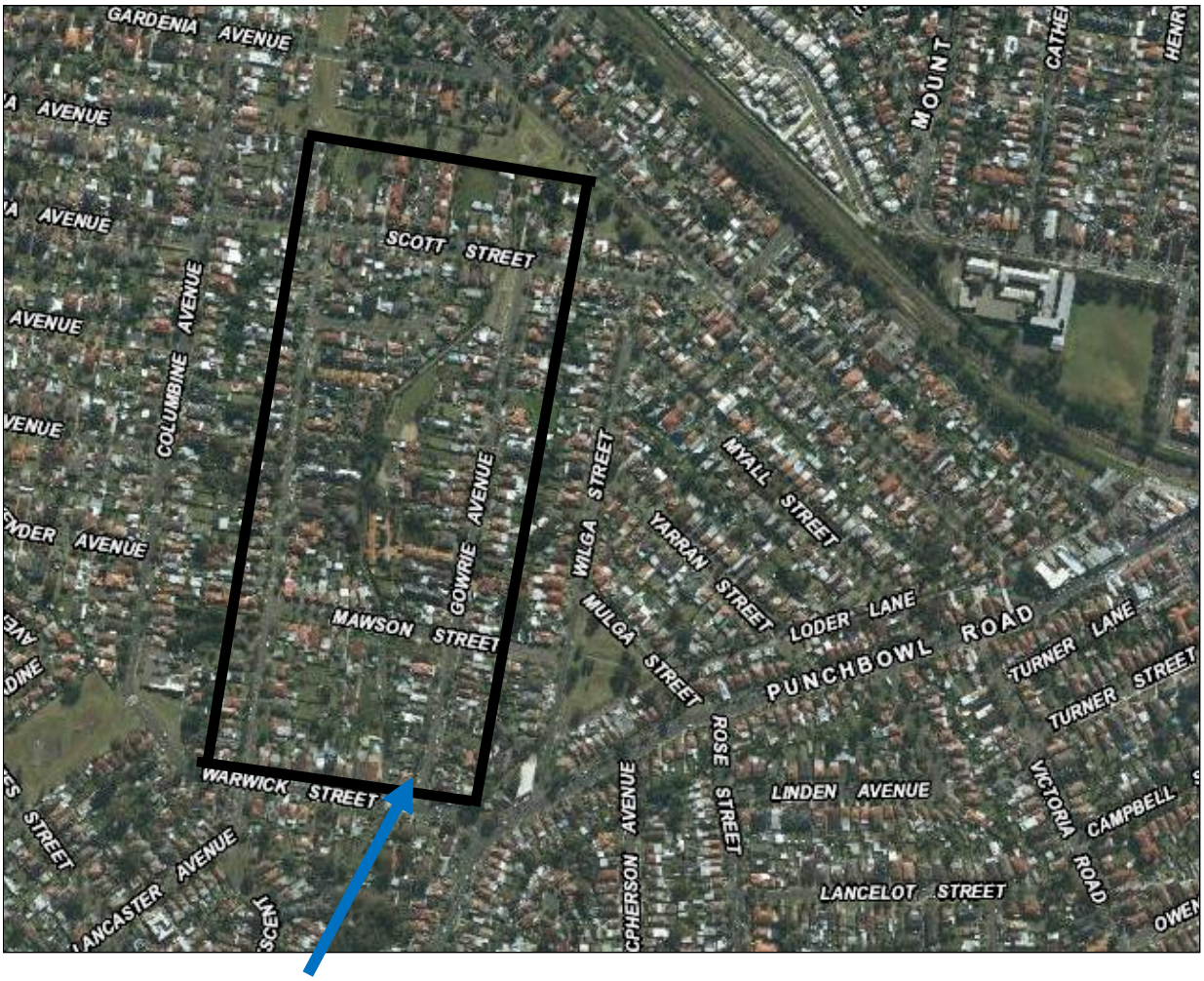
By 1834 James Cook was in a sufficient financial position to purchase 50 acres of land on Punchbowl road at Bankstown. This was gazetted on 1st September 1834 and the land was shown on the survey as well as the 1841 census, as “Cook Farm”.

3. CUMBERLAND, 50, Fifty acres, parish of Bankstown, allotment No. 9, commencing 10 chains south of Swan's 100 acres grant; bounded on the north by a line bearing east 16 chains; on the east by a line south 34 chains; on the south by a line west 16 chains; and on the west by a line north 34 chains. Applied for by James Cook. Price 5s. per acre.

James Cook’s “Cook Farm” 50-acre allotment at Bankstown. Sydney Gazette 10th Dec 1834



James Cook’s 50-acre “Cook Farm” on Punchbowl Road Bankstown shown on this 1900s map.



The outline of "Cook Farm" can still be seen today between Punchbowl Rd & the railway.

There was an article in the SMH dated 7th October 1844 of an inquest into the death of Mary Ann's younger sister, Julia Cook.

Julia was 16 and died from accidental burns she received when her clothes caught alight while heating a pipe on a fire to curl her hair. The accident occurred on the Cook family farm at Bankstown and Julia was transported to the Parramatta Asylum for treatment; she died 8 hours after sustaining the burns.

Julia's brother Henry Cook is quoted in the article and provided the details of the accident to the inquest. This is the same Henry Cook that was a witness to Michael Ryan & Mary Ann Cook's wedding. Julia Cook's name on the tomb stone in the photo below can be seen clearly.

Death of Julia Cook
SMH Mon 7th Oct 1844

the visitation of God was recorded. A second inquest was held at Leburn's public house, the Hope and Anchor, Parramatta-street, respecting the death of Julia Cook, then lying dead in the Benevolent Asylum, when Henry Cook, brother of the deceased, deposed: On the morning of the 3rd instant, witness, deceased, and the rest of the family, had breakfast at the house they lived in at Bankstown, and shortly after all went out to work on the farm except the deceased; soon after they heard screams coming from the house, when they ran towards it, his mother got in first, and found his sister's clothes on fire; she told them that her clothes had caught fire while she was heating the stem of a pipe to curl her hair. Mr. Surgeon Cuthill certified that deceased had been received into the Asylum on the 3rd instant severely burnt, and died about six hours after her admission. Many parts of her body appeared to be actually roasted, and in his opinion death had been caused by extreme exhaustion, produced by severe burning. The Jury found a verdict of died from the effects of being accidentally burned.



Memorial for James and Bridget Cook along with their children, Catherine, Henry & Julia Cook.

St Felix Pioneer Cemetery Bankstown
(photo from 2011)

Bridget Kellahan died on the 6th July 1870 at Bankstown (I assume they were still living on the old Cook Farm in 1870). The informant on Bridget's death cert was her son Henry Cook.

DEATH CERTIFICATE

Date and place of death	Name and occupation	Sex and age	Cause of Death Duration of last illness; medical attendant; when he last saw deceased	Name and occupation of father. Name and maiden surname of mother	Informant
1870 Sixth July 1870 Bankstown W Liverpool	Bridget Cooke	F Female 70 Yrs	(1) Old age and Natural decay (2) Living for several months (3) Not been attended by any Medical Man	(2) John Kellahor (2) Farmer (3) Nora Mc Swiney	Certified by Henry Cooke Son of deceased Bankstown W Liverpool

Particulars of Registration	When and where buried; name of undertaker	Name and religion of Minister and names of witnesses of burial	Where born and how long in the Australasian Colonies or States	Place of marriage, age, and to whom	Children of marriage
William Long (2) July 29th 1870 Liverpool	9th July 1870 Irishtown W Liverpool Michael Scanlan Bankstown	P. Young Ch: of Rome H. Mc Swiney Mich Scanlan	Irish Co: Kerry Ireland 45 years R.C. Male	Killarney (1) Ireland (2) 22 Yrs (3) James Cooke	Henry 50 Frances 31 William 47 Mary Ann 43 Elizabeth 41 living 2 males and 2 females dead

Death certificate of my four times great grandmother Bridget Kellahan, 6th July 1870

As far as I can tell 'Cook Farm' wasn't sub-divided until 1914. News paper articles from the time advertise lots being auctioned in what was called the 'Gowrie Park Estate'.

Messrs. Richardson and Wrench, Ltd., have three important sales set down for next Saturday, viz., the Gowrie Park Estate, at Punchbowl, and the Villa Floridiana Estate, at Hunter's Hill. The Gowrie Park Estate has been cut up into 150 allotments, and, as these happen to be well situated, a big demand is anticipated. The

James Cook's farm - subdivided as Gowrie Park Estate, Sydney Times 26th April 1914

James Cook died at the home of his grand son Henry Powell and his wife Henrietta Mitchell at 53 Woodville Road Granville on the 13th August 1883. The Powells appear in the 1888 edition of the Sands Directory living in Woodville Road near the intersection of Daniel Street.

DEATH CERTIFICATE

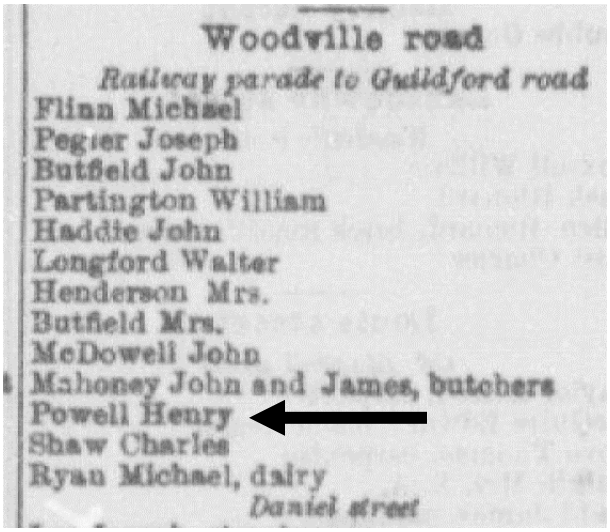
Date and place of death	Name and occupation	Sex and age	Cause of Death Duration of last illness; medical attendant; when he last saw deceased	Name and occupation of father. Name and maiden surname of mother	Informant
1883 13 August Woodville Road Granville	James Cook Pensioner	male 89 years	(1) Old age (2) 2 weeks (3) J Smith (4) 13 August 1883	(1) (2) (3) [illegible]	Henrietta Powell Granddaughter Granville

Particulars of Registration	When and where buried; name of undertaker	Name and religion of Minister and names of witnesses of burial	Where born and how long in the Australasian Colonies or States	Place of marriage, age, and to whom	Children of marriage
(1) [illegible] (2) 14 August 1883 (3) Panamatta	1883 15 August Catholic Cemetery Bankstown James Mills	Rev D. Barry Chaplain Prime Moses Gazzard Robert McKinnon	Ireland 60 years	(1) Ireland (2) 19 (3) Catherine O'Connell	Mary Ann William Elizabeth Francis Young

Death certificate of my four times great grandfather James Cook, 13th August 1883

The informant on James Cook's death certificate was Henrietta Powell (née Mitchell) the wife of Henry Powell. Henrietta states that she is James Cook's grand daughter, she was in fact the wife of Henry Powell who was the grand son of James Cook.

Elizabeth Powell (the daughter of James Cook and his wife Bridget O'Connell) married William Powell in 1845. Elizabeth died in 1887 aged 59, I assume at the same address (53 Woodville Road Granville) as her father James Cook, as the informant on her death certificate was the same Henrietta Powell whose name also appears on James Cook's death certificate of 1883.



Woodville road

Railway parade to Guildford road

Flinn Michael
Pegler Joseph
Butfield John
Partington William
Haddie John
Longford Walter
Henderson Mrs.
Butfield Mrs.
McDowell John
Mahoney John and James, butchers
Powell Henry
Shaw Charles
Ryan Michael, dairy

Daniel street

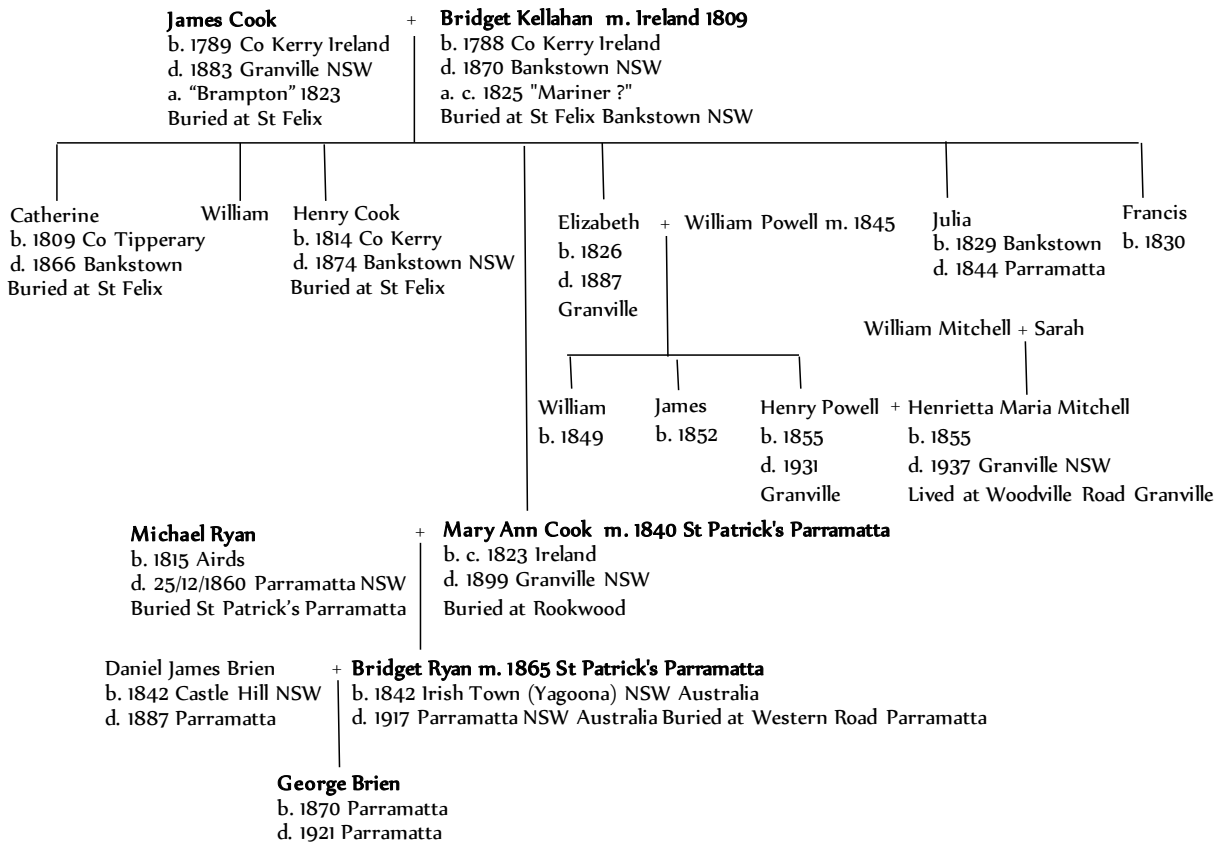
1888 Sands Directory showing Henry Powell at 53 Woodville Road Granville, near Daniel St.

I checked the survey for 53 Woodville Road Granville and it was a large block. In the 1940s it had two houses situated on the block, one fronting Woodville Rd and another smaller house fronting what is now called Hewlett Street.

The larger house has been demolished and a car sales yard now sits on that part of the block, but the smaller house at the rear numbered 53A is still standing. It looks like it could date from the 1880s, so it may be where our ancestor James Cook saw out his final days.



53A Woodville Road Granville possibily where James Cook lived his final years (photo 2023)



Relationship between James Cook, his daughter Elizabeth Powell and his grand son Henry Powell (Elizabeth Powell's sister Mary Ann Cook was my three times great grand mother)

In a coincidence, 53 Woodville Road is located very close to the primary school and Catholic church at Granville that our Brien branch (me and my siblings) attended. The first Catholic church was built in Grimwood Street Granville in 1881; around the corner from where the Powells lived.

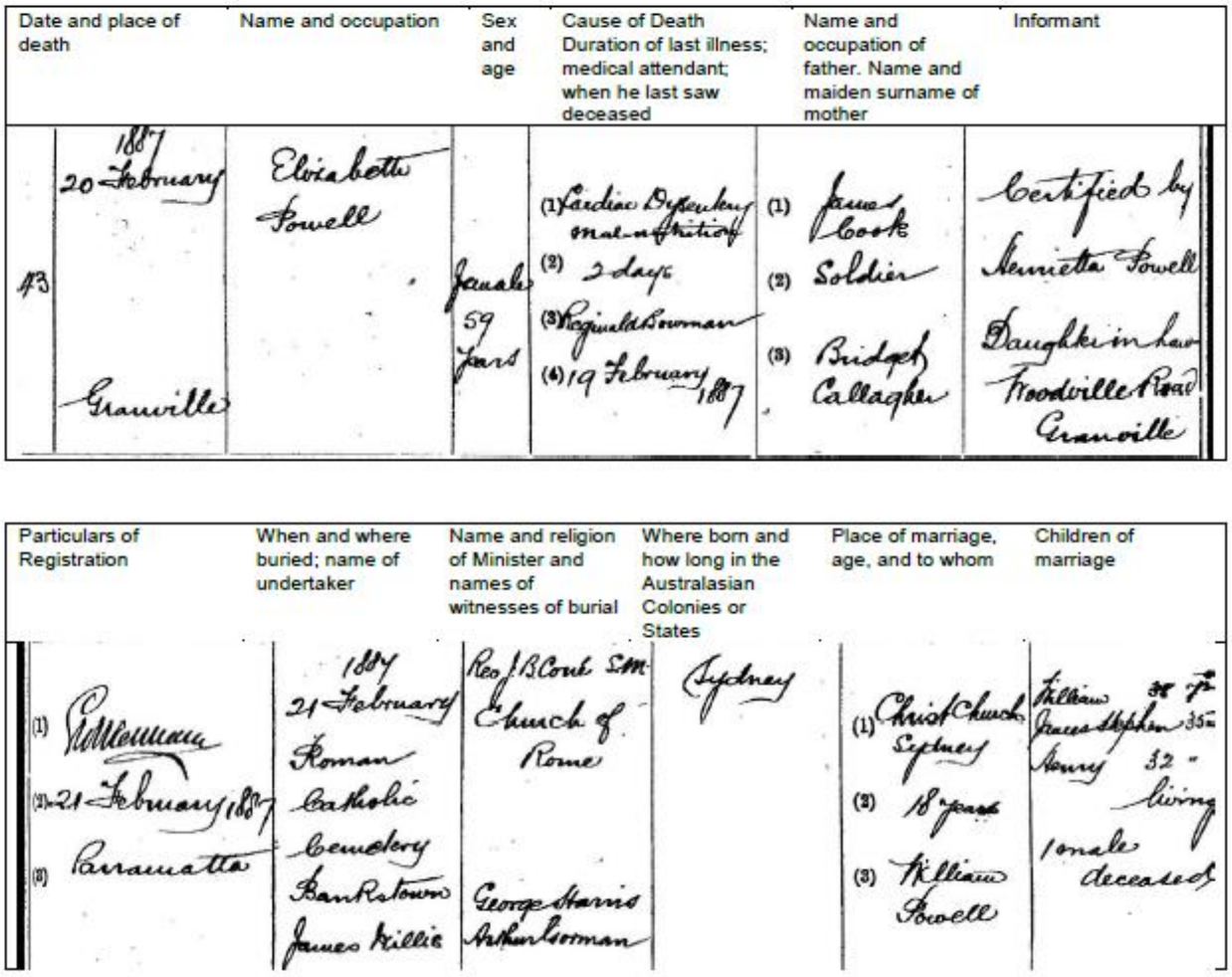
First Catholic church in Grimwood St Granville

Built in 1881
it was known locally as the
"White Church"



James Cook and Bridget Kellahan's daughter Elizabeth Powell (May Ann Ryan's sister) died on the 20th Feb 1885 at Granville. The informant was Henrietta Powell; wife of Henry Powell.

DEATH CERTIFICATE



Date and place of death	Name and occupation	Sex and age	Cause of Death Duration of last illness; medical attendant; when he last saw deceased	Name and occupation of father. Name and maiden surname of mother	Informant
1887 20 February Granville	Elizabeth Powell	Female 59 years	(1) Cardiac Dysentery mal-nutrition (2) 2 days (3) Reginald Bowman (4) 19 February 1887	(1) James Cook (2) Soldier (3) Bridget Callagher	Certified by Henrietta Powell Daughter in law Woodville Road Granville

Particulars of Registration	When and where buried; name of undertaker	Name and religion of Minister and names of witnesses of burial	Where born and how long in the Australasian Colonies or States	Place of marriage, age, and to whom	Children of marriage
(1) [illegible] (2) 21 February 1887 (3) Parramatta	1887 21 February Roman Catholic Cemetery Bankstown James Killic	Rev J B Coul S.M. Church of Rome George Harris Arthur Lorman	Sydney	(1) Christ Church Sydney (2) 18 years (3) William Powell	William 35 yrs James Stephen 35 yrs Henry 32 " living 1 male deceased

Death cert of Elizabeth Powell 20th Feb 1885 (James Cook and Bridget Kellahan's daughter)

Elizabeth Powell's son Henry Powell appears in some news paper articles and from those we know he worked for Granville council in road maintenance. One article stated he was illiterate, which probably accounts for why his wife Henrietta was the informant on James Cook's death certificate and not Henry.

In June 1894 tragedy struck the Powells when Henry and Henrietta's eldest son Arthur Powell died in a riding accident aged 17. The accident occoured right outside their house in Woodville Road Granville. [613]

In another article from July 1930 Henry Powell at age 75, gained some notierty for absconding from a Sydney hospital and spending two days walking to his home at Granville.

Two Days and Nights Between Sydney and Granville

WAS WITHOUT FOOD

STAGGERING to his home in Woodville-road, Granville, yesterday afternoon, exhausted after having been two days without food and spending two bitterly cold nights in the open while he found his way 14 miles home from Sydney Hospital on foot, Henry Powell, 77, had a good night's sleep, and this morning was up and sitting in the sun on his verandah discussing his adventures.

Taken to Sydney Hospital on Monday by his eldest daughter, Mrs. King, to have one of his eyes attended to, he decided after she had left him at the institution that he preferred home, and during the afternoon he slipped away while no one was about and made for Granville. His disappearance was reported, and the extraordinary feature of his adventure is that, with police on the lookout and his relatives travelling up and down Parramatta-road by 'bus keeping watch for him, he should have got all the way home by himself without being rescued. A constable spoke to him at Clyde, but did not persist in his inquiries when the old man waxed indignant at being stopped.

Bought Lemonade

He had 7 6 on him when he left the hospital, and he bought a bottle of lemonade, and arrived home with a shilling. He had no food at all, he said. Someone gave him a lift in a sulky, he is not sure where.

"I just mooched along and sat down when I was tired," he said.

"They were very kind at the hospital, but I wanted to get home. I had a shilling, but I didn't think anyone would give me a ride for that, so I walked.

Longed for Fire

"I kept along the left-hand footpath, and slept under some bushes. I wished I could have made a fire."

Mrs. King had left her father warmly clad, and this stood him in good stead. Born at Granville, near where he has lived for 50 years, Mr. Powell has been to Sydney only twice, once to see the present King and Queen in 1900, and again about ten years ago.

He was so anxious to leave the city that he didn't bother to make comparisons. "The traffic bothered me a bit," was his only comment.

Becoming exhausted as he neared his home, he was confused, and actually went right to Parramatta, where he got his bearings and struggled back.



Henry Powell

Henry Powell
walked from Sydney to Granville
Evening News 31st July 1930

Henry Powell died at his home; 53 Woodville Road Granville. A notice appeared in the SMH on the 2nd January 1931.



Motor Funeral Directors.

POWELL.—The Relatives and Friends of Mrs. HENRY POWELL and FAMILY are kindly invited to attend the Funeral of her dearly beloved HUSBAND and their beloved FATHER, Henry Powell; to move from his late residence, 53 Woodville-road, Granville, THIS (Friday) AFTERNOON, at 2 o'clock, for Church of England Cemetery, Rookwood, per motor service.

WILLIAM METCALFE and CO., LTD.,
Funeral Directors,
Parramatta.

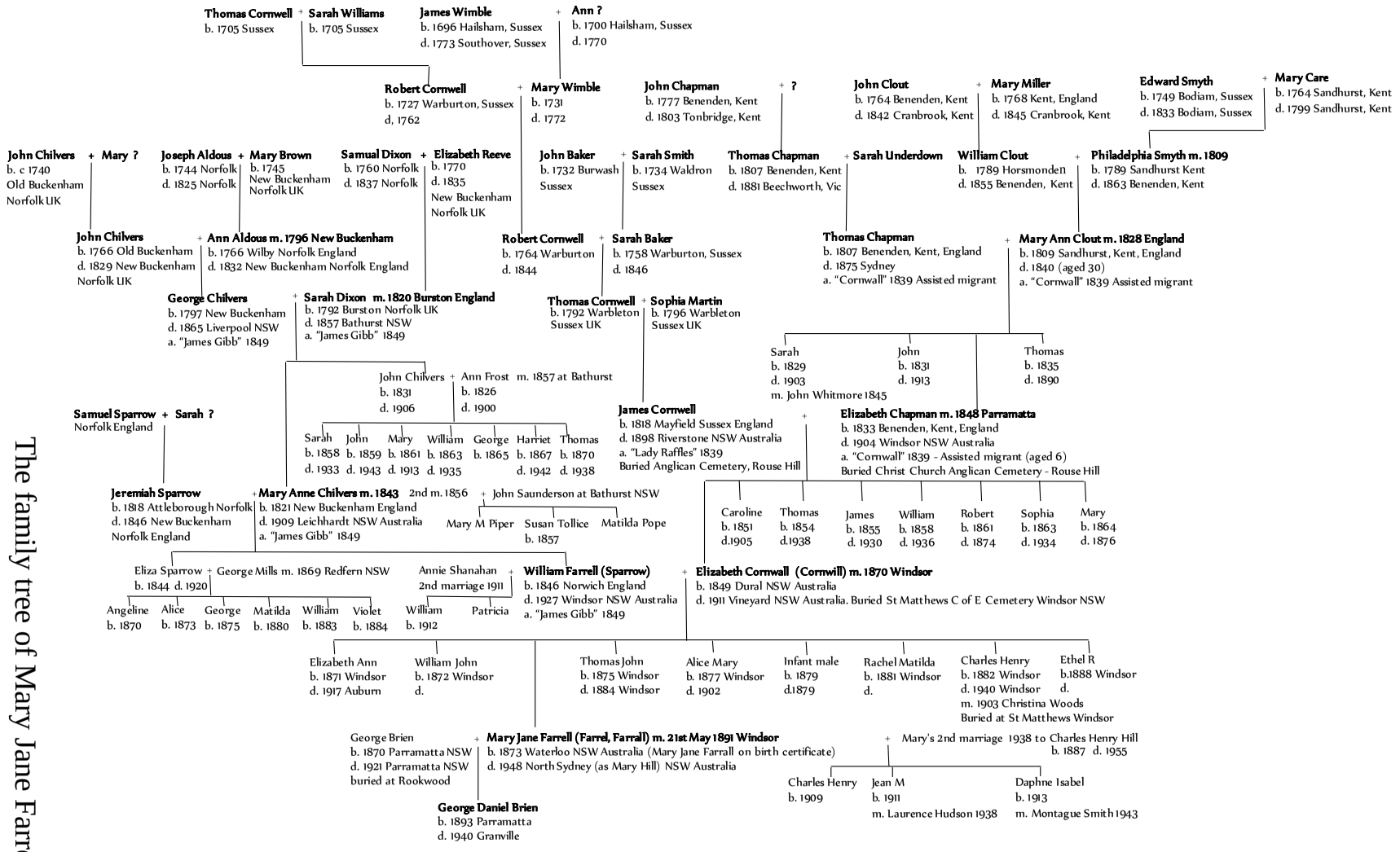
SCANLON.—The Relatives and Friends of Mr.

Henry Powell death notice SMH 2nd January 1931.

Chapter 12

George Brien b.1870 & Mary Jane Farrell b.1873

The family tree of Mary Jane Farrell

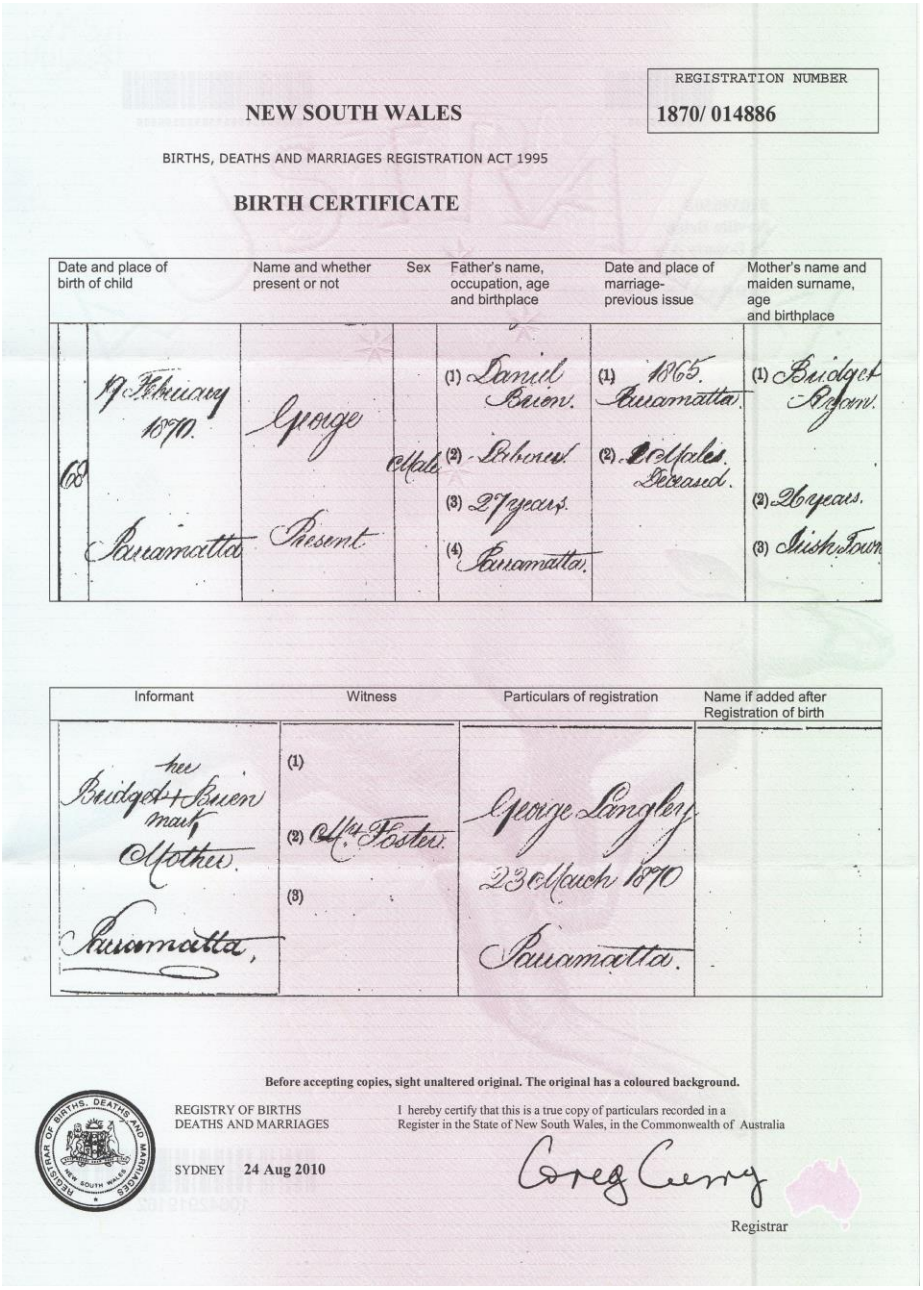


George Brien and his wife Mary Jane Farrell

This chapter covers the lives of George Brien and his wife Mary Jane Farrell and her extended family.

George Brien born 1870

George Brien was born at Parramatta in 1870 and died at the home of his daughter Ruby Brien in Barrack Lane Parramatta in 1921. He was the son of Daniel James Brien and Bridget Ryan.



REGISTRATION NUMBER
1870/ 014886

NEW SOUTH WALES

BIRTHS, DEATHS AND MARRIAGES REGISTRATION ACT 1995

BIRTH CERTIFICATE

Date and place of birth of child	Name and whether present or not	Sex	Father's name, occupation, age and birthplace	Date and place of marriage- previous issue	Mother's name and maiden surname, age and birthplace
19 February 1870. 68 Parramatta	George Present	Male	(1) Daniel Brien. (2) Labourer (3) 27 years. (4) Parramatta.	(1) 1865. Parramatta. (2) Wales. Deceased.	(1) Bridget Ryan. (2) 26 years. (3) Irish Town

Informant	Witness	Particulars of registration	Name if added after Registration of birth
her Bridget + Brien mark Mother. Parramatta,	(1) (2) Mrs. Foster. (3)	George Langley 23 March 1870 Parramatta.	

Before accepting copies, sight unaltered original. The original has a coloured background.

REGISTRY OF BIRTHS DEATHS AND MARRIAGES

SYDNEY 24 Aug 2010

I hereby certify that this is a true copy of particulars recorded in a Register in the State of New South Wales, in the Commonwealth of Australia

Registrar

Birth certificate of George Brien (our ancestor) born 1870

George Brien worked as a butcher in Parramatta. George's uncle Edward Braddick operated a butcher shop in George street for decades and it is possible that this is where George got his start in the trade. Edward Braddick retired around 1904 and it may be coincidence but George Brien started working for Mahony Bros butchers in Church street towards the end of 1904 or early 1905. In later years George's sons Ernest Edward and George Daniel Brien also worked for Mahony Bros butchers.

In 1906 Michael Mahony stated that George Brien was responsible for delivering orders, collecting monies and managing the accounts, for which he received 30 shillings per week. George was described as a person of good character. [614]


Tattersall's hotel—John Fulvey
George street
Bank of New South Wales—O. Beresford Cairnes, J.P., manager
Pye Leslie W., chemist
Erby George T., J.P., boot warehouse
Straub R., watchmaker and jeweller
Erby G. T., J.P., draper
Henderson Frank D., J.P., grocer and wine and spirit merchant
Hunter John and Son, Ltd., boot palace
Christie William, umbrella shop
Vickers H. (trading as Miss Hunter), milliner
Dolan A. P. B., dental surgeon
Saunders Brothers, gunmakers and cycle builders
Mahoney Brothers, butchers
Toohey J., produce merchant
Phillip street

Above: Sands directory from 1905 showing Mahony Bros butchers in Church St.



Parramatta map about 1883, with arrow showing location of Mahony Bros butchers in Church St. Also see Philip, Charles and George streets where the Briens lived at various times. [615]



Looking north along Church St at the corner of George St Parramatta 1910
(Mahony Bros butchers where George Brien worked is on the right in the middle distance)

Mary Jane Farrell born 1873

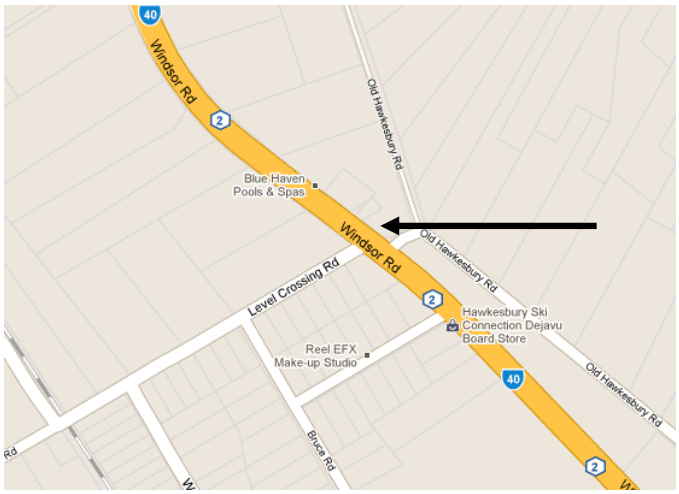
Mary Jane Farrell was born at Waterloo in 1873 and died at North Sydney in 1948. She was the daughter of William Farrell and Elizabeth Cornwall. Where she is mentioned in documents more often than not, she is referred to as 'Molly'. I have not located any photos of Mary but my uncle Lester described her as having "blonde hair and blue eyes." From her looks the family thought she was Swedish, but we know from her family history that her ancestry was English.

Mary Jane Farrell was William and Elizabeth's 2nd daughter. On Mary's birth certificate her name is shown as "Mary Jane Farrall" born at Waterloo. This seems to indicate that Mary was born at the home of her auntie who at the time lived at Waterloo. Mary's other siblings were all born at Windsor.

The property where Mary Jane grew up is today marked by the Blue Haven Pool display center on Windsor Road; 419 Windsor Road Vineyard would be very close to the location. Mary's parents William Farrell and Elizabeth Cornwall owned a house on 4 acres of land. William was a Shoemaker and was very well known in the community.

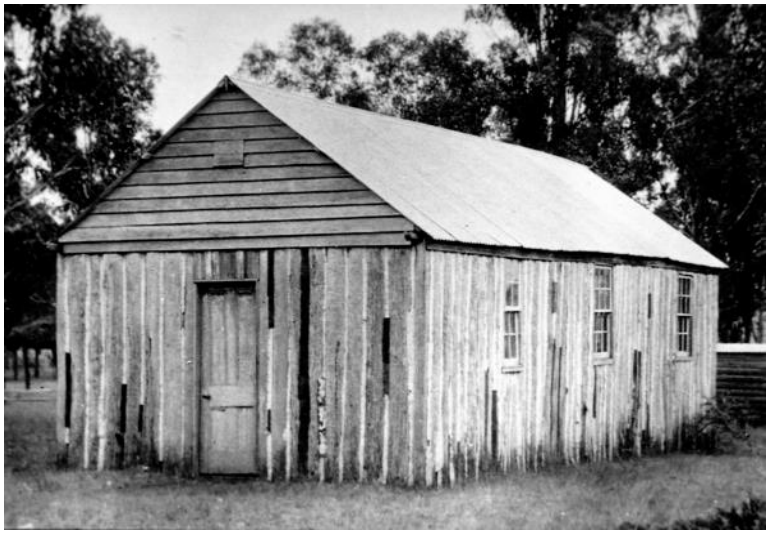
The map below shows the location of the 4-acre block. I suspect that in the 1880s Windsor Road was aligned further to the north, as all the properties along that stretch of road are well set back from the current road. It looks from old maps that Old Hawkesbury Road and Windsor Road met next to the Farrell's property, while today the roads are separated by about 50 meters. The Farrell's would have had Windsor road as their front border & Old Hawkesbury Road as their rear border.
616

Location of William & Elizabeth Farrell's 4-acre property at Vineyard, where Mary Jane Farrell grew up.



On the 21st May 1891 George Brien married Mary Jane Farrell at the Vineyard Church of England 'Mission church'. George was aged 21 and Mary 18. Witnesses to the wedding were Mary's mother Elizabeth Farrell and the minister's wife Bessie D'Arcy-Irvine (no Briens are recorded as witnesses). On the wedding certificate William Farrell describes his occupation as a 'Woodcutter'.

Built in 1884 the Mission church was a wooden building with an iron roof and was located adjacent to the Farrell's property. William Farrell was obviously good at building as I found a record of him being employed to maintain the church building, and also at one stage employed to "extend the building by 10 feet." [617] It is obvious from newspaper reports that William Farrell was very involved in the church community and hosted many church social events.

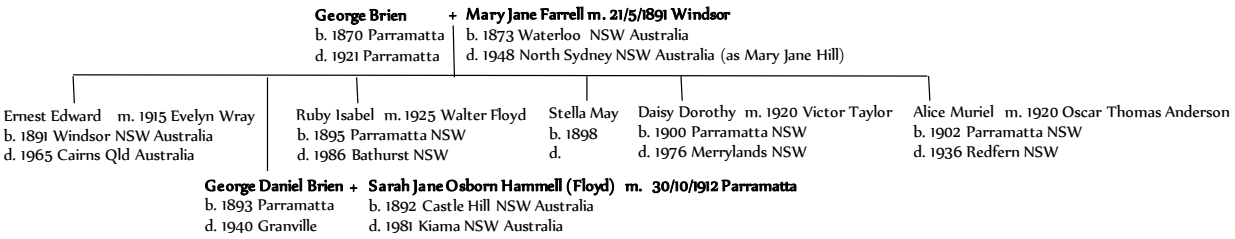


Vineyard Mission church, built in 1884 where George Brien and Mary Jane Farrell were married on 21st May 1891. Photo from 1920s. [618]

On George & Mary's marriage certificate Mary is shown as "Mary J Farrer" living at Windsor. George Brien listed his occupation as "Butcher" residing at Parramatta. It seems George & Mary Jane initially settled in Windsor, at least their first child Ernest Brien was born there in 1891.

The Children of George Brien and Mary Jane Farrell

George and Mary Jane had 6 children but only 5 survived to adulthood:



George and Mary's first child was Ernest Edward Brien, born 6th July 1891 at Windsor. He married Nellie Wray in 1915 before enlisting to fight in WW1 on the 6th September 1915.

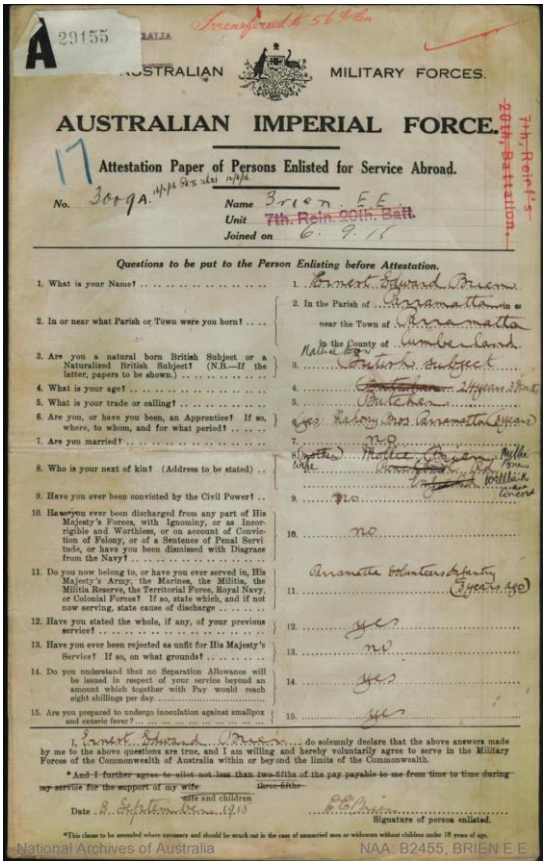
The outbreak of World War I in July 1914 was reported spasmodically at first in Australia. The article below from 11th Aug 1914 was hidden away on page 12 of the news paper.

THE WAR.

Australia's Position.

The Commonwealth of Australia is now having its first real taste of war in which the British Empire is involved, and all Australians must be proud of the unanimity of opinion with regard to helping the Motherland. On all sides, from the smallest of the largest member of the community is imbued with the idea of doing something, no matter what it may be to help England in upholding her supremacy as well as that of Australia's sister dependencies, and the way in wh ich tehyeasuges the way in which they are doing it, too, is most commendable. There is so far no trace of jingoism, or desire to harm or molest in any way inoffensive sons of Germany, Austria or other nations involved in the trouble on the opposite side, each, as far as possible, pursuing his course in business as methodically and regularly as circumstances will permit. Unfortunately, though, just as is the same case elsewhere no doubt on the opposite side, business has been hindered—it could not possibly be otherwise in a time of hostilities—but we hear not one murmur of discontent about that, notwithstanding the fact that losses, very heavy in some cases, are happening daily. As usual in most crises, the shipping business is suffering heavily, admittedly though it might have been worse, and the whole of the shipping restricted, and here again there are no murmurs, but instead we find a pronounced spirit of loyalty coupled with the firm impression that once the present restrictions are lifted all will be well again and Australia will be as busy as of yore. Australians located in even the uttermost outposts of the world, when they are acquainted with the situation as it is found in Australia to-day, ought to feel proud of the Australians at home and the stand they have taken in the matter, and it might be mentioned, as coming as a surprise to many of our own race who have been known to remark that the spirit of patriotism and regard for the welfare of Great Britain was unknown here, the Australian being but a fair-weather kind of son who had his whole mind concentrated on sport and kindred subjects.

Daily Commercial News Sydney Tue 11th Aug 1914 P. 12



A 29155

Transferred to 56th Bn

AUSTRALIAN MILITARY FORCES.

AUSTRALIAN IMPERIAL FORCE.

7th Reinf's 20th Battalion

17

Attestation Paper of Persons Enlisted for Service Abroad.

No. 30 to 9 A. 1st Div 3rd Bde 13/9/15

Name Brien. E E

Unit 7th. Rein. 20th. Batt.

Joined on 6. 9. 15

Questions to be put to the Person Enlisting before Attestation.

1. What is your Name? — 1. Ernest Edward Brien

2. In or near what Parish or Town were you born? — 2. In the Parish of Parramatta in or near the Town of Parramatta in the County of Cumberland

3. Are you a natural born British Subject or a Naturalized British Subject? (N.B.—If the latter, papers to be shown.) — 3. Natural born subject

4. What is your age? — 4. 21 years 2 Mths

5. What is your trade or calling? — 5. Butcher

6. Are you, or have you been, an Apprentice? If so, where, to whom, and for what period? — 6. Yes Hadley Bros. Parramatta 4 years

7. Are you married? — 7. No

8. Who is your next of kin? (Address to be stated) — 8. Mother Mother Mrs. Brien Wife Parramatta

9. Have you ever been convicted by the Civil Power? — 9. No

10. Have you ever been discharged from any part of His Majesty's Forces, with Ignominy, or as Incorrigible and Worthless, or on account of Conviction of Felony, or of a Sentence of Penal Servitude, or have you been dismissed with Disgrace from the Navy? — 10. No

11. Do you now belong to, or have you ever served in, His Majesty's Army, the Marines, the Militia, the Militia Reserve, the Territorial Force, Royal Navy, or Colonial Forces? If so, state which, and if not now serving, state cause of discharge — 11. Parramatta Volunteers Infantry (3 years 4 yrs)

12. Have you stated the whole, if any, of your previous service? — 12. Yes

13. Have you ever been rejected as unfit for His Majesty's Service? If so, on what grounds? — 13. No

14. Do you understand that no Separation Allowance will be issued in respect of your service beyond an amount which together with Pay would reach eight shillings per day. — 14. Yes

15. Are you prepared to undergo inoculation against smallpox and enteric fever? — 15. Yes

I, Ernest Edward Brien do solemnly declare that the above answers made by me to the above questions are true, and I am willing and hereby voluntarily agree to serve in the Military Forces of the Commonwealth of Australia within or beyond the limits of the Commonwealth.

~~* And I further agree to allot not less than two-fifths of the pay payable to me from time to time during my service for the support of my wife three-fifths~~ wife and children

Date 8 September 1915 — Signature of person enlisted. E E Brien

*This clause to be amended where necessary and should be struck out in the case of unmarried men or widowers without children under 16 years of age.

National Archives of Australia NAA: B2455, BRIEN E E

Enlistment form: Ernest Edward Brien
6th September 1915

Ernest Brien was assigned to the Australian 56th Battalion. After a period of training in Egypt, he was transferred to Europe to fight on the Western Front arriving in Marseilles on the 30th June 1916. As part of the 56th Battalion Ernest was transported to northern France and within a fortnight was committed to the Battle of Fromelles, a disastrous attack that was later described as "the worst 24 hours in Australia's entire history". The 56th Battalion suffered heavy casualties, but was not withdrawn from the line until two months later.



Image from Battle of Fromelles
(Australian War Memorial)

After enduring the coldest winter in 40 years in the Somme, the 56th Battalion took part in operations along the Hindenburg Line, before undertaking a role during the Second Battle of Bullecourt which was fought during 3rd -17th May 1917.

The Battle of Bullecourt formed part of the Battle of Arras, a major British offensive which attempted to end the stalemate on the Western Front and break through the formidable German Hindenburg Line defenses. [619]

Scene of Australians dug in at the Second Battle of Bullecourt (Australian war memorial)



On the 15th May 1917 the German army made their final attempt to dislodge the Australians from Bullecourt but failed and withdrew some days later. Almost 7,500 Australians and over 8,000 British soldiers were killed or wounded during the action.

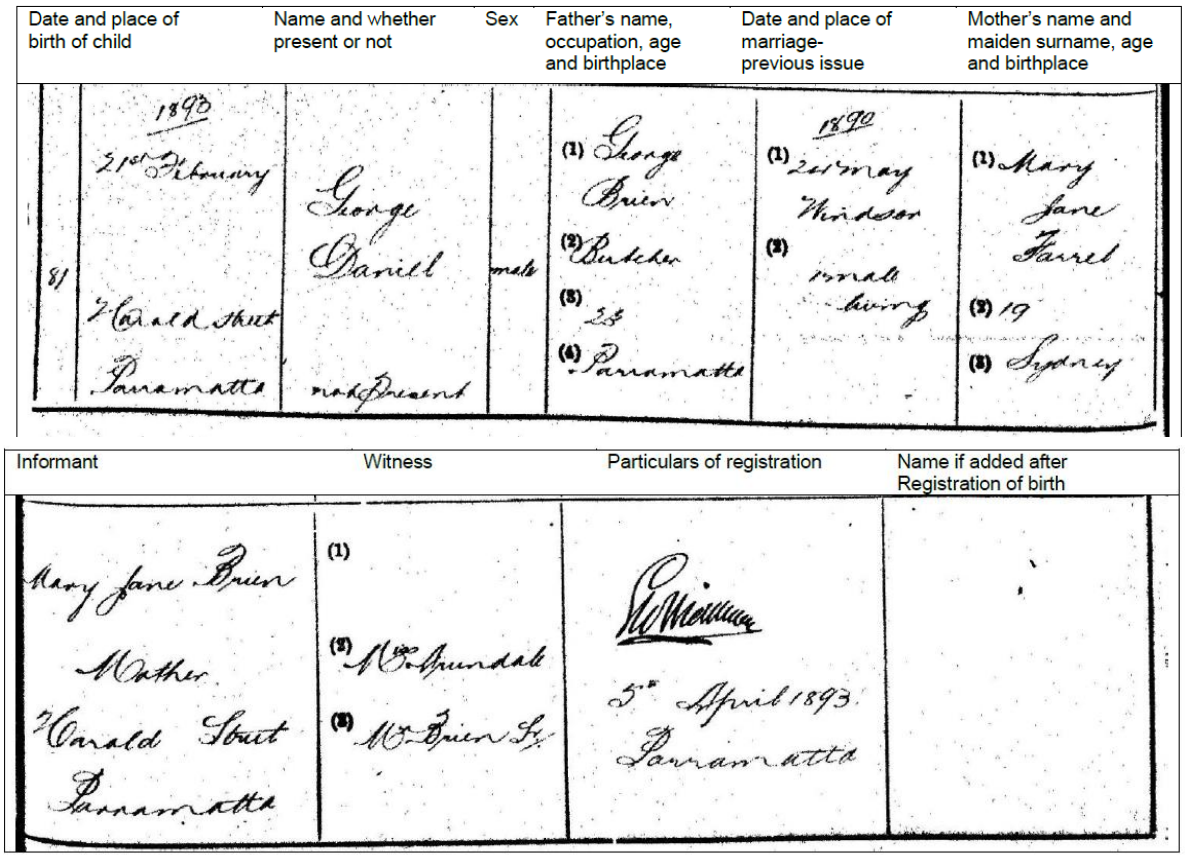
Ernest Brien suffered injuries to his back and left foot from a shell blast on the 16th May that caused him to be admitted to a field hospital, he was later transferred to Harefield AIF hospital in England. Back in Australia, Ernest was discharged on 21st Nov 1917 after which he established a butcher shop in Concord. Ernest died in 1965 aged 74 and is buried at Cairns Qld. [620]



Ernest Brien's military record shows he was awarded medals for his war service.

George and Mary's second child was George Daniel Brien, (our ancestor) was born in Harold street Parramatta on the 21st February 1893 and died at Enid Ave Granville in 1940. He married Sarah Hammell (Floyd) in 1912 and their story is covered in Chapter 13.

BIRTH CERTIFICATE



Birth certificate of George Daniel Brien (our ancestor) born 21st February 1893.
Second son of George Brien and Mary Jane Farrell (his life covered in Chapter 13)

George and Mary's third child was Ruby Irene Brien, was born in 1895 at Parramatta and died in 1986 at a nursing home in Bathurst. She married Sylvester Floyd (a.k.a Walter Floyd).

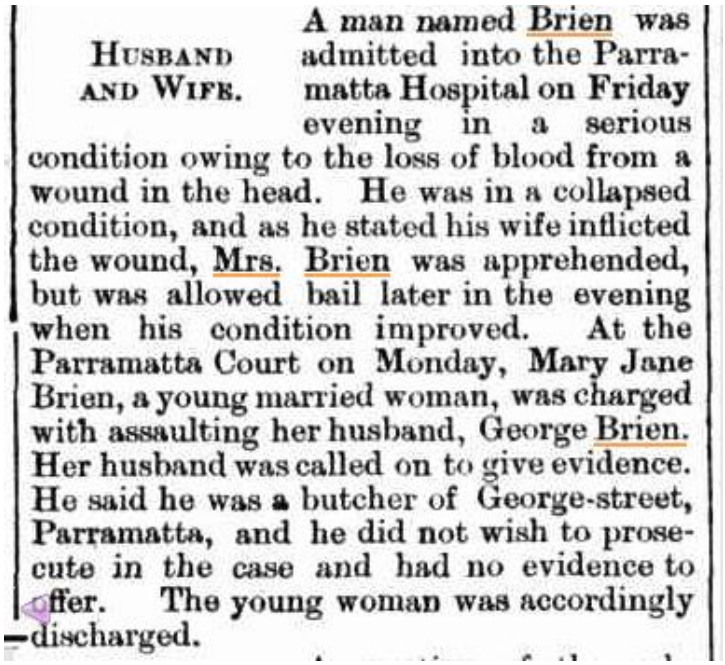
George and Mary's fourth child Stella Marge Brien, was born at Parramatta in 1898 and died young.

George and Mary's fifth child Daisy Brien, was born in 1900 at Parramatta and died in 1976 at Merrylands. She married Victor Taylor in 1920.

George and Mary's sixth child Alice Muriel Brien, was born in 1902 at Parramatta and died in 1936 at Redfern. She married Oscar Thomas Anderson in 1920.

From 1893 we find George & Mary Jane Brien living in Fennell St Parramatta. By 1895 they are found in Harold St, 1896 Ross St and then from 1897-1900 in Galloway St Parramatta.

George and Mary Jane Brien appear to have had an eventful marriage as they get this mention in the local Cumberland Argus newspaper on the 25th September 1897.



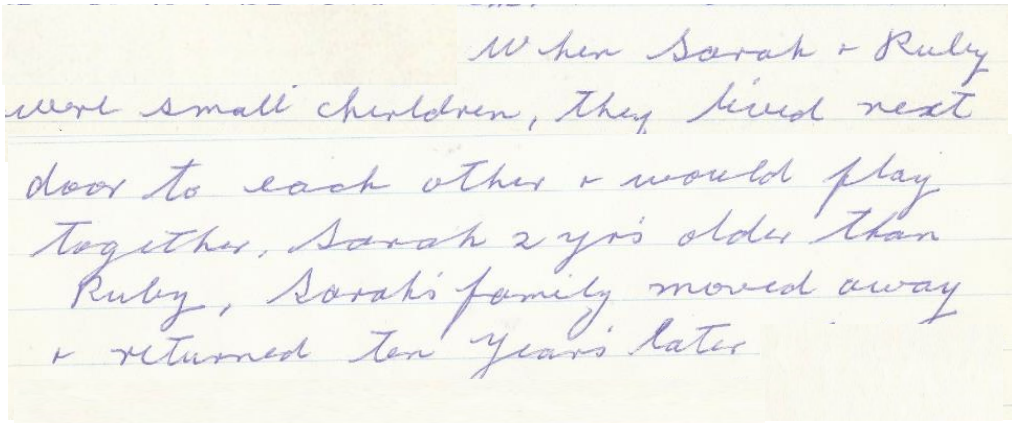
HUSBAND AND WIFE.

A man named Brien was admitted into the Parramatta Hospital on Friday evening in a serious condition owing to the loss of blood from a wound in the head. He was in a collapsed condition, and as he stated his wife inflicted the wound, Mrs. Brien was apprehended, but was allowed bail later in the evening when his condition improved. At the Parramatta Court on Monday, Mary Jane Brien, a young married woman, was charged with assaulting her husband, George Brien. Her husband was called on to give evidence. He said he was a butcher of George-street, Parramatta, and he did not wish to prosecute in the case and had no evidence to offer. The young woman was accordingly discharged.

Argus Saturday
25th September 1897

In 1901 George and Mary moved to Charles St close to the Parramatta river and were living next door to the house of Sarah Jane Thomas, Elizabeth Hammell (my great grand mother) and her daughter Sarah Hammell (my grand mother).

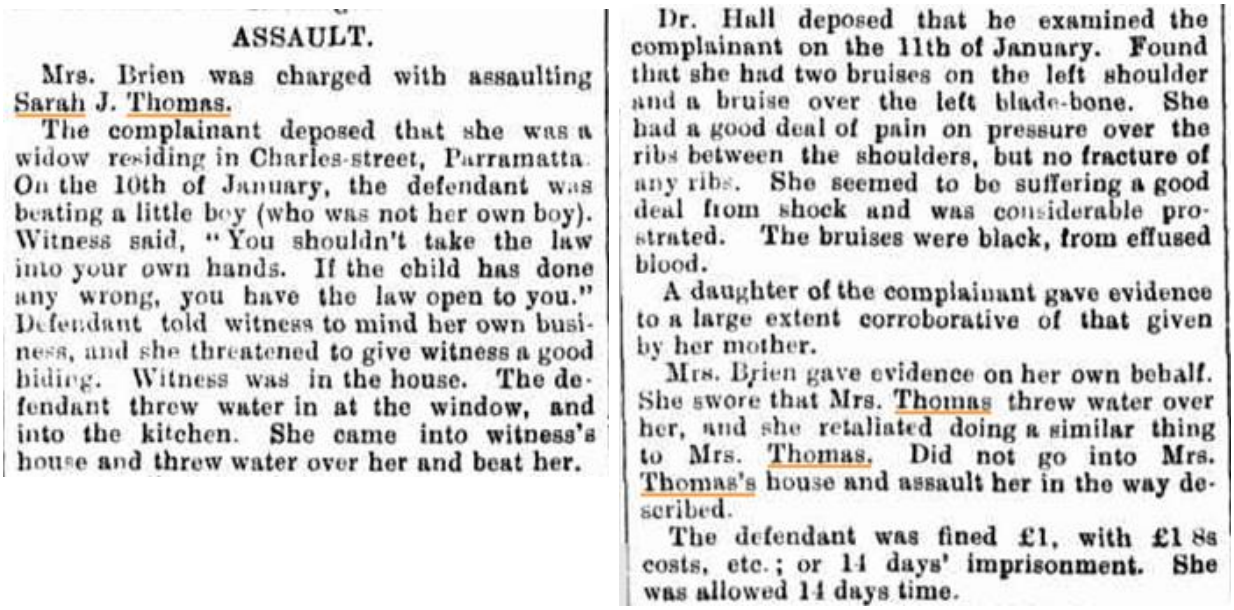
George and Mary's eldest daughter Ruby Brien first met Sarah Osborn Hammell during this time and they became life long friends. How this came about is described in a letter written by Veronica Brien to George Brien (my brother) dated 28th July 1997.



When Sarah + Ruby were small children, they lived next door to each other + would play together. Sarah 2 yrs older than Ruby, Sarah's family moved away + returned ten years later

Excerpt from the letter written by Veronica Brien to my brother George Brien in 1997

However, during this period when they lived next door to each other, the adults of these households were not always on good terms. They get a mention in the Cumberland Argus on Wednesday 23rd January 1901 when Sarah Jane Thomas had a dispute with Mary Jane Brien.



ASSAULT.

Mrs. Brien was charged with assaulting Sarah J. Thomas.

The complainant deposed that she was a widow residing in Charles-street, Parramatta. On the 10th of January, the defendant was beating a little boy (who was not her own boy). Witness said, "You shouldn't take the law into your own hands. If the child has done any wrong, you have the law open to you." Defendant told witness to mind her own business, and she threatened to give witness a good hiding. Witness was in the house. The defendant threw water in at the window, and into the kitchen. She came into witness's house and threw water over her and beat her.

Dr. Hall deposed that he examined the complainant on the 11th of January. Found that she had two bruises on the left shoulder and a bruise over the left blade-bone. She had a good deal of pain on pressure over the ribs between the shoulders, but no fracture of any ribs. She seemed to be suffering a good deal from shock and was considerable prostrated. The bruises were black, from effused blood.

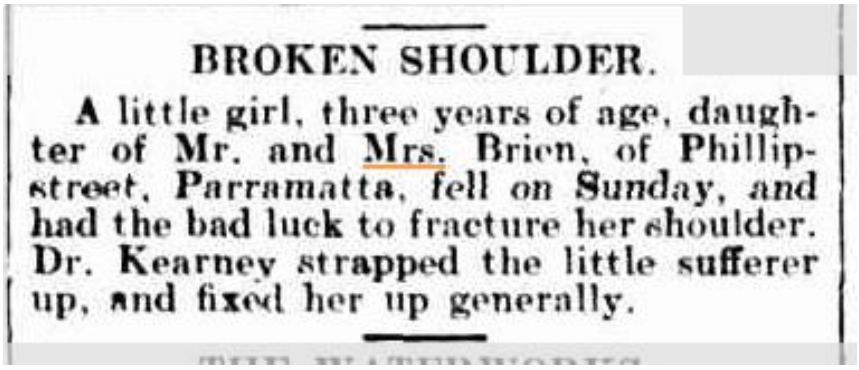
A daughter of the complainant gave evidence to a large extent corroborative of that given by her mother.

Mrs. Brien gave evidence on her own behalf. She swore that Mrs. Thomas threw water over her, and she retaliated doing a similar thing to Mrs. Thomas. Did not go into Mrs. Thomas's house and assault her in the way described.

The defendant was fined £1, with £1 8s costs, etc.; or 14 days' imprisonment. She was allowed 14 days time.

Mary Jane Brien (née Farrell) and Sarah Jane Thomas, mentioned in Cumberland Argus Wednesday 23rd January 1901

In 1905 George and Mary Brien moved to Phillip St and in April of that year we see them mentioned in the Cumberland Argus when their youngest child Alice (born 1902) had an accident and suffered a broken shoulder.



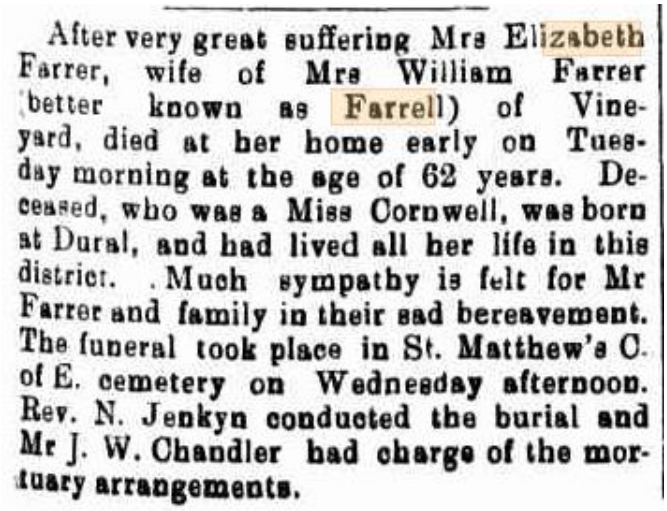
BROKEN SHOULDER.

A little girl, three years of age, daughter of Mr. and Mrs. Brien, of Phillip-street, Parramatta, fell on Sunday, and had the bad luck to fracture her shoulder. Dr. Kearney strapped the little sufferer up, and fixed her up generally.

Alice Muriel Brien aged 3 mentioned in Cumberland Argus Sat 8th April 1905

In 1911 Mary Jane's mother Elizabeth Farrell died at Vineyard NSW.

Elizabeth Farrell
Windsor and Richmond Gazette
Sat 4 Feb 1911



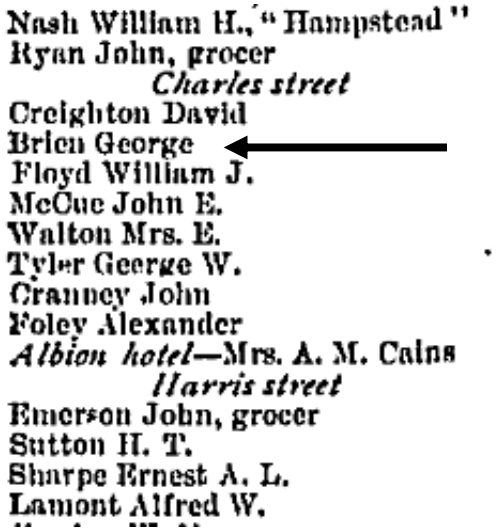
After very great suffering Mrs Elizabeth Farrer, wife of Mrs William Farrer (better known as Farrell) of Vineyard, died at her home early on Tuesday morning at the age of 62 years. Deceased, who was a Miss Cornwell, was born at Dural, and had lived all her life in this district. Much sympathy is felt for Mr Farrer and family in their sad bereavement. The funeral took place in St. Matthew's C. of E. cemetery on Wednesday afternoon. Rev. N. Jenkyn conducted the burial and Mr J. W. Chandler had charge of the mortuary arrangements.

In 1908 George and Mary Brien moved to 121a George St, close to the corner of Charles St. Living next door at 121b were the Floyds. [621]

In 1902 William Floyd married Elizabeth Hammell and he adopted her daughter Sarah (my grand mother). So, once again George and Mary Jane Brien found themselves living next door to Elizabeth Hammell (now Floyd) and her daughter Sarah.

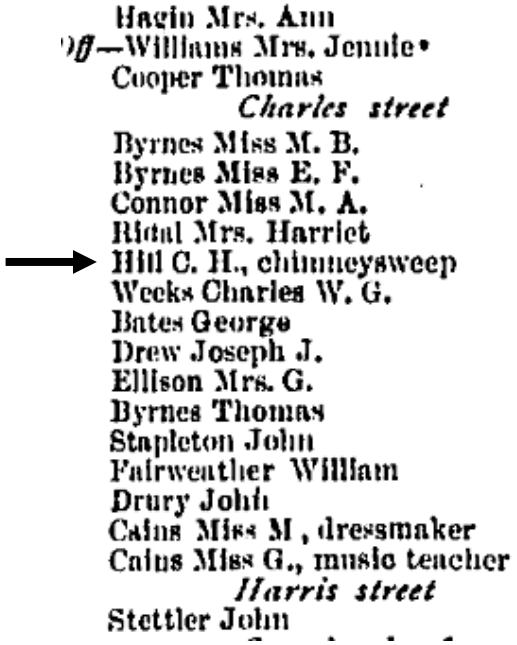
Sands directory for 1908 showing the south side of George Street.

George Brien and William Floyd are living next door to each other at 121a and 121b George St.



Nash William H., "Hampstead"
Ryan John, grocer
Charles street
Creighton David
Brien George
Floyd William J.
McCue John E.
Walton Mrs. E.
Tyler George W.
Cranney John
Foley Alexander
Albion hotel—Mrs. A. M. Cains
Harris street
Emerson John, grocer
Sutton H. T.
Sharpe Ernest A. L.
Lamont Alfred W.

When George and Mary Jane Brien moved to George St in 1908, living almost directly across the street were Charles Henry Hill, a chimney sweep and his wife Isabell Blanch Owens.


Hagin Mrs. Ann
Off—Williams Mrs. Jennie•
Cooper Thomas
Charles street
Byrnes Miss M. B.
Byrnes Miss E. F.
Connor Miss M. A.
Rigal Mrs. Harriet
Hill C. H., chimneysweep
Weeks Charles W. G.
Bates George
Drew Joseph J.
Ellison Mrs. G.
Byrnes Thomas
Stapleton John
Fairweather William
Drury John
Cains Miss M, dressmaker
Cains Miss G., music teacher
Harris street
Stettler John

Charles Henry Hill Chimney sweep

Sands 1908 George St Parramatta north side.

Charles and Isabell Hill had at least 8 children, one of which was named Charles Henry Hill. In 1909 this Charles was aged 22 and it seems that fairly soon after George and Mary moved to George St, Charles and Mary began a relationship.

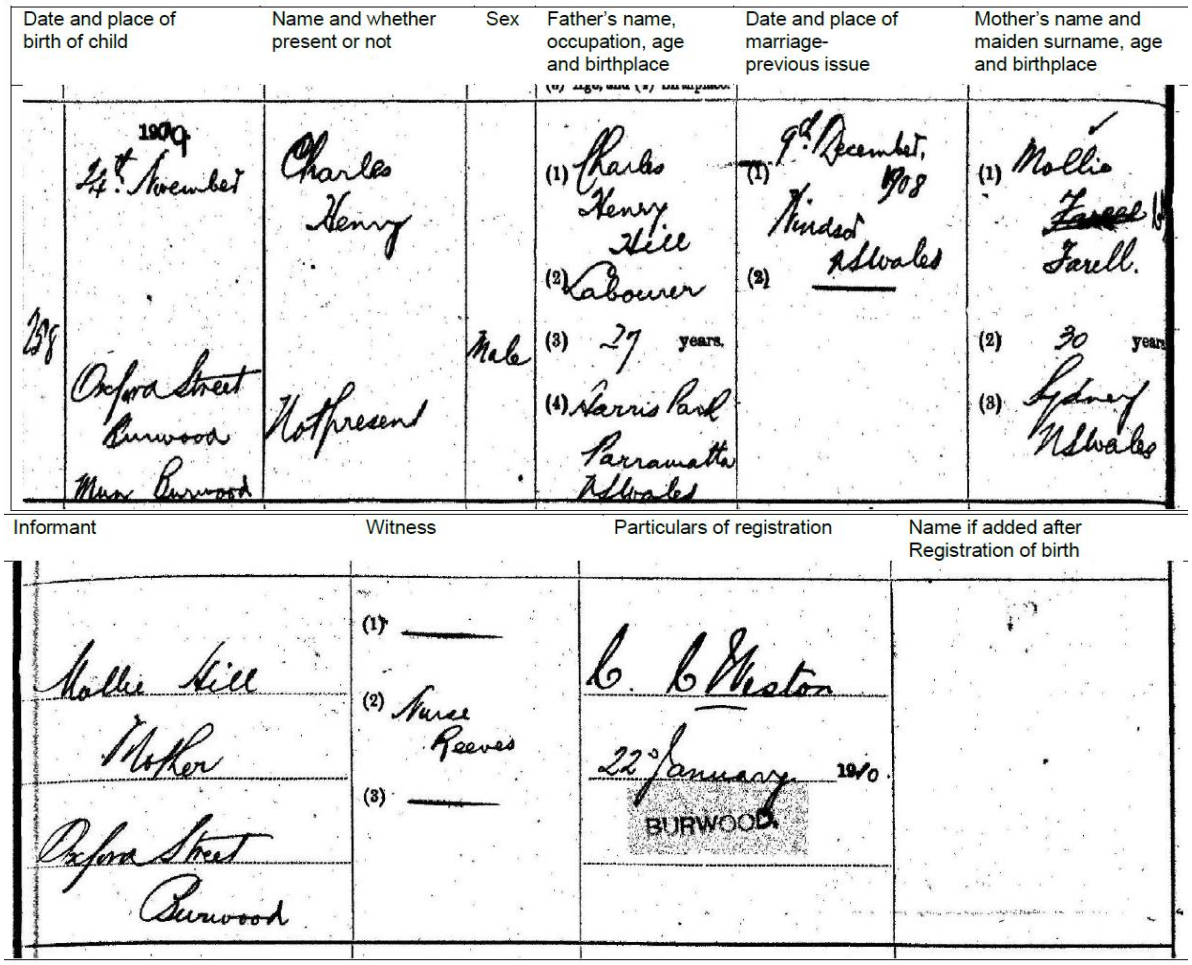
By mid 1909 Mary Jane Brien had left George Brien and taken up with Charles Henry Hill, living in Oxford St Burwood; leaving behind her husband George and their five surviving children, the youngest Alice aged only six.

On the 4th Nov 1909 Mary Jane Brien had the first of three children to Charles Henry Hill. A son named Charles Henry Hill.

Mary Jane Brien (née Farrell) + Charles Henry Hill m. 1938

Charles Henry	Jean M	Daphne Isabel
b. 1909	b. 1911	b. 1913
	m. Laurence Hudson 1938	m. Montague Smith 1943

Children of Mary Jane Brien (née Farrell) and Charles Henry Hill



Birth certificate of Charles Henry Hill born 4th Nov 1909. [622]

Charles Henry Hill's birth certificate dated 22nd of January 1910 lists Mary Brien, under the name of Mollie Hill, as the informant. Mary obviously wanted to conceal the fact she was still married to George Brien and so states that she had married Charles Hill on the 9th December 1908, and that she had no earlier children. The ages of Mary and Charles are also fictitious.

Mary Jane Brien and Charles Henry Hill had two further children; (1) Jean Marjory Hill born at Burwood in 1911. She married Claude W Wallace at Burwood in 1927 and had a daughter Daphne Wallace. Jean Wallace re-married at Auburn in 1946 to Frank Albert Hudson. And (2) Daphne Isobel Hill born at Burwood in 1913, she married Lance Stuart Montague Smith at North Sydney in 1943 and died at Kirribilli in 1971. Charles, Jean and Daphne are my grand nephew and nieces.

Charles Henry Hill and Mary Jane Brien did eventually marry in 1938. By this time George Brien had died (i.e. in 1921) and Mary lists her marital status as widow. At the time of her 2nd marriage Mary Jane gave her address as 16 Burnett St Bondi and Charles said he lived in Empire Bay near Woy Woy.

MARRIAGE CERTIFICATE

	Date and place of marriage	Names and surnames of parties	Usual occupation	Usual place of residence
418	1938 4th November WAVERLEY MUNICIPALITY	Charles Henry Hill Mary Jane Brien	Labourer Domestic Duties	Empire Bay Woy Woy 16 Bennett St. Bondi

Married at the District Registrars Office 24 Bondi Road Waverley

THE Consents of ~~_____~~ were given in writing to ~~the Marriage~~ of the Bridegroom.

THE Consents of _____ were given in writing to the Marriage of the Bride.

According to the ~~rites of the~~ marriage Act 1899-1934

Conjugal status	Birthplace	Age	Father's name, mother's name and maiden surname	Father's occupation
Bachelor	Parramatta N S Wales	Years. 51	Charles Henry Hill (deceased) Isabel Blanche Owens (deceased)	Painter
Widow	Waterloo Sydney N S Wales	65	William Farrell (deceased) Elizabeth Cornwall (deceased)	Shoemaker

This Marriage was solemnized between us { Charles Henry Hill / Mary Jane Brien }

By me, Ruth Orr ~~Officiating Minister~~ District Registrar

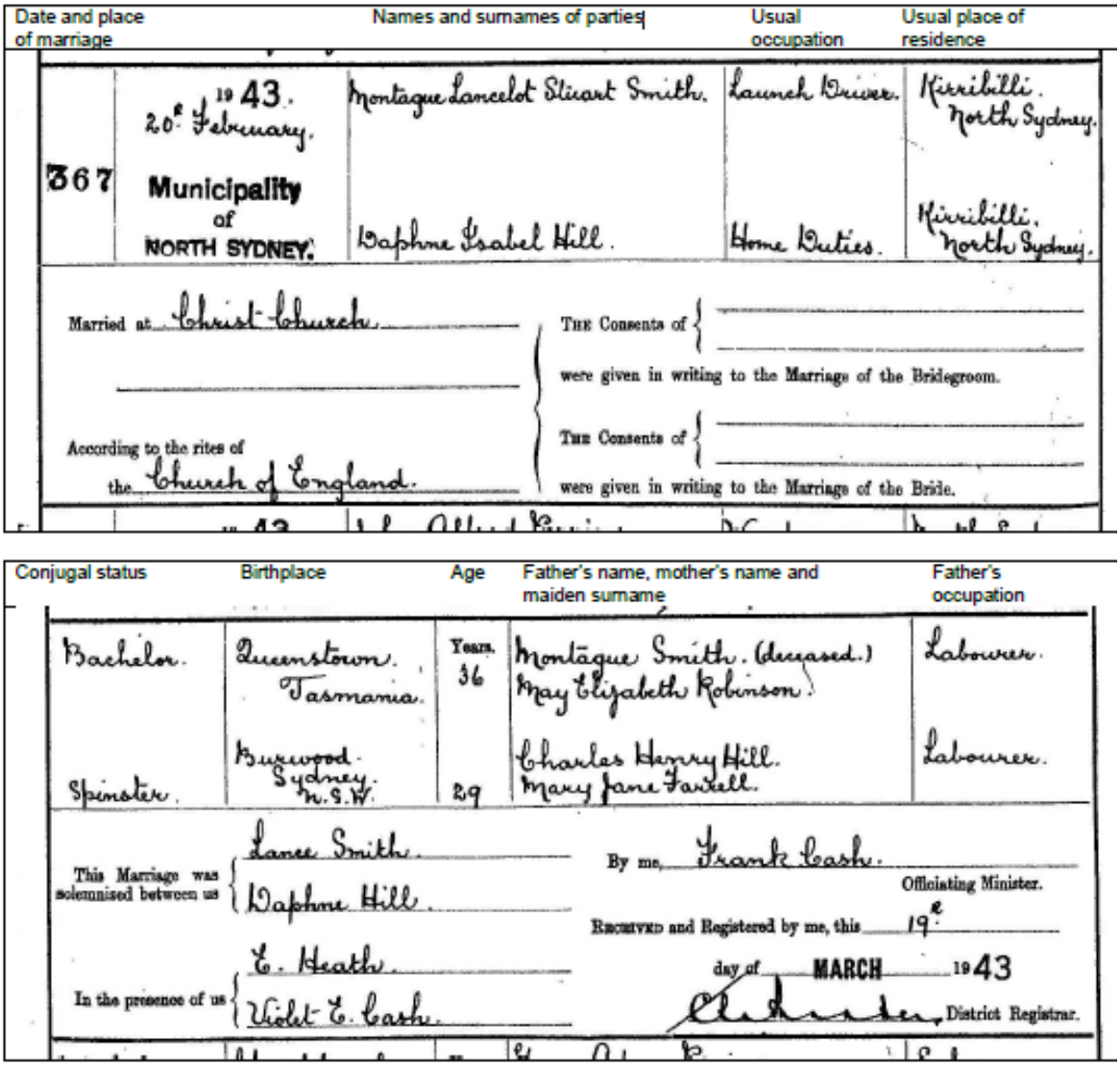
In the presence of us { E Haigh / M Ashe }

RECEIVED and Registered by me, this 4th day of November 1938

Ruth Orr District Registrar.

Marriage certificate of Mary Jane Brien (Farrell / Hill) to Charles Henry Smith 4th Nov 1938

In 1943 Charles and Mary Jane's youngest daughter Daphne Hill married Montague Lancelot Stuart Smith. Montague was a 'Launch Driver' and lived at Kirribilli. It is possible that Charles and Mary Jane moved nearby, or perhaps moved in with them, as from this time on they give two residential addresses i.e. 64a Carabella Street Kirribilli as well as Empire Bay.



Date and place of marriage		Names and surnames of parties	Usual occupation	Usual place of residence
367	20th February 1943. Municipality of NORTH SYDNEY.	Montague Lancelot Stuart Smith.	Launch Driver.	Kirribilli. North Sydney.
		Daphne Isabel Hill.	Home Duties.	Kirribilli. North Sydney.

Married at Christ Church.

According to the rites of the Church of England.

The Consents of _____ were given in writing to the Marriage of the Bridegroom.

The Consents of _____ were given in writing to the Marriage of the Bride.

Conjugal status	Birthplace	Age	Father's name, mother's name and maiden surname	Father's occupation
Bachelor.	Queenstown. Tasmania.	Years. 36	Montague Smith. (deceased.) May Elizabeth Robinson.	Labourer.
Spinster.	Burwood. Sydney. N.S.W.	29	Charles Henry Hill. Mary Jane Farrell.	Labourer.

This Marriage was solemnised between us { Lance Smith. / Daphne Hill.

In the presence of us { E. Heath. / Violet E. Cash.

By me, Frank Cash. Officiating Minister.

Received and Registered by me, this 2nd day of MARCH 1943

District Registrar.

Marriage certificate of Daphne Hill and Montague Smith 20th Feb 1943

My great grand mother, Mary Jane Brien (née Farrell, now Hill) died aged 74 at 64a Carabella Street Kirribilli on the 24th Jan 1948.

DEATH CERTIFICATE

Date and place of death	Name and occupation	Sex and age	Cause of Death Duration of last illness; medical attendant; when he last saw deceased	Name and occupation of father. Name and maiden surname of mother	Informant
48 24th January Matron Municipal General Hospital North Sydney Municipality late of 64A Carabella Street Kirribilli North Sydney Municipality	Mary Jane Hill	Female 74 years	(a) Congestive Cardiac Failure 2 months. (1) (b) Hypertension 2 years. (2) (3) T.N. Joseph (Registered) (4) 24th January 1948	William (1) Farrell (2) Buchman (3) Elizabeth Cornwell	C. H. Hill, Widower, 64A Carabella Street, Kirribilli

Particulars of Registration	When and where buried; name of undertaker	Name and religion of Minister and names of witnesses of burial	Where born and how long in the Australasian Colonies or States	Place of marriage, age, and to whom	Children of marriage
(1) Dawson 27th JANUARY (2) 1948 North Sydney (3)	27th January, 1948 (1) Church of England, (2) Gore Hill, Northern Suburbs. Thomas E. Hart employed by (3) Motor Funerals Limited	(1) K. M. Shelley (2) Church of England (3) A. D. Keene N. Taylor	Redfern, Sydney, N.S.W.	married 1st Marriage Windsor, N.S.W. (1) 16 years George (2) Donald Brien 2nd Marriage Waverley, Sydney, (3) N.S.W. 56 years Charles Henry Hill (4) married	years Ernest E. 56 Ruby J. 53 Daisy D. 48 living One male and two females, deceased Charles H. 38 Jean M. 36 Daphne J. 34 None deceased living years.

Death Certificate of my great grand mother Mary Jane Farrell (a.k.a Brien / Hill) who died at North Sydney 24th Jan 1948 aged 74.

The informant on Mary Jane Farrell's 1948 death certificate was Charles Henry Hill. Charles obviously knew something of Mary Jane's 'Brien' family as he correctly lists Mary's surviving children as Ernest, Ruby and Daisy. Charles also states that three children had died. By 1948 Mary Jane's daughter Alice Muriel Anderson had died (1936) as had her son George Daniel Brien (1940).

HILL, Mary Jane.—January 24, 1948, at Mater Misericordiae Hospital, beloved wife of Charles Hill, of Empire Bay, and 64a Carabella Street, Kirribilli, loving mother of Charles, Jean (Mrs. Hudson), Daphne (Mrs. Smith), and grandmother of Daphne Wallace, aged 74 years.

Mary Jane Farrell (Brien / Hill) death notice in the SMH 25th Jan 1948.
(No mention of Mary's first marriage to George Brien or any of their children!)

Charles Henry Hill died 5th Dec 1955.

DEATHS registered in the District of Sydney, at North Sydney in the State of New South Wales by Joseph Patrick Keeshan Assistant District Registrar.

Column.	
1. No. in Register	574
Description—	
2. Name and surname	Charles Henry Hill
Rank or profession	Cleaner
3. Sex and age	Male 70 years
4. When and where died	5th December 1955 Mater Misericordiae Hospital, North Sydney
Usual Residence	64A Carabella Street, Kirribilli
5. Where born, and how long in the Australasian Colonies or States, indicating which	Parramatta N.S.W.
6. Name and surname of father	Charles Henry Hill
Rank or profession	Unknown
Name and maiden surname of mother	Isabella Blanche(Surname unknown)
If deceased was married—	
7. Where	Unknown
At what age	Unknown
To whom	Mary Jane Brien
Conjugal condition of deceased at time of death	Widower
8. Issue in order of birth, their names and ages	Charles H. 46 years; Jean M. 44; Daphne I. 42. None deceased.
9. Name, description and residence of informant	D. Smith, Daughter, 64A Carabella Street, Kirribilli
10. Cause of death	(a) Acute Heart Failure - hours (b) Peritonitis - days (c) Bowel Infarction - days
Duration of last illness	
Medical attendant by whom certified	J. P. Conaghan
11. When buried or cremated	7th December 1955
Where buried or cremated	Church of England Cemetery, Northern Suburbs
Undertaker or Superintendent by whom certified	Labor Motor Funerals Limited
12. Name and religion of Minister	D.E. Langshaw, Church of England
Names of witnesses	F. Page J.M. Payne
13. Signature of Assistant District Registrar, date, and where registered	J Keeshan 13th December 1955. North Sydney

Death certificate of Charles Henry Hill 'a Cleaner' died 5th December 1955
(Daughter Daphne was the informant and she gives her address as 64a Carabella St Kirribilli)



'Balaclava' (64 Carabella Street, Kirribilli). Built about 1888, home of Charles and Mary Jane's youngest daughter Daphne Smith, and listed as the home of Mary Jane Farrell (Brien / Hill) when she died in 1948. And also listed as the home of Charles Henry Hill when he died in 1955.

After his wife Mary Jane Farrell left him in 1909, George Brien remained at 121a George St until about 1913, with the Floyds continuing to live next door at 121b. After this time George Brien moved to a house north of the Parramatta river in Grose St where he remained until 1915; after which he moved to Harold Street. William Joseph Floyd moved a few doors eastwards along George St to number 129 where he remained until his death in 1955 aged 86.



The steam tram ran along George Street past where the Briens & Floyds lived
(The line ran for 60 years from 1883 and closed in 1943)

An article in the Cumberland Argus newspaper in 1916 mentions George Brien.

Cumberland Argus Wednesday
26 January 1916

Found Drowned in the River.

A Well-known Resident.

On Monday afternoon, about 4 o'clock, a man named Geo. Brien, of Harold-street, Parramatta, whilst pulling up the saltwater river just below the George-street Asylum, came across the dead body of a woman lying on the bank in shallow water, just above the tide mark. He sent word by Messrs. Hart and Hitchcock's staff to the police and Sergeant Robertson had the body removed to the Parramatta Hospital morgue.

It was there identified at that of Mrs. Emily Beatrice Klien, of Wigram-street, Harris Park, and wife of Mr. Charles Klien, late of Church-street, Parramatta North.

Mrs. Klien has been in indifferent health, and melancholy, for some time past. She was 52 years of age and leaves several grown-up children.



Parramatta River looking downstream towards the Government Asylum for infirm and destitute men in George St. [623]

George Brien mentioned in the Argus Wednesday 2nd October 1918

George Brien (46) was charged with behaving in a riotous manner outside the White Horse hotel, Parramatta. He was fined 5s, or 24 hours' detention. It was stated that the man with whom the defendant was fighting got away.

In October 1918 George gets another mention in the Cumberland Argus.

In 1917 George Brien moved to Albert Street, then in 1920 George again moved south of the Parramatta river to live with his daughter Ruby Brien at Barrick lane.

Barrack Lane
From Macquarie to George street
Orouch Mrs. Eliza
Hammond
Brien Miss R. ←

Sands directory 1920 showing Miss Ruby Brien living in Barrick Lane

George Brien died at Barrack Lane Parramatta on the 5th December 1921 aged 52. His daughter Ruby looked after him in his final year of life. Veronica Brien wrote about Ruby and George in her 1997 letter describing George as a "wonderfully, kindly, brother and father" and how kind Ruby was to him in his final years.

George Brien was buried on the 7th December 1921 at Rookwood cemetery in plot M2/5/1436. Today I can find no trace of his grave - just grass.



George and Mary Jane's eldest daughter Ruby Brien born 1895 was with George when he died in 1921.

In 1925 Ruby married Walter Floyd. She died at Bathurst in 1986.



Date and place of death	Name and occupation	Sex and age	Cause of Death Duration of last illness; medical attendant; when he last saw deceased	Name and occupation of father. Name and maiden surname of mother	Informant
1921. (1) 6th December Barrack Lane Parramatta (2) Municipality of Parramatta	George Daniel Brien Butcher	Male 52 years	(a) Cachexia (1) (b) Carcinoma of liver (2) (a) —— (b) 12 months (3) R.A.P. Waugh registered (4) 5th December 1921	(1) Daniel Brien (2) Hotel Keeper (3) Bridget Ryan	Certified by E. E. Brien Son Wellbank Road Concord Witness W. H. Roberts

Particulars of Registration	When and where buried; name of undertaker	Name and religion of Minister and names of witnesses of burial	Where born and how long in the Australasian Colonies or States	Place of marriage, age, and to whom	Children of marriage
(1) [illegible] (2) 9th December 1921. (3) Parramatta	(1) 7th December 1921 (2) Roman Catholic cemetery Rookwood. (3) R. Metcalfe	(1) Chas. Hartley (2) Roman Catholic (3) T. Driver W. H. Roberts	Parramatta N.S. Wales	(1) Windsor N.S. Wales (2) 21 years (3) Molly Farrell	years. Ernest E. 30 George D. 28 Ruby [illegible] 26 Stella M. 24 Daisy D. 21 Alice M. 19 living none deceased.

Death certificate of my great grandfather George Brien (born 1870) who died at Barrack Lane Parramatta 6th December 1921 aged 52.

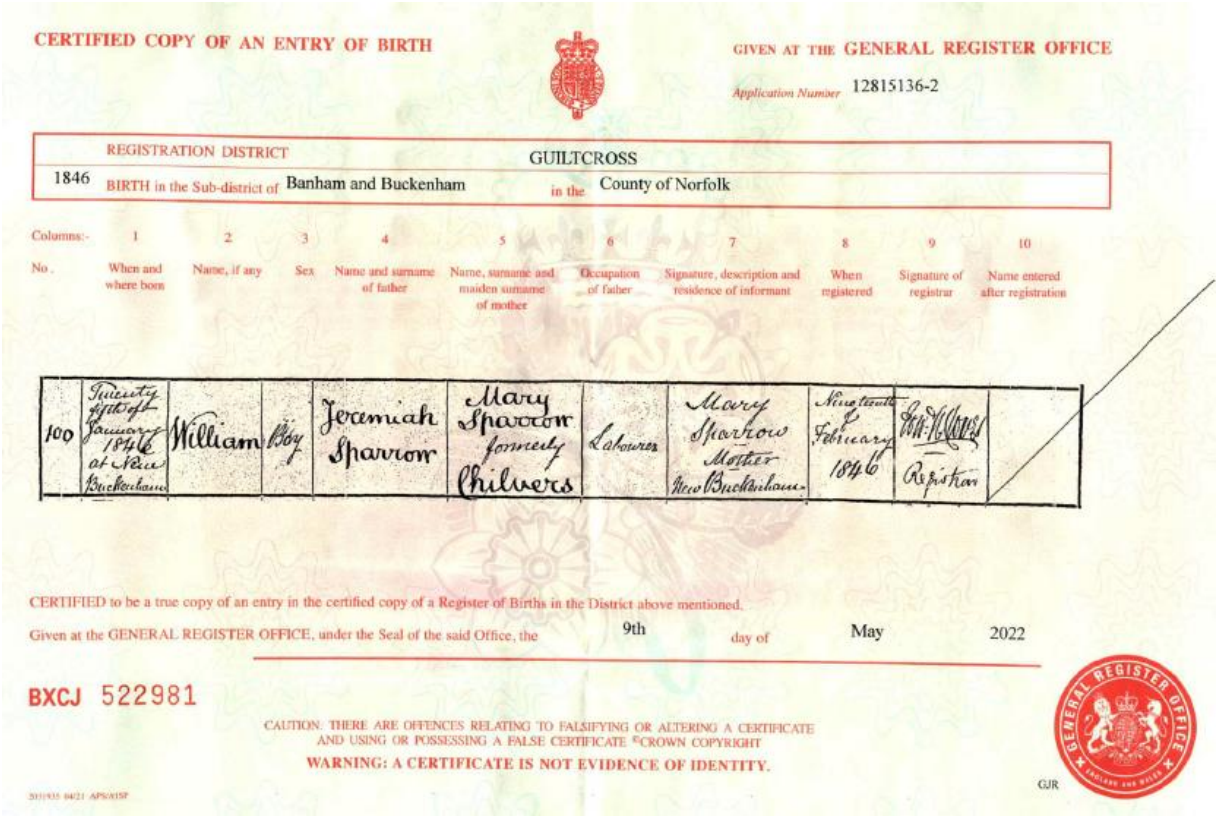
Note: the informant was Ernest Edward Brien, eldest son of George Brien and Mary Jane Farrell. Also note that Edward Brien referred to his mother as "Molly."

Mary Jane Farrell's father William Farrell b.1846 d.1927

William Farrell was born in near New Buckenham, Norfolk England in 1846.

According to the 'New Buckenham Chilvers' web site produced by George Chilvers, William Farrell's parents were Jeremiah Sparrow and Mary Ann Sparrow (née Chilvers). Jeremiah & Mary Ann married in 1843 at New Buckenham.

Their first child Eliza was born in 1844 followed by William (our ancestor) in 1846. Sadly, William's father, Jeremiah Sparrow, died in a farm accident at Thetford Road in Norfolk in December 1846 leaving Mary Ann a widow with two young children. [624]



CERTIFIED COPY OF AN ENTRY OF BIRTH

GIVEN AT THE GENERAL REGISTER OFFICE

Application Number 12815136-2

REGISTRATION DISTRICT GUILTCROSS

1846 BIRTH in the Sub-district of Banham and Buckenham in the County of Norfolk

Columns:-	1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10
No.	When and where born	Name, if any	Sex	Name and surname of father	Name, surname and maiden surname of mother	Occupation of father	Signature, description and residence of informant	When registered	Signature of registrar	Name entered after registration
100	Twenty fifth of January 1846 at New Buckenham	William	Boy	Jeremiah Sparrow	Mary Sparrow formerly Chilvers	Labourer	Mary Sparrow Mother New Buckenham	Nineteenth February 1846	[illegible] Registrar	

CERTIFIED to be a true copy of an entry in the certified copy of a Register of Births in the District above mentioned.

Given at the GENERAL REGISTER OFFICE, under the Seal of the said Office, the 9th day of May 2022

BXCJ 522981

CAUTION: THERE ARE OFFENCES RELATING TO FALSIFYING OR ALTERING A CERTIFICATE AND USING OR POSSESSING A FALSE CERTIFICATE ©CROWN COPYRIGHT

WARNING: A CERTIFICATE IS NOT EVIDENCE OF IDENTITY.

GJR

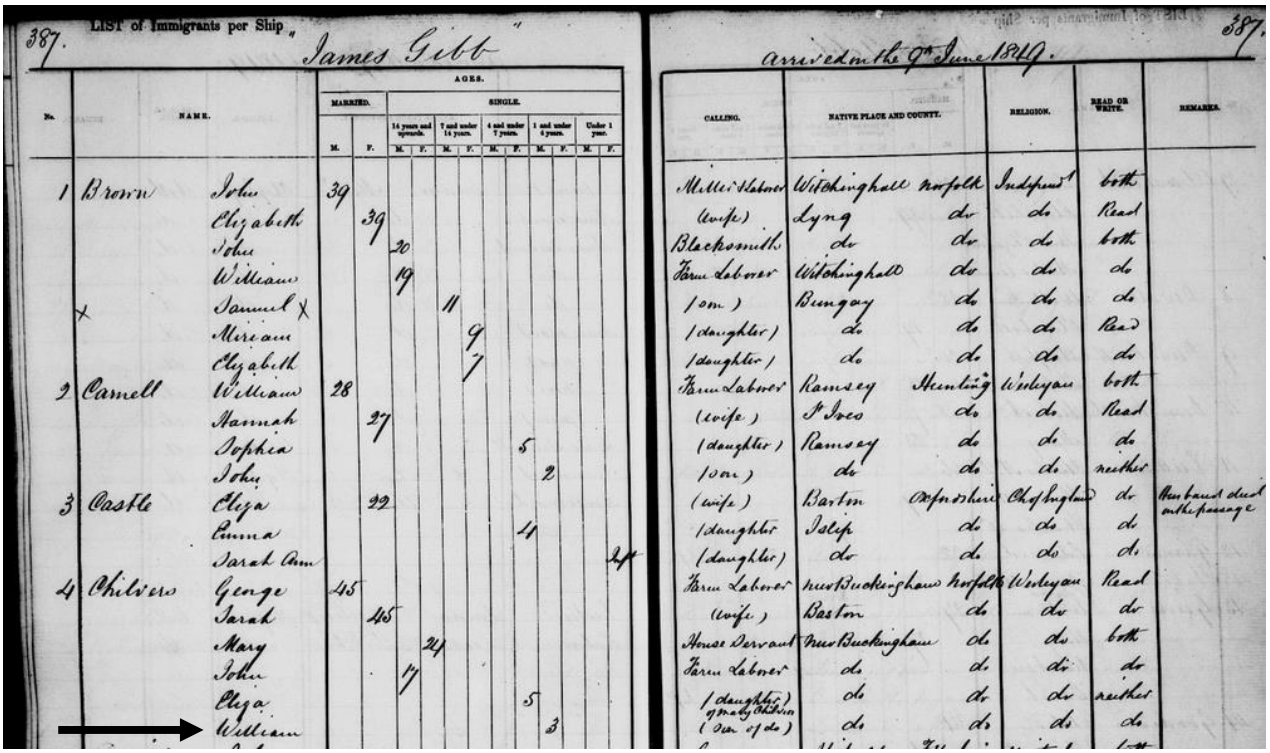
GENERAL REGISTER OFFICE

William Farrell's birth certificate 25th January 1846

(courtesy of Yasmin Brennan)

Mary Ann's parents, George and Sarah Chilvers, took Mary Ann in, and in 1848 George made the momentous decision to move the family to Australia.

The family comprised of George and Sarah Chilvers, their son John (18), daughter Mary Ann (28) as well as Mary Ann's two children Eliza (5) and our ancestor William (3). They left London on 24th January 1849 aboard the ship 'James Gibb' and arrived in Sydney on the 9th June 1849.



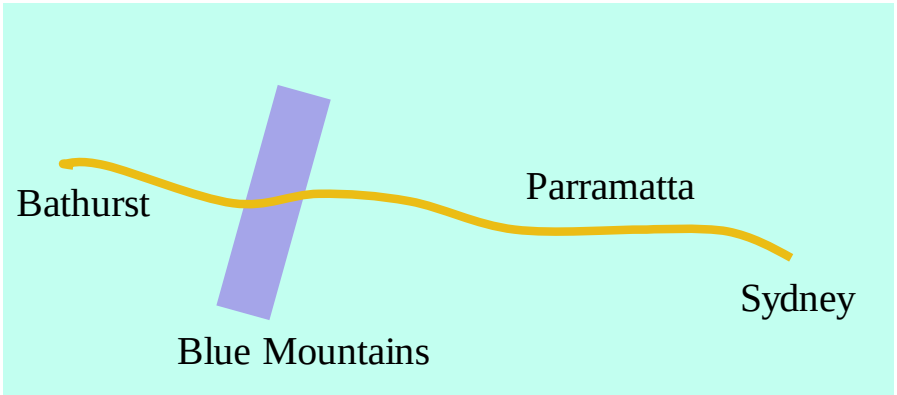
387. LIST of Immigrants per Ship "James Gibb" arrived in the 9th June 1849. 387.

No.	NAME		MARRIED M.	MARRIED F.	SINGLE 14 years and upwards M.	SINGLE 14 years and upwards F.	SINGLE 7 and under 14 years M.	SINGLE 7 and under 14 years F.	SINGLE 4 and under 7 years M.	SINGLE 4 and under 7 years F.	SINGLE 1 and under 4 years M.	SINGLE 1 and under 4 years F.	SINGLE Under 1 year M.	SINGLE Under 1 year F.	CALLING.	NATIVE PLACE AND COUNTY.	RELIGION.	READ OR WRITE.	REMARKS.
1	Brown	John	39												Miller & Farmer	Witchingham Norfolk	Independt	both	
		Elizabeth		39											(wife)	Lyng do	do	Read	
		John			20										Blacksmith	do do	do	both	
		William			19										Farm Labourer	Witchingham do	do	do	
	X	Samuel	X				11								(son)	Bungay do	do	do	
		Miriam						9							(daughter)	do do	do	Read	
		Elizabeth						7							(daughter)	do do	do	do	
2	Carnell	William	28												Farm Labourer	Ramsey Hunting	Wesleyan	both	
		Hannah		27											(wife)	St Ives do	do	Read	
		Sophia								5					(daughter)	Ramsey do	do	do	
		John										2			(son)	do do	do	neither	
3	Castle	Eliza		22											(wife)	Barton Oxfordshire	Churchyard	do	Husband died on the passage
		Emma								1					(daughter)	Islip do	do	do	
		Sarah Ann												1	(daughter)	do do	do	do	
4	Chilvers	George	45												Farm Labourer	near Buckingham Norfolk	Wesleyan	Read	
		Sarah		45											(wife)	Baston do	do	do	
		Mary					24								House Servant	near Buckingham do	do	both	
		John			17										Farm Labourer	do do	do	do	
		Eliza								5					(daughter) grandchildren	do do	do	neither	
		William										3			(son of do)	do do	do	do	

Manifest of the ship 'James Gibb' showing William Farrell's family (the Chilvers) arriving in Sydney 9th June 1849. (Arrow points to William Farrell)

Around 1850 (soon after arriving in Sydney) George and Sarah Chilvers, son John, daughter Mary Ann and Mary Ann's two children Eliza and William traveled the 200Km journey over the Blue Mountains to the town of Bathurst.

Bathurst is the oldest inland settlement in Australia. On the 7th May 1815, Governor Macquarie raised the British flag at the Grand Depot, ordered a ceremonial volley to be fired and named the military outpost as Bathurst after the Secretary of State for War and the Colonies, Henry Bathurst, 3rd Earl Bathurst. Bathurst thereby became the oldest inland British settlement in Australia. [625]



Simplified map of the journey under taken by the Chilvers from Sydney to Bathurst in 1850

This was just before the gold rush. I'm not sure why the Chilvers selected Bathurst as a destination, but it would have proved a profitable decision as within two years Bathurst was transformed into a major commercial center by the gold rush of 1851.

The road from Sydney to Bathurst crosses-over what we call today 'The Blue Mountains'. These are not really mountains, the highest points are just over 1300 meters, but the early settlers found them impossible to cross as the terrain is formed from a sandstone uplift that has been heavily eroded by rivers. Following the rivers upstream; the early explorers encountered impassable vertical cliffs hundreds of meters in height.

There are only two practical paths across, and one of these was eventually found and marked out by explorers Gregory Blaxland, William Charles Wentworth and William Lawson in 1813. [626] This is the same Gregory Blaxland that our ancestor George Best sold twenty Merino sheep to for the sum of £60 in 1807. [627]

By January 1815 Lt. William Cox, with 30 convicts, completed a road across the mountains to Bathurst - a staggering 170Km (101.5 miles) through very rugged country in just six months. [628] Cox had made a "good clear track and a dozen or more wooden bridges from Emu Island (near Penrith) to the Macquarie River". [629]

This road was still in use when the Chilvers undertook their journey in 1850. Today this route is essentially followed by the Great Western Highway.

Originally the mountains were called "The Blue Hills" due to the blue haze that engulfs them from a distance (due to sunlight scattered by Eucalyptus oil droplets emitted from the forests). [630]



The Road over the "Blue Hills" to Bathurst (drawn 1851) [631]

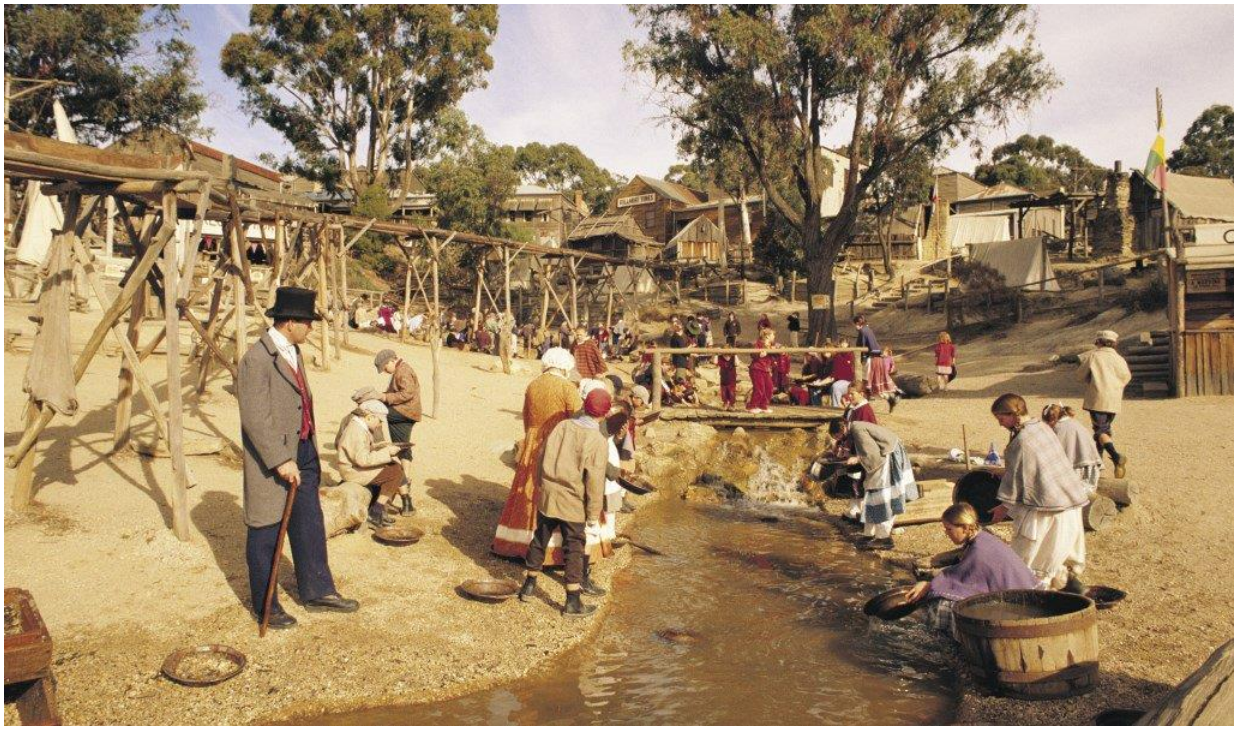
NSW Gold Rush 1851

In February 1851, a gold prospector named Edward Hammond Hargraves and his guide, John Lister, set out on horseback with a pan and rocking-cradle, to Lewis Ponds Creek, a tributary of the Macquarie River close to Bathurst.

On the 12th February 1851, they found gold at a place close to Bathurst he called Ophir. He said that "once in the creek bed he somehow felt surrounded by gold." [632]
Initially keeping the find secret, Hargraves travelled to Sydney and met the Colonial Secretary in March. Soon the claim was recognised and Hargraves was appointed the "Commissioner of Lands."

Hargraves also received a £10,000 reward from the New South Wales government, as well as a life pension and a £5,000 reward from the Victorian government. Due to a dispute with his partners, however, some of the reward was withheld.

The gold find was proclaimed on 14th May 1851 and within days the first Australian gold rush began with 100 diggers searching for their gold. By June 1851 there were over 2000 people digging around Bathurst, and thousands more were on their way. In 1852, the yield was 850,000 ounces (24½ tonnes). [633]



Portrayal of the gold diggings near Bathurst NSW [634]

BATHURST GOLD DIGGINGS.

In reply to your enquiries with regard to the diggings, I must tell you that gold is found in large quantities, but there has not been more than 1000*l* worth sold in Bathurst yet. Mr Austin is the principal purchaser at present, but some of the other storekeepers purchase as well. I was informed by a gentleman who returned from the diggings yesterday, that there is upwards of 10,000*l* worth collected at the mines now. To speak within bounds, there is at present between 500 and 600 persons at work there, so you may form some idea of the average amount collected by each individual.

They do not take it at the Bank on deposit, but parties who wish may leave it there for safety. Many parties who went there with the idea of picking up gold on the surface of the ground without any labour have returned bitterly disappointed, but those who went property equipped, are, I hear, doing well. I would not advise any one to come who cannot stand hard labour and exposure to the weather. Trade is quite at a stand still, except with storekeepers and publicans, and every con-

Bathurst, May 24, 1851.

As regards the mines, I have just come from Arthur's Inn, where a shepherd came in with gold from the diggings. I was called in helping to weigh the gold. In all, together, I should say he had about 25 lbs. I also saw and had in my hand gold offered to me by another party, namely, —— and others, to the amount of 120*l* to 140*l* worth, one week's digging of a party consisting of eight men. Several gentlemen, who will arrive in Sydney about Wednesday, will confirm these statements. A good deal of gold is deposited in the Bank.

Adelaide Times mentions the gold rush about a month after the discovery at Bathurst by Hargraves and Lister.

Saturday 21st Jun 1851

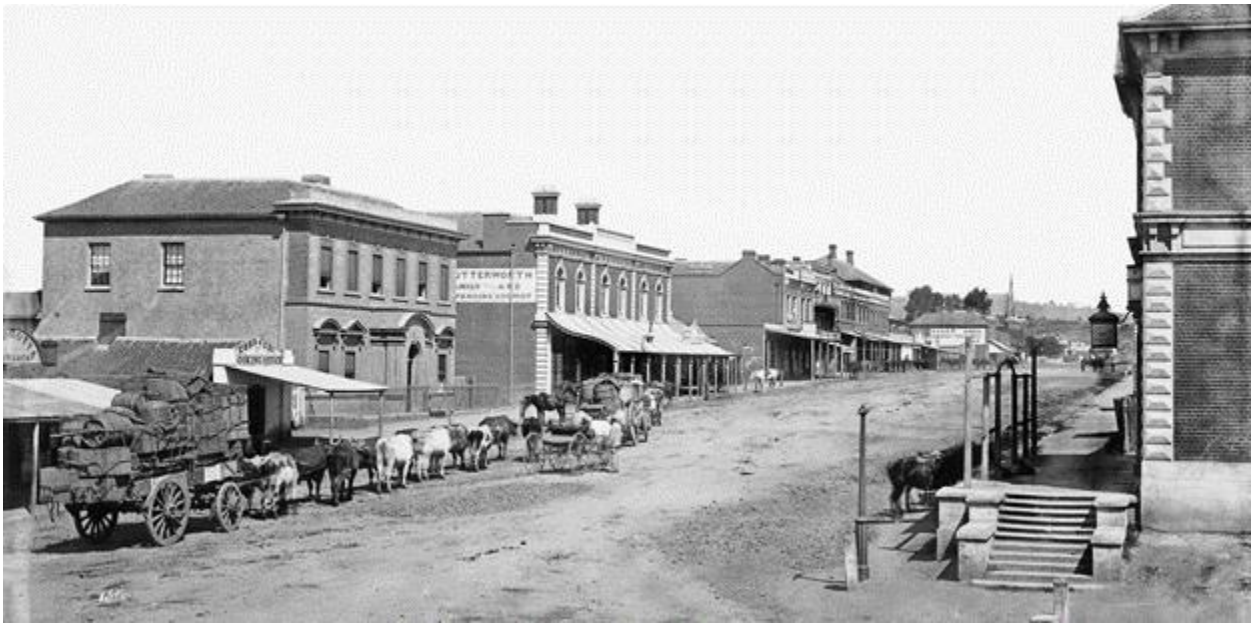
George and Sarah's eldest son John Chilvers was a cobbler and and established a shoe & boot making business in Bathurst from 1851 until his death in 1906. From around 1855 John was a member of the Loyal Kincora Odd Fellows as well as a founding member of the Bathurst Odd Fellows Lodge from its inception on 26th January 1857. He married Ann Frost on the 16th Apr 1857 in the Bathurst and had a number of children. [635]

John Chilvers died on 10th October 1906, the local press reporting "Another old and highly respected identity of Bathurst passed away yesterday afternoon at 1.30 in the person of Mr. John Chilvers at the age of 75 years." Sarah Chilvers died at Bathurst on the 31st January 1857. Her husband George Chilvers moved away from Bathurst after his wife's death and he died at Liverpool in 1865 aged 70.



John Chilvers Bookmakers' shop in Bathurst (1851 - 1906) [636]

Mary Ann Sparrow (née Chilvers) re-married on the 18th March 1856 in the Wesleyan Parsonage in Bathurst to John Saunderson. Mary Ann's son William (our ancestor) was aged 10 when Mary Ann and John Saunderson married.

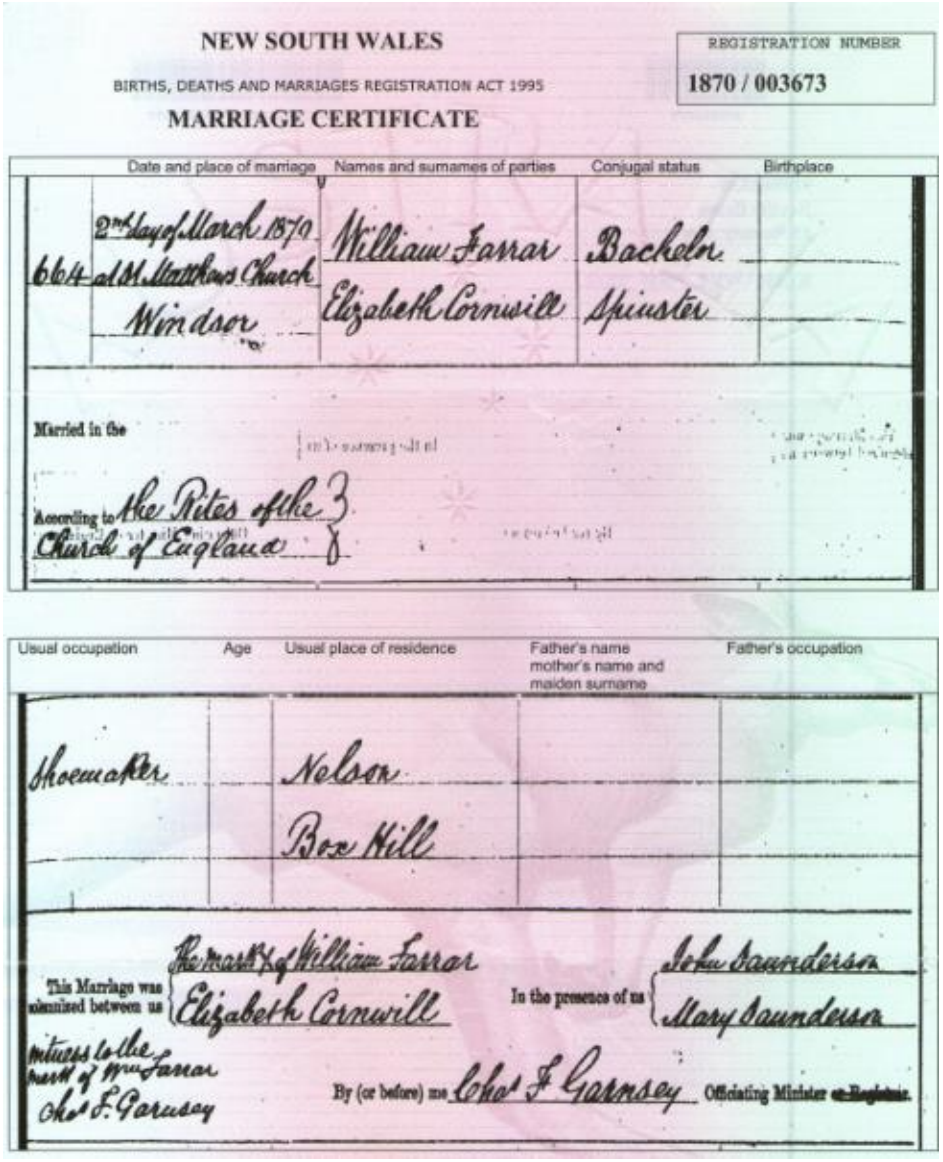


William Street Bathurst in 1870 (State Library of New South Wales) [637]

Mary Ann, John Saunderson and William later moved to the Windsor area, somewhere around Box Hill, and had a number of children. I assume William was still living with them when he married Elizabeth Cornwall in 1870.

At the time of their marriage, William was aged 24 and Elizabeth Cornwall 21. William stated he lived in Box Hill in the Parish of Nelson. Like his uncle John Chilvers, William stated he was also a Shoemaker.

William Farrell signed his marriage certificate with an "X" so it is likely that he was illiterate; this may explain his Laissez-faire approach to spelling his name. It could also be that he was unsure of the correct spelling of Jeremiah Farrell's name.



NEW SOUTH WALES

BIRTHS, DEATHS AND MARRIAGES REGISTRATION ACT 1995

REGISTRATION NUMBER
1870 / 003673

MARRIAGE CERTIFICATE

Date and place of marriage	Names and surnames of parties	Conjugal status	Birthplace
664 2nd day of March 1870 at St. Matthews Church Windsor	William Farrar Elizabeth Cornwill	Bachelor Spinster	

Married in the

according to the Rites of the Church of England

Usual occupation	Age	Usual place of residence	Father's name mother's name and maiden surname	Father's occupation
Shoemaker		Nelson Box Hill		

This Marriage was solemnized between us the mark of William Farrar / Elizabeth Cornwill

In the presence of us John Saunderson / Mary Saunderson

witness to the mark of Wm Farrar Chas F. Garnsey

By (or before) me Chas F. Garnsey Officiating Minister ~~or Registrar~~

Wedding Certificate of William Farrar and Elizabeth Cornwall 2nd March 1870
(William's real name was William Sparrow, but he was also known as William Farrell)

Witnesses to William Farrar and Elizabeth Cornwall's wedding were William's mother Mary Chilvers who signed as Mary Saunderson and her 2nd husband John Saunderson. Mary and John were married in Bathurst in 1856.

Curiously, William used the name of "Farrar" instead of Sparrow (the name of his father). The correct name of William's father was Jeremiah Sparrow. Hence William's name was actually William Sparrow.

For some unknown reason prior to 1870 William decided to latch onto a person by the name of Jeremiah Farrell who died in the "Indian Mutiny of 1857" and told everyone that he was his father. The "Indian Mutiny" was big news at the time and Jeremiah Farrell was a real person from Norfolk, so maybe William liked the name Farrell better than Sparrow and decided to use it. I guess the fact that Jeremiah was his real father's name made it more credible.

William Farrell and Elizabeth Cornwall were married in St Matthews church at Windsor. Commissioned by Governor Lachlan Macquarie, and designed by convict architect Frances Greenway, construction commenced in 1817 and completed in 1822.



St Matthews church at Windsor (A Frances Greenway designed church)
William Farrell and Elizabeth Cornwall were married here in 1870

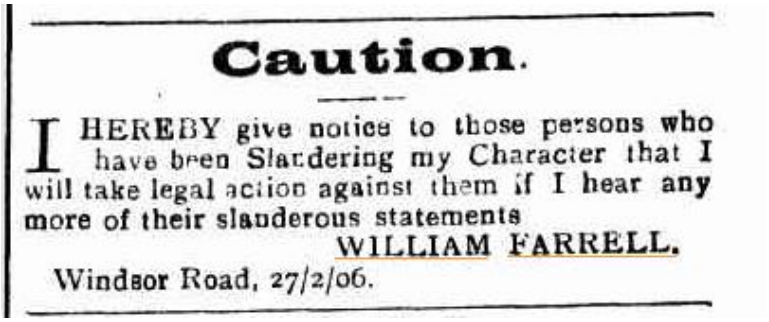
William Farrell and Elizabeth Cornwall had at least nine children including Elizabeth b. 1871, William b. 1872, Mary Jane (our ancestor) b. 1873, Thomas b. 1875, Alice b. 1877, an infant died young b. 1879, Rachel b. 1881, Charles b. 1882, Ethel b. 1888.

William appears in the 1891 Census; and there were three males and five females listed as living in the same house on Windsor Road at Vineyard.

It is clear that William & Elizabeth Farrell enjoyed the Church social life. The local paper described how on the 15th March 1900 a concert was held at the Farrell's residence in aid of the Church of England and was "successful in every way." Another concert was held at the Farrell's in July 1900 to say goodbye to Rev. S. G. Fielding. On this occasion Mr. Farrell sang 'The Honest Working Man."

Church Records - "At a committee meeting held on 17th September 1902 Mr. Simons took the chair. Mr. Forssberg proposed (seconded by Mr. White) that the church be lengthened by 10 feet, the windows enlarged, the roof painted with refrigerating paint, ventilators placed in the gables and a porch be added to the present structure. The Church to pay one half of the money to the extent of Three-Pounds [$6], the mover the other half and any sum beyond Six-Pounds [$12]." William Farrell was awarded the job of carrying out the works on the church.

In February 1906, William Farrell was obviously upset at people slandering him wrote this note to the Windsor and Richmond Gazette newspaper.



Caution.

I HEREBY give notice to those persons who have been Slandering my Character that I will take legal action against them if I hear any more of their slanderous statements

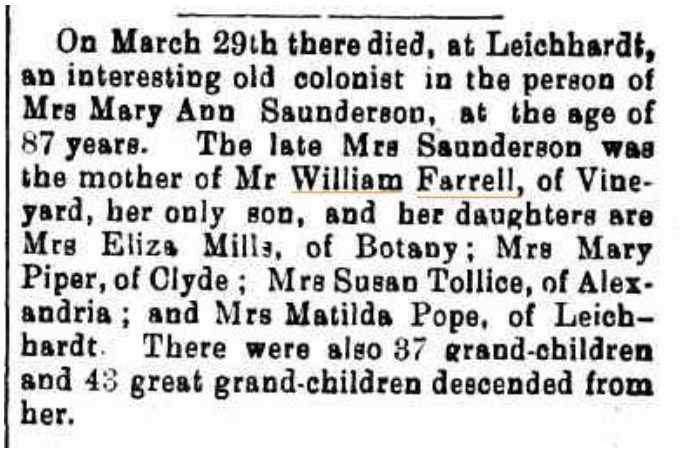
WILLIAM FARRELL.

Windsor Road, 27/2/06.

Windsor and Richmond Gazette Saturday 3rd March 1906

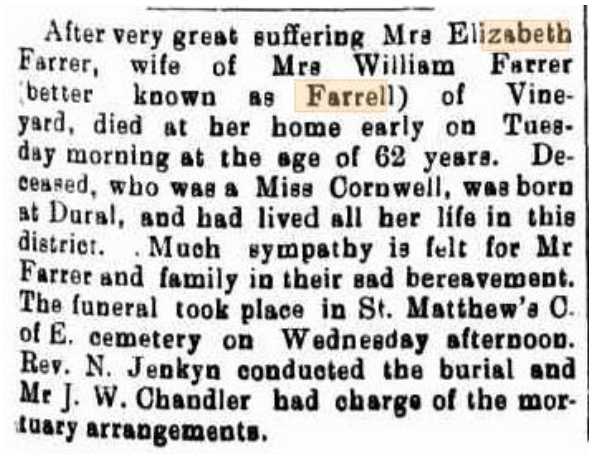
William Farrell's mother Mary Ann Saunderson (née Chilvers) died on the 29th March 1909. At the time she was married to her second husband John Saunderson. She died at the home of her daughter Matilda Pope at Leichhardt and was buried at Rookwood C of E cemetery. The Windsor Gazette published an obituary.

The Windsor Gazette Saturday 8th May 1909 mentions William Farrell's mother Mary Ann Saunderson (née Chilvers) who died on the 29th March 1909.



On March 29th there died, at Leichhardt, an interesting old colonist in the person of Mrs Mary Ann Saunderson, at the age of 87 years. The late Mrs Saunderson was the mother of Mr William Farrell, of Vineyard, her only son, and her daughters are Mrs Eliza Mills, of Botany; Mrs Mary Piper, of Clyde; Mrs Susan Tollice, of Alexandria; and Mrs Matilda Pope, of Leichhardt. There were also 37 grand-children and 43 great grand-children descended from her.

William's wife Elizabeth Farrell (née Cornwall) passed away at her Vineyard home on Tuesday morning the 31st January 1911 – from the Windsor Gazette, Saturday 4th February 1911.



After very great suffering Mrs Elizabeth Farrer, wife of Mrs William Farrer (better known as Farrell) of Vineyard, died at her home early on Tuesday morning at the age of 62 years. Deceased, who was a Miss Cornwell, was born at Dural, and had lived all her life in this district. Much sympathy is felt for Mr Farrer and family in their sad bereavement. The funeral took place in St. Matthew's C. of E. cemetery on Wednesday afternoon. Rev. N. Jenkyn conducted the burial and Mr J. W. Chandler had charge of the mortuary arrangements.

William Farrell's wife Elizabeth Farrell (née Cornwall)

Windsor and Richmond Gazette Sat 4th February 1911

William Farrell's 2nd marriage was to Annie Shanahan in 1911 at Paddington NSW. Annie was a Catholic and William, after being an ardent Anglican all his life, converted to Catholicism. William Farrell died on the 24th May 1927 at Mulgrave NSW. The following obituary appeared in the Windsor Gazette on Friday the 3rd June 1927.

Obituary for William Farrell Windsor Gazette Friday 3rd June 1927

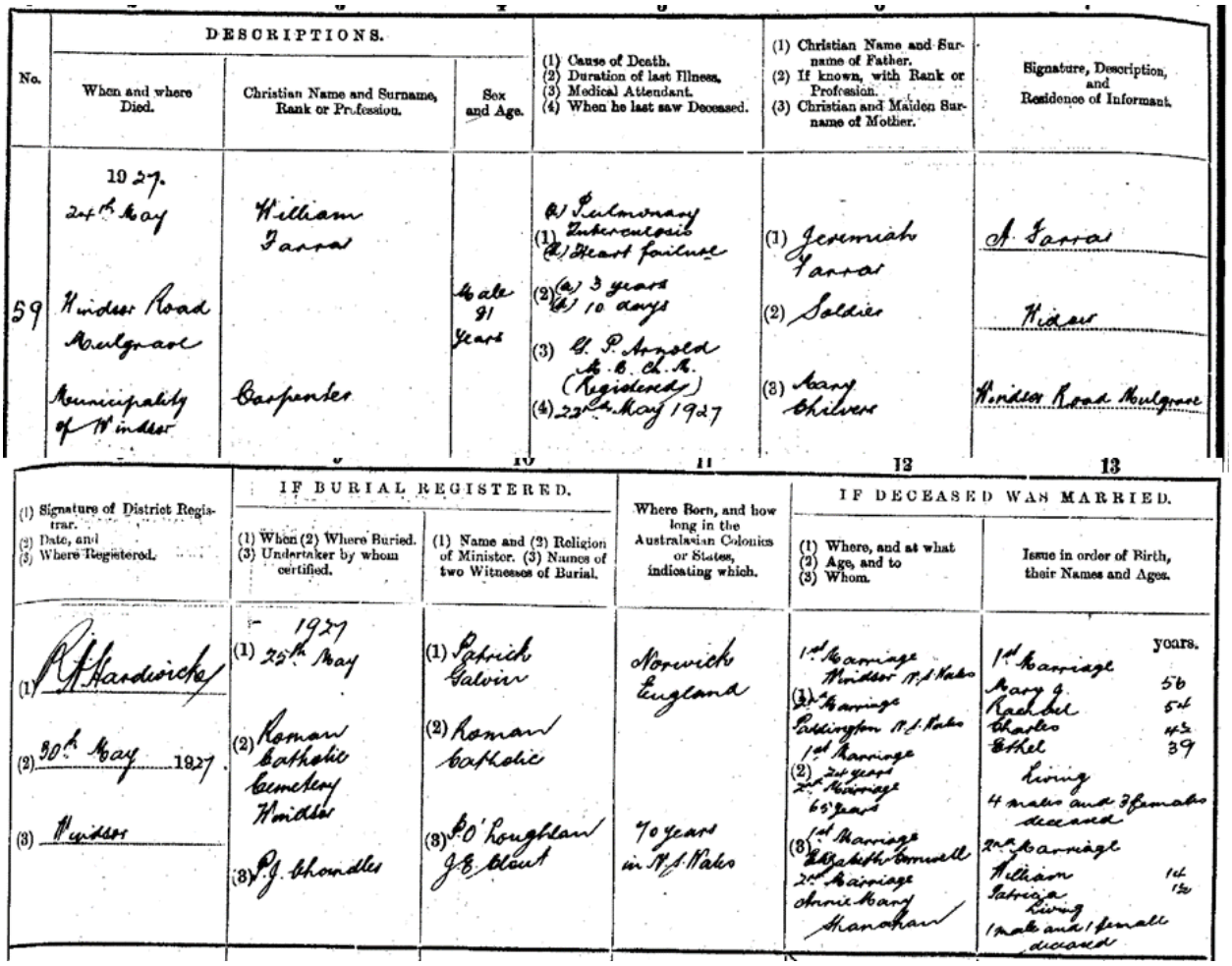
carried out the funeral arrangements.

WILLIAM FARRAR.

ANOTHER link in the very old days of the Hawkesbury is severed by the death at the ripe age of 81 years, of William Farrar (better known as William Farrell), who passed away quietly during the early hours of May 24 at his residence, Windsor-road, Mulgrave. Deceased, who was born at Norwich, England, was a son of the late Jerimah Farrar, and arrived in this colony at the youthful age of 11 years. It is worthy of note to record that his father was killed in the Indian Mutiny. Deceased was twice married. His first wife was Miss Elizabeth Cornwell, whom he married at Windsor at the age of 24 years. They reared a family of four children, viz., Mary, Rachael, Charles and Ethel. At the age of 65 years deceased married again to Annie Mary Shanahan, who survives him. There were two children of the second issue—William and Patricia. For some time past deceased had been conducting tea gardens along the Windsor-road, and he had been a familiar identity in Windsor for the past half-century. Of recent months his health failed considerably, and he passed away as stated above. The funeral took place on Wednesday, the remains being interred in St. Matthew's Catholic cemetery, Windsor. Rev. Father Galvin conducted the last sad rites, and Mr. Chandler was the undertaker.

Note the reference in the above article to William's father being the soldier Jeremiah Farrar who died in the 'Cawnpore massacre' (in India) in 1857. This was definitely not the case, but William must have been a good story teller as everyone seemed to have believed it.

However, the truth is quite different, his father was Jeremiah Sparrow was a farmer who died shortly after William was born. The story may have made William a larger than life figure to the people of Windsor - he was certainly a colorful character in our family history.



No.	DESCRIPTIONS. When and where Died.	Christian Name and Surname, Rank or Profession.	Sex and Age.	(1) Cause of Death. (2) Duration of last Illness. (3) Medical Attendant. (4) When he last saw Deceased.	(1) Christian Name and Surname of Father. (2) If known, with Rank or Profession. (3) Christian and Maiden Surname of Mother.	Signature, Description, and Residence of Informant.
59	1927. 24th May, Windsor Road, Rouleyrace, Municipality of Windsor	William Farrar, Carpenter	Male 91 Years	(1) Pulmonary Tuberculosis (2) Heart failure (2)(a) 3 years (b) 10 days (3) C. P. Arnold M.B. Ch.B. (Residency) (4) 22nd May 1927	(1) Jeremiah Farrar (2) Soldier (3) Mary Chilvers	A. Farrar, Widow, Windsor Road Rouleyrace

(1) Signature of District Registrar. (2) Date, and (3) Where Registered.	IF BURIAL REGISTERED. (1) When (2) Where Buried. (3) Undertaker by whom certified.	(1) Name and (2) Religion of Minister. (3) Names of two Witnesses of Burial.	Where Born, and how long in the Australasian Colonies or States, indicating which.	IF DECEASED WAS MARRIED. (1) Where, and at what (2) Age, and to (3) Whom.	Issue in order of Birth, their Names and Ages.
(1) R. A. Hardwicke (2) 30th May 1927 (3) Windsor	1927 (1) 25th May (2) Roman Catholic Cemetery Windsor (3) P. J. Knowles	(1) Patrick Galvin (2) Roman Catholic (3) P. O'Loughlan J. E. Blount	Norwich England 70 years in N.S.Wales	1st Marriage Windsor N.S.Wales (1) 2nd Marriage Paddington N.S.Wales 1st Marriage (2) 2nd years 2nd Marriage 65 years (3) 1st Marriage Elizabeth Connell 2nd Marriage Annie Mary Shanahan	1st Marriage years. Mary 56 Rachel 54 Charles 42 Ethel 39 Living 4 males and 3 females deceased 2nd Marriage William 14 Patricia 12 Living 1 male and 1 female deceased

Death certificate of my great great grand father William Farrell who died 24th May 1927
Buried at the Catholic cemetery Windsor NSW

Mary Jane Farrell's mother Elizabeth Cornwall b.1849 d.1911

The Cornwall branch of our family were all free settlers of English background. The first to arrive in NSW were Thomas Chapman & Mary Ann Chapman (née Clout). They originated from Benenden, Kent, England and arrived with their four children in 1839 on the ship 'Cornwall'. Also travelling with the Chapman's, but on the ship 'Roxburgh Castle' were Mary Ann's brothers William & Edward Clout. The Chapman's settled in the Vineyard area, and Chapman Road may have been named after them. Within a year of arriving Mary Ann had died leaving Thomas Chapman to raise the four children.

We are descended from Thomas & Mary Ann's third child Elizabeth, who was six when she made the voyage to NSW. In 1848, when Elizabeth Chapman was 15, she married James Cornwell. James originated from Mayfield East, Sussex, England and had arrived in NSW in 1839 on board the ship 'Lady Raffles.'

James and Elizabeth Cornwall lived at Riverstone and had 8 children. We are descended from the eldest, Elizabeth Cornwall who was born in 1849. James Cornwell died on the 21st July 1898 aged 80 years and his wife Elizabeth Cornwell died 28th Oct 1904 aged 76 years. They are buried together at the Rouse Hill Anglican Cemetery.

In Loving Memory
of
JAMES CORNWELL
DIED 21st JULY 1898
AGED 80 YEARS
ALSO
ELIZABETH CORNWELL
DIED 28th OCT 1904
AGED 76 YEARS'



On the 2nd March 1870, when Elizabeth was 21, she married William Farrell (a.k.a. William Sparrow) aged 24 at St Matthews Church of England Windsor. They settled on a small 4-acre property located close to the corner of Old Hawkesbury Road and Windsor Road at Vineyard. On their wedding certificate William Farrell describes his occupation as a "shoemaker" and prior to his marriage had been living a few kilometers away at Box Hill. William and Elizabeth had nine children; we are descended from their third child Mary Jane Farrell b. 1873.

Chapter 13

George Daniel Brien b.1893 and Sarah Jane Osborn Hammell (Floyd) b.1892

Family of Sarah Jane Osborn Hammell (aka Sarah Floyd)

The ancestors of George Daniel Brien and his wife Sarah Jane Osborn Hammell (Floyd)

This chapter of the story covers the life of George Daniel Brien born 1893 and his wife Sarah Jane Osborn Hammell (Floyd) born 1892 (a.k.a Sarah Cecelia Floyd). We start by looking at the family history of Sarah Jane Osborn Hammell's great grand parents, Thomas Hamill and Mary Cahill.

Thomas Hamill and his wife Mary Cahill were Irish free settlers who left Ireland during the Great Famine (1845-1852). A period described as "The Great Shame" by author Thomas Keneally. Thomas Hammill was born in 1825 at Elphin, County Roscommon in the north west of Ireland. We know little about him apart from he was Catholic, educated and had qualified as a clerk.

Roscommon was hit particularly hard during the Famine and we have accounts of workhouses overflowing with people in a most deplorable condition. "Some of the persons lately admitted are actually in a state of starvation; all employment, I may say, has ceased, the able-bodied are going to England in great numbers to look for employment, and leaving their families in the greatest destitution; there is fresh difficulty in discharging paupers from the workhouse who have been in the house for any length of time; they have no homes to go to, the moment they come in, their cabins are levelled by the landlords. There has been a great many evictions in this Union lately. ….it is astonishing, everywhere I go through the Union, to see how fast the cabins are disappearing." [638]

Many Irish orphans were housed in workhouses and in 1848 an effort to clear these saw 229 female Irish orphans drawn from some eight different workhouses in the northern counties of Ireland sent to Australia on board the ship 'Digby' under the Earl Grey Famine Orphan Scheme 1848-1850. [639]

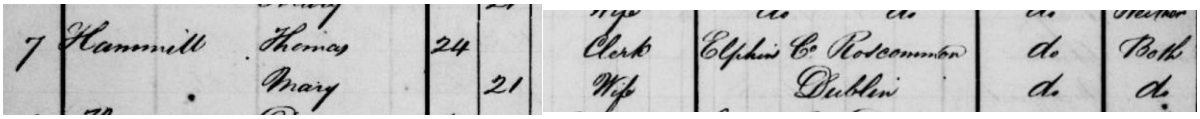
There may have been a connection between Thomas Hamill and the Orphan Scheme, perhaps Thomas was a guardian for the girls as he and his young wife Mary Cahill also had passage on the 'Digby'.

Mary Cahill was a Dublin girl born in 1828. Apart from her being a Catholic, nothing is known of her early life. We do know that she and Thomas Hamill married in 1848 and that Mary Cahill was pregnant when they traveled to England that year to join the departing 'Digby' at Plymouth. They sailed along with 10 other couples and the 229 female Irish orphans for Sydney Australia on the 16th December 1848.

According to an account of the 'Digby' by Kaye Schofield AO, the voyage was not all plain sailing. There were six cases of typhus fever, and two orphans died from it. One orphan attempted to throw herself off the side of the ship. Some were punished for misdemeanors with bread and water diets or hard labour with holistones and one was punished by cropping her hair very short. Three orphan girls were presented with a prayer book each and the clothes of one of the dead orphans as a reward for good conduct during the time they were hospital assistants and for great kindness to the sick. About one month into the voyage, the girls were often hungry; anecdotes from the voyage say some girls would slip down to the cook's galley to steal the plums out of the pudding. The Surgeon Superintendent began to observe symptoms of scurvy for which he could not account. After investigation, he found that the ship's captain was defrauding the emigrants of a large portion of their rations and providing poor quality rations contrary to the Government Regulations. [640]

After much on-board disputation between the Captain and Surgeon Superintendent, the rations were improved and the journey proceeded with passable equanimity. The Immigration Board investigation in Sydney, which followed complaints by the Surgeon Superintendent, recommended the ship's captain and officers should not receive their gratuity and that the captain should never be employed on an emigrant ship again. [641]

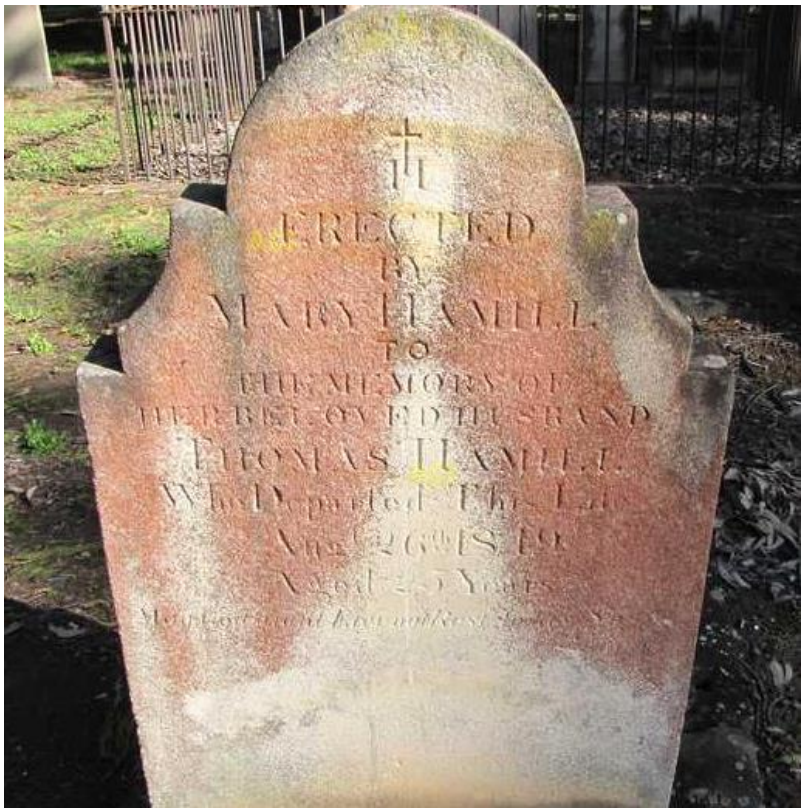
Following 110 days at sea, the 'Digby' arrived in Sydney on the 4th April 1849. We can see the Hamills listed in the ships manifest, Thomas aged 24 and Mary aged 21.



The 'Digby' arrived 4th April 1849 with passengers Thomas and Mary Hamill

The Orphan girls from the 'Digby' would have been provided temporary lodgings at the Immigration Depot at Hyde Park Barracks; before being assigned. We don't know how long Thomas and Mary Hamill spent in Sydney as by August 1849 they were located in Parramatta.

Four and a half months after arriving in Australia Thomas Hamill died on the 26th Aug 1849; leaving his young bride Mary Cahill, now four months pregnant, to fend for herself. Thomas Hamill was buried at St Patrick's Catholic cemetery in Parramatta with a substantial head stone.



Grave of Thomas Hamill died in 1849 at St Patrick's cemetery Parramatta (Australian Cemeteries Index)

The inscription reads:

"Erected by Mary Hamill to the memory of her beloved husband Thomas Hamill who departed this life Aug 26 1849 aged 25 years"

I've found no evidence of what Mary Cahill did or where she was living after her husband Thomas Hamill died. But within six months of his death, she gave birth to a baby daughter she named Mary Hamill (our ancestor).

Mary Hamill was born on the 2nd Feb 1850; she was our ancestor and was baptised a Catholic at St Patrick's church Parramatta on the 7th February 1850 by Fr. P. Hallinan.

On her Baptismal record Mary's father was named as Thomas Hamill, and mother Mary Cahill.

BAPTISMS

Number	1532 Vol: 145
CHILD	
Christian name	Mary
When born	2 FEB 1850
Date of ceremony	7 FEB 1850
Where ceremony performed	Solemnized in the Parish of St Patrick in the County of Cumberland NSW in the year 1850
Where registered	Not Stated
PARENTS	
Father	Thomas HAMILL
Mother	Mary CAHILL
Abode	Parramatta
Quality or profession	Not Stated
Sponsors	Mary Teresa MULHOLLAND
By whom the ceremony was performed	P HALLINAN Roman Catholic

Before accepting copies, sight unaltered original. The original has a coloured background.

REGISTRY OF BIRTHS
DEATHS AND MARRIAGES

SYDNEY **21 October 2022**

I hereby certify that this is a true copy of particulars recorded in a Register in the State of New South Wales, in the Commonwealth of Australia

Registrar

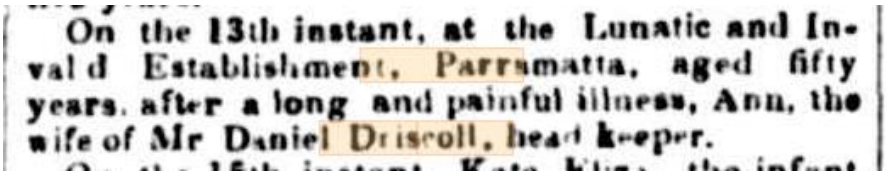
Baptism record of my great great grand mother Mary Hamill, born 2nd February 1850 at Parramatta, NSW

In February 1852 Mary Cahill now aged 25, married 46-year-old Daniel Driscoll at St Patrick's Catholic church Parramatta.

Marriages Search Results

	Registration Number	Groom's Family Name	Groom's Given Name(s)	Bride's Family Name(s)	Bride's Given Name(s)	District
☐	228/1852 V185222898	DRISCOLL	DANIEL	HAMILL	MARY	LH

It is unclear as to Daniel Driscoll's origins, but we know he had only been a widower for a few weeks before marrying Mary Hamill.

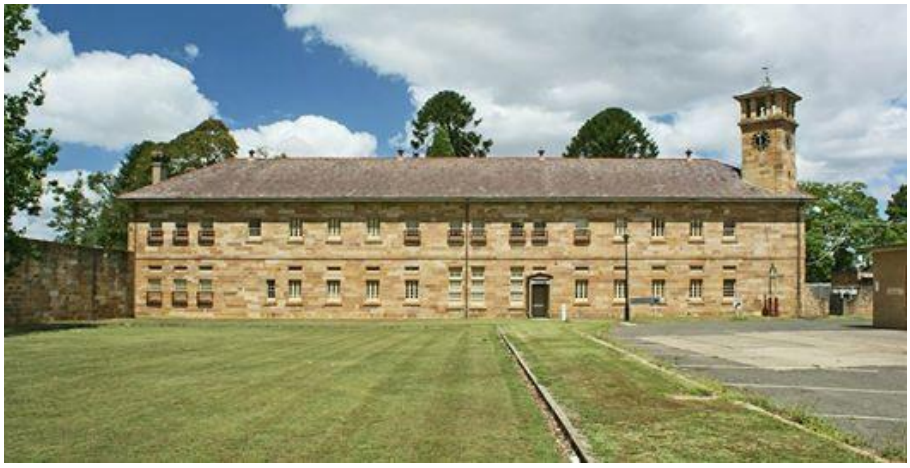


On the 13th instant, at the Lunatic and Invalid Establishment, Parramatta, aged fifty years, after a long and painful illness, Ann, the wife of Mr Daniel Driscoll, head keeper.

Death of Daniel Driscoll's wife Ann Driscoll (b. a. 1802) Sat 17th Jan 1852 Bell's Life

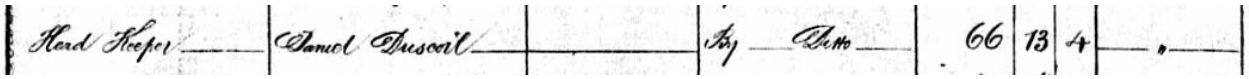
Daniel Driscoll was employed at the Parramatta Lunatic Asylum as 'Head Keeper'. Located in Fleet Street on the northern side of the Parramatta river, the Lunatic Asylum opened in March 1848 on land previously occupied by the convict Female Factory.

Convict transportation became less essential after the British Home Secretary, Sir Robert Peel, revised the criminal code in 1825, [642] this eventually led to the cessation of transportation in 1840, after which this institutional complex was repurposed as a Benevolent Asylum for sick and destitute convict women, then later as an Asylum for Lunatic and Invalid convicts; and in 1848 as a public asylum. [643] The sandstone was obtained from a quarry located in Fleet St Parramatta.



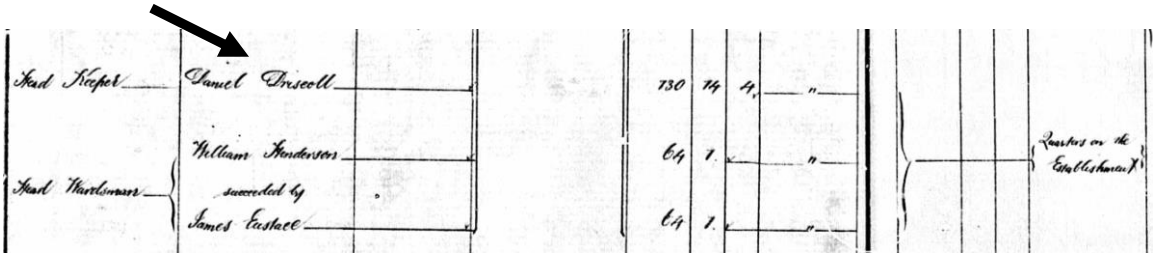
Parramatta Lunatic Asylum – repurposed from the convict Female Factory in 1848

Daniel Driscoll appears in the list of Asylum employees for 1854. That year he was earning what was a very good wage for the day of £66.13.4 pa.



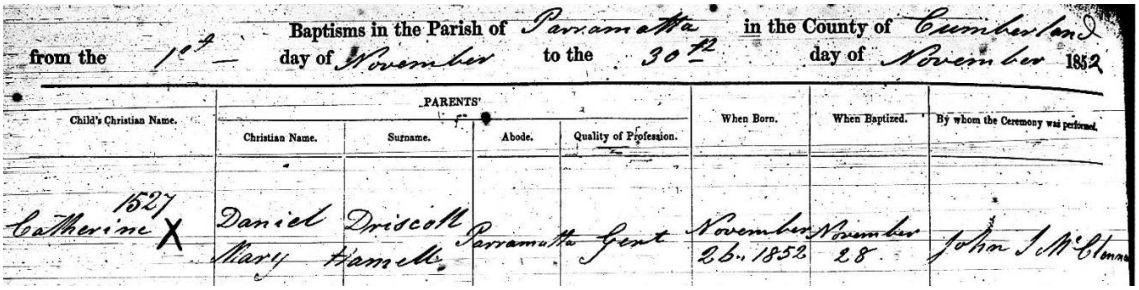
Daniel Driscoll, Head Keeper at the Parramatta Lunatic Asylum on the list of employees 1854

In 1856 Daniel Driscoll again appears on the list of Asylum employees. That year he was earning an exceptional wage of £133.74.4 pa. and is listed as having free "quarters on the premises."



List of Asylum employees for 1856. Arrow pointing to Daniel Driscoll "Head Keeper"

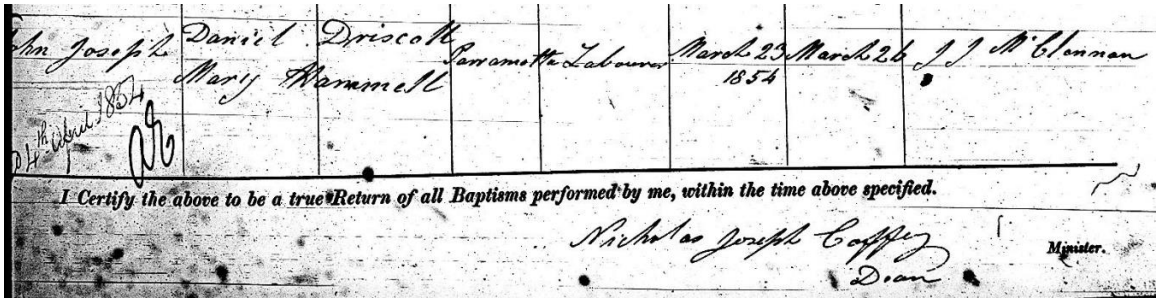
Mary and Daniel Driscoll had their first child Catherine, born 26th November 1852. She was baptised a Catholic on the 28th November 1852 at St Patrick's Catholic church Parramatta.


Baptisms in the Parish of Parramatta in the County of Cumberland
from the 1st day of November to the 30th day of November 1852

Child's Christian Name.	PARENTS' Christian Name.	Surname.	Abode.	Quality of Profession.	When Born.	When Baptized.	By whom the Ceremony was performed.
1527 Catherine	Daniel	Driscoll	Parramatta	Gent	November 26. 1852	November 28	John J. McClennan
	Mary	Hamell					

Catherine Driscoll born 26th November 1852

Mary and Daniel Driscoll had a second child John Joseph, born on the 23rd March 1854. He was baptised on the 26th March at St Patrick's Catholic church Parramatta.


John Joseph Daniel Driscoll Parramatta Labourer March 23 1854 March 26 J J McClennan
Mary Hamell
I Certify the above to be a true Return of all Baptisms performed by me, within the time above specified.
Nicholas Joseph Coffey Minister.

John Joseph Driscoll born 23rd March 1854

Life appears to have been going well for the Driscolls, but things came off the tracks following the birth of John Joseph Driscoll. His mother (and our ancestor) Mary Driscoll (née Hamill) died from birth complications on the 31st March 1854, eight days after John Joseph Driscoll's birth.

Mary Cahill died in March 1854 under the name Mary Driscoll; leaving her daughter Mary Hamill now aged 4 years old in the care of Daniel Driscoll.

New South Wales

Births, Deaths and Marriages Registration Act 1995

BURIALS

Number	1540 Vol: 119
Name	Mary DRISCOLL
Abode	Parramatta
Age	26 Years Old
Quality or profession	Gent.
When died	Not stated
When buried	31 March 1854
Where ceremony performed	Parish of Parramatta, County of Cumberland
By whom the ceremony was performed	N.J. Coffey Roman Catholic Church

Before accepting copies, sight unaltered original. The original has a coloured background.

REGISTRY OF BIRTHS
DEATHS AND MARRIAGES

SYDNEY 21 July 2015

I hereby certify that this is a true copy of particulars recorded in a Register in the State of New South Wales, in the Commonwealth of Australia

Registrar

Mary Driscoll (née Cahill / Hamill) died 31st March 1854. Buried at St Patrick's Parramatta. Wife of Thomas Hamill, they had arrived in Sydney on the ship 'Digby' in 1849

Mary Driscoll's death left Daniel Driscoll with three children under 5 years to look after, Mary Hamill (our ancestor) aged 4, Catherine Driscoll aged 2 and new born John Joseph Driscoll.

I assume Daniel Driscoll was able to care for the children, and they lived in the quarters provided as part of his employment within the Parramatta Asylum. But three years later more tragedy struck as Daniel Driscoll, who had been suffering from Hepatitis for over a year, passed away on the Asylum grounds on the 26th August 1857.

According to his death certificate, Daniel was found by the Asylum Store Keeper, Edwin Statham.

NSW Registry of Births, Deaths and Marriages

Transcription requested by	**GRAHAM**	**LUM**	19-Mar-98

Registration Number	**3966**
Date of Death	**26 AUG 1857**
Place of Death	**PARRAMATTA**
Name	**DANIEL DRISCOLE**
Occupation	**MASTER ATTENDANT IN THE LUNATIC ASYLUM**
Sex	**MALE**
Age	**51**
Cause of Death	**HEPATITIS, HYDRATHORAX**
Duration	**12MTHS, 2MTHS**
Medical Attendant	**DR. GREENUP, 26 AUGUST**
Father	**UNKNOWN PARENTS**
Father's Occupation	
Mother - Maiden Name	
Informant	**E H STATHAM, STOREKEEPER, LUNATIC ASYLUM**
When Buried	
Where	**ST PATRICK'S CEMETERY, PARRAMATTA**
Undertaker	**NOT KNOWN**
Minister	
Religion	**-**
Witnesses	**E H STATHAM, FRANK BEDDICK**
Where born	**NOT KNOWN**
Time in Colony/State	
Place Married	**NOT KNOWN**
Age at Marriage	**NOT KNOWN**
Spouse	**NOT KNOWN**
Children of Marriage	
Other Comments	

Transcript of Daniel Driscoll's death 26th Aug 1857

Parramatta Catholic Orphan School 1844-1886

After Daniel Driscoll's death in 1857, there is a question mark over what happened to the three children in his care i.e. Mary Hamill (our ancestor) now aged 7 years, Catherine Driscoll aged 5 and John Joseph Driscoll aged 3.

We know from later records that Mary Hamill grew up using the name Mary Driscoll. So far attempts to track Catherine or John Joseph have been unsuccessful.

What is almost certain is that after Daniel Driscoll's death, the three young children (Mary, Catherine and John Joseph) would have been transferred to the Catholic Orphanage located in Fleet Street Parramatta; adjacent to the Lunatic Asylum.

Built on a two and half acre allotment adjoining the Lunatic Asylum penitentiary yard, the Roman Catholic Orphan School was the first government orphanage for Catholic children in Australia. Operating from 1844 to 1886, the Orphanage bridges the era in Australia's history from penal colony to free settlement.

Construction began in 1840 and completed in 1843. Prior to its establishment Catholic children were sent to the Protestant dominated Male Orphan School at Liverpool and a Female Orphan School at Rydalmere. [644]

Built from sandstone quarried from the other side of Fleet Street and roofed with slate shingles with separate outbuildings, the austere colonial Georgian barracks style structure of three storeys had a basement containing a dining room, masters kitchen and cellar; with the ground floor containing a school room, master's parlour and storeroom and the upper floors with dormitories, staff and servants quarters. A gatekeeper's cottage was built to the south of the main barracks in 1849, followed by a wash house and laundry in 1850.



Photo c. 1870 shows the main Parramatta Orphanage building in Fleet St (R) and gate house (L)



The main Catholic Orphanage building remains today in Fleet Street Parramatta, although modified over the intervening years

Children between the ages of 2 and 11 of Catholic parents were admitted to the Orphanage under the authority of the governor. If indeed our Mary Hamill resided at the Orphanage, she would have entered at age 7 and presumably left around 1861, at age 12. Perhaps she stayed on as an employee, unfortunately the early Orphanage records have not survived so there is little information to go on.

The next record we find for our Mary Hamill is on the 10th July 1869 when she was admitted to the Sydney Benevolent Asylum. Benevolent asylums, also known as destitute asylums or infirmaries for the destitute, were institutions established throughout the colonies of Australia in the 19th century to house destitute men; deserted, vagrant or homeless women and their children; and orphans not able to support themselves. This institution was located in Pitt Street Sydney, close to where todays George Street meets the Devonshire Street railway underpass tunnel. [645]



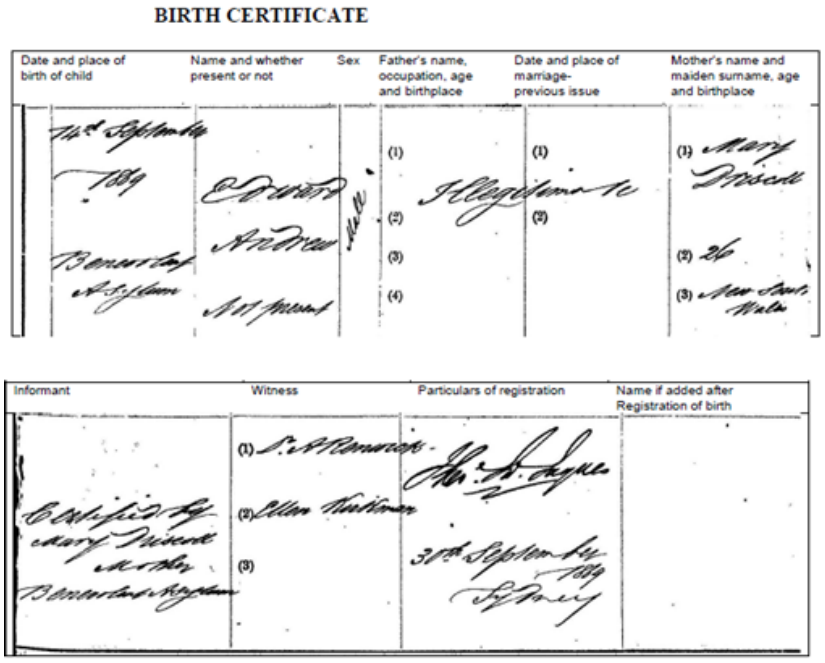
Sydney Benevolent Asylum which was located near today's Sydney's Central railway station



Map dated 1855. Arrow pointing to the Benevolent Asylum located near Sydney Central station

The Benevolent Asylum admission register for 10th July 1869 shows Mary Hamill was admitted under the name Mary Driscoll; and she was aged 19. There is no reason given for her admission, but records show that on the 14th September 1869 she gave birth to a son she named Edward Andrew Driscoll. [646]

This matches with Edward Andrew Driscoll's birth certificate showing the same names, location and date, however no father is listed on the birth certificate and Mary's age is shown as 26, so it seems that Mary was trying to conceal some details of Edward's birth in official records.



Birth certificate of Mary Hamill's first child, Edward Andrew Driscoll born 14th September 1869

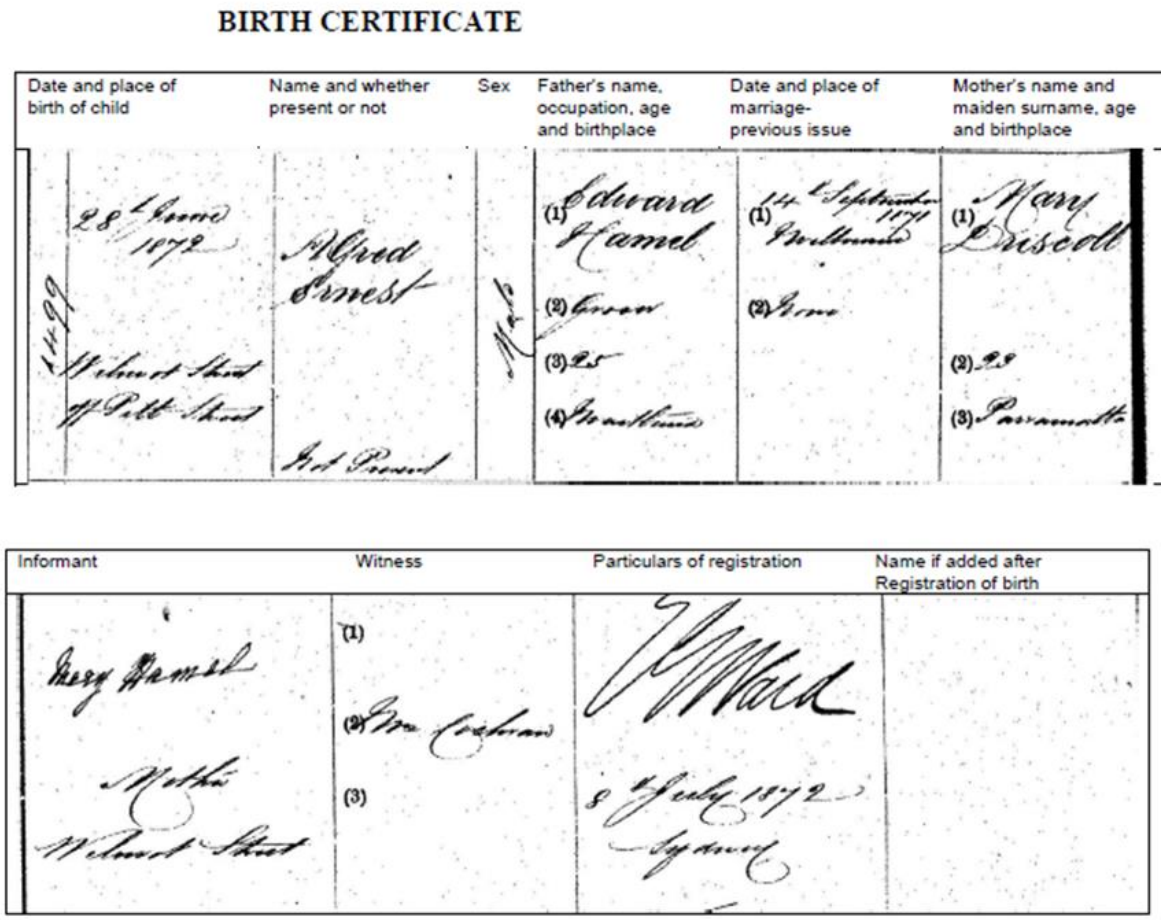
I have no details of Edward Andrew Driscoll's life, but I did find a death notice dated 19th Sep 1945 for a person of that name who lived at 50 Queen St Alexandria NSW, that could be him.

The next concrete sighting of her is on the 28th June 1872. Now aged 22, our Mary Hamill had a son she named Alfred Ernest Hamel.

Mary gave birth to Alfred at a property in Wilmot Street Sydney. This street exists today but the landscape looks vastly different to how it did in Mary's day. Wilmot Street is a short laneway located between Liverpool & Bathurst Streets, and runs between George & Pitt Streets Sydney.

Alfred's birth certificate reveals some interesting information. Firstly, we can see Mary using "Driscoll" as a surname, but she says she was married in Melbourne to an Edward Hamel (born in Maitland, NSW) on the 14th September 1871, hence Alfred is named Alfred Hamel.

Hamill was of course Mary's original birth name, so it seems she has concocted (or been advised to fabricate) this marriage in order to validate Alfred as legitimate; as expected no person named Edward Hamel from Maitland has been found. Mary used the name Hamill from this time on.



BIRTH CERTIFICATE

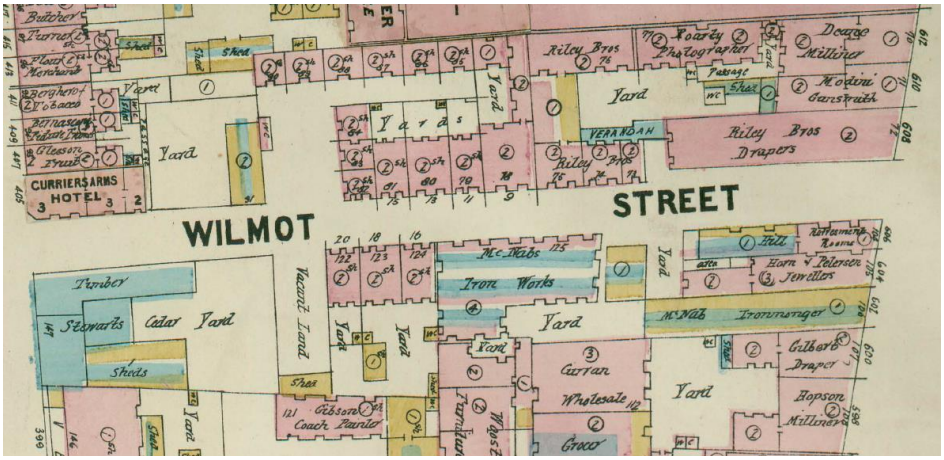
Date and place of birth of child	Name and whether present or not	Sex	Father's name, occupation, age and birthplace	Date and place of marriage- previous issue	Mother's name and maiden surname, age and birthplace
28th June 1872	Alfred Ernest	Male	(1) Edward Hamel (2) Groom (3) 25 (4) Maitland	(1) 14th September 1871 Melbourne (2) None	(1) Mary Driscoll (2) 22 (3) Paramatta

Informant	Witness	Particulars of registration	Name if added after Registration of birth
Mary Hamel Mother Wilmot Street	(1) (2) Mrs Cochran (3)	8th July 1872 Sydney	

Alfred Ernest Hamel, born in Wilmot St Sydney 28th June 1872
Note: Mary states her age was 23, but in June 1872 she was in fact aged 22.

We can be certain that we have the correct Mary Hamill (Hamel) in this instance as our family DNA match strongly with descendants of Alfred Ernest Hamel, including the Shaw and Burley families. [647]

The early life of Alfred Ernest Hamel is unknown, however in 1884 he is recorded being in Wagga where he married Sarah A Vincent. Alfred and Sarah had at least 6 children including a daughter Doris who married Augustus Burley in 1926. One of our close DNA matches is with with the descendants of Doris and Augustus Burley. [648]



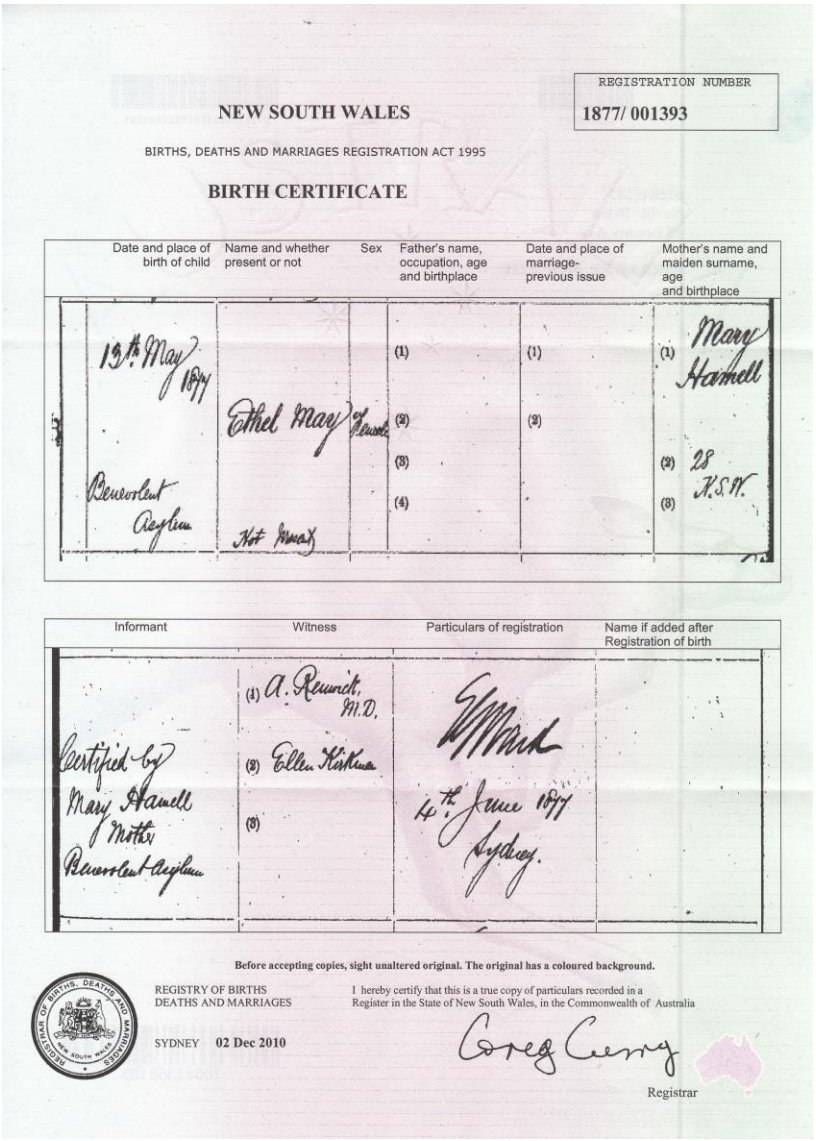
Map of Wilmot St Sydney; runs between George and Pitt Streets
This survey was produced by Surveyor "H Peroy Dove" in 1880



George Street Sydney, looking south towards Wilmot Street about 1880 [649]

The next we see of Mary Hamill is in 1877 when she is aged 27. By this time Mary had moved to Darlington (near Macdonaldtown) and was working for a Barrister named Pierce O'Keeffe and his wife Anna Conyngham, they lived at 16 Enmore Road Newtown. [650]

32-year-old Pierce O'Keeffe and Mary Hamill had a relationship which resulted in Mary giving birth to a daughter she named Ethel May Hammell (our ancestor) on the 13th May 1877.



REGISTRATION NUMBER
1877/ 001393

NEW SOUTH WALES

BIRTHS, DEATHS AND MARRIAGES REGISTRATION ACT 1995

BIRTH CERTIFICATE

Date and place of birth of child	Name and whether present or not	Sex	Father's name, occupation, age and birthplace	Date and place of marriage- previous issue	Mother's name and maiden surname, age and birthplace
13th May 1877 Benevolent Asylum	Ethel May Hamell Not known		(1) (2) (3) (4)	(1) (2)	(1) Mary Hamell (2) 28 N.S.W. (3)

Informant	Witness	Particulars of registration	Name if added after Registration of birth
Certified by Mary Hamell Mother Benevolent Asylum	(1) A. Renwick, M.D. (2) Ellen Kirkham (3)	4th June 1877 Sydney.	

Before accepting copies, sight unaltered original. The original has a coloured background.

REGISTRY OF BIRTHS DEATHS AND MARRIAGES

I hereby certify that this is a true copy of particulars recorded in a Register in the State of New South Wales, in the Commonwealth of Australia

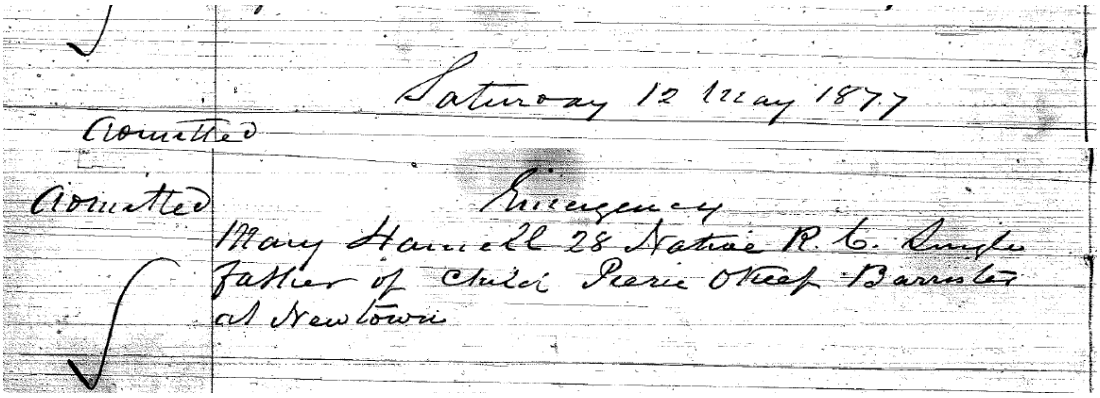
SYDNEY 02 Dec 2010

Registrar

Ethel May Hamell (later known as Elizabeth Gertrude Hammell) born 13th May 1877
(Note: Mary Hamill's age was actually 27, but is shown as 28 on Ethel's birth certificate)

Although Ethel May Hammell's birth certificate fails to name Pierce O'Keeffe as the father, during labour her mother Mary Hamill suffered complications and was once again admitted to the Sydney Benevolent Asylum. The admission register for the 12th May 1877 provides us with some useful information.

The Benevolent Asylum admission register describes Mary's condition as an "Emergency". Mary's details were recorded including Ethel's fathers name – "Pierce O'Keef Barrister of Newtown." Mary is described as "aged 28, Native (born in Australia), RC (Catholic) and Single." (Note: Mary's actual age in May 1877 was actually 27).


Saturday 12 May 1877
Admitted
Admitted
Emergency
Mary Hamill 28 Native R.C. Single
Father of child Pierce O'Keef Barrister
at Newtown

Sydney Benevolent Asylum admission register dated 12th May 1877 for Mary Hammell. Mary named "Pierce O'Keef Barrister of Newtown" as Ethel May Hammell's father. [651]

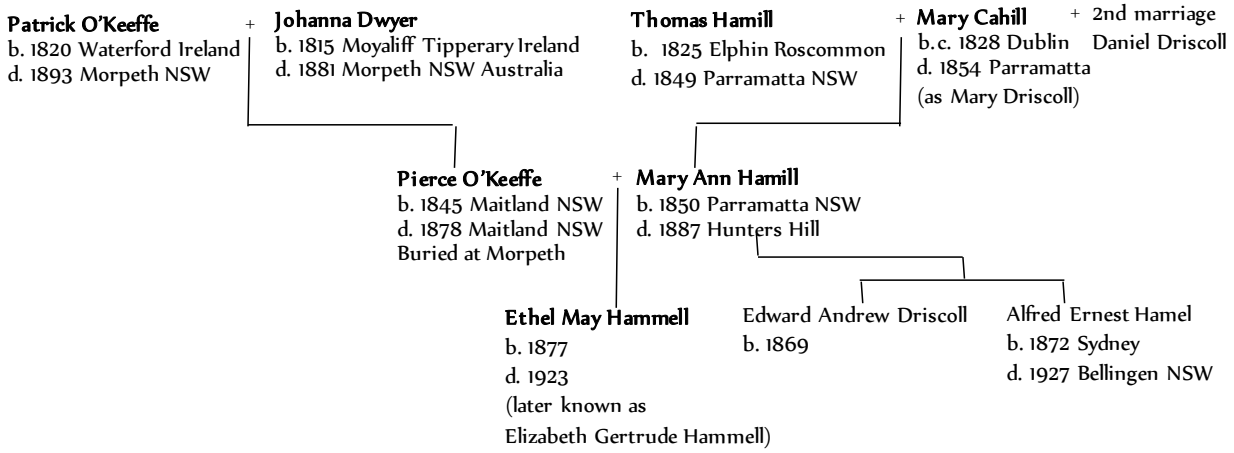


Chart showing Ethel May Hammell and her step brothers Edward and Alfred

Ethel May Hammell's father, Pierce O'Keeffe was born on 15th September 1845 at Morpeth NSW, a town on the Hunter River about half way between Maitland and Raymond Terrace. We can be sure we have the correct Pierce O'Keeffe as our DNA matches other descendants of these O'Keeffes.



Pierce O'Keeffe's Baptism in 1845 (Swan Reach is the old name for at Morpeth NSW) [652]

Pierce was educated at St Mary's East Maitland, then spent five years at Lyndhurst Collage after which he sailed for England and then to France and attended Douay Collage for a further five years before returning to NSW and attended Sydney University passing his bar exam in 1871 aged 26.

Pierce O'Keeffe practiced at Courts in NSW but also travelled to VIC. Pierce had political aspirations and contested the seat of Morpeth at the 1874 election coming 2nd.

Morpeth - 1874-5 (Roll: 769)		
Nominations: Wednesday, 16 December 1874, Polling: Thursday, 17 December 1874		
Candidate	**Votes**	**Votes %**
Bellamy, William	0	0.00
McRae, Myles	50	9.49
O'Keeffe, Pierce	177	33.59
Wisdom, Robert **(Elected)**	300	56.93
Formal Votes	527	
Informal Votes	24	4.36
Total Votes / Turnout	551	71.65
Persons Voting / Turnout	551	71.65
Notes: Sitting MP James Campbell did not re-contest, see Maitland Mercury 5 December, p.1 col.4.		
Source: Maitland Mercury, nominations 17 December 1874, p.2 col.3-5, results 19 December 1874, p.2 col.7. Similar results with O'Keeffe on 175 votes published SMH 18 December 1874, p.7 col.2. Statistical Register reported 551 persons voting, which probably included the reported informal votes.		

Pierce O'Keeffe married Anna Conyngham, the grand daughter of a significant British war hero on 9th June 1872 at Hunters Hill, NSW. Anna Conyngham's mother (Mary Greenwood) was born in Jamaica and arrived in NSW in 1844. Pierce & Anna lived at 16 Enmore Rd Newtown which was demolished with the railway widening in 1892.



Map of Newtown in the 1880s. Arrow showing approx. location of O'Keeffe's house.
(Notice the old location of the railway station, later moved closer to Sydney)

This photo below is of the first Newtown railway station taken about 1880. The house the O'Keeffe's lived in would have been part of the row of buildings that can be seen under the pedestrian overpass, at the far end of the station.

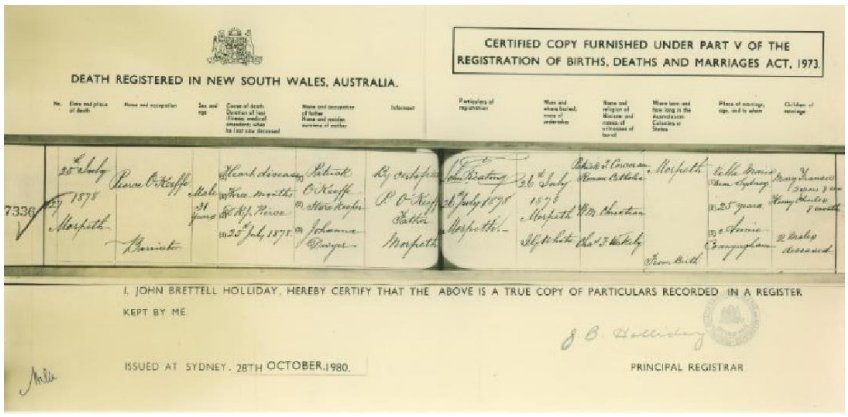


Newtown railway station in 1880 before it was moved and the railway line widened in 1892.

In the 1870s Newtown was a trendy place and Pierce & Anna O'Keeffe were regarded as Sydney Socialites. The story handed down is that the birth of Ethel May Hamell in 1877 was a major embarrassment for the O'Keeffe's. [653]

It seems that Pierce & Anna O'Keeffe took steps to conceal the affair between Pierce and Mary Hamill, and in doing so coerced Mary to give up her child to a childless couple, Robert and Sarah Ellis, living at Broughton Creek in the Shoalhaven river area of southern NSW. The stories of Ethel and Mary Hamill's lives continue in a later section.

This section of our story has a tragic ending as Pierce O'Keeffe died at Morpeth NSW on the 25th July 1878 of heart problems, probably due to contracting Rheumatic fever during the 1850s epidemic. I'm yet to find a death notice placed in the press by Anna or her family, and I've found no other documents linking Pierce & Anna from 1877 up until Pierce's probate some years later.


CERTIFIED COPY FURNISHED UNDER PART V OF THE REGISTRATION OF BIRTHS, DEATHS AND MARRIAGES ACT, 1973.

DEATH REGISTERED IN NEW SOUTH WALES, AUSTRALIA.

I, JOHN BRETTELL HOLLIDAY, HEREBY CERTIFY THAT THE ABOVE IS A TRUE COPY OF PARTICULARS RECORDED IN A REGISTER KEPT BY ME.

ISSUED AT SYDNEY, 28TH OCTOBER, 1980.

PRINCIPAL REGISTRAR

Pierce O'Keeffe's death certificate dated 25th July 1878.

The Late Mr. Pierce O'Keeffe.

The following particulars of the career of the late Mr. Pierce O'Keeffe have been supplied to us by his friends:—

Mr. Pierce O'Keeffe left the primary schools at an early age for St. Mary's College, Lyndhurst, Sydney, having previously been well grounded in the classics by Mr. W. Blake, the present headmaster of St. Mary's school, West Maitland. He entered Lyndhurst College about 1857, and after spending some five years as a successful student, he sailed for England in order to complete his education at the famous English College of Douay, in the north of France. He was received, on landing in London, by the Very Rev. Abbot Gregory, formerly Vicar-General of New South Wales, was taken over to France, and placed at Douay. He remained at Douay for five years, at the end of which time he was obliged to leave Europe in consequence of ill-health, produced by the action of the extreme cold on a delicate frame and which laid the ground work of heart disease, which increased with years, and at length carried him off. Whilst at Douay, Mr. O'Keeffe spent a portion of each year travelling through the different countries of Europe, both for health and information, in the company and under the care of Father Francis Barry, O.S.B., now of Victoria, but then a young priest in Douay. During his sojourn at Douay Mr. O'Keeffe was visited by many friends, lay and clerical, who went to Europe for a trip: and on several occasions he went over to England with these friends and spent some enjoyable time there.

Under the advice of eminent French and English doctors, Mr. O'Keeffe returned to Australia in 1867, and after recruiting his health, he went to reside at St. John's College, within the University of Sydney, and there prepared for the scholastic examination necessary for admission to the Bar. After this examination, he studied law under the Hon. Edward Butler, Q.C., and was called to the Bar of New South Wales in December, 1871. He enjoyed a fair share of practice, but his energy was destroyed by the ravages of heart disease, and he was often obliged to forego practice in order to attend to his health. He was entrusted by Government with several commissions to prosecute, and only just returned from the Albury Assizes (where he had given great satisfaction to the law officers in the fulfilment of his duties as Crown Prosecutor), when very serious symptoms of heart disease set in. After the Albury Assizes, he spent some weeks in Victoria with his old college chums from Douay, many of whom reside in that colony, and they entertained him at a champagne lunch at Menzies' Hotel, where a great number of the Bar of Victoria were invited to meet him.

Shortly after his return serious illness came on, and though attended by Drs. Bowker, Fortescue, Clune, and Carroll, they failed to stay the enlargement of the heart, from which he was suffering; and he came up to his father's, when all hope was gone, wishing to breathe his last in the home of his infancy, which he did quietly on the 25th June last, being assiduously visited by Dr. R. J. Pierce, the Bishop of Maitland, and nearly all the priests of the diocese, and a host of friends up to the day of his death. He leaves a widow and two children. Mr. Pierce O'Keeffe was the second son of Mr. Patrick O'Keeffe, of Morpeth, all of whose sons took to the profession of the law.

We may add that we have had the opportunity of reading letters of condolence, from gentlemen who knew the late Mr. O'Keeffe, when a student at Douay, and later as a barrister. They concur in referring to him as a genial, honourable, and amiable man, and use terms of the warmest affection and regret in speaking of him.

This Obituary of Pierce O'Keeffe was placed in the newspaper by his legal friends on the 7th Sep 1878



Pierce O'Keeffe's has a substantial monument at Morpeth cemetery NSW (2016)

The Hunter River New Steamship Navigation Company est. 1852

In 1852 the O'Keeffe's invested in a business venture involving marine transport between Sydney, Newcastle and ports along the Hunter River in NSW such as Raymond Terrace, Morpeth and Paterson. Pierce's father Patrick O'Keeffe (our GGG Grandfather) was a foundation investor and Director in the company trading as the "Hunter River New Steam Navigation Company".

HUNTER RIVER NEW STEAM NAVIGATION COMPANY.
INCORPORATED BY ACT OF COUNCIL, 1852.
CAPITAL PAID-UP - - 55,000 POUNDS.

DIRECTORS:
B. LEE, JUN., ESQ., M. L. A., CHAIRMAN
P. O'KEEFFE, ESQ. JAMES SCROGGIE, ESQ.
J. CAMPBELL, ESQ., M. L. A. J. B. R. ROBERTSON, ESQ., J. P.
G. VINDIN, ESQ., J. P.
MANAGER – F. J. THOMAS SECRETARY – J. W. LEE
BANKERS – THE COMMERCIAL BANKING COMPANY.

AGENTS:
MORPETH – MR. J. W. LEE. NEWCASTLE – MR. H. E. HOPKINSON
RAYMOND TERRACE – MR. H. D. PORTUS. MILLER'S FOREST – MR. W. MARTIN
CLARENCE TOWN – MR. W. BROADRICK. PATERSON – MR. W. CORNER

STEAMSHIPS.
"MAITLAND" 880 TONS BURTHEN, 250 N. H. P. – G. BUDD, COMMANDER
"MORPETH" 550 TONS BURTHEN, 185 N. H. P. – W. SUMMERBELL, COMMANDER
CITY OF NEWCASTLE", 393 TONS BURTHEN, 150 N. H. P. – J. CRAIGIE, COMMANDER

STEAM DROGHER.
"ANNA MARIA" 84 TONS BURTHEN, 25 N. H. P.

FARES.
BETWEEN SYDNEY AND MORPETH, EITHER WAY, SALOON .. .. 1 POUND
.. ..
.. FORE CABIN .. .. 12s. 6d.
BETWEEN SYDNEY AND NEWCASTLE, EITHER WAY, SALOON .. .. 17s. 6d.
.. ..
.. FORE CABIN .. .. 10s. 6d.
RETURN TICKETS AT A FARE AND A HALF.
AN UNIFORM RATE, 2s. 6d. SALOON, AND 1s. 6d. STEERAGE, FOR ALL RIVER PASSAGES.
FOR HOURS AND DAYS OF STARTING, SEE DAILY PAPERS.

FREIGHTS TO AND FROM THE HUNTER
ACCORDING TO PRINTED LISTS OF FREIGHTS, WHICH WILL BE FORWARDED POST FREE ON
APPLICATION TO THE MANAGER OR AGENTS.
STEAMERS CALL AT NEWCASTLE, HEXHAM, RAYMOND TERRACE, CLARENCE TOWN, MILLER'S
FOREST, MORPETH, PATERSON, AND BOLWARRA.
STEAMERS TO CLARENCE TOWN AND THE PATERSON ONCE A FORTNIGHT.

BY ORDER OF THE BOARD, F. J. THOMAS, MANAGER.
OFFICES: FOOT OF MARKET STREET, SYDNEY, AND AT SWAN STREET, MORPETH.
****

The seed capital for the Hunter Steamship Navigation Company was £55,000. To facilitate operations the company purchased three new vessels for the service, namely the Morpeth, Williams and Paterson. The Fenella was purchased 2nd hand and became another addition to the fledgling fleet. The company ran 34 different vessels during its 100 years of operation. [654]

In the mid 1800s Newcastle was only a sparsely populated sea port, and the company had their head office in the more substantial township of Morpeth.



View of Morpeth today, looking down stream towards Newcastle.
The steamship wharfs were on the far side of the bridge.

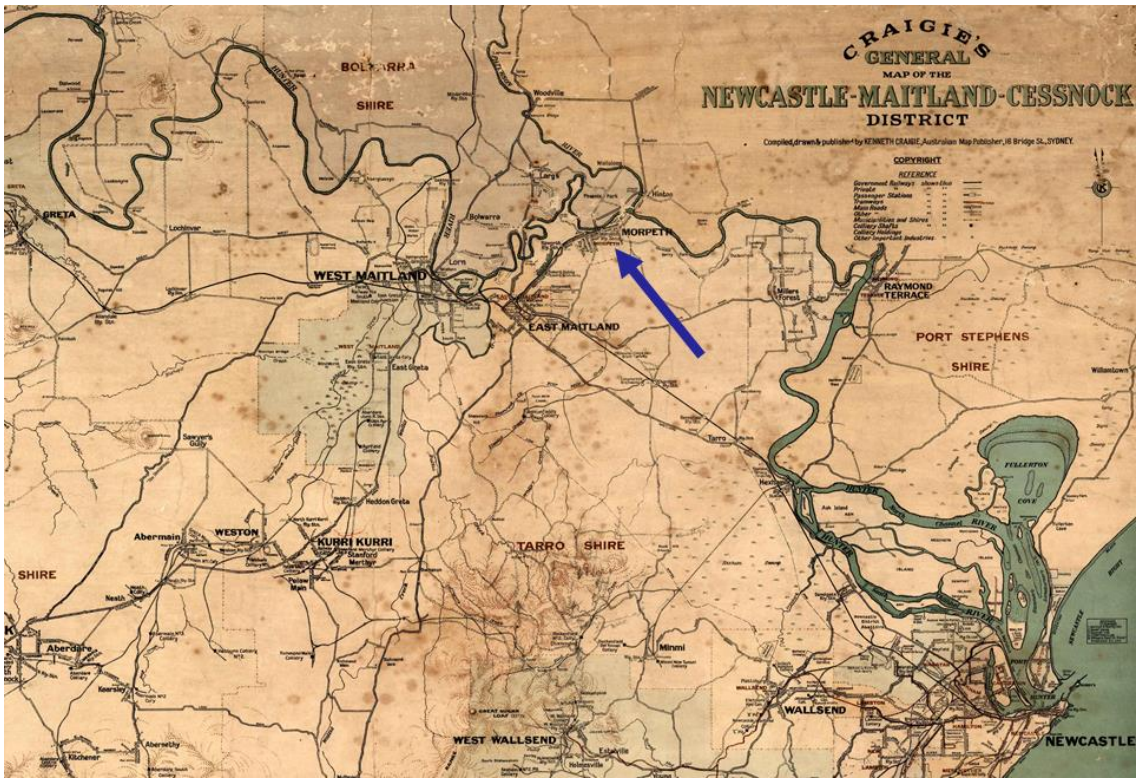
Morpeth lies at the head of navigation on the Hunter river. Governor Lachlan Macquarie travelled up the Hunter in 1818 and disembarked there, but the town was not laid out until 1821. The old road to Port Macquarie started here and passengers would travel up from Sydney by steamer, disembark at Morpeth, and then travel overland across the Bulga Mountains to reach Port. [655]

Coal for the steamboats was obtained from the nearby Four-Mile Creek mine. In the 1850s gold was discovered about three kilometres west of Uralla at 'Rocky River' starting a gold rush. Morpeth was the starting point for travel into northern NSW and all the supplies for the inland stations and gold fields were taken in bullock drays from its busy wharves. [656]

In the return direction wool, lucerne and other crops were carted to Morpeth, then taken via steamship down the Hunter river, passing the heads at Newcastle, then by ocean to Sydney. Its key role in transportation made Morpeth for a time the most important town in NSW outside Sydney.

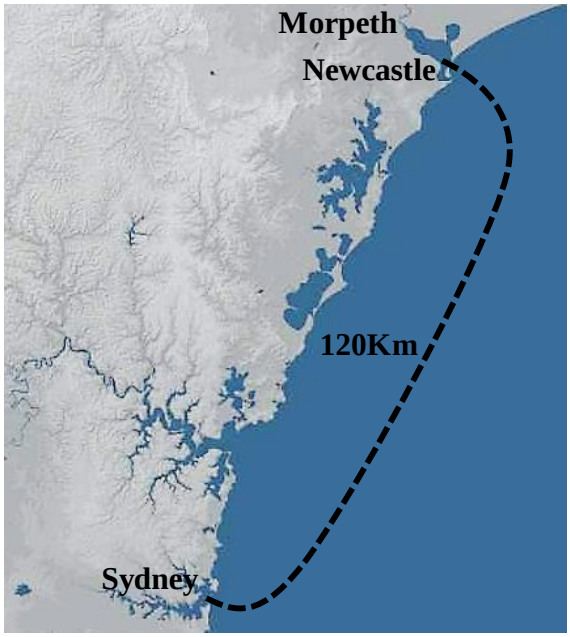
In 1864 a railway was opened that ran from Morpeth to East Maitland; connecting with the new north coast line. The Sydney to Newcastle railway didn't open until 1889 when the bridge across the Hawkesbury river was opened, and so the Hunter Steamship Company operated during a period when maritime transport between Sydney and the Hunter Valley ran supreme.

The river traffic thrived for many years and in 1892 a merger with the 'Newcastle Steamship Company' saw its head office move to Newcastle.



Hunter river region map, showing the sea port of Newcastle, the arrow points to Morpeth.

In the days before we had petrol cars & trucks to move people and goods around, Sydney along with everywhere else relied on horse-driven vehicles consequently, the road systems were no where near as developed as they are today. This was even more so in regions like the Hunter river where often the most reliable mode of transport was via the river systems. [657]



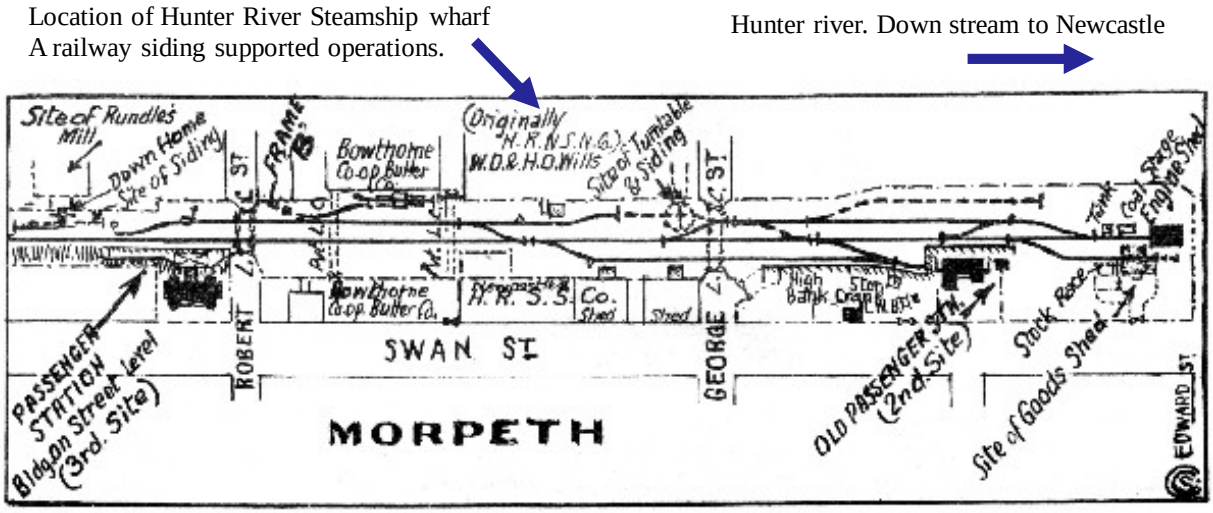
Map showing the sea route from Sydney to Morpeth on the Hunter River.

The steam paddle ships of the day took about 6 hours to make the journey from Sydney to Newcastle

At Morpeth the company built a series of wharfs on the Hunter river and a number of warehouses in Swan Street. Rail sidings were installed next to the steamship warehouses facilitating the transfer of goods between river & rail. A platform was opened in 1870 for passengers transferring too and from the steam ships. [658]



The steamship 'Namoi' berthed at the Morpeth wharf on the Hunter river [659]



Map of the rail sidings and shipping infrastructure at Morpeth

One of the Hunter regions cash crops was lucerne from which hay is produced. Lucerne hay is a very common variety of hay that is used by cattle and horses across Australia. Back in the 1800s Sydney's transport system ran on hay and the steam boats transported large quantities to Sydney where it was auctioned off daily at the 'Hay Market' located between Darling Harbour and Central station. That area today still has markets and retains the same name. [660]



Swan Street Morpeth c. 1890



Swan Street, Morpeth. Many of the towns historic buildings remain today. (2016)

HUNTER RIVER NEW STEAM NAVIGATION COMPANY.

[FROM OUR CORRESPONDENT.]

THE annual general meeting of the proprietors in the above Company was held at the office, Morpeth, on Tuesday afternoon, for the purpose of receiving the report of the directors, and statement of accounts for the half-year ended 31st July, 1860; of electing three directors, in the place of Mr. J. Borthwick, resigned, Messrs. Patrick O'Keeffe and Samuel Cohen, who retire by rotation, but are eligible for re-election; of declaring a dividend, and for such other business as may be brought before the meeting. There were about thirty gentlemen present. The Chairman of the Company (Mr. J. A. Portus) occupied the chair, and opened the business by reading the advertisement convening the meeting. He then read the following

Annual report of the Directors of the H. R. S. N. Company,

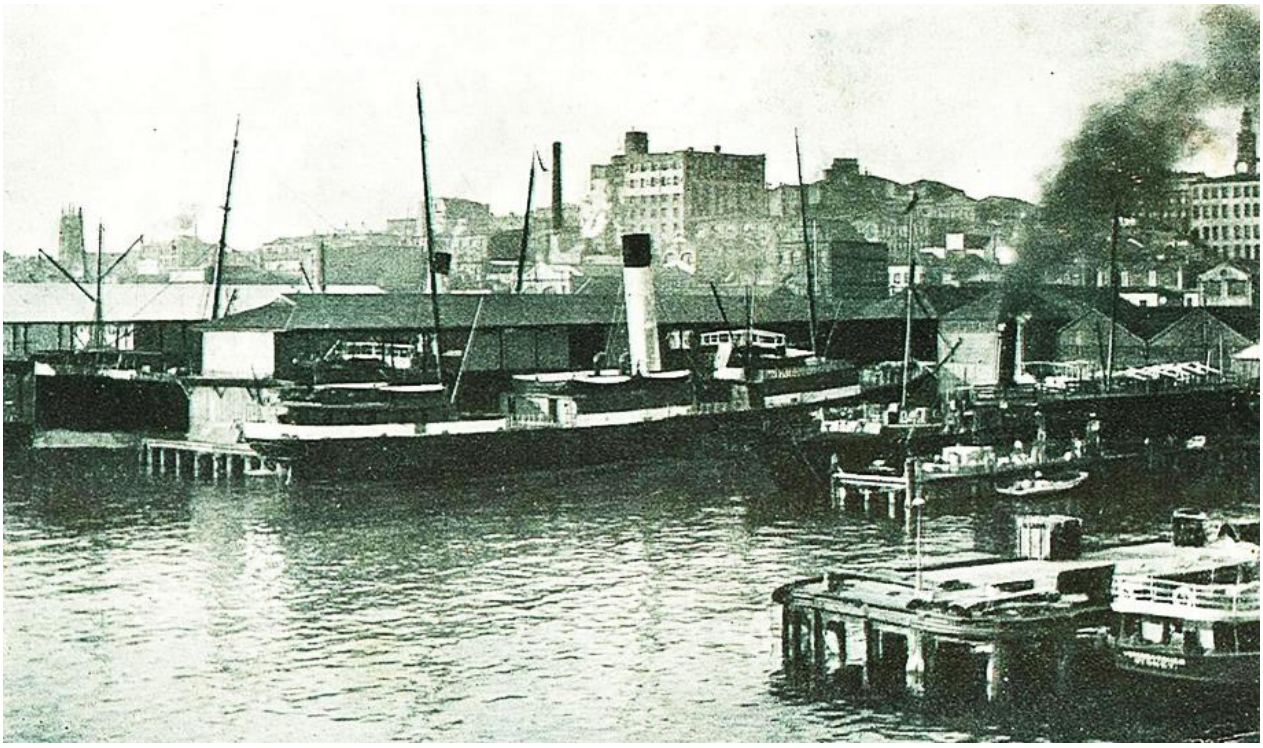
Patrick O'Keeffe is mentioned as a board member SMH Fri 31st Aug 1860 P.5

The steamship company's base and wharf in Sydney was located at the bottom end of Market Street on Darling Harbour. The development of Darling Harbour dates from 1821, and within a few years it was alive with the hustle and bustle of small wharves for ferries, colliers, cargo ships, passenger steamers, tugs and tall sailing ships.

The wharves were built to bring commodities into the city and the harbour was a major port, sending wool and wheat to overseas markets, as well as goods in all directions.



Above, view over-looking Sydney's Darling Harbour. Looking east (towards the city) c. 1880. The wharf used by the Hunter Steamship Company was the 4th along to the left from the opening-bridge known as 'Pyrmont Bridge'.



A Hunter River steamship moored at their Sydney Market Street wharf. [661]

Wreck of the steamship 'Maitland' 1898

The SS Maitland was built for the Hunter River Steamship company in 1870. For nearly thirty years she plied the Sydney – Newcastle ocean route as well as the ports along the Hunter river.

Her final journey was on the 6th May 1898 when she left Sydney with 63 passengers and crew at midnight for the 6-hour run to Newcastle under the command of Captain Skinner. In the face of a tremendous gale, the worst seen in over 20 years, she was soon battling through enormous seas which caused considerable damage to her superstructure. The master and crew were not alarmed as she was considered to be seaworthy and had battled through many storms during her career.

Huge seas hit her just inside Sydney Heads, smashing her fanlights and extinguishing every light in the saloon. When well out to sea, she was damaged further, allowing water to sweep throughout and forcing the captain to jettison the deck cargo.

Further deck cargo of machinery broke loose creating holes near the paddle wheels. More water swept aboard, soaking the coal, the crew then burnt wood and kerosene in an attempt to maintain steam pressure. Captain Skinner turned to head back to Broken Bay but made little progress. The crew bailed for hours and the passengers were assembled in the saloon, issued with lifebelts and told that the ship might not remain afloat for very long.

She drifted helplessly until 5.45 a.m. when the Maitland swept on to rocks at Cape Three Points (Bouddi National Park), breaking in two between the funnels, her fore section being rolled over and over by the giant waves, drowning many of the steerage passengers in the forepart of the ship.

After several attempts a line was made fast to the shore, enabling most of the passengers and crew to reach safety through the icy waves by making a perilous crawl along the rope. In all twenty-seven people including the Captain lost their lives.

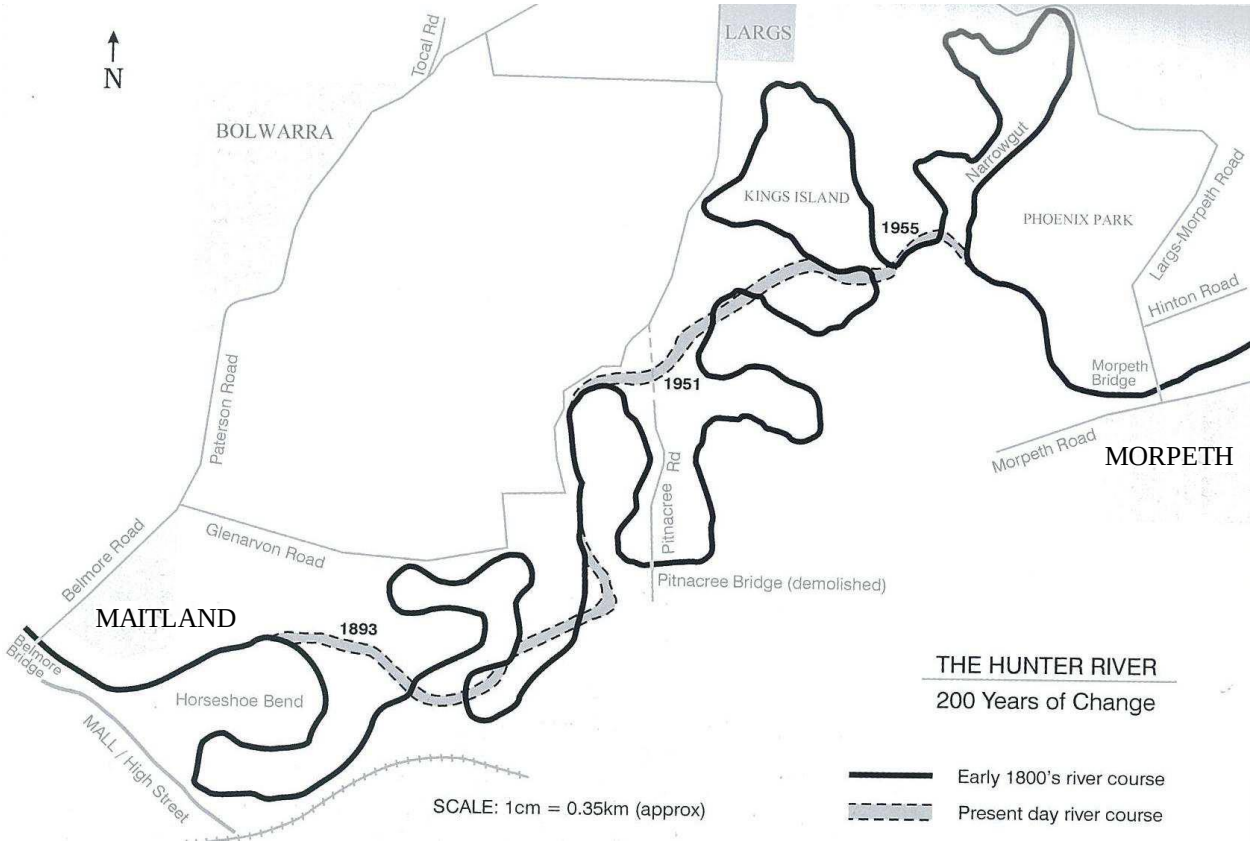
In 1957, two fishermen recovered her bell which is incorporated in a memorial close to what is now known as 'Maitland Bay'. Fourteen vessels were wrecked along the coast of New South Wales during that night (5th-6th May) in what is now known as the "Maitland Gale". [662]



Painting of the 'Maitland' built in 1870 [663]

Originally the natural course of the Hunter river above Morpeth meandered approx. 27Km before reaching Maitland. After a series of flood years, Maitland residents pushed for flood mitigation measures to allow flood water to drain quicker and reduce the severity of the inundations.

This resulted in a series of projects initiated from 1877 onwards to cut-out some of the loops in the Hunter river course. These cut-outs were expanded over time by erosion due to floods, the combination of which resulted in reducing the river distance between Morpeth and Maitland to under 10Km. [664]

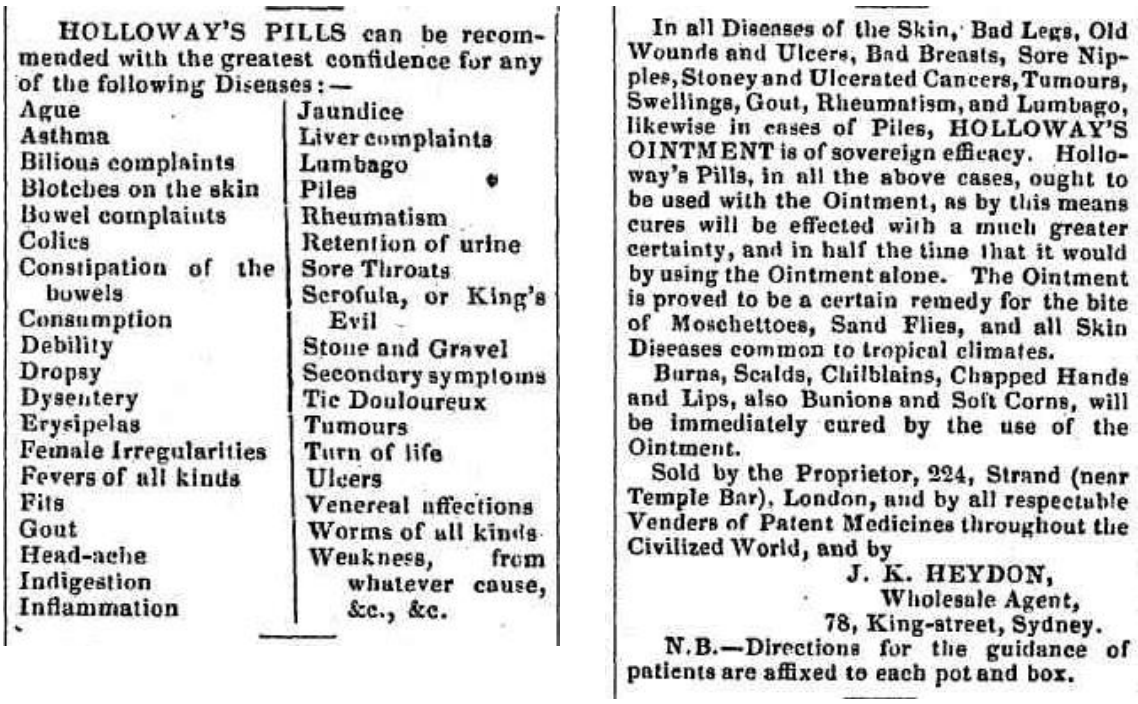


Map showing how the Hunter River between Morpeth and Maitland has changed course over time

As expected, due to the river being straightened and shortened, during floods Morpeth experienced faster and higher flows down the Hunter river than before the river course had been changed; resulting in shoaling of the lower Hunter river. By the 1950s the changes to the river flow as well as the expansion of road haulage now running on improved roads, took its toll and put an end to the river trade between Morpeth, Newcastle and the other ports on the Hunter river.

On the 1st August 1951, the company closed its Morpeth operations demolishing its large sheds and wharves on the river side of the line. The company's large iron sheds on the town side of the line still remain and have been leased to various firms from time to time. The company continued to operate the Newcastle – Sydney run until it too was wound up in 1956, after just over 100 years of operation.

In addition to being a director of the steam ship company, Patrick O'Keeffe also ran a general store in Swan Street Morpeth and was listed as an agent for Holloway's and sold their pills & ointments. Here are some Holloway ads from 1870s.



HOLLOWAY'S PILLS can be recommended with the greatest confidence for any of the following Diseases:—

Ague	Jaundice
Asthma	Liver complaints
Bilious complaints	Lumbago
Blotches on the skin	Piles
Bowel complaints	Rheumatism
Colics	Retention of urine
Constipation of the bowels	Sore Throats
Consumption	Scrofula, or King's Evil
Debility	Stone and Gravel
Dropsy	Secondary symptoms
Dysentery	Tic Douloureux
Erysipelas	Tumours
Female Irregularities	Turn of life
Fevers of all kinds	Ulcers
Fits	Venereal affections
Gout	Worms of all kinds
Head-ache	Weakness, from whatever cause, &c., &c.
Indigestion	
Inflammation	

In all Diseases of the Skin, Bad Legs, Old Wounds and Ulcers, Bad Breasts, Sore Nipples, Stoney and Ulcerated Cancers, Tumours, Swellings, Gout, Rheumatism, and Lumbago, likewise in cases of Piles, HOLLOWAY'S OINTMENT is of sovereign efficacy. Holloway's Pills, in all the above cases, ought to be used with the Ointment, as by this means cures will be effected with a much greater certainty, and in half the time that it would by using the Ointment alone. The Ointment is proved to be a certain remedy for the bite of Moschettoes, Sand Flies, and all Skin Diseases common to tropical climates.

Burns, Scalds, Chilblains, Chapped Hands and Lips, also Bunions and Soft Corns, will be immediately cured by the use of the Ointment.

Sold by the Proprietor, 224, Strand (near Temple Bar), London, and by all respectable Venders of Patent Medicines throughout the Civilized World, and by

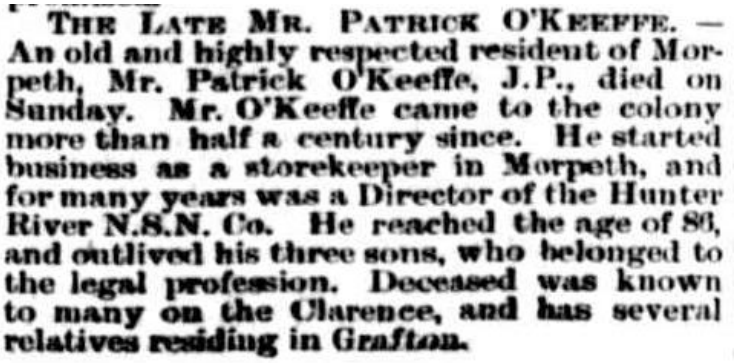
J. K. HEYDON,
Wholesale Agent,
78, King-street, Sydney.

N.B.—Directions for the guidance of patients are affixed to each pot and box.

Holloway newspaper ad from 1870

Patrick O'Keeffe was also a Justice of the Peace and his cousin Thomas O'Keeffe was Mayor of Glen Innes (1872-1874). [665] His son Pierce (our ancestor) was a Barrister who lived at Newtown. Pierce's brothers Thomas and Maurice were solicitors in Maitland and Sydney.

Patrick O'Keeffe died at Morpeth on the 26th March 1893 aged 73. His wife Johanna and sons Thomas, Pierce and Maurice had all pre-deceased him. Only his daughter Anastasia survived him, she remained living in Morpeth unmarried until her death in 1924.



THE LATE MR. PATRICK O'KEEFFE. — An old and highly respected resident of Morpeth, Mr. Patrick O'Keeffe, J.P., died on Sunday. Mr. O'Keeffe came to the colony more than half a century since. He started business as a storekeeper in Morpeth, and for many years was a Director of the Hunter River N.S.N. Co. He reached the age of 86, and outlived his three sons, who belonged to the legal profession. Deceased was known to many on the Clarence, and has several relatives residing in Grafton.

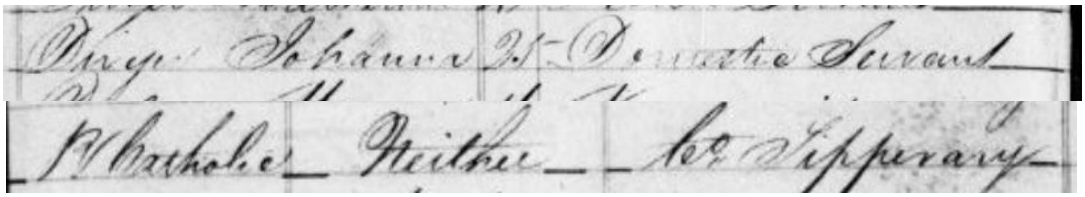
Obituary of Patrick O'Keeffe (my GGG Grand father)
Clarence and Richmond Examiner
Sat 1st Apr 1893 P. 4
(Note incorrect aged, should be 73)

Patrick O'Keeffe married Johanna Dwyer, daughter of Pierce Dwyer and Anastasia Mokeler on 18th October 1841 at East Maitland. Johanna was born about 1815 in Maliffe (or Moyaliff), Tipperary, Ireland, she arrived in Australia on the ship 'Jane Gifford' on the 13th February 1841 with her brother Patrick and his wife Bridget, another brother John and her sister Catherine.

The 'Jane Gifford' sailed from Plymouth on the 2nd October 1840. The vessel had a tonnage of 558 tons with the voyage taking 133 days without stopping at any ports. Johanna was categorised as a 'Bounty Migrant' and received £19 upon arrival in Australia.

Jane Gifford
(painting dated 1842)





Johanna Dwyer aged 25 arrived on the Jane Gifford 13th February 1841

The first of our O'Keeffe line to arrive in NSW was Pierce's grand father Thomas O'Keeffe. Thomas migrated to Australia with his wife, Catherine Hickey, from Waterford Ireland on the 25th February 1836 aboard the 'Roslin Castle'. They were unassisted migrants described as living in Waterford, Ireland. Pierce's father Patrick O'Keeffe was born in Waterford, Ireland in 1817 and travelled to NSW with his parents. [666]

In the course of this research it became obvious that the family line of Pierce O'Keeffe has recent Ashkenazi Jewish heritage; leaving specifically identifiable DNA traces in all of us. The exact origin of our Ashkenazi DNA is unknown, but my current theory is that it has been passed down from Pierce O'Keefe's mother Johanna Dwyer.

There are documented arrivals of Jews into Ireland from Europe during the late 1700s. Our DNA matches include many European relatives. [667] [668]

No photos of Pierce O'Keeffe have been found, but we do have one of his cousin John Joseph O'Keeffe born at Maitland in 1848 (and his wife Catherine), so we have an idea of his appearance, see below.



John Joseph O'Keeffe
(1st cousin of Pierce O'Keeffe)
and his wife Catherine

We have some half-cousins we know about through Pierce and Anna O'Keeffe's children including their twins Mary Frances and Pierce Patrick O'Keeffe born March 1873; Pierce Patrick died May 1873. They were followed by Oswald Joseph O'Keeffe born May 1874, he died Aug 1875. Henry Frances O'Keeffe was born in 1876 followed by Harry born 1877, he died at Newtown NSW in 1943.

Pierce and Anna's children have been hard to track down, but I did find a record of Mary Frances O'Keeffe, she married John Wellington Tarleton at the Granville Catholic church in 1904.

Wedding of Mary Frances O'Keeffe
The Catholic Press Thursday 24 Nov 1904

Wednesday, 9th inst., at Holy Trinity Church, Granville, by the Rev. Father E. Rohan, assisted by the Rev. Father Flavahan, Mary Frances, only daughter of the late Pierce O'Keeffe, B.L., was married to Dr. J. W. Tarleton, eldest surviving son of the late W. Wellington Tarleton, M.A., B.L. The wedding was a very quiet one, only the immediate relatives being present. The bride, who was charmingly gowned, looked particularly well. She was showered with telegrams and letters of congratulation from her numerous friends. The wedding presents were very numerous, and included some cheques. On Saturday Dr. and Mrs. Tarleton left for their future home in Queensland. They had a host of friends to wish them bon voyage.

What happened to Mary Hamill and her baby Ethel May Hammell?

In an attempt for the relationship between Pierce O'Keeffe and Mary Hamill to remain clandestine, baby Ethel May Hammell was given away, probably within 12 months of age, to a childless couple - Robert and Sarah Jane Ellis who lived at Broughton Creek near Nowra. The story passed down to us via Ethel is that some money was exchanged between the O'Keeffe's to Robert & Sarah Ellis as part of Mary giving up her baby; Ethel.

We can see from an article in the Kiama Independent newspaper dated Tuesday 6th March 1877 that Robert Ellis was visiting Sydney just before Ethel's birth. This could have been when the arrangement was sealed. How the O'Keeffe & Ellis families met is still unclear.

In one theory we known that there is an Ellis in the O'Keeffe extended family, perhaps that was the connection. Another possibility is through the family of Pierce O'Keeffe's wife Anna Conyngham, many of whom lived on the South coast of NSW.

Kiama Independent Tuesday 6th March 1877

PETTY LARCENY.

Sarah Jane Ellis v. Thomas Hetherington. Information laid for stealing two turkeys, belonging to Robert Ellis, on the night of the 18th instant. Plea not guilty.

Mr. Richards appeared for the complainant, and shortly stated the case.

Sarah Jane Ellis sworn: I reside near Broughton Creek; my husband is now in Sydney; heard a noise on the night named; thought it was caused by a native cat; got up with a light, and saw a man getting down off the fowl-house with a couple of turkeys; he went in the direction of defendant's house and I knew him; it was the defendant, Thomas Hetherington, now standing before the court; value the turkeys at 12s.

In reply to queries complainant said: It is about 20 yards from the dwelling-house to the fowl-house; can swear to Hetherington from his clothes and face; it was between 12 and 1 o'clock; was frightened; we had previously borrowed flour from him and paid it.

Defendant strongly denied the charge, stating that he had not been near Ellis's for some time previously.

Fined 12s, and costs 4s 10d, or in default 48 hours in the lock-up. Fine, &c., paid.

Just over a year after Ethel May Hammell had been given away, her mother Mary Hamill married William Murray, a stone mason who lived at Darlington (Macdonaldtown). Their wedding was held at Glebe NSW on the 9th February 1878 and soon after moved to a house in Hunters Hill.

Registration Number	**1542**
Date Married	**9 FEB 1878**
Place Married	**RUESSDALE, PYRMONT BRIDGE ROAD, GLEBE**
Religion	**PRESBYTERIAN**
Groom	
Name	**WILLIAM MURRAY**
Conjugal Status	**BACHELOR**
Birthplace	**NOT LISTED**
Occupation	**MASON**
Age	**NOT LISTED**
Usual Residence	**DARLINGTON**
Father	**PARENTS NOT LISTED**
Mother	
Occupation - Father	**NOT LISTED**
Bride	
Name	**MARY HAMMILL**
Conjugal Status	**SPINSTER**
Birthplace	**NOT LISTED**
Occupation	**SERVANT**
Age	**NOT LISTED**
Usual Residence	**DARLINGTON**
Father	**PARENTS NOT LISTED**
Mother	
Occupation - Father	**NOT LISTED**
Witnesses	**JAMES GERRARD, WILLIAM ARMSTEAD**
Minister	**ANDREW GARDINER**
Comments	

Mary Hamill married William Murray at Glebe on the 9th February 1878

On the 1st May 1879 Mary Hamill gave birth to a daughter she named Elizabeth May Murray.

BIRTH CERTIFICATE

Date and place of birth of child	Name and whether present or not	Sex	Father's name, occupation, age and birthplace	Date and place of marriage- previous issue	Mother's name and maiden surname, age and birthplace
1st May 1879 — 43 Hunters Hill	Elizabeth May — not present	Girl	(1) William Murray (2) Stonemason (3) 30 years (4) Scotland	9th February (1) 1878 Sydney New S. Wales (2) — " "	(1) Mary [illegible] Hammill (2) 28 years (3) Tasmania New S. Wales

Informant	Witness	Particulars of registration	Name if added after Registration of birth
Certified by William Murray Father Hunters Hill	(1) Marion (2) Drummond (3)	George M. Pope 20th May 1879 Ryde	

Birth cert of Elizabeth May Murray, born 1st May 1879
(Note that the age of Mary Murray (née Hamill) is stated as 28; in May 1789 Mary was aged 29)

Mary and William Murray went on to have three further children; Mary born in 1882, William born in 1884 and Jessie born in 1887.

The birth of Jessie may have contributed to Mary Hamill's death as tragically she died at her home on the 16th June 1887 aged 37; Mary's death certificate states she died from heart failure.

THE FRIENDS of Mr. WILLIAM MURRAY are respectfully invited to attend the Funeral of his late beloved WIFE, Mary; to move from his residence, Mary-street, Hunter's Hill, THIS (Friday) AFTERNOON, at half-past 2 o'clock, for Church of England Cemetery, Ryde. WOOD and CO., 799, George-st., Sydney; Balmain, and Petersham.

Funeral notice for Mary Murray (Nee Hamill) SMH 17th June 1887

Ethel May Hammell (our ancestor) was aged only 9 when her mother died. No evidence has been found to indicate that she and her real mum Mary Hamill had the opportunity to meet again before she died in 1887. But Ethel had obviously been given enough information about her mother's family to be able to point out her grand father Thomas Hamill's grave at St Patrick's cemetery to her daughter Annie Floyd sometime before 1923. Ethel only told Annie he was a relative, not specifically that he was her grand father.

It seems that in the process of handing baby Ethel May Hammell over to Robert and Sarah Jane Ellis; her name was changed to "Elizabeth". There is no suggestion that Ethel was ever aware she had a different birth name, so the hand-over from her mother Mary Hamill to the Ellis's could have been as early as 1877.

It is interesting to note that Ethel's mother, Mary Hamill named her daughter with William Murray (born in 1878) "Elizabeth May". This could suggest that Mary Hamill knew Ethel May's new name was also Elizabeth May.

During the late 1870s Robert Ellis worked as the punt-man on the Broughton Creek ferry, and can be seen standing at the right of this photo of the punt taken in 1880. Elizabeth now known as "Elizabeth Ellis" later recalled these as being very happy times.



Robert Ellis worked as the punt man on the Broughton Creek ferry (photo dated 1880)

On the 9th June 1880 Robert Ellis appears in the list of insolvent persons. Sometime before 1883 Robert and Sarah Jane Ellis moved to the Kiama area where Robert found work in one of the local quarry mines. They rented a house called 'Eureka house' which was situated just south of the Minnamurra River and overlooked the ocean. [669]

Ethel May Hammell (now named Elizabeth Ellis) later described her time at Eureka house as a very happy time, she was aged six in 1883 and she told her daughter Annie Floyd that she felt her family were doing well during this time.



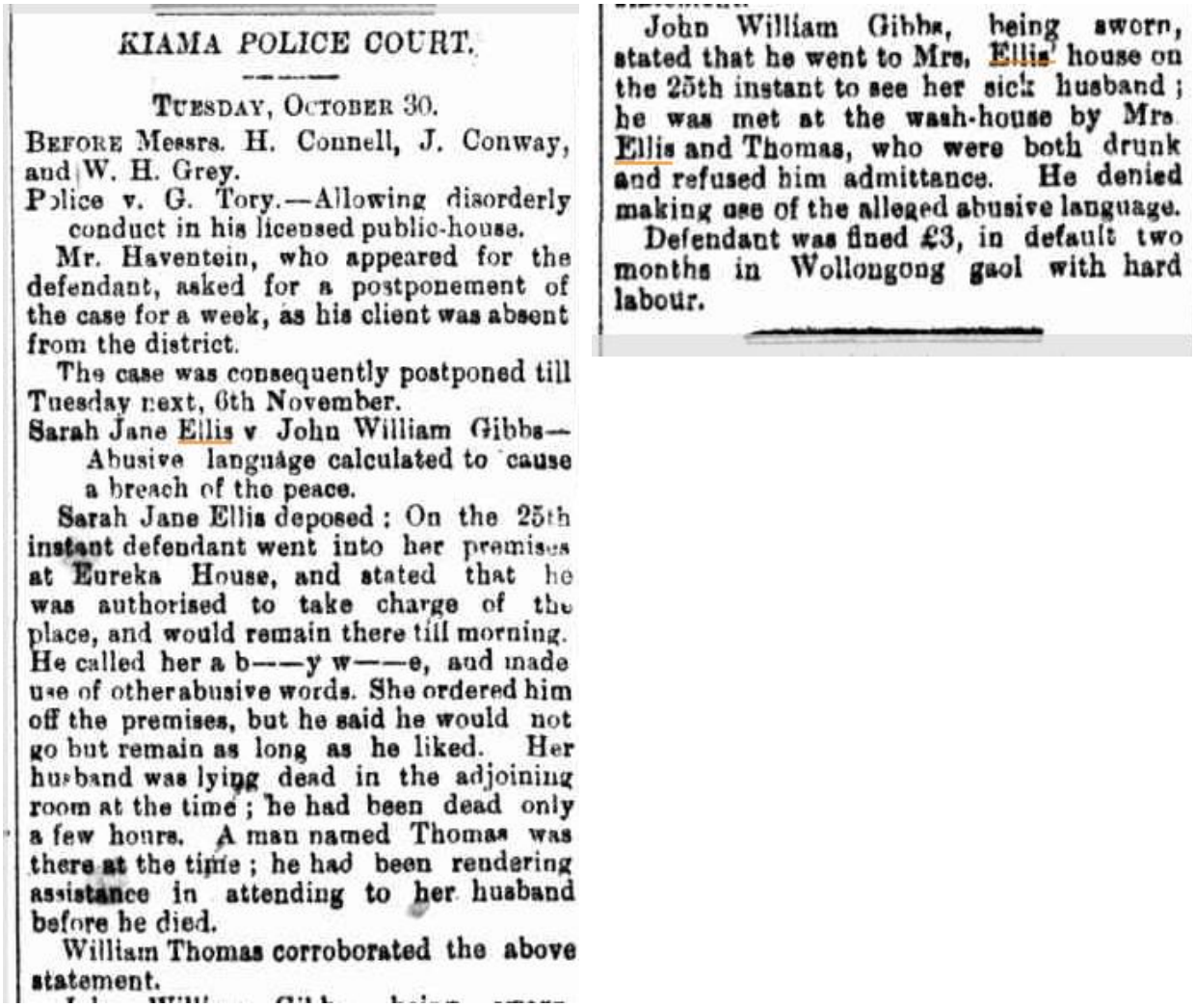
Eureka house at Kiama

Eureka house burnt down in the late 1950s. It was the residence on "Boyd's farm" and sat above what is now known as Jones beach.



Jones beach at Kiama today

The world changed for Elizabeth on the 25th Oct 1883 when Robert Ellis died of respiratory problems at Eureka house. The following article from the Kiama Independent newspaper dated Friday 2nd November 1883 describes the situation at the Eureka house the night Robert Ellis died.



KIAMA POLICE COURT.

TUESDAY, OCTOBER 30.

BEFORE Messrs. H. Connell, J. Conway, and W. H. Grey.

Police v. G. Tory.—Allowing disorderly conduct in his licensed public-house.

Mr. Haventein, who appeared for the defendant, asked for a postponement of the case for a week, as his client was absent from the district.

The case was consequently postponed till Tuesday next, 6th November.

Sarah Jane Ellis v John William Gibbs—Abusive language calculated to cause a breach of the peace.

Sarah Jane Ellis deposed: On the 25th instant defendant went into her premises at Eureka House, and stated that he was authorised to take charge of the place, and would remain there till morning. He called her a b——y w——e, and made use of other abusive words. She ordered him off the premises, but he said he would not go but remain as long as he liked. Her husband was lying dead in the adjoining room at the time; he had been dead only a few hours. A man named Thomas was there at the time; he had been rendering assistance in attending to her husband before he died.

William Thomas corroborated the above statement.

John William Gibbs, being sworn, stated that he went to Mrs. Ellis' house on the 25th instant to see her sick husband; he was met at the wash-house by Mrs. Ellis and Thomas, who were both drunk and refused him admittance. He denied making use of the alleged abusive language.

Defendant was fined £3, in default two months in Wollongong gaol with hard labour.

Kiama Independent newspaper Friday 2nd November 1883

Following the death of Robert Ellis in 1883 Sarah Jane Ellis continued to care for Elizabeth. It seems that almost immediately Sarah Jane Ellis took up with William Henry Thomas and they married in 1884.

William Henry Thomas was the son of Henry and Rosina Thomas and likely to have been long-time friends of the Ellis family. The Thomas family had moved around NSW quite a bit over the years but they had spent a long stint on the south coast around Batemans Bay and the Shoalhaven area. They had originated in Tasmania and undergone a name change in the 1830s when they moved to NSW. Their original name was Hangan.

Ethel now had a new name "Elizabeth Thomas" and she later told her daughter Annie that her life went down hill after William Henry Thomas came into her life. [670]

William Henry Thomas was described at various times as a labourer and at other times as a Veterinarian. Over the next five years William, Sarah Jane and Elizabeth moved north from Kiama.

In 1885 they appear at 'Green Hills' the old name for the area south of Camden, with William possibly working at Camden Park.

On the 18th March 1885 William Henry Thomas and Sarah Jane had a son named William Henry Thomas. Born at Camden NSW, William Henry's father was described as a Labourer, aged 44, with the birth place of Singleton NSW. William's mother was named Sarah Jane (Nee Ellis / McLellan, aged 43).

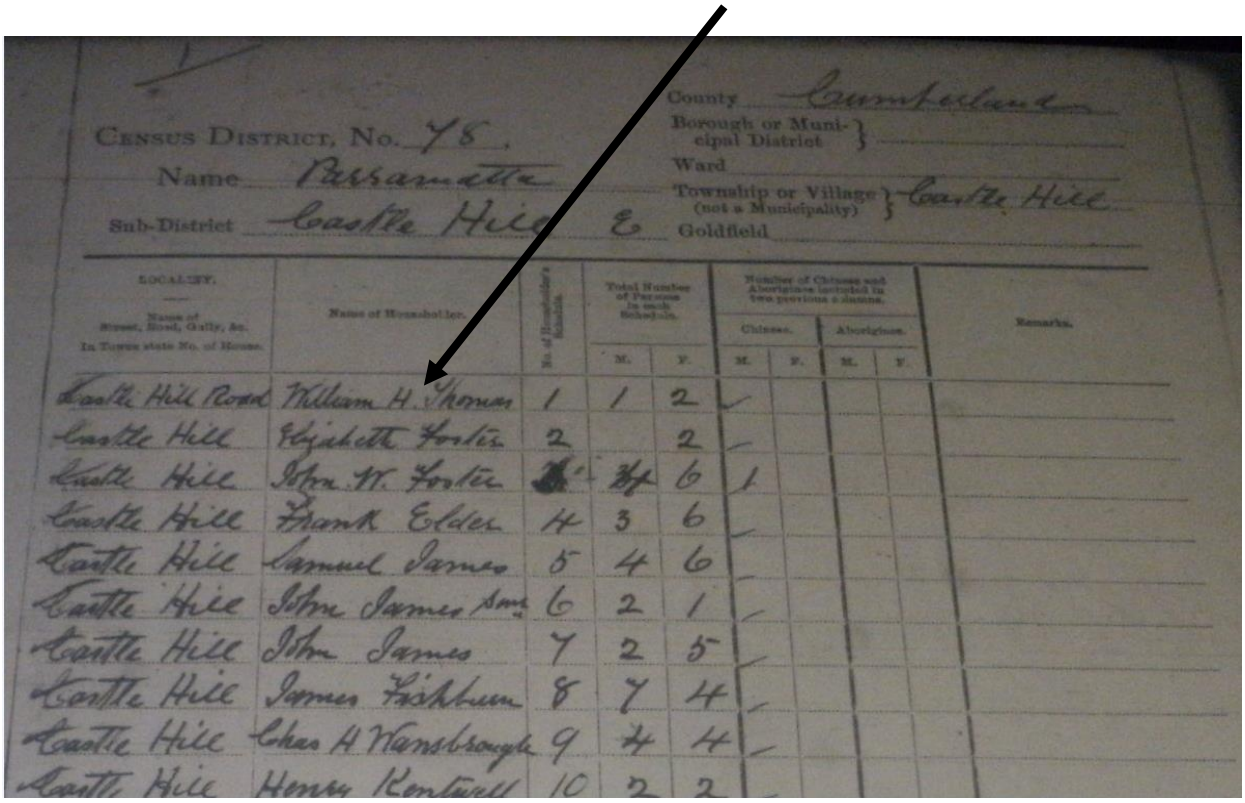
Registration Number	**15922**
Date of Birth	**18 MAR 1885**
Birth Place	**CAMDEN**
Name	**WILLIAM HENRY**
Sex	**Male**
Father	**WILLIAM HENRY THOMAS**
Occupation	**LABOURER**
Father's Age	**44**
Father's Birthplace	**SINGLETON, NSW**
Date of Marriage	**17 DEC 1884**
Place	**SYDNEY, NSW**
Previous Issue	
Mother Maiden Name	**SARAH JANE LATE ELLIS FORMERLY MCLELLAN**
Mother's Age	**43**
Mother's Birthplace	**SYDNEY, NSW**
Informant	**MOTHER**
Accoucheur	**DR. GOODE**
Nurse and/or Witness	**MRS. CLARK**
Registered	**13 APR 1885, CAMDEN**
Comments	

William Henry Thomas - child of William Henry Thomas and Sarah Jane Ellis. Born at Camden NSW 18th March 1885 – he died at Camden on the 14th October 1885

Some of the information like William's age is incorrect (should be 48), but we clearly have the correct couple.

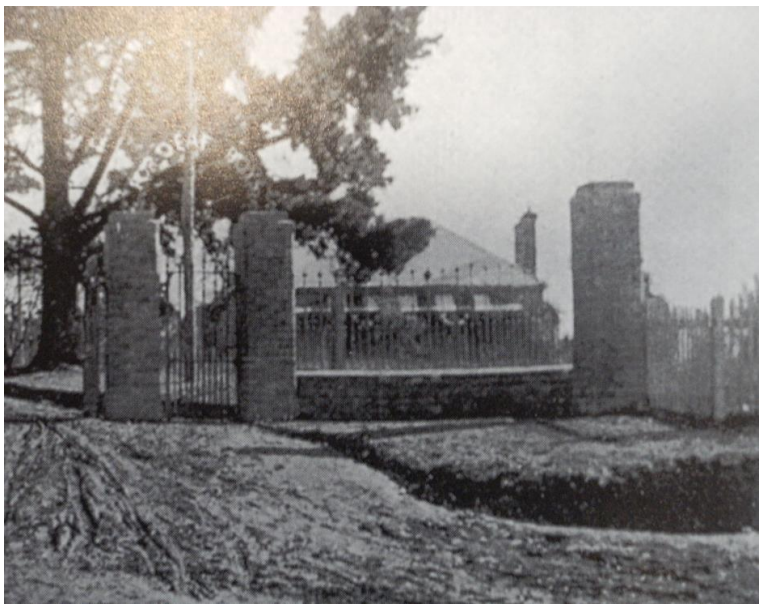
By 1888 William, Sarah Jane and Elizabeth are renting a house at Old Guildford, and by 1890 we find them renting a five-room brick cottage with a veranda for £10 pounds/year situated on a large orchard called 'Southleigh'. The cottage has since been demolished but it was situated very close to where the large water tanks are today on The Northern Road, South of Castle Hill. [671]

There was a census in April 1891 and we can see them listed as the first entry for Castle Hill "William H Thomas" householder "1 male 2 females." We can tell from this entry exactly where they lived – in the cottage on the property known as 'Southleigh'. [672]



CENSUS DISTRICT, No. 78.
Name Parramatta
Sub-District Castle Hill
County Cumberland
Borough or Municipal District
Ward
Township or Village (not a Municipality) Castle Hill
& Goldfield

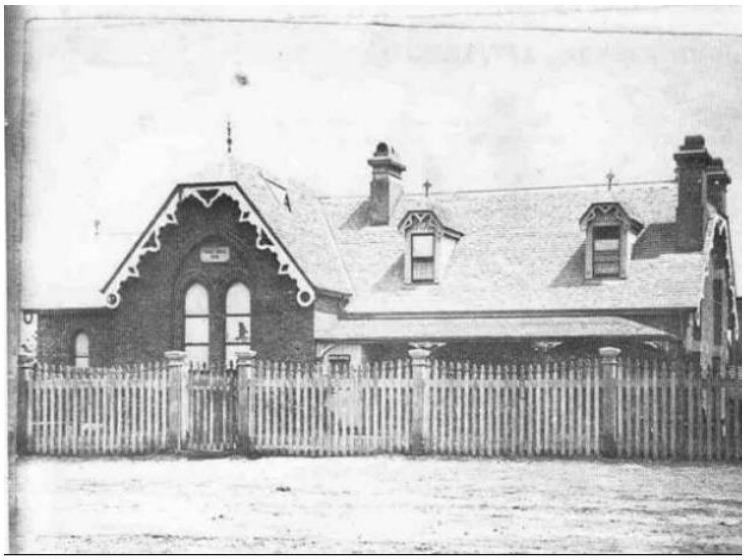
LOCALITY. Name of Street, Road, Gully, &c. In Towns state No. of House.	Name of Householder.	No. of Householder's Schedule	Total Number of Persons in each Schedule. M.	F.	Number of Chinese and Aborigines included in two previous columns. Chinese. M.	F.	Aborigines. M.	F.	Remarks.
Castle Hill Road	William H. Thomas	1	1	2					
Castle Hill	Elizabeth Foster	2		2					
Castle Hill	John W. Foster	3	4	6	1				
Castle Hill	Frank Elder	4	3	6					
Castle Hill	Samuel James	5	4	6					
Castle Hill	John James Snr.	6	2	1					
Castle Hill	John James	7	2	5					
Castle Hill	James Fishburn	8	4	4					
Castle Hill	Chas H Wansbrough	9	4	4					
Castle Hill	Henry Kentwell	10	2	2					



The cottage located at the front gate of 'Southleigh' at Castle Hill, NSW

photo taken in 1923 [673]

Elizabeth Thomas attended the public school at Castle Hill. Sarah's half sister Annie Floyd recalled her mum saying she rode a horse to school. Her teacher was John J Carolan.



Castle Hill Public School about 1890 when Elizabeth attended

1891 was Elizabeth's last year of school. That year this photo was taken of the whole school. They stopped during their walk from the school to the local hall. They were dressed for a performance of the school concert (Daisy Dell). We think Elizabeth is the girl on the extreme left. [674]



Castle Hill school concert 1891 (Elizabeth could be on extreme left)

Southleigh was a large orchard of 160 acres. It was owned by John Williams-Foster and his wife Catherine Theresa Foster (Nee Curtis). Southleigh house consisted of a 10-bedroom mansion with servant's quarters, a manager's cottage out the back as well as stables and workshops. At the time William, Sarah Jane and Elizabeth moved in; there were 60 acres of citrus trees planted and nearly 100 acres of pasture for horses and other animals.

The exit from ‘Southleigh House’ was via a 200-meter tree covered driveway that joined to Castle Hill Road. Next to the driveway was a small brick cottage where William, Sarah Jane and Elizabeth lived. From the cottage Elizabeth would have seen any visitor entering or leaving the Southleigh driveway.



Southleigh house at Castle Hill NSW: photo taken about 1910 [675]

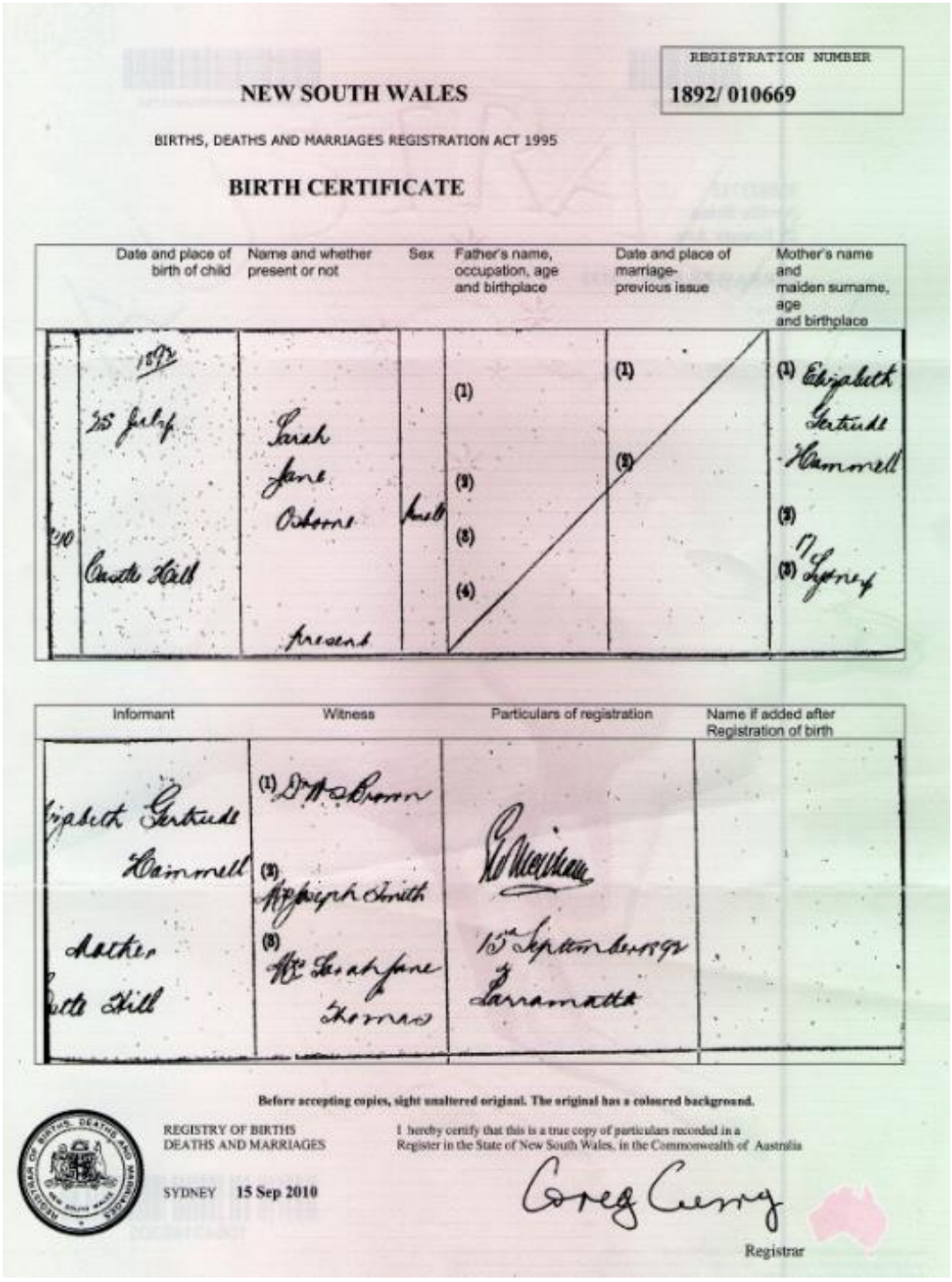
According to what Lorna Brien remembered Sarah saying in 1930 about the place she was born, “it was a large two-story house with French doors and wrought iron railings on the upper balcony. It had a gravel driveway with rose garden borders.” That description fits ‘Southleigh house’ and confirms what the 1891 census tells us.

In the spring of 1891 14-year-old Elizabeth Hammell fell pregnant to 54-year-old William Henry Thomas and gave birth to a daughter she named Sarah Jane Osborn Hammell on Monday 25th July 1892. This Sarah Jane Hammell was my grand mother.

Although the name of Sarah Hammell’s father is not included on her birth certificate, the association with William Henry Thomas is proven conclusively through DNA. [676]

At the time of Sarah Hammell’s birth in 1892 there was an under-age law which had severe penalties for the father if a girl was aged under 16 when conception occurred. The police records of the day show many jail terms being given to offenders.

When it came time to register her baby Elizabeth went to some lengths to protect the fathers identify. On Sarah's birth cert Elizabeth used her legal birth surname of Hammell, but added a middle name of 'Gertrude'. She also added two years to her real age saying she was 17 rather than 15, presumably to remove any suggestion she was under age.



REGISTRATION NUMBER
1892/ 010669

NEW SOUTH WALES

BIRTHS, DEATHS AND MARRIAGES REGISTRATION ACT 1995

BIRTH CERTIFICATE

Date and place of birth of child	Name and whether present or not	Sex	Father's name, occupation, age and birthplace	Date and place of marriage- previous issue	Mother's name and maiden surname, age and birthplace
1892 25 July Castle Hill	Sarah Jane Osborn present	female	(1) (2) (3) (4)	(1) (2)	(1) Elizabeth Gertrude Hammell (2) (3) Sydney

Informant	Witness	Particulars of registration	Name if added after Registration of birth
Elizabeth Gertrude Hammell Mother Castle Hill	(1) D. A. Brown (2) Ab. Smith (3) Mrs Sarah Jane Thomas	15th September 1892 Parramatta	

Before accepting copies, sight unaltered original. The original has a coloured background.

REGISTRY OF BIRTHS DEATHS AND MARRIAGES

SYDNEY 15 Sep 2010

I hereby certify that this is a true copy of particulars recorded in a Register in the State of New South Wales, in the Commonwealth of Australia

Registrar

My grand mother Sarah Jane Osborn Hammell born at Southleigh, Castle Hill, 25th July 1892

In addition, for some reason she kept to herself, Elizabeth Gertrude Hammell included the name "Osborn" on the certificate as part of Sarah's Christian names. This appears to have been an attempt to infer that someone named Osborn was Sarah's father. And in the context, it seems feasible as the owner of the Southleigh farm was Catherine Foster (Nee Curtis) and her sister was Mary Ann Osborn. The electoral roll for Castle Hill in 1891 does show that Mary Ann Osborn's son George James Osborn was residing in the Castle Hill area at the time; quite likely at his aunty Catherine's Southleigh property. [677] [678]

Sarah's other Christian names "Sarah" and "Jane" were in honour of Sarah Jane Thomas, the woman who had cared for Elizabeth virtually her whole childhood. [679]



Photo of Castle Hill taken in 1908
(showing the Police Station, Masonic Hall, school, general store, the Odd Fellow's hall and St Paul's church)



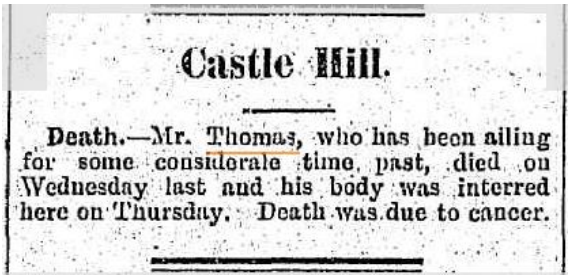
Painting of Castle Hill farmland; looking towards the Blue Mountains, by Robert Johnson [680]

About the time baby Sarah Hammell was born, William Henry Thomas became very ill with cancer and after a lingering illness died on the 25th Oct 1893.

Registration Number	4897
Date of Death	25 OCT 1893
Place of Death	CASTLE HILL
Name	WILLIAM HENRY THOMAS
Occupation	VETERINARY SURGEON & LABOURER
Sex	MALE
Age	54 YRS
Cause of Death	EPITHELIOMA OF LIPS, EXTENSION OF CANCER TO GLANDS OF *
Duration	2 YRS
Medical Attendant	REGINALD BOWMAN, 20 AUG
Father	HENRY THOMAS
Father's Occupation	PUBLICAN
Mother - Maiden Name	ROSINA SMITH
Informant	SARAH JANE THOMAS, WIFE, CASTLE HILL
When Buried	26 OCT 1893
Where	CHURCH OF ENGLAND, CASTLE HILL
Undertaker	CHARLES TUCKWELL
Minister	REV EDWARD HARGRAVES
Religion	CHURCH OF ENGLAND
Witnesses	ROBERT E TUCKWELL, A J TUCKWELL
Where born	SINGLETON NSW
Time in Colony/State	-
Place Married	SYDNEY
Age at Marriage	45
Spouse	SARAH JANE ELLIS NEE MCLELLAND
Children of Marriage	NONE LIVING 1 MALE DECEASED
Other Comments	*NECK AND CHEST

Death transcript; my great grand father William Henry Thomas who died 25th Oct 1893 [681]

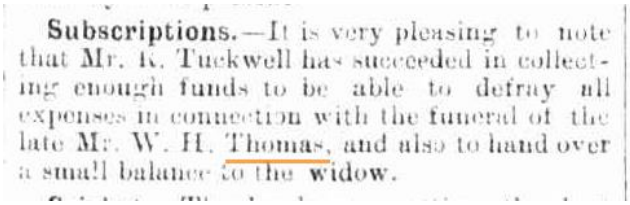
As an illustration of how well they were thought of in the community, the towns folk took up a collection that covered the funeral costs and what was left over given to his widow.



Castle Hill.

Death.—Mr. Thomas, who has been ailing for some considerale time past, died on Wednesday last and his body was interred here on Thursday. Death was due to cancer.

Argus Saturday 28 October 1893



Subscriptions.—It is very pleasing to note that Mr. R. Tuckwell has succeeded in collecting enough funds to be able to defray all expenses in connection with the funeral of the late Mr. W. H. Thomas, and also to hand over a small balance to the widow.

Argus Saturday 25 November 1893

William Henry Thomas was my great grand father and he was buried at St Paul's cemetery at Castle Hill, about 400 meters from Southleigh; today I can find no trace of his grave.

After the death of William Henry Thomas it seems likely the Fosters supported Sarah Jane, Elizabeth and baby Sarah as they continued living at Southleigh for some years.

I can't say exactly how long they remained at Southleigh, but it was obviously long enough for Sarah to develop a memory of the place. About 1930 Sarah took her husband George Daniel Brien and some of her children to have a look at the house she had been born. Lorna Brien recalled Sarah saying she had some bad memories of the place. [682]

The family line of William Henry Thomas can be traced back to the arrival in Australia of convict John Hangan. John Hangan was born c. 1779 in Kent, England and on the 15th September 1802 John went on trial for "feloniously stealing two waist coats, a pair of breeches and a pair of stockings". John Hangan was found guilty and sentenced to transportation for seven years. John's occupation was stated as a 'stonemason'.

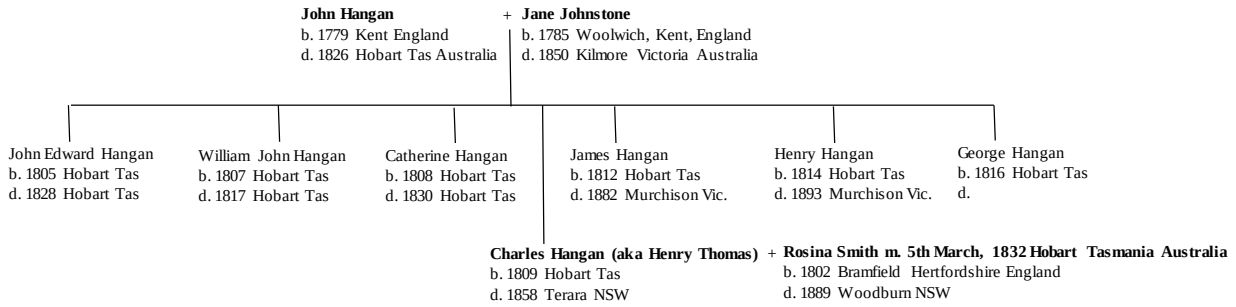
John Hangan was transported to Australia aboard the 'Calcutta' and was part of the aborted settlement at Port Phillip Bay in 1803; before being transferred to Hobart Tasmania aboard the 'Ocean' as part of the settlement led by Lt. Governor Collins arriving there on the 20th February 1804.



The HMS 'Calcutta' and the 'Ocean' at anchor in Port Phillip. Painting by Dacre Smyth [683]

John Hangan married Jane Johnstone, the widow of fellow convict John Heels. Jane was born in 1785 at Woolwich, Kent, England. According to one record her parents were named William and Mary. [684]

Jane Johnstone had married convict John Heels in England and she followed her husband to Australia after his conviction in 1802. John Heels died in Jan 1804 leaving Jane a widow, she then married John Hangan in Hobart on the 30th July 1804, and they had seven children.



Children of John Hangan and Jane Johnstone. Their 4th child Charles is our ancestor. [685]

In 1805 John Hangan was allocated 50 acres just outside the Hobart settlement on Pavilion Point, as farm land. Today this location is the site of the Royal Tasmanian Botanical Gardens.



Pavilion Point Hobart, site of John Hangan's 50-acre 1805 land grant [686]

In 1811 John Hangan sold the 50-acres at Pavilion Point to Mr. William Hopley for £124. However, there was a snag in this transaction as the formal signing of the original land grant by Governor Philip Gidley King in Sydney had not occurred.

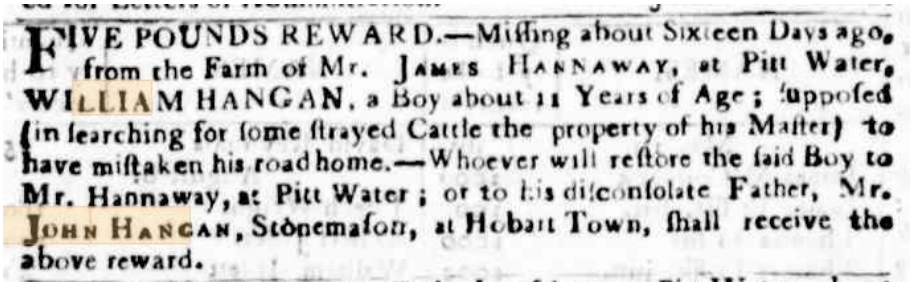
So, in 1813 a Certificate of Title was provided to John Hangan as proof of ownership of the 50-acres by Samuel Warriner, Government Clerk.

"These are to certify that the late Colonel Collins, when Lieut. Governor of the Settlement, gave to John Hangan for himself and wife, 50 acres of land and had the same measured to him and gave him possession nearly eight years ago; which farm he has held and cultivated nearly nine acres at a great expense; that Governor Collins applied to Head Office for a Grant for the same in his wife's Jane Hangan's name, and would have repeated the application had not his death prevented it."

Given under my hand at Hobart Town Van Diemen's Land this 21st Day of January 1813.

Samuel Warriner, Government Clerk.

In 1817 John and Jane's 2nd son William John Hangan was lost on the bush near Hobart, his body was later found not far from where he had last been seen. 16 days after he went missing the following reward was posted in the Hobart Gazette.



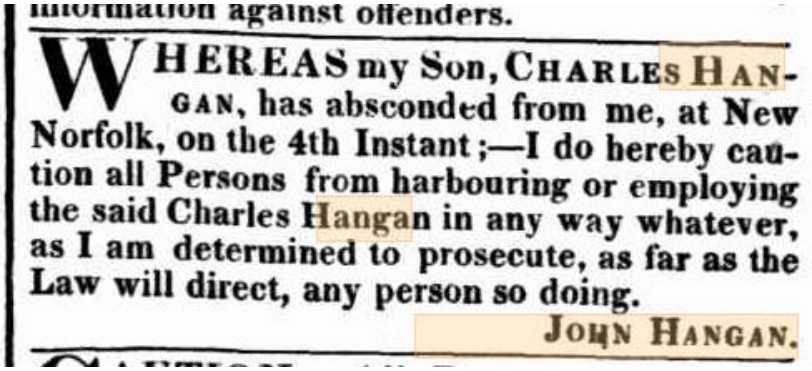
FIVE POUNDS REWARD.—Miſſing about Sixteen Days ago, from the Farm of Mr. JAMES HANNAWAY, at Pitt Water, WILLIAM HANGAN, a Boy about 11 Years of Age; ſuppoſed (in ſearching for ſome ſtrayed Cattle the property of his Maſter) to have miſtaken his road home.—Whoever will reſtore the ſaid Boy to Mr. Hannaway, at Pitt Water; or to his diſconſolate Father, Mr. JOHN HANGAN, Stonemaſon, at Hobart Town, ſhall receive the above reward.

The Hobart Town Gazette and Southern Reporter Sat 10 May 1817



Painting of Hobart Tasmania by John Glover [687]

The following article from the Hobart Gazette dated Oct 1823 seems to indicate that some conflict had arisen between John Hangan and his son Charles Hangan (our ancestor).



information against offenders.

WHEREAS my Son, CHARLES HANGAN, has absconded from me, at New Norfolk, on the 4th Instant;—I do hereby caution all Persons from harbouring or employing the said Charles Hangan in any way whatever, as I am determined to prosecute, as far as the Law will direct, any person so doing.

JOHN HANGAN.

Hobart Town Gazette and Van Diemen's Land Advertiser Sat 25 Oct 1823

John Hangan died at Hobart in 1826. In 1849 his wife Jane Johnstone moved to Kilmore in Victoria and settled with her sons James and Henry where she remained until her death in 1850 aged 66.[688]

John and Jane Hangan's son Charles Hangan (our ancestor) was born at Hobart in 1809. I can find little information about Charles until his marriage on the 19th July 1830 to his first wife, convict Mary Ann Lyons.

Charles and Mary Ann had a son named Charles James born 12th October 1830. On his baptismal certificate his father was recorded as a "Grocer." Their baby Charles James Hangan died aged just 2 months on 7th December 1830.

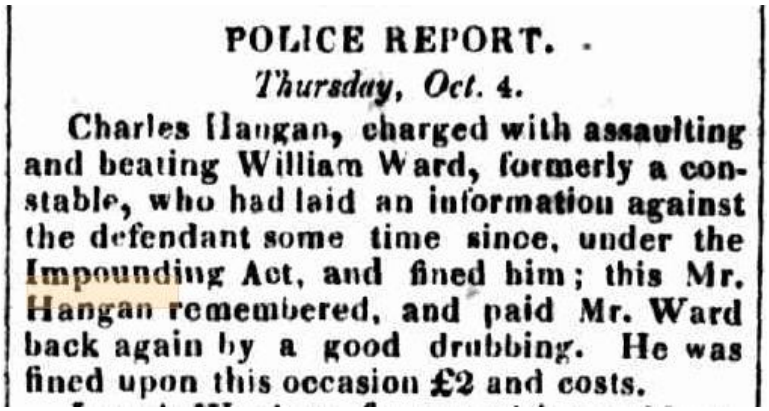
Nine months later on the 22nd July 1831 Mary Ann Lyons also passed away, leaving Charles Hangan a widower.

Charles Hangan didn't stay single long and, on the 5th March 1832 Charles, married convict Rosina Smith (our ancestor).

Rosina was born in 1802 at Bramfield, Hertfordshire England. Daughter of William Smith and Sarah Gutteridge [689] Rosina had been charged at the Old Bailey in London on the 10th August 1827 with stealing, 1 watch, value 6s, 1 chain, value 2s, 3 seals, value 30s, and 1 key, value 5s. Rosina was described as a housemaid, laundry maid and prostitute. [690]

Rosina Smith sailed on the 'Mermaid' arriving in Hobart on the 27th June 1828. She was assigned as a servant to Stephen Adey and she found it difficult conforming to that role. Trouble seemed to follow her around as on the 29th April 1829 Rosina was charged with disobedience and neglect of duties and on the 14th October, she was charged with stealing 5 stockings, value 2/6, the property of Stephen Adey. Committed to trial 27th January 1830 she was sentenced to 6 months imprisonment in the female house of correction. [691]

Trouble seemed to follow Charles Hangan around as well as he appears in the following Police Report from Oct 1832 charged with assault.



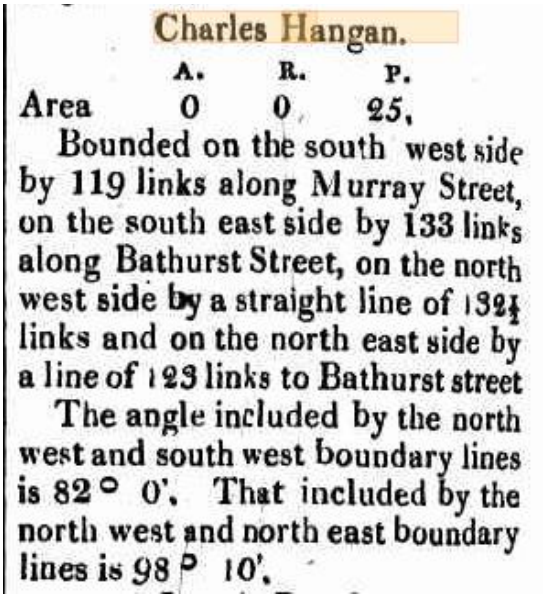
POLICE REPORT.

Thursday, Oct. 4.

Charles Hangan, charged with assaulting and beating William Ward, formerly a constable, who had laid an information against the defendant some time since, under the Impounding Act, and fined him; this Mr. Hangan remembered, and paid Mr. Ward back again by a good drubbing. He was fined upon this occasion £2 and costs.

Charles Hangan Police Report, The Tasmanian Fri 12th Oct 1832

A week later Charles again appears in the press, this time in the Hobart Gazette which mentions his application for a land grant (or lease) in Hobart, on the corner of Bathurst and Murray Streets where he sets up a butcher shop; adding to a dwelling that was already on the site.



Charles Hangan.

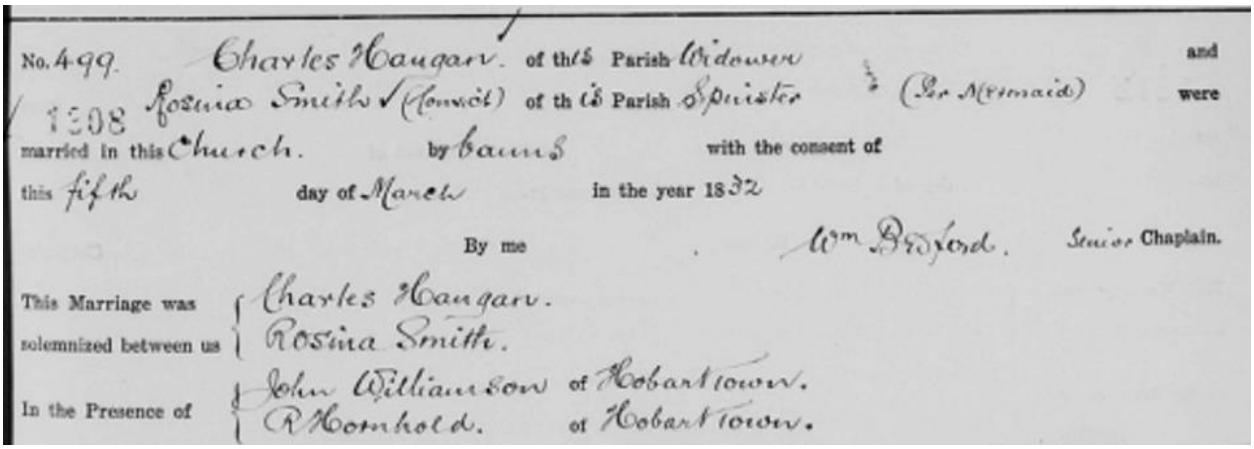
	A.	R.	P.
Area	0	0	25,

Bounded on the south west side by 119 links along Murray Street, on the south east side by 133 links along Bathurst Street, on the north west side by a straight line of 132½ links and on the north east side by a line of 123 links to Bathurst street

The angle included by the north west and south west boundary lines is 82° 0'. That included by the north west and north east boundary lines is 98° 10'.

Charles Hangan land grant in Hobart. Hobart Gazette Fri 19th Oct 1832

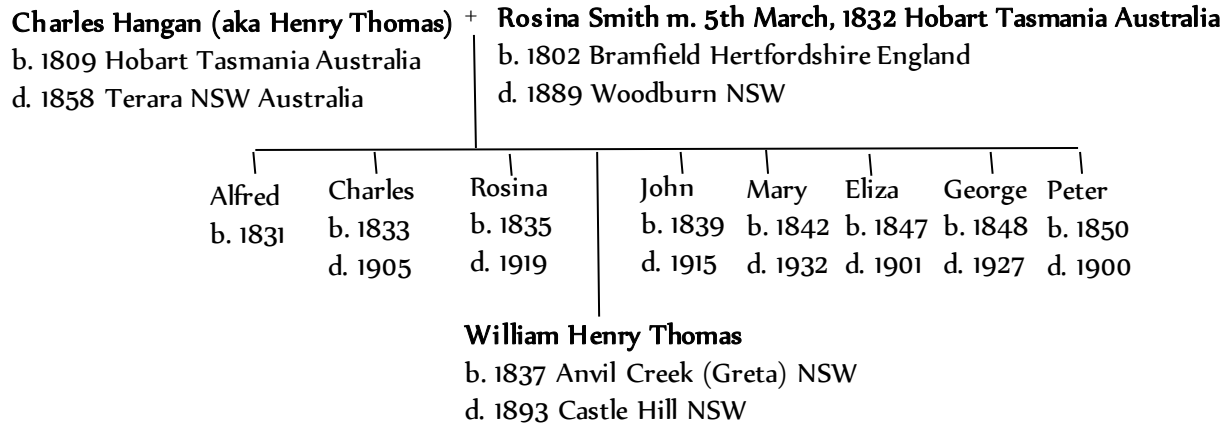
On the 31st January 1832 Rosina Smith applied to marry Charles Hangan. They received permission and their marriage was formalised on 5th March 1832 in Hobart.



No. 499. Charles Hangan. of this Parish Widower and
1808 Rosina Smith (Convict) of this Parish Spinster (Per Mermaid) were
married in this Church. by Banns with the consent of
this fifth day of March in the year 1832
By me Wm Bedford. Senior Chaplain.
This Marriage was solemnized between us Charles Hangan. Rosina Smith.
In the Presence of John Williamson of Hobart Town. R Hornhold. of Hobart Town.

Marriage record of Charles Hangan and Rosina Smith in Hobart 5th March 1832

Charles Hangan and Rosina Smith had nine children.



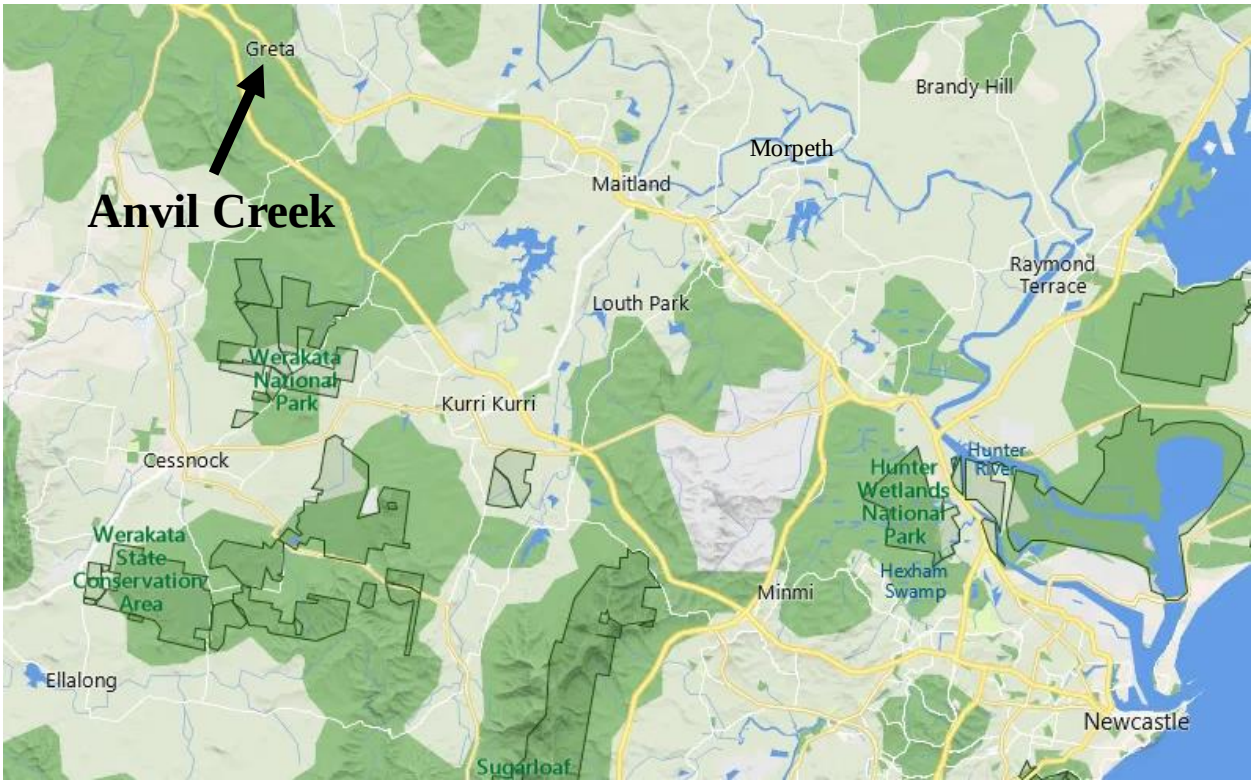
Children of Charles Hangan (aka Henry Thomas) and Rosina Smith
(Our ancestor Willian Henry was born in 1837 and died in 1893)

On the above chart you will notice Charles Hangan is also described as being known as Henry Thomas. This came about in 1835/6 when Charles and Rosina fled Tasmania and moved to mainland Australia. Their motive for moving has never been established but it seems likely that Rosina had once again fallen foul of the law and so they packed up their family and fled from Tasmania.

In the process of moving they dropped the "Hangan" name, replacing it with "Thomas" and from their next official record in 1837 onwards the couple were known as Henry and Rosina Thomas. (I'll now use their new names for continuity).

Henry and Rosina Thomas were my great great grandparents. I'm assuming they travelled from Hobart to Morpeth (upstream along the Hunter River from Newcastle) by ship sometime in 1836 as by the time their 4th child, William Henry Thomas was born on the 20th February 1837, they were located at Anvil Creek NSW.

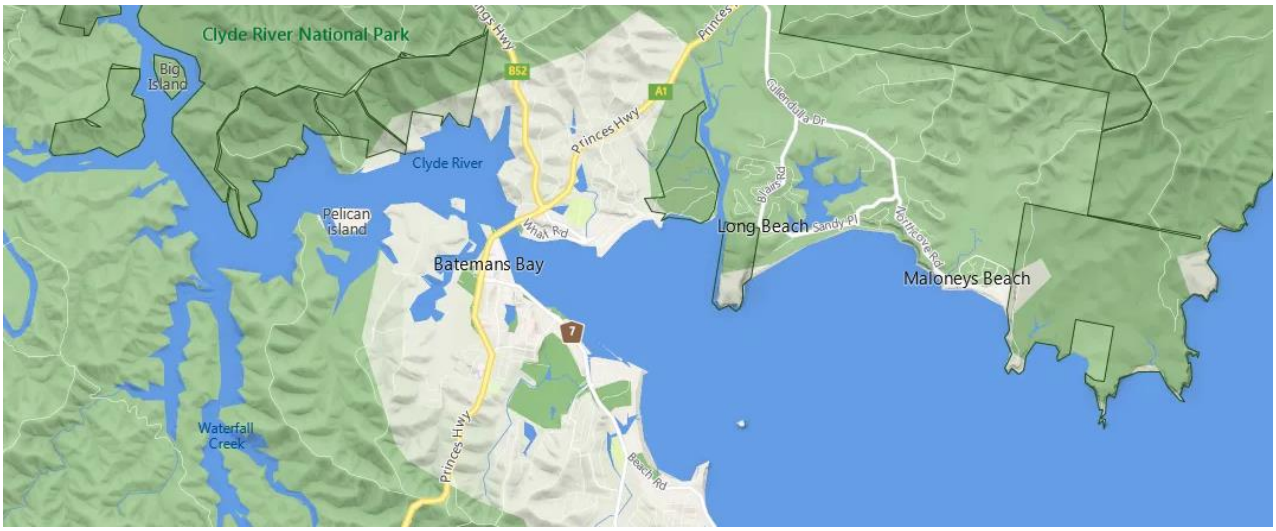
Anvil Creek lies about half way between Maitland and Singleton on the New England Hwy in the Hunter Valley; today it is known as the town of Greta. William Henry Thomas was my great grandfather, on his baptismal certificate his father Henry Thomas was described as a "Settler." [692]



Map showing location of Anvil Creek NSW (now known as Greta)

Henry and Rosina were still at Anvil Creek in June 1839 when their next child John Thomas was born.

By the 3rd of June 1842 when their next child Mary Thomas was born, they had moved some 400 Km south and were now located at Batemans Bay on the south coast of NSW. On Mary's baptismal certificate her father Henry Thomas is described as a "Farmer." [693]



Map of Batemans Bay NSW

In October 1842 Henry Thomas had obviously garnered some respectability as he appears in The Sydney Gazette on Thursday 6th Oct 1842 (Page 2) in an interesting case where Henry is accused of receiving stolen goods, for which he was acquitted, but the newspaper makes a point of ridiculing the trivial nature of the case.

DOMESTIC INTELLIGENCE.

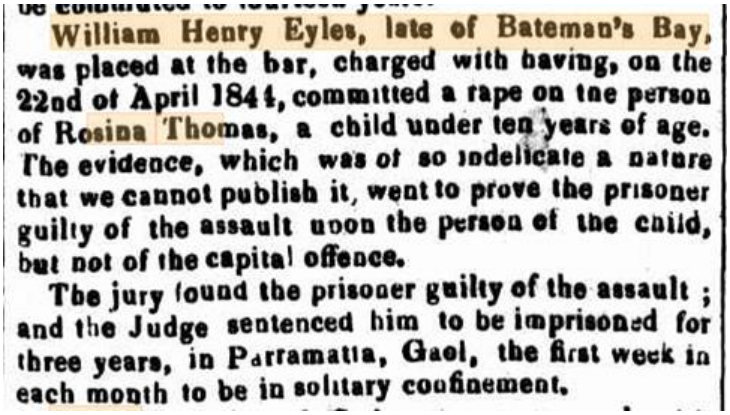
Trivial Cases in the Quarter Sessions.

The trouble and expense to which Government is subjected, from the numerous paltry cases which an ill-selected body of Country Magistrates send to a Sydney Jury, has, for a length of time, been a matter of severe annoyance to the community,—more especially to those residing in the remote districts of the Colony. This fault is more particularly called to our attention, from the case of Mr. Henry Thomas, a respectable settler at Bateman's Bay, who was brought before the Commissioner of Quarter Sessions on Tuesday last, charged with having stolen property in his possession. The prosecutor in this case, was a person named Mallon, who, at one time, had a public house in Sydney, and lost his license for keeping a disorderly house, after which, he went to Barralawn, at which place he obtained a license from the Broulee Bench. As Mr. Thomas lived in the neighbourhood, he suffered much annoyance from the conduct of this publican, and lodged several informations against him, for which Mallon was punished. On this account he (Mallon) swore to an information,

charging Mr. Thomas with having receited stolen property (to the value of about sixpence sterling) and the Broulee Bench, without the slightest proof, committed Mr. Thomas to take his trial for the alleged offence. The Sydney Jury could, with difficulty, restrain their risibility at the absurd nature of the case, while they at once honourably acquitted the defendant. Mr. Thomas is much indebted to the Broulee Magistrates for the expense they have put him to. They promise fairly to rival Dogberry himself, in their legal knowledge.

Henry Thomas of Batemans Bay is mentioned
The Sydney Gazette Thu 6 Oct 1842 Page 2

In 1844 Henry and Rosina Thomas's eldest daughter Rosina (aged 9) years was assaulted at Batemans Bay. The details of the assault and conviction of the perpetrator were mentioned in the news on the 6th July 1844.



William Henry Eyles, late of Bateman's Bay, was placed at the bar, charged with having, on the 22nd of April 1844, committed a rape on the person of Rosina Thomas, a child under ten years of age. The evidence, which was of so indelicate a nature that we cannot publish it, went to prove the prisoner guilty of the assault upon the person of the child, but not of the capital offence.

The jury found the prisoner guilty of the assault; and the Judge sentenced him to be imprisoned for three years, in Parramatta, Gaol, the first week in each month to be in solitary confinement.

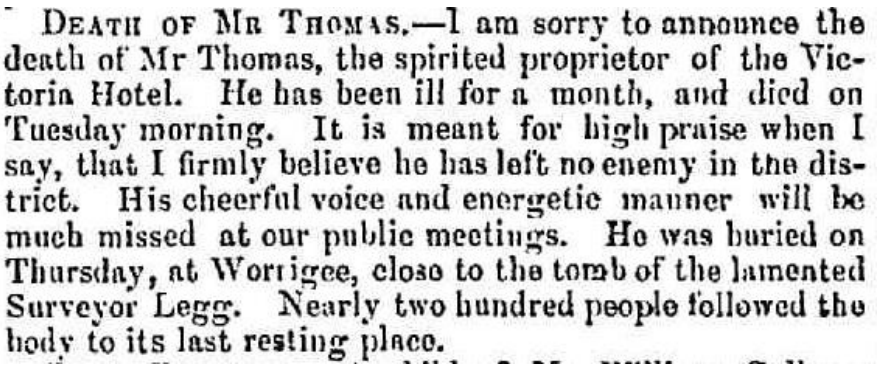
Rosina Thomas, elder sister of William Henry Thomas, assaulted at Batemans Bay NSW
The Dispatch Saturday 6th Jul 1844. Page 2

After the assault on young Rosina Thomas, the family remained in the Batemans Bay area however one report suggests they moved for a short time to the nearby town of Moruya NSW. [694]

In 1854 Henry Thomas became the Licensee of the 'Royal Victoria Hotel' at Terara NSW. Terara was the main town on the Shoalhaven river before Nowra took over in the 1860s. It was the location of 'Adams Wharf' from which a regular ferry service ran to Sydney. It exists today as a location next to the Shoalhaven river to the East of Nowra.

Henry and Rosina Thomas operated the hotel at Terara until at least 1858 when Henry's health deteriorated. Henry Thomas died on the 14th September 1858 aged 49.

There was clearly an outpouring of sadness at Henry's passing as illustrated by the following article in the Illawarra Mercury printed on Mon 20th Sep 1858 a few days after his death.



DEATH OF MR THOMAS.—I am sorry to announce the death of Mr Thomas, the spirited proprietor of the Victoria Hotel. He has been ill for a month, and died on Tuesday morning. It is meant for high praise when I say, that I firmly believe he has left no enemy in the district. His cheerful voice and energetic manner will be much missed at our public meetings. He was buried on Thursday, at Worrigee, close to the tomb of the lamented Surveyor Legg. Nearly two hundred people followed the body to its last resting place.

Illawarra Mercury Monday 20th Sep 1858

DEATHS

On Tuesday, the 14th instant, at Terrara, Shoalhaven, Mr. Henry Thomas, of the Royal Victoria Hotel, aged 49 years, deeply lamented by a large family, and much regretted by a numerous circle of friends.

Death of Henry Thomas SMH Tue 21st Sep 1858

Terara township was virtually washed away by the Shoalhaven river flood of 1860. In 1870 the Shoalhaven flooded again and was measured at 6.5 meters at Nowra. Following the floods most of the inhabitants abandoned Terara and moved to higher ground where Nowra is now located.



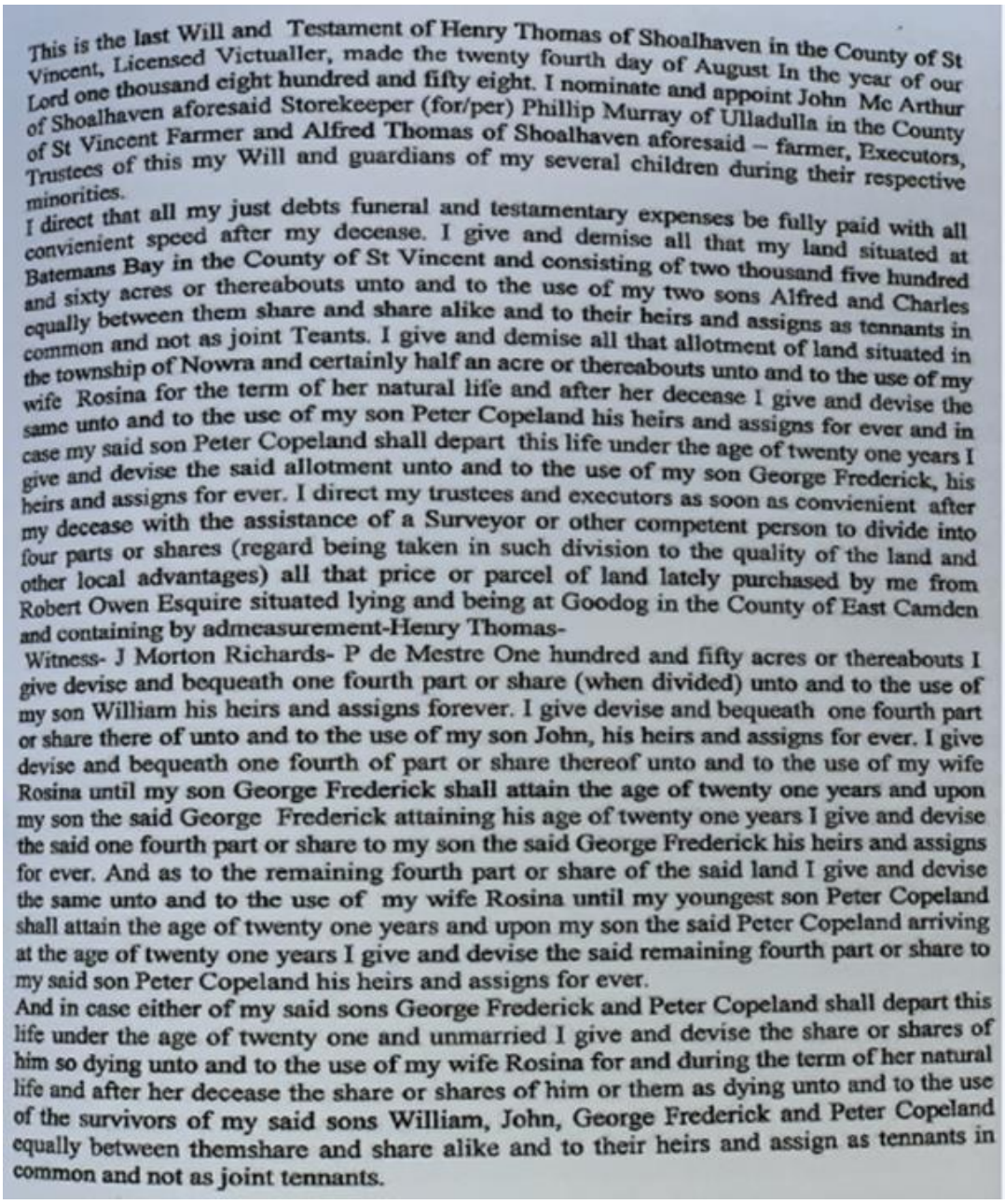
Shoalhaven river in flood at Nowra (photo probably from 1950s.)

An article appeared in the Nowra Leader newspaper in 1910 covering the history of the local area, the Thomas family in Terara get a mention.

The Thomas family came to Terara from Moruya. The father and the eldest son, Charles, were great sportsmen. They owned a number of racehorses, including Tam-o'-Shanter, Scamp and *Polkyhantes* which were in those days in the front rank. If there were 20 horses tied up to a fence Charlie would pick out the fastest one. It was a notable fact if it did not win it was always close up. All of the family, who are still in the land of the living, are on the Richmond River, except Mrs. Philip Murray, who resides at Yattah Yattah, Ulladulla. Later

The Thomas family are mentioned in the Nowra Leader 20th May 1910

Below is an excerpt from the will of Henry Thomas (1858) where he bequeaths a quarter of 150 acres of land at 'Goodog' to his son William Henry Thomas. 'Goodog' as a location no longer exists but I assume it was located just west of Bomaderry in the vicinity of present-day 'Good Dog creek'.



This is the last Will and Testament of Henry Thomas of Shoalhaven in the County of St Vincent, Licensed Victualler, made the twenty fourth day of August In the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and fifty eight. I nominate and appoint John Mc Arthur of Shoalhaven aforesaid Storekeeper (for/per) Phillip Murray of Ulladulla in the County of St Vincent Farmer and Alfred Thomas of Shoalhaven aforesaid – farmer, Executors, Trustees of this my Will and guardians of my several children during their respective minorities.

I direct that all my just debts funeral and testamentary expenses be fully paid with all convienient speed after my decease. I give and demise all that my land situated at Batemans Bay in the County of St Vincent and consisting of two thousand five hundred and sixty acres or thereabouts unto and to the use of my two sons Alfred and Charles equally between them share and share alike and to their heirs and assigns as tennants in common and not as joint Teants. I give and demise all that allotment of land situated in the township of Nowra and certainly half an acre or thereabouts unto and to the use of my wife Rosina for the term of her natural life and after her decease I give and devise the same unto and to the use of my son Peter Copeland his heirs and assigns for ever and in case my said son Peter Copeland shall depart this life under the age of twenty one years I give and devise the said allotment unto and to the use of my son George Frederick, his heirs and assigns for ever. I direct my trustees and executors as soon as convienient after my decease with the assistance of a Surveyor or other competent person to divide into four parts or shares (regard being taken in such division to the quality of the land and other local advantages) all that price or parcel of land lately purchased by me from Robert Owen Esquire situated lying and being at Goodog in the County of East Camden and containing by admeasurement-Henry Thomas-

Witness- J Morton Richards- P de Mestre One hundred and fifty acres or thereabouts I give devise and bequeath one fourth part or share (when divided) unto and to the use of my son William his heirs and assigns forever. I give devise and bequeath one fourth part or share there of unto and to the use of my son John, his heirs and assigns for ever. I give devise and bequeath one fourth of part or share thereof unto and to the use of my wife Rosina until my son George Frederick shall attain the age of twenty one years and upon my son the said George Frederick attaining his age of twenty one years I give and devise the said one fourth part or share to my son the said George Frederick his heirs and assigns for ever. And as to the remaining fourth part or share of the said land I give and devise the same unto and to the use of my wife Rosina until my youngest son Peter Copeland shall attain the age of twenty one years and upon my son the said Peter Copeland arriving at the age of twenty one years I give and devise the said remaining fourth part or share to my said son Peter Copeland his heirs and assigns for ever.

And in case either of my said sons George Frederick and Peter Copeland shall depart this life under the age of twenty one and unmarried I give and devise the share or shares of him so dying unto and to the use of my wife Rosina for and during the term of her natural life and after her decease the share or shares of him or them as dying unto and to the use of the survivors of my said sons William, John, George Frederick and Peter Copeland equally between themshare and share alike and to their heirs and assign as tennants in common and not as joint tennants.

Excerpt from Will of Henry Thomas of Terara NSW 1858 [695]

After the floods of the 1860s Rosina Thomas moved to Milton near Ulladulla. In later years she moved north to be with family and died on the 2nd December 1889 at Woodburn, northern NSW.

DEATH CERTIFICATE

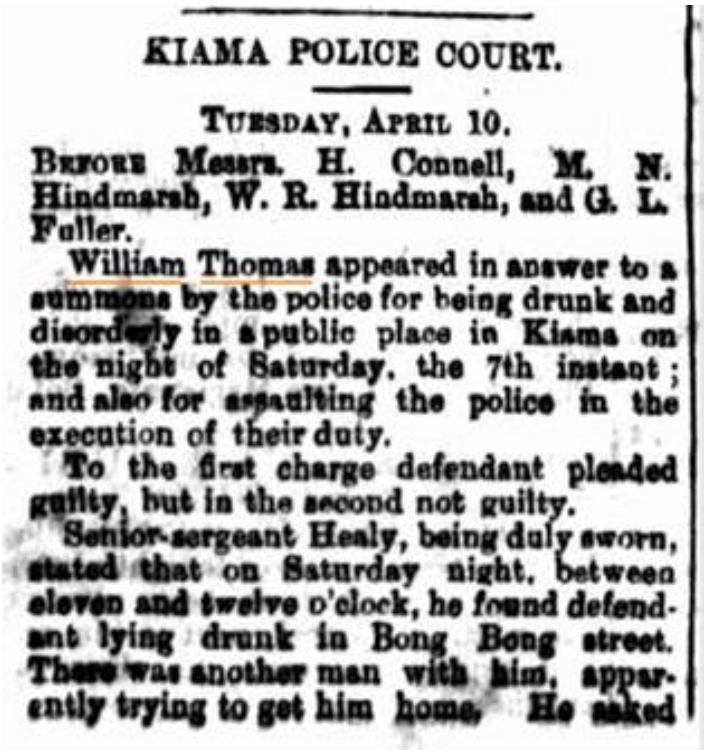
Date and place of death	Name and occupation	Sex and age	Cause of Death Duration of last illness; medical attendant; when he last saw deceased	Name and occupation of father. Name and maiden surname of mother	Informant
1889 2nd December Woodburn	Rosina Thomas House Keeper	Female 87 years	(1) Senile decay (2) 4 months (3) Nil (4)	(1) (2) Unknown (3)	Certified by John Thomas Son Woodburn

Particulars of Registration	When and where buried; name of undertaker	Name and religion of Minister and names of witnesses of burial	Where born and how long in the Australasian Colonies or States	Place of marriage, age, and to whom	Children of marriage
Corr Coghlan	4th December 1889	Rev. James Scott Presbyterian	England	(1) Tasmania	Alfred Charles Rosina William Henry John Mary Jane Eliza George T. Peter C living
(2) 11th December 1889 Lismore	South Woodburn George Bale	E. Dean W. Gollan	70 years N.S. Wales	(2) 24 (3) Henry Thomas	

Death Certificate of my great great grand mother Rosina Thomas (Nee Smith) Woodburn NSW 2nd December 1889

William Henry Thomas was aged 21 when his father Henry died in 1858. William seems to have led a quite life as there is little mention of him in the papers of the time; until he was in his mid 40s when he starts to make an appearance.

In this case from April 1883 William was enjoying a drink when approached by Police.



KIAMA POLICE COURT.

TUESDAY, APRIL 10.

BEFORE Messrs. H. Connell, M. N. Hindmarsh, W. R. Hindmarsh, and G. L. Fuller.

William Thomas appeared in answer to a summons by the police for being drunk and disorderly in a public place in Kiama on the night of Saturday, the 7th instant; and also for assaulting the police in the execution of their duty.

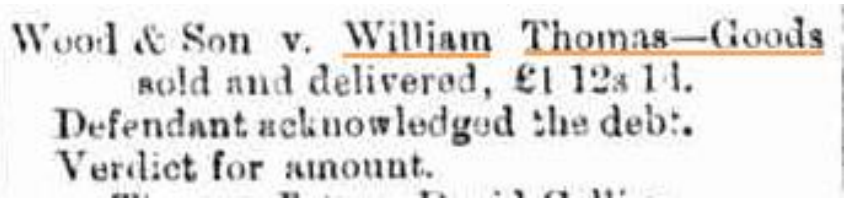
To the first charge defendant pleaded guilty, but in the second not guilty.

Senior-sergeant Healy, being duly sworn, stated that on Saturday night, between eleven and twelve o'clock, he found defendant lying drunk in Bong Bong street. There was another man with him, apparently trying to get him home. He asked

Kiama Independent Friday 13 April 1883

In this case from Nov 1883, when he is living in Kiama, he gets a mention for not paying a debt.

Kiama Courts



Wood & Son v. William Thomas—Goods sold and delivered, £1 12s 1d.
Defendant acknowledged the debt.
Verdict for amount.

Kiama Independent Friday 2nd November 1883

On the 25th October 1883 William Henry Thomas was at 'Eureka house' just north of Kiama visiting the home of Robert and Sarah Jane Ellis. On that night Robert Ellis died of Emphysema; the result of working at the Kiama basalt mines and acquiring this deadly dust disease. The events of that night were covered in the Kiama Independent newspaper of 2nd November 1883 (below).

KIAMA POLICE COURT.

TUESDAY, OCTOBER 30.

BEFORE Messrs. H. Connell, J. Conway, and W. H. Grey.

Police v. G. Tory.—Allowing disorderly conduct in his licensed public-house.

Mr. Haventein, who appeared for the defendant, asked for a postponement of the case for a week, as his client was absent from the district.

The case was consequently postponed till Tuesday next, 6th November.

Sarah Jane Ellis v John William Gibbs—Abusive language calculated to cause a breach of the peace.

Sarah Jane Ellis deposed: On the 25th instant defendant went into her premises at Eureka House, and stated that he was authorised to take charge of the place, and would remain there till morning. He called her a b——y w——e, and made use of other abusive words. She ordered him off the premises, but he said he would not go but remain as long as he liked. Her husband was lying dead in the adjoining room at the time; he had been dead only a few hours. A man named Thomas was there at the time; he had been rendering assistance in attending to her husband before he died.

William Thomas corroborated the above statement.

John William Gibbs, being sworn, stated that he went to Mrs. Ellis' house on the 25th instant to see her sick husband; he was met at the wash-house by Mrs. Ellis and Thomas, who were both drunk and refused him admittance. He denied making use of the alleged abusive language.

Defendant was fined £3, in default two months in Wollongong gaol with hard labour.

Article in the Kiama Independent about the death of Robert Ellis Friday 2nd November 1883

Robert and Sarah Jane Ellis were long term residents of the Shoalhaven river area and for many years Robert had been a punt man on Broughton Creek. It is highly likely the Ellis's and William Henry Thomas had been acquaintances for a considerable time.

Living with the Ellis's at Eureka was 6-year-old Elizabeth Gertrude Hammell, the daughter of Barrister Pierce O'Keeffe and his house maid Mary Ann Hamill. After Robert Ellis's death, Sarah Jane Ellis married William Henry Thomas at St James Church of England Sydney on the 17th December 1884, Elizabeth then effectively became the foster child of William Henry Thomas.

Six years later in 1891 Elizabeth Gertrude Hammell fell pregnant to William Henry Thomas and they had a daughter born on the 25th July 1892 named Sarah Jane Osborn Hammell.

Pierce O'Keeffe
b. 1845 Maitland NSW
d. 1878 Maitland NSW
Buried at Morpeth

\+ **Mary Ann Hamill**
b. 1850 Parramatta
d. 1887 Hunters Hill

Charles Hangan
(aka Henry Thomas)
b. 1809 Hobart Tas
d. 1858 Terara NSW

\+ **Rosina Smith**
b. 1802 Bramfield Hertfordshire UK
d. 1889 Woodburn NSW

Ethel May Hammell
(aka Elizabeth Gertrude Hammell)
b. 1877 Sydney
d. 1923 Parramatta

\+ **William Henry Thomas**
b. 1837 Anvil Creek NSW
d. 1893 Castle Hill NSW

Sarah Jane Osborn Hammell (Floyd)
b. 1892 Castle Hill
d. 1981 Kiama (Sarah died under the name of Probert)
Buried at Kiama NSW Australia

Chart showing the parents and grand parents of Sarah Jane Osborn Hammell.
(Sarah Jane Hammell married George Daniel Brien in 1912 and they were my grand parents)



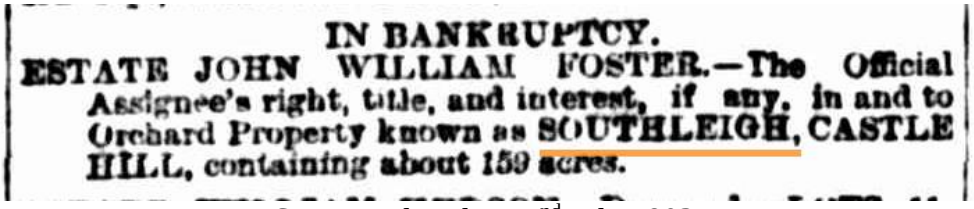
Charles Thomas (standing b. 1833), brother of my great grandfather William Henry Thomas (i.e. my great grand uncle)

The fellow sitting is Henry Thomas, the son of Charles Thomas [696]

What became of the Foster's of Southleigh?

From 1890 to about 1895 Australia experienced a severe depression. To make things worse, just as the economy was picking up in late 1894, the worst drought ever recorded in Australia set in. Known as the 'The Federation Drought' it lasted until 1903. It was during this period that most of the large orchards around Castle Hill were forced to close and disappeared forever. [697]

Southleigh was hit particularly hard by the drought as it was situated on top of a hill with no permanent water courses. The lack of rain over several years had a major impact on the Foster's fruit production causing them to take on substantial debt. The drought reached its climax in 1902 and in 1903 John Williams-Foster was declared bankrupt.

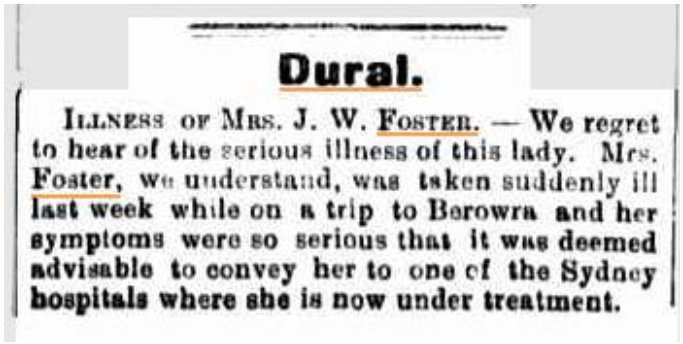


IN BANKRUPTCY.

ESTATE JOHN WILLIAM FOSTER.—The Official Assignee's right, title, and interest, if any, in and to Orchard Property known as SOUTHLEIGH, CASTLE HILL, containing about 159 acres.

SMH Wednesday 22nd July 1903

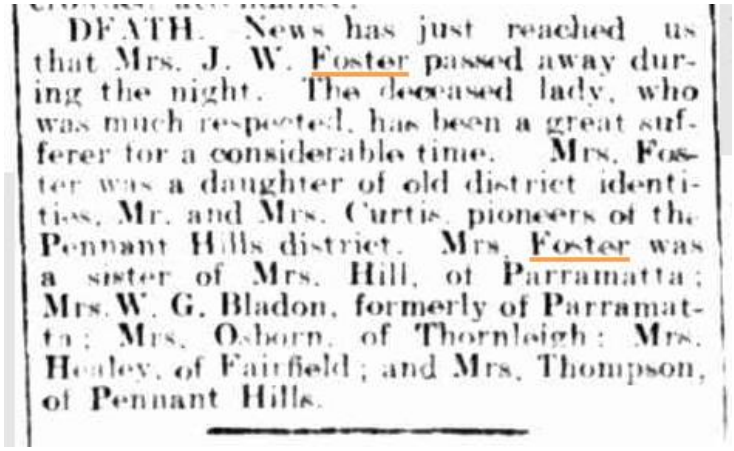
Around the same time John's wife Catherine Williams-Foster became very ill.



Dural.

ILLNESS OF MRS. J. W. FOSTER. — We regret to hear of the serious illness of this lady. Mrs. Foster, we understand, was taken suddenly ill last week while on a trip to Berowra and her symptoms were so serious that it was deemed advisable to convey her to one of the Sydney hospitals where she is now under treatment.

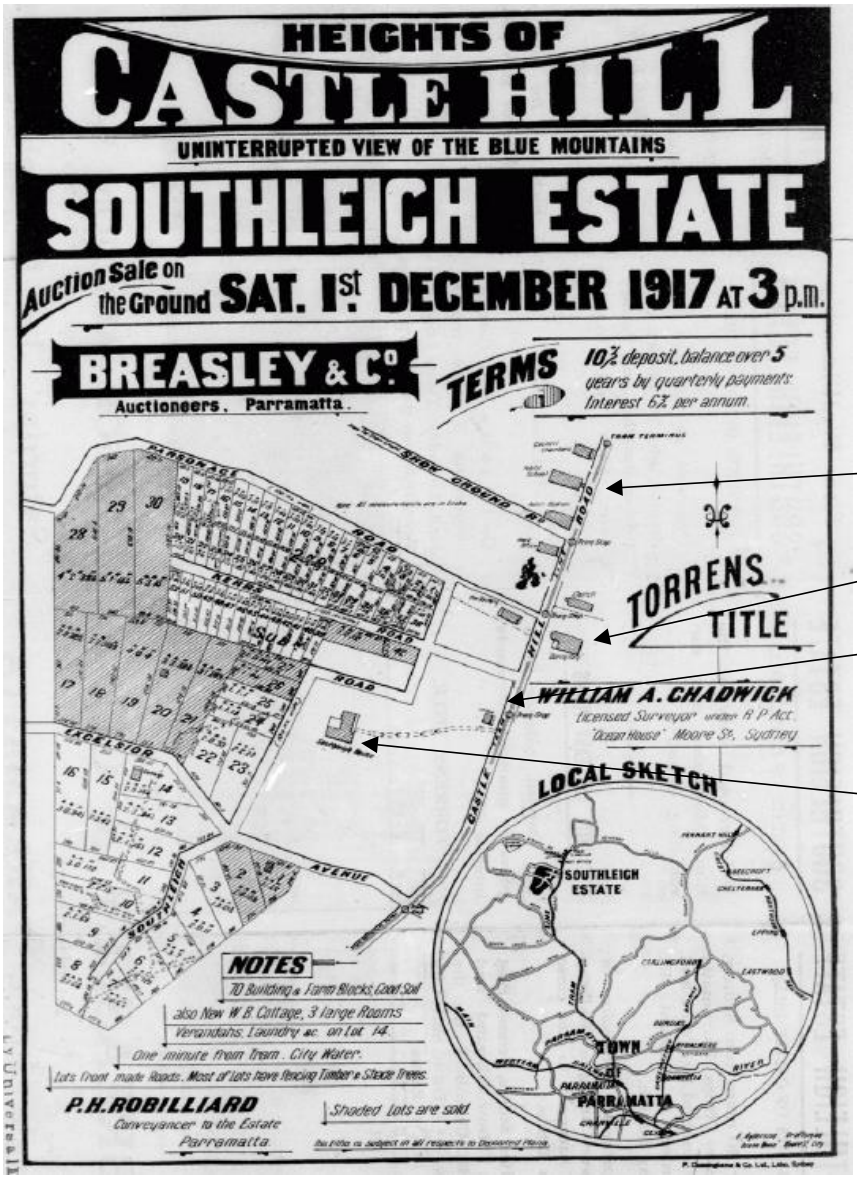
Article saying Catherine Williams Foster was ill Parramatta Argus Saturday 12th April 1902



DEATH. News has just reached us that Mrs. J. W. Foster passed away during the night. The deceased lady, who was much respected, has been a great sufferer for a considerable time. Mrs. Foster was a daughter of old district identities, Mr. and Mrs. Curtis, pioneers of the Pennant Hills district. Mrs. Foster was a sister of Mrs. Hill, of Parramatta; Mrs. W. G. Bladon, formerly of Parramatta; Mrs. Osborn, of Thornleigh; Mrs. Healey, of Fairfield; and Mrs. Thompson, of Pennant Hills.

On the 20th April 1906 Catherine Williams-Foster died.

In 1917 a large portion of Southleigh was subdivided. This ad from the SMH of November that year shows the location of Southleigh house, the cottage where the Thomas's lived as well as the school Elizabeth attended.



A quote from the St. Gabriel's School website tells us what happened next to Southleigh.

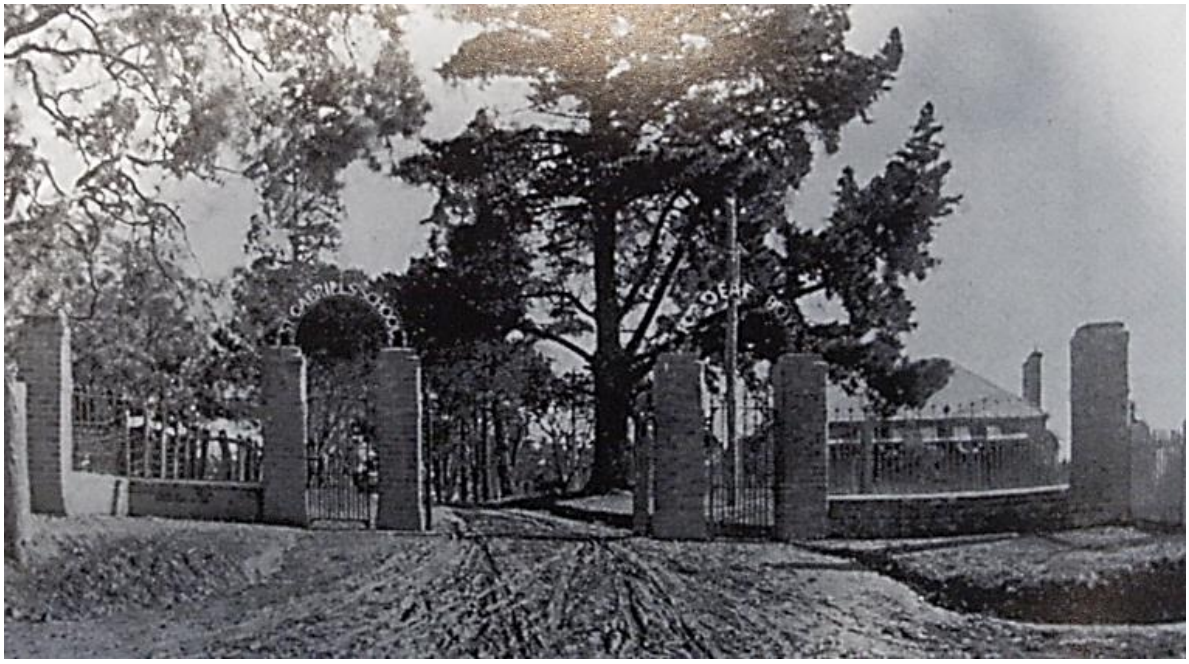
"In 1922 the Christian Brothers were committed to find a suitable property in Sydney to establish a school for the Catholic deaf and dumb boys of Australia. After many weeks searching, a property was selected at Castle Hill. It consisted of a fine old residence, a cottage nearer the road and 35 acres of good land." In 1922 Southleigh house became part of St. Gabriel's School at Castle Hill. The house was used as a residence for the Christian Brothers until 1937; when it caught alight during a storm. Presumably it was struck by lightning, but an article from the local paper at the time suggests it was an electrical fault brought on by the storm. Southleigh house was guttered in the ensuing fire and nothing remains of the house today.

John Williams-Foster died on the 26th June 1927. He was 84.

grandmother of Ida Dennison. Requiescat in pace.

FOSTER.—June 26, 1927, at private hospital, Parramatta, J. W. Foster, late of Dural, aged 84 years.

Argus Monday 27 June 1927



The front gate of Southleigh in 1923 (above) The same scene in 2020 (below)

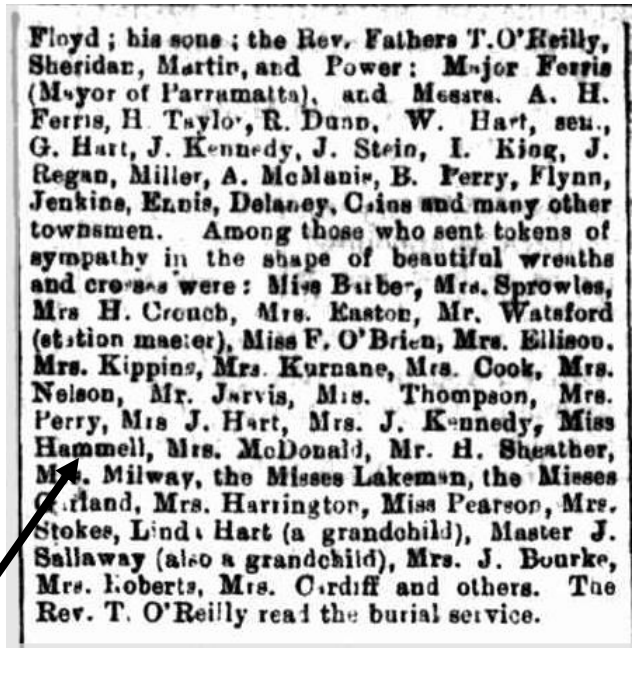


What happened to Sarah Jane Thomas, Elizabeth and Sarah Hammell after Southleigh?

I can't identify exactly when Sarah Jane Thomas, Elizabeth and baby Sarah Jane Hammell left Southleigh, but Sarah was obviously old enough when she left to develop a memory of the place.

About 1930 Sarah took her husband George Daniel Brien and some of her children to have a look at the house she had been born. Lorna Brien recalled Sarah described the place exactly and also said she had some bad memories of the place.

Their date for them leaving Southleigh was probably between late 1895 and early 1896. From the Argus newspaper we know Elizabeth Hammell attended the funeral of William Floyd Sr in Parramatta on the 25th April 1896. It is probable that she was still living in Castle Hill at that time, but more likely she had already made the move to Parramatta.



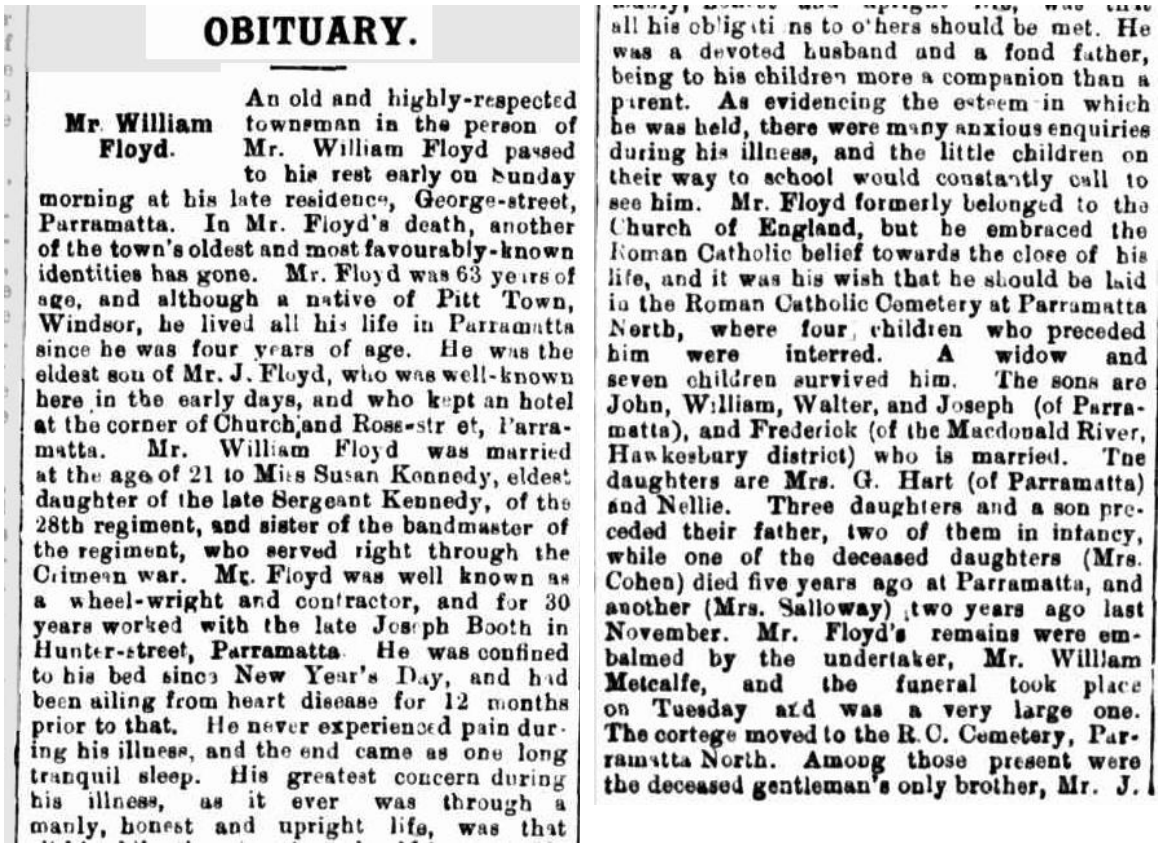
Floyd ; his sons ; the Rev. Fathers T.O'Reilly, Sheridan, Martin, and Power: Major Ferris (Mayor of Parramatta), and Messrs. A. H. Ferris, H. Taylor, R. Dunn, W. Hart, sen., G. Hart, J. Kennedy, J. Stein, I. King, J. Regan, Miller, A. McManis, B. Perry, Flynn, Jenkins, Ennis, Delaney, Cains and many other townsmen. Among those who sent tokens of sympathy in the shape of beautiful wreaths and crosses were: Miss Barber, Mrs. Sprowles, Mrs H. Crouch, Mrs. Easton, Mr. Watsford (station master), Miss F. O'Brien, Mrs. Ellison, Mrs. Kippins, Mrs. Kurnane, Mrs. Cook, Mrs. Nelson, Mr. Jarvis, Mrs. Thompson, Mrs. Perry, Mrs J. Hart, Mrs. J. Kennedy, Miss Hammell, Mrs. McDonald, Mr. H. Sheather, Mrs. Milway, the Misses Lakeman, the Misses Garland, Mrs. Harrington, Miss Pearson, Mrs. Stokes, Linda Hart (a grandchild), Master J. Sallaway (also a grandchild), Mrs. J. Bourke, Mrs. Roberts, Mrs. Cardiff and others. The Rev. T. O'Reilly read the burial service.

Elizabeth Hammell attended the funeral of William Floyd Sr. Argus 25th Apr 1896

From April 1896 onwards Elizabeth and her guardian Sarah Jane Thomas appear quite regularly in the Cumberland Argus newspaper, so from this point on we know a surprising amount about their whereabouts.

The first mention of them is on the 25th of April 1896 when Elizabeth Hammell, then 18 is listed among those sending a wreath at the funeral of William Floyd Sr. William was the father of Elizabeth's future husband William Joseph Floyd.

Information we have from Annie Floyd is that her mother Elizabeth was a Dressmaker. We know that from about 1890 Ellen (Nellie) Floyd ran a dress shop in O'Connell St Parramatta. Ellen was William Floyd's sister; it is probable that Elizabeth worked for Nellie Floyd and became aquatinted with the Floyd's through her.

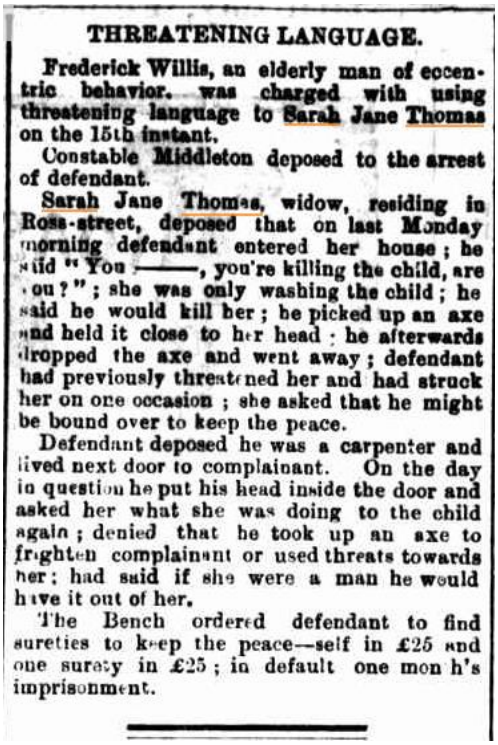


OBITUARY.

Mr. William Floyd.

An old and highly-respected townsman in the person of Mr. William Floyd passed to his rest early on Sunday morning at his late residence, George-street, Parramatta. In Mr. Floyd's death, another of the town's oldest and most favourably-known identities has gone. Mr. Floyd was 63 years of age, and although a native of Pitt Town, Windsor, he lived all his life in Parramatta since he was four years of age. He was the eldest son of Mr. J. Floyd, who was well-known here in the early days, and who kept an hotel at the corner of Church and Ross-str et, Parramatta. Mr. William Floyd was married at the age of 21 to Miss Susan Kennedy, eldest daughter of the late Sergeant Kennedy, of the 28th regiment, and sister of the bandmaster of the regiment, who served right through the Crimean war. Mr. Floyd was well known as a wheel-wright and contractor, and for 30 years worked with the late Joseph Booth in Hunter-street, Parramatta. He was confined to his bed since New Year's Day, and had been ailing from heart disease for 12 months prior to that. He never experienced pain during his illness, and the end came as one long tranquil sleep. His greatest concern during his illness, as it ever was through a manly, honest and upright life, was that all his obligations to others should be met. He was a devoted husband and a fond father, being to his children more a companion than a parent. As evidencing the esteem in which he was held, there were many anxious enquiries during his illness, and the little children on their way to school would constantly call to see him. Mr. Floyd formerly belonged to the Church of England, but he embraced the Roman Catholic belief towards the close of his life, and it was his wish that he should be laid in the Roman Catholic Cemetery at Parramatta North, where four children who preceded him were interred. A widow and seven children survived him. The sons are John, William, Walter, and Joseph (of Parramatta), and Frederick (of the Macdonald River, Hawkesbury district) who is married. The daughters are Mrs. G. Hart (of Parramatta) and Nellie. Three daughters and a son preceded their father, two of them in infancy, while one of the deceased daughters (Mrs. Cohen) died five years ago at Parramatta, and another (Mrs. Salloway) two years ago last November. Mr. Floyd's remains were embalmed by the undertaker, Mr. William Metcalfe, and the funeral took place on Tuesday and was a very large one. The cortege moved to the R.C. Cemetery, Parramatta North. Among those present were the deceased gentleman's only brother, Mr. J.

Obituary of William Floyd Sr. Cumberland Argus 25th April 1896.



THREATENING LANGUAGE.

Frederick Willis, an elderly man of eccentric behavior, was charged with using threatening language to Sarah Jane Thomas on the 15th instant.

Constable Middleton deposed to the arrest of defendant.

Sarah Jane Thomas, widow, residing in Ross-street, deposed that on last Monday morning defendant entered her house; he said "You ——, you're killing the child, are you?"; she was only washing the child; he said he would kill her; he picked up an axe and held it close to her head; he afterwards dropped the axe and went away; defendant had previously threatened her and had struck her on one occasion; she asked that he might be bound over to keep the peace.

Defendant deposed he was a carpenter and lived next door to complainant. On the day in question he put his head inside the door and asked her what she was doing to the child again; denied that he took up an axe to frighten complainant or used threats towards her; had said if she were a man he would have it out of her.

The Bench ordered defendant to find sureties to keep the peace—self in £25 and one surety in £25; in default one month's imprisonment.

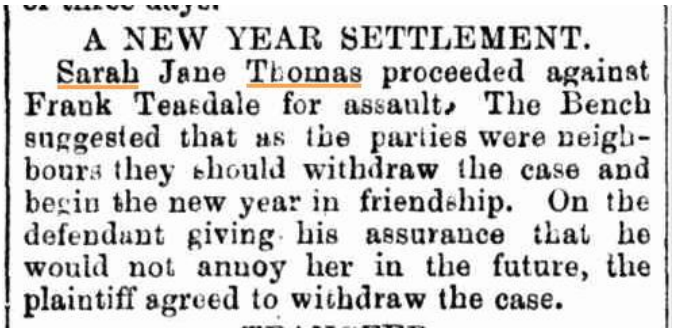
Argus Saturday 20 February 1897

In Feb 1897 Elizabeth's guardian Sarah Jane Thomas finds herself in a neighbour dispute and is reported in the Argus.

This article places Sarah Jane Thomas and Elizabeth Hammell in Ross St Parramatta in February 1897.

The child mentioned in the story is my Grandma; Sarah Hammell aged 4 ½.

This later article from Jan 1898 places Sarah and Elizabeth in Ross St near the corner of Sorrell St. We can tell this because we know where their neighbour Frank Teasdale was living.

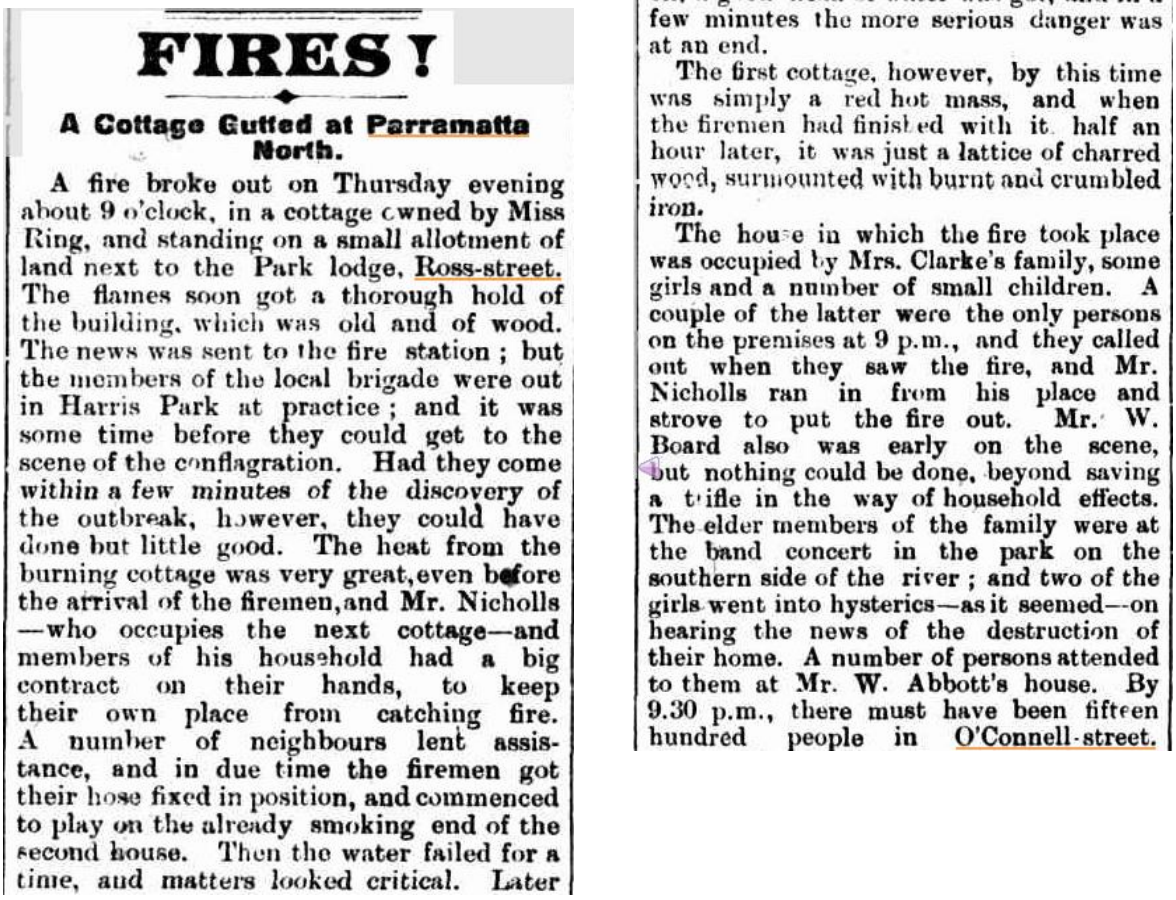


A NEW YEAR SETTLEMENT.

Sarah Jane Thomas proceeded against Frank Teasdale for assault. The Bench suggested that as the parties were neighbours they should withdraw the case and begin the new year in friendship. On the defendant giving his assurance that he would not annoy her in the future, the plaintiff agreed to withdraw the case.

Argus Saturday 8 January 1898

On the 25th March 1899 there was a fire in Ross St that Sarah said she witnessed and later recounted the story to Keith Brien. Keith has great memories of this story and he recalled that he heard it over the years many times, and each time Sarah would add some ridiculous embellishment that made the firemen "sound like the Keystone Cops."



FIRES!

A Cottage Gutted at Parramatta North.

A fire broke out on Thursday evening about 9 o'clock, in a cottage owned by Miss Ring, and standing on a small allotment of land next to the Park lodge, Ross-street. The flames soon got a thorough hold of the building, which was old and of wood. The news was sent to the fire station; but the members of the local brigade were out in Harris Park at practice; and it was some time before they could get to the scene of the conflagration. Had they come within a few minutes of the discovery of the outbreak, however, they could have done but little good. The heat from the burning cottage was very great, even before the arrival of the firemen, and Mr. Nicholls—who occupies the next cottage—and members of his household had a big contract on their hands, to keep their own place from catching fire. A number of neighbours lent assistance, and in due time the firemen got their hose fixed in position, and commenced to play on the already smoking end of the second house. Then the water failed for a time, and matters looked critical. Later on, a good head of water was got, and in a few minutes the more serious danger was at an end.

The first cottage, however, by this time was simply a red hot mass, and when the firemen had finished with it half an hour later, it was just a lattice of charred wood, surmounted with burnt and crumbled iron.

The house in which the fire took place was occupied by Mrs. Clarke's family, some girls and a number of small children. A couple of the latter were the only persons on the premises at 9 p.m., and they called out when they saw the fire, and Mr. Nicholls ran in from his place and strove to put the fire out. Mr. W. Board also was early on the scene, but nothing could be done, beyond saving a trifle in the way of household effects. The elder members of the family were at the band concert in the park on the southern side of the river; and two of the girls went into hysterics—as it seemed—on hearing the news of the destruction of their home. A number of persons attended to them at Mr. W. Abbott's house. By 9.30 p.m., there must have been fifteen hundred people in O'Connell-street.

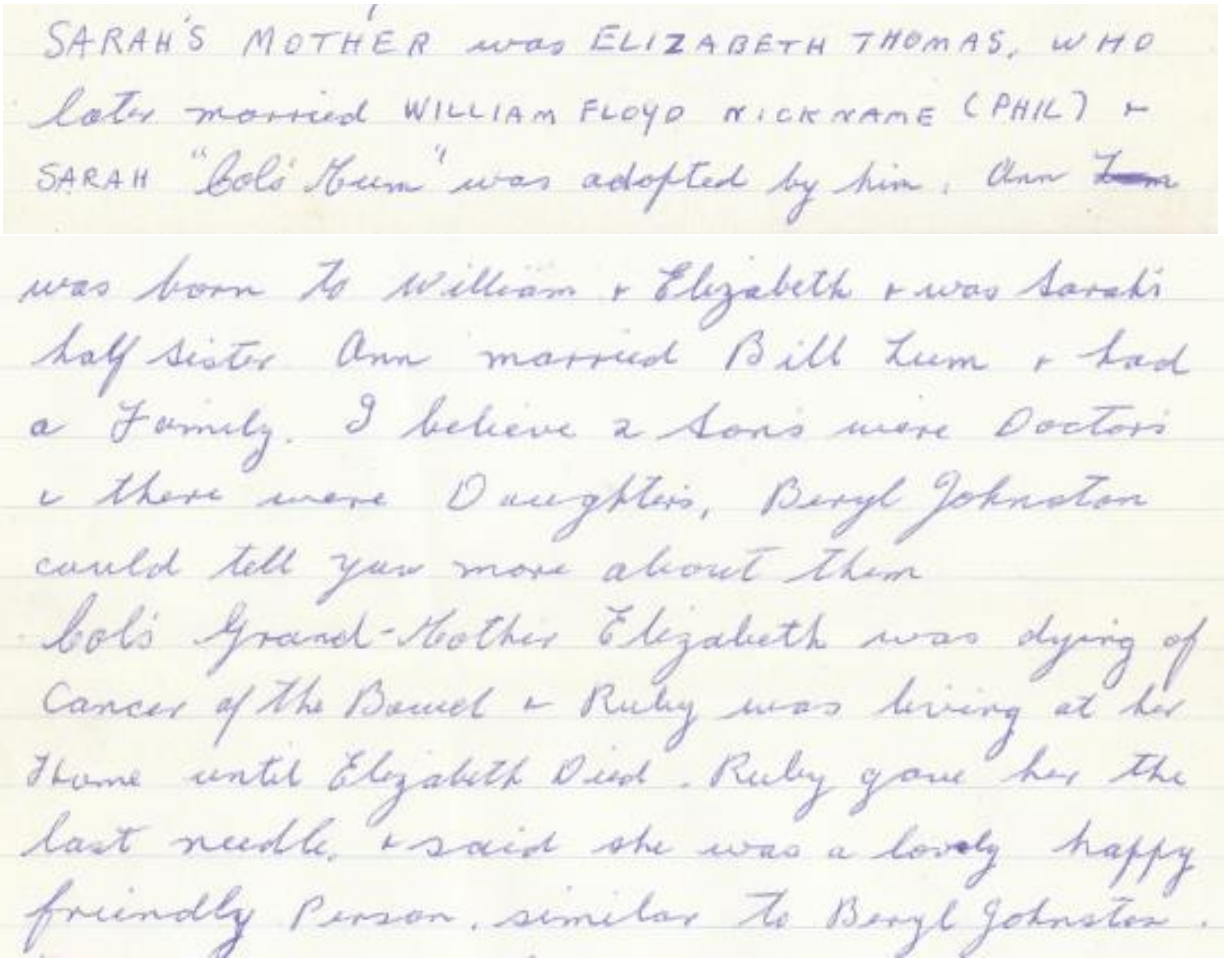
Fire in Ross St Parramatta Cumberland Argus Saturday 25th March 1899

My cousin Keith Brien also recounts the story where people would turn up of an evening to see a recurring vision of the Virgin Mary. Just as the sun was setting a light would flash upon a wall of a building and the waiting crowd would be in awe. Until someone discovered that a new glass door had been installed in the pub on the corner & the light flashing on the wall was the sun reflecting on the glass when someone opened the door and stumbled out drunk into the street.

In 1980 Ruby Floyd spoke with Colin & Veronica Brien and Colin took notes of Ruby's memories. These notes were summarised in a letter to George Brien sent by Veronica in 1997. In these notes Ruby said she had always known Sarah's mum as Elizabeth Thomas, and Sarah as Sarah Thomas. Ruby described Sarah's mum Elizabeth as being "a lovely happy friendly person, similar to Beryl Johnson."

In the letter Ruby refers to Annie Floyd as 'Ann'. This wasn't a short version of 'Annie', it seems that many people didn't know that Annie was her correct name and that she had always preferred and used Ann.

Ruby Brien mentions William Floyd's nick name was 'Phil'. When I first interviewed my uncle Les Brien on his memories of the family, he believed William Floyd's real name was actually Phillip Floyd.

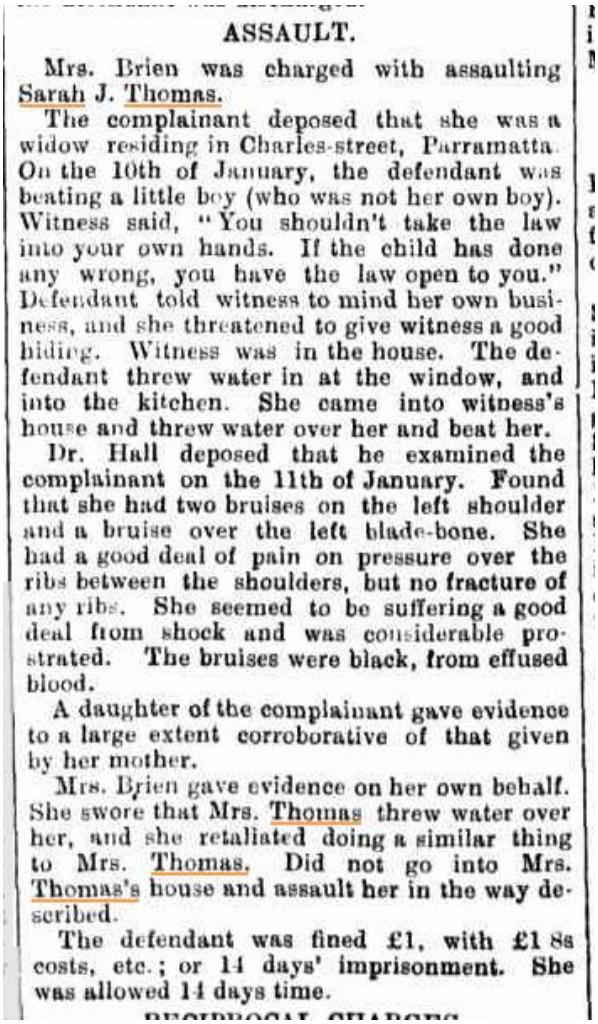


SARAH'S MOTHER was ELIZABETH THOMAS, WHO later married WILLIAM FLOYD NICKNAME (PHIL) + SARAH "Bob's Mum" was adopted by him. Ann Tum was born to William + Elizabeth + was Sarah's half sister Ann married Bill Tum + had a Family. I believe 2 Sons were Doctors + there were Daughters, Beryl Johnston could tell you more about them

Bob's Grand-Mother Elizabeth was dying of Cancer of the Bowel + Ruby was living at her Home until Elizabeth Died. Ruby gave her the last needle + said she was a lovely happy friendly Person, similar to Beryl Johnston.

Ruby Brien (Floyd) stated that when she & Sarah were young, they lived next door to each other for a short time and used to play together. We know when and where this was through an incident that occurred between the two families that was reported in the Cumberland Argus newspaper.

By January 1901 Elizabeth & Sarah had moved from Ross St to Charles St Parramatta. On the 23rd January The Argus reported a neighbour dispute in Charles St between Sarah Jane Thomas and Mary Brien, wife of George Brien our great great grand parents.



ASSAULT.

Mrs. Brien was charged with assaulting Sarah J. Thomas.

The complainant deposed that she was a widow residing in Charles-street, Parramatta. On the 10th of January, the defendant was beating a little boy (who was not her own boy). Witness said, "You shouldn't take the law into your own hands. If the child has done any wrong, you have the law open to you." Defendant told witness to mind her own business, and she threatened to give witness a good hiding. Witness was in the house. The defendant threw water in at the window, and into the kitchen. She came into witness's house and threw water over her and beat her.

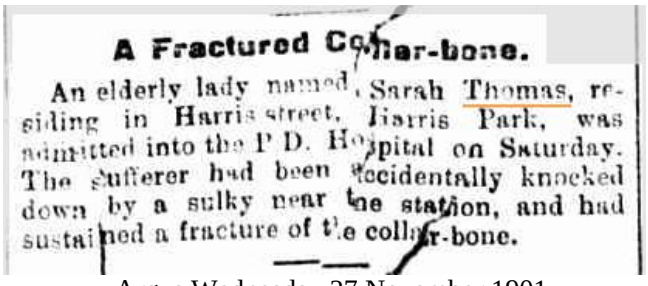
Dr. Hall deposed that he examined the complainant on the 11th of January. Found that she had two bruises on the left shoulder and a bruise over the left blade-bone. She had a good deal of pain on pressure over the ribs between the shoulders, but no fracture of any ribs. She seemed to be suffering a good deal from shock and was considerable prostrated. The bruises were black, from effused blood.

A daughter of the complainant gave evidence to a large extent corroborative of that given by her mother.

Mrs. Brien gave evidence on her own behalf. She swore that Mrs. Thomas threw water over her, and she retaliated doing a similar thing to Mrs. Thomas. Did not go into Mrs. Thomas's house and assault her in the way described.

The defendant was fined £1, with £1 8s costs, etc.; or 14 days' imprisonment. She was allowed 14 days time.

Argus Wednesday 23 January 1901



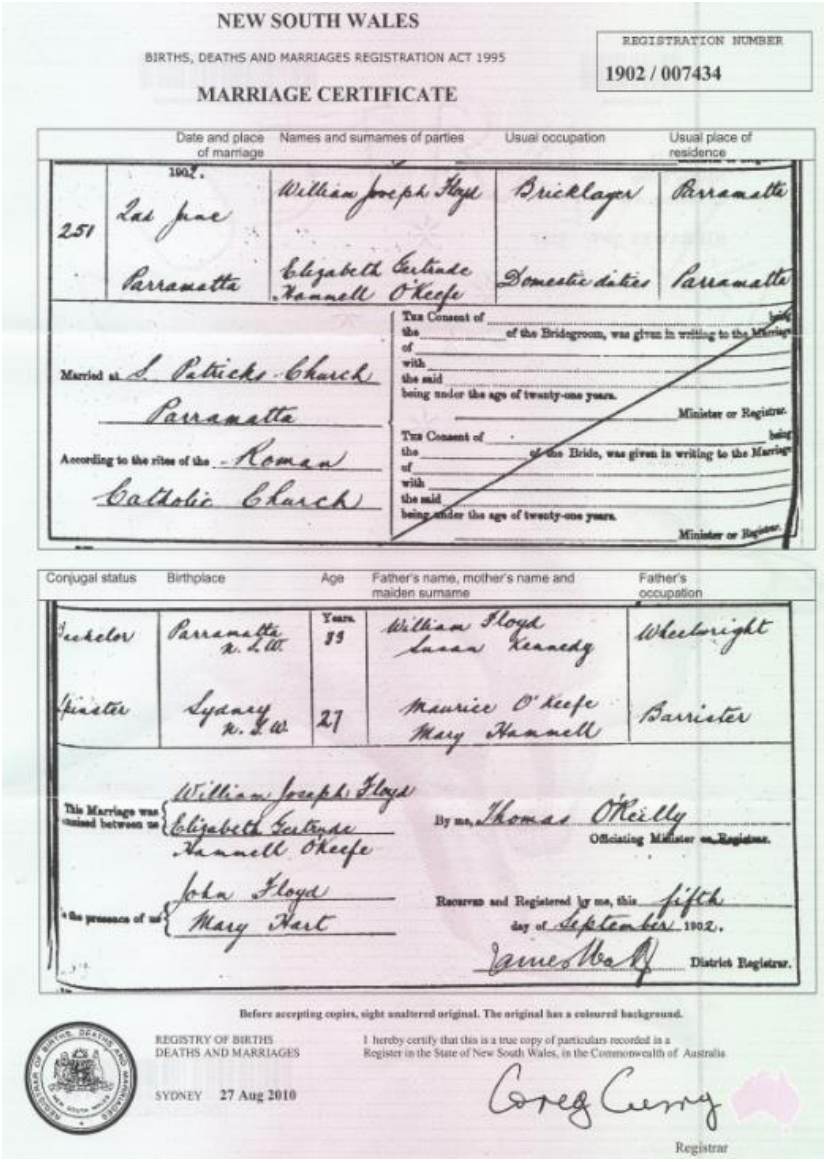
A Fractured Collar-bone.

An elderly lady named Sarah Thomas, residing in Harris street, Harris Park, was admitted into the P D. Hospital on Saturday. The sufferer had been accidentally knocked down by a sulky near the station, and had sustained a fracture of the collar-bone.

Argus Wednesday 27 November 1901

Ruby Floyd said that Sarah's family moved away and this is shown to be correct through this article from The Argus. We can see that by Nov 1901 Sarah Jane Thomas, Elizabeth & Sarah had moved to Harris St, Harris Park

Graham Lum recalled a story from his mother Annie Floyd that Elizabeth Hammell was living in Harris St. Harris Park when she married William Joseph Floyd. This marriage took place at St Patrick's church Parramatta on the 2nd June 1902.



NEW SOUTH WALES

BIRTHS, DEATHS AND MARRIAGES REGISTRATION ACT 1995

REGISTRATION NUMBER
1902 / 007434

MARRIAGE CERTIFICATE

	Date and place of marriage	Names and surnames of parties	Usual occupation	Usual place of residence
251	1902. 2nd June Parramatta	William Joseph Floyd	Bricklayer	Parramatta
		Elizabeth Gertrude Hammell O'Keefe	Domestic duties	Parramatta

Married at St Patricks Church Parramatta

According to the rites of the Roman Catholic Church

The Consent of _____ the _____ of the Bridegroom, was given in writing to the Marriage of _____ with _____ the said _____ being under the age of twenty-one years.

_____ Minister or Registrar.

The Consent of _____ the _____ of the Bride, was given in writing to the Marriage of _____ with _____ the said _____ being under the age of twenty-one years.

_____ Minister or Registrar.

Conjugal status	Birthplace	Age	Father's name, mother's name and maiden surname	Father's occupation
Bachelor	Parramatta N.S.W.	Years. 33	William Floyd Susan Kennedy	Wheelwright
Spinster	Sydney N.S.W.	27	Maurice O'Keefe Mary Hammell	Barrister

This Marriage was contracted between us { William Joseph Floyd / Elizabeth Gertrude Hammell O'Keefe }

In the presence of us { John Floyd / Mary Hart }

By me, Thomas O'Reilly
Officiating Minister or Registrar.

Received and Registered by me, this fifth day of September 1902.

James Ball
District Registrar.

Before accepting copies, sight unaltered original. The original has a coloured background.

REGISTRY OF BIRTHS DEATHS AND MARRIAGES

I hereby certify that this is a true copy of particulars recorded in a Register in the State of New South Wales, in the Commonwealth of Australia

SYDNEY 27 Aug 2010

Greg Curry
Registrar

Marriage certificate of Elizabeth Gertrude Hammell and William Joseph Floyd 2nd June 1902

Elizabeth Gertrude Hammell's real age was 25 when she was married and William Joseph Floyd aged 33. William was a brick layer living in Hassell St Parramatta at the time. It is interesting to note that Elizabeth maintains the 2 extra years added to her real age. She says she's 27 but we know from her birth certificate that she was really 25.

It looks like Elizabeth wasn't sure (or had forgotten) the true name of her father. She knew her mother Mary Hammell had been a Catholic and she asked the priest at Parramatta to do a search for her baptism certificate as she wanted to be married in the Catholic Church.

Graham Lum tells the story that they searched all over, including down the South Coast for Elizabeth's baptism certificate but could not find it so they issued her a new one. In the process of searching however they found an O'Keeffe in the legal profession who they assumed must have been Elizabeth's father, but they got the wrong guy. They named by mistake Pierce's younger brother Maurice O'Keeffe who was a solicitor.

Note that one of the witnesses of the 1902 wedding was a 'Mary Hart'. This was William Floyd's sister who had married their neighbour George Hart in 1883, uncle of pioneering aviator William Hart. The other witness was William Floyd's brother John Floyd.

Shortly after their marriage William Floyd arranged for Sarah, now 10 years old, to be renamed as part of her adoption process. The story I heard is that her mum Elizabeth, asked Sarah if she wanted to pick a new name. Sarah picked Sarah Cecelia and changed from being 'Sarah Jane Osborn Hammell' to become 'Sarah Cecelia Floyd' – Cis for short.

After their 1902 marriage Elizabeth, Sarah (Cis) & William Floyd were living in Hassell Street in Harris Park close to Parramatta railway station. We know that old Sarah Jane Thomas was living with them as Sarah told Veronica Brien that she used to share a bed with her Grandma (Sarah thought Sarah Jane Thomas was her real Grandma – and called her "Granny Hill").

In 1902 Elizabeth & William Floyd had a son named John Floyd. He was born premature & died soon after birth. He was buried at the Presbyterian Cemetery. Graham Lum said he was named after William Floyd's brother John.

In 1904 the Floyd's moved into a house in Argyle St and remained there until 1908 after which they moved into 121b George St. The Floyd's continued to care for old Sarah Jane Thomas until her death on the 12th May 1905 at Walter Floyd's house in Mays Hill.

The 1902 marriage certificate is the only official document I can find that provides a definite link between O'Keeffe the Barrister, the name Hammell, Sarah's birth certificate and Elizabeth's false age.

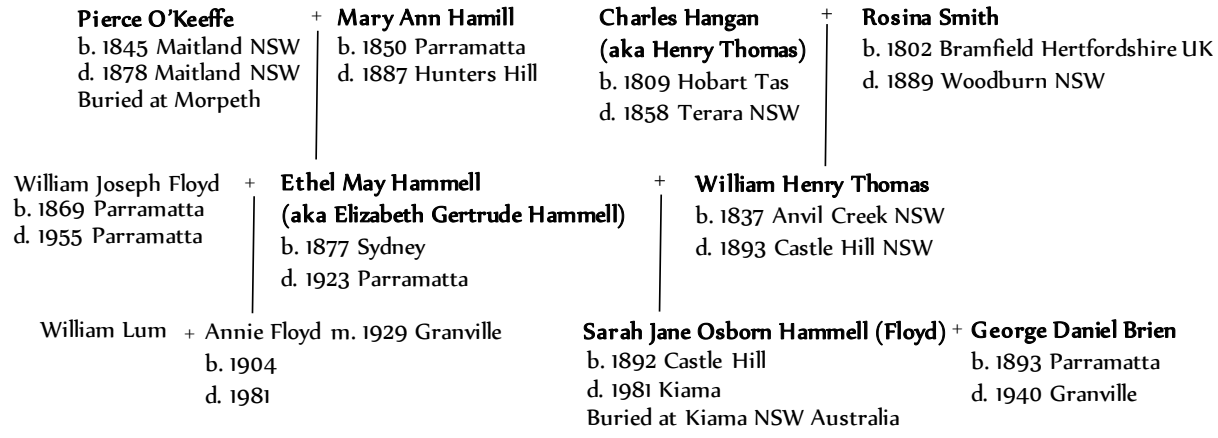


Chart showing the relationship between the half-sisters Sarah Hammell and Annie Floyd

In 1905 Annie Floyd was born. Here is a photo of Annie (on the left) with her friend, when she was aged about 16.



Annie Floyd on left aged about 16

Elizabeth Hammell didn't have the easiest of times being married to William Floyd. William had a drinking problem & Elizabeth tried several times to get the Courts to prohibit hotels in the area to serve him.

A Prohibition Order.

Elizabeth Floyd v. William Joseph Floyd, of George-street, Parramatta. An information was laid by the wife that her husband (the defendant) was injuring his health by excessive drinking, (and she applied for an order of the Court to prohibit publicans serving him with intoxicating liquors.

The defendant did not appear.

Mrs. Floyd went into the box and stated that defendant was her husband. She knew that he got the summons, but he was working that day. Defendant was drinking at the time she laid the information, and she was convinced that his excessive drinking was impairing his health.

The S.M. made an order to restrain publicans from supplying liquor to the defendant.

Argus Wednesday 7 February 1912

From the age of 10 Sarah Jane Hammell attended Arthur Philip school. After Sarah left school at 15 in 1907, she attended a hat making course in Sydney. Sarah travelled to Sydney by train with her good school friend Stella Robinson. Stella was into fashion design and was attending a dress making course. Stella was also a witness to Sarah & George's wedding in 1912.

In 1908 The Floyd's moved to 121b George Street Parramatta and Sarah found herself once again living next door to her friend Ruby Brien. The Briens lived in 121a George Street and I wonder if the Floyd's moving next door was just by chance or if Elizabeth and Ruby's mum (Mary Jane Brien) had kept in touch.

My grand mother

Sarah Jane Osborn Hammell

Taken about 1908 when Sarah was 16



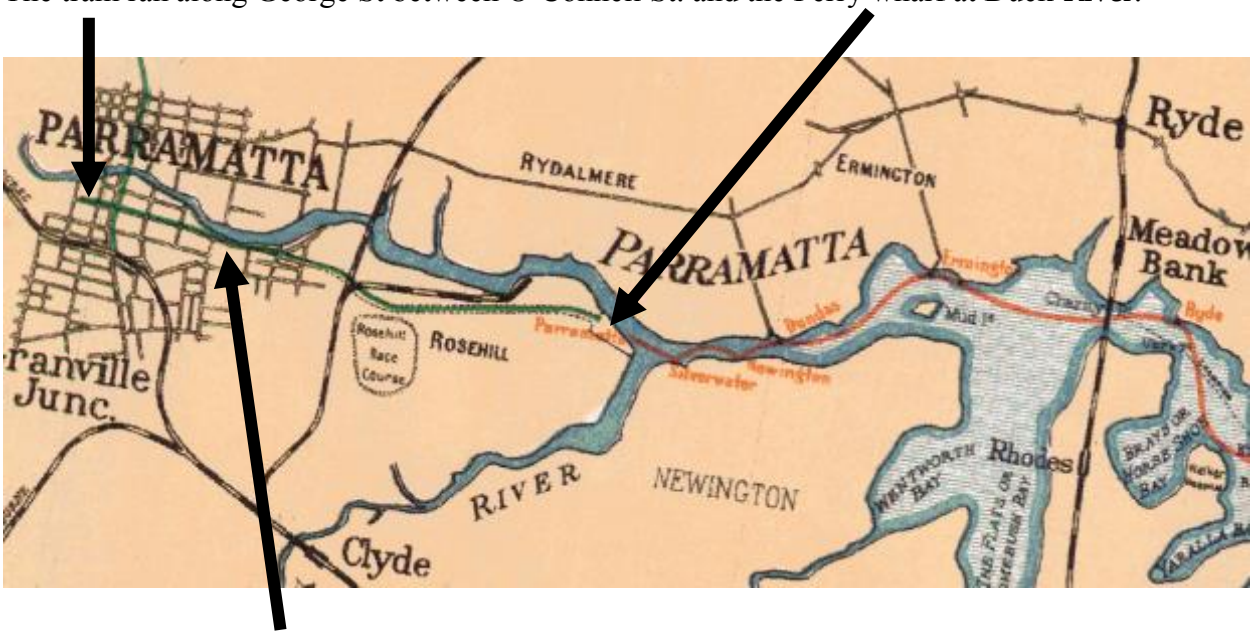
Until 1943 a steam tram ran along George St from the Parramatta city centre to a wharf on the Parramatta river adjacent to Duck River. From there you could catch a ferry to Sydney.



The ferry 'Halcyon' moored on the Parramatta river at the wharf next to the steam tram terminus

In the photo above taken about 1890 the ferry 'Halcyon' is waiting to pick up passengers for the journey to Sydney. In the map below the green line shows the route of the Parramatta steam tram.

The tram ran along George St between O'Connell St. and the Ferry wharf at Duck River.



The Briens and Floyds were neighbours 121a/b George St. Later the Floyds moved to No. 129.

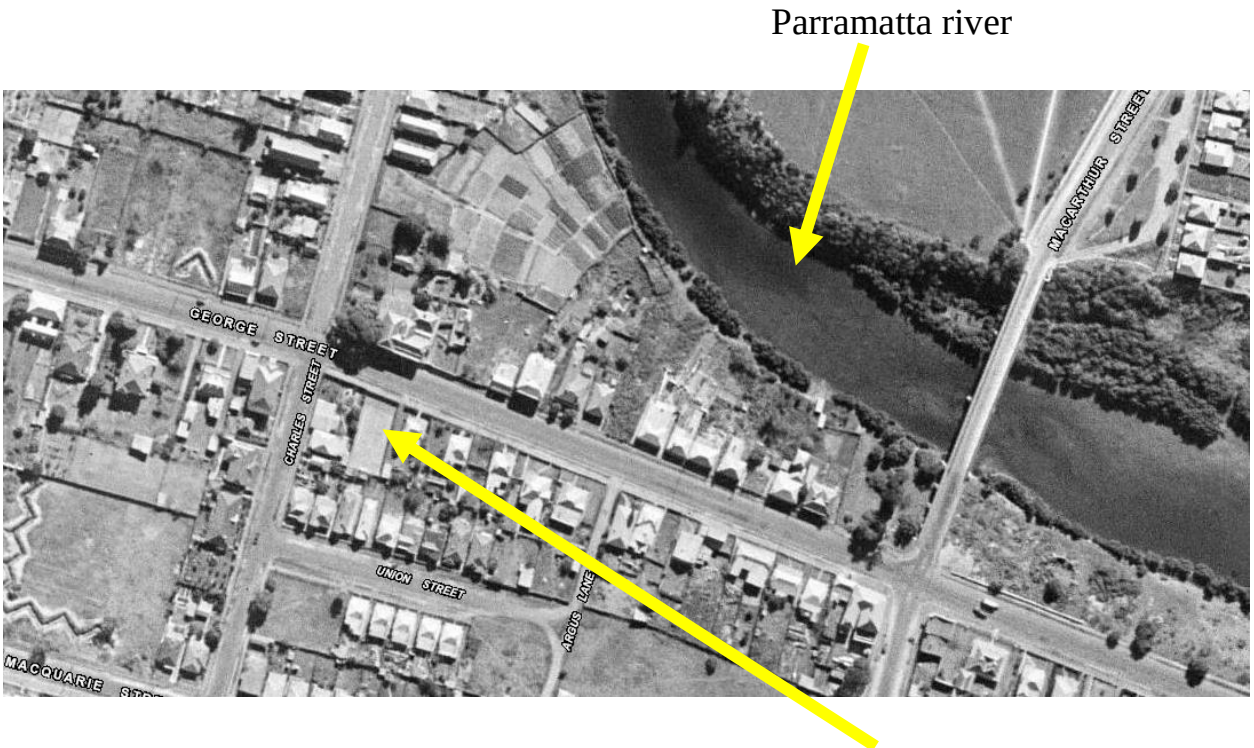


Photo dating from 1943, showing location of the Briens house at 121 George Street Parramatta



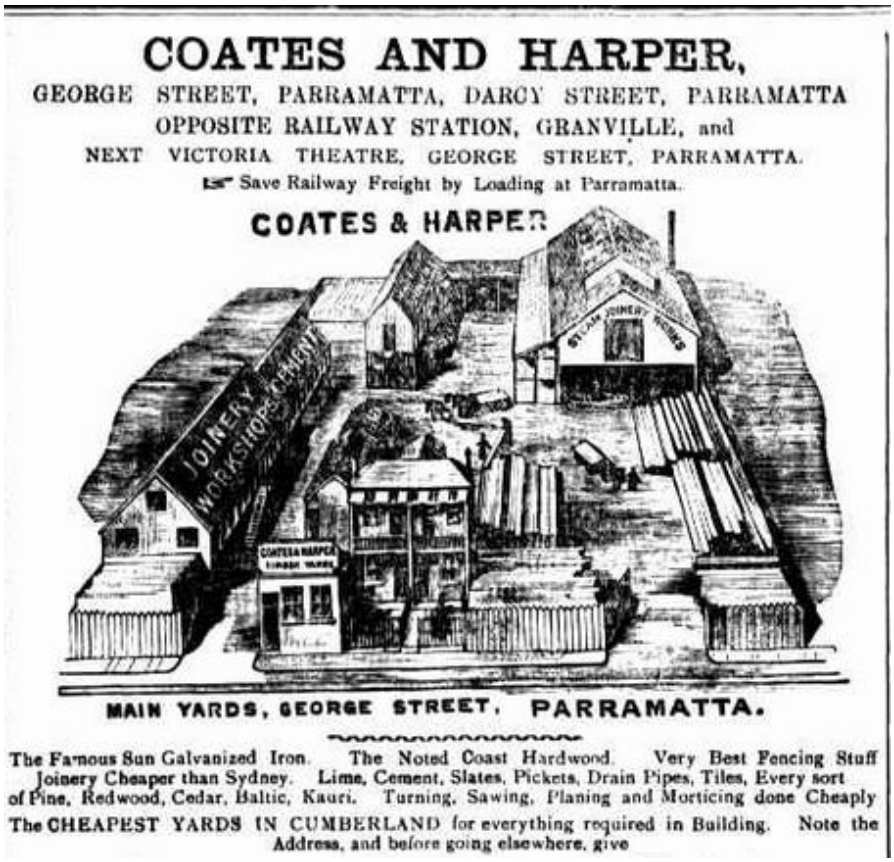
After the trams stopped running along George St. in 1943, the Preservation Society ran them as a tourist attraction through Parramatta Park until 1993.



Photo above of the George Street Steam Tram taken about 1920. Looking west from the corner of Harris Street. The Albion Hotel is on the left, the next house in view could be No. 129 George St, where the Floyds lived, and where my father George William Brien was born in 1914.

Stories are told of the Briens & Floyds catching the steam tram to Sandown meatworks at Rosehill & buy a week's worth of food for 10 shillings. [698]

Just along George St. from the Briens at 59-69 were the timber yards of Coates & Harper. Established in 1854 it would have been a very familiar sight for the Briens & Floyds.

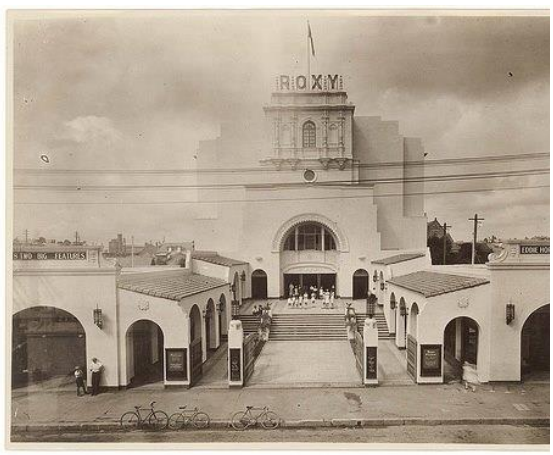


Advert for Coates & Harper Timber Mill George St Parramatta
(Windsor and Richmond Gazette Sat 3rd Jun 1893)

By 1930 the Coates & Harper timber yard had closed and was replaced at 59-69 George St by the Roxy theatre. It was opened on the 6th February 1930 and was "an event of considerable social importance" with "a packed audience and an interested crowd of several thousands in the street opposite the brilliantly-illuminated entrance." [699]

In 1974 the Roxy theatre was classified by the National Trust of Australia (NSW) as an important example of a suburban picture palace.

I can remember going to see movies at the Roxy in the 1960s and 70s. It was closed for a period but opened again in the 1990s and the last time I saw a movie there was about 2000. It ceased operation as a movie theatre in 2002.





Above, two George Street Parramatta land marks. (L) the Roxy Theatre, which opened in 1930 and (R) Perth House, which was used as small private school in 1890s. [700]



Parramatta today. Looking east towards Sydney. The buildings have grown taller, but the river remains much as it was. George St, where the Briens lived, runs along the river in the distance.

William Hart – Australia's first licenced Aviator 1911

We have a connection to William Hart, the first Australian to receive a pilots Licence.

Sarah Hammell's aunty (through adoption) Mary Floyd was married to George Hart who was the uncle of aviator William Hart. Sarah mentioned her close relationship with the Harts and often recounted times she had seen William fly his plane.

William Hart was a vital figure in Australia's aviation history. And his relative obscurity today is simply incredible. He wasn't just one of the true trail blazers. He was Australian Aviator No. 1.

William Ewart Hart was born in Parramatta in 1885, his family owned and operated the Hart, Hitchcock and Co. timber yard in Parramatta. At the age of 16 William began his apprenticeship with the Parramatta dentist Mr. Maxwell, and became a registered dentist at the age of 21. [701]

William Hart had an interest in mechanical things such as cars and motor bikes, and so when representatives from the UK based 'Bristol Aeroplane Company' arrived in Sydney to demonstrate their new "Bristol Boxkite" plane, William was there to see them.

The Bristol Boxkite was based on the design of an aircraft built by French designer Henry Farman. It had a number of improvements over Farman's design and in December 1910 the Bristol Aeroplane Company shipped two Boxkites (Nos. 10 and 11) to Australia where they hoped to pick up a Government contract.

After touring Perth and Melbourne, the Bristol representatives, pilot Joseph Joel Hammond and and his chief mechanic Leslie MacDonald, arrived in Sydney and undertook demonstration flights during April and May 1911. Soon after, Joseph Joel Hammond, who had failed to make any sales, departed Australia to visit New Zealand and left Leslie MacDonald behind in Sydney to ready the planes for shipment back to England.

William Hart had obviously been toying with the idea of purchasing one of the Boxkites and in September 1911 he approached MacDonald to negotiate a purchase. MacDonald telegrammed the Bristol office notifying them of the potential sale and they arrived at a price of £1,333 for plane No. 11. William Hart made the purchase and was belatedly requested to sign an agreement stating he wouldn't copy the design and build his own aircraft. Hart refused and so MacDonald was ordered by Bristol not to provide any aid to Hart in the plane's construction or operation.

MacDonald however was realistic and did indeed provide as much assistance as he could before being recalled to England. In October 1911 the Bristol Boxkite No.11 aircraft, still in its crate, was shipped to a makeshift airfield at Belmore Park, close to Penrith railway station where a large tent was erected as a hanger in which the machine's assembly was undertaken. This location today is marked by the local street name William Hart Crescent.

Unfortunately, before flying could begin the aircraft was flipped and wrecked in a gale. Undeterred, William Hart salvaged the engine and the Boxkite was completely rebuilt at the Hart's timber business in Parramatta using Australian timbers and the family's expertise.

By late October 1911 the reconstruction was complete and Hart spent days on the ground familiarising himself with the planes controls before deciding that he was ready to make his first flight. And so, on the 2nd November 1911, the largely self-taught William Hart became the first Australian to fly solo when he undertook his initial flight around Penrith.

The following day, Friday the 3rd November 1911, William Hart decided he was capable enough to undertake an early morning trip from his Penrith field to Parramatta. With his younger brother Jack as a passenger, the two set off just before 7am with the aim of having breakfast with their father who lived close to Parramatta.

Hart navigated his plane by following the railway line, reaching an altitude of 3000 feet, and taking 19 minutes to cover the 29 kilometres from Penrith to Parramatta Park. Although still a very inexperienced pilot, Hart performed a number of circuits around Parramatta township before landing safely in the windy conditions he discovered when he arrived.

This sortie was the first cross-country flight recorded by an Australian pilot in aviation history. [702]

Sarah, along with her younger sister Annie hurried along George St from their home to Parramatta Park where they met and greeted William Hart. Both Sarah and Annie often recounted this story; made all the more relevant as they knew the Harts personally. Sarah said "it all happened so quick that some people were still in their pyjamas when they rushed out to see him." For the rest of her days, Sarah told anyone who would listen, that she was a member of "The Flying Floyds."



William Hart landed at Parramatta Park on Friday 3rd November 1911

Sarah later described William's plane; a specific memory was that the seat "was like a swing that hung down from the wing."

William Hart's return journey from Parramatta to Penrith took two days as he sheltered over night from a storm after landing on the Best family property ‘Fairholme’ near Seven Hills station.

A reporter from the Cumberland Argus newspaper caught up with William Hart at George Best’s Fairholme property on the afternoon of the 3rd November and interviewed him. An article detailing his flight appeared in the 4th November edition (note the typo in the interview section where it says “on our aeroplane” in lieu of “and his aeroplane”)



The Fly.

Mr. Hart Aeroplanes to Parramatta.

And Away.

On Friday morning, before some of our residents were out and about, Mr. W. Hart, jun., who has been pluming for flight for weeks before, flew from Penrith to Parramatta.

Mr. Hart is son of Mr. W. Hart (of Hart, Hitchcock and Co.), and learned the profession of a dentist. Then he took to learning the intricacies of a motor-machinist's work, and that fired him with the possibilities of an exploration.

He learnt the business of aviation from Mr. McDonald, from whom he bought the machine in which that gentleman carried Captain Niesigh from Sydney to Liverpool on the memorable occasion on which aeroplanes were first used in Australia for military purposes.

AN INTERVIEW.

We picked up Mr. Hart on our aeroplane at Seven Hills. The plucky Parramattan said he had had a pretty good fly.

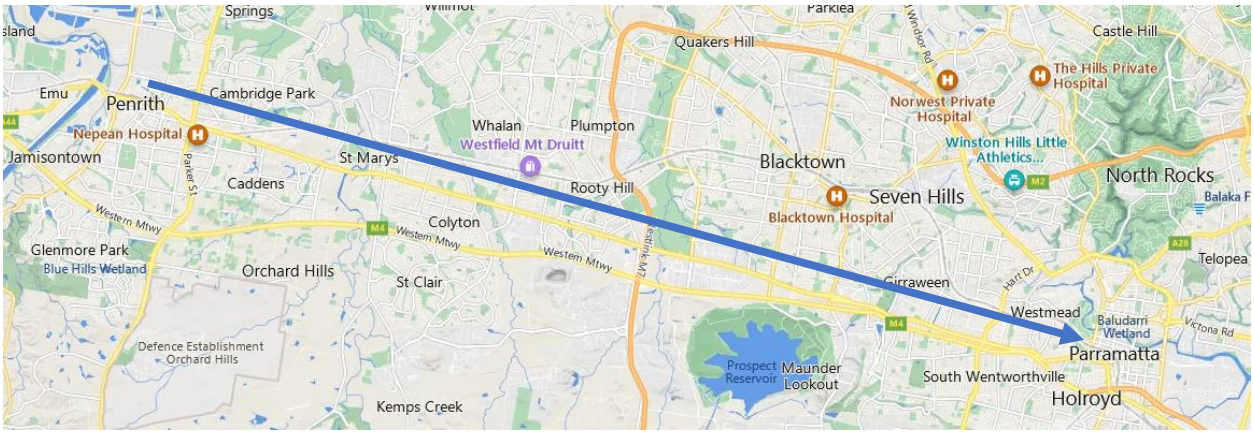
''This morning,'' he said, ''I went up for my second fly all alone. Mr. McDonald, my instructor, has been called away to England, and I was left to my own resources. Yesterday I had some little journeys about Penrith, and shortly after 6 o'clock this morning, I made three trips, two with passengers. These trips were about 15 miles each. Then I thought I would go down to have breakfast with my father at Parramatta. We made a good ascent, about a quarter to seven, and I was in Parramatta within 20 minutes. I was flying about 60 miles an hour, and was up 3000 feet at one time. My brother Jack (who is 16 years of age) accompanied me. At North Rocks we met a nasty wind, which handled the machine like a cork in a gale. She rocked and ducked very much. At times she would stand right up on her tail. Then she would swoop down like a tumbling pigeon, and drop twenty yards without any warning at all.

''We made a beautiful landing in Parramatta Park, and after breakfast I thought I would do a circle or two of my native town with the machine. She flew like a bird at the start, shooting along for about 200 yards a few feet above the ground. Then I let her ascend, to avoid the tree tops at Westmead, and she soared away to a thousand feet in no time. When I got over the trees, I found the wind very choppy, and the machine rocked like a cradle on perpetual motion. So I deemed it better to drop the Parramatta excursion, and make tracks for Penrith. All the way to Seven Hills I had a nasty following wind, which kept bearing the machine towards the ground. I was alone in this fly, as I did not care about taking Jack up with me, owing to the peculiarity of the wind when we got to Parramatta.

''This was only my second trip alone, and, finding the wind so much against me, I thought it not wise to run any undue risk, and I decided to take advantage of the clear paddocks to descend. I made a very good drop, and pulled up in splendid order in Mr. George Best's paddock. As the wind gave no promise of improving, I have roped her down, and hope to get her back to Penrith later in the day.''

Mr. Hart built the whole of the woodwork of the machine himself.

Cumberland Argus Saturday 4th November 1911 p. 6



Map showing William Hart’s historic flight of 1911. A distance of 29 kilometres

On the 16th November 1911 William Hart completed tests under the supervision of the Australian Aerial League which had been created to test and issue licences to aspiring aviators. On the 18th November William flew solo from Penrith to the Royal Agricultural Society’s Showground in Sydney a distance of 76 Km in 55 minutes claiming the first long-distance cross-country flight in New South Wales.



William Hart sitting in his Bristol Boxkite 1911 [703]

William Hart invited his sister Cassie to fly with him on the 1st December 1911, making her the first woman to fly with an Australian aviator.

On the 9th December 1911 William Hart was awarded the Aerial League Certificate No. 1. (i.e. Australian Aviator's Licence No. 1). This was the first aviation licence to be issued in Australia making William Hart the first Australian to hold a registered aviator's licence.


No 1. Issued 5 Dec 1911

The Aerial League of Australia

Established 7th April 1909

This League recognised as the governing Authority of Aviation in Australia hereby Certifies that

William Ewart Hart :

having fulfilled the conditions required by the Federation Aeronautique Internationale is qualified as an Aviator

Hon Secretary — President

A reproduction of Mr. W. E. Hart's No. 1 Licence, issued on December 5, 1911.

William Hart

Awarded Australian Aviator's Licence No. 1
9th December 1911

On the 3rd January 1912, William Hart opened a flying school at his Penrith field, the ceremonies being officiated over by local Postmaster C.E. Frazer.



William Hart flying past a Sydney suburban train.

In June of 1912 William Hart made a significant contribution to Australian aviation history when he moved his flying school from Penrith to a site, he'd picked out at Ham Common near Richmond. This new flying field would grow into the Royal Australian Air Force Richmond airfield.



HOW TO BECOME AN AVIATOR. **HART'S AVIATION COMPANY LIMITED.**

Next week HART'S AVIATION COMPANY will open their AERODROME at RICHMOND, where they have secured the FINEST GROUND FOR AVIATION IN AUSTRALIA. FULL TUITION, both MONOPLANE and BI-PLANE. MANUFACTURING, PASSENGER FLIGHTS, EXHIBITIONS, &c.

FULL TUITION, £75. Aero Club of Great Britain Certificate. Prospectus on application.

PASSENGER FLIGHTS, £5/5/. A CERTIFICATE and dainty GOLD and ENAMEL PENDANT PRESENTED TO PASSENGERS—A UNIQUE SOUVENIR of a most interesting experience.

ANNOUNCEMENT EXTRAORDINARY!

The first AERIAL post in Australia will be conducted during Easter. Watch for dates and particulars and secure a memento of this modern innovation.

AN AVIATION CARNIVAL will be held during the Easter Week in Sydney. NO DISAPPOINTMENTS. Flights GUARANTEED on advertised occasions. BOOK PASSENGER FLIGHTS EARLY. FEE, 5 Guineas. A SAFE GROUND, A SAFE MACHINE, A SAFE PILOT.

HART'S AVIATION COMPANY is under the direction of Mr. W. E. HART, an Australian who is a member of the Aero Club of Great Britain, and who holds their PILOT'S CERTIFICATE. Mr. Hart also holds the Aerial League of Australia's certificate, and their shield for Cross-Country Flying, as well as all Australian Records for DISTANCE, SPEED, and ALTITUDE FLIGHTS.

Mr. H. S. DIXSON, an English Aviator, who has had a long and varied experience, is Assistant Instructor.

FULL PARTICULARS, OFFICE—65 MARKET STREET CHAMBERS. 'PHONE, CITY 3813.

Advert dated 24th March 1912 promoting the Hart's flying school at Richmond NSW.

The same month William Hart won Australia's first air race from Botany, Ascot Racecourse (the current site of Sydney's Kingsford Smith Airport) to Parramatta Park, covering a distance of 20 miles (32 km) in 23 minutes against the American, Eugene 'Wizard' Stone. [704]


UNDER PATRONAGE OF HIS EXCELLENCY THE GOVERNOR-GENERAL AND THE MINISTER OF DEFENCE FOR AUSTRALIA

First International

AVIATION CONTEST

(CONTROLLED UNDER PERSONAL DIRECTION OF PHILIP LYTTON)

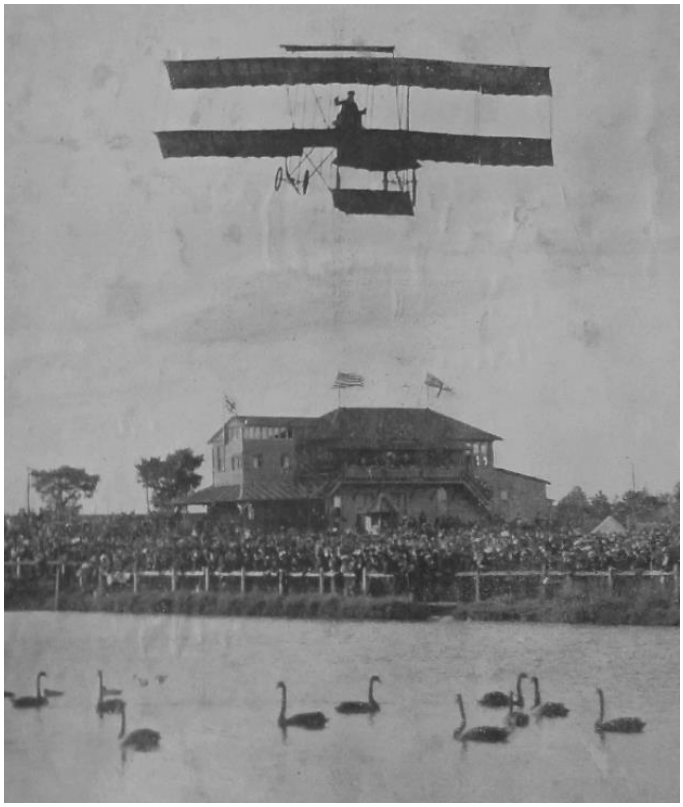
W. E. Hart v. "Wizard" Stone

(AUSTRALIA) (AMERICA)

SYDNEY TO PARRAMATTA & RETURN

Saturday, June 15, 1912 PRICE, 6D.

Cover for the program booklet published to mark Hart and Stone's epic 1912 air race. "It practically marks the birth of Aviation in Australia", the introduction stated. [705]



William Hart taking off in Australia's first air race 15th June 1912 [706]

During 1912 the cinematographer Ernest Higgins made eighteen flights with Hart and obtained enough footage for three movies, The Camera in the Clouds (1912), Among the Clouds with a Camera (1912) and Australia Calls (1913). [707] These movies were extremely popular and along with Hart's almost constant presence over Sydney skies during 1912, inspired a generation of Australian aviators.



Advert for 'Camera In the Clouds' 1912



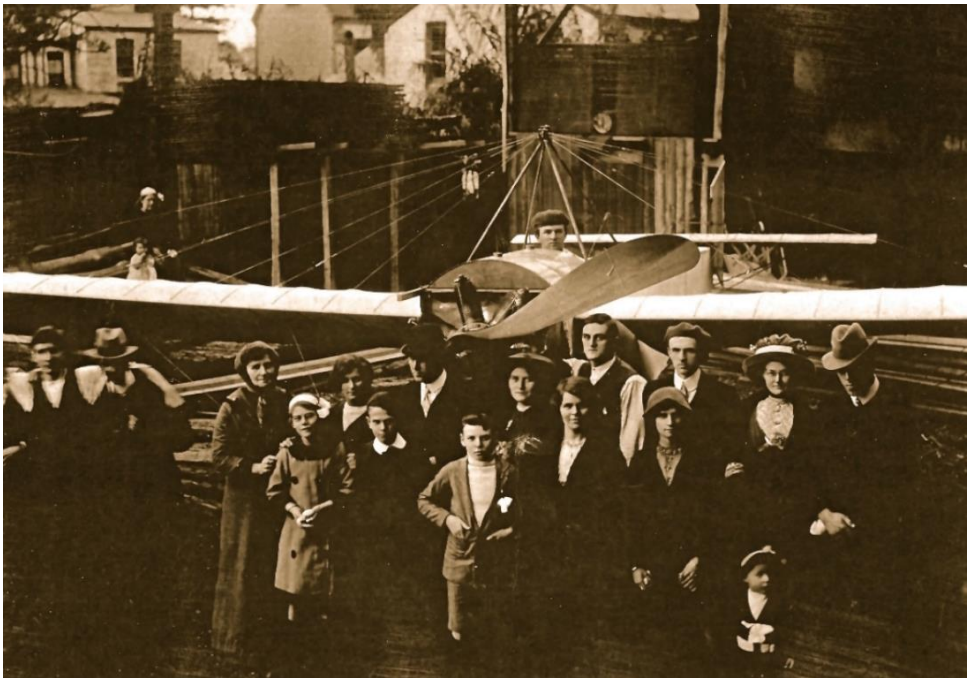
William Hart talking to a crowd in 1912 [708]

William Hart influenced a generation of young pilots including Bert Hinkler whom he gave his first powered flight, and Charles Kingsford Smith. [709]



William Hart taking off from Ascot Racecourse Botany in 1912. [710]

William Hart experimented with mono plane designs and built some prototypes at the Hart timber yard in Parramatta.



Experimental monoplane at the Hart's timber yard Parramatta 1912 [711]

On the 4th of September 1912 William Hart's new two-seat monoplane suffered an engine failure while taking off from Richmond airfield and nose-dived into some open land. Hart was found badly injured but conscious. He had a long recuperation in the Hawkesbury District Hospital (at Windsor) before returning to the air in a new plane of his own design in January 1914. [712]



William Hart's mono plane crash at Richmond airfield September 1912

HART AGAIN FLIES.

MACHINE OF HIS OWN DESIGN.

SYDNEY, January 19.

Hart made an aeroplane flight this morning at Richmond. This was his first venture aloft since he met with a bad accident more than a year ago. He used a new machine constructed according to his own designs, and made three ascents. On one trip he travelled three miles with a passenger. Part of the landing gear of the aeroplane was damaged through some wires giving way when he was about to land after one of the trips, but otherwise everything was successful. Hart says he will not give public exhibitions, but will only fly for the amusement of himself and friends.

The Brisbane Courier Tuesday 20th Jan 1914 Page 6.

In May 1914 the Aerial League of Australia awarded William Hart a Gold Medal for his pioneering achievements in aviation.

RECOGNITION OF W. E. HART.

The Aerial League of Australia is awarding the gold medal to Mr. W. E. Hart for his pioneering achievements in Australian aviation. The presentation will be made at the league's forthcoming annual meeting.

The Daily Telegraph (Sydney) Monday 11th May 1914 Page 7

The web site 'Airscape' describes William Hart's involvement in World War I. "In 1916, Hart enlisted as a Lieutenant with the newly formed No.1 Squadron, Australian Flying Corps at Point Cook, and sailed with them to Egypt that March as an Instructor. But when the Squadron went to Britain for final training, a Medical Board found Hart was epileptic and declared him medically unfit. He was returned to Australia and discharged on September 11th."

THE AUSTRALIAN FLYING CORPS.



AUSTRALIAN WAR MEMORIAL A04544

Members of the Australian Flying Corps, who left for the front in March last, after completing their course in Victoria. Lieutenants Hart and Badgery, well known as aviators in this State, are members of the corps.

Top Row ((L-R) Lt. Macnaughten, Lt. Brooks, **Lt Badgery**, Lt Kelly, Lt. Woodrow, _____,
2nd Row Lt. Ross, Captain Sheldon, Major Broun, Col Reynolds,O.C., Captain Williams, Lt Roberts, Lt. Brown, _____,
3rd Row Lt. P.M. Newland, **Lt. Hart**, _____, Captain Blake, Captain Anderson, Lt. Macnamara, Lt. Manwell.

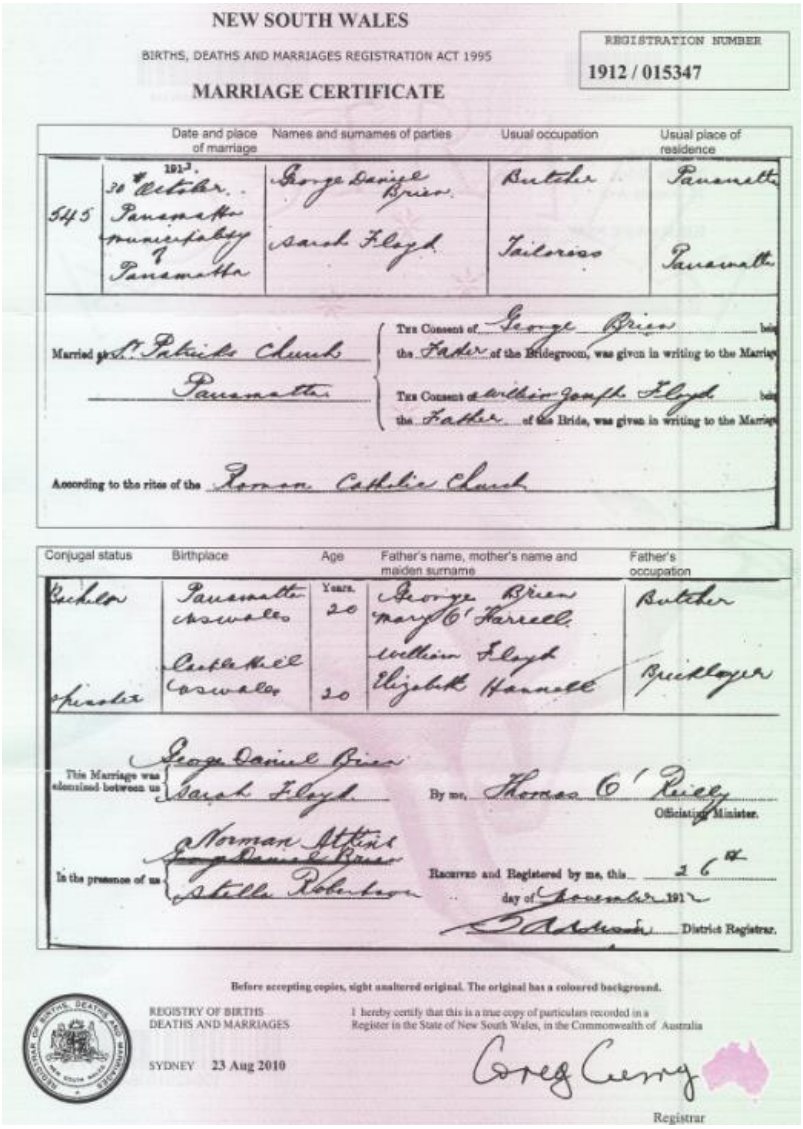
William Hart seated front row 2nd from the left. SMH 27th May 1916 p. 10

After his discharge William Hart returned to Dentistry and for many years operated a large practice in King St Sydney. He died of a heart attack on the 29th July 1943, and as Australia's first aviator, he was was honoured with a RAAF flypast at his funeral.

At the time of William Hart's flight from Penrith to Parramatta in November 1911, Sarah Hammell (Floyd) was living in No. 121b George St. Next door was George Daniel Brien in No. 121a. According to Veronica Brien, the story goes that both Sarah & George were recovering from operations and were spending their days sitting in their respective back yards convalescing.

Sarah had a birth mark removed from her neck and George had his appendix removed. George played his concertina to serenade Sarah - and it worked! "This was the start of a lasting romance."

My grand parents George Daniel Brien & Sarah Jane Osborn Hammell were married on the 30th October 1912 at St Patrick's church Parramatta. On their wedding certificate Sarah's name is written as per adopted name Sarah Floyd.



NEW SOUTH WALES

BIRTHS, DEATHS AND MARRIAGES REGISTRATION ACT 1995

REGISTRATION NUMBER 1912 / 015347

MARRIAGE CERTIFICATE

	Date and place of marriage	Names and surnames of parties	Usual occupation	Usual place of residence
545	1912. 30th October. Parramatta Registry Office Parramatta	George Daniel Brien	Butcher	Parramatta
		Sarah Floyd	Tailoress	Parramatta

Married at St Patricks Church Parramatta

The Consent of George Brien being the Father of the Bridegroom, was given in writing to the Marriage

The Consent of William Joseph Floyd being the Father of the Bride, was given in writing to the Marriage

According to the rites of the Roman Catholic Church

Conjugal status	Birthplace	Age	Father's name, mother's name and maiden surname	Father's occupation
Bachelor	Parramatta New South Wales	Years. 20	George Brien Mary O'Farrell	Butcher
Spinster	Castlereagh New South Wales	20	William Floyd Elizabeth Hammell	Bricklayer

This Marriage was solemnized between us George Daniel Brien, Sarah Floyd. By me, Thomas O'Reilly, Officiating Minister.

In the presence of us Norman Hitchens, Stella Robertson.

Received and Registered by me, this 26th day of November 1912. District Registrar.

Before accepting copies, sight unaltered original. The original has a coloured background.

REGISTRY OF BIRTHS DEATHS AND MARRIAGES

I hereby certify that this is a true copy of particulars recorded in a Register in the State of New South Wales, in the Commonwealth of Australia

SYDNEY 23 Aug 2010

Greg Cerry

Registrar

Marriage certificate of George Daniel Brien & Sarah Jane Osborn Hammell 30th October 1912 (at St Patrick's church Parramatta)

Sarah had a birthmark removed from her neck. & George was recovering from appendix operation, they would both sit on their back doorsteps in the sun & George would play the concertina & this was the start of a lasting Romance Sarah & George had 9 children George. Phyliss, Shirl. Beryl. Lester Colin Lorna & Clifton who died shortly after Birth.

George Daniel Brien's sister Ruby tells us in this letter how George Daniel Brien & Sarah Jane Hammell (Floyd) fell in love.

After they were married in 1912, George Daniel & Sarah Brien moved to a house in Blaxcell St Granville, near where the Crest theatre is today.

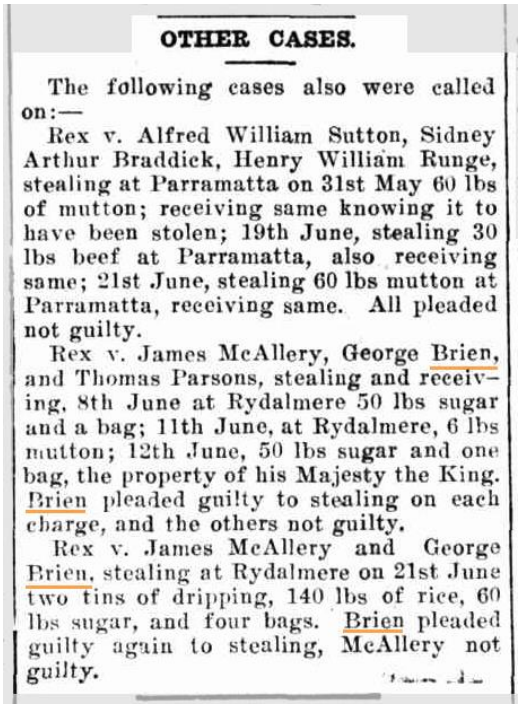


The house where George Daniel and Sarah Brien moved to in 1912 in Blaxcell St Granville

At this time George Daniel Brien worked at the Springfield abattoir located in Blaxcell St South Granville at the site of present-day Colquhoun Park. It was just a short distance from where George and Sarah lived in Blaxcell Street.

George Daniel Brien's job was to collect meat from the abattoir and deliver it by horse and cart to butcher shops and other establishments around Parramatta. One of his deliveries took him up Harris St, over the Gasworks bridge and turning right down Thomas Street to deliver meat to the Rydalmere Asylum.

In 1915 George Daniel Brien found himself in trouble with the law. The story I heard was that he took the blame for a black-market operation run by people he worked with at the Abattoir.



OTHER CASES.

The following cases also were called on:—

Rex v. Alfred William Sutton, Sidney Arthur Braddick, Henry William Runge, stealing at Parramatta on 31st May 60 lbs of mutton; receiving same knowing it to have been stolen; 19th June, stealing 30 lbs beef at Parramatta, also receiving same; 21st June, stealing 60 lbs mutton at Parramatta, receiving same. All pleaded not guilty.

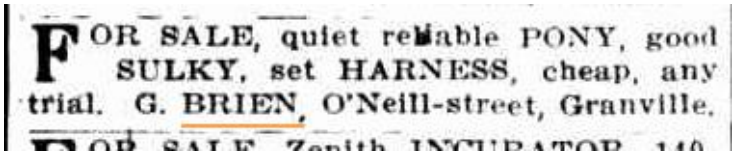
Rex v. James McAllery, George Brien, and Thomas Parsons, stealing and receiving, 8th June at Rydalmere 50 lbs sugar and a bag; 11th June, at Rydalmere, 6 lbs mutton; 12th June, 50 lbs sugar and one bag, the property of his Majesty the King. Brien pleaded guilty to stealing on each charge, and the others not guilty.

Rex v. James McAllery and George Brien, stealing at Rydalmere on 21st June two tins of dripping, 140 lbs of rice, 60 lbs sugar, and four bags. Brien pleaded guilty again to stealing, McAllery not guilty.

SMH Wednesday 18 August 1915

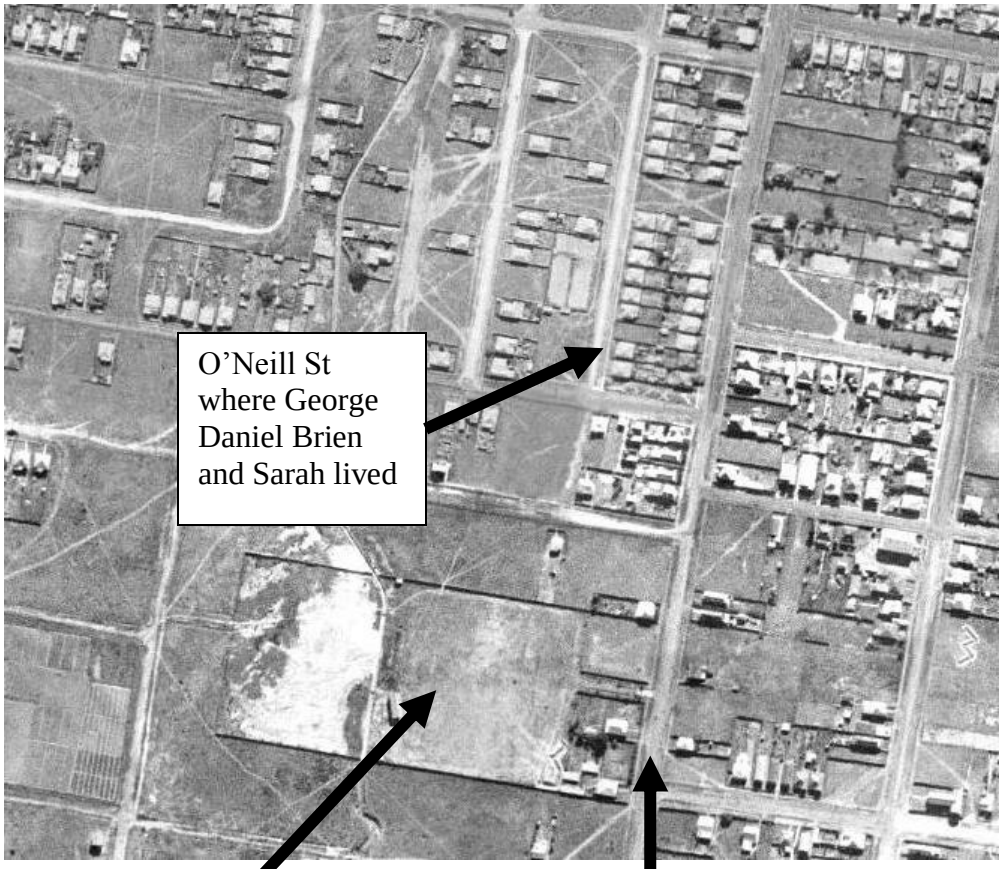
Veronica Brien said that at this time Sarah supplemented their income by keeping chickens in the back-yard & selling the eggs.

Around 1917 George Daniel and Sarah Brien moved from Blaxcell St Granville to nearby number 5 O'Neill St. Here is an Ad from the Argus in 1919 which mentions George Brien.



FOR SALE, quiet reliable PONY, good SULKY, set HARNESS, cheap, any trial. G. BRIEN, O'Neill-street, Granville.

Argus Saturday 12 July 1919



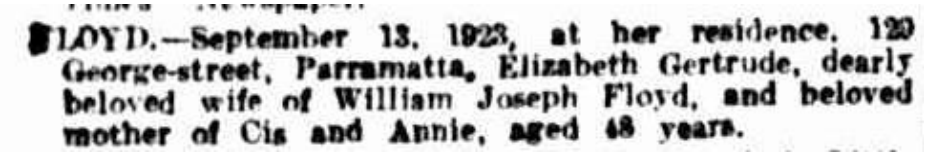
The Springfield Abattoir was located in Blaxcell St South Granville.



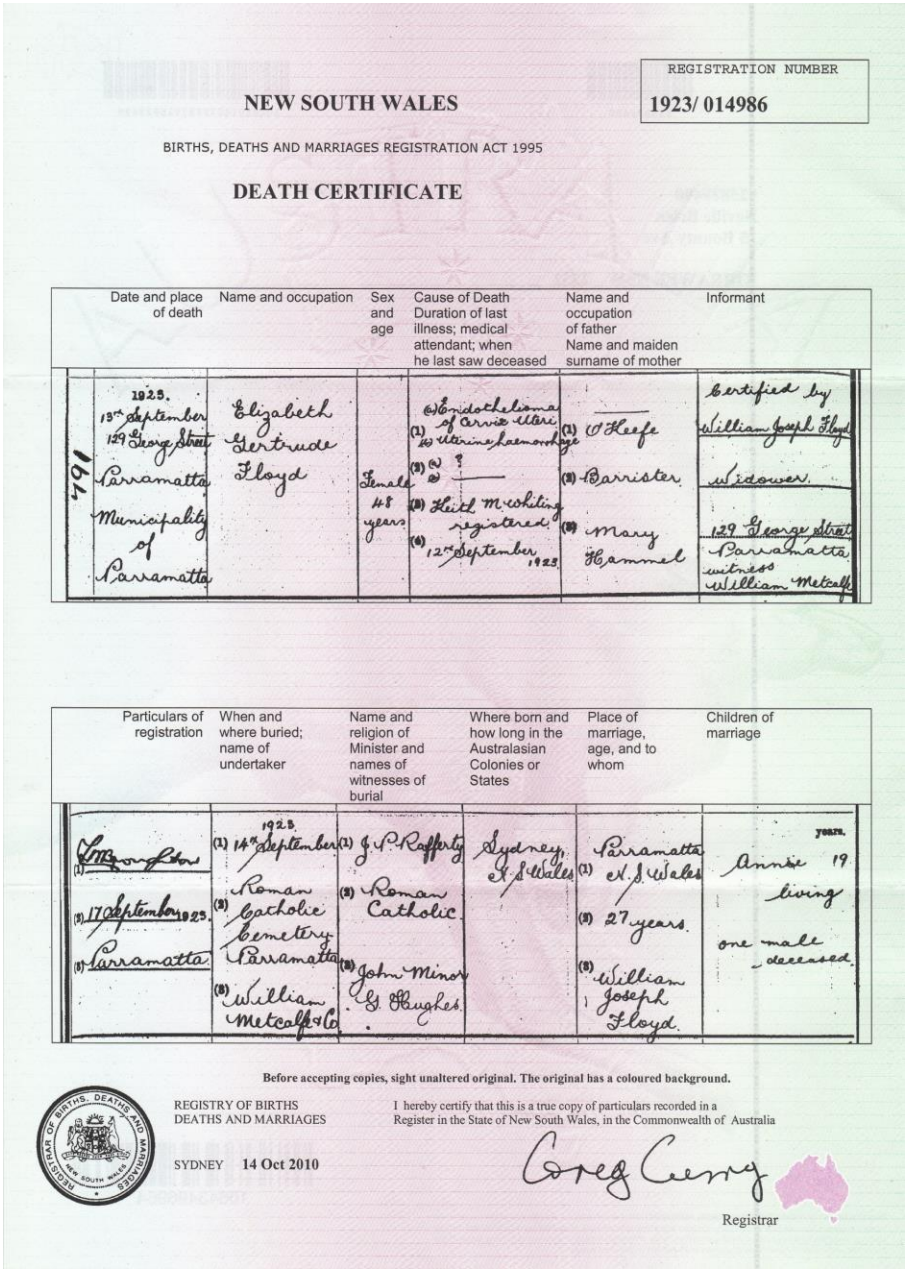
Elizabeth, Gwen Brien (Sarah and George Daniel's eldest daughter) and Sarah in the back garden at William & Elizabeth Floyd's place in George St Parramatta.

Photo taken around 1923.

Elizabeth Gertrude Hammell (Floyd) died at 129 George St on 13th September 1923 aged 46 after a long illness with bowel cancer. Note, in Elizabeth's death notice Sarah's nick name of "Cis" and that Elizabeth's age was incorrect by 2 years.



LOYD.—September 13, 1923, at her residence, 129 George-street, Parramatta, Elizabeth Gertrude, dearly beloved wife of William Joseph Floyd, and beloved mother of Cis and Annie, aged 48 years.



REGISTRATION NUMBER
1923/ 014986

NEW SOUTH WALES

BIRTHS, DEATHS AND MARRIAGES REGISTRATION ACT 1995

DEATH CERTIFICATE

Date and place of death	Name and occupation	Sex and age	Cause of Death Duration of last illness; medical attendant; when he last saw deceased	Name and occupation of father Name and maiden surname of mother	Informant
1923. 13th September 129 George Street Parramatta Municipality of Parramatta 164	Elizabeth Gertrude Floyd	Female 48 years	(1) Endothelioma of cervix uteri (2) 10 Uterine haemorrhage (3) (a) ? (b) ? (c) Held Mr White registered (d) 12th September 1923	(1) O'Keefe (2) Barrister (3) Mary Hammel	Certified by William Joseph Floyd Widower. 129 George Street Parramatta witness William Metcalf

Particulars of registration	When and where buried; name of undertaker	Name and religion of Minister and names of witnesses of burial	Where born and how long in the Australasian Colonies or States	Place of marriage, age, and to whom	Children of marriage
(1) (2) 17th September 1923. (3) Parramatta	1923. (1) 14th September (2) Roman Catholic Cemetery Parramatta (3) William Metcalf & Co.	(1) J. P. Rafferty (2) Roman Catholic (3) John Minor C. S. Hughes	Sydney N.S.Wales	Parramatta (1) N.S.Wales (2) 27 years. (3) William Joseph Floyd.	years. Annie 19 living one male deceased.

Before accepting copies, sight unaltered original. The original has a coloured background.

REGISTRY OF BIRTHS DEATHS AND MARRIAGES

SYDNEY 14 Oct 2010

I hereby certify that this is a true copy of particulars recorded in a Register in the State of New South Wales, in the Commonwealth of Australia

Greg Cerry

Registrar

Death certificate of my great grand mother Ethel May Hamell 13th September 1923 aged 46 later know as Elizabeth Gertrude Hammell and Elizabeth Gertrude Floyd

In 1924, George Daniel & Sarah Brien moved back towards the Parramatta River, close to the Gasworks Bridge to live at 115 Harris St, Parramatta. Today this house has gone and 'Robin Thomas Reserve' occupies the site. They stayed here for three years. It was during this period that Colin, Lorna & Clifton were born and the stories passed down to me of my father George William Brien fishing and catching eels from the Parramatta River weir (which was close by) no doubt originated. Clifton was the youngest child and died in 1926, soon after birth.



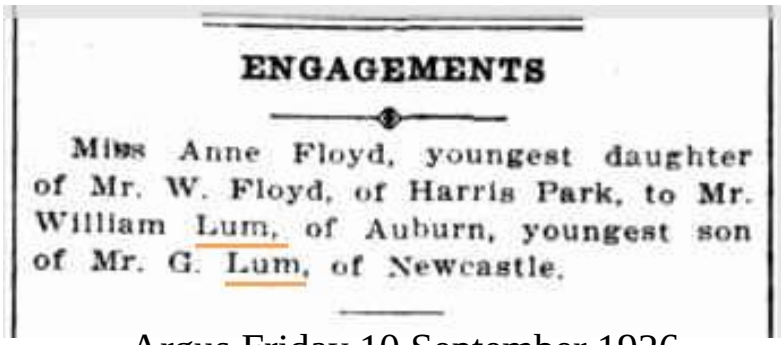
This photo taken about 1924 shows the Brien kids (and maybe some others). On the back it says that Colin is the baby being nursed by Beryl.

In 1927, George Daniel & Sarah move again, this time to No. 12 Harris St, Harris Park. They remain in this house until 1939 after which they moved to 15 Enid Ave Granville, opposite the Granville public swimming baths.

No. 12 Harris Street was still standing in 2014, close by is A'Beckett creek and a walking bridge which gave quick access to Parramatta Road.

The story is told of Colin Brien falling (or was pushed) off the walking bridge and nearly drowning. Sarah said this house always felt damp due to the creek being so close. [713]

Interestingly, A'Beckett Creek is named after James Beckett, George Daniel's 3 x great grand father and the Brien's earliest ancestor in NSW (1790).



ENGAGEMENTS

Miss Anne Floyd, youngest daughter of Mr. W. Floyd, of Harris Park, to Mr. William Lum, of Auburn, youngest son of Mr. G. Lum, of Newcastle.

Argus Friday 10 September 1926

In 1926 Sarah's half sister Annie Floyd was engaged to William Lum.



On Friday the 20th April 1929 Annie Floyd married William Lum. From left to right back row: William Floyd, George Lum (William's brother), Annie, William Lum, George Daniel Brien, front row: Phyllis Foo, Gwen Brien (George and Sarah's daughter) and Kevin Lum (George Lum's son).

George Daniel & Sarah's fortunes improved after George became established in a wholesale meat business supplying high quality meat to butcher shops in the Parramatta area. George Daniel was a skilful businessman and became a popular local identity. Around this time George Daniel and Sarah purchased a butcher shop at 111 Pennant Street Parramatta. Today this section of road is known as Victoria Road.

A brick building was constructed to extend the shop, according to Graham Lum this extension was built by William Floyd who was a brick layer by trade.



The butcher shop in Pennant Street Parramatta owned by George and Sarah Brien

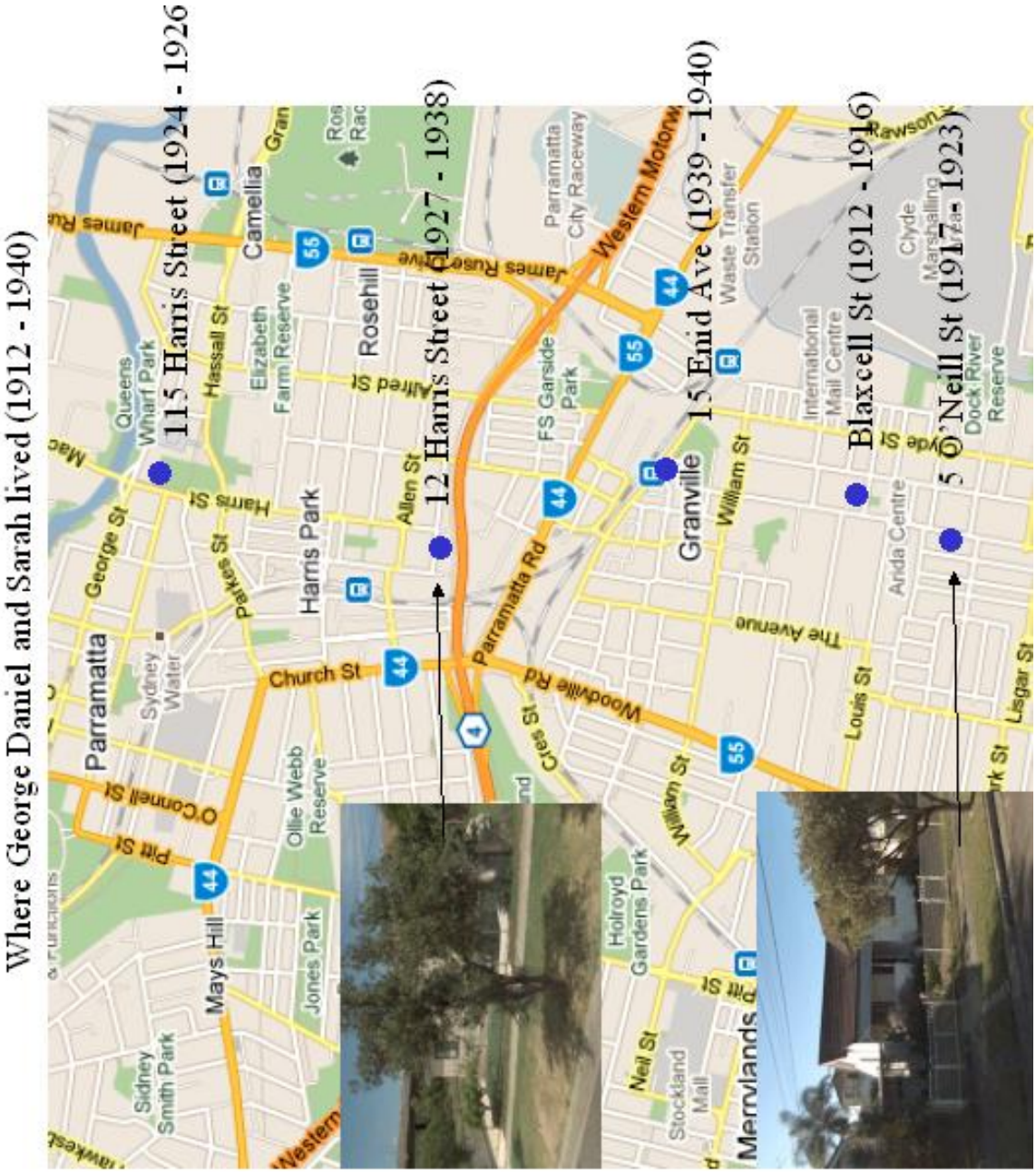
Surprise Party.

A happy little family surprise party awaited Mr. George D. Brien, of "Cooee," 12 Harris-street, Harris Park, on Thursday evening last, the celebration being to mark the occasion of his birthday. Toasts were drunk to the strains of "For he's a jolly good fellow," and the large birthday cake was cut. Among those members of the family present were Misses Sheila, Phyllis, Beryl and Lorna Brien, Mr. and Mrs. Eric Tuchin, Mrs. Brien and George, Colin and Lester Brien, and Miss Gwenda Tuchin. Mr. Brien was the recipient of many presents from friends and relatives.

* * *

Argus Thursday 7 March 1935

In 1935 a surprise party was held for George Daniel Brien's 42nd birthday.



Map showing where George Daniel and Sarah Brien lived between 1912 and 1940

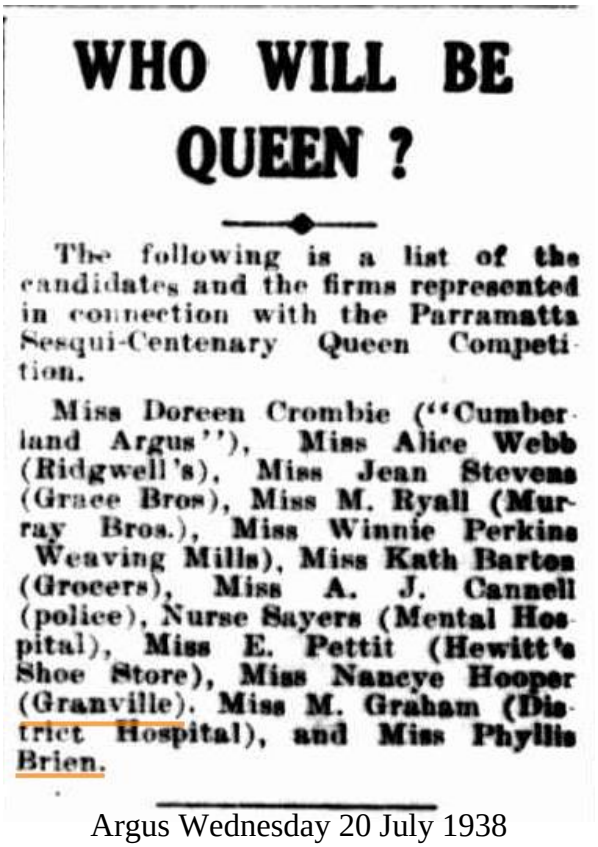
The Brien family enjoyed holidays at the central coast staying at places like the "Ozone" guest house at The Entrance or catching a train to Woy Woy and then a ferry (called the Southern Cross) to Davistown and stay in a house by the Brisbane Water.



This photo of George Daniel Brien & his daughters Sheila, Beryl, Phyllis & Lorna was probably taken at 12 Harris St, Harris Park about 1938.



A few streets away from Harris St, on the Cr of Parramatta Road and Good St, was the Granville Cinema



WHO WILL BE QUEEN ?

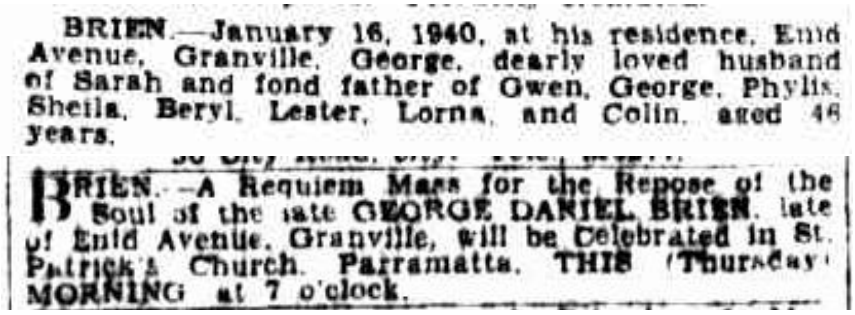
The following is a list of the candidates and the firms represented in connection with the Parramatta Sesqui-Centenary Queen Competition.

Miss Doreen Crombie ("Cumberland Argus"), Miss Alice Webb (Ridgwell's), Miss Jean Stevens (Grace Bros), Miss M. Ryall (Murray Bros.), Miss Winnie Perkins Weaving Mills), Miss Kath Barton (Grocers), Miss A. J. Cannell (police), Nurse Sayers (Mental Hospital), Miss E. Pettit (Hewitt's Shoe Store), Miss Nancye Hooper (Granville). Miss M. Graham (District Hospital), and Miss Phyllis Brien.

Argus Wednesday 20 July 1938

In 1939 George Daniel & Sarah Brien moved to No. 15 Enid Ave Granville, next door to their eldest son, George William Brien and his wife Maisie Hickey who had just moved into No. 17. Maisie would often tell the story of how George Daniel Brien removed some palings from the fence between their houses so that Sarah could "pop in" anytime. Also, in Enid Ave at No. 35 was George Daniel and Sarah's daughter Beryl and husband Alex Johnson.

On the 15th January 1940 George Daniel Brien died at his home No. 15 Enid Ave Granville aged 46. He was buried at St Patrick's cemetery Parramatta in "one of the largest funerals ever held at the cemetery." His daughter Phyllis McKeon (Brien) described the scene, saying people from "Politics, the Church, business and clubs, to a legion of friends and just plain honest people came to pay their respects to our father who just quietly did so many kindly things for so many while fully caring for & really loving his wife (Sarah) and each of his children - God bless his wonderful sprit." His grandson George Robert Brien said this funeral was his earliest memory. [714]



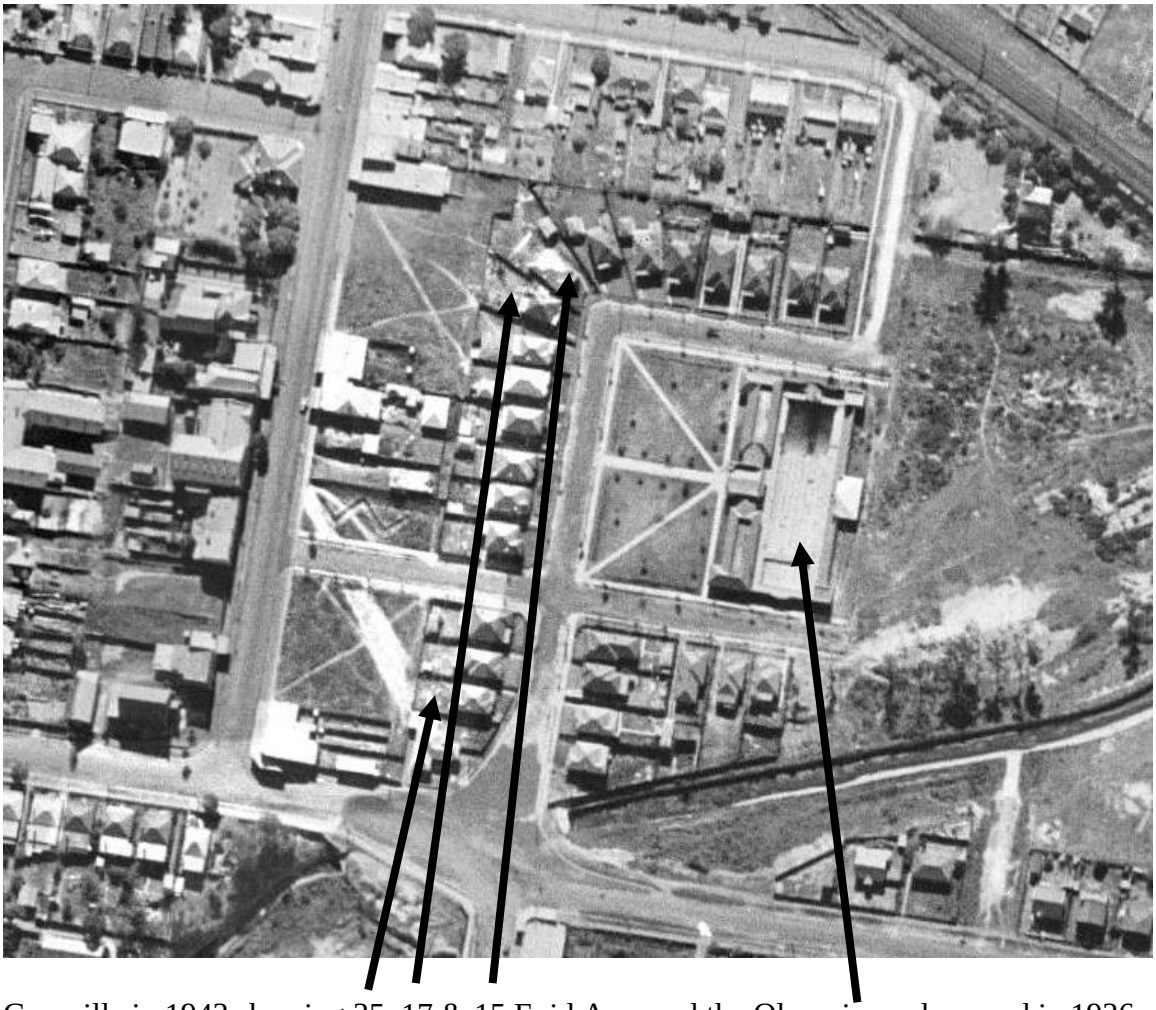
BRIEN.—January 16, 1940, at his residence, Enid Avenue, Granville, George, dearly loved husband of Sarah and fond father of Owen, George, Phyllis, Sheila, Beryl, Lester, Lorna, and Colin, aged 46 years.

BRIEN.—A Requiem Mass for the Repose of the Soul of the late GEORGE DANIEL BRIEN, late of Enid Avenue, Granville, will be Celebrated in St. Patrick's Church, Parramatta, THIS (Thursday) MORNING at 7 o'clock.

BRIEN.—The Relatives and Friends of Mrs SARAH BRIEN and FAMILY, of Enid Avenue, Granville, are invited to attend the Funeral of her dearly loved HUSBAND and their FATHER George; which will leave St. Patrick's Church, Parramatta, THIS (Thursday) AFTERNOON, at 2.30, for the Catholic Cemetery, Parramatta North.
CHARLES INNES and SON,
UW9259 28 Darcy Street, Parramatta

After George Daniel Brien died Sarah was left a house in Pennant St Parramatta worth £1125 (This was probably the butcher shop and house that William Floyd built) a Dodge truck valued at £15 as well as the house at 15 Enid Ave Granville.

Sarah married for a 2nd time to John William Probert (a.k.a Jack Probert) at Granville in 1941. They lived in many locations over the next 40 years including Parramatta, Toukley, Blacktown and Kiama.



Granville in 1943 showing 35, 17 & 15 Enid Ave, and the Olympic pool opened in 1936



Sarah Cecelia Probert (born Sarah Jane Hammell) died aged 89 at Kiama in 1981 and is buried at Bombo cemetery, overlooking the Pacific Ocean.



Sarah (Hammell, Thomas, Floyd, Brien, Probert) As I remember her….

Sarah's death certificate (below) says she was aged 87. She was born on the 25th July 1892 and died 6th July 1981 so she was close to 89.

The informant was Jack Probert. Note he only listed Gwenda, George and Phyllis as Sarah's children, missing are Sheila, Beryl, Lester, Colin, Lorna and Clifton.

1981/201340

NEW SOUTH WALES

REGISTER OF DEATHS

Surname of deceased	PROBERT
Other names	Sarah
Occupation	-
Sex and Age	Female 87 years
Marital status	Married
Date of death	20th June, 1981
Place of death	Bomaderry (Shoalhaven Nursing Home)
Usual residence	Shoalhaven Nursing Home, Bomaderry
Place of birth	Castle Hill, N.S.W.
Father - Surname	HAMMEL
Other names	Jack
Mother - Maiden surname	O'KEEFE
Other names	Elizabeth
Place of marriage	Parramatta, N.S.W. Sydney, N.S.W.
Age at marriage	20 years 40 years
To whom married	George Brien John Probert
Children	Gwenda 67 years, George deceased, Phyllis 62
Informant	J.W. Probert, widower 12 Shoalhaven Street, Nowra
Cause of death	Senile myocarditis years
By whom certified	W.P. Ryan, Medical Practitioner
Particulars of burial or cremation	23rd June, 1981 Catholic Cemetery, Kiama
Particulars of registration	J. B. Halliday, Principal Registrar; Date 8th July, 1981; Number 201340

Before accepting copies, sight unaltered original. The original has a coloured background.

REGISTRY OF BIRTHS DEATHS AND MARRIAGES

I hereby certify that this is a true copy of particulars recorded in a Register in the State of New South Wales, in the Commonwealth of Australia

SYDNEY 11 Mar 2013

Greg Cleary

Registrar

Death certificate of Sarah Jane Osborn Hammell (Floyd / Brien / Probert) 1981

Memories of Sarah Hammell

By Carol Brien

"One of the stories Grandma told me when I was a girl was that she came from a family of circus performers called "The Flying Floyds." This must have been an embellishment of the truth.

I remember that the family spent most of their upbringing in Bowden St. Granville, Bob Whitton's mother's sister married a Bob Sunderland, (since died) who grew up in Bowden Street, and he mentioned the beautiful Brien girls, he also remembered Dad, and he knew he had greyhounds, he used to walk them around this area. When Mum and Dad (George & Maisie) married, they lived in a house in Bowden Street, as did Auntie Gwen, the eldest girl. Later they built a home in Enid Avenue Granville. I can remember walking to Bowden Street with Dad to collect the rent, so they must have kept that house for some time.

I do remember Sarah's sister Annie being mentioned although I cannot ever remember meeting her, and I thought she lived somewhere around Harris Park. She had a son, (think his name was Barry) who used to play Rugby League, Dad followed his team, and on quite a few occasions he would take me to Merrylands Park to watch him play, boring to me then, I used to play on the swings with other children while the game was on. Vague memories of him studying for a profession, medical or law.

Another memory of Grandma telling me that her and George Daniel bought a butcher's shop on Parramatta Road, Granville, there must have been a residence attached, and she said she would work alongside her husband in the shop, then home to cook the meals and put the children to bed then back into the shop, some nights till 2 or 3am to make the sausages for sale the next day. A truly remarkable woman."

By Veronica Brien

"Colin and I lived in a unit overlooking the flood gates on the Parramatta River, near where the river cat departs. That is where Col died. Col's dad, George Daniel, did a lot of prawning and eel catching, sitting on the old flood gate wall. Col's mum Sarah was a milliner and at sixteen was making lovely hats of straw and trimming them with ribbon and flowers. She learnt her trade in Sydney and sold the hats.

When Sarah and Ruby (George Daniel's younger sister) were small children, they lived next door to each other in George St and would play together. Ruby's house had a lane running next to it (I think this is 'Argus Lane') and there was a paddock at the back. Sarah said her grand mother, lived with her and her mother Elizabeth. Sarah used to sleep in the same bed as her grand mother. Sarah said she had to reach up to hold her grand mothers' hand and found it uncomfortable walking with her as her grand mother was so tall. Sarah would frequently boast that her grand father was a Barrister.

Sarah who was two years older than Ruby, moved away with her family when she was six. After ten years Sarah's family returned. Four years later, Sarah (now 20) married Ruby's brother George.

Sarah had a birth mark removed from her neck and George was recovering from an appendix operation. They would both sit on their back-door steps in the sun and George would play the concertina. This was the start of a lasting romance. Sarah and George had nine children: Gwen, George, Phyllis, Shirl, Beryl, Lester, Colin, Lorna and Clifton (who died shortly after birth)."



L to R: Sheila, Sarah, Gwen and her daughter 'Bibby' (also Gwen).

The children of George Daniel Brien and Sarah Jane Osborn Hammell (Floyd)

George and Sarah had eight surviving children, five daughters and three sons. Gwen married Eric Tuckin and had two daughters. George William married Maisie Hickey and had three sons and two daughters. Phyllis Ellen married Jim McKeon and had no children. Phyllis was awarded the Order of the British Empire (OBE) in 1971 for services to the community. Sheila Daisy married Norman Turner and had one son and one daughter. Beryl Estelle married Alex Johnson and had one son and one daughter. Lester James married Mavis Pope and had three sons. Colin Francis married Veronica Norris and had no children and Lorna married Claude Hones and had two sons.

George Daniel Brien + **Sarah Hammell (Floyd) m. 30/10/1912 Parramatta**
b. 1893 Parramatta — b. 1892 Castle Hill NSW Australia
d. 1940 Granville — d. 1981 Kiama NSW Australia

- Gwen A
  m. 1932 E Tuchin
  b. 23/04/1913
  d. 2000
- **George William Brien** m. Maisie Hickey 1937
  b. 01/07/1914 Parramatta NSW Australia
  d. 1957 Auburn NSW Australia
- Phyllis Ellen
  m. 1941 J. McKeon
  b. 06/06/1917
  d. 13/08/2014
- Sheila Daisy
  m. 1940 N Turner
  b. 13/12/18
  d. 1999
- Beryl Estelle
  m. 1940 A Johnston
  b. 02/05/1920
  d. 27/06/2006
- Lester James
  m. 1944 M J Pope
  b. 03/12/1921
  d. 05/05/2000
- Colin Francis
  m. 1949 V Norris
  b. 11/05/1925
  d. 11/09/1990
- Lorna Elizabeth
  m. 1942 C Hones
  b.
  d. 2009
- Clifton
  b. 1926
  d. 29/12/26

The children of George Daniel Brien b. 1893 and Sarah Hammell (Floyd) b. 1892



George Daniel and Sarah's daughters the "Beautiful Brien Girls" at Colin and Veronica's wedding in 1949 (L to R) Lorna, Sheila, Gwen, Sarah, Mavis Pope, Beryl and Phyllis.



MBE

William Edwin Agland, for services to the community; Robert Hill Beddie, for services to the community; Stanley Carberry, for services to the community; Horace Sylvester Cross, for services to ex-servicemen; Councillor Thomas Darmody, for services to local government in Monaro; Reginald Walter Hawkins, for services to the community; Heath Howell, MM, for services to the community in Warringah; Mrs Phyllis Hein McKeon, for services to the community; Robert Bruce Mulquiney, for services to the community;

Phyllis was awarded the MBE (Member of the British Empire) for "Services to the community."

Note they spelt Phyllis's middle name incorrectly (should be Ellen)

Canberra Times Friday 1st January 1971.





Left: Beryl Estelle Brien and Alex Johnston on their wedding day 1940.

Right: Jim McKeon and Phyllis Ellen Brien MBE

Veronica Norris and Colin Francis Brien





Lester James Brien and Mavis Pope in 1949.

During World War II Lester James Brien served in the Royal Australian Navy on a number of ships including the Destroyers HMAS Vendetta and HMAS Napier, and saw action in the Mediterranean in support of the "Rats of Tobruk" campaign in North Africa. [715]

The Australian ships HMAS Waterhen and HMAS Parramatta were attacked and sunk during these operations.



HMAS Vendetta on which Lester James Brien served during WWII



HMAS Napier on which Lester James Brien served during WWII [716]

AUSTRALIANS MAN NEW DESTROYERS

CANBERRA, Thursday. — By arrangement with the British Government, four of the latest class British destroyers are now manned by Australian personnel, Mr. Makin, Minister for the Navy, announced today.

They are HMAS *Napier*, *Nestor*, *Nizam*, and *Norman*. They have been commissioned with Australian commanding officers, and are manned by RAN officers and ratings.

These ships, Mr. Makin said, were of the most modern type, of a class which went into commission in the Royal Navy in 1939, and were, therefore, the last word in destroyer design.

These 4 destroyers are each of about 1,690 tons displacement, with a speed of 36 knots, and are armed with 6 4.7in. guns, 6 smaller guns, and 10 21in. torpedo tubes.

It was a destroyer of this class, HMS *Kimberley*, which sank the Italian destroyer *Francisco Nullo* in the Red Sea on Trafalgar Day last year.

The original destroyer flotilla, with which Australia entered the war, Mr. Makin said, had already made a magnificent name in the Mediterranean. It had given valuable service against submarines and in operations along the Libyan coast and in other theatres of war.

Napier, *Nestor*, *Nizam*, and *Norman* are among the latest ships of the famous Javelin class.

HMAS Napier mentioned in The Argus (Melbourne) Fri 10th Oct 1941





Photos taken off Tobruk N' Africa 1941 from the HMAS Napier (L) and HMAS Vendetta (R) [717]

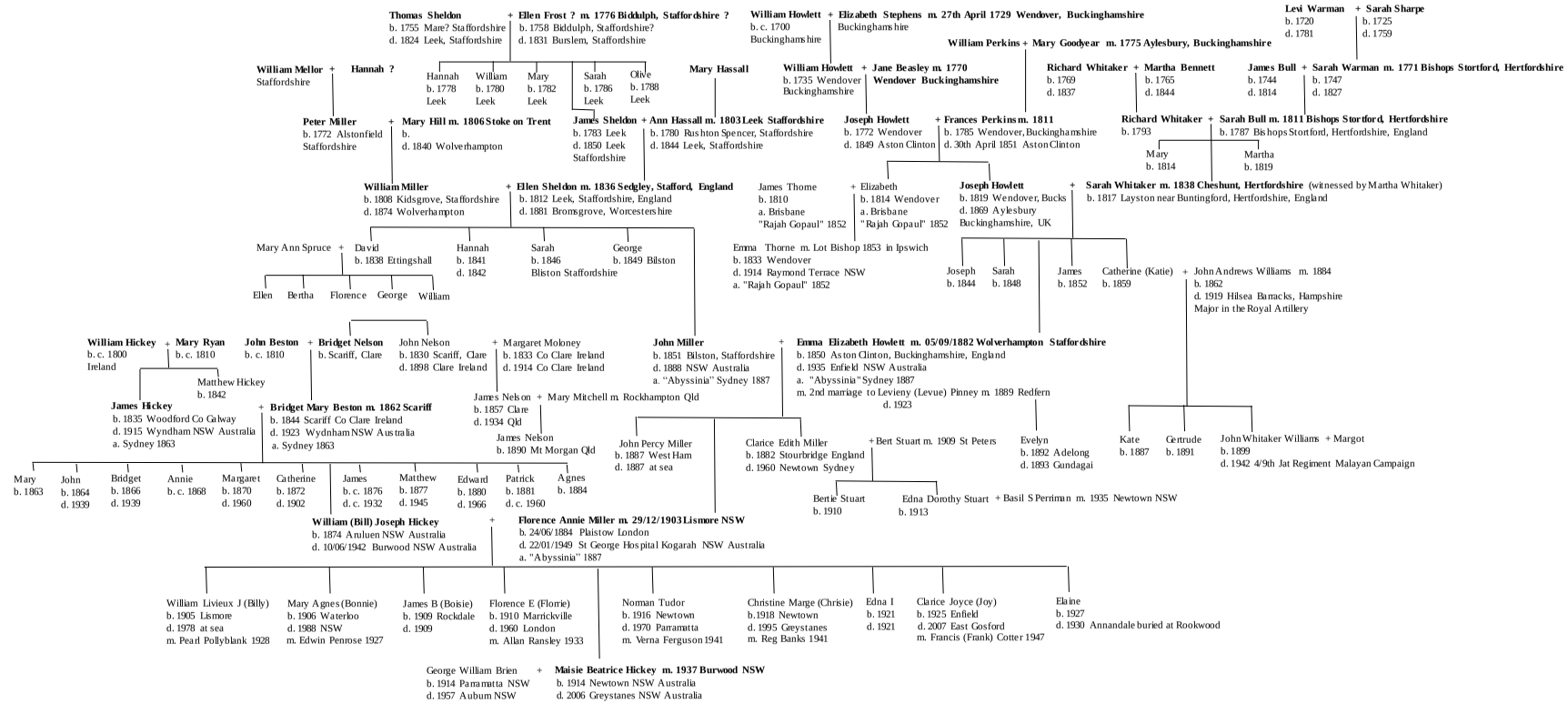
In the closing months of 1941 HMAS Napier took part in the supplying of besieged Tobruk, gave protection to Mediterranean and Red Sea convoys and served on the screen of the fleet at sea. The Napier was one of the screening destroyers when HMS Barham was torpedoed and sunk on 25 November 1941. In November also she took part with nine other destroyers in the transfer of troops from Haifa to Cyprus and vice versa.

On 30 December 1941 the Napier sailed from Alexandria as one of the destroyers escorting the heavy ships for the bombardment of Bardia, in Libya, prior to its capture by the 8th Army. In January 1942 Napier, with Nizam and Nestor in company, left the Mediterranean Theatre to enter the Indian Ocean.

On reaching Aden the three destroyers were ordered to join and escort the aircraft carrier HMS Indomitable to ferry aircraft reinforcements for the Malayan / Java theatre. The operation successfully concluded, the carrier and her escort proceeded to Port Soudan for a second flight of planes. [718]

Chapter 14

George William Brien b. 1914 & Maisie Beatrice Hickey b. 1914



Family tree of Maisie Hickey

George William Brien b. 1914 and his wife Maisie Beatrice Hickey

This chapter covers the lives of the eldest son of George Daniel Brien and Sarah Hammell - George William Brien and his wife Maisie Beatrice Hickey and her extended family.

George William Brien was born at 129 George Street Parramatta in on the 1st July1914 and died at St Joseph's Hospital Auburn 9th June 1957. He was the eldest son of George Daniel Brien and Sarah Hammell (Floyd).

BIRTH CERTIFICATE

Date and place of birth of child	Name and whether present or not	Sex	Father's name, occupation, age and birthplace	Date and place of marriage- previous issue	Mother's name and maiden surname, age and birthplace
290 1914 1st July George Street Municipality of Parramatta	George William Not Present	male	George Daniel (1) Brien (2) Slaughterman (3) 21 years. (4) Parramatta N.S.W.	(1) 1912 28th October Parramatta N.S.W. (2) Having a year living none deceased	Sarah Floyd (1) (2) 21 (3) Castle Hill N.S.W.

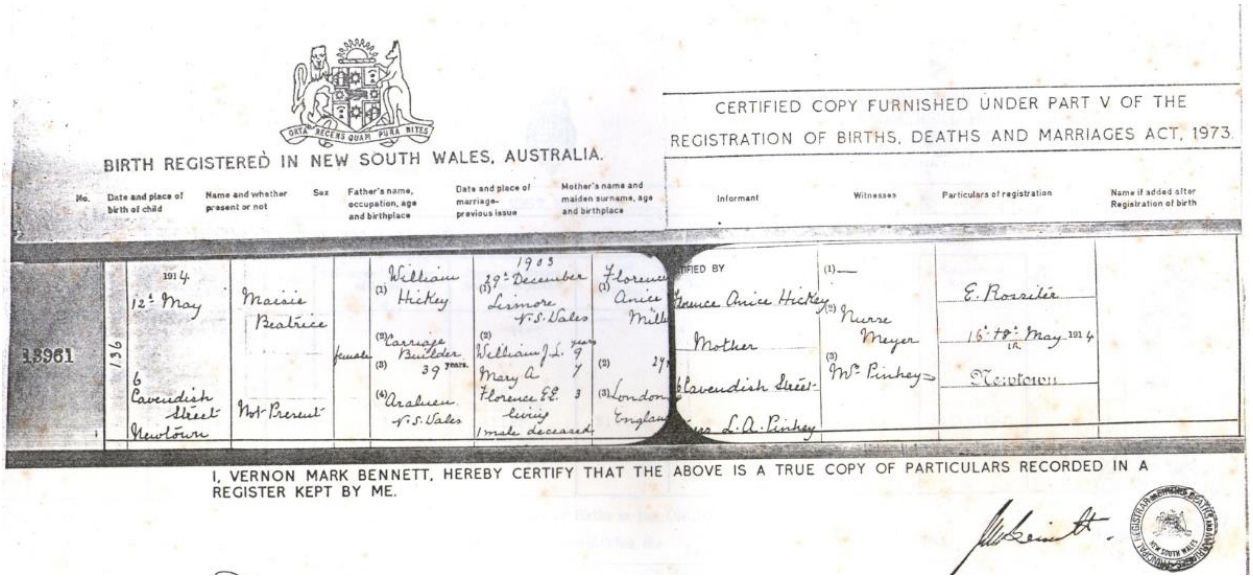
Informant	Witness	Particulars of registration	Name if added after Registration of birth
Sarah Brien Mother Hazelhill Street Granville	(1) (2) Nurse Whitney (3) Mrs Floyd	Slaughterman 13th July 1914 Parramatta	

Birth certificate of George William Brien born at 129 George Street Parramatta, 1st July 1914



George William Brien born 1st July 1914

Maisie Beatrice Hickey was born at Newtown NSW 12th May 1914 and died at Greystanes in 2006. Maisie was the 3rd daughter of William Joseph Hickey and Florence Annie Miller.



BIRTH REGISTERED IN NEW SOUTH WALES, AUSTRALIA.

CERTIFIED COPY FURNISHED UNDER PART V OF THE REGISTRATION OF BIRTHS, DEATHS AND MARRIAGES ACT, 1973

No.	Date and place of birth of child	Name and whether present or not	Sex	Father's name, occupation, age and birthplace	Date and place of marriage-previous issue	Mother's name and maiden surname, age and birthplace	Informant	Witnesses	Particulars of registration	Name if added after Registration of birth
13961	1914 12th May 6 Cavendish Street Newtown	Maisie Beatrice Not Present	female	(1) William Hickey (2) Carriage Builder (3) 39 years (4) Australian N.S.Wales	1903 29th December Lismore N.S.Wales (2) William J. 9 years Mary A. 7 Florence E. 3 living 1 male deceased	(1) Florence Annie Miller (2) 27 (3) London England	CERTIFIED BY Florence Annie Hickey Mother Cavendish Street Mrs L.A. Pinkney	(1)— (2) Nurse Meyer (3) Mrs Pinkney	E. Rossiter 16th May 1914 Registrar	

I, VERNON MARK BENNETT, HEREBY CERTIFY THAT THE ABOVE IS A TRUE COPY OF PARTICULARS RECORDED IN A REGISTER KEPT BY ME.

Birth certificate of Maisie Beatrice Hickey born at 6 Cavendish St Newtown, 12th May 1914

6 Cavendish St Newtown NSW
birth place of Maisie Hickey



Biography of Maisie Hickey written by her grandson Gavin Carrick-Allan.

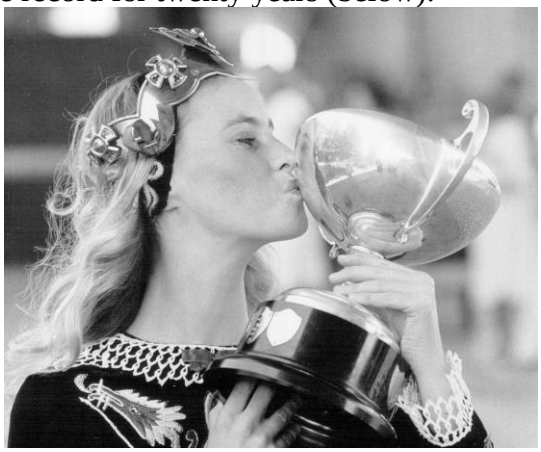
"Maisie Hickey was born at Enmore on 12th May 1914, the fourth child in a family of eight children. Her childhood was a happy one, growing up with her 7 brothers and sisters. At the age of 5 her family moved to Enfield where she lived for 19 years.



Maisie's elder sister Florence Hickey pictured in London c. 1960 (left).

Florence married Allan Ransley in 1933 and established the Ransley School of Dance with her daughters Dawn, Shirley and Joy. [719]

Shirley's daughter, Fiona Gaye Snowden, won a World Irish Dance Championship and held the record for twenty years (below). [720]



Maisie and her brothers and sisters went to a nearby Catholic school where she was a keen and bright student. During school holidays Maisie would sometimes stay with her auntie Clarice who lived nearby. Clarice had a swing that hung from a tree and Maisie remembers sitting on it and seeing a ring tail possum also hanging from the tree. [721]

As was the normal practice at that time, she left school at the age of 14 and was able to find work in an office, attending evening classes in shorthand and typing at the same time. Due to the depression she was retrenched when she was 16 and the only work available was in a factory. In 1930, at the height of the depression, it was the only job around.

Maisie has fond memories of her horse, Jessie, and the sulky her family used for many years. Jessie was kept in a paddock a few houses away and was as much a pet as a means of transport. Finally, after much good service, Jessie became so slow she could not be used with the sulky anymore and the family reluctantly sold her.

Transport has come a long way in Maisie's lifetime from horse and sulky, to steam trains and steam trams, to the introduction of electric trains in 1926. The family holidayed on the Central Coast and Maisie remembers being on a steam train and having to close all windows as they approached the railway tunnels as soot and embers would come in the windows and soil their clothes and get in their eyes!

Maisie was at the opening of the Sydney Harbour Bridge on Saturday the 19th March 1932. She said she saw Francis Edward de Groot on horse back cut the official tape before the Premier of New South Wales, Jack Lang, could do so.



Crowds walk the Sydney Harbour Bridge when it opened 19th March 1932

The FJ Holden was the first all Australian car and she remembers it well as her sister had one of the first produced.

Life was honest and simple for her – security was unnecessary as there were few robberies and nobody locked doors. It was a carefree environment based on mutual trust and a more equitable sense of sharing than exists now.

Food was wholesome – mostly meat with home grown vegetables. The only fast food was fish and chips! As gas or electric fridges did not exist people had to use an ice box to keep their food cold and Maisie remembers having to go and buy ice often. It was the role of the woman of the house to prepare, serve and clean up after all meals – including a full, cooked breakfast each morning.

Toys were simple but not many children wanted toys – gifts were usually clothes and much appreciated as the general rule was hand-me-downs.

Maisie lived with her family until she married. In 1936 she went on a holiday to The Entrance where she met George Brien and married him in 1937. Despite the depression they built a house at Granville and were able to buy and pay off their own home – a great achievement at that time. They had five children; George, Carol, Alan, Yvonne and Neville.



George William Brien and Maisie Hickey on their wedding day 18th December 1937.

Maisie remembers the start of the second world war. She was not directly connected with the war as her husband was exempt having an ‘essential job’ but her brother in law was in active service in the Mediterranean.

She recalls the two Japanese submarines that made it into Sydney harbour and managed to sink a ferry – one submarine was sunk and the crew of the other committed suicide.

Another mark in her life was the introduction of television as they were the first people in their street to get one all the kids in the neighbourhood would line the hallways of their house to watch the television.

For many years her family was her main interest – when her husband died in 1957, she was left to rear and educate 5 children on her own – the youngest being a baby of just 6 months.

MARRIAGE CERTIFICATE

Date and place of marriage		Names and surnames of parties	Usual occupation	Usual place of residence
1441	1937 18th December	George William Brien	Butcher	Harris Street, Granville
	Enfield Municipality	May Beatrice Hickey	Dressmaker	Enfield

Married at St Joseph's Church Burwood Heights, Enfield

This Consents of ____ were given in writing to the Marriage of the Bridegroom.

This Consents of ____ were given in writing to the Marriage of the Bride

According to the rites of the Roman Catholic Church.

Conjugal status	Birthplace	Age	Father's name, mother's name and maiden surname	Father's occupation
Bachelor	Parramatta, N S W	Years. 23	George Daniel Brien Sarah Floyd	Butcher
Spinster	Enmore, Sydney, N.S W	23	William Hickey Florence Miller	Carpenter

This Marriage was solemnized between us G W Brien / M Hickey

By me, J P Considine, Officiating Minister

In the presence of us R F Reardon / C Hickey

Received and Registered by me this 21st day of December 19 37

H J Freeman, District Registrar

Marriage certificate of George William Brien and Maisie Hickey 18th Dec 1937

"George and Maisie were devoted to each other. When Alan was born George went out and bought a radiogram (one with a roll top) as a welcome home present for her. When Yvonne was born, George planted rows of blue flowers to welcome them back home.

George would cycle to Homebush each day for work, our vegetables were home grown, so a healthy lifestyle. George would go rabbiting, up Razorback way, he had ferrets and would catch heaps of rabbits, these were killed and eaten, and he had wire coat hangers that were shaped to take the rabbit skins, where they were stretched and dried then sold.

Saint Joseph's Catholic church in Enfield, where George and Maisie Brien were married 18th December 1937.



Memories of life at Granville by Carol Brien.

George had chooks, he bought an incubator and another thing similar called a follow on, where he incubated the eggs, the young chickens were moved to the follow on, and the process would start again. He then sold the eggs, daughter Carol was the messenger, the eggs would be rolled in newspaper and put in a container and she would deliver them on push bike to customers, when the chooks were older they were killed and either eaten, or 'dressed' and these would be delivered as well. Maisie had a job at Bonds at Wentworthville, night shift."

After their wedding George and Maisie moved into a house in Bowden Street Harris Park, close to where George's parents George Daniel and Sarah lived. In 1939 they purchased a new property at 17 Enid Avenue Granville. George Daniel and Sarah moved in next door at 15 Enid Ave.



Our old home at 17 Enid Ave Granville; home built by George William Brien and Maisie Brien (Nee Hickey)



George William Brien with eldest son George and eldest daughter Carol in 1943

Children of George William Brien and Maisie Beatrice Hickey

George William Brien +
b. 1914 Parramatta NSW
d. 1957 Auburn NSW

Maisie Beatrice Hickey m. 1937 Burwood NSW
b. 1914 Newtown NSW Australia
d. 2006 Greystanes NSW Australia

- George Robert Brien, b. 1938
- Carol Joy Brien, b. 1940
- Alan James Brien, b. 1945
- Yvonne Mary Brien, b. 1947
- Neville John Brien, b. 1956

In early 1957 George William Brien had an operation at St. Joseph's hospital from which he never fully recovered. He returned home but by mid year he was back in hospital where he died on the 9th June 1957.

REGISTRATION NUMBER
1957/ 008937

8937

DEATHS registered in the District of Sydney, at Auburn. in the State of New South Wales by Alfred Victor Atkinson. Assistant District Registrar.

Column.	
1. No. in Register	582.
2. Christian name and surname of deceased	GEORGE WILLIAM BRIEN.
Occupation	Butcher.
3. Sex and age	Male. 42 years.
4. When and where died	9th June. 1957. St Josephs Hospital, Normanby Road, Auburn.
Usual residence	17 Enid Avenue, Granville.
5. Where born	Parramatta. N.S.W.
Length of residence in Australia	
6. Christian name and surname of father	George Daniel Brien.
Occupation	Butcher.
Christian name and maiden surname of mother	Sarah Floyd.
If deceased was married—	
7. Where	Enfield. Sydney. N.S.W.
At what age	23 years.
To whom	Maisie Hickey. (Married).
Conjugal condition of deceased at time of death	
8. Issue in order of birth (living and deceased)	George. 18 years. Carol. 16. " Alan. 12. " Yvonne. 10. " Neville. 5 Months. None Deceased.
9. Name, description and residence of informant	Certified by. A. Ransley, Brother-in-Law. 1354 Canterbury Road, Punchbowl.
10. Cause of death	(a) Gastric Carcinoma.
Duration of last illness	(a) Months.
By whom certified	P. Tynan, Registered.
11. When and where buried or cremated	11th June. 1957. Catholic Cemetery, Rookwood.
Undertaker or Superintendent by whom certified	A. F. Anderson Pty Limited.
12. Name and religion of Minister	P. J. Brennan, Catholic.
Names of witnesses to burial or cremation	K. Bennett. H. G. Smith.
13. Signature of Assistant District Registrar	A V Atkinson
Date of registration	13th June. 1957.

Before accepting copies, sight unaltered original. The original has a coloured background.

REGISTRY OF BIRTHS DEATHS AND MARRIAGES

SYDNEY 09 Jun 2011

I hereby certify that this is a true copy of particulars recorded in a Register in the State of New South Wales, in the Commonwealth of Australia

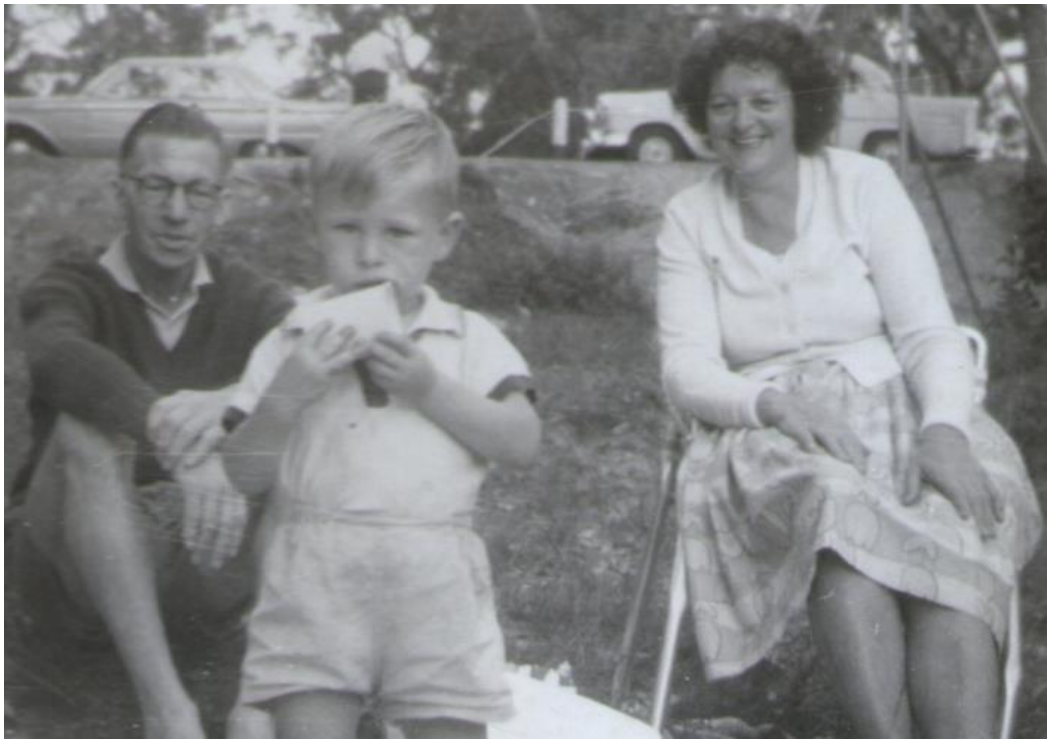
Greg Cerry

Registrar

Death certificate of George William Brien who died 9th June 1957



Back L to R: Maisie's sisters Clarice (Joyce), Christine (holding son Greg), Maisie, Maisie's son Neville being held by his sister Yvonne c. 1959



Maisie (R) with friend Richard (Dick) Peatfield (L) and Robert Whitton, Maisie's first grand child (centre) photo c. 1966

Maisie was swept up in the celebrations to commemorate the bicentenary of James Cook's landing at Kurnell NSW in 1770.

In the months leading up to the bicentenary, newspapers closely followed the progress of Endeavour II that sailed from Plymouth to recreate Cook's voyage and ran extracts from Cook and botanist Joseph Banks's journals.

Queen Elizabeth II was in Australia for 40 days, and there were special stamps printed. Then New South Wales premier Robert Askin boasted Australia would stage "one of the greatest pageants ever held in the southern hemisphere." [722]

Maisie along with her youngest son Neville and Dick Peatfield travelled to Sydney harbour on the evening of the 29th April 1970 and found a good vantage point near the south pylon of the Sydney harbour bridge, and watched the spectacular fireworks display.





Queen Elizabeth II in Australia 1970 (L). Fireworks over Sydney 29th April 1770 (R)

Sporting and community events were held in small towns around Australia. There was a national bowls tournament, Cook-themed fishing and shooting competitions, and Sydney greyhounds raced for the Endeavour Trophy. Razor company Wilkinson Sword forged a limited-edition reproductions of Cook's bladed weapon, while a miniature Endeavour was moored in Melbourne's Yarra River.

Books, including a collection of recipes for meals eaten on Endeavour and in colonial Australia, were published. Australia Post issued a series of Cook themed stamps and the Royal Australian Mint produced a bicentenary 50 cent coin.



Captain Cook stamps issued by Australia Post 1970

Life at Granville was at times very eventful. On ANZAC day 1974 much of Enid Ave was flooded when a freak storm dropped 135 millimeters of rain in one hour between 11.30am and 12.30pm, causing a deluge that flooded nearby Duck Creek.



Flood water at the corner of Enid Ave and William St Granville. Thursday 25th April 1974



Flood water engulfs the Shell service station and washed 14 cars into Duck Ck.

On Tuesday 18th January 1977 a crowded commuter train from Mt Victoria heading towards Sydney derailed, running into the supports of the Bold Street bridge at Granville that then collapsed onto two of the train's passenger carriages.



Bold St Bridge train disaster 18th January 1977

Maisie loved The Entrance and often stayed at 'The Cabin' as well as Pinehurst Guest House. Maisie spent many days fishing off the old wooden Entrance bridge as well as rowing boats on the lake. Bulli and Narrabeen Lake were favorite camping spots. Her favorite Sydney beach was Bronte – fun times often shared with her sisters Chris and Joy. Maisie loved to travel and took every opportunity to go on trips with friends or to visit family.

No description of Maisie's life would be complete without mentioning her love of dancing. For as long as she could, she went to places like the Pioneer Hall in The Trongate or Parramatta Town Hall. Through this she made countless friends and gained so many precious memories.

Maisie had a wide range of interests and enjoyed going to the speedway. The highlight for her was watching her son Alan win the Australian Stock Rod Championship in 1966 at Windsor.

Alan Brien Australian Stock Rod Champion 1966

Pictured outside 17 Enid Ave



Another passion was the Parramatta (Eels) football team. In those days the officials opened the gates at half-time and this would allow Maisie to sneak in without paying and watch the second half for free. Her 'thing' for Mick Cronin led to her gatecrashing his wedding and scoring a prized wedding booklet!

Maisie used colloquialisms uncommon these days e.g.

If she heard something, she thought was rubbish, it was – Bunkum

If someone was strong, they had – Gumption

If you were out late, she would say you were – out Gallivanting

If you didn't have a temperature you were – Cool as a cucumber

If you didn't want to do something, she would say you were a – Squib

If you left school or work early, she would ask, did you – Skive off.

When all of her children had left home and were married, she continued living at Granville until 1987 when she moved into a unit in the Cardinal Gilroy Village at Merrylands NSW."



BRIEN, Maisie Beatrice. — Passed away peacefully June 25, 2006, late of Gilroy Village, Merrylands, formerly of Granville. Beloved wife of George (deceased), loving mother of George, Carol, Alan, Yvonne and Neville and their partners. Devoted grandmother and great-grandmother of their children.

Aged 92 years.
Loved and remembered always.

Requiem Mass for the repose of the soul of the late MAISIE BRIEN will be celebrated at Gilroy Village Chapel, Barcom Road, Merrylands, on Friday (June 30, 2006), commencing at 2 p.m.
Following the Mass, the cortege will proceed to Rookwood Catholic Cemetery.

METCALFE & MORRIS
FUNERAL DIRECTORS

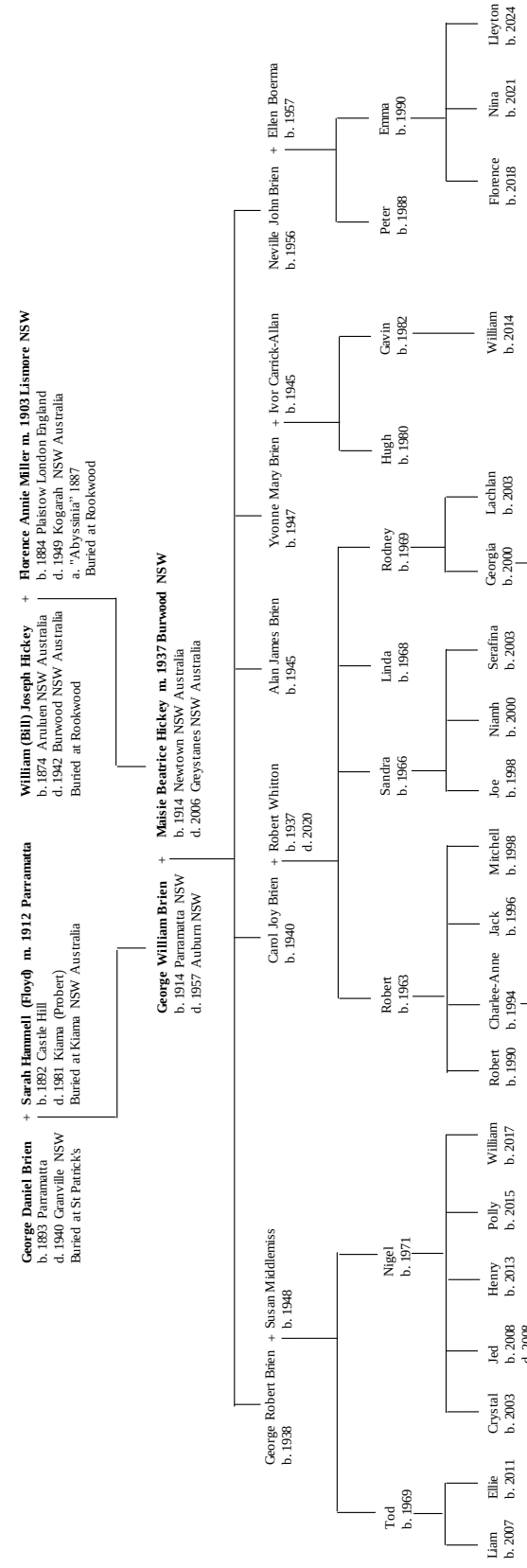
25 ARGYLE STREET, PARRAMATTA.
A.F.D.A. 9687 2600.
An Australian Company

Maisie Hickey passed away on the
25th June 2006
at Cardinal Gilroy Village Merrylands NSW



George and Maisie's grand daughter Emma, with her daughters Florence and Nina
In front of the Sydney Harbour Bridge
(On the far shore is Sydney Cove - where convict Daniel Brien disembarked in 1791)

Tree showing the descendants of George William Brien and Maisie Beatrice Hickey (2024)



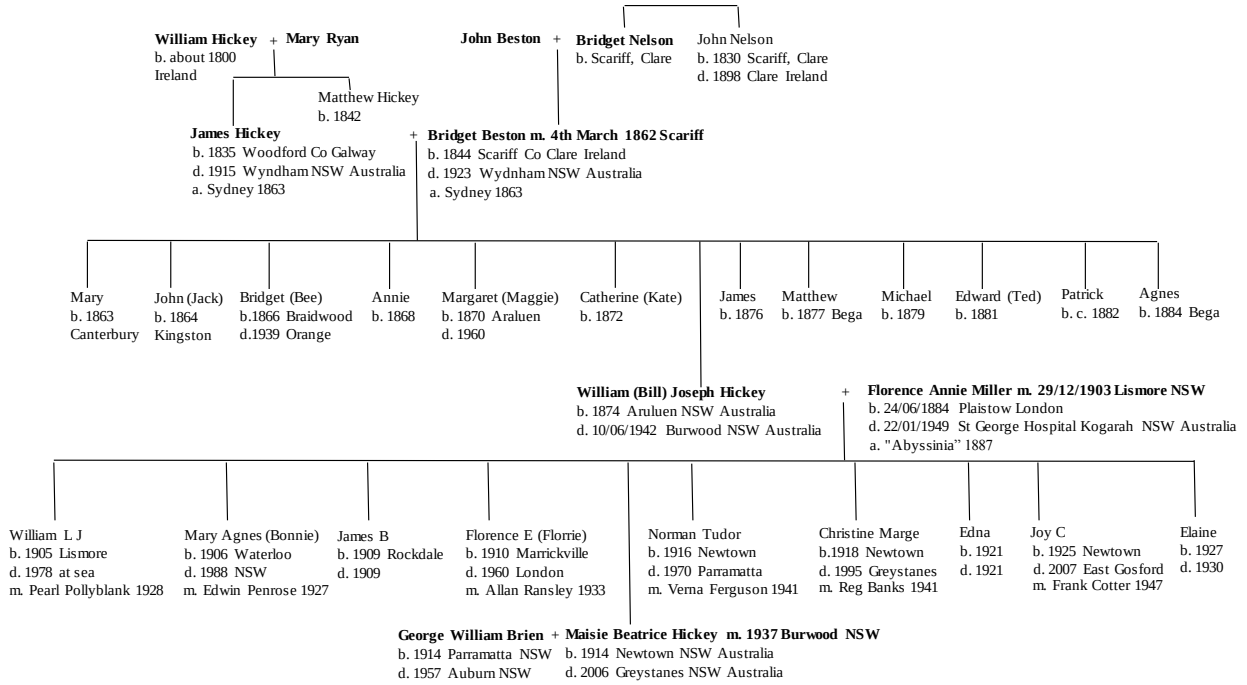
Maisie Hickey's father William (Bill) Joseph Hickey b. 1874 d. 1942

William (Bill) Hickey was born at Aruluen NSW on the 14th May 1874 and was the 7th of 13 children. His parents James Hickey and Bridget Beston had migrated from Ireland in 1863 and their story is told in the following section "The HICKEYs of Honeysuckle."

BIRTH REGISTERED IN NEW SOUTH WALES, AUSTRALIA

Child		
Surname	HICKEY	
Other names	William	
Sex	Male	
Date of birth	14th May, 1874	
Place of birth	Araluen, N.S.W.	
Parents of Child		
Father-Surname	HICKEY	
Other names	James	
Occupation	Miner (Gold)	
Age	39 years	
Place of birth	County Galway, Ireland.	
Mother-Surname	HICKEY	
Maiden surname	BESTON	
Other names	Bridget	
Age	31 years	
Place of birth	County Clare, Ireland.	
Date of marriage	5th February, 1862	
Place of marriage	County Clare, Ireland	
Previous children of marriage	Mary Theresa 11 years, John 10, Bridget 8, Annie 6, Margaret 4 Living 1 Female Deceased.	
Informant	James Hickey, Father, Honeysuckle, Wyndham, South Coast, N.S.W.	
Particulars of registration	Wm.Ridley, Deputy Registrar General, Sydney.	Date 10th March, 1910 Number 504

Birth certificate of William (Bill) Joseph Hickey born 14th May 1874
(husband of Florence Miller)



Family tree of William (Bill) Joseph Hickey

William Hickey's father James Hickey died at Wyndham in 1915 and his mother Bridget was still operating the family store almost up to her death in 1923.

I know little of William's movements prior to June 1902 when his NSW Railway employment record shows he commenced working at the Eveleigh Carriage works on a temporary basis on the 23rd June 1902. William continued working as a casual at Eveleigh Railway and also Randwick Tram yards until the 24th January 1903. [723]

After this date we know he made his way up the coast of NSW to Lismore where he married Florence Annie Miller on the 29th December 1903. At the time of his marriage William stated his occupation was a Carpenter. William and Florence had their first child William Hickey (Billy) born at Lismore in 1905.

By 1906 William and Florence were back in Sydney where their second child Mary Agnes (Bonnie) was born at Waterloo.

On the 11th November 1907 William Hickey again commenced work at the railway Carriage-works at Eveleigh as a "Wagon builder" and was made permanent on the 1st October 1910.

On the 12th May 1914 my mother Maisie Beatrice Hickey was born at 6 Cavendish Street Newtown NSW. William and Florence Hickey continued living in Cavendish St Newtown NSW until around 1926 when they moved the family to 44 Beaumaris St Enfield. They later moved across the street to 59 Beaumaris St Enfield.

The Great Strike of 1917

In 1917 William Hickey was caught up in the Great Strike of NSW and Victoria. This was a significant industrial and political event in Australia that actually started at the Eveleigh workshops where William Hickey worked, and spread across Australia as other industries joined in support.



Interior of Carriage-works at Eveleigh Workshops at the time William Hickey worked there

Usually referred to as the "New South Wales General Strike", but referred to by contemporaries as 'The Great Strike', it was in fact neither general nor confined to NSW. The strike was however a mass strike, involving around 100,000 workers, mostly in NSW and Victoria. [724]

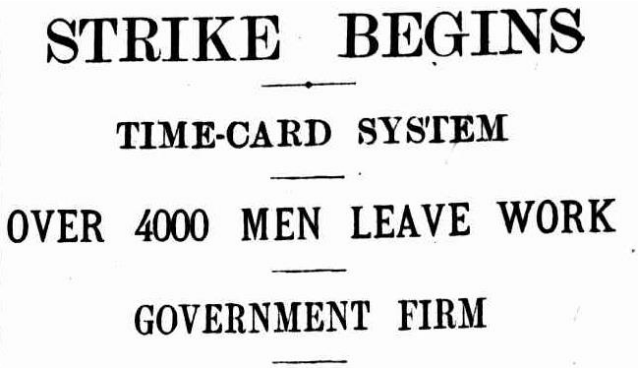
It began in New South Wales and spread to other states over six weeks from 2nd August to 8th September 1917 when the official leadership declared the strike over. We can see from William Hickey's railway work record that on the 14th August 1917 he was "Dismissed by Proclamation" as he left work in support of the strike.



Excerpt from William Hickey's railway work record showing he was impacted by the Great Strike of 1917. The date at the end says "2.8.17" the day the 'Great Strike' started.

The strike began at the Randwick Workshops and Eveleigh Carriage Shops with workers walking off the job in protest. Their cause was taken up throughout the New South Wales railway system, and eventually spread to other industries and states.

Outside of the railways, significant groups such as the waterside workers in Sydney and Melbourne, and the Hunter Valley coal mines remained out until November 1917. In Melbourne the waterfront workers were replaced by strike-breakers with the original workers locked out.


STRIKE BEGINS

TIME-CARD SYSTEM

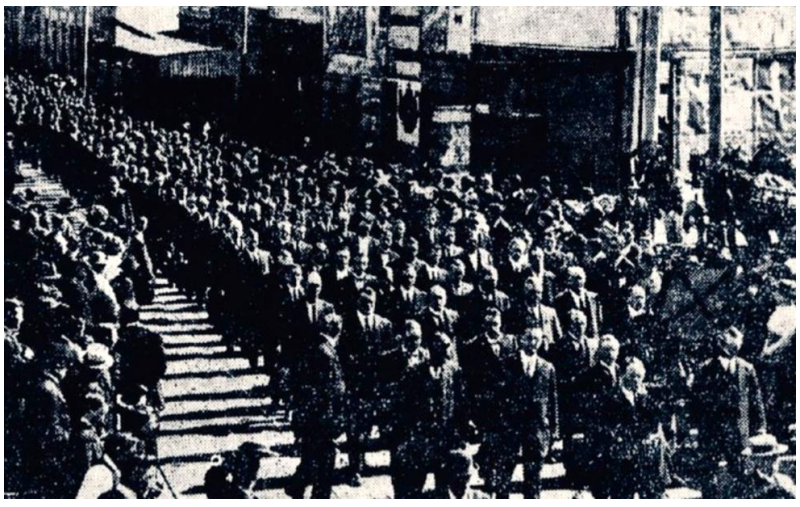
OVER 4000 MEN LEAVE WORK

GOVERNMENT FIRM

Headline from SMH 3rd August 1917

The trigger for the strike was the introduction of a new labour costing system introduced by the New South Wales Department of Railways and Tramways. The system, a time and motion study, used cards to record the tasks each worker was assigned and the time it took them to complete those tasks. Concern existed over the right to view or modify their card, and the potential use of the card system to identify (and presumably dismiss) "slow" or "inefficient" workers.

On the 31st August 1917, Mervyn Flanagan a striker was shot and killed by strike-breaker Reginald Warne. Amid great controversy and public tension, a coroner's court found that Wearne had acted in self defense and charges were dropped without him facing trial. Thousands of people lined the streets during Flanagan's funeral. [725]



The funeral of striker Mervyn Flanagan 1st September 1917

In another violent incident a strike-breaker, Alfred Green, was shot whilst driving a train from Sydney to Wollongong. Two miners were charged but the case against them collapsed when it was revealed at the time of the shooting they were in Sydney.

The strike was accompanied by scenes of mass protest. There were daily demonstrations in Sydney and Melbourne. In Sydney, the daily rallies peaked every Sunday with crowds of up to 150,000.



Strikers assemble outside Sydney Central Station in August 1917

On 9th September 1917 the Defense Committee, an ad hoc committee of trade union officials based in the NSW Trades and Labour Council, declared the strike over on terms which amounted to a complete capitulation.

The decision was denounced as a sellout in a series of furious mass meetings and, when it was clear that hundreds would be victimised, many groups of railway workers resumed strike action. But without official support, the strikers drifted back to work and, after two weeks, the railway strike had ended. [726]

The strike had terrible consequences, with many strikers losing their jobs or being demoted when they returned to work, and then living with a black mark against them for years to come. It also saw a generation politicised, including Labor identities such as future federal MP Eddie Ward, Joseph Cahill, who would become premier of New South Wales in 1952, worked at Eveleigh Workshops at the time, and was an active trade unionist. Joseph Cahill's card was marked as an "agitator", and he had great difficulty finding regular work after his participation in the strike. [727]

Also impacted was a young Ben Chifley, who would become Australia's prime minister in 1945 and ironically, had to confront another major strike during his tenure as prime minister. Chifley had worked on the railways since 1903, and was a train driver at the time of the strike.

William Hickey was not re-instated at the railways until the 13th November 1917 and when he did recommence, he was moved from Eveleigh to the Railway Workshops at Clyde (known then as Clyde Siding) where he remained until taking sick leave on the 24th September 1931 before finally retiring on the 13th July 1932 aged 58. [728]

William Hickey died at 59 Beaumaris St Enfield of a heart attack on the 12th June 1942 aged 68 and was buried at Rookwood cemetery in plot SEC*M2*12**1001.

DEATH CERTIFICATE

Date and place of death	Name and occupation	Sex and age	Cause of Death Duration of last illness; medical attendant; when he last saw deceased	Name and occupation of father. Name and maiden surname of mother	Informant
1942. 12th June, 1942 59 Beaumaris Street, 272 Enfield. Municipality of Enfield.	WILLIAM JOSEPH HICKEY Draftsman	Male 68 years	I.(a) Coronary Occlusion (b) Chronic Myocarditis (c) Arterio Sclerosis (2) I.(a) a few minutes (b) 10 years (3) John O'Brien (registered) (4) 1st June, 1942.	(1) James Hickey (2) Farmer (3) Bridget Beston	F. E. Ramsley Daughter 1154 Canterbury Road, Punchbowl

Particulars of Registration	When and where buried; name of undertaker	Name and religion of Minister and names of witnesses of burial	Where born and how long in the Australasian Colonies or States	Place of marriage, age, and to whom	Children of marriage
(1) F. H. Ramsley (2) 12th June, 1942 (3) BURWOOD	1942 (1) 13th June (2) Roman Catholic Cemetery Rookwood (3) Walter Scurrah employed by Labor Motor Funerals Limited	(1) Edward Walsh (2) Roman Catholic (3) C. Neave K. Wilson	Araluen N.S.W. -------	(1) Lismore N.S.W. (2) 27 years (3) Florence Annice Miller	years. William L.J.A. 37 Mary A. 35 Florence E.C.T. 32 May B. 29 Norman T.J. 28 Christina H. 24 Clarice J. 17 living One male and two females deceased.

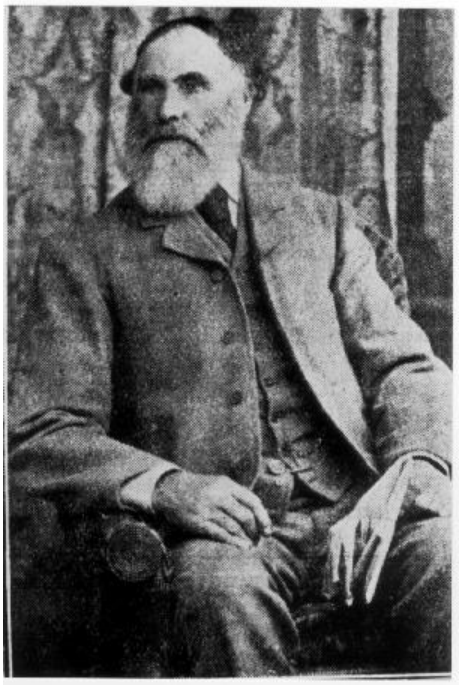
Death certificate of William Hickey who died 12th June 1942.
(His daughter Florence was the informant)

The HICKEYs of Honeysuckle (by Sid Hammell)

The story William (Bill) Hickey's family has been researched by our cousin Sid Hammell and he has produced an excellent description in his document "The HICKEYs of Honeysuckle" which I reproduce below.

Hickey is an old Irish family name, they are the descendants of the ancient family of physicians, O' hIcidhe, who anglicized their surname as Hickey or Hickie. From their early homeland in Co. Clare the family spread into the neighbouring counties of Limerick to the south and Tipperary to the east and from there it was dispersed farther afield.[729]

William's father James Hickey, was born about 1835 in County Galway, Ireland. His parents were William Hickey and Mary Ryan. It was said that James taught college in Ireland, although I've found nothing to confirm this. James acquired his education at the long-ago hedge schools.



James Hickey (c.1835-1915)

James Hickey married Bridget Beston, on 4th March 1862 in Scariff, County Clare. Scariff is about seven miles, as the crow flies, from Woodford, Galway. Bridget was eighteen years old. Her father, John, was a farmer. Her mother's name was also Bridget (nee Nelson).

James and Bridget migrated to Australia in 1863. They lived first at Canterbury, in Sydney. At that time Canterbury was not heavily populated, although a number of sub-divisions had occurred, and light industry offered employment (see F.A. Larcombe, Change & Challenge: A History of the Municipality of Canterbury, NSW, Canterbury Municipal Council, 1979).

James and Bridget's first child, Mary, was born at Canterbury on 14th September 1863. James was shown on the birth certificate as a labourer. The surname spelling used was "Hickie", the same as James and Bridget's marriage certificate. Some time after this the spelling changed to "Hickey."

In December 1863, James remitted £7 towards the passage of his younger brother, Mathew, to Australia. Mathew was living at "Cloncoa" in Galway, and the Parish Priest there was named as a referee as to Mathew's character. Mathew came out in the Morning Star in 1864, at the age of 22. His native place was shown as Woodford, Galway.

Mathew could read and write, and was a Roman Catholic. His calling was shown as "Labourer." The Immigration records show his parents William and Mary both still alive and living at "Clonco", Galway, Ireland. His brother James was named as a relative in the colony, living at Canterbury.

Mathew is believed to have settled down Albury way, working on the railways. He was probably still alive when James died in 1915, although I've been unable to track him down. There was another brother living in Ireland in 1915.

James and Bridget were still in Sydney when their second child, John (known as Jack) was born in 1864. However shortly afterwards the family had moved south to the goldfields at Araluen, south of Braidwood. Bridget was born there in 1866, followed by Annie (about 1868), Margaret (Maggie) (1870), Catherine (Kate) (1872), and William (Bill) (1874).

Some time after this, the family is believed to have selected land south of Cuttagee Lake, just north of Tilba. This venture does not seem to have proven successful, and the family moved to Wyndham, NSW in 1882. Many years later Margaret Hickey (Maggie) told Bernard Cornell, Wyndham historian, she was born at Araluen, and moved to Wyndham when she was eleven.

By this time James (Jimmy) (1876), Matthew (1877), Michael (Bert) (at Tathra, near Bega, in 1879), Edward (Ted) (about 1880) and Patrick (Pat) (1881) had been added to an already crowded household. Agnes was born at Wyndham in 1884.

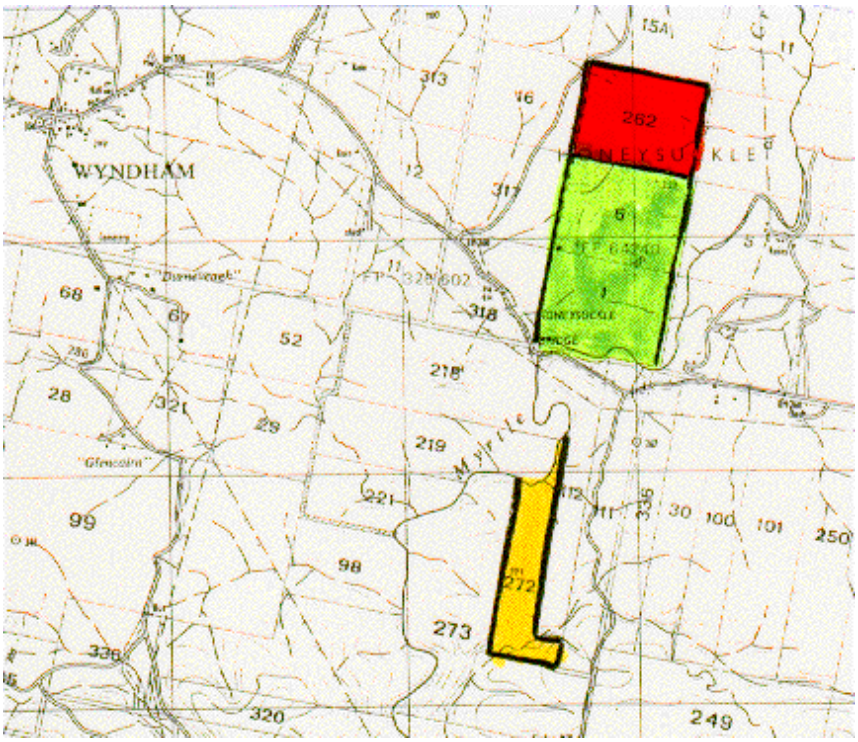
The Hickeys are believed to have taken over the Honeysuckle Inn about 1882, although they had no licence to sell liquor. Bridget ran the place as a general store, especially during the mining days at Whipstick, to the east, from 1893.



Honeysuckle Inn

James worked as a road maintenance man, as well as running a small farm in the valley. James free selected block 272 (yellow on the map), probably around 1882, eventually acquiring freehold title in 1904. This block was sold by Pat in 1927. Block 262, up on the hill (orange on the map) was purchased by James at auction on 14th June 1899. Blocks 1 and 6 (green on the map) were purchased from David Delves (original grant 1854) on 1st February 1907.

Honeysuckle Inn is on the south end of block 1, below the shoulder of the road; you can't see it from the car. James presumably leased the Inn, and possibly blocks 1 and 6 as well, before purchasing them later. Blocks 1, 6 and 262 were sold by Pat in 1936. It must have been about then that Pat, Mabel and Maggie moved to Merimbula.



Map of Wyndham area showing blocks owned by James Hickey

James Hickey was good friends with another Irishman, Bernard Grant, who first settled in Moruya, before moving to Wyndham. James and Bernard visited each others homes and usually walked together after the meeting as far as the Honeysuckle Bridge where from opposite ends, they fare welled each other in song. According to Bernie Cornell, they called one another Mr. Grant and Mr. Hickey.

The Hickey children attended Wyndham Public School. The children generally attended school for three or four years, frequently with a break in their schooling, before returning for a further class later on. None seems to have gone beyond fourth class at Wyndham. There was a story that the boys were sent off to school at the prestigious St. Ignatius College, Riverview (Lane Cove, Sydney), although this has not been substantiated.

Catherine, William and James were enrolled there on 24th April 1882 (aged 9, 7 and 6 respectively). They were living at Honeysuckle, and their father James's occupation was listed as "Road Maintenance." Matthew started later in the year on 25th October (aged 5). Michael started school on 30th July 1884 (age 5), from which time James was shown as "Storekeeper." Edward started in 1887 (aged 6). William and James apparently had a break from school for a short time in 1887. Patrick started school in 1889 (aged 7). Agnes went in 1890 for a year or so.

On 5th January 1894 the Pambula Voice and Eden, Wyndham, Wolumla, Rockyhall, Towamba and Merimbula Advocate ran the following article:

"Catholic church at Wyndham. A meeting of Roman Catholics was held at Wyndham on New Year's Day with reference to the proposed church. The Rev. Father Power was present. It was decided to have a brick building erected, and in order to raise funds, collectors were appointed for Wyndham and neighbouring districts, as follows: for Pambula, Messrs. P.M. Sheehy, J.P. and James Hickey; Candelo, Messrs. Nadin and W. Collins; Rocky Hall, Messrs. D. Collins and James Grant; Wyndham, E. Power and J. Schuback." [730]

St Joseph's Catholic church at Wyndham 1996



On 21st October 1898 the paper advised that the "Sum of £48 was contributed at the opening of the new Catholic Church at Wyndham last week." The present church, St. Joseph's, is a weatherboard building, with matching outhouse, and corrugated iron roof. The church is built on wooden posts the diameter of telegraph poles, and is probably the same as that referred to in the newspaper.

From April 1897 until mid 1900 Wyndham was subject to bursts of typhoid which completely disrupted the school routine and the community. The Hickey family seems to have survived.

James Hickey became a Justice of the Peace in 1899, an office he held until his death in 1915 (per Register of Appointments of Justices of the Peace, 1899).

James died of heart failure on 2nd July 1915 at Honeysuckle. His obituary appeared in the Freeman's Journal on 22nd July 1915. Under James's will, Patrick Hickey inherited the estate, subject to specific bequests to Edward, Maggie and Agnes, and also subject to Bridget's life interest.

After James's death Bridget continued to run the general store until she passed away on the 6th March 1923.



Grave of James and Bridget Hickey at Wyndham NSW

A lady who answered Sid Hammell's ad in the Sun Herald said her mother recalled buying butter from Bridget as a child.

The store continued to operate until about 1928, when the Whipstick area was burnt out in a bushfire. Patrick and Maggie must have run the store after Bridget died.

Bridget was known to have hidden the sovereigns she received in the chimney but her hiding place was robbed. Several years later two sovereigns were ploughed up on the hill behind the store and bore the dates of 1827 and 1857. Pat Hickey showed some of the sovereigns to Bernard Cornell years later.



Wyndham, 1996

Honeysuckle Inn still stands, just to the east of Honeysuckle Bridge, Wyndham. The present owner, Mrs Beryl Umback, was kind enough to invite us into her house on our visit there last year. Beryl showed us the original fireplace, and original wooden shingles on the veranda, still there under more recent corrugated iron roofing. We took great pleasure in signing the visitors' book.

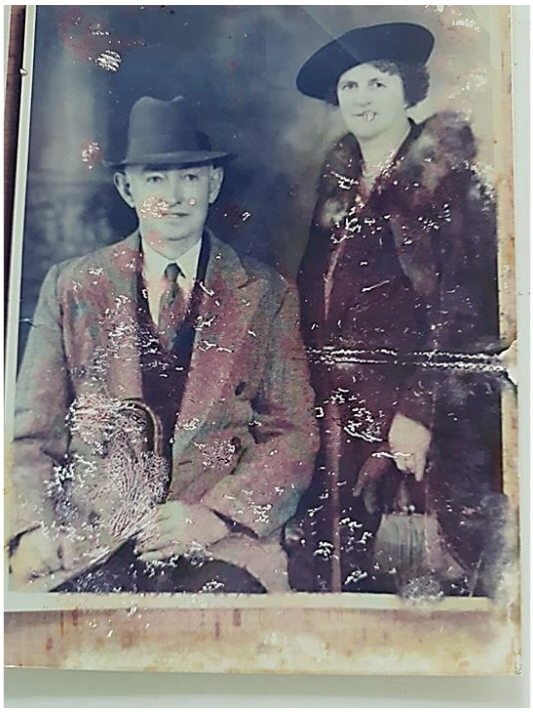


Descendants and relatives of The Hickeys of Honeysuckle, near Wyndham, NSW, Australia at a gathering in Centennial Park, Sydney, NSW on St Patrick's Day 1996



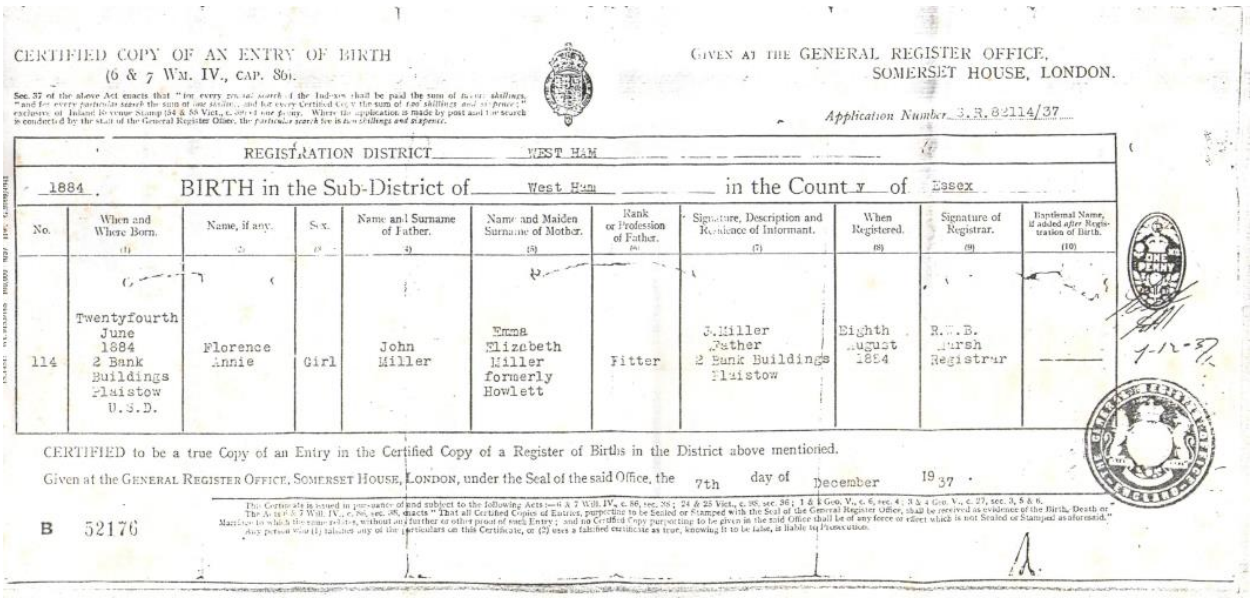
Some of James and Bridget Hickey's children

(back) Matthew, James, John and William
(front) Edward, Mary, Patrick and Michael



Maisie's parents, William Hickey and Florence Miller.

Maisie Hickey's mother Florence Annie Miller b. 1884 d. 1949



CERTIFIED COPY OF AN ENTRY OF BIRTH
(6 & 7 WM. IV., CAP. 86).

GIVEN AT THE GENERAL REGISTER OFFICE,
SOMERSET HOUSE, LONDON.

Application Number S.R. 82114/37

REGISTRATION DISTRICT WEST HAM

1884. BIRTH in the Sub-District of West Ham in the County of Essex

No.	When and Where Born.	Name, if any.	Sex.	Name and Surname of Father.	Name and Maiden Surname of Mother.	Rank or Profession of Father.	Signature, Description and Residence of Informant.	When Registered.	Signature of Registrar.	Baptismal Name, if added after Registration of Birth.
(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(6)	(7)	(8)	(9)	(10)	
114	Twentyfourth June 1884 2 Bank Buildings Plaistow U.S.D.	Florence Annie	Girl	John Miller	Emma Elizabeth Miller formerly Howlett	Fitter	J. Miller Father 2 Bank Buildings Plaistow	Eighth August 1884	R.W.B. Marsh Registrar	

CERTIFIED to be a true Copy of an Entry in the Certified Copy of a Register of Births in the District above mentioned.

Given at the GENERAL REGISTER OFFICE, SOMERSET HOUSE, LONDON, under the Seal of the said Office, the 7th day of December 19 37.

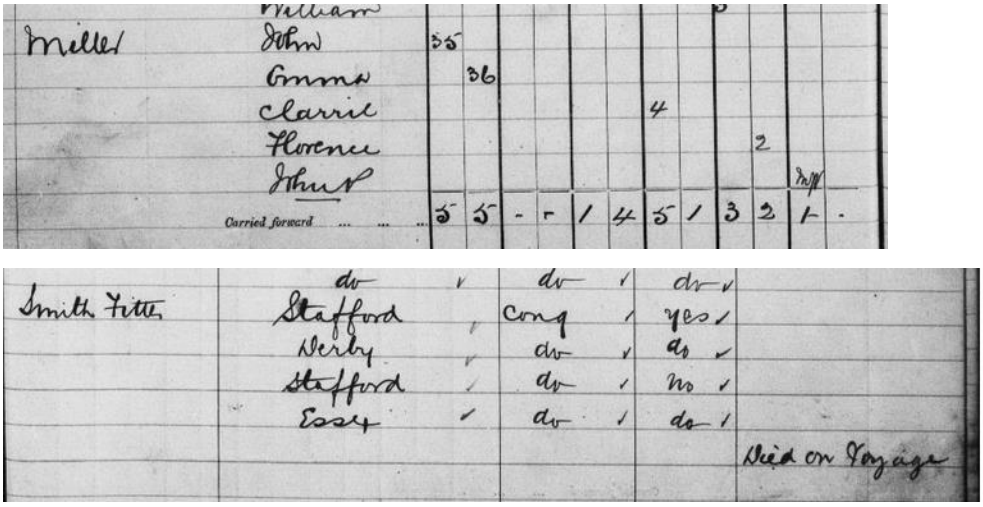
B 52176

Birth certificate of Florence Annie Miller born 24th June 1884

Florence Annie Miller was the daughter of John Miller and Emma Elizabeth Howlett. She was born at Plaistow in East London on the 24th June 1884.

Florence was the second of three children. Her elder sister Clarice Edith Miller was born at Stourbridge Worcestershire England in 1882 and her younger brother John Percy Miller was born at West Ham East London in 1887. Plaistow and West Ham are adjacent locations in East London and at the time Florence was born the family lived at 2 Bank Buildings in Plaistow, Essex.

Soon after John Percy Miller was born the family travelled to Plymouth and boarded the ship "Abyssinia" bound for Sydney. They arrived on the 24th Mar 1887. Sadly, young John died on the journey.



Miller	William													
	John	35												
	Emma		36											
	Clarrie							4						
	Florence										2			
	John P											Dd		
	Carried forward	5	5	-	-	/	4	5	/	3	2	/	-	
Smith Fitter	do	/		do	/	do	/							
	Stafford	/		Cong	/	yes	/							
	Derby	/		do	/	do	/							
	Stafford	/		do	/	No	/							
	Essex	/		do	/	do	/							
														Died on Voyage

Manifest from the 'Abyssinia' 24th Mar 1887 showing the Miller family arriving in Sydney.



SHIPPING.

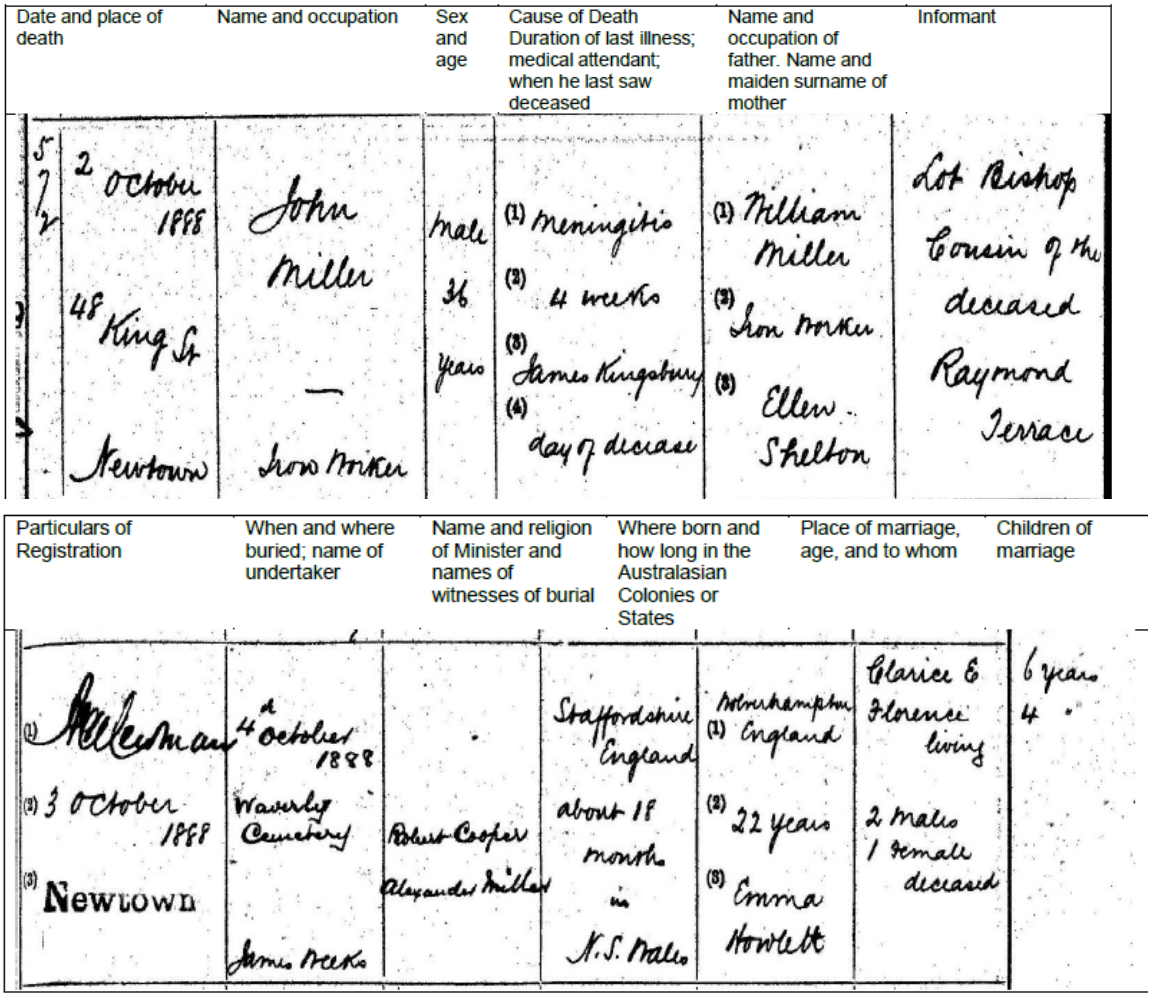
ARRIVALS.—MARCH 24.

Abyssinia (s.), 3657 tons, Captain Marshall, from Plymouth January 31, via Cape Town February 25. Passengers—619 Government immigrants. G. S. Yuill, agent.

Abyssinia arrived SMH Fri 25 Mar 1887

Within 18 months of their arrival John Miller fell ill and died and was buried at Waverly cemetery.

At the time of his death the Miller's were living at 48 King St Newtown NSW. John's occupation was listed as an Iron Monger, his father in England had at one time worked as an Iron Tube Maker, which was commonly used at that time for gas pipes.



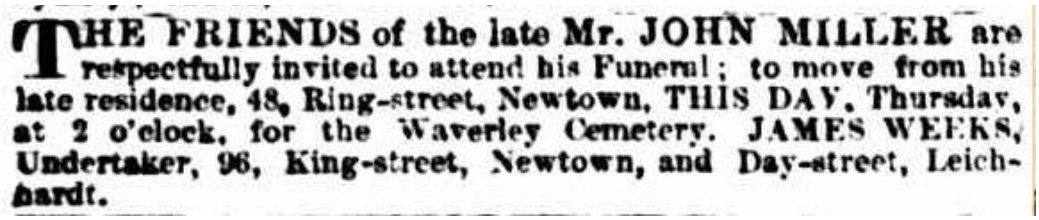
Date and place of death	Name and occupation	Sex and age	Cause of Death Duration of last illness; medical attendant; when he last saw deceased	Name and occupation of father. Name and maiden surname of mother	Informant
2 October 1888 48 King St Newtown	John Miller — Iron Worker	Male 36 years	(1) meningitis (2) 4 weeks (3) James Kingsbury (4) day of decease	(1) William Miller (2) Iron Worker (3) Ellen Shelton	Lot Bishop Cousin of the deceased Raymond Terrace

Particulars of Registration	When and where buried; name of undertaker	Name and religion of Minister and names of witnesses of burial	Where born and how long in the Australasian Colonies or States	Place of marriage, age, and to whom	Children of marriage
(1) Miller Man (2) 3 October 1888 (3) Newtown	4th October 1888 Waverly Cemetery James Weeks	Robert Cooper Alexander Miller	Staffordshire England about 18 months in N.S. Wales	Northampton (1) England (2) 22 years (3) Emma Howlett	Clarice & Florence living 2 Males 1 female deceased	6 years 4 "

Death certificate of John Miller who died 2nd October 1888
(buried at Waverly cemetery)

The Informant on John Miller's death certificate was Lot Bishop who lived at Raymond Terrace. Lot was married to Emma Thorne, a cousin of our Emma Howlett. Emma Thorne was the daughter of Emma Howlett's aunty Elizabeth Howlett. Elizabeth married James Thorne and they left England and arrived in Brisbane aboard the "Rajah Gopaul" in 1852, some 30 years before John Miller and Emma Howlett came to Australia. Their daughter Emma Thorne married Lot Bishop and they were still living at Raymond Terrace in 1914.

The families obviously kept in touch, and it seems likely that during John Miller's illness Lot Bishop had travelled to Sydney to help Emma during this period.



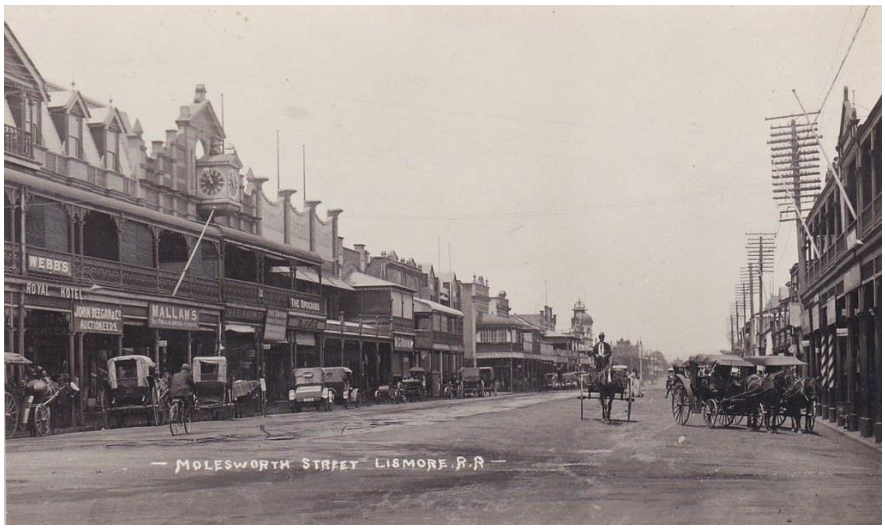
THE FRIENDS of the late Mr. JOHN MILLER are respectfully invited to attend his Funeral; to move from his late residence, 48, Ring-street, Newtown, THIS DAY, Thursday, at 2 o'clock, for the Waverley Cemetery. JAMES WEEKS, Undertaker, 96, King-street, Newtown, and Day-street, Leichhardt.

John Miller's funeral notice SMH 4th October 1888

After John Miller's death his wife Emma was left a widow with two children, Clarice aged 6 and our ancestor Florence aged 4. Emma Howlett (Miller) married for a second time in 1889 to a French man named Levieny (Levue) Pinney at Redfern. It is Levieny Pinney that I recall Maisie talking about when she mentioned her childhood.

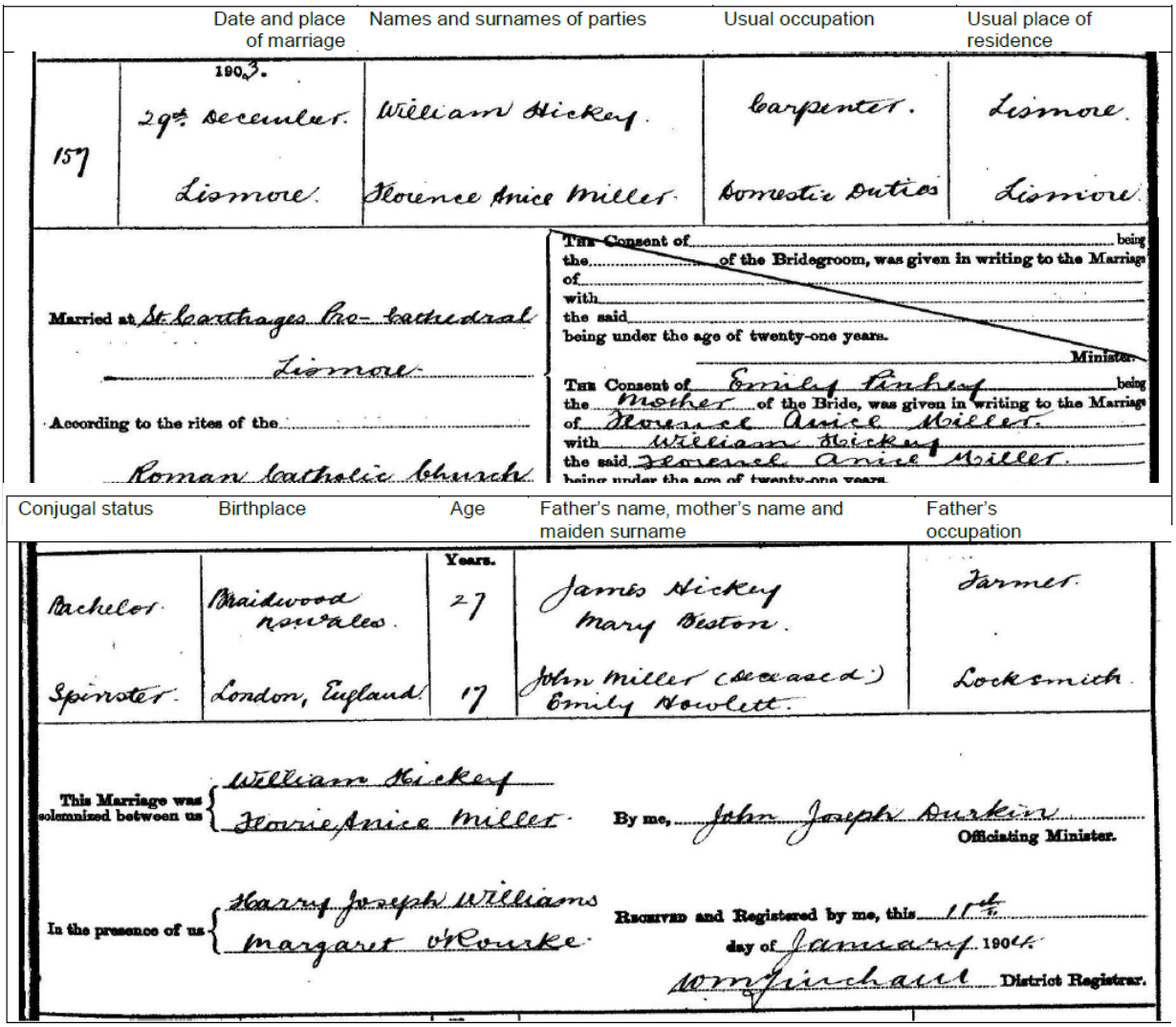
By 1892 Levieny, Emma, Clarice and Florence were in Adelong NSW which was a gold mining area in those days. That year they had a daughter named Evelyn Pinney who sadly died the following year. On Evelyn's death certificate her mother's name is given as Emily Pinney.

By 1893 the family had moved to Gundigai and as far as I can see they had no further children. Levieny and Emma obviously moved around a lot as by 1903 they were in Lismore NSW where Florence Annie Miller met William Hickey.



Main street Lismore about 1903

MARRIAGE CERTIFICATE



	Date and place of marriage	Names and surnames of parties	Usual occupation	Usual place of residence
157	1903. 29th December. Lismore.	William Hickey. Florence Anice Miller.	Carpenter. Domestic Duties	Lismore. Lismore

Married at St Carthages Pro-Cathedral Lismore

According to the rites of the Roman Catholic Church

The Consent of ..... being the ..... of the Bridegroom, was given in writing to the Marriage of ..... with ..... the said ..... being under the age of twenty-one years.

Minister.

The Consent of Emily Fawkes being the Mother of the Bride, was given in writing to the Marriage of Florence Anice Miller with William Hickey the said Florence Anice Miller being under the age of twenty-one years.

Conjugal status	Birthplace	Age	Father's name, mother's name and maiden surname	Father's occupation
Bachelor	Braidwood N.S.W.	27 Years.	James Hickey Mary Beston.	Farmer
Spinster	London, England	17	John Miller (deceased) Emily Howlett.	Locksmith

This Marriage was solemnized between us { William Hickey / Florie Anice Miller }

By me, John Joseph Durkin Officiating Minister.

In the presence of us { Harry Joseph Williams / Margaret O'Rourke }

Received and Registered by me, this 10th day of January 1904.

Wm Finchant District Registrar.

Marriage certificate of William Hickey and Florence Annie Miller
(at Lismore NSW in 1903)

A couple of interesting points on this certificate i.e. Florence used the middle name of Anice rather than Annie which appears on her birth certificate and secondly, William Hickey's mother's name is listed at Mary Beston rather than Bridget Beston which appears on her marriage certificate.

For the second half of the 19th century the primary industries of the Lismore region continued to be cattle grazing and timber, supporting a growing economy and population and the development of secondary industries which included ship building, transportation, saw milling, tallow manufacturing and more.

At the beginning of the 20th century, river navigation was still the mainstay of transportation in Lismore, the principal operator being the North Coast Steam Navigation Company. The dairy industry was performing strongly, employing hundreds of small family-owned operations, the Lismore region becoming the centre for dairy production from the surrounding farms and the richest dairy district in Australia. [731]



Richmond River at Lismore c. 1903
(when William Hickey and Florence Miller were married)

In 1905 William and Florence's first child William was born at Lismore NSW. Not long after William's birth, William and Florence Hickey moved back to Sydney where their second child Mary Agnes (Bonnie) was born at Waterloo in 1906. In September 1907 William Hickey began permanent employment with the NSW railways as a carriage builder, located at the Eveleigh workshops near Redfern and the family settled at 6 Cavendish St in nearby Newtown.

Several more children followed i.e. James b. 1909 d. 1909, Florence b. 1910, Maisie b. 1914, Norman b. 1916, Christine b. 1918. Shortly after the birth of Christine the Hickey family moved to 59 Beaumaris St Enfield. This corresponds with the time William Hickey changed work locations as from November 1917 his place of employment moved from Eveleigh to Clyde.

Three more children followed Edna b. 1921 d. 1921, Clarice Joyce (known as Joy) b. 1925 and Elaine b. 1927 d. 1930.

Maisie's mum, Florence Annie Hickey (Miller) pictured holding her grandson John Banks.



Florence Annie Hickey died at the St George hospital on the 24th January 1949 and was buried together with her husband William Hickey at Rookwood cemetery in plot SEC*M2*12**1001.

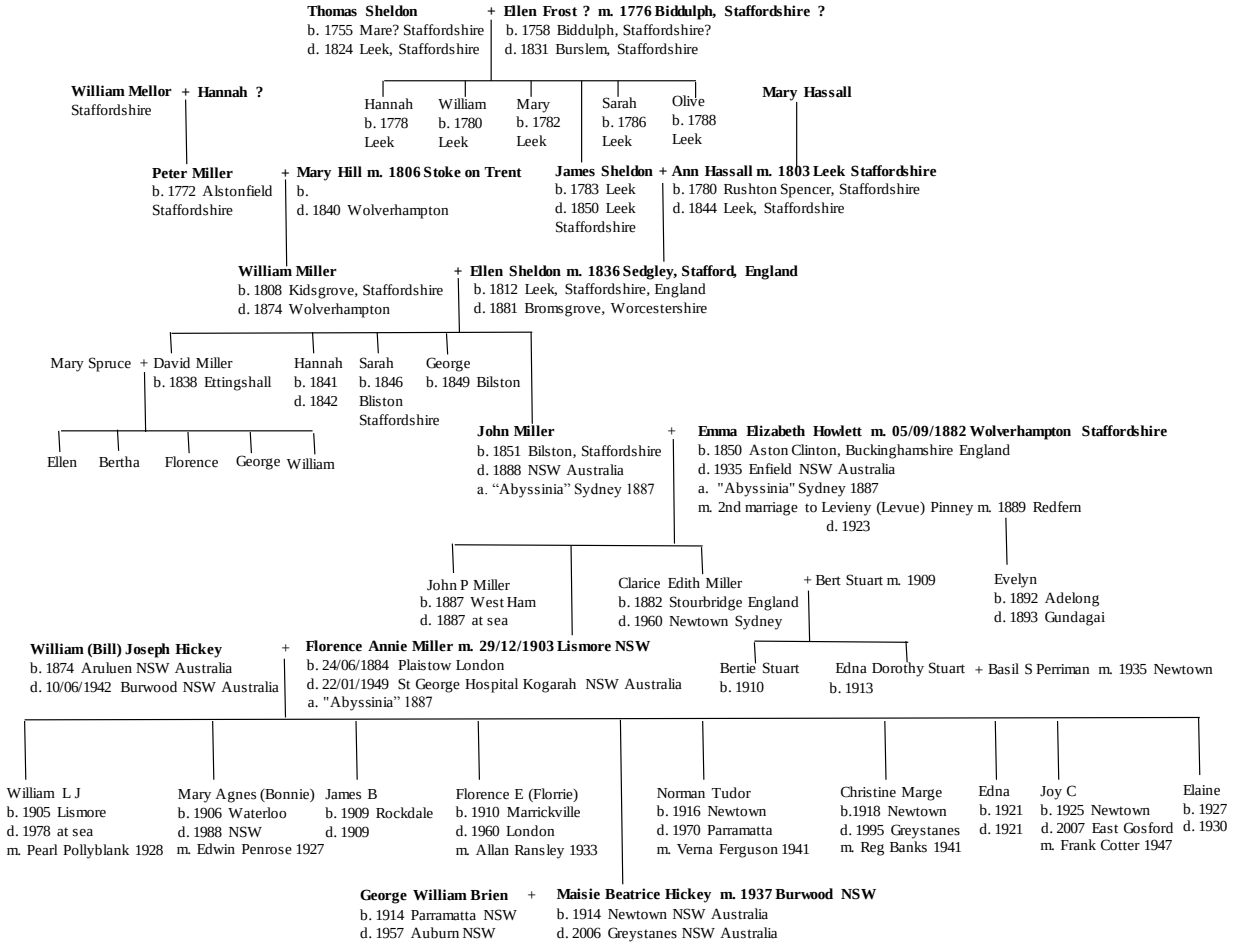
HICKEY, Florence Annie.—January 24, 1949, at St. George District Hospital, dearly loved mother of William, Mary (Bonnie), Florrie, Maisie, Norman, Chrissie, and Joy, and loved sister of Clarice (Mrs. Stuart), Dorrie (Mrs. Loveridge), aged 64 years. R.I.P.

Florence Hickey (Miller) died 22nd Jan 1949 aged 64 - SMH 25th Jan 1949



William Hickey d. 1942 and Florence Hickey (Miller) d. 1949
at Rookwood cemetery in plot SEC*M2*12**1001

Maisie Hickey's grand father John Miller b. 1851 d. 1888



Family tree of Maisie Hickey's grand father – John Miller

John Miller born in Bilston Staffordshire in 1851. John Miller's parents were William Miller and his wife Ellen Shelton. A search of the birth indexes confirms that John Miller's birth was registered in the June quarter of 1851 in Wolverhampton. His mother Ellen's maiden name is recorded as Shelton.

The 1841 census finds William Miller and his wife Ellen Shelton living in Gibbett Lane, Bilston, Staffordshire. This census confirms that they had another daughter Hannah born in 1841 who died in 1842.

The 1851 census shows William Miller, the head of the household, married, aged 62. He was a Gas Tube Maker (Iron) and was born in Kidsgrove, Staffordshire.

Ellen Miller, his wife, married, aged 62. She was born in Wolverhampton, Staffordshire.

Sarah Miller, his daughter, unmarried, aged 25. She was born in Wolverhampton, Staffordshire.

George Miller, his son, unmarried, aged 22. He was a Gas Tube Maker (Iron) and was born in Wolverhampton, Staffordshire.

John Miller, his son, unmarried, aged 20. He was a Gas Tube Maker (Iron) and was born in Wolverhampton, Staffordshire.

The 1861 census shows William Miller, the head of the household, married, aged 52. He was a Watchman of Bayliss Works and was born in Kidsgrove, Staffordshire.

Ellen Miller, his wife, married, aged 52. She was born in Bilston, Staffordshire.

David Miller, his son, unmarried, aged 23. He was a Tin Plate Worker and was born in Bilston, Staffordshire.

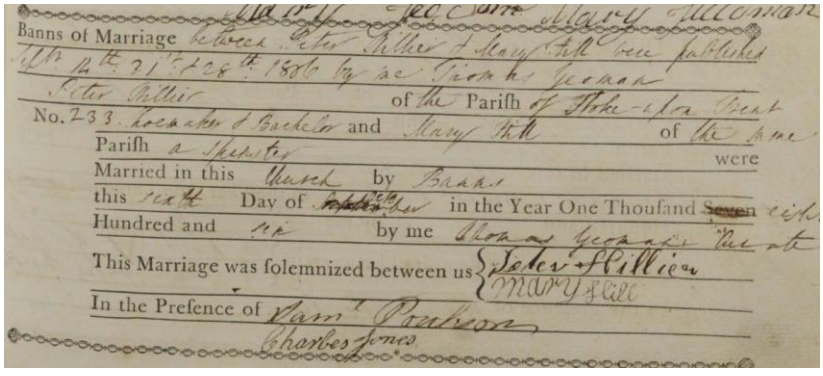
Sarah Miller, his daughter, unmarried, aged 15. She was born in Bilston, Staffordshire.

George Miller, his son, unmarried, aged 12. He was a Scholar and was born in Bilston, Staffordshire,

John Miller, his son, unmarried, aged 10. He was a Scholar and was born in Bilston, Staffordshire.

In the 1871 census John Miller was found living with his parents William and Ellen in Green Lane, Wolverhampton. Also, in the census were a sister Sarah and brother George. William and his sons worked in the area as Gas Tube Makers.

William Miller and Ellen Shelton were married on the 12th of June 1836 in Sedgley, Staffordshire. This was before the start of civil registration which began in England and Wales in 1837 so it makes it difficult to take the line back with certainty. But there is a record of a marriage between a Peter Miller and Mary Hill on the 6th October 1806 at Stoke on Trent, Staffordshire that matches and they are likely to be William Miller's parents.


Banns of Marriage between Peter Miller & Mary Hill were published
the 12th 21st & 28th 1806 by me Thomas Yeoman
Peter Miller of the Parish of Stoke-upon-Trent
No. 233 Hosier & Bachelor and Mary Hill of the same
Parish a Spinster were
Married in this Church by Banns
this 12th Day of October in the Year One Thousand Seven Eight
Hundred and six by me Thomas Yeoman Curate
This Marriage was folemnized between us { Peter + Miller / Mary + Hill
In the Presence of Wm Pearson / Charles Jones

Peter Miller married Mary Hill on the 6th October 1806

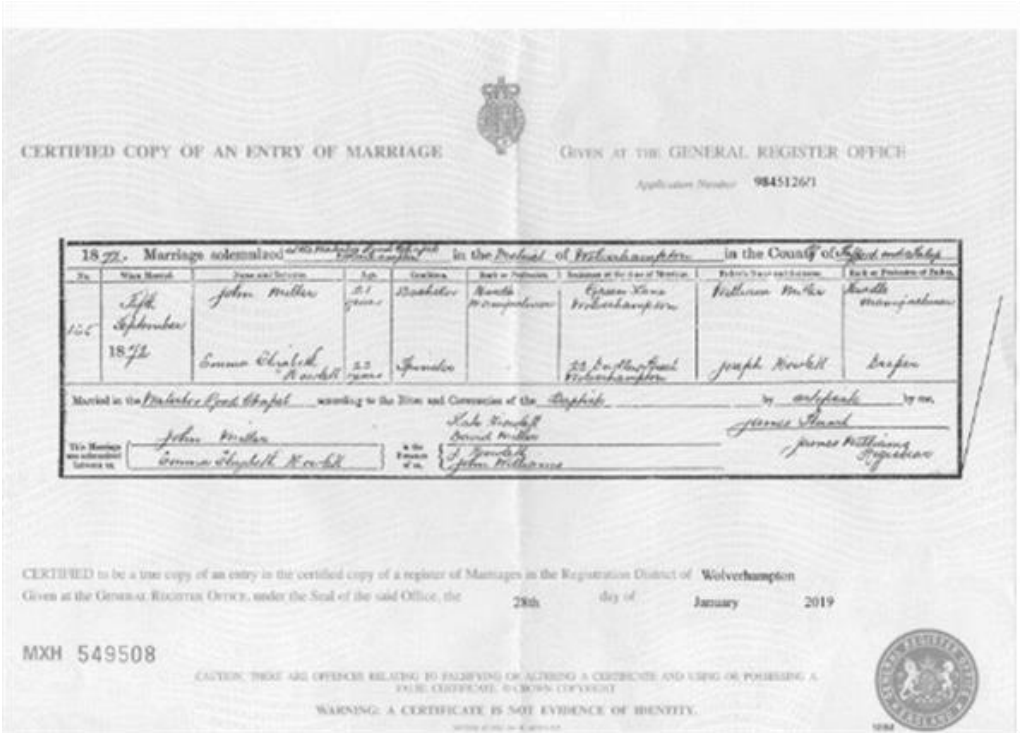
Similarly, we have a marriage record for James Sheldon and Ann Hassall in Leek Staffordshire in 1803 and these are likely to be Ellen Shelton's parents.

John Miller married Emma Elizabeth Howlett at the Waterloo Road Baptist Chapel in Wolverhampton Staffordshire on the 5th September 1872.

John Miller's father was William Miller a 'Hurdle and Nut and Bolt Manufacturer'. The usual meaning of a 'Hurdle' at this time was a frame used to make a sheep fence made out of wattle, but that doesn't add up in William Miller's case. It seems more likely that in this instance a Hurdle is some sort of tool, perhaps to thread bolts, or something similar.

Emma's father Joseph Howlett's occupation is a Draper (quite a bit easier to understand).

John Miller lived in Green Lane, Wolverhampton and Emma in Dudley Street, Wolverhampton. Emma's father Joseph, sister Kate and John's brother David were witnesses to the marriage.



CERTIFIED COPY OF AN ENTRY OF MARRIAGE

GIVEN AT THE GENERAL REGISTER OFFICE

Application Number 98451261

1872. Marriage solemnized in the Parish of Wolverhampton in the County of Stafford and Salop

No.	When Married	Name and Surname	Age	Condition	Rank or Profession	Residence at the time of Marriage	Father's Name and Surname	Rank or Profession of Father
155	Fifth September 1872	John Miller	21 years	Bachelor	Hurdle Nut & Bolt Manufacturer	Green Lane Wolverhampton	William Miller	Hurdle Manufacturer
		Emma Elizabeth Howlett	22 years	Spinster		22 Dudley Street Wolverhampton	Joseph Howlett	Draper

Married in the Waterloo Road Chapel according to the Rites and Ceremonies of the Baptists by Authority of me, James Heard

This Marriage was solemnized between us, John Miller, Emma Elizabeth Howlett

In the Presence of us, Kate Howlett, David Miller, J. Howlett, John Millward

James Williams Registrar

CERTIFIED to be a true copy of an entry in the certified copy of a register of Marriages in the Registration District of Wolverhampton

Given at the GENERAL REGISTER OFFICE, under the Seal of the said Office, the 28th day of January 2019

MXH 549508

CAUTION: THERE ARE OFFENCES RELATING TO FALSIFYING OR ALTERING A CERTIFICATE AND USING OR POSSESSING A FALSE CERTIFICATE © CROWN COPYRIGHT

WARNING: A CERTIFICATE IS NOT EVIDENCE OF IDENTITY.

Marriage certificate of John Miller and Emma Elizabeth Howlett
(at Wolverhampton in 1872)

The family of John Miller and Emma Howlett emigrated to Australia on board the ship Abyssinia arriving in Sydney on Thursday 24th Mar 1887.



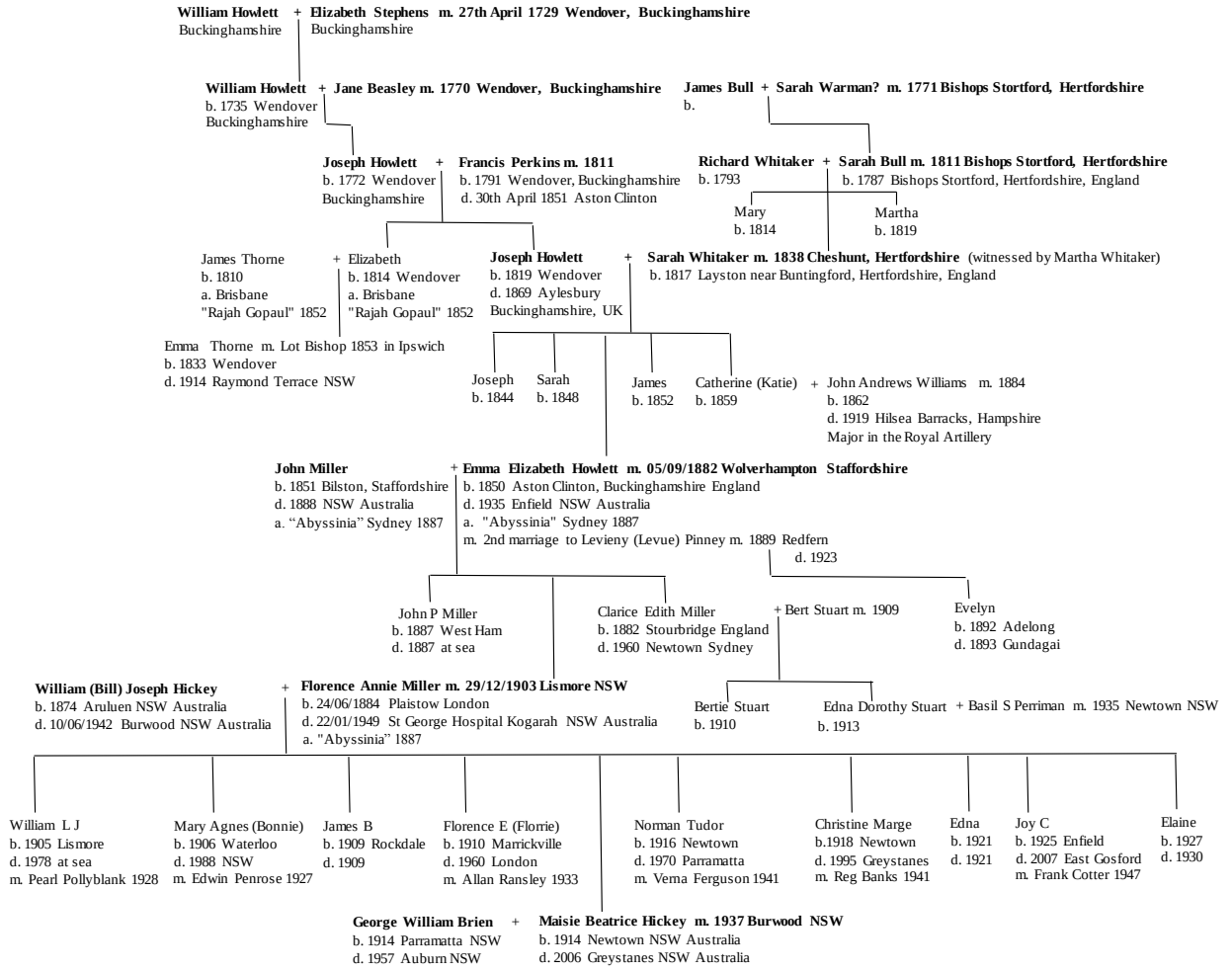
SHIPPING.

ARRIVALS.—MARCH 24.

Abyssinia (s.), 3657 tons, Captain Marshall, from Plymouth January 31, via Cape Town February 25. Passengers—619 Government immigrants. G. S. Yuill, agent.

Abyssinia arrived SMH Fri 25 Mar 1887

Maisie Hickey's grand mother Emma Elizabeth Howlett b. 1850 d. 1935

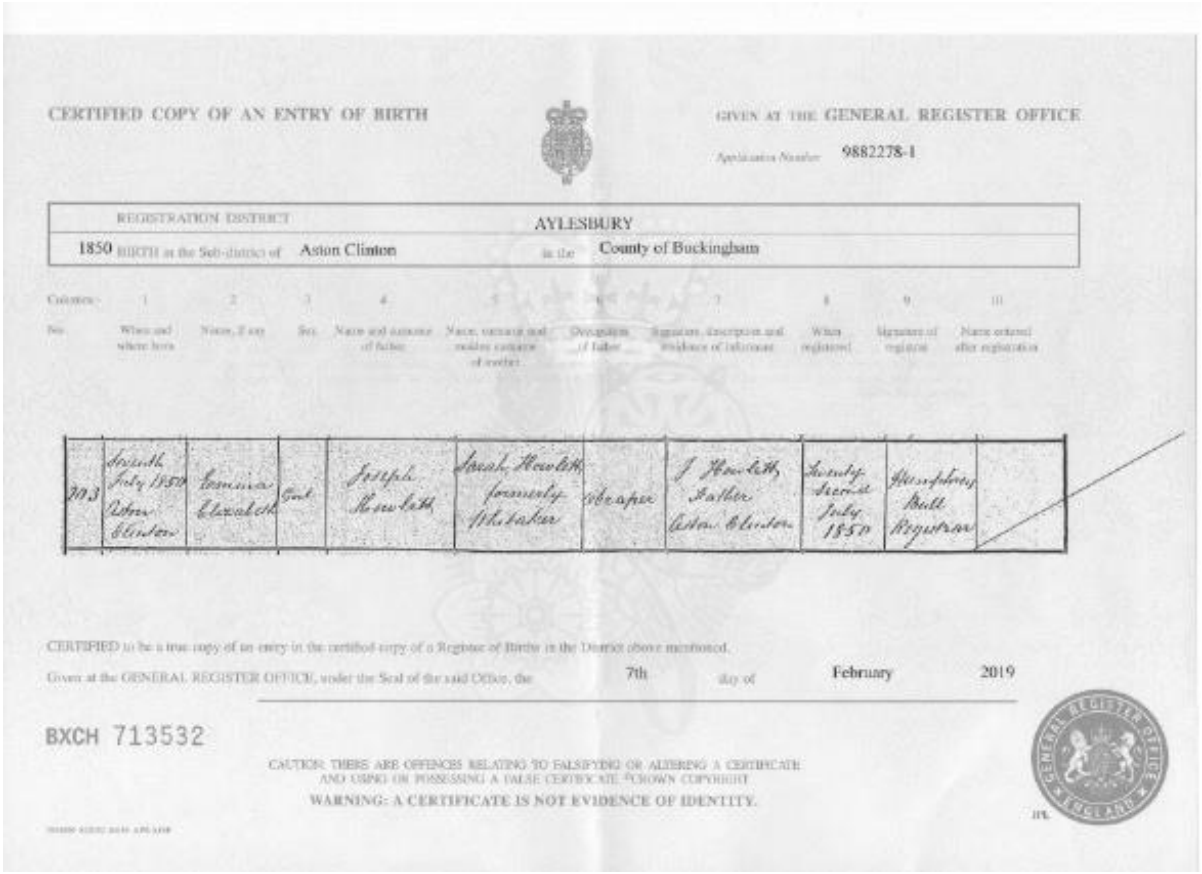


Family tree of Florence Annie Miller's mother – Emma Elizabeth Howlett

Emma Elizabeth Howlett was born in 1850 at Aston Clinton, Buckinghamshire. She was the daughter of Joseph Howlett and his wife Sarah Whitaker.

Emma's birth was a little difficult to identify as her husband John Miller was the informant and he incorrectly listed her place of birth as 'Derbyshire' on their daughter Florence's birth certificate (1884). He did the same thing again on the 'Abyssinia' ships manifest when they arrived in Sydney. But after reviewing the UK censes records there is no doubt that Emma was born at Aston Clinton, Buckinghamshire in 1850.

Emma was born within the July quarter of 1850 in Aston Clinton. Her father Joseph worked as a Draper. Her mother was Sarah Howlett formerly Whitaker.



CERTIFIED COPY OF AN ENTRY OF BIRTH

GIVEN AT THE GENERAL REGISTER OFFICE

Application Number 9882278-1

REGISTRATION DISTRICT	AYLESBURY	
1850 BIRTH in the Sub-district of Aston Clinton	in the	County of Buckinghamshire

Columns:	1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10
No.	When and where born	Name, if any	Sex	Name and surname of father	Name, surname and maiden surname of mother	Occupation of father	Signature, description and residence of informant	When registered	Signature of registrar	Name entered after registration
703	Seventh July 1850 Aston Clinton	Emma Elizabeth	Girl	Joseph Howlett	Sarah Howlett formerly Whitaker	Draper	J. Howlett, Father Aston Clinton	Twenty Second July 1850	Hampshire Bull Registrar	

CERTIFIED to be a true copy of an entry in the certified copy of a Register of Births in the District above mentioned.

Given at the GENERAL REGISTER OFFICE, under the Seal of the said Office, the 7th day of February 2019

BXCH 713532

CAUTION: THERE ARE OFFENCES RELATING TO FALSIFYING OR ALTERING A CERTIFICATE AND USING OR POSSESSING A FALSE CERTIFICATE ©CROWN COPYRIGHT

WARNING: A CERTIFICATE IS NOT EVIDENCE OF IDENTITY.

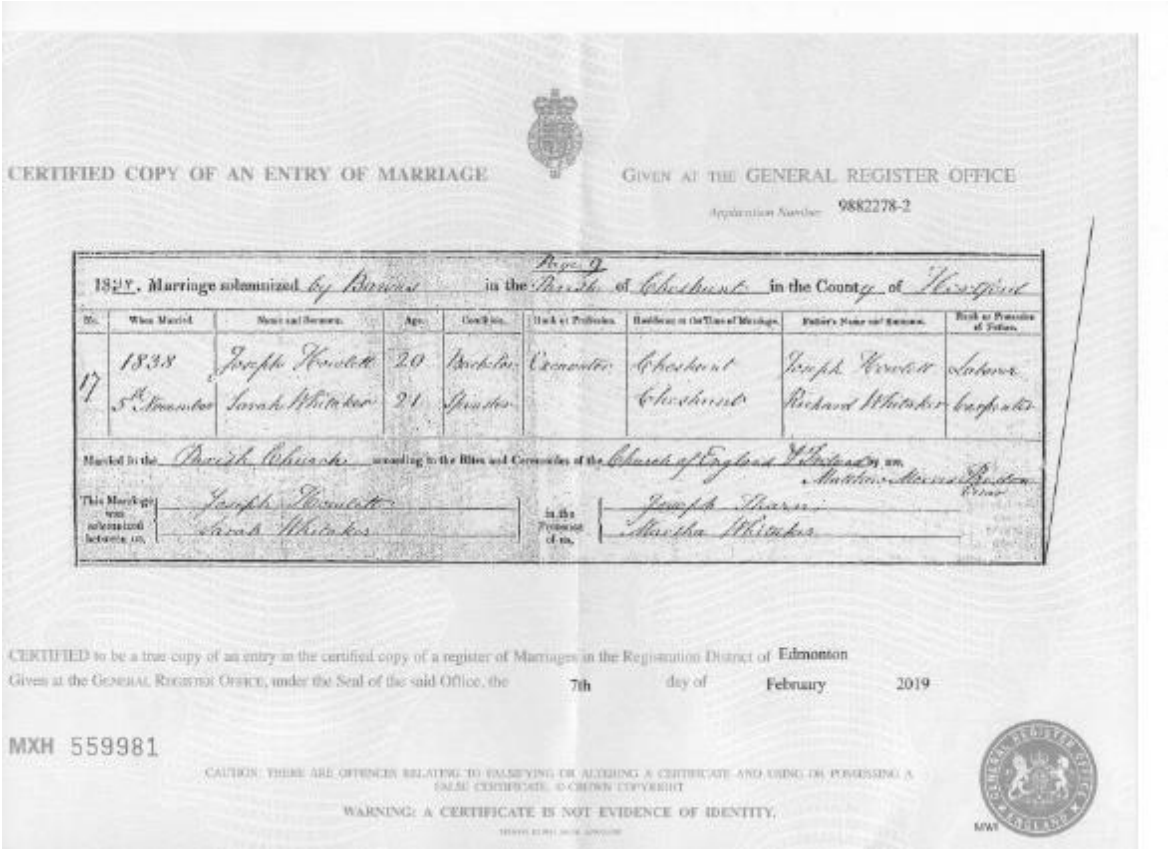
Birth certificate of Emma Elizabeth Howlett July 1850
(Aston Clinton Buckinghamshire, England)

In the 1851 census Joseph, Sarah and their children Joseph, Sarah and Emma are living at 7 London Road, Aston Clinton, Buckinghamshire. Joseph was working as a Plait Dealer. Plaiting is an old occupation which involved creating long lengths of straw plaits in order to make bonnets. Plait Dealers would advise the plait makers on the colour, pattern and size of plaits they wanted to buy.

The 1861 census shows that Emma had two brothers Joseph Richard and James and sisters Sarah Frances and Catherine Mary. The 1861 census finds Joseph, Sarah and their children living at 3 Worcester Street, Wolverhampton. Joseph worked in the area as a Milliner.

In the 1871 census the family are living at 22 Dudley Street, Wolverhampton. Joseph worked as a Master Draper and employed 1 man and 1 girl. Emma worked in the area as a Milliner.

Joseph Howlett and Sarah Whitaker were married in Cheshunt, Hertfordshire in 1838. Joseph's father was Joseph Howlett, a Labourer. Sarah was the daughter of Richard Whitaker, a Carpenter and his wife Sarah Bull. At the time of their marriage Joseph Howlett worked as an Excavator.



CERTIFIED COPY OF AN ENTRY OF MARRIAGE

GIVEN AT THE GENERAL REGISTER OFFICE

Application Number 9882278-2

Page 9

1838. Marriage solemnized by Banns in the Parish of Cheshunt in the County of Hertford

No.	When Married	Name and Surname	Age	Condition	Rank or Profession	Residence at the Time of Marriage	Father's Name and Surname	Rank or Profession of Father
17	1838	Joseph Howlett	20	Bachelor	Excavator	Cheshunt	Joseph Howlett	Labourer
	5th November	Sarah Whitaker	21	Spinster		Cheshunt	Richard Whitaker	Carpenter

Married in the Parish Church according to the Rites and Ceremonies of the Church of England by Banns or Licence, and Solemnized between us, Joseph Howlett, Sarah Whitaker. In the Presence of us, Joseph Harris, Martha Whitaker.

Matthew Marriott Preacher

CERTIFIED to be a true copy of an entry in the certified copy of a register of Marriages in the Registration District of Edmonton

Given at the GENERAL REGISTER OFFICE, under the Seal of the said Office, the 7th day of February 2019

MXH 559981

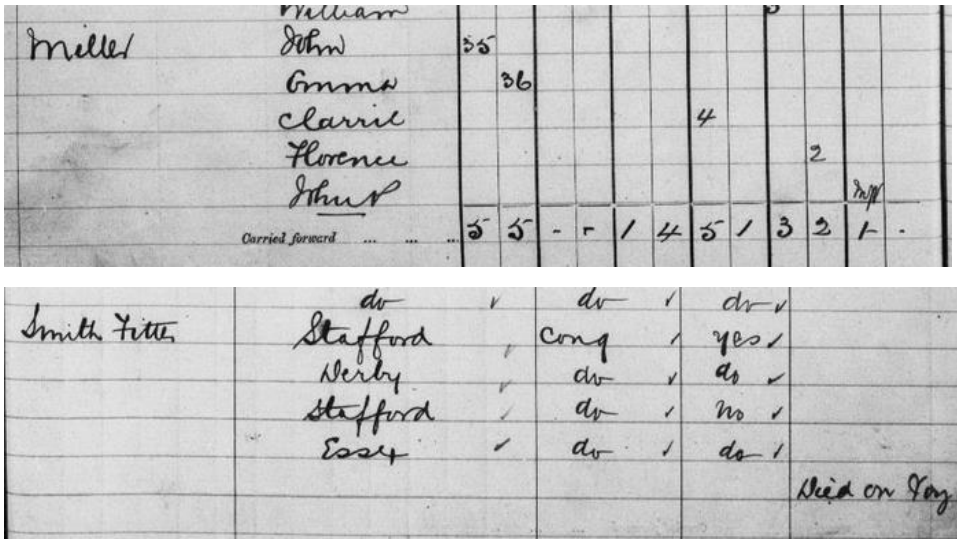
CAUTION: THERE ARE OFFENCES RELATING TO FALSIFYING OR ALTERING A CERTIFICATE AND USING OR POSSESSING A FALSE CERTIFICATE. © CROWN COPYRIGHT

WARNING: A CERTIFICATE IS NOT EVIDENCE OF IDENTITY.

MW1

Marriage certificate of Joseph Howlett and Sarah Whitaker 1838
(Emma Howlett's parents)

Emma Howlett emigrated with her husband John Miller to Australia aboard the ship "Abyssinia" arriving in Sydney on the 24th Mar 1887.

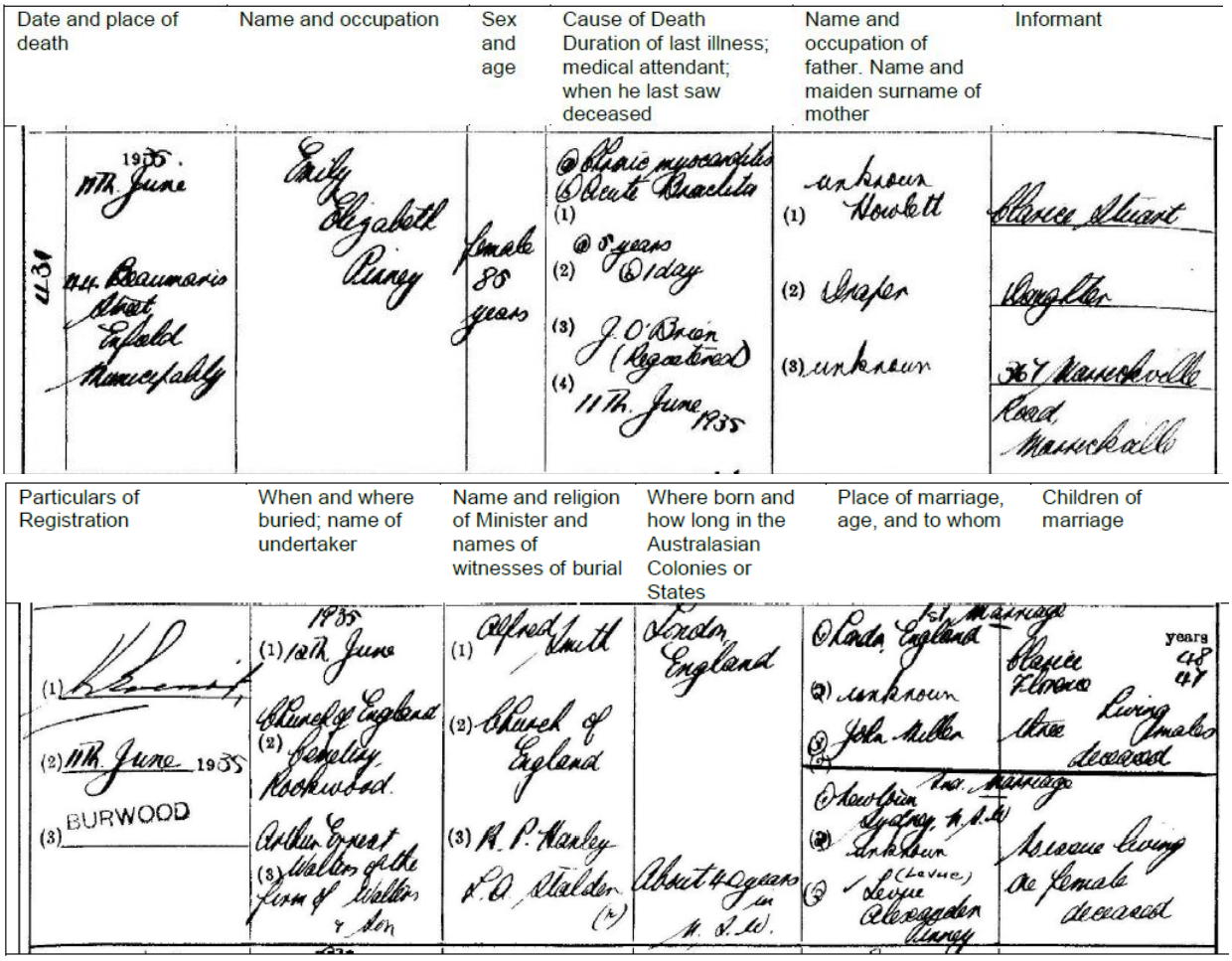


Miller	John	35						5					
	Emma		36										
	Carrie						4						
	Florence									2			
	Infant										Inf		
Carried forward		5	5	-	1	4	5	1	3	2	1	-	

Smith Fitter	do ✓	do ✓	do ✓		
	Stafford	Cong ✓	yes ✓		
	Derby ✓	do ✓	do ✓		
	Stafford ✓	do ✓	no ✓		
	Essex ✓	do ✓	do ✓		
				Died on Voyage	

Manifest from the 'Abyssinia' 24th Mar 1887
(showing the Miller family arriving in Sydney)

DEATH CERTIFICATE



Date and place of death	Name and occupation	Sex and age	Cause of Death Duration of last illness; medical attendant; when he last saw deceased	Name and occupation of father. Name and maiden surname of mother	Informant
1935. 11th June 431 44 Beaumaris Street Enfield Newcastle	Emily Elizabeth Pinney	Female 86 years	(1) Acute myocarditis Acute Bronchitis (2) 8 years (2) 8 days (3) J. O'Brien (Registered) (4) 11th June 1935	(1) unknown Howlett (2) Draper (3) unknown	Clarence Stuart Daughter 367 Maroubra Road Maroubra

Particulars of Registration	When and where buried; name of undertaker	Name and religion of Minister and names of witnesses of burial	Where born and how long in the Australasian Colonies or States	Place of marriage, age, and to whom	Children of marriage
(1) [illegible] (2) 11th June 1935 (3) BURWOOD	1935 (1) 12th June Church of England (2) Rookwood (3) Walter Gatt Firm of Wallis & Son	(1) Alfred Smith (2) Church of England (3) R. P. Manley P.O. Bexley	London England About 44 years in N.S.W.	1st Marriage (1) Lodz England (2) unknown (3) John Miller 2nd Marriage (1) Newtown Sydney N.S.W. (2) Unknown (3) Levie (Levine) Alexander Pinney	Clarence Florence Living Female 48 Alice Deceased 47 2nd Marriage Clarence Living Female Deceased

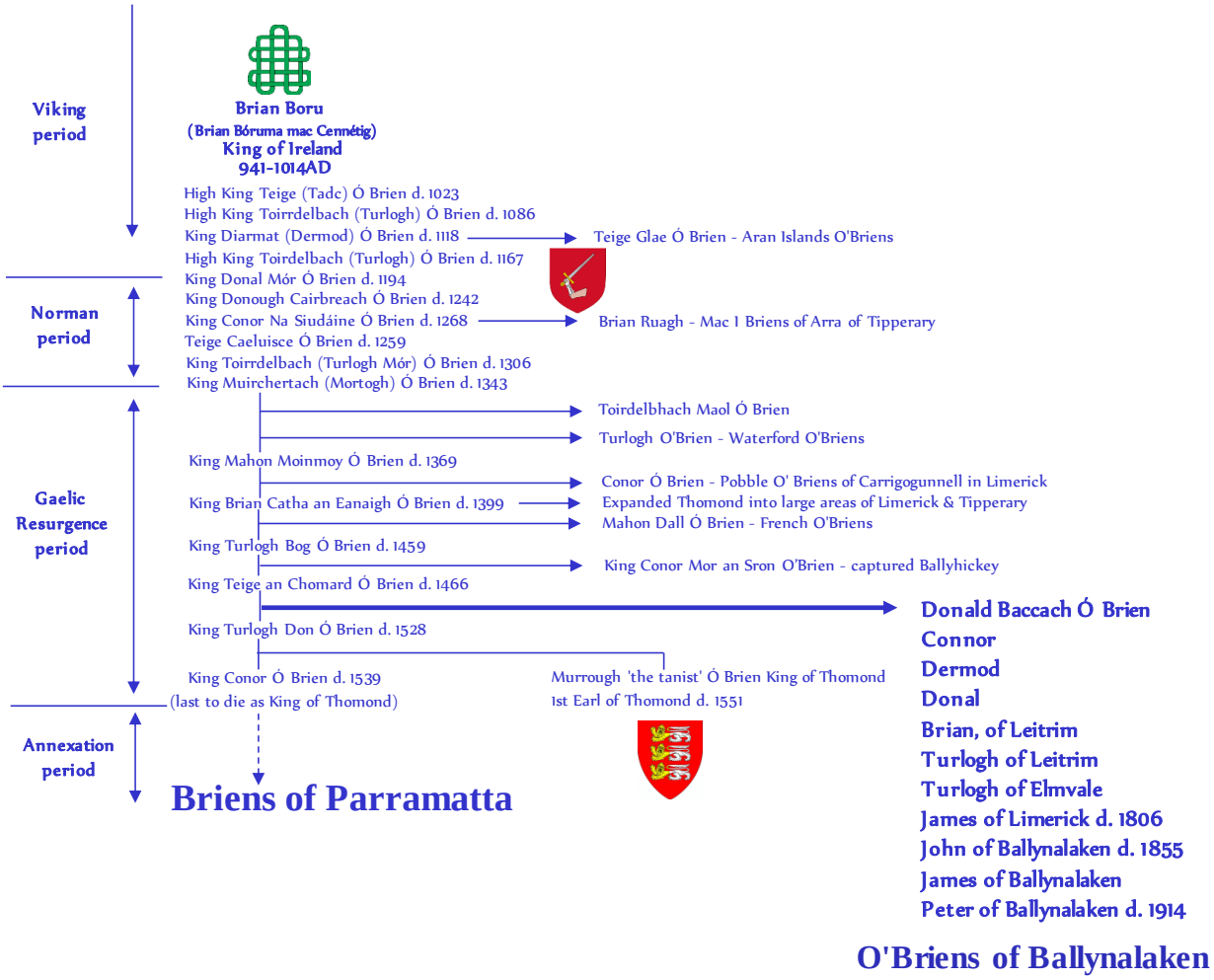
Death certificate of Emma Elizabeth Howlett (Pinney) 11th June 1935
(She died at 44 Beaumaris St Enfield, Sydney NSW)

Emma Elizabeth Howlett is buried in : Plot: 14_Zone D/#/1233 at Rookwood cemetery under the name Emily Pinney. Unfortunately, nothing remains of her burial plot today.

Appendix Section

Appendix 1 The O'Briens of Ballynalaken

The Ballynalaken O'Briens were a significant branch who were the descendants of Donal Bacach, a younger son of King Teige an Chomhaid O'Brien. Donal was known as "Bacach" which in Gaelic means lame. He married Saibh, daughter of O'Loghlin, Prince of Burren.



Donal's third son Connor married Celia, dau. of O'Dea, Prince of Ive-Fermaic. They had a son, Dermod, of Carruduff who married Eleanor, daughter of Teige MacMahon, of Dangan-an-Elly, in the barony of Moyarta, co. Clare. They had a son Donal of Carruduff.

Donal of Carruduff lost his estate by the Cromwellian Settlement of Ireland. He married Honora, daughter of O'Connor of Corcomroe and they had a son, Brian, of Leitrim, who, under the Act of Repeal passed by King James II. in the Parliament held in Dublin, A.D. 1689, possessed himself of the Estate of Carruduff. This Brian married Mary, daughter of Lochlin MacConsidine of Lac, in the co. Clare and they had four sons:

- Dermod, Knt. of the Military Order of St. Louis; was in the Regiment of Lord Clare; and had no children.

- Teige, of Lanna, who had no children.

- Morrough (or Morgan) died in 1774 was a Captain in Lord Clare's Regiment; Knight of the Military Order of St. Louis, in Oct., 1736, married at Landrecies, Maria Louisa de Thomak.

- Torlogh of Leitrim married Elizabeth O'Brien daughter of Henry O'Brien of the Ballycorrick O'Briens and they had a son named Torlogh of Elmvale.

Torlogh of Elmvale married Eleanor, dau. of Mortogh O'Hogan, of Elmvale. Through this marriage Torlogh acquired Elmvale and they had a son known as James of Limerick.

James of Limerick married Margaret Long, daughter of Peter Long of Waterford, and had four sons:[732]

- Peter who was born in 1799 married Emily Shiel, sister of the Right Honorable. Richard Lalor Shiel, M.P. They had no children.

- Terence born Dec 1802 died unmarried in March 1820.

- James born 27th Feb 1806. He was a barrister in 1830 and was made a Q.C. in 1841. Appointed Serjeant in 1848 and a Judge in 1858. He was M.P. for Limerick, from Oct., 1854, to Jan., 1858. James married Margaret Segrave.

- John of Ballynalaken was High Sheriff of County Clare and M.P. for the City of Limerick, from 1841 to 1852. John married Ellen Murphy of Cork and they had several sons. The eldest was James of Ballynalaken.

James O'Brien of Ballynalaken purchased Ballynalaken Castle from another branch of the family known as the Ennistymon O'Briens in the early 1800s. James set about restoring this castle and also built a new house adjacent to it which is still there and used today as a hotel. James was High Sheriff of Co Clare, in 1858 he married Georgina McNamara (NEE Martyn) and they had no children they were living in 1884.

James younger brother Peter was a Privy Counsellor and a Doctor of Law. He graduated from Trinity College, Dublin and was admitted to King's Inn in 1865. Appointed QC in 1880 he was senior Crown prosecutor in 1883. He was a practicing Serjeant-at-Law in 1884 and held the office of Solicitor-General of Ireland between 1887 and 1888. He was Attorney-General of Ireland between 1888 and 1889 and Lord Chief Justice of Ireland in 1889. He was created 1st Baronet O'Brien on 28th Sep 1891 and was created the 1st Baron O'Brien, of Kilfenora, co. Clare on 16 June 1900. Peter O'Brien married Annie Clarke in 1867 and they had one son who died young. Peter died in 1914 aged 72.

With the death of Peter O'Brien in 1914 the line of the Ballynalaken O'Briens ended. Peter O'Brien was the first and last Baron O'Brien.

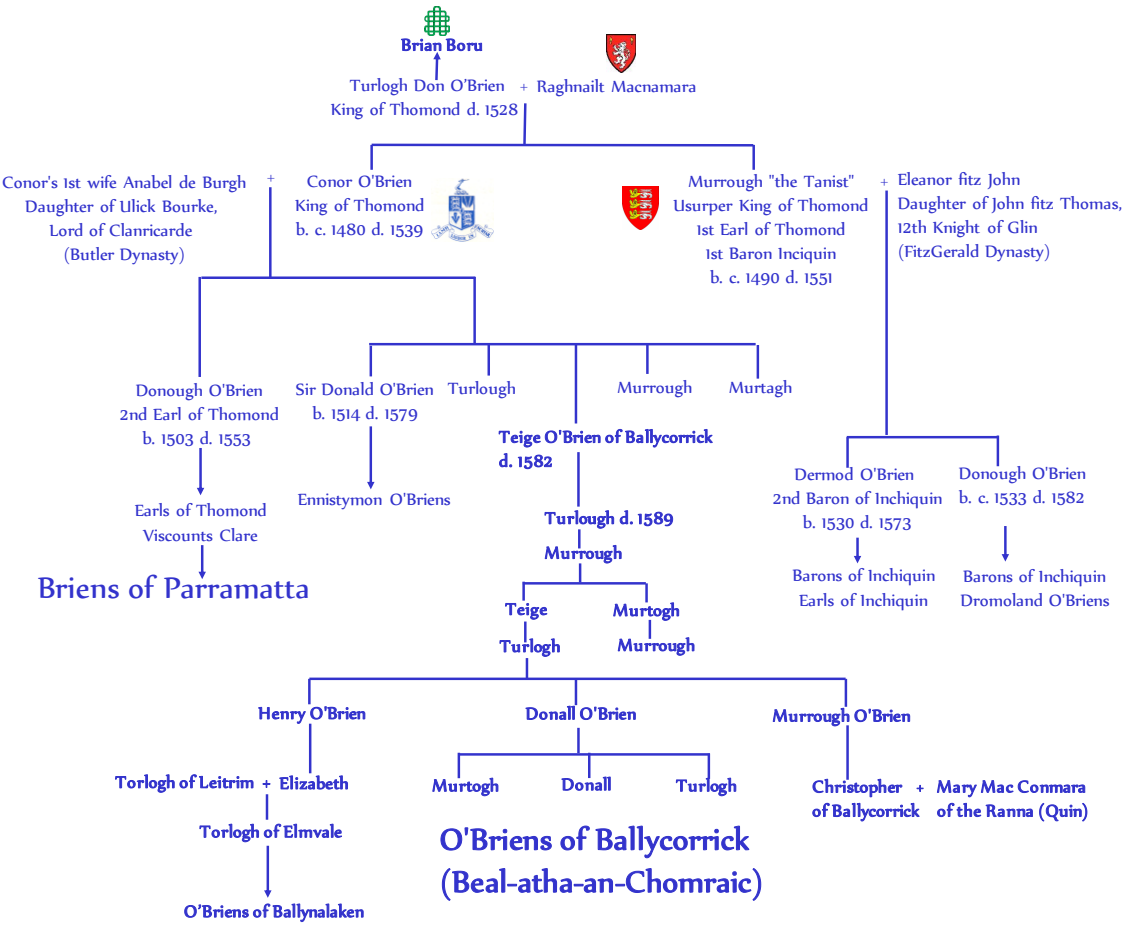


Ballynalaken Castle and the house James O'Brien built. Photo from late 1800s
(Note the fellow sitting on the bridge)



Map of County Clare showing the location of Ballynalaken Castle

Appendix 2 The O'Briens of Ballycorrick



According to Burke's Peerage (2003) Teige, the 4th son of King Conor O'Brien was the progenitor of a family line at Ballycorrick in southern County Clare that survived until 1853. [733]

This Teige of Ballycorrick is renown for being defeated at a battle at 'Bealanchip Hill' in 1573, when he led his army "with standards flying" against his cousin Teige O'Brien of Ballynagowan (a.k.a Smithstown castle) the 2nd son of Murrough O'Brien 'the tanist' 1st Earl of Thomond. This battle was part of the Thomond civil war which ensued after the surrender and regrant of 1543. [734]

Teige of Ballycorrick died in 1582 and his son Turlogh who died in 1589 married the daughter of O'Conor-Kerry and they had a son named Murrough O'Brien of Ballycorrick. Murrough married More O'Brien the daughter of Brian O'Brien of Cahirconcane. [735]

Murrough and More's great grandson Henry O'Brien of Elmvale had a daughter named Elizabeth. This Elizabeth married Torlogh of Leitrim and they had a son named Torlogh of Elmvale. This Torlogh was part of the O'Briens of Ballynalaken line.

A possible link exists between Henry O'Brien of Elmvale and the line of Cornelius O'Brien of Birchfield who is discussed in the next section.

Cornelius O’Brien of Brichfield

Cornelius O’Brien (c. 1782–1857) was born around 1782 at Birchfield, near Liscannor, Co. Clare. He was the third son of Henry O’Brien and his wife Helen (née O'Callaghan) of Birchfield and Ennis. Cornelius O’Brien was a benevolent local landlord and was the first to formally recognise the Cliffs of Moher as a tourist destination.

Samuel Lewis reported in 1833 that O’Brien was erecting ‘an ornamental tower near the highest point of the Cliffs of Moher in the castellated style . . . for the accommodation of visitors from which is obtained a magnificent view embracing nearly the whole line of coast from Loop Head to the northern extremity of the bay of Galway, together with the Arran Isles and a vast expanse of the Atlantic Ocean.

In order to make the cliffs accessible, safe and attractive, Cornelius O’Brien also built stables and an iron picnic table for the convenience of visitors, whom he frequently entertained at Birchfield, his nearby estate. His only surviving son, George, continued his father’s hospitality to strangers.



O’Brien’s Tower near the highest point of the Cliffs of Moher.

Exactly where Cornelius O’Brien fits into our O’Brien family tree is unclear. One clue maybe the fact that both his father and grandfather were named Henry. This is a name that appears in the O’Briens of Ballycorrick, so that’s a possibility. Henry also appears in the Earls of Thomond and Stonehall lines, but Cornelius is unlikely to have a connection with those lines.

Cornelius was educated by Stephen O’Halloran in Ennis, entered the King’s Inns, Dublin, in the Hilary term of 1803, and graduated as an attorney in the Easter term of 1808. He was a proctor,

solicitor and magistrate for County Clare, with a business address in Dublin. Throughout his career, however, his primary place of residence was his estate at Birchfield.

Cornelius was elected MP for County Clare on 1 December 1832, but he was clearly involved in local politics before this date. He was a member of the committee that selected Daniel O'Connell to run in the 1828 election. His own politics were liberal, pro-Repeal and pro-secret ballot and tenants' rights. He held his seat in Westminster from 1832 to 1857, losing only once, in 1847. Advancing age and ill health forced his retirement from parliament in March 1857, two months before his death on 30 May 1857.

Apart from his estate at Birchfield in the townland of Beaghy (Kilmacrehy), Cornelius O'Brien's holdings in Clare were extensive. In 1829 the Birchfield estate was valued at £50, and his role as an improving, resident landlord is an important aspect of the man. The Griffith Valuation in 1855 showed that he held 9,679 acres, spread across seventeen parishes and 36 townlands of County Clare, and had 275 tenants. Jonathan Binns, assistant agricultural commissioner in 1837, noted the great number of whitewashed and comfortable cottages scattered over the O'Brien estate, an indication of the care and attention of the owner. O'Brien sometimes provided his tenants with a car to bring in lime from Doolin, and in times of need he supplied the poor with wool and potatoes in lieu of labour.

O'Brien's care of his tenants continued through the Famine, with some evidence that he waived rent. In an angry debate at a meeting of the Liscannor famine relief committee, George Westropp, agent for Dean Stacpoole, accused O'Brien of favouring his own tenants in the allocation of relief work. O'Brien replied that if Westropp had the slightest compassion in such a year he would not have taken rent from his poor tenants and would have told them to take back their money and buy some bread with it. It is unlikely that O'Brien would have made such a statement if he himself was charging rent.

Harriet Martineau visited Clare in the wake of the Famine in September 1852. As she travelled from Galway along the coastal route to Clare, she described scenes of utter desolation until she came to the whitewashed dwellings of O'Brien's tenants. She was not the only contemporary observer to note him as a kind landlord. His care and expenditure in making the Cliffs of Moher accessible, safe and attractive to visitors made him popular among his tenants, who were given employment when little else was available.

Cornelius O'Brien engaged in numerous building projects, beginning with the construction of Birchfield House before 1816, the year he married Margaret Long. His next project was the relocation and upgrading of St Bridget's Well at Kilmacrehy from higher up the hillside to its present location beside the road. Here he erected the well-house and rustic seating for his tenants. He then turned his attention to the dangerous ford across the river between Lahinch and Liscannor, where in 1833 he facilitated the building of a fine stone bridge of three arches, known as O'Brien's Bridge, which remains to this day. In 1845 he built a boys' and girls' national school beside the main road to St Bridget's Well. He also erected a little Gothic structure over the nearby Reliever's Well.



The bridge Cornelius O'Brien had built in 1833 – with ruins of Dough Castle in the background

Cornelius O'Brien was a member of many committees and was chairman of the Ennistymon Poor Law Union from its formation on 25 August 1839. The workhouse opened in September 1842 and, along with five auxiliary workhouses, by 1853 provided accommodation for 3,618 inmates. The minutes reveal that O'Brien was very active in the weekly meetings and on the subcommittees that worked to improve roads, to house people evicted by their landlords during the Famine, and to obtain suitable contracts for the supply of a variety of needs for the workhouses, including additional accommodation. [736]

There are no known portraits of Cornelius O'Brien, but two monuments other than O'Brien's Tower remain to memorialise a man who has been overshadowed by the more powerful Thomond O'Brien families, particularly Lucius and William Smith O'Brien (leader of the rebellion of 1848). In mid-October 1854 the first meeting of a testimonial committee took place in Ennis at the office of the Clare Journal and Ennis Advertiser. Sir Colman O'Loghlen QC presided, and there was a unanimous decision to erect a testimonial as a mark of appreciation for the successful efforts of Cornelius O'Brien of Birchfield to improve the condition of the middle and lower classes in his neighbourhood, including encouraging their education.

Mention was also made of the accommodation he afforded to all classes visiting the Cliffs of Moher and surrounding scenery. There was much debate about the form of the testimonial, and by the time a sketch of the proposed monument appeared in the press in November 1855 donations amounted to more than £400. The sketch shows O'Brien on top of a column similar in style to Daniel O'Connell's in Ennis or Nelson's in Dublin's Sackville Street and London's Trafalgar Square. Despite the inscribed date (14 October 1853) it was not completed until after his death, and was certainly not built by him as self-aggrandisement, as is often wrongly claimed.

The other remaining monument to Cornelius O'Brien is his family plot in the nearby cemetery above St Bridget's Well. It was built for his son, John Cornelius O'Brien, a lieutenant in the 22nd Regiment Native Infantry, who died at Secunderabad, India, on 28 December 1856, aged 26. Five months later Cornelius himself died and was buried in the family mausoleum. Ten years later his other son, George O'Brien, was also laid to rest there. Thus 1867 saw the end of the O'Brien association with Birchfield House, which today lies in ruins. [737]

The stables and the iron picnic table are long gone from the Cliffs of Moher, but the astute visitor can still see the local testaments to Cornelius O'Brien. His visitors' tower built near the highest point of the Cliffs of Moher and the magnificent view that these cliffs have long offered to visitors remain to remind us of Cornelius O'Brien 150 years after his death.

When Cornelius fell ill when in London, he asked for water to be sent from St Brigid's Well. He credited the water with his recovery and built the current well house in thanks.

Cornelius O'Brien died in 1857 and was buried in the O'Brien vault in the graveyard adjoining Liscannor's St Brigid's Well.[738]



O'Brien crest on Cornelius O'Brien's tomb.

(taken in 2011 when the tomb was last opened)

Appendix 3 Line of the 5th to 8th Earls' of Thomond

Henry O'Brien became the 5th Earl of Thomond upon the death of his father Donough in 1624. Henry was born in 1588 and was an Irish peer, as well as Lord Ibrickane. Henry the 5th Earl was married on the 13th July 1608 to Mary Brereton, daughter of William Brereton, 1st Baron Brereton and Margaret Savage, and together they had 5 daughters:

- Lady Margaret O'Brien
- Lady Mary O'Brien (d. 1686) married, on June 24, 1627, Charles Cokayne, 1st Viscount Cullen
- Lady Elisabeth O'Brien (d. 1656-1659) married, on August 21, 1636, Dutton Gerard, 3rd Baron Gerard, grandson of Thomas Gerard, 1st Baron Gerard
- Lady Anne O'Brien (d. 1645) married, in 1641, Henry O'Brien, 7th Earl of Thomond
- Lady Honora O'Brien



Henry O'Brien 5th Earl of Thomond

Henry O'Brien was a strenuous adherent of the government in Ireland and was warmly commended by Thomas Wentworth, Earl of Strafford for his loyalty.

Barnabas O'Brien became the 6th Earl of Thomond upon the death of his elder brother Henry in 1639. Later that year Barnabas applied for the governorship of Clare but this was refused by Thomas Wentworth, Earl of Strafford on the ground that his conduct "differed entirely from that of his brother, and that he deserved nothing." Nevertheless in 1640 he was appointed the senior record keeper in Ireland, a role known as Custos Rotulorum.

Barnabas O'Brien married Anne Fermor and they had one son:

- Henry, who succeeded as the 7th Earl of Thomond.



Bunratty castle, home of the Earls of Thomond, shown before restoration work in the 1960s.

Barnabus lived quietly on his lands at Bunratty Castle in Clare and when the Catholic Irish Rebellion of 1641 broke out, he refused to sign the oath of association so that he could stay neutral. In 1644 the Catholic confederation forbade Barnabus's agents to collect his rents, and even formed a scheme for seizing his chief stronghold at Bunratty, which his uncle, Sir Daniel O'Brien 1st Viscount Clare, was appointed to carry out.

Great hall at Bunratty castle



When Barnabus could find no troops to defend Bunratty Castle he realised he could no longer hold onto his estates. The story goes that Barnabus flung open the gates to Bunratty and let the rebels occupy the castle while he and his family sailed to England and established themselves at a manor house at Great Billing in Northampton shire.

Barnabas O’Brien 6th Earl of Thomond



Barnabus joined King Charles I at Oxford and received a patent on the 3rd May 1645 creating him “Marquis of Billing” in Northampton shire. But the patent never passed under the great seal. A few years later Barnabus petitioned parliament for the recovery of £2,000 which had been seized in Bunratty, pleading that his real estate was in the hands of the Irish rebels, and that he had spent £16,000 in defending his estates and his petition was granted. [739]

Barnabus O’Brien died in November 1657. In his will he left some bequests to Great Billing, he was buried in the Thomond tomb in the north chapel at St Andrew’s church at Billing in Northampton shire.



Billing Hall. English Home of Barnabus O’Brien 6th Earl of Thomond.

Henry O'Brien became the 7th Earl of Thomond upon the death of his father Barnabus O’Brien in 1657. Henry had two marriages, and a son named Henry to each of his wives (i.e. there are a

number of Henry's in this line). Henry the 7th Earl first married in 1641 his first cousin Anne O'Brien, daughter of Henry O'Brien, 5th Earl of Thomond.



Henry O'Brien 7th Earl of Thomond

Henry the 7th Earl and Anne had one son:

- Henry O'Brien born about 1642 and died in 1678.

Henry was given the title of Lord O'Brien and married Catherine Stewart daughter of Lord Aubigny the Duke of Richmond.



Henry O'Brien (a.k.a Lord O'Brien) the only son of Henry O'Brien 7th Earl of Thomond and his first wife Anne O'Brien, was buried in vault No. 8 in the Henry VII chapel at Westminster Abbey (Richmond Vault) in 1678 under the name "Henry O'Bryan" [740]

His wife Catherine was also buried buried in the Henry VII chapel in 1702

Henry died in 1678 and preceded his father. He was buried in the Henry VII chapel at Westminster Abbey on the 9th September 1678. His wife Catherine died in 1702 and was also buried in the Henry VII chapel on the 11th November 1702. Their graves are not obviously marked however their coffins located in the Duke of Richmond's vault retain the original brass plates inscribed with their names.

Henry O'Bryan (a.k.a Lord O'Brien) and his wife Catherine had one son:

- Donough O'Brien who was born in 1663.

Donough was styled as "Lord O'Brien" in 1678. He married the daughter of the Duke of Leeds in 1682 and died in the same year in the ship wreck of the 'Gloucester' off Yarmouth while attending James the Duke of York (who became King James II).



Painting of the 'Gloucester' ship wreck while carrying the Duke of York (James II) to Leith on the 6th May 1682.

The ship foundered on the Lemon and Oar sandbank off Yarmouth as a result of the pilot's negligence. James The Duke of York escaped with several other notable figures, including John Churchill, afterwards Duke of Marlborough, but about 130 people perished in the incident including Donough "Lord O'Brien" born in 1663.

National Maritime Museum

Anne the first wife of Henry the 7th Earl died in September 1645 and is buried at St Andrew's at Billing. Henry then married Sarah Russell, daughter of Sir Francis Russell, and widow of Sir John Reynolds. This made Henry O'Brien a brother-in-law of Henry Cromwell, who had married Sarah's sister Elizabeth. Henry and his 2nd wife Sarah had four children:

- Henry Horatio O'Brien, Lord Ibrickane born in 1670, who was father of Henry O'Brien, 8th Earl of Thomond (1688–1741). This Henry died in 1690 and preceded his father. He was buried at St Andrew church at Billing, Northampton shire.
- Elizabeth (d. 3rd June 1688), without issue
- Auberie Anne Penelope, married Henry Howard, 6th Earl of Suffolk
- Mary, married Sir Matthew Dudley, 2nd Baronet

Henry O’Brien the 7th Earl and Sarah lived in the manor house at Great Billing. Great Billing village is now a part of Northampton, although a number of open spaces still give it a rural feel, especially in the area of the church. There had been a manor house in the village until the 1950s when it was finally sold and demolished. The Elwes family were the last Lords of the Manor.

The O'Brien's manor house would probably have occupied the same area as the last Manor (to the East of the church). There are a number of buildings that have connections with the Elwes Manor although only the church and probably two other buildings in the village would have existed at the time of the O'Briens.

The Thomond monument is situated in the North Chapel on the North wall of St Andrew’s church. The monument dates from 1700 and the chapel is of a similar date, having been intended as a funerary or mortuary chapel for the Thomond family. The majority of the rest of the church dates from the 12th to 14th centuries.



The monument to Henry O’Brien 7th Earl of Thomond who died in 1691, and his family at St Andrew’s at Billing Northampton shire

The monument was commissioned by his wife Sarah Russell (the Right Honorable Sarah Countess Dowager of Thomond) in memory of her late husband Henry 7th Earl of Thomond who died at Great Billing in May 1691 aged 73. The monument is also in memory of their children and other family members.

The monument consists of the figures of the Earl and Countess kneeling, with a baby laying on a chest. There are two kneeling children and more children kneeling in relief on the base. There is a long inscription which outlines the Family Loyalty to the crown over many years.

Simon Ward states that George Vertue attributes the monument to John Bushnell (1630 -1701). It would be one of his later works and John was suffering from illness at the time.
The monument is of marble and is quite large, dominating the chapel which is now used as the Priests vestry and choir vestry.

It has had mixed responses over the years. Bridges (1720) refers to it as a 'handsome monument of black and white marble'. However, Baker (19th century) refers to the monument as 'large and costly but tasteless and ill executed’. Likewise, Pevsner (1961) describes the monument as

‘shockingly inept’. These observations seem to focus on proportions and positions. Simon Ward gives a longer commentary on this.

It also draws attention to the connections with Thomond in Ireland. It then gives details of the Earl and Countess’ marriage and the Countess’ father’s details and her family home in Chipnham Cambridge shire. Finally, it lists the children with details of Henry Horatio Lord O’Briens marriage to Henrietta Somerset. Sadly, it also records his death aged 21. It ends with details of his 3 children.

Below is a summary of the will of Henry 7th Earl of Thomond dated 7th Oct 1690:

Declaring that honours, baronies and manors in Ireland have been lately settled on son's marriage and that the same has been charged with a jointure for his wife and for his daughters

Also directing that trustees (friends and kinsmen Sir Wm Farmer and Sir Wm Russell Baronets) hold manor of Great Billing purchased 'for much more money than the same is worth' on trust for wife and, after her decease, for daughters Penelope and Mary during minority of grandson, Henry Lord O'Bryen

Also describing all lands in England to grandson (in default of issue to daughters)

Also bequeathing that, of £10,000 owing to heirs from Duke of Beaufort, £4,000 to Penelope, £4,000 to Mary, residue to wife, who was also given all jewels, money, goods etc. and appointed sole executrix

Also appointing Rt Hon Charles Marquess of Worcester and brother, Lord Arthur Somerset and Sir Wm Farmer as Guardians of Grandchildren Henry, Lord O'B and sister Mary and appointing wife Guardian of his daughters

Also bequeathing Manor, Abbey, Priory, Rectory, Tithes and lands of Holme Patrick and Skerries with profits of fishing and shipping there and lands of Killenen and Castle, Manor and lands of Cullen and lands in Counties of Dublin, Meath, Tipperary and Limerick to Sir Wm F and Sir Wm R in Trust for payment of £4000 for grand daughter Mary O'Bryen at age of 21 and £100 per annum

Also appointing Sir Wm F and Sir Wm R trustees in case wife and daughters suffer loss by rebellions in Ireland.

Signed by Thomond 7 Oct 1690

Witnesses - Tho Rocke, Em Hodges, Tho Tyler, John Broom.

Henry Horatio O’Brien, the son of the 7th Earl, was born in 1670 and married Henrietta Somerset the daughter of the Duke of Beaufort in 1687. Henry died in 1690 aged 20 and is buried at St Andrew Billing Northampton shire. He and Henrietta had one son:

Henry O'Brien, born in 1688, who succeeded to the title of 8th Earl of Thomond. Henry is 'the Grandson' mentioned in the above will.



Henry O'Brien 8th Earl of Thomond
Born in 1688 and died in 1741. He was the last of Earls of Thomond

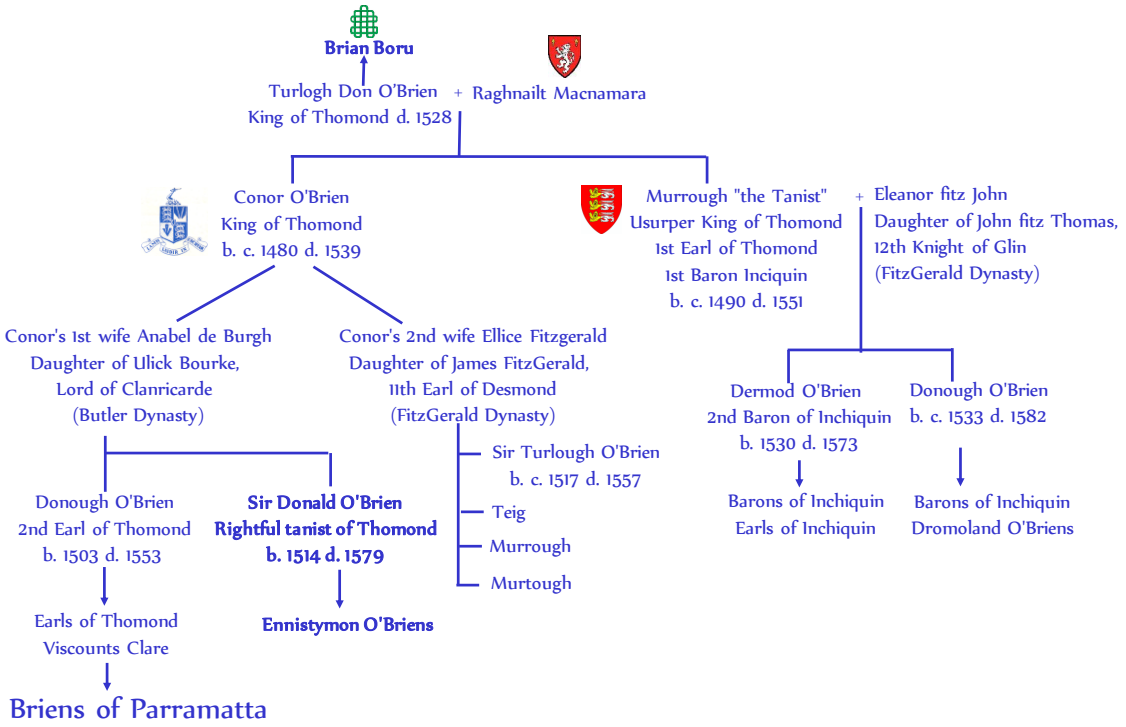
Henry the 8th Earl married Elizabeth Seymour the eldest daughter of the Duke of Somerset and they had no children. Henry died in Dublin on 20th April 1741 and was buried in the Thomond tomb at St Mary's Cathedral Limerick. In his will Henry left £12,000 to Charles O'Brien the 6th Viscount Clare (who was also offered the title Earl of Thomond). Henry also left large estates to Murrough O'Brien the 5th Earl of Inchiquin. [741]

Most of his estate however passed to Percy Wyndham who had married his wife's sister. The family have long wondered why the bulk of the Thomond estate was bequeathed outside the O'Briens when there were many worthy recipients. With the death of Henry O'Brien, the 8th Earl, the line of the Earls of Thomond came to an end.

Before his death in 1741 Henry O'Brien offered the title of 'Earl of Thomond' to Charles O'Brien the 6th Viscount Clare on the condition he convert from Catholicism to Anglicanism. This was enthusiastically supported by George II King of England who also offered Charles a senior command role in the English military, however Charles O'Brien declined.

Appendix 4 Sir Donald O'Brien of Dough and the O'Briens of Ennistymon

Sir Donald O'Brien of Dough, although not our direct ancestor, played an integral role in our family history. His life as well as those of his descendants are covered in this section.



Sir Donald O'Brien of Dough was the second son of King Conor O'Brien and his first wife Anabel de Burgh, he was born around 1514 and lived through the turbulent "Silken Thomas" period.

Sir Donald was nominated as 'tanist' (heir apparent) of the O'Briens by his father in the closing stages of his life, after he fell out with his brother Murrough and eldest son Donough. As such Donald was the rightful tainst of Thomond and was usurped by his uncle Murrough O'Brien who effectively stole the monarchy from him after Conor died in 1539. This Murrough O'Brien has since been known as Murrough "the tanist."

Sir Donald maintained throughout his life that the sovereignty of Thomond had been corrupted by the actions of Murrough accepting King Henry VIII's offer of a peerage and he was supported by the majority of the family septs in Thomond. In the end however he could not hold back the tide of English power, and his story of being cheated out of his inheritance and then trying to fight against immense opposition to regain it makes him one of the more notable characters in our family history.

Following the death of Murrough 'the tanist' O'Brien in 1551, a number of O'Brien factions emerged and fought over the new peerage titles bestowed by Henry VIII King of England.

Henry VIII died in 1547 and was no longer around to clarify some ambiguities with the original titles given to Murrough 'the tanist' i.e. 1st Earl of Thomond and 1st Baron of Inchiquin.

Under the arrangement between Murrough O'Brien and Henry VIII the title 'Baron of Inchiquin' was hereditary and would be passed down the line of Murrough's eldest son (i.e. heirs of his body). The title of 'Earl of Thomond' would pass to Murrough's nephew Donough, the eldest son of King Conor O'Brien and Anabel de Burgh. But this title was never stipulated as being hereditary and so as originally written would have stopped at Donough's death. Consequently, the existence of the title of 'Earl of Thomond' was seen by the O'Brien family as something temporary after which the traditional clan tanist system would be re-established. [742]

When Murrough 'the tanist' died in 1551, Donough O'Brien the 2nd Earl of Thomond moved to shore up his descendants claim to the title of Earl and approached the new King of England Edward VI. Donough surrendered the initial title of Earl and applied to have regranted in its place a new title. The young King did all that and more; in addition to the title of Earl, he granted to Donough the lands and hereditaments which had lapsed to the crown by the death of Murrough, and were now to descend to Donough's heirs according to the course of the common law of England. The new title of Earl of Thomond (Ireland) was conferred to Donough O'Brien via letters patent dated 7th November 1552.

On hearing this Donald O'Brien of Dough now realised that the traditional clan tanist system, which gave each of the O'Brien sons a chance of being clan leader, was seriously under threat. More so, the general population of Thomond was now becoming aware that the English system of land and title distribution was to replace their traditional constitution, resulting in fear and anger spreading quickly throughout the home lands.

Donough O'Brien 2nd Earl of Thomond was now very unpopular and was the subject of several attacks. In one such attack in April 1553 Donald O'Brien and his half brother Turlogh along with a number of troops gained access to Donough's residence at Clonroad near Ennis, and forced Donough to flee to his castle for safety. Although it is recorded that Donough was un-harmed in the incident, he died a few days later. This set up a situation where his son Conor O'Brien would now inherit the title 3rd Earl of Thomond.

Conor who was aged about 18 at the time, left Clonroad and travelled to Doonmulvihill castle, on the borders of Galway, where he was besieged by Donald. Conor received assistance from his cousin Thomas Butler, 10th Earl of Ormond. Meanwhile Donald O'Brien had himself proclaimed 'The O'Brien' 'King of Thomond' and 'Chief of the Dál gCais', he then petitioned the Lord Deputy Anthony St Leger for official recognition of his position as Chief of Thomond. St Leger, was sympathetic although unable to grant his request, promised to write to the new English monarch Queen Mary. [743]

Queen Mary I came to the throne in 1553 and was busy pursuing her Catholic agenda. In the years that followed her Irish council were occupied with matters other than Thomond, so when Conor the 3rd Earl requested assistance in regaining control of Thomond, the council were unable to help him.

This left Donald O'Brien of Dough free to assign himself the title of 'The O'Brien' and administer Thomond in accordance with the ancient tanist tradition. In 1554 Donald appealed to Queen Mary I stating that being the son of Conor the deceased King of Thomond, he was entitled to enact tanist law and be granted the family titles and estates, and that his uncle Murrough 'the tanist' had unlawfully Usurped his inheritance. Queen Mary however was not prepared to go against the ruling her father King Henry VIII had enacted in 1543.

The situation in Thomond lasted for five years until 1558 when Thomas Radclyffe, 3rd Earl of Sussex was appointed Lord Deputy of Ireland and arrived in Limerick with a large army. Radclyffe proclaimed Donald O'Brien as well as Teige and Donough O'Brien, the sons of Murrough the 1st Earl of Thomond, to be traitors and that Conor the 3rd Earl of Thomond to be reinstated in his possessions.

In the summer of 1558 Donald O'Brien fled North to Fermanagh and Teige headed south and stayed with Gerald FitzGerald, 14th Earl of Desmond and Donough remained in Thomond residing at Inchiquin Castle. Peace prevailed in Thomond for a brief season, and Conor won the support of Thomas Radclyffe for what is described in the Four Masters as Conor's "good execution of justice."

Donald O'Brien returned to Thomond in 1562 and in 1564 he led another coalition aimed at removing Conor O'Brien and claiming the title of Earl of Thomond for himself. In practice however, this campaign caused so much disturbance to the people of Thomond, and generated so much opposition, that Donald was forced to "escape across the Fergus river." [744]

In April 1565, after reducing the country to a wilderness, Donald O'Brien achieved a significant victory when the new Lord Deputy of Ireland, Sir Henry Sidney, proposed to grant Donald the lands of Corcomroe (North West Co Clare) if he gave up his claim over the Earldom of Thomond and surrender his title of 'Chief O'Brien'. [745]

Donald O'Brien accepted Henry Sidney's offer and acquired the lands of Corcomroe including the town known today as Ennistymon - from which name his descendants would be known. The Ennistymon O'Briens would continue to hold Corcomroe for the next 300 years.

In 1570 Henry Sidney transferred Thomond from Munster to Connaught, in the process Thomond was shired, Thomond becoming County Clare. There are two main hypotheses for the origins of the county name "Clare." One is that the name is derived from Thomas de Clare who was deeply embroiled in local politics and fighting in the 1270s and 1280s. An alternative hypothesis is that the county name Clare comes from the settlement of Clare (now Clarecastle), whose Irish name Clár (plank bridge) refers to a crossing over the River Fergus. [746]

In 1575 Donald O'Brien received a knighthood from Queen Elizabeth I but no hereditary title was included. Also, that year Donald was rewarded with the post of Queen Elizabeth's Lord Deputy, the Governor of Clare. Sir Donald O'Brien, the man that had been King Conor O'Brien's appointed tanist, but was denied the Kingship, died in 1579 aged 65.[747]

Sir Donald O’Brien built Newtown Castle about 1550. Located near Ballyvaughan it remained in O’Brien hands until the late 1600s when it was sold to the O'Loghlen family. Newtown features an unusual pyramidical base, which makes it unique in all of Ireland. The tower has four upper floors. The ground floor and first floor feature vaulted ceilings.

Newtown Castle near Ballyvaughan

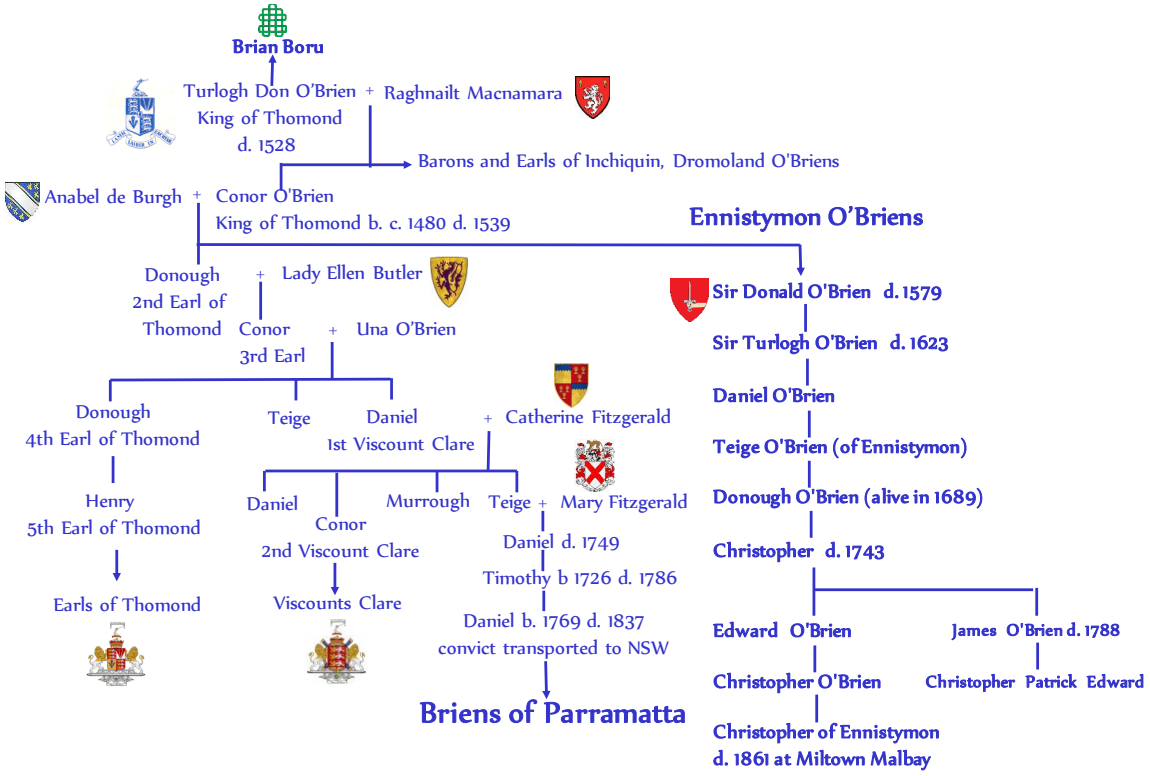




Thomond seal

The descendants of Sir Donald O'Brien – The Ennistymon O'Briens

Sir Donald O'Brien of Dough was the progenitor of the Ennistymon O'Briens and I'll cover this line briefly. Donald refused to 'take the King's shilling' and convert from the Catholic to the Anglican religion and his descendants remained Catholic up until the late 1700s.



Line of the Ennistymon O'Briens

By 1584 the 'Ennistymon O'Briens' were living at Dough Castle at Lahinch in County Clare. They were known to have given "hospitable and humane" shelter to English settlers who were threatened by the Irish rebellion of 1641. In return for their actions, Dough castle was spared from being demolished or slighted by the Cromwellian army.

The present ruin of Dough castle is the result of various collapses due to the castle having been built upon sandbanks. One side had fallen before 1839, and a considerable mass, with the chimney, fell in 1883.

Sir Daniel O'Brien's eldest son was Teige born about 1540, he died in exile in 1595. His second son was Sir Turlough O'Brien who was born in 1546. Turlough was Knighted in 1583 by Queen Elizabeth I along with his cousin Sir Donough O'Brien 4th Earl of Thomond, and attended the Parliament convened by the Queen in Dublin in 1585. Sir Turlough was appointed 'Seneshal (Governor) of County Clare' in 1588 and had the duty of maintaining law and order throughout the county. [748]



Ruins of Dough Castle at Lahinch County Clare.

Sir Daniel O'Brien's third son was Murtagh O'Brien who married Mary Ffrench. They had several children, the eldest of which was Murrough O'Brien of Tullagh born about 1570. He married Margaret Burnell and their descendants remained in and around Corofin until the early 1800s.

In 1754 Muircheartach O'Brien of this line translated to English a Gaelic text describing the O'Davoren family history. This document was given to Constance Davoren fitz Hugh, Parish Priest of Rath & Kilnaboy and was found in his desk draw after his death. The O'Davoren family history document is a valuable resource as it is the only reference that describes a number of O'Brien lines living around Corofin. [749]

One of these lines moved westwards from Corofin to Ennistymon and finally to Australia in 1851. Today this line is represented by Kevin O'Brien in Adelaide who has undertaken DNA testing and his results have greatly contributed to this research.

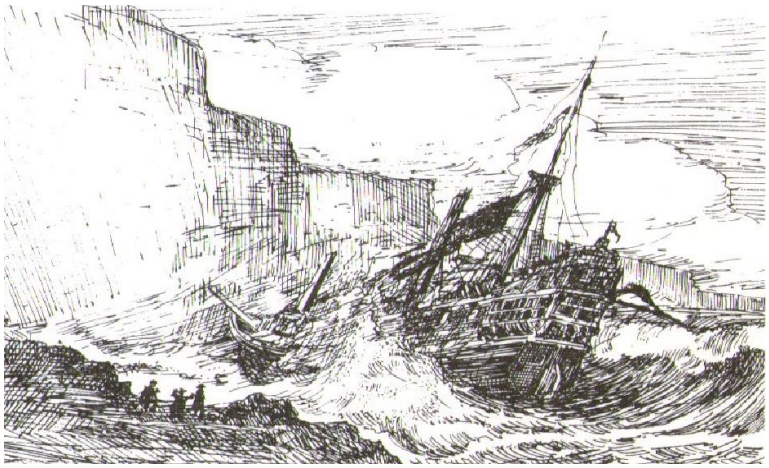
Another branch of this line of O'Briens had sons who joined the Christian Brothers and daughters who joined the Sisters of St Joseph.

Brother Francis O'Brien migrated to Australia in 1878 as a Christian Brother and was the first Principle of Christian Brothers Collage at Wakefield St Adelaide SA. He is buried at Nudgee College Qld Australia.

Francis O'Brien's sister Bridget took the name of 'Sister Antonio' and was a missionary in outback Western Australia, she is buried in Broome WA Australia.

During the English – Spanish war (1585-1604) as many as 27 ships of the Spanish Armada appeared off the coast of Clare. On the 3rd September 1588 seven ships anchored in the Shannon estuary near Carrigaholt. The next day they were seen anchored in a section of wild ocean west of Liscannor. On the 10th September two ships, the San Marcos and San Estaban drifted onto rocks off Doonbeg and became total wrecks.

Drawing of a Spanish Armada ship breaking up on the Clare coast 10th Sep 1588.



After the shipwreck wood from the ships drifted onto the coast around Spanish Point. Sir Turlough O'Brien's subordinates salvaged some wooden carvings made of mahogany inlaid with ivory and from these a six-legged table was constructed.

The table was presented to Turlough's cousin Conor O'Brien who eventually moved it to his new house at Dromoland. In the 1960s the table was lent to Bunratty Castle but in 2018 it was removed by crane so it could be sold at auction.

A feature of this table is that the four corner legs are Spanish loins, each holding a shield in front of them while one of the middle legs is a carved figure of a sailor and the other a carved figure of Latona the Roman goddess holding Castor in one hand and Pollux in the other.



Table made from wood salvaged from Spanish Armada ships off Doonbeg.

Pictured in the "North Solar" at Bunratty Castle.

Tradition tells us Boetius MacClancy sentenced the survivors of a Spanish shipwreck to death at Doonagore castle near Doolin in 1588. Doonagore is unusual for a castle in this area as it is not made of local stone, its material came from the worked-out quarry of Tra Leachain. It is also unusual as it is round in shape similar to nearby Newtown Castle. [750]

Doonagore Castle near
Doolin Co Clare.



Doonagore was granted to Turlough O'Brien of Ennistymon in 1582 and repaired several times but by 1837 it had fallen into disrepair and was described in that year as being a "round tower on a square base." It was restored in the 1970's. The Radio na Gaeltachta transmitter, over two miles from here and well above the castle's position, is used with Doonagore Castle as a navigational point by boatmen bringing their craft to Doolin pier.

Sir Turlough O'Brien acquired Ballinalacken Castle located near Doolin in County Clare around 1584. In 1654, following the Cromwellian war in Ireland (1649–53), Turlough's son Daniel O'Brien petitioned the English Commission to save Ballinalacken castle from demolition. Either he or his son, Teigue, eventually built an expansion at Ballinalacken and Teigue's son Donough, styled himself as 'Donough of Ballinalacken'. The castle remained in the possession of the Ennistymon O'Briens until the middle of the 18th century, when it passed to a different branch of the family.



Ballinalacken Castle near Doolin County Clare (2006)

Teigue O'Brien's brother Murtagh married Slaney the daughter of John MacNamara of Moyriesk. Their son Donell O'Brien born about 1635 was known as the 'Spainneach' as he was born in Spain. This Donell is mentioned in a letter dated 1660 between Conor O'Brien and his mother Red Mary, he was still alive in 1713.

Donell's son Cornelius O'Brien of Poplar house near Corofin, was born about 1670. He was a Captain in French army and died at Glannamanagh co Clare in 1753. His descendants remained at Glannamanagh castle for several generations before Richard Joseph Falkiner O'Bryen emigrated to Queensland, Australia, in the early 1880s. This line is now represented by Richard's grandson also named Richard O'Bryen, living today at Buderim in Queensland. Now retired he ran a Solicitor's business at Buderim for many years. [751]

This line is distinguished by the O'Bryen spelling of our family name.

Sir Turlough died on the 1st Aug. 1623 and was succeeded by his eldest surviving son Daniel (1578-1662), who married Ellen, daughter of Edmond, Knight of Glin.

Daniel O'Brien survived the land upheavals of the Cromwellian period and at the restoration of King Charles II in 1660 he was able to recover his pre-war estates.

Documents from this time show Daniel calling his estate "Lisdoonvarna" this was the name of a Castle in the area and later became the name of a town located a few Kilometers north of Ennistymon. Daniel was succeeded by his eldest son Teige, who in turn was succeeded by his son Donough who married Honora (c. 1645-1738), daughter of Conor O'Brien of Leamaneh (1617-1651).[752]

Around 1689 Donough O'Brien moved his family from Ballinalacken Castle to Ennistymon house. This residence overlooks the river Inagh 'Cascades' just outside the town of Ennistymon in County Clare. This was their family residence for the next 200 years. Today much of the old building has been demolished, but the front section remains and is used as the Falls Hotel entrance.



Ennistymon house (now the Falls Hotel at Ennistymon)



Ennistymon House (before most of it was demolished)



Ennistymon town in the 1800s

Donough's son Christopher O'Brien married firstly Elizabeth Mathew and they had two sons James who died in 1788 and Edward. His second marriage was to Mary Mac Donnall, they had one son Randal who died unmarried in 1743.

James who died in 1788 was MP for Ennis. His eldest son Christopher lived at Sandfield near Lahinch Co. Clare, his daughter Chsistophina married John Richards 'Baron of the Exchequer' of Ireland. James 2nd son Patrick lived at Doolin and was alive in 1824 and 3rd son Edward, also alive in 1824, was a Major General in the English army. His sister Catherine married Captain William Milne of the 98th regiment.[753]



Ennistymon Cascades (2018)

The brother of James who died in 1788 was Edward. He appears in the Protestant convert rolls of the Church of Ireland in 1755. Edward Married Susannah O'Brien whose father was Henry O'Brien of Stonehall. They had a daughter named Anne born in 1759 who inherited Ennistymon house and the associated estate. In 1775 Anne married Mathias Finucane who divorced her in 1793. As Anne was deemed at fault Mathias inherited her properties and through this process the O'Briens lost control of their Ennistymon estate which then passed down the Finucane line. Anne died in 1775.

Edward and Susannah O'Brien had one son named Christopher O'Brien (b. 1754) who followed his father's example by conforming to the Protestant Church in 1768. [754]

This Christopher O'Brien had four sons, Edward who was the Governor of 'The Isle of France', Darcy who died young, James who was killed at the Battle of Salamanca in 1812 in which Wellington defeated France, and Christopher who lived in lesser circumstances and died at the town of Miltown Malbay County Clare in 1861.

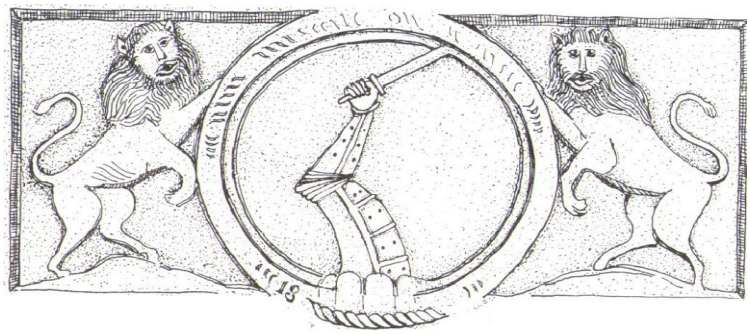


Christopher O'Brien born in 1754. He was the son of Edward O'Brien of Ennistymon. His mother was Susannah O'Brien whose father was Henry O'Brien of Stonehall.



Henrietta O'Brien b. 1730 d. 1787. Daughter of Edward O'Brien, known to her friends as Harriet or "Hatty" she never married. She lived as a tenant for life at of 'Doonebegg' [755]

A family crest comprising of the "O'Brien arm & sword" accompanied by two lions was used by the Ennistymon O'Briens and appears on buildings and gates on their properties in this area of Clare.

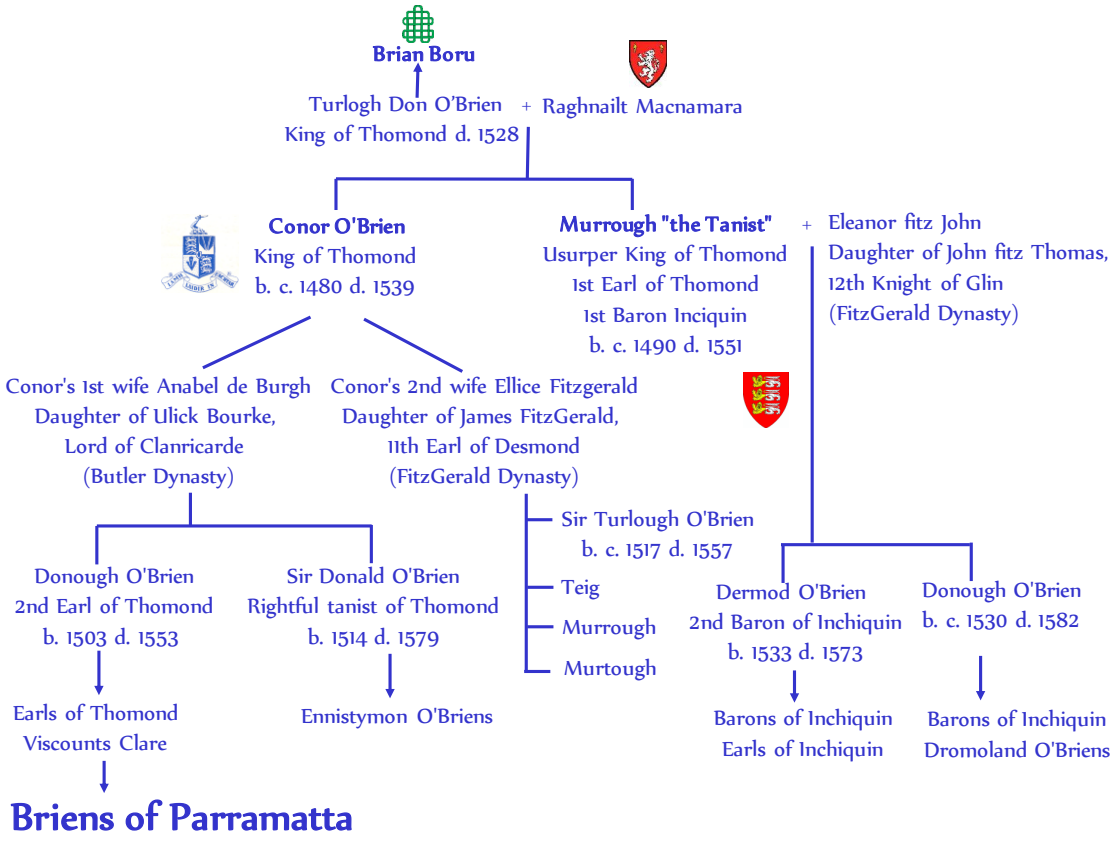


Ennistymon O'Brien family crest

Appendix 5 Murrough 'the tanist' O'Brien and the annexation of Thomond 1543

There is probably no more controversial member of our family than 'Murrough the tanist'. Most books on the O'Briens say that Murrough "usurped the sovereignty of Thomond" and sold-out the O'Brien monarchy and heritage to our arch enemy the English. Others imply he was a shrewd deal maker who took advantage of Henry VIII at a time when he could extract the best deal from him. Another story suggests Murrough was forced at the end of a sword into accepting the surrender and regrant deal from Henry VIII. Which ever way, Murrough changed the course of our family history, and we're still discussing him today.

Murrough 'the tanist' O'Brien was born before 1490. He was the younger brother of Conor O'Brien who was King of Thomond from 1528 until his death in 1539. By the custom of the law of tanistry Murrough was to succeed Conor, but towards the end of his life King Conor O'Brien wished to divert the succession to his 2nd son Donald O'Brien and to facilitate this, Conor nominated Donald as his 'tanist'.



Male lines of King Conor O'Brien and his brother Murrough 'the tanist'

But as Conor O'Brien neared the end of his life Murrough argued that the tanist ruling could not be changed and after Conor's death in 1539 Murrough saw himself inaugurated as King of Thomond. Murrough has since been known as "Murrough the tanist."

Soon after his inauguration Murrough O'Brien committed Thomond to the Irish Confederacy. In 1540 Murrough assumed a role as one of the Confederate leaders and together with Conor O'Neil and Manus O'Donnell they planned a raid into Meath as a follow up to the raid of the previous year which had been ended in disaster. But before they could organise their forces the English gained intelligence of their plan and an army of 8,000 under the command of Lord Brerton, marched to Fore in Westmeath and confronted the clan leaders. O'Brien, O'Neil and O'Donnell decided it was useless to confront such a large force and backed down. The Confederate organisation soon fell apart and by the end of 1540 Conor O'Neil had been forced to submit to Henry VIII and Murrough O'Brien was obliged to contemplate the future of Thomond sovereignty.

After the Confederate defeat at Fore, the young Earl of Kildare (i.e. Silken Thomas FitzGerald's younger brother Gerald FitzGerald) whom had been hidden for many months by the O'Briens, was smuggled out of Ireland to France. The Lord Deputy Leonard Grey was an uncle of the young Gerald FitzGerald and King Henry VIII suspected Grey had aided the boy's escape; a charge Grey strenuously denied. Nevertheless, Grey was tried and attainted of high treason, and subsequently executed at the Tower of London on 28th July 1541 by the orders of Henry VIII.[756]

Grey was eventually replaced as Lord Deputy by Sir Anthony St Leger who was tasked with the repression of disorder. St Leger moved against the MacMorrough Kavanagh clan, who had long claimed the title of King of Leinster, permitting them to retain their lands only by accepting feudal tenure on the English model. By a similar policy, he exacted obedience from the O'Mores, O'Tooles and O'Conors in Leix and Offaly.

St Leger was then ordered to deal with the O'Briens and so travelled to Thomond and met with Murrough O'Brien late in 1540. St Leger knew he didn't have sufficient forces to easily overthrow the O'Briens, so he proposed a plan he thought would appease yet contain them. This involved the O'Briens relinquishing control over counties Limerick and Tipperary in return for England recognizing the King of Thomond's authority west of the Shannon river. In addition, England would provide restitution to the O'Briens for losses incurred during the battles with Leonard Grey following the Silken Thomas affair.

Murrough's options were limited particularly since the Irish Confederacy was now a spent force, so he may have considered a similar alliance with the FitzGeralds of Desmond, but St Leger had already cut a comparable deal with them so that path was blocked. Murrough O'Brien was also under pressure from his pro-Anglo nephew Donough O'Brien to follow other clan leaders and accept English over lordship as well as their laws. It seems Murrough took what he could from the situation by striking a deal with St Leger and retreated to the O'Brien heart-land west of the Shannon river.

With this agreement in place, the territorial gains in Limerick and Tipperary made by the O'Briens during the Gaelic Resurgence period from 1318 onwards were reversed. This was clearly a victory for St Leger as it was in these areas that the O'Briens had relentlessly pursued English settlers for 'black rent' and with this agreement, St Leger had solved an issue that had plagued the English settlers for centuries.

For the O'Briens the loss of revenue and tribute in the form of cattle and supplies from their territories east of the Shannon must have significantly disturbed life in Thomond. Whether or not Murrough O'Brien had calculated the value of restitution he received from St Leger was adequate compensation to off-set these losses we can only speculate. However, in reality Anthony St Leger's policy was generally one of moderation and conciliation, probably more so than Henry VIII wished. St Leger argued that the loyalty of the Anglo-Irish nobility could be better achieved "by small gifts and honest persuasion than by rigor" which seems to be an implicit criticism of the savage manner in which the rebellion of Silken Thomas had been suppressed by Leonard Grey.[757]

St Leger went further and proposed that Henry VIII implement a 'surrender and regrant' policy for the Irish clan leaders and in 1541 Henry created six new Irish peerages. For the O'Briens St Leger recommended that the King of Thomond (i.e. head of the House of O'Brien) receive the title Earl of Thomond.

An interesting side issue was an ongoing dispute between Henry VIII and the O'Briens over the English throne. According to the Hon Donough O'Brien (1949) both sides were locked in debate over which of the two lines was the most senior and therefore who had the rightful claim to English monarchy. [758] History tells us which side won the argument!

While it is acknowledged that the Tudors descended from Fergus the 1st King of Scotland, according to the Duan Albanach (Song of the Scots), Fergus had descended from the youngest son of Erc of Dalriada a 6th century monarch of Ireland. The O'Briens however had descended from Erc's eldest son, Loarn mac Eirc, hence the claim that the O'Briens were more entitled to the throne of England than the Tudor King Henry Vlll.

King, James VI of Scotland (later James I of England) who came to the throne in 1567 shared a similar view of the origins of his line, describing himself in one of many verses written to his wife Anne of Denmark, as the "happie Monarch sprung of Ferguse race." Henry VIII obviously took the arguments seriously as he acknowledged the royal line of the O'Briens in a number of documents.

By late 1541 Murrough O'Brien was seriously considering St Leger's offer of an English title in return for relinquishing the sovereignty of Thomond. Indeed, what was on offer to the O'Briens was far more than had been put forward by any English monarch or Norman baron in the previous 400 years and included titles, land, revenue from tenements, a role in Irish politics as well as access to English resources and protection. In addition, the 'surrender and regrant' ensured the O'Briens remained a powerful family and a relevant force in Irish history.

In February 1542 Murrough O'Brien attended the Irish parliament in Limerick and expressed to Anthony St Leger his "willingness to submit to royal authority as Henry VIII's liege subject for the future." [759] At that meeting Murrough outlined to St Leger the terms on which he was prepared to submit, which were gladly received and passed to Henry VIII.

Henry's reply dated 14th April 1542 stated that the head of the house of O'Brien should be afforded suitable dignity and implied that this include a peerage. On the 2nd June Murrough O'Brien, through St Leger, wrote to Henry VIII that he accepted the title Earl of Thomond and in addition

requested that Henry also recognise his nephew Donough O'Brien (Conor O'Brien's eldest son from his 1st wife Anabel de Burgh) in the 'surrender and regrant' process. Henry wholeheartedly agreed and wrote back immediately to Murrough in very positive terms.[760]

Murrough's request of the 2nd June 1542 is interesting as it shows the alliance between Murrough and his nephew Donough was still intact. We notice also that the true tanist of Thomond as nominated by King Conor O'Brien i.e. Donough's younger brother Donald O'Brien, was excluded from all these requests.

The O'Brien surrender and regrant constituted the English annexation of Thomond and was formalised at a ceremony held on the 1st July 1543 at Greenwich Castle London. During the ceremony King Murrough O'Brien surrendered the Irish royalty of the O'Briens to King Henry VIII of England. The event was held ten days out from Henry's wedding to his 6th wife (and our distant cousin) Catherine Parr. [761]



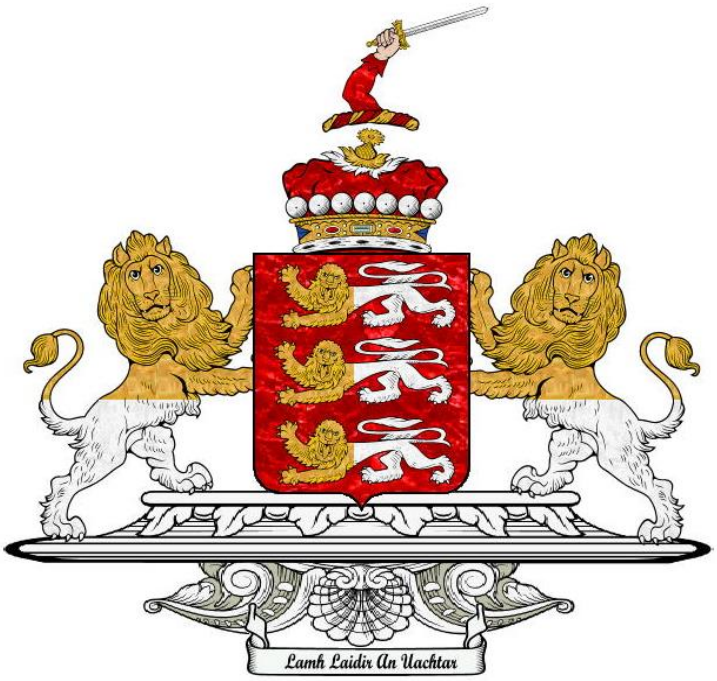
O'Brien surrender and regrant 1st July 1543 at Greenwich Castle London

Accounts from the proceedings show that the Duke of Norfolk paid for the robes (which Murrough took with him back to Ireland) and Henry VIII was billed for the travel cost of the Irish entourage. The surrender and regrant came with conditions for the O'Briens including the abandonment of their native titles, the adoption of English customs and laws, pledging of allegiance to the English crown, abandonment and renunciation from the Catholic Church and conversion to the Anglican Church. [762] In return Henry VIII proclaimed that Murrough 'the tanist' O'Brien would be granted the titles of 1st 'Earl of Thomond' and 1st 'Baron of Inchiquin' (which would pass down his senior

male line). And upon Murrough's death the titles "Earl of Thomond" and "Baron of Ibrickane" would pass to Conor's son Donough.[763]

In paragraph three of the surrender and regrant patent, King Henry VIII acknowledges the Royal Kingmanship between the O'Briens and the Tudors. The document says: "Whereas therefore Murrough O'Brien being truly noble by being of our blood and lineage." The document therefore is recognition that the O'Briens are part of the Tudor royal family, consequently Murrough and his descendants were assigned the privilege of using a variant of the Royal arms of England.[764]

In our case the coat of arms is to be half gold and half silver. In addition, Murrough's descendants were entitled to wear the Royal liveries used at ceremonials e.g. the opening of Parliament, coronations etc. As of late as the two Jubilees of Queen Victoria in 1879 and 1887, Sir Edward O'Brien 14th Baron Inchiquin exercised this privilege.[765]



O'Brien coat of arms granted by King Henry VIII in 1543

Anthony St Leger served two terms as Lord Deputy of Ireland and in 1544 was nominated by King Henry VIII as a Knight of the Garter. In 1546 St Leger was embroiled in a controversy that remains unsolved to this day. He was accused of murdering James Butler the 9th Earl of Ormond and sixteen of his household during dinner, although there is no direct evidence that he was responsible (mainly because there was no investigation, despite Ormond's wealth and social standing).

After Murrough 'the tanist' and his nephew Donough O'Brien (who would become the 2nd Earl of Thomond) returned from the surrender and regrant ceremony in London, Thomond experienced a period of peace that had not been seen for many decades. With the head of the O'Briens now in possession of English titles and a member of the royal peerage, King Henry VIII focused elsewhere in Ireland and life in Thomond seemed at first to go on as if nothing had changed.

In reality the decision of Murrough ‘the tanist’ to accept the titles of 1st Earl of Thomond and 1st Baron of Inchiquin, and to adopt the ways of the English, marks the end of the Gaelic Resurgence in Thomond and the replacement of Irish tanistry and brehon law with the English primogeniture system. While the ramifications of this change were not immediately obvious to the general Thomond population during Murrough’s life time, after Murrough’s death in 1551 the profound effects of this change and the realisation that it represented the complete and utter end of the Gaelic clan system which had lasted for well over a thousand years, began to hit home.

For the O’Briens the change from Gaelic clan to English nobility did not go smoothly. After the death of Murrough ‘the tanist’ warring O’Brien factions representing those for, and opposed, to English rule, erupted in Thomond and the situation quickly descended into what was effectively a civil war which lasted until 1579.

The story of this Thomond civil war is told in Chapter 6. I will continue with the family of Murrough ‘the tanist’ who’s descendants now held the title of Baron of Inchiquin and later become the Earls and Marquess’s of Inchiquin.

Murrough ‘the tanist’ married Eleanor fitz John who was the daughter of Reverend John fitz Thomas, 12th Knight of Glin. Murrough and Eleanor had the following children:

- Dermod O'Brien, 2nd Baron of Inchiquin d. 31 Jan 1552
- Donough McMurrough O'Brien d. 6 Sep 1582
- Teige McMurrough O'Brien d. 12 Dec 1577
- Torlogh O'Brien d. 1542
- Honora O'Brien
- Slany O'Brien d. 1569
- Aine O'Brien
- Ranelt O'Brien
- unknown daughter O'Brien
- Margaret O'Brien b. c 1535

Their eldest male Dermod O’Brien was the progenitor of the Barons and Earls of Inchiquin, whilst the next eldest Donough was the progenitor of the Dromoland O’Briens. As these two O’Brien lines progress the change from Irish Gaelic clan to English nobility is obvious. The narrative of these two lines is covered in Appendix. 6 & 7.

Appendix 6 The descendants of Murrough 'the tanist' – The Barons and Earls of Inchiquin

The eldest son of Murrough "The tanist" O'Brien was Dermod O'Brien the 2nd Baron of Inchiquin.

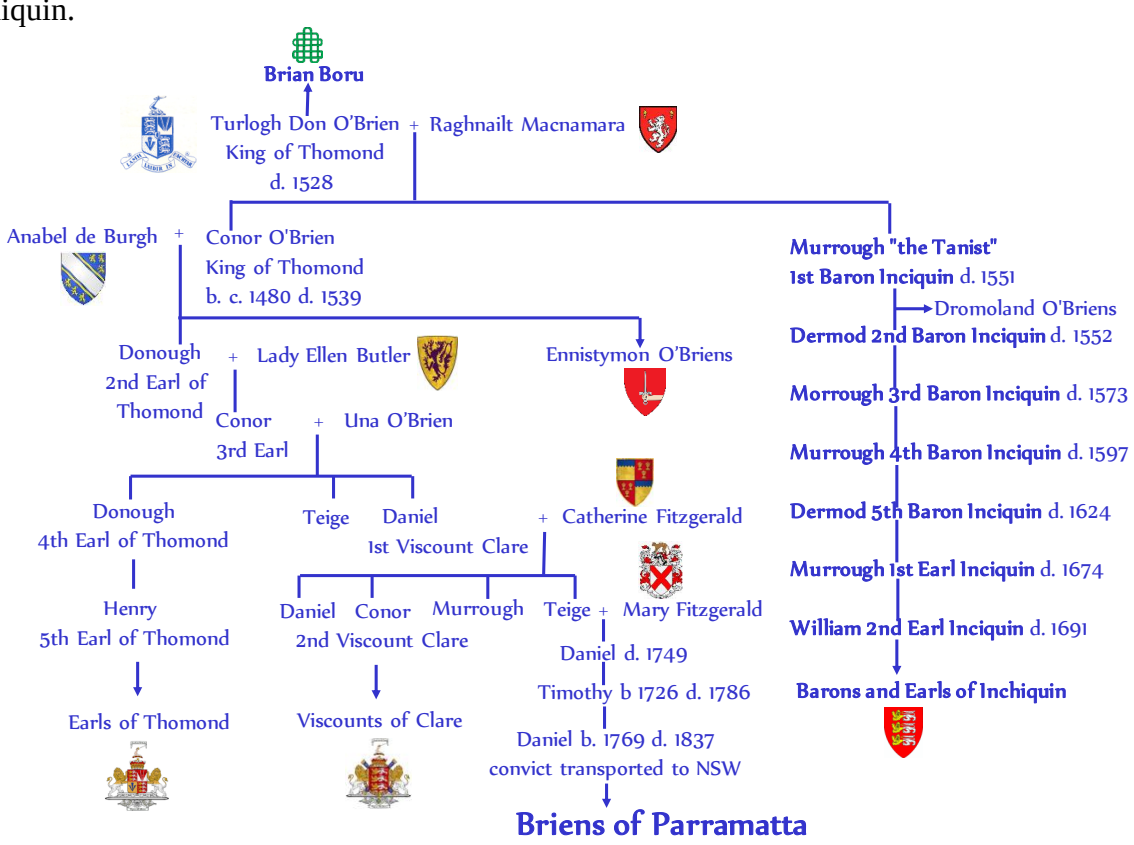


Chart showing line of the Barons and Earls of Inchiquin

The Barons of Inchiquin derived their peerage from Henry VIII King of England who under the "surrender and regrant" arrangement of 1543 bestowed this perpetual title to Murrough the youngest son of Turlogh Don O'Brien King of Thomond, to be handed down to the eldest son thereafter (i.e. the eldest male of the body). The line continued until 1855 when James O'Brien the 12th Baron of Inchiquin died without leaving a male heir.

Additional titles were bestowed upon this line over the generations. Murrough O'Brien 6th Baron of Inchiquin was also titled the 1st Earl of Inchiquin and from this point on both the baron and earl titles continued down the line. In 1800 an additional title of marquis was bestowed so that by the time Murrough O'Brien, the 10th Baron of Inchiquin died in 1808, he was also known as the 1st Marquis of Inchiquin.

This family line began with the 2nd Baron of Inchiquin, Dermod McMurrough O'Brien. Dermod was the eldest son of Murrough O'Brien 'the tanist' 1st Earl of Thomond and Eleanor FitzGerald. Dermot O'Brien married Margaret O'Brien, daughter of Donough O'Brien, 2nd Earl of Thomond (a nephew of Murrough O'Brien, 1st Earl of Thomond). Dermot was buried at Ennis Abbey 1st May 1557 and the title passed to his son Murrough McDermot O'Brien who succeeded to the 3rd Baron of Inchiquin.

The 3rd Baron of Inchiquin was Murrough McDermot O'Brien born about 1550. He was the son of Dermod O'Brien, 2nd Baron Inchiquin and Margaret O'Brien and inherited his title in 1557 on the death of his father. He married Mabel Nugent, daughter of Christopher Nugent, 6th Baron Delvin; Murrough O'Brien, 4th Baron Inchiquin was their son and heir. He was murdered on the 20th April 1573 by Dermot O'Shaughnessey, supposedly at the instigation of Ulick Burke, 3rd Earl of Clanricarde.

The 4th Baron of Inchiquin was Murrough MacMurrough O'Brien born in 1562. He was the son of Murrough McDermot O'Brien, 3rd Baron Inchiquin and Mabel Nugent, daughter of Christopher Nugent, 6th Baron Delvin. He married Margaret Cusack, daughter of Sir Thomas Cusack of Cussington, Meath, Lord Chancellor of Ireland and his second wife Maud Darcy, and had one son; Dermod O'Brien, 5th Baron Inchiquin.

Murrough the 4th Baron was shot on the 24th July 1597 when fording the River Erne near Sligo during the Nine Years War. When half across the ford, a bullet passed under one arm and out at the other. He fell from his horse and drowned. Murrough was buried at Donegal Abbey and was succeeded by his son Dermod, then only 2 years old.

The 5th Baron of Inchiquin was Dermod O'Brien, who was born in October 1594. He was the son of Murrough O'Brien, 4th Baron Inchiquin and his wife Mabel, daughter of Christopher Nugent, 5th Baron Delvin. Dermod O'Brien married Ellen, eldest daughter of Sir Edmund FitzJohn FitzGerald of Cloyne and Ballymaloe House in County Cork, from that powerful Hiberno-Norman family. They had four sons, and several daughters:

- Murrough, 6th Baron Inchiquin, their eldest son, became the first Earl of Inchiquin.
- Henry (d. 1645), a lieutenant colonel in the army of King Charles I.
- Christopher (died 1664), a lieutenant-colonel in the Irish Confederate Army, who was created "Viscount Inchiquin," by the Supreme Council of the Catholic Confederation. He never married.
- Murtough O'Brien, who led a guerrilla campaign against Cromwell's generals in the Burren. He later obtained a pardon and emigrated to Spain where he became a general in the Spanish army
- Honora, who married Anthony Stoughton of Rattoo, County Kerry.
- Mary, married Michael Boyle, Archbishop of Armagh, and Lord Chancellor of Ireland, and had with him numerous children, including Murrough Boyle, 1st Viscount Blesington, and Eleanor (who became the wife of the William Hill of Hillsborough, M.P., and mother to Michael Hill (1672–1699) M.P.) through whom Lord Inchiquin became an ancestor of Elizabeth II.
- Ann, died unmarried

The 6th Baron of Inchiquin was Murrough O'Brien, he was also titled the 1st Earl of Inchiquin. The title of Earl of Inchiquin was created by Charles II King of England in 1654.

Murrough was born in 1614 and married Elizabeth the daughter of Sir William St Ledger P.C the Lord president of Munster. Murrough O'Brien lived at Rostellan Castle County Cork and he has

gone down in history known as Murrough “tothaine” (the burner) due to the extensive burnings of land, crops, livestock, and dwellings of Irish who would not convert to Anglicanism.

He is particularly remembered for leading an attack on the Rock of Cashel abbey on the 12th September 1647. The abbey was within a walled enclosure and one account estimates that about 3000 Catholics were inside seeking refuge from the ongoing war in the area.

Murrough O’Brien’s troops were unsuccessful at breeching the wall with guns so he decided to pile turf against the wall and set fire to it. The heat from the fire was such that those inside defending the wall were overcome and Murrough’s troops were able to break through. Once inside they had no mercy and slaughtered all of the occupants including at least 30 priests and friars who were hiding under the alter. [766]



Murrough (the burner) O’Brien the 6th Baron of Inchiquin and 1st Earl of Inchiquin

On the 13th November 1647 Murrough O’Brien’s forces defeated those of Viscount Taaffe and the Irish Confederates at the battle of Knocknanuss near Mallow, eighteen miles north of Cork. The defeat of the Confederates at Knocknanuss left Murrough O’Brien in control of most of Munster. Only Limerick, Waterford and Clonmel remained in Confederate hands. [767]

Despite Murrough O’Brien’s military success, he received little support from London, where Ireland was not regarded as a priority so long as Dublin was secure. Also, right at that time the Second Civil War had broken out in England between the Royalists (supporters of King Charles I) and The Parliamentarians (supporters of Oliver Cromwell). This further diverted English resources of men and supplies away from Ireland and so Murrough O’Brien could not continue the onslaught against the Irish Confederates.

In April 1648 Murrough O'Brien declared himself a Royalist and effectively changed sides and joined the Irish Catholic Confederates.

By late October 1649, the Irish Confederates had suffered a number of major defeats at the hands of the army of the English Parliament – a defeat at the Battle of Rathmines, and the loss of the important towns of Drogheda and Wexford. The Confederates received word that a column of English soldiers was preparing to march from Dublin to Wexford to reinforce Cromwell's troops in the south. This presented the Irish Confederates with a chance to engage the Parliamentarians without risking too many soldiers.

Murrough O'Brien, and Theobald Taaffe (who had fought on opposite sides at the Battle of Knocknanuss only two years before) were given command of a force of 2,500. This operation was of particular importance to the credibility of O'Brien: he was distrusted by the majority Catholic population of Ireland due to a number of atrocities he had committed in the previous years of fighting, and in the autumn of 1649 many of the Protestant soldiers in Munster formerly loyal to him had mutinied and joined with the forces of Parliament. He now had a chance to regain some standing; it was more or less Murrough O'Brien's last throw of the dice.

The Confederate army met the Parliamentarians at the battle of Arklow which took place at Glascarrig on the coast road through Arklow in County Wicklow in November 1649. The battle was lost when the Irish Confederate forces made a mis-timed cavalry assault and were repelled by the musket fire of the English Parliamentarians. For the Confederates the defeat was only a demoralising setback, for Murrough O'Brien however the consequences were more serious. [768]

The battle had presented an opportunity for him to regain the trust of his countrymen, both Catholic and Protestant. His failure to defeat the numerically smaller English force left Murrough O'Brien disgraced. After the battle, O'Brien returned to Munster, where there were still a number of companies loyal to him, but these were routed by Broghill in March 1650.

In December 1650 Murrough O'Brien moved to France and was in Paris when Charles II arrived there in exile in 1651. Murrough was appointed a member of Charles Royal Council and in 1654 was made Governor of Catalonia (then part of France, now part of Spain). It was in Catalonia that Murrough O'Brien surprised everyone when he converted to Catholicism. This caused a split between Murrough and his wife Elizabeth and a battle over the custardy of their son William ensued. William was living with his mother at the British Embassy in Paris and Murrough stole in and abducted the boy, planning to take him back to Catalonia. The English Ambassador William Lockhart intervened and threatened to banish Murrough from France unless he returned the boy.

In 1659 Murrough along with his son William were part of a force sent to Lisbon to help Portugal in their dispute with Spain. On the way however Murrough and William were captured by pirates sailing under a Turkish flag and taken to Algeria. In the encounter William lost an eye. When news of their capture reached England, the parliament threatened the Algerian Pasha (i.e. Ottoman General) with reprisals if they weren't released. The Pasha relented and released Murrough but detained his son William as a hostage. The English House of Commons eventually voted to pay £7,500 for William's ransom and he was released. Murrough and William returned to Ireland where Murrough retired from military service.

Murrough O'Brien died in 1674 and was buried in the Thomond tomb at St Mary's Cathedral Limerick but shortly after his death his remains were removed from the tomb and legend says they were taken by a mob and thrown into the Shannon River.

The 2nd Earl of Inchiquin was William O'Brien son of Murrough O'Brien the 1st Earl. In 1659 William and his father Murrough O'Brien were captured by Turkish pirates off the coast of Spain and taken to Algeria where he was held until the British House of Commons voted to pay £7,500 for his release. [769]

Almost from the time he arrived in Jamaica William suffered continually with fever and died of the plague in 1691 at St. Iago de la Vega sixteen months after his arrival. He was buried in the parish church where a brass plate commemorates him.



William O'Brien the 2nd Earl of Inchiquin as a child had been captured by Turkish pirates and lost an eye in the fight, held captive by the Pasha of Algeria and only released after a ransom was paid by the British Govt. He was Captain General of English forces in Africa, Governor of Tangier and Governor General of Jamaica, where he died in 1691.

In 1674 William was appointed Captain General of English forces in Africa as well as Governor of Tangier, a post he held for six years after which he returned to Ireland.

In 1689 William was attainted by the Irish parliament of King James II and lost his estates. In protest he led a large body of protestants from Munster to oppose the progress of Catholics. The protests were dispersed and William O'Brien and his son William fled to England. He returned to Ireland in 1690 and was present at the battle of the Boyne River and accompanied King William of Orange to Dublin.
He married Lady Margaret Boyle 3rd daughter of Roger 1st Earl of Orrery and they had three sons and a daughter:

- William who succeeded as the 3rd Earl Inchiquin
- Henry who died young
- James who died unmarried in 1693
- Margaret who died unmarried

In late 1690 William O'Brien was appointed Governor General of Jamaica. His tenure there wasn't viewed as being very effective. William complained of a lack of funds, he received an annual allowance of £5,000 which was about half what his predecessor had received. The British government gave him £500 for his voyage out, he took fifty tons of baggage with him, and seventy-five servants, some as body guards.

The 3rd Earl of Inchiquin was William O'Brien. He was a privy councilor to both Queen Anne I of England and George I King of England. William was born in 1666 and was the son of William O'Brien the 2nd earl of Inchiquin. He died at Rostellan Castle in County Cork in 1719.



William O'Brien the 3rd Earl of Inchiquin

The 4th Earl of Inchiquin was William O'Brien, son of the 3rd Earl. He was born in 1694 and inherited his father's titles in 1719. He was grand master of the Freemasons of England and an original member of the order of the Bath. From 1744 to 1751 he was Lord of the Bedchamber to Fredrick Prince of Wales, admitted to the Privy Council of Ireland in 1753, Governor of County Clare from 1741 to 1777 and Custos Rotulorum (Chief Record Keeper) of County Clare from 1762 to 1767.



Rostellan Castle
County Cork.
Ancestral home of
the Earls of
Inchiquin

He married Anne Countess of Orkney and they had no children. He lived at Rostellan in Cork but also had a residence at 39 Grosvenor Place London. He was thrown from his horse in Grosvenor Square and died of his injuries aged 82 in 1777. Without any surviving male heirs, his titles passed to his nephew, Murrough O'Brien, who was later created Marquess of Thomond.



William O’Brien 4th Earl of Inchiquin was grand master of the Freemasons of England and an original member of the order of the Bath

The 5th Earl of Inchiquin and the 1st Marquis of Thomond (created in 1800) was Murrough O’Brien. Born in 1723 his father was James O’Brien the son of William the 4th Earl of Inchiquin. Murrough was one of the 15 original members of the Order of St Patrick founded in 1783. He married Mary Palmer niece and heiress of the artist Sir Joshua Reynolds, founder and president of the Royal Academy of arts. The Royal Academy of Arts was founded through a personal act of King George III on 10th December 1768 with a mission to promote the arts of design in Britain through education and exhibition.

Joshua Reynolds was a very accomplished and recognised artist. Mary O’Brien the wife of the 5th Earl, received a letter from the Emperor of Russia dated 14th July 1789 written to her as being a

near relative of Joshua Reynolds, in which he "expressed his high sense of her uncle's merits of an artist and asked her to accept a memento" included with the letter was a diamond star. Quite a number of Joshua Reynolds paintings are still held by the Dromoland O'Briens.



Murrough O'Brien 5th Earl of Inchiquin and the 1st Marquess of Thomond he married the niece and heiress of the artist Sir Joshua Reynolds

The brother of the 5th Earl of Inchiquin was Edward O'Brien RN, a commander in the Royal Navy. Edward had an interesting naval career, he joined on the 28th Sep 1747 and on one of his first voyages he was ship-wrecked on the coast of India, and all on board except for Edward and four others perished.

On his return voyage to England Edward was again ship-wrecked, this time near the Cape of Good Hope, and by sheer providence made it ashore. The Dutch Governor of South Africa seeing that Edward was of high birth supplied him with a ship and provisions to continue his journey back to England. But before Edward could set sail a Governor from another British colony arrived in Cape Town demanding a ship so he could travel to England. Edward dutifully gave up his ship for the Governor and took a lesser vessel for himself. 24 hours after the ships left Cape Town Edward saw the ship he had vacated wrecked on the coast and all on board had perished.

Edward O'Brien made it back to England and was deployed on the ship 'Dartmouth'. Sailing off the African coast they encountered a Spanish 'man of war' and the two ships engaged. Edward was at his post between decks when a gunner ran to him with a look of despair shouting "Sir the powder room" the Dartmouth instantly blew up with Edward being blown out through a hole in the side of the ship along with one of the guns. Edward was found by the pirate ship 'Duke' floating in the open ocean clinging to a wooden gun carriage with his clothes burned and torn to tatters. He was rescued and when introduced to the pirate Captain, Edward said gravely "Sir, you will excuse me for appearing before you in such a dress, but I left my ship with so much precipitation, that I

had no time to put on better clothing." The pirate Captain looked favorably upon Edward and ensured he was transferred to a ship heading for England. [770]

Edward O'Brien retired form the Navy and it is assumed he led a less adventurous life. He married Mary Carrick at Rostellan Castle County Cork and his son William became the 6th Earl of Inchiquin. He died in 1801.

The 6th Earl of Inchiquin and 2nd Marquis of Thomond was William O'Brien. He was also the 11th Baron of Inchiquin. William was the son of Edward O'Brien RN. He died in 1846.



William O'Brien the 6th Earl of Inchiquin

The 7th Earl of Inchiquin and 3rd Marquess of Thomond was Admiral James O'Brien. He was born in 1768. He was the son of Edward O'Brien and Mary Carrick. He married, firstly, Eliza Bridgeman Willyams, daughter of James Willyams and Anne Champion, on 25th November 1800 at Truro, Cornwall, England. He married, secondly, Jane Ottley, daughter of Thomas Ottley and Grace Johnson Byam, in 1806 at Clarke's Hill, Antigua. He married, thirdly, Anne Flint, daughter of William Flint and Anne Mill, on 5th January 1847.

He was commissioned in 1783, in the service of the Royal Navy. He gained the rank of Midshipman in 1786 and worked his way up through the ranks and in 1825 he gained the rank of Rear-Admiral. He was appointed Knight Grand Cross, Hanoverian Order (G.C.H.) in 1831. He gained the rank of Vice-Admiral in 1837. He became the 7th Baron O'Brien of Burren, co. Clare and 7th Earl of Inchiquin, the 3rd Marquess of Thomond as well as the 12th Baron of Inchiquin on 21st August 1846. He gained the rank of Admiral in 1847.

James O'Brien died on 3rd July 1855, leaving no male heir and on his death the barony that had been created in 1654 became extinct. He was buried on 10th July 1855 at St. Savior's, Walcot, England.

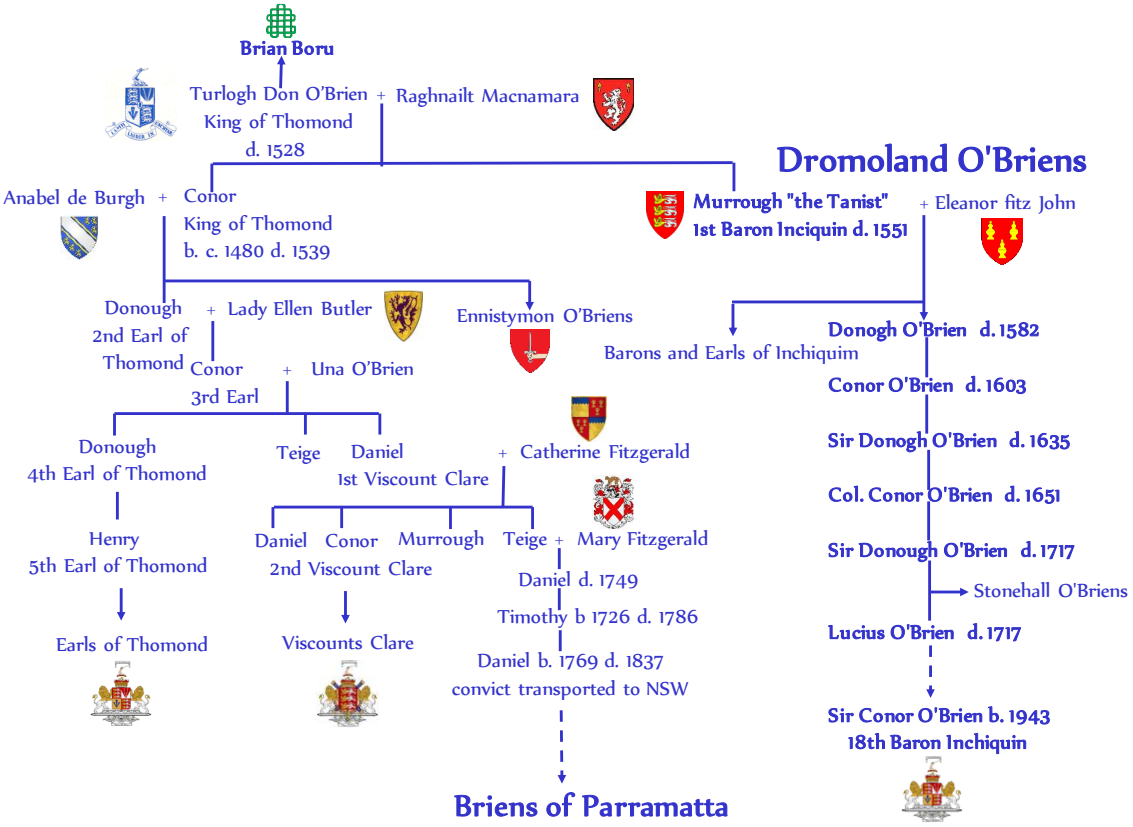
In his will he left a number of paintings by the artist Sir Joshua Reynolds to the Royal Navy. As far as I know these are still in their possession hanging at Portsmith. [771]



Admiral James O'Brien the 7th Earl of Inchiquin and 3rd Marquess of Thomond

Appendix 7 The descendants of Murrough ‘the tanist’ - The Dromoland O’Briens

The 3rd and youngest son of Murrough ‘the tanist’ O’Brien and his wife Eleanor fitz John was Donough O’Brien. Donough was the progenitor of the Dromoland O’Briens so called as one of their ancestral homes is Dromoland Castle in County Clare.



Connection between the Briens of Parramatta and the Dromoland O’Briens.

Today the ‘Dromoland Branch’ of our O’Brien family are recognised as the senior line and they hold the title of Clan Leader. Our current leader is Sir Conor Myles O’Brien 18th Baron of Inchiquin. Sir Conor also goes under the title of “The O’Brien.”

A little background to the Dromoland O’Briens. The youngest son of Murrough ‘the tanist’ O’Brien was Sir Donough O’Brien. This Donough died in 1582 and his family resided for a period at Inchiquin Castle, nad later at Leamaneh Castle but he had also inherited the Dromoland estate from his father.

In 1582 Sir Donough O’Brien was caught on the road during curfew, he was charged with rebellion and hanged at the gates of Limerick by Captain Mordaunt the marshal. Following his death Sir George Cusack, the sheriff, took possession of Dromoland.

This was later deemed illegal as Donough O’Brien had in his possession a letter of protection and subsequently the hanging was deemed to have “taken place in error.” Donough had fallen victim to the stern sprit of the times and to the martial law that prevailed. Any perceived wrong doing on

Donough's part was pardoned by Queen Elizabeth I for the benefit of his heirs. The end result was that Donough's property and lands were not forfeited and were reinstated to his family.

Donough's son Conor O'Brien also met an untimely end when he was killed by an English soldier in 1651. Conor's wife, Máire Rúa (a.k.a Red Mary or Mary Rua) went to extraordinary lengths after her husband's death to retain Dromoland including marrying a British soldier picked at random so that she would be recognised as married before anyone had realised her husband had died.

Mary MacMahon O'Brien is a very colorful character in our family history. There are many stories about her, most of them far fetched such as she had twenty-five husbands and that she had been sealed into a hollow tree and left to die. Some stories may be more truthful e.g. that she once threw a servant girl out of a castle window and she landed on a pig [772]. On account of her flaming red hair she was commonly known as Máire Rúa or 'Red Mary'. [773]

Mary MacMahon, (1615-1686) was a daughter of Turlough MacMahon, alias Torlach Rua MacMahon (c. 1564-1629), the Gaelic Lord of East Corcabaskin (or also called Clonderlaw) and she was the 1st cousin of Sir Daniel O'Brien 1st Viscount Clare.

Mary's 1st husband was Daniel Neylon of Dysert O'Dea, County Clare, to whom she bore four sons before his death on 2nd March 1639.

Her 2nd husband was Conor O'Brien of Leamaneh (1617-1651). Their marriage settlement of 19th Oct 1639 suggests that Conor put his mortgaged estate in trust for his new wife. Conor set about building a new residence at Leamaneh adjoining the fifteenth-century tower-house initially built around 1480 by our ancestor Turlogh Don O'Brien.

The new residence had extensive gardens, a fishpond and a deer park. An inscription found over the entrance porch of the castle reads: 'This was built in the year of our Lord 1648, by Connor O'Brien, and by Mary-ni-Mahone, wife of the said Connor'.

Conor was killed in a skirmish with Cromwellian soldiers in July 1651, leaving his widow to marry a 3rd time. Mary's new husband was John Cooper, an officer of the parliamentary army (whom she supposedly picked at random), and who profited from the Act of Settlement (1652) and the attendant transplantations which were enforced in the wake of the Cromwellian conquest. Many of the title deeds from this time relate to grants and decrees obtained by John Cooper from the commissioners sitting at Athlone and Loughrea who adjudicated on the claims of the transplanted Irish. [774]

Máire Rúa's name lives on in this Kilfenora Co. Clare shop-front.





Leamaneh Castle, near Corofin County Clare. It was originally a five-story tower house (the portion to the right in the photo) built around 1480 by our ancestor Turlogh Don O'Brien. Its name is derived from the Irish 'Leim an eich' (The horse's Leap). (2018)

Other documents shed light on Mary's attempts to secure favour from the royalist Lord Deputy Ulick de Burgh, 1st marquis of Clanricarde. It appears that with her husband's assistance Mary was able to preserve her estate intact for the benefit of her children, most notably her eldest son by her 2nd marriage, Donough O'Brien (later 1st Baronet) who would inherit a considerable portion of his father's Leamaneh lands.

Later, Donough O'Brien moved the family seat from Leamaneh to Dromoland, where Mary may have spent the final years of her life.





Two paintings of Máire Rúa. (L) about 1625 (R) about 1645 [775]

The great grandson of Conor and Red Mary, Sir Donough O'Brien was the last of the family to live at Leamaneh, moving instead to live at the larger Dromoland estate. Sir Donough's descendant, Lucius William O'Brien, 15th Baron Inchiquin organised for the stone gateway which had marked the entrance to Leamaneh to be removed and re-erected in the grounds of Dromoland where it still remains. Around the same time a stone chimneypiece from the castle was also taken out and installed in the Old Ground Hotel, Ennis where it remains today.



O'Brien coat of arms on a stone arch at Dromoland

Over the years Dromoland Castle was built up from a modest house in the 1670s into one of the finest castles in Ireland.



Dromoland Castle (2018)

In 1666 The Viscount Clare branch of the O'Brien family leased Dromoland for a short period. Conor O'Brien the 2nd Viscount Clare held the property until around 1670. After this time Dromoland passed through several hands until finally, in 1684 the freehold was assigned to the great grandson of Conor and Red Mary, Sir Donough O'Brien 1st Baronet of Dromoland.

Sir Donough O'Brien 1st Baronet of Dromoland was a keen horse enthusiast and established a race track on the grounds of Dromoland. He re-named a local town Newmarket on Fergus after the English race track Newmarket and built a Gazebo on a nearby hill for the benefit of himself & his guests to observe his horses' training.



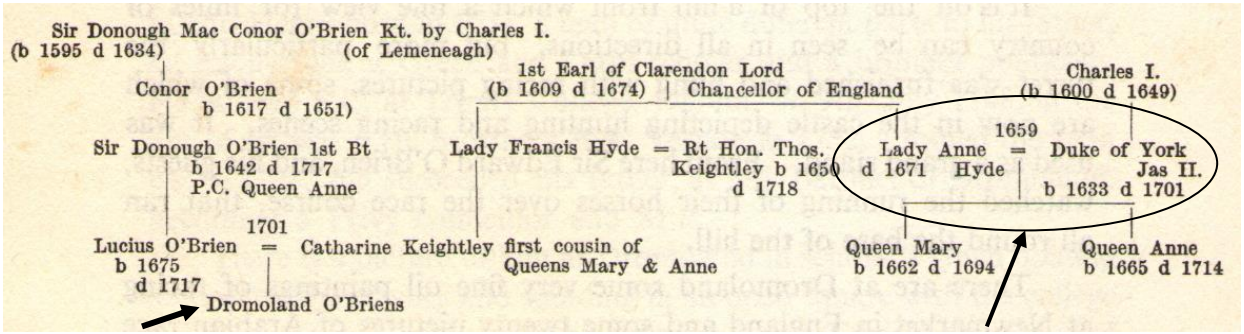
Gazebo on Turret Hill built before 1736 for watching horse training, it was designed by architect John Aheron

Dromoland was held by the O'Briens until 1962 when escalating costs, mainly land taxes necessitated its sale. Donough O'Brien, the 16th Baron Inchiquin, sold Dromoland Castle along with 350 acres to an American firm wishing to establish a hotel and gold course. Donough built Thomond House on a hill behind Dromoland. Thomond House is today the home of our head of clan, Sir Conor Myles O'Brien 18th Baron Inchiquin.

Thomond House with Sir Conor O'Brien standing at the front door



The Dromoland branch of our family have a link to the first wife of King James II, Anne Hyde. Anne's sister was Lady Francis Hyde who married Thomas Keightley and their daughter, Catherine Keightley married Lucius O'Brien grandson of the famous Maire Rua of Leamaneh Castle. Lucius and Catherine did not reside at Leamaneh but took up residence at Corofin House. [776]



Dromoland O'Briens King James II (Duke of York) and wife Anne Hyde

Anne Hyde died in 1671 and the daughters of King James II and Anne Hyde became Queen Mary II of England, Scotland and Ireland (wife of William of Orange) and after Mary died in 1694 her sister Anne became Queen Anne I of Great Britain and Ireland.[777]

In 1707 Lucius O'Brien became a Member of Parliament for Clare. Lucius accumulated heavy debts of over £3,000 and despite numerous visits to the court, and even a private interview with the Queen, he was not able to secure the governorship of the Bahamas which he craved.

Lucius accidentally killed his friend Colonel Hickman, and was to be tried for it. The trial took place at the Old Bailey, in London, in September 1713, with a great crowd of his friends present and he was acquitted. "So much joy and satisfaction was shown in every face for the right that was done to Mr. O'Brien," wrote Thomas.

On the 1st August 1714, Queen Anne was dead at the age of forty-nine. With her died the hopes and aspirations of Lucius and Catherine. When the new king, George I arrived in England from Hanover, he brought his own retinue of attendants and favorites. It was obvious that Lucius' hopes of a job or a pension were dashed. [778]

In 1715 Lucius broke his arm and visited a bone setter, he made sure his own doctor from Ireland, Denis Hickie (the Hickey's were hereditary physicians of the O'Briens), was present. He was unable to pay the £20 he owed to the doctor.

On 1st July 1716 Lucius left Southampton without telling his family, taking Dr. Hickie, and sailed to Jersey. They moved on to St. Malo and travelled to Rennes in Brittany, and on to Nantes. They then travelled to Bordeaux. He discovered his mother's uncles, the Hamiltons were there together with Lord Mar. Afraid of being discovered they moved on via the river Loire and arrived in Paris in October. There they stayed in the Hotel d'Avignon on the Rue de Toumon, near Luxembourg House, and Lucius gave his name as Mr. James Osbourn. Feeling again that he might he discovered in so public a place, he and Dr. Hickie went to Versailles, "where he was taken with a mighty Melancholy which made him desire the Dr. to leave him alone, & come to Paris, which he did for

3 weeks.” To get over the depression he returned to Versailles, where, "being a lover of architecture and statuary, he amused him self about the Improvements & finery.”

He then became ill with a fever, together with gout and convulsions, and was rushed back to Paris, where French doctors and Dr. Hickie attended him. Convinced that he was going to die, he wrote a Will in the presence of Mr. Daniel Arthur, a banker, whose brothers he made Executors as they were friends of his in London.

His convulsions got worse, "and at last came to an ulcer in his Liver.” None of the doctors could save him, even though he was "under the care of Monsieur Chiracy who was the Regent’s fine physician, and Monsieur de Farcy who was the most famous old Practitioner in Paris.” He was given the last Sacrament by the Reverend S. Green, a clergyman in Paris, before his death at noon on Sunday 6th January 1717. He had been ill for nine weeks.

The difficulty then was where to bury him. As he was a Protestant, the Roman Catholic French would not allow him to have a Christian burial in a graveyard. In the end, as his friend, Jim Macnamara, described, he was "bury’d after a most despicable manner about 12 a’clock the ensueing night, being carry’d in a Dung Cart into a garden wherein the Swedish envoy has privilege to have his people interred." It is not possible to find the location of the Swedish property, as the civil papers relating to Paris and its suburbs were accidentally burnt. The French authorities immediately sealed up the room where Lucius had died, together with its contents. [779]

On 7th April, 1705, Catherine and Lucius' first son, Edward, was born. Edward O’Brien became the 2nd Baronet Dromoland on the death of his father Lucius in 1717. Edwards entered the Irish House of Commons in 1727, sitting for Clare, the same constituency his grandfather had also represented, until his death in 1765. [780]

Edward lived extravagantly and gambled heavily on horse races, destroying the wealth which his grandfather had so carefully built. When the last Earl of Thomond Henry O'Brien died, he left his large estates to William O'Brien, 4th Earl of Inchiquin, with remainder to Percy Wyndham. Murrough died and the reversion became effective.

When the Earl of Thomond was seeking an heir amongst his kinsmen, he could not select the Marshal of Thomond as he refused to turn Protestant. He did not choose Edward as his heir as he was living too extravagantly and thus left him out of his will. The fortunes of the Dromoland O'Briens would have been greatly enhanced had they inherited the Thomond estates. [781]

Edward O’Brien married Mary Hickman and they had a son named Lucius Henry O'Brien born in 1731. Lucius became the 4th baronet of Dromoland and was a politician for 34 years.

He was a man of quite different parts to his father, an intellectual, a Greek and Latin scholar and a brilliant politician. He entered S.C. at Trinity College, Dublin, on 9th. July 1748, at the age of sixteen. He became a B.A. Vernon in 1752. Joined the Irish bar in 1758, he was knighted and succeeded his father, as 3rd. Baronet of Dromoland in 1765, becoming a Privy councilor and M.P.

Lucius O'Brien married Anne French in 1768, they had seven children, three sons and four daughters. He was succeeded in the baronetcy as well as in the constituency of Ennis by his oldest son Edward. His grandson James FitzGerald (1818–1896) was a prominent politician in New Zealand. [782]

Sir Lucius O'Brien died (rumor has it as a result of a duel) in 1795.

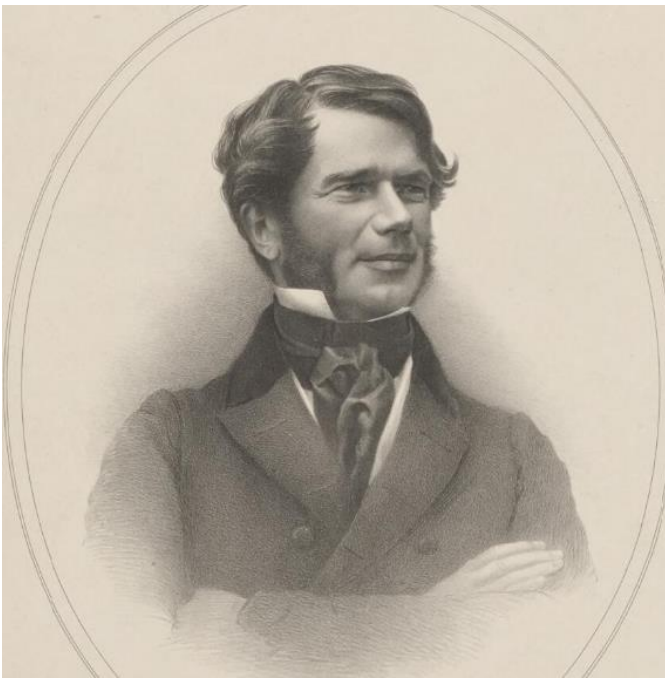
Edward O'Brien the son of Sir Lucius O'Brien and Anne French was born in 1773. He inherited Sir Lucius' baronetcy (becoming the 5th Baronet of Dromoland) and his seat in the Parliament of Ireland, representing Ennis from 1795 until the Union with Great Britain in 1801.

At the 1802 general election, Edward O'Brien was elected as one of the two Members of Parliament (MPs) for Clare. He was re-elected 5 times, holding the seat until the 1826 general election, which he did not contest.

He died on 13 March 1837 at age 63. He had married Charlotte Smith, daughter of William Smith, on 12 November 1799. Among their children were:

- Lucius O'Brien, 13th Baron Inchiquin, who also succeeded his father, becoming 5th Baronet Dromoland.
- William Smith O'Brien.

The second son of Edward O'Brien and Charlotte Smith was named William Smith O'Brien. He was born on 17th Oct 1803 at Dromoland, County Clare, Ireland and became an Irish nationalist. William was Protestant, he was educated at Harrow and Trinity College, Cambridge. [783]



William Smith O'Brien (1803-1864), painting by Henry O'Neil

Despite being the younger son of the Baronet Inchiquin, he was a political radical. His family were well established political conservatives and supporters of the Orange order. William Smith O'Brien was an MP; he represented the Irish borough of Ennis in the unreformed British parliament from 1828 to 1831 and Limerick from 1835 until his exclusion from the Commons in 1849.

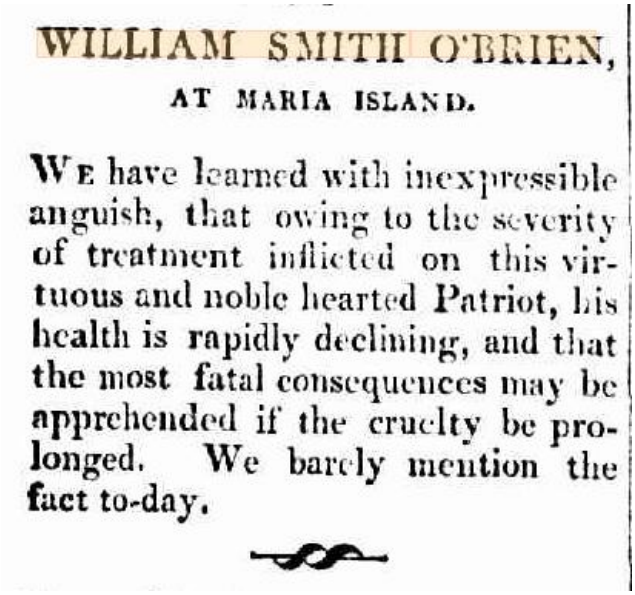
O'Brien joined Daniel O'Connell's Repeal movement in 1843, which sought to overturn the Act of Union. However, he did not think they were radical enough and he joined the revolutionary Young Irelanders in 1846 who were committed to Irish independence.

On 29th July 1848 William led an abortive uprising in Ballingarry, Co. Tipperary, otherwise known as 'the battle of Widow McCormack's Cabbage patch'. He was arrested on 6th August 1848 for his part in this "rebellion" and tried for high treason at a special sitting of the district court at Clonmel, Co. Tipperary. He was sentenced to death on 10th October 1848.

Following O'Brien's sentence, meetings were organised all over Ireland to get people to sign petitions pleading for clemency. The petitions highlighted that the jury in O'Brien's trial had recommended clemency but that plea had been ignored by the judge. The sentence was commuted to transportation for life; William Smith O'Brien sailed aboard the ship 'Swift' to Hobart Town, where he arrived on the 27th October 1849.

On arrival in Hobart Tasmania, William Smith O'Brien at first refused to give his parole (i.e. an undertaking not to escape) in return for a ticket-of-leave and was consequently denied the privileged treatment afforded to the other Young Ireland leaders.

He was sent to Darlington station in the penal settlement of Maria Island and held in solitary confinement at the maximum-security prison for the next nine months.



WILLIAM SMITH O'BRIEN,

AT MARIA ISLAND.

We have learned with inexpressible anguish, that owing to the severity of treatment inflicted on this virtuous and noble hearted Patriot, his health is rapidly declining, and that the most fatal consequences may be apprehended if the cruelty be prolonged. We barely mention the fact to-day.

Hobart Advocate
Saturday 26th January 1850

William Smith O'Brien, became a key figure in the fight to end convict transportation to Australia. Whilst in solitary confinement at the maximum-security prison on Maria Island off the Tasmanian coast, he became a 19th century version of a "Nelson Mandela figure." [784]



Maria Island Tasmania prison accommodation

THE EXILED PATRIOTS—GREAT POPULAR DEMONSTRATION IN LIMERICK IN FAVOUR OF MR. WM. SMITH O'BRIEN.

(*From the Limerick Reporter and Tipperary Vindicator.*)

By far the most respectable and numerous meeting of the citizens of Limerick held for many years in the Court-house of the city, took place on yesterday, at two o'clock, to denounce the cruelty practised towards Mr. Smith O'Brien in the penal settlement of Maria Island, and to devise the best means of causing a cessation of his sufferings. Every class of the citizens, and some of the most distinguished of the gentry from the surrounding rural districts were present on this occasion, all evidently filled with the sincerest sympathy for the unmerited penalties imposed on the noble and generous-hearted.

Demonstration for the release of W. S. O'Brien People's Advocate. Saturday 26th October 1850

While in exile on Maria Island and afterwards at New Norfolk in Tasmania ,William Smith O'Brien wrote a book titled "Principles of Government" in 2 vols. Published in 1855 O'Brien drafted the ideal democratic constitution, echoing the 'Chartist agenda' - a political reform movement from Britain that was the first mass movement driven by the working classes. It grew following the failure of the 1832 Reform Act to extend the vote beyond those owning property. [785]

The name ‘Chartist’ comes from the 1838 People's Charter drawn up for the London Working Men's Association which included the following six demands:

- All men to have the vote (universal manhood suffrage)
- Voting should take place by secret ballot
- Parliamentary elections every year, not once every five years
- Constituencies should be of equal size
- Members of parliament should be paid
- The property qualification for becoming a member of parliament should be abolished

Australia is often called a Chartists’ democracy because when Responsible Government was implemented in the late 1850s, many of the key six points of the Chartists’ demands for working-class political participation had been realised in Victoria and New South Wales parliaments - well in advance of the UK which had to wait until 1872 for the secret ballot and 1914 for universal manhood suffrage.

According to historian Dr Tony Moore "The things that O’Brien stood for, legitimated through the global campaign for O'Brien's release, were gradually enacted in Victoria, New South Wales and Tasmania from the late 1850s,"

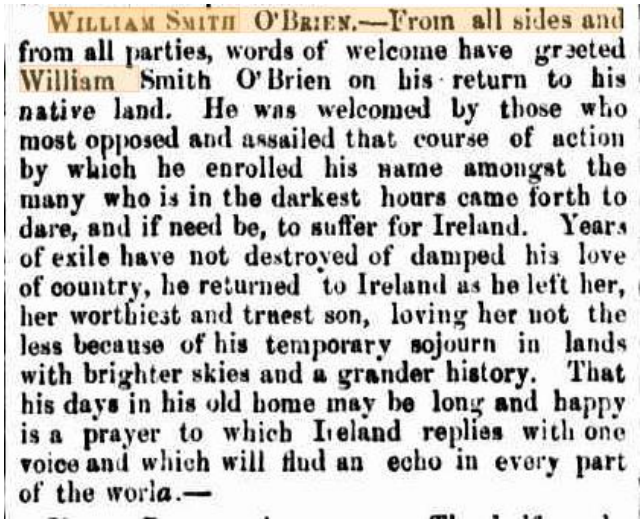
Nine months later, after an unsuccessful attempt to escape to the United States in an American whaler, he was transferred to Port Arthur, where he was allowed to live in his own cottage (now a youth hostel). From his prison cell, he emerged as a leading figure in the anti-transportation movement. [786]



Port Arthur home of William Smith O’Brien after leaving Maria Island.
Once used as a Youth Hostel.

In November 1850 he was finally persuaded to give an undertaking not to escape (i.e. Parole), and was granted a ticket-of-leave and settled first at New Norfolk in Tasmania and later at Avoca, where he acted as tutor to the children of a local doctor.

Four years later in 1854, William Smith O'Brien received a conditional pardon following which he sailed for Europe and journeyed to Brussels where he was joined by his wife Lucy (née Gabbett) and their five sons and two daughters.



WILLIAM SMITH O'BRIEN.—From all sides and from all parties, words of welcome have greeted William Smith O'Brien on his return to his native land. He was welcomed by those who most opposed and assailed that course of action by which he enrolled his name amongst the many who is in the darkest hours came forth to dare, and if need be, to suffer for Ireland. Years of exile have not destroyed of damped his love of country, he returned to Ireland as he left her, her worthiest and truest son, loving her not the less because of his temporary sojourn in lands with brighter skies and a grander history. That his days in his old home may be long and happy is a prayer to which Ireland replies with one voice and which will find an echo in every part of the world.—

Return of William Smith O'Brien to Ireland. Moreton Bay Courier Sat 15th Nov 1856

In May 1856, following the intercession of 140 British parliamentarians, William Smith O'Brien was granted a free pardon which allowed him to return to Ireland. In 1859 he paid a brief visit to New York and in 1863 to Poland. William Smith O'Brien died at Bangor, Wales, in 1864.[787]



Statue of William Smith O'Brien in O'Connell Street Dublin (photo 2018)

Dromoland art collection

Dromoland has a large collection of paintings as well as many of the documents that preserve our family history. When Dromoland was sold in 1962 many of the paintings owned by the O'Briens were left in situ inside the building. The current Baron of Inchiquin Sir Conor O'Brien has been in dispute with the owners of Dromoland Hotel to recover the originals, he has offered to replace them with copies.





Sir Lucius O'Brien 15th Baron of Inchiquin and his wife Ethel Jane





Donough O'Brien 16th Baron of Inchiquin and his wife Anne, daughter of the 1st Viscount Chelmsford Viceroy of India





Painting of Sir Conor O'Brien 18th Baron Inchiquin our clan leader (L) & a recent photo



Dromoland O'Brien family (taken in 1910).
Back Row L-R Griselda, Beryl, Donough (16th Baron), Phaedrig, Front Row L-R Fionn Helga, Ethel.

A NEW
WISDOM
at a new low price
IMPROVED QUALITY AND FEATURES
1/10
• Straight line head works better. Angled handle for brush control.
• Wide-spaced tufts work on every tooth.
• Look here — a "pin-up" hole in the handle.
WISDOM
MADE BY Addis BEST SINCE 1780
AD. 103

A MONARCHY FOR OULD IRELAND?

SPRIGHTLY, handsome Donough Edward Foster O'Brien, 16th Baron of Inchiquin, genuine descendant of Ireland's greatest king, Brian Boru, is taking in boarders at his castle in County Clare.

But if the newly-formed Irish Royalist group have their way, Donough will one day be ruling the Emerald Isle.

From PAMELA KITCHENER in London

'King' O'Brien is their bhoy





LORD INCHIQUIN
He takes boarders . . .

AT a secret political meeting in London last month this group of prominent Irishmen decided to start a movement to restore the monarchy in Ireland.

The plotters are remaining anonymous for the moment, except for a debonair Galway-born businessman, 34-year-old James Murray.

He has undertaken the first task the group set themselves, the nomination of a contestant for a seat in the Dail, the Dublin Parliament.

As soon as this orator gets an official voice, he will raise it on behalf of the Royalists and King O'Brien.

The group has strong American backing, and Donough's daughters—potential princesses Deirdre and Grania—are busy furthering the cause of Irish-American relations.

Deirdre, the eldest, is married to an American and lives in New York.

Blonde, blue-eyed Grania, 29 and unmarried, is secretary to the American Ambassador's wife in London.

'BEST PEOPLE'

Lady Inchiquin—the future Queen Anne—lectures in America on Irish family legends and gardening, when not expounding similar lore on leprechauns and Dark Kathleen to East End youth clubs in Britain.

Guests at Dromoland Castle are limited to 15 a week of "the very best people" and largely consist of Americans figuring in the social register.

For a token of 15 to 20 guineas they are regaled with life in true house party style—waited on by a clan of servants—with huntin', shootin' and fishin' every day and dancin' every night with fair colleens and brawny boyos for partners.

Lord Inchiquin himself, ex-Eton, Sandhurst and Oxford and ex-A.D.C. to the Viceroy of India—sometimes obliges on the drums.

For gay "King" O'Brien is a versatile son of Erin, and has kept the family finances trim by opening a Mayfair fur and gown shop, selling his Stradivarius violin and snipping 2,000 acres off the little piece of heaven that is his estate.

From King Brian Boru and Prince Murragh (who swapped his title for a British Tudor earldom), Lord Inchiquin inherits the right to dress his retainers in scarlet livery.

Hanging in the ancestral hall is an illuminated parchment roll some 18 feet long.

THE CLAN MET

According to legend, it grows to 33 feet on St. Patrick's Day.

This is the family pedigree, giving the details of an unbroken male line descent from the fourth century Irish King Niall, of the nine hostages, and King Brian Boru, who defeated the Danes at Clontarf in 1014, to the Honourable Phadrig Lucius Ambrose O'Brien, present son and heir.

The O'Briens have their own family historian, Master E. D. O'Brien, who formerly worked in the Conservative Central Office.

His book, "The History of the O'Briens," is a two-guinea illustrated classic.

In it he tells how one O'Brien in 1879 became President of the French republic—which is how the O'Brien coat of arms appears among the grandeurs of the Palace of Versailles.

For the wedding of beautiful Deirdre O'Brien, members of the clan in six countries, including a plane-load from America, arrived at the tiny church in Kilnasoolagh village.

The wedding was performed by an Irish bishop, and then everyone adjourned to the great banqueting hall two miles away for a kingly feast.

Among them were the Pobble O'Briens and the Carrigogullen O'Briens and the O'Briens of Ballyarden and Ballynafachan and Blatherwycke and Eachdroma and the Aran Island, and every man-jack, woman and child of the "fierce, fiery, fighting" O'Briens.

So large and lusty is this "royal" clan that a wit has remarked: "If all the O'Briens in the world were laid end to end—well, it would certainly please the O'Neills."

For the O'Neills and the O'Connors are others who have claims to the Irish crown.

When "Princess" Grania was asked whether she would like her family to take their rightful place among royalty, she replied: "I'm sure it would be the greatest fun.

"But I'm thinking it might be an awful wrench leaving my cosy little Mayfair flat for a fine, draughty palace."

Like all his ancestors, Lord Inchiquin was a soldier, and unlike them all he has no politics.

"But for old Ireland and the ancient kingdom I would be willing to consider it," he said.

IGY IS NO CIRCUS

—Says the scientist on a bicycle

From JOHN MOSES in London

• A white-coated scientist looked up from his logarithm tables in London this week and said bitterly, "The International Geophysical Year is in danger of turning into a three-ring circus."

His angry comment summed up a feeling that is growing among British scientists . . .

That with Hillary and Fuchs publicly disagreeing in Antarctica, and the effect on public opinion of the Russian sputniks, the world is losing sight of the real aims of the International Geophysical Year.

The scientists feel that people are too readily overlooking the real success of the I.G.Y., the slow, steady, and unspectacular accumulation of new and important facts about the world we live in.



All over the world scientists of 64 nations are patiently observing, plotting and calculating.

In Czechoslovakia scientists are working 4,760 feet underground at the bottom of a disused mine to try to find out more about the "tides" which the moon creates in the earth's crust.

And Hillary and Fuchs have not been the first in recent times to face death in Polar blizzards.

In August a 29-year-old English professor and a 22-year-old Danish student died on a Greenland glacier only two miles from their camp.

They had been studying the movement of glaciers as part of the I.G.Y. program.

The I.G.Y. is now six months old—there are 12 more to go—and already scientists have amassed enough new information about cosmic rays, the world's oceans and the world's weather to keep them busy for years.

Already they are upsetting old theories and working out new ones.

This, some of them feel, is what is being overlooked, although, in the long run, it will be vastly more important than arguments about Hillary's dash for the Pole and the military implications of the sputniks.

den 200,000 miles in the past 50 years, and one of the sights of the elegant Royal Society soirees is his arrival by bicycle in full evening dress.

Chapman is known to his students as "Popeye" because of his strong physical resemblance to that character.

Born of poor parents, Chapman left school at 14, and intending to become an engineer, went to a part-time technical college for two years.

A scholarship then took him to Manchester and Cambridge universities, and before his student days were over he accepted a post at the Greenwich Observatory.

So brilliant was his reputation, even then, that the Astronomer Royal himself travelled to Cambridge to persuade Chapman to take the post.

Astronomy led Chapman to the study of the atmosphere, the moon, and its influence on the earth's crust and to the study of the weather.

Until this week, too, the world has overlooked the man who is the presiding genius of the International Geophysical Year.

He is a modest, shy man, whose only notable eccentricity is his passion for cycling.

Mathematicians among his friends calculate that he has rid-



Dromoland O'Briens mentioned in The Sydney 'Sun Herald' 12th January 1958

Appendix 8 The descendants of Murrough 'the tanist' - The Stone Hall O'Briens

Another significant line of our O'Brien family were the O'Briens of Stone Hall in County Clare and later of Blatherwycke Hall in East Northamptonshire England. This is a branch of the Dromoland O'Brien and were descendants of Murrough O'Brien 'the tanist'.

The progenitor of this line was Henry O'Brien the youngest son of Sir Donough O'Brien 1st Baronette of Dromoland and his 2nd wife Elizabeth Deane. Henry was born in 1723 and married Susannah Stafford in 1743. Susannah was a co heiress of the Stafford property at Blatherwycke in East Northamptonshire.

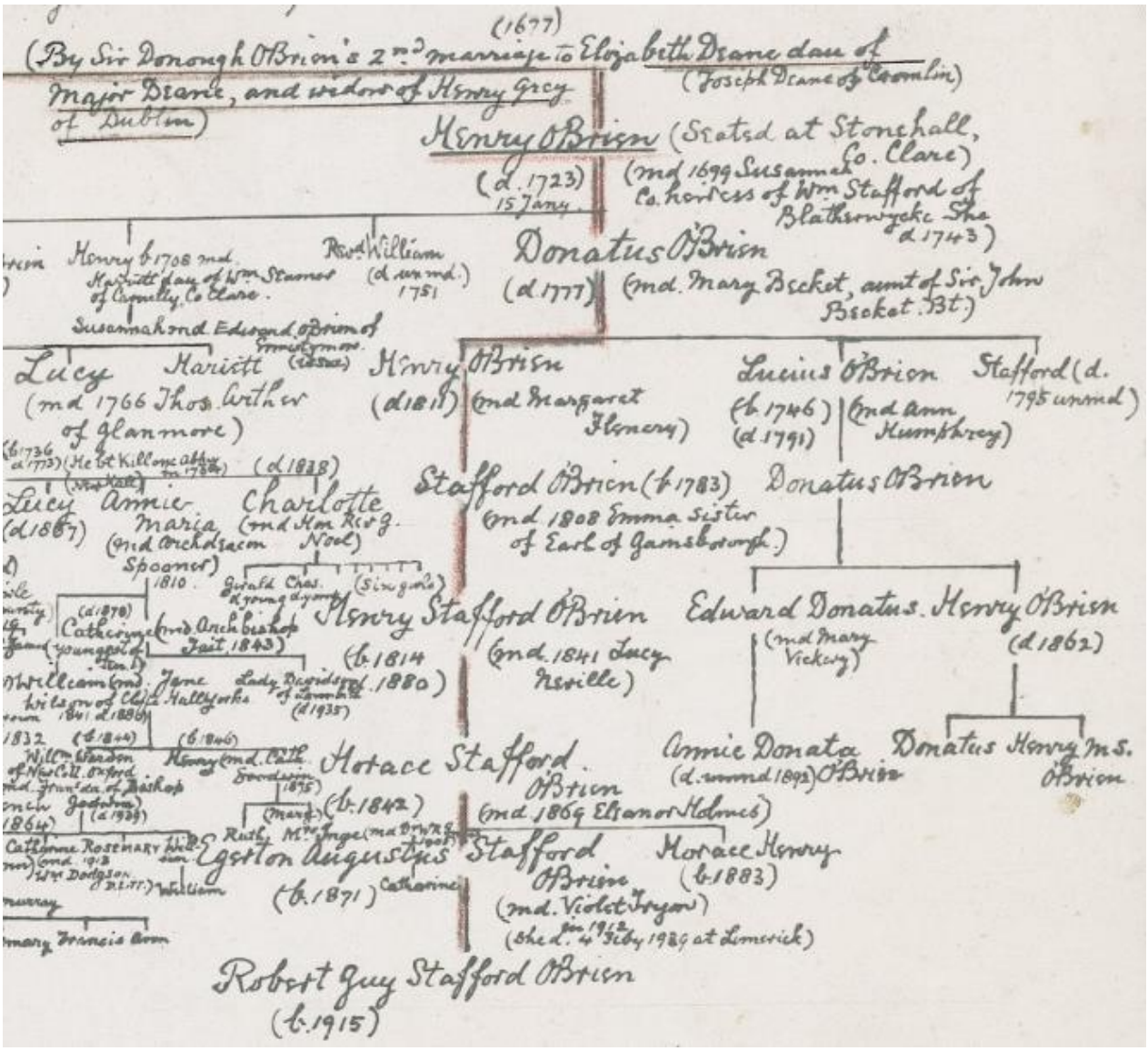


Chart drawn by Donough O'Brien of Dromoland (c. 1940) showing the O'Briens of Stone Hall



Stone Hall (now known as Cratloe Woods) located near Bunratty in County Clare



Blatherwycke Hall (demolished 1948)

Blatherwycke Hall was a splendid Georgian house was built in Northamptonshire during 1720-24, at a total cost of 3,838 pounds two shillings and sixpence.

The house was built for Henry O'Brien by Robert Wright of Castor near Peterborough. The design was by Thomas Ripley who had posts in the King's Works & who designed several notable houses.

During the Second World War, the building was used by the military & was badly damaged by them. It was subsequently put up for auction & was demolished in 1948 for the building materials to be re-used.

and Elizabeth, in 1679, who died unmarried in 1697. Henry the Son, was ſeated at Stone-Hall in the County of Clare, and married in 1699 Suſanna, Daughter and Coheir to William Stafford, of Blatherwick in Northamptonſhire, Eſq; and dying 15th January 1723, had Iſſue by her (who in September 1728 re-married with Arthur Geoghegan, of Caſtletown in Weſtmeath, Eſq; who aſſumed the Name of Stafford, and ſhe died in March 1743) four Sons and ſeven Daughters, viz.

Stafford, Stafford, who died young; Henry his Succeſſor, at Stone-Hall, born 1ſt March 1708, who 1ſt November 1730 married Margery, Daughter to William Stammer, of Carrownekelly, Eſq; and hath Iſſue one Daughter; Donogh, married and ſetled in Yorkſhire; Rev. William O Brien, of Blatherwick; Elizabeth, married to Mr John Rice, of the County of Kildare; Anne, the firſt Wife to Mr. Edward Butler, Attorney at Law, by whom ſhe had Francis and Jane; Suſanna, married firſt in June 1722 to James Rice, of Mount-Rice, Eſq; and by him, who died 2d Auguſt 1733, had two Sons, Stephen, born 4th January 1727 (who 16th October 1749 married Charity, eldeſt Daughter to Robert Borrowes, of Kildare, Eſq;) and James, born after his Deceaſe; and 8th January following, ſhe re-married with Auguſtine Jevers, Eſq; Catharine, married 10th June 1727, to Patrick French, Eſq; Counſellor at Law, who died in April 1748; Mary, Margaret, who died unmarried; and Frances, Wife to Hyacinth Darcy, of Ballycurſane in the County of Galway, Eſq.

Lucius O Brien, Eſq; Son of Sir Donough by the firſt Wife, married Catharine, only Daughter to Thomas Keightly, of Hartingfordbury in Hartfordſhire, Eſq (*b*); one of the L. J. of Ireland (by the Lady Frances Hyde, younger Daughter to Ed-

Burke's Peerage description of the Stone Hall O'Briens

Appendix 9 The families of Anabella Burke and Catherine de Burgh

Teige an Chomhaid O'Brien's wife was Anabella Burke. His mother was Catherine de Burgh and she and Anabella were related on their mother's side. Both of these women share a common line descending from the same Norman family who had invaded Ireland from 1169 onwards. We have some interesting ancestors amongst this family line, some are listed below starting with 'Strongbow'.

Richard FitzGilbert de Clare 2nd Earl of Pembroke, otherwise known as 'Strongbow' led a force of Normans that had been invited to Ireland by Dermot MacMurragh, the ousted King of Leinster, to aid Dermot in regaining his Kingdom. Dermot and the Normans seized Leinster within weeks and launched raids into neighbouring Kingdoms. This military intervention had the backing of King Henry II of England and was authorised by Pope Adrian IV.

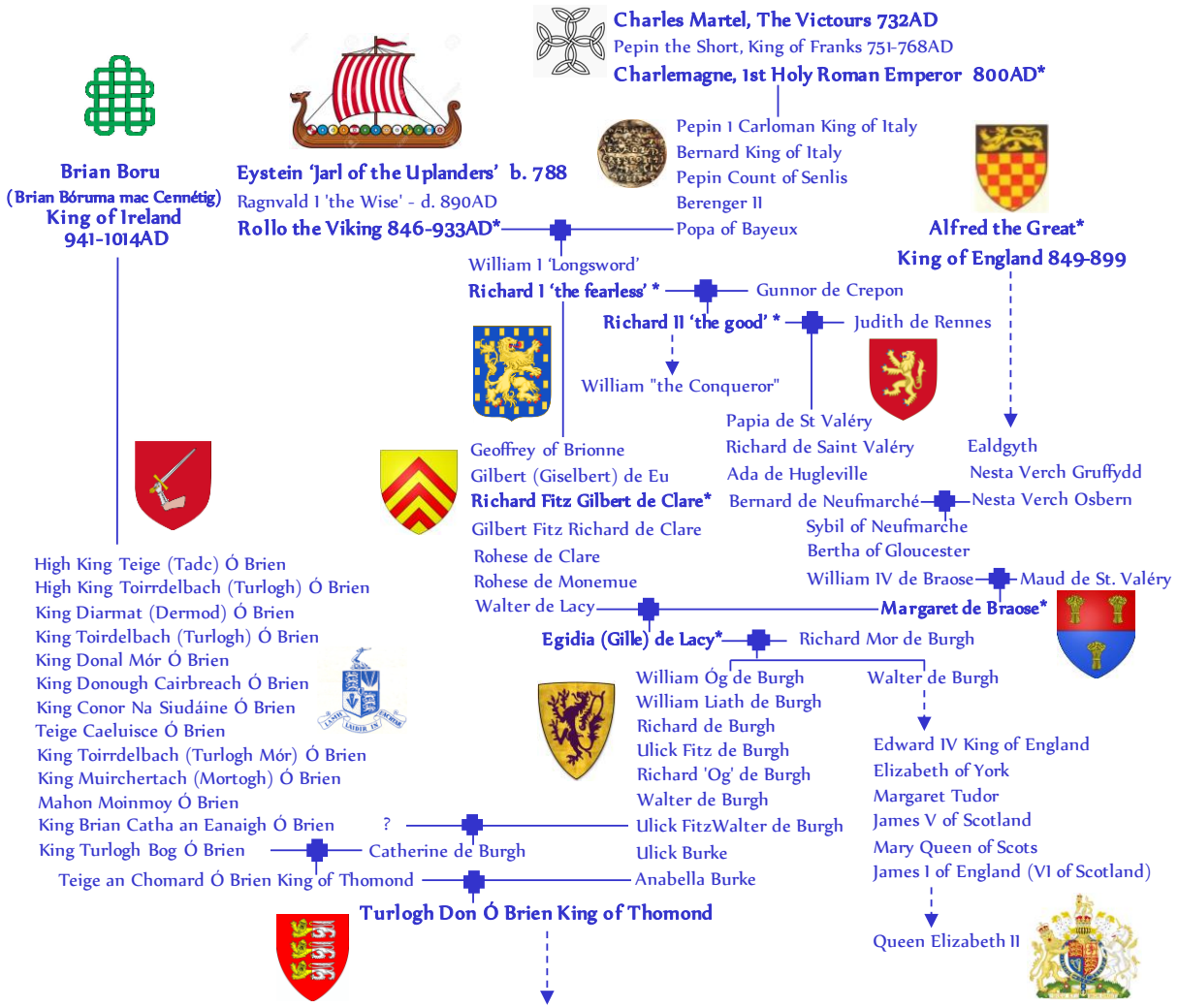
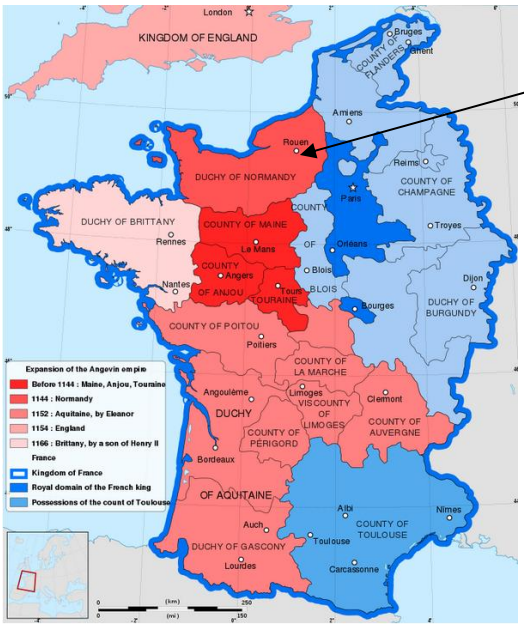


Chart showing some of the ancestry of Turlogh Don O'Brien King of Thomond

Richard de Clare (* in above chart) was a descendant of the Dukes of Normandie, his great grand father was Richard I (the fearless) 3rd Duke of Normandie. Richard I (* in above chart) was 14 when his father William 'long sword' 2nd Duke of Normandie died and King Louis IV of France placed Richard under arrest and seized his lands. In 946 Richard allied himself with Norman and Viking leaders in France and along with men sent by King Harold of Denmark a battle was fought after which Louis IV was captured. Hostages were taken and held until King Louis recognised Richard as Duke, returning Normandie to him.



Normandie (Normandy)

Map showing the Norman held provinces of France during the 1100s.

Richard the 3rd Duke's great grand son was William "the Conqueror" who invaded England in 1066 and defeated King Harold Godwinson at the Battle of Hastings, and subsequently became William I King of England. Some argue that William wasn't so much invading England but was claiming his royal inheritance promised to him by his cousin Edward "the Confessor." Nethertheless, from the time William's army crossed the channel from Normandie and replaced the old English aristocracy, England has been ruled by people of Scandinavian and European ancestry.

The story of Norman invasion of England is recorded in the Bayeux Tapestry, an embroidered cloth nearly 70 meters long and 50 centimeters tall. It depicts the events leading up to the Norman conquest of England concerning William, Duke of Normandy, and Harold, King of England, culminating in the Battle of Hastings. See excerpt below.



Bayeux Tapestry at the Musée de la Tapisserie de Bayeux in Bayeux, Normandy, France

The grand father of Richard I ‘the fearless’ 3rd Duke of Normandie was Gange Rolv better known as “Rollo the Viking.” Rollo (* in above chart) was born in Norway in 846AD and emerged as the outstanding personality among the Viking Norsemen who had secured a permanent foothold in the French valley of the lower Seine river. He was granted the title of 1st Duke of Normandie by King Charles ‘the Simple’ of West France in return for ending the Viking raids.

During the induction ceremony Rollo was to kiss the foot of King Charles but instead grabbed it and tossed Charles onto the floor. [788] Despite this Rollo was granted a coastal area of France he named Normandie (i.e. land of the Northmen after Norway) now known as Normandy.



Statue of Gange Rolv better known as Rollo “the Viking” at Alesund Norway

Rollo is first recorded as the leader of these Viking settlers in a charter of 918, and he continued to reign over the region of Normandie (Normandy) until at least 928. He was succeeded by his son, William ‘Longsword’ the 2nd Duke of Normandie in the Duchy of Normandy that he had founded and his offspring and his followers became known as the Normans. Rollo died sometime between 928 and 933.

Rollo’s wife Poppa of Bayeux was a descendant of Charlemagne (* in above chart) the 1st Holy Roman Emperor, the person largely responsible for establishing Christianity in Europe. Charlemagne also collected works of literature from Greece and the Roman Empire without which many of these documents would never have survived. His territorial divisions eventually became the countries we know today as France, Germany and Italy.

Charlemagne’s grand father was Charles Martel ‘The Victorious’ (also known as Charles ‘the Hammer’) who led the army that stopped the spread of Islam into France at the battle of Tours in 732. This battle was decisive and led to the domination of Europe by the Francs (French) over the following century.

A 2nd branch of Norman invaders joins our family tree with Margaret de Braose (* in above chart). This branch is a mixture of Welsh and old English monarchs stretching back possibly to Alfred “the great” King of Wessex from 871 to 899. Alfred* successfully defended his Kingdom against the Viking attempt at conquest, and by the time of his death had become the dominant ruler in England.

He is one of only two English monarchs to be given the epithet "the Great", the other being the Scandinavian Cnut “the Great.” He was also the first King of the West Saxons to style himself "King of the Anglo-Saxons.“



Statue of ‘Alfred the Great’
at Winchester

Alfred had a reputation as a learned and merciful man of a gracious and level-headed nature who encouraged education, proposing that primary education be taught in English rather than Latin, and improved his Kingdom's legal system, military structure and his people's quality of life. [789]

Alfred’s great great grandson was Æthelred II "the unready" King of England ordered what became known as the St. Brice's Day massacre of Danish Viking settlers in Nov 1002. In response King Sweyn Forkbeard of Denmark invaded England in 1013 resulting in Æthelred II fleeing to Normandy and was replaced by Sweyn as King of England. The following year Sweyn Forkbeard died and Æthelred returned as King of England for the next two years.

Æthelred's reign totaled 37 years and was the longest of any Anglo-Saxon King of England, and was only surpassed in the 13th century, by Henry III. Æthelred was briefly succeeded by his son, Edmund Ironside, but he died after a few months and was replaced by Sweyn's son, Canute (Cnut ‘the Great’). Another of his sons, Edward the Confessor, succeeded as King in 1042.

Margaret de Braose’s parents were William de Braose, 4th Lord of Bramber, a powerful Welsh Marcher Baron, and his wife Maude de St. Valéry. William and Maude were court favorites of John I King of England until Maud incurred the wrath and enmity of King John when she accused him of murdering his nephew ‘Arthur of Brittany’. John incarcerated Maude and her eldest son in the dungeon of Corfe Castle where they starved to death. Maude features in many Welsh myths and legends; and is also known as Matilda de Braose and Lady of La Haie.[790]

Through William de Braose we can trace one of our many lines back to the Dukes of Normandie. William’s ancestor was the 4th Duke Normandy, Richard II (* in above chart) ‘the good’.



Richard ‘the good’
4th Duke of Normandy
in the town square of Falaise in
Normandy, the birthplace of William ‘the
Conqueror’

Margaret de Braose’s daughter was Egidia de Lacy (also known as Gille de Lacy). Egidia was born at Trim Castle, County Meath, Ireland about 1205 and was one of at least six children. Egidia married Richard Mór de Burgh, 1st Baron of Connacht and their son William Óg de Burgh is our ancestor.



Trim castle in Co. Meath where Egidia de Lacy was born around 1205

Egidia had many notable descendants including Elizabeth de Burgh, Catherine Parr (who married King Henry VIII 6 days after the O’Brien ‘surrender and regrant’ in 1543), Margaret de Clare and the Earls of Ormond. She was the ancestor of both Anne Boleyn and King Henry VIII of England, the parents of Elizabeth I as well as David II, James V, Mary I, and James VI of Scotland. In fact Egidia was the ancestor of virtually all the Kings and Queens of England from Edward IV to Elizabeth II. She was also the ancestor of Sarah Ferguson who married Queen Elizabeth II's second son Prince Andrew, Duke of York.

Egidia de Lacy is also the ancestor of Irish artist Augustus Nicholas Burke, member of the Royal Hibernian Academy (RHA). Augustus painted one of the most identifiable paintings in Ireland, ‘Connemara Girl’. It depicts a young, barefoot goat-herder girl carrying a bundle near the shore. It hangs in the National Gallery of Ireland.



Connemara Girl

By Augustus Joseph Nicholas Burke
(1838 – 1891)

(National Gallery of Ireland 2018)

Appendix 10 The family of Lady Catherine FitzGerald wife of the 1st Viscount Clare

The wife of Sir Daniel O'Brien and the mother of our ancestor Teige O'Brien was Lady Catherine FitzGerald. Catherine was the third daughter of Gerald FitzGerald 15th Earl of Desmond and his wife Eleanor Butler. She was born about 1580 and most likely grew up at Glin Castle County Limerick. Catherine firstly married Maurice Roche, 6th Viscount Roche of Fermoy, but shortly after their marriage he died. Catherine's 2nd marriage was to our ancestor Sir Daniel O'Brien.

Catherine brings some interesting historical figures to our ancestry, I'll cover just a few starting with William 'the Conqueror'.

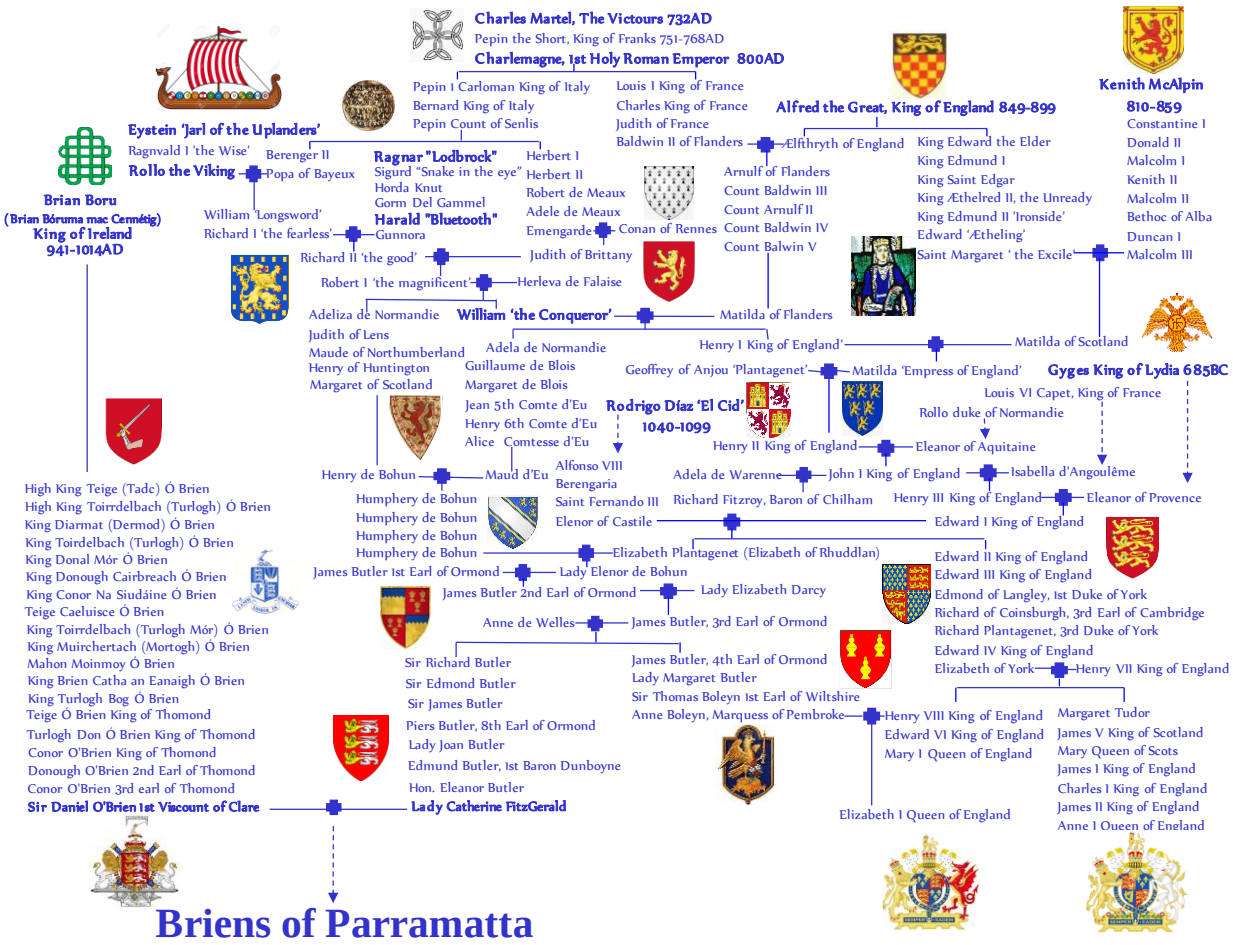


Chart showing some of our ancestry including 'William the Conqueror'

William 'the Conqueror' was born in 1027 at Falaise Castle, in Normandy, France. He was the illegitimate son of Robert I, 6th Duke de Normandie and Herleva de Falaise. He married Matihilde van Vlaanderen, in 1053 at Cathedral of Notre Dame d'Eu, Normandy, France.

In 1051 William was promised the throne of England by his distant cousin King Edward the Confessor, but when Edward died in January 1066 instead the crown went to Harold Godwinson who became King Harold II (Harold is also our ancestor).

William assembled an army and in September 1066 sailed across the English Channel and fought and defeated King Harold's army at the battle of Hastings on the 14th October 1066. William was crowned King of England and Normandy on Christmas Day 1066.[791]



William the Conqueror b. 1027 d. 1087

William transformed the English landscape with his ambitious castle-building program, castle building in England was very primitive before the arrival of the Normans. He also replaced much of the English aristocracy and Church with his fellow Norman's and other Frenchmen. In 1086 William commissioned Domesday, the most famous land survey in England's history. The reason for the survey remains a mystery but it gave him detailed information on England's land and resources. On its completion in August 1086, William summoned his noblemen and had them swear an oath of fealty. [792]

In 1087 William was injured after falling from his horse during a battle in France and died on the 9th Sep 1087 and is buried at St Etienne Abbey in Caen, Normandy. We are descended from William's son Henry I 'Beauclerc', King of England.

The daughter of Henry I 'Beauclerc', King of England and 'Matilda of Scotland' was **Matilda 'the Empress' of England**. Matilda born in 1102 was the elder sister of William 'the Aetheling', 10th Duke of Normandy who was the legitimate heir to the English throne. William died in the "White Ship" tragedy 25th November 1120 leaving England facing a potential succession crisis.

When Matilda's 1st husband, Roman Emperor Henry V, died in 1125 Matilda was summoned to Normandy by her father King Henry I, who arranged for her to marry Geoffrey of Anjou who had been nominated by her father (Henry I) to be his successor.

This decision was not popular in Henry's court. Henry died in 1135 but Matilda and Geoffrey faced opposition from the Norman barons and were unable to pursue their claims. The throne was instead taken by Matilda's cousin Stephen of Blois, who enjoyed the backing of the English Church. Stephen took steps to solidify his new regime but faced threats both from neighboring powers and from opponents within his Kingdom.



Matilda 'the Empress' of England
b. 1102 d. 1167

In 1139 Matilda crossed from Normandy to England to take the Kingdom by force, supported by her half-brother, Robert of Gloucester, and her uncle, King David I of Scotland, while her husband Geoffrey focused on conquering Normandy. Matilda's forces captured Stephen at the Battle of Lincoln in 1141, but the Empress's attempt to be crowned at Westminster collapsed in the face of bitter opposition from the London crowds. As a result of this retreat, Matilda was never formally declared Queen of England, and was instead titled the 'Lady of the English' or 'the Empress' of England.

Matilda's brother Robert was captured following the 'Rout of Winchester' in 1141 and Matilda agreed to exchange him for Stephen. Matilda became trapped in Oxford Castle by Stephen's forces that winter and was forced to escape across the frozen River Isis at night to avoid capture. The war degenerated into a stalemate, with Matilda controlling much of the south-west of England, and Stephen the south-east and the Midlands. Large parts of the rest of the country were in the hands of local, independent barons.

Matilda returned to Normandy, now in the hands of her husband, in 1148, leaving her eldest son Henry 'Curtmantle' d'Anjou (our ancestor), to continue the campaign in England; he eventually succeeded to the throne as King Henry II in 1154.

Matilda settled her court near Rouen and for the rest of her life concerned herself with the administration of Normandy, acting on Henry's behalf when necessary. Particularly in the early years of her son's reign, she provided political advice and attempted to mediate during the Becket controversy. She worked extensively with the Church, founding Cistercian monasteries, and was known for her piety. She was buried under the high altar at Bec Abbey after her death in 1167.[793]

A legacy of Matilda was that she left her son **King Henry II** lands in continental Europe known as the "Angevin" empire. Henry II consolidated these lands but much of this was reversed during the reigns of his sons Richard and John through wars with King Phillip II of France.

Another ancestor of ours was Matilda's grandson '**Richard I**', **"Richard the Lionheart"** who was King of England from 6th July 1189 until his death in 1199. Richard was the third of five sons and became King upon the death of his father King Henry II. He was known as Richard Cœur de Lion or "Richard the Lionheart" because of his reputation as a great military leader and warrior.



Richard I being anointed during his coronation in Westminster Abbey, from a 13th-century chronicle

By the age of 16, Richard had taken command of his own army, putting down rebellions against his father in Poitou. Richard was a central Christian commander during the Third Crusade, leading the campaign after the departure of Philip II of France and scoring considerable victories against his Muslim counterpart, Saladin, although he did not retake Jerusalem from Saladin.



Statue of Richard I outside the Palace of Westminster, London

Richard I was seen as a pious hero by his subjects. He remains one of the few Kings of England remembered by his epithet, rather than regnal number, and is an enduring iconic figure both in England and in France.

At some time around the 16th century, tales of Robin Hood started to mention Robin as a contemporary and supporter of King Richard the Lionheart, Robin being driven to be an outlaw, during the misrule of Richard's "evil brother John" while Richard was away at the Third Crusade.



King 'Richard the Lionheart' marrying Robin Hood and Maid Marian on a plaque outside Nottingham Castle

The 'evil brother John' mentioned in Robin Hood stories was our ancestor **King John I**. John was Matilda's grandson and the youngest son of King Henry II. He became King of England after his elder brother Richard I (Richard the Lionheart) died in 1199.

John inherited a sophisticated system of administration in England, with a range of royal agents answering to the Royal Household: The Chancery kept written records and communications; the Treasury and the Exchequer dealt with income and expenditure respectively; and various judges were deployed to deliver justice around the Kingdom.

Like previous Kings, John managed a peripatetic court that traveled around the Kingdom, dealing with both local and national matters as he went. John was very active in the administration of England and was involved in every aspect of government. In part he was following in the tradition of Henry I and Henry II, but by the 13th century the volume of administrative work had greatly increased, which put much more pressure on a King who wished to rule in this style. [794]



Part of our family tree: 13th-century depiction of Henry II's children, left to right: William, Henry, Richard I, Matilda, Geoffrey, Eleanor, Joan and our **John I**

By the end of 1214 rebel barons in the north and east of England were organising resistance to this type of rule. King John I met the rebel leaders at Runnymede, near Windsor Castle, on 15th June 1215 and signed a peace agreement; it was later renamed Magna Carta, or "Great Charter." The charter went beyond simply addressing specific baronial complaints and formed a wider proposal for political reform.[795]



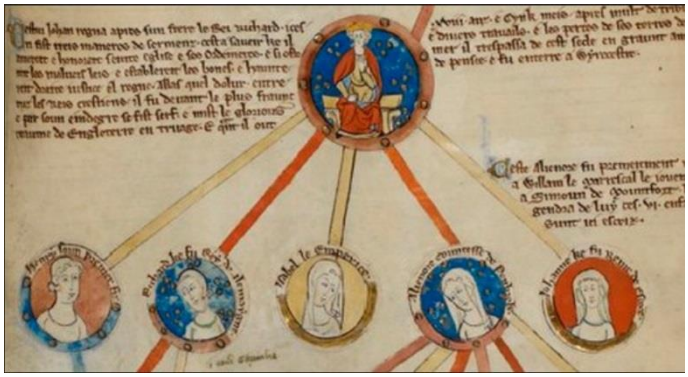
An original version of Magna Carta, signed by King John I and the barons in 1215

Not all went smoothly as Pope Innocent in Rome, with John's encouragement, deemed the Magna Carta as compromising the Pope's rights and declared the charter "not only shameful and demeaning, but illegal and unjust" and excommunicated the rebel barons who had signed. The failure of the agreement led rapidly to the first Barons' War which was still undecided at the time of King John's death in Oct 1216, and only finally resolved with the battles of Lincoln and Dover in 1217.



King John I who signed the Magna Carta in 1215

John's son who became **King Henry III** (our ancestor) was only nine years old when his father died so a Regent, William Marshal, was appointed. Marshal's administration used the Magna Carta as a basis for government and many of the principles within the charter are still relevant and form the basis of many of our laws today.



A 13th-century depiction of John and his children, (l to r) **Henry III**, Richard, Isabella, Eleanor, and Joan

Henry III continued attempts to reclaim Normandy and Anjou but previous losses and the consequent growth of French power proved to mark a "turning point in European history" and in 1259 Henry was forced to enact a peace with France and henceforth England's continental territories were considerably diminished.

Henry's rule was unpopular and in 1263 one of the more radical barons, Simon de Montfort, seized power, resulting in the Second Barons' War. Henry persuaded King Louis IX of France to support his cause and mobilised an army. The Battle of Lewes occurred in 1264, where Henry was defeated and taken prisoner. Henry's eldest son, Edward, escaped from captivity while being moved from one castle to another by tricking his captors into letting him ride the fastest horse they had, and then speeding off on it. Edward defeated de Montfort at the Battle of Evesham in 1265 and freed his father.

Henry initially enacted a harsh revenge on the remaining rebels but was persuaded by the Church to mollify his policies to maintain baronial and popular support.

Henry died in 1272, leaving our ancestor **Edward I 'Longshanks', King of England** as his successor. Henry III was buried in Westminster Abbey, which he had rebuilt in the second half of his reign and was moved to his current tomb in 1290. Some miracles were declared after his death but he was not canonised.



Effigy of King Henry III in
Westminster Abbey
b. 1239 d. 1307

Henry III's son was our ancestor **Edward I 'Longshanks', King of England** was King of England from 1272 to 1307. He spent much of his reign reforming royal administration and common law. Through an extensive legal inquiry, Edward investigated the tenure of various feudal liberties, while the law was reformed through a series of statutes regulating criminal and property law. Increasingly, however, Edward's attention was drawn towards military affairs.

Edward I was a tall man for his era, hence the nickname "Longshanks." He was temperamental, and this, along with his height, made him an intimidating man, and he often instilled fear in his contemporaries. Nevertheless, he held the respect of his subjects for the way he embodied the medieval ideal of Kingship, as a soldier, an administrator and a man of faith.

Edward I is credited with many accomplishments during his reign, including restoring royal authority after the reign of Henry III, establishing Parliament as a permanent institution and thereby also a functional system for raising taxes, and reforming the law through statutes. At the same time, he is also often criticised for other actions, such as his brutal conduct towards the Scots.

Edward died on the 6th July 1307 aged 68 of dysentery while encamped at Burgh by Sands, just south of the Scottish border. When his servants came the next morning to lift him up so that he could eat, he died in their arms. Edward I's body was brought south, and finally buried in Westminster Abbey on 27th October 1307.

King Edward I



We are descendants of Elizabeth the eighth and youngest daughter of King Edward I and Queen Eleanor of Castile. Elizabeth is also known as **Elizabeth of Rhuddlan**. On the 8th January 1297 Elizabeth was married to John I Count of Holland at Ipswich. In attendance at the marriage were Elizabeth's sister Margaret, her father, Edward I of England, her brother Edward, and Humphrey de Bohun.

Elizabeth's husband John died of dysentery in 1299, though there were rumors of his murder, no children had been born from the marriage. Elizabeth married for a 2nd time on 14th November 1302 to Humphrey de Bohun, 4th Earl of Hereford and 3rd Earl of Essex and also Constable of England. Their wedding was held at Westminster Abbey. We are descended from their eldest daughter **Lady Eleanor de Bohun.**

Eleanor was born at Knaresborough Castle in 1304. She married James Butler 1st Earl of Ormond in 1327. James was the son of Edmund Butler, Earl of Carrick and Lady Joan FitzGerald. Eleanor died in Ireland in 1363 and is thought to have been buried at St Mary Collegiate church in Gowran County Kilkenny where a stone effigy remains today.

Eleanor was our common ancestor to Catherine Parr, 6th wife of King Henry VIII of England. Her other descendants include the Dukes of Beaufort, Newcastle, Norfolk, Earls of Ormond, Desmond, Shrewsbury, Dorset, Rochester, Sandwich, Arundel, and Stafford.



Effigy of Lady Eleanor de Bohun at St Mary Collegiate church in Gowran County Kilkenny Ireland [796]

James Butler and Eleanor de Bohun had a son named James Butler, the 2nd Earl of Ormond. In 1325 King Edward III granted Grannagh Castle at Waterford to the Butlers and it remained in the family until it was surrendered to Cromwell in 1650.

Grannagh Castle dates to late 13th century and it is believed to have been built by the le Poers - later anglicised to Power - who were also our ancestors. They had been granted the whole of Waterford County and southern portion of Kilkenny County after the Norman invasion in 1169. But after they lost favour with Edward III, the King granted the castle to James Butler.

Grannagh Castle at Waterford Ireland



Grannagh Castle is situated on the northern bank of the river Suir close to Waterford city. On this site once stood Dun Bhrain, a Celtic Fort built in the early 1st Century. From this strategically located site a ferry linked Waterford to other medieval cities such as Kilkenny, Dublin and Limerick, and river borne traffic from Waterford to surrounding areas could be controlled.

Grannagh is a typical Norman style castle, with a courtyard enclosed by battlemented curtain walls and towers in each corner. There are three corner towers, each joined by a curtain wall. In the north-west corner is a large square keep, that may have been added in the 15th century.[797]

Local folklore tells that there was a tunnel from the castle under the river Suir over to the opposite shore. While designed to keep the fortifications supplied with food and water during a possible siege, it is believed that the Earls held court here, prisoners were thence held and condemned men were actually hanged in the tunnels.

James Butler, the 2nd Earl of Ormond married Elizabeth Darcy, daughter of Sir John Darcy, Knight of Knaith and Joan de Burgh. They had five children the eldest was **James Butler**, the 3rd Earl of Ormond who became a dominant political leader in Ireland in the late 1300s and early 1400s. James is our most recent common ancestor to Anne Boleyn, 2nd wife of King Henry VIII and mother of Queen Elizabeth I of England.[798]



James Butler, the 3rd Earl of Ormond

The Butler family (who changed their name from FitzWalter in 1185) arrived in Ireland with the Norman invasion. They originally settled in Gowran where James Butler, 3rd Earl of Ormond built Gowran Castle in 1385. The family had become wealthy and James bought Kilkenny Castle in 1391 from the Despencer family and established himself as ruler of the area. The Butler dynasty then ruled the surrounding area for centuries. Many of the family, including James, 3rd Earl of Ormonde are buried in St. Mary's Collegiate church Gowran.

Kilkenny Castle



Kilkenny castle was originally square-shaped, with towers at each corner of the walls. A distinctive group of castles evolved in Leinster known as 'Four towered' keeps. Only three of the original four towers survive today. Inside the walls were a hall, chapel and diverse wooden buildings.

Defensive features include a dry moat and a massive stone base batter on the surviving curtain walls which extended into the dry ditch. A classical gateway was inserted into the curtain wall towards the end of the 17th century. [799]

Among the many notable members of the Butler family was Lady Margaret Butler (c. 1454–1539) the Irish noblewoman, the daughter of Thomas Butler, 7th Earl of Ormond. Lady Margaret Butler was born in Kilkenny Castle. She married Sir William Boleyn and was the paternal grandmother of Anne Boleyn, second wife of King Henry VIII of England.

James Butler's GG Grandson was Piers Butler the 8th Earl of Ormond. Piers married Margaret FitzGerald (a descendant of Edward I) in 1485. He built Neigham Castle, near Gowran, Co. Kilkenny, c.1487.

Piers has an interesting connection with Henry VIII King of England. In Feb 1528 he was forced to give up Earldom of Ormond to his relation Thomas Boleyn (Anne Boleyn's father), after her star began to rise at the court of King Henry VIII and Henry fell for her. In return Piers was given the title 1st Earl of Ossory. After the fall of Anne Boleyn in 1536, Piers succeeded in regaining the Earldom of Ormond in 1538 and was always numbered as 8th Earl (Boleyn not counted).

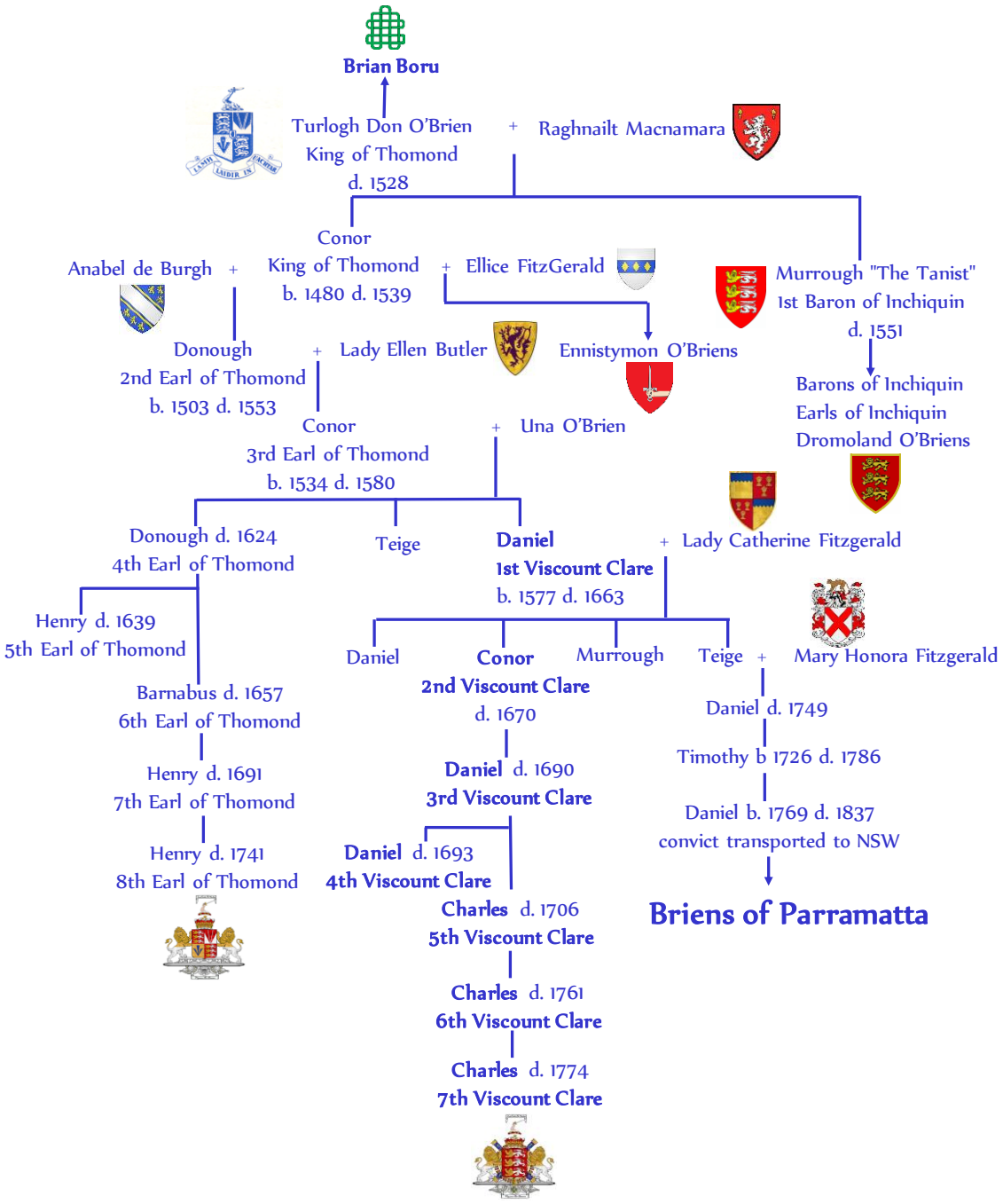
Piers Butler established the original Kilkenny College in 1538, one of Ireland's oldest surviving schools. He died in 1539 and is buried at St. Canice's Cathedral, Kilkenny, SE corner. His wife Margaret died in 1542 and was buried beside her husband and they share an impressive effigy. [800]

Effigies of Piers Butler 8th Earl of Ormond and Margaret FitzGerald



We are descendants of Piers Butler and Margaret FitzGerald's daughter Joan Butler who married James Butler the 10th Baron Dunboyne. Their daughter Eleanor Butler married Gerald FitzJames FitzGerald, 15th Earl of Desmond. Their daughter Lady Catherine FitzGerald married Sir Daniel O'Brien 1st Viscount Clare.[801]

Appendix 11 Line of the Viscount Clare in France after 1691



The line of the Viscount Clare

To continue with the Viscount Clare line: Daniel O'Brien the 3rd Viscount Clare (aka Lord Clare) was a Jacobite officer and commanded an infantry division at the battle of Boyne River. In 1689, when James II attempted to recover his lost thrones with Irish Catholic support, Lord Clare was made an Irish privy councilor and Lord lieutenant of County Clare. With the onset of hostilities in Ireland, he raised the Clare Dragoons, and formed two infantry regiments commanded by his sons.

The 3rd Viscount died on the 19th November 1690. Having been outlawed for high treason, his estate of 30,000 acres in Clare was confiscated after the war.[802]

His son Daniel (4th Viscount Clare) left Ireland for France on the 7th April 1690 having escorted King James II second wife, Marie Beatrice d'Este (Mary of Modena) to safety during the "Glorious Revolution." Daniel commanded a regiment in the French army and was killed in the battle of Marsaglia on the 4th October 1693 and was succeeded by his younger brother Daniel O'Brien as the 5th Viscount Clare.

Charles O'Brien the 5th Viscount Clare married Charlotte Bulkeley, daughter of Henry Bulkeley and Sophia Stuart, on 9th January 1696, at Saint-Germain-en-Laye, France. Henry Bulkeley was the "Master of the Household" for Kings Charles II and James II. On 2nd April 1703 he was promoted to brevet Brigadier of Infantry and in October 1704 rose to the brevet rank of Marshal-de-Camp.

Charles took part in the disastrous Battle of Ramillies on 23rd May 1706, where his Irish 'Clare Dragoons' distinguished themselves with great glory, but Charles was mortally wounded and died at Brussels, he is buried at Holy Cross Louvain in Belgium.

The song 'Flower of Finae' by Niamh Parsons refers to the Irish who left for France during the flight of the Wild Geese, and their subsequent involvement in the Battle of Ramillies. In the song the Irish commander "Lord Clare" is Charles O'Brien the 5th Viscount Clare. The reference to Ypres refers to the monastery where the O'Brien "Harp Flag" was kept until 1914. See Lyric:

Flower of Finae 1999

Bright red is the sun on the waves of Lough Sheehan
A cool gentle breeze from the mountain is stealing,
And fair around its islets the small ripples play
But fairer than all is the flower of Finae.

Her hair is like night and her eyes like grey morning,
She trips on the heather as if its touch scorning
Her heart and her lips are as mild as May Day,
She's Eileen MacMahon, the flower of Finae.

Fergus O'Farrell was true to his sire-land,
Till a dark hand of tyranny, it drove him from Ireland.
He's joined the brigade in the wars far away
And left his fond sweetheart, the flower of Finae.

He fought at Cremona, she heard of his story,
He fought at Casano, she's proud of his glory,
And yet she still sings Shule a Rune all the day
O come back my darling, come home to Finae.

Eight long years have passed till she's nigh
Brokenhearted her reel and her rock and her flax she has parted.
She sails with the wild geese to Flanders away
And leaves her fond parents to mourn in Finae.

On the slopes of La Judoigne the French men are flying
Lord Clare and his squadron the foe they're defying,
Outnumbered and wounded, retreated in array
And bleeding lies Fergus and thinks of Finae.

In the cloisters of Ypres, a banner is swaying
And by it a pale weeping maiden is praying,
That flag's the sole trophy of Ramilie's fray
This nun is poor Eileen, the flower of Finae. [803]





(L) Col. Charles O'Brien 5th Viscount Clare and (R) Lady Antoinette Charlotte O'Brien daughter of Charles O'Brien 6th Viscount Clare who became Marshal of France in 1757

The Viscount Clare line continued in France with Charles (6th Viscount Clare). Born 17th March 1699 Charles O'Brien was the son of Charles O'Brien, 5th Viscount Clare and Charlotte Bulkeley. Known as 'Lord Clare' he fought for France against Spain in 1718 with the rank of colonel in the service of his father's regiment.

According to 'The History of the O'Briens" Charles O'Brien 6th Viscount Clare paid a visit in 1715 to London and was introduced to King of Great Britain George I by his cousin Henry O'Brien the 8th Earl of Thomond. As Henry had no heir, the title of Earl of Thomond was offered to Charles

by King George I on proviso that he covert to the Anglian faith. Charles was interested but with those conditions imposed he refused to comply. [804] [805]

Sometime after his visit to London Charles was enrolled as a Captain in the French army and in 1719 formed a French army regiment in Spain.

Lord Clare's regiment was one of the most effective units in the army of France for over a century, reaching an unprecedented number comprising 10,000 soldiers. The reputation of Irish fighting men grew throughout Europe during the turbulent 18th century with the result that military commanders in many countries were not happy without an Irish regiment within their army.

The reputations of the Irish in battle also extended beyond Europe. Countless Irish men also fought and died during both the American Wars of Independence and the Civil War. It is often forgotten that it was an Irishman, John Sullivan, who actually instigated the American Revolution. His capture of the New Hampshire fort preceded the Battles of Lexington and Concord by over two months. [806]

Charles later fought in the War of the Polish Succession in the Siege of Philipsburg in June 1734, where he was wounded. He gained the rank of Maréchal de Camp in 1735 in the service of the French King's Armies. He also fought in the Battle of Dettingen in 1743 and in the Battle of Fontenoy in 1745.

Charles (6th Viscount) was invested as a Knight, L'Ordre du Saint-Esprit of France on 2nd February 1746 at the chapel of Versailles, Île-de-France, France. He held the office of Governor of Neuf-Brisach in Alsace and was Commander-in-Chief of the province of Languedoc. In 1757 he was made a Marshal of France. He died on 9 September 1761, aged 62, at Montpelier, France. Charles married Marie Genevieve Louise Gauthier, daughter of François Gauthier Marquis de Chiffreville, in 1755 and had three children. [807]



Irish Clare regiment serving France during the battle of Ramillies in Belgium 1706

(Courtesy of O'Brien clan foundation)

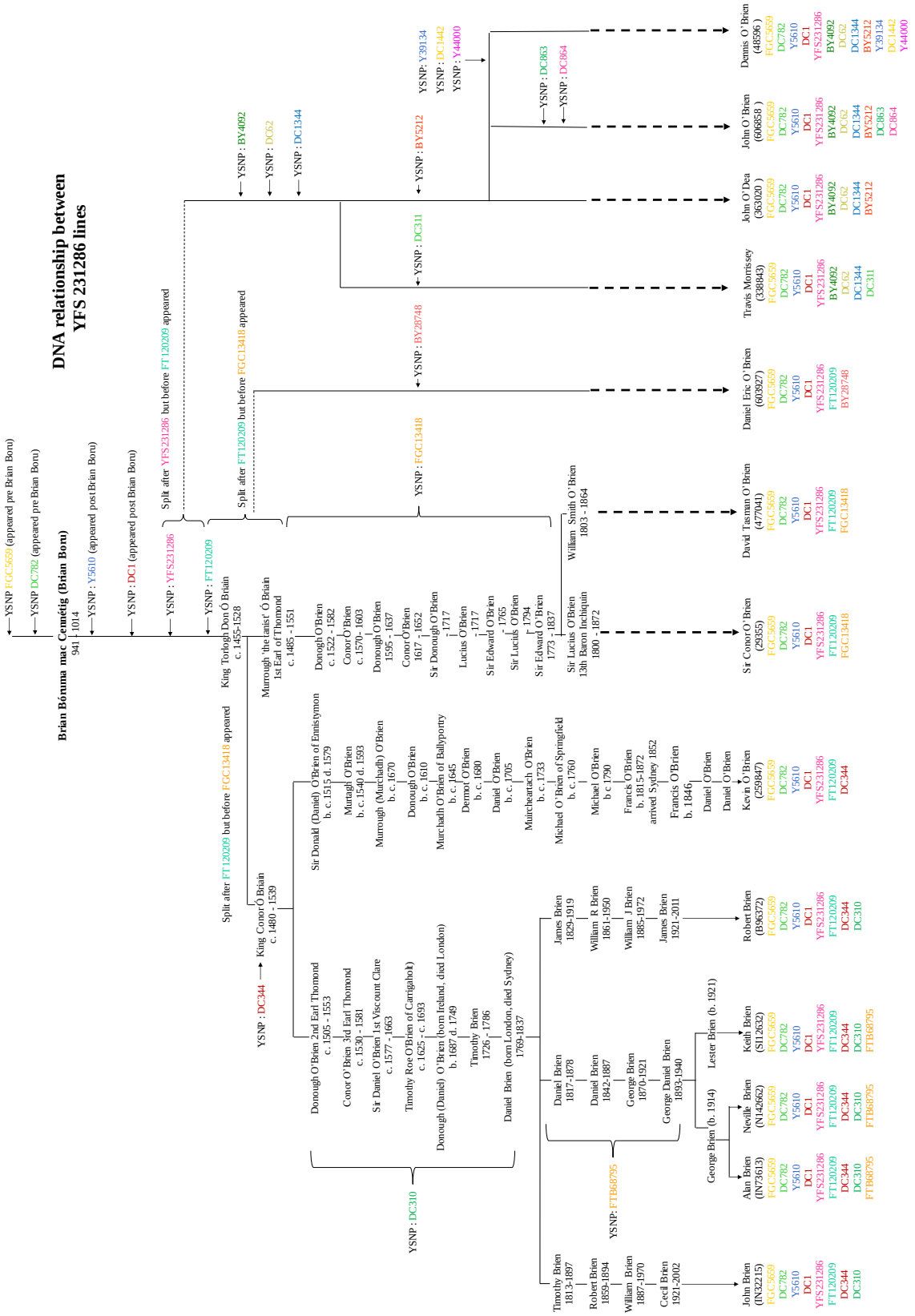
Charles O’Brien’s son, also Charles became the 7th Viscount Clare on the death of his father in 1761. He was born in 1757 in Paris France his mother was Marie Genevieve Louise Gauthier. Charles (7th Viscount Clare) died in 29th December 1774 aged 17 of natural causes without leaving any children.

The Clare line was believed to have ended with the death of Charles the 7th Viscount. However, through DNA matching we have established that the line of the Viscount Clare continued after 1774; as the Briens in Australia are also descendants of Sir Daniel O’Brien the 1st Viscount Clare, we therefore continue the line of the Viscount Clare.



Charles O’Brien the 7th Viscount Clare, lived in France and died in 1774 aged 17 without leaving any children. This painting hangs in the Musée de l'Armée in Paris.

Appendix 12 DNA relationship between the YFS231286 lines

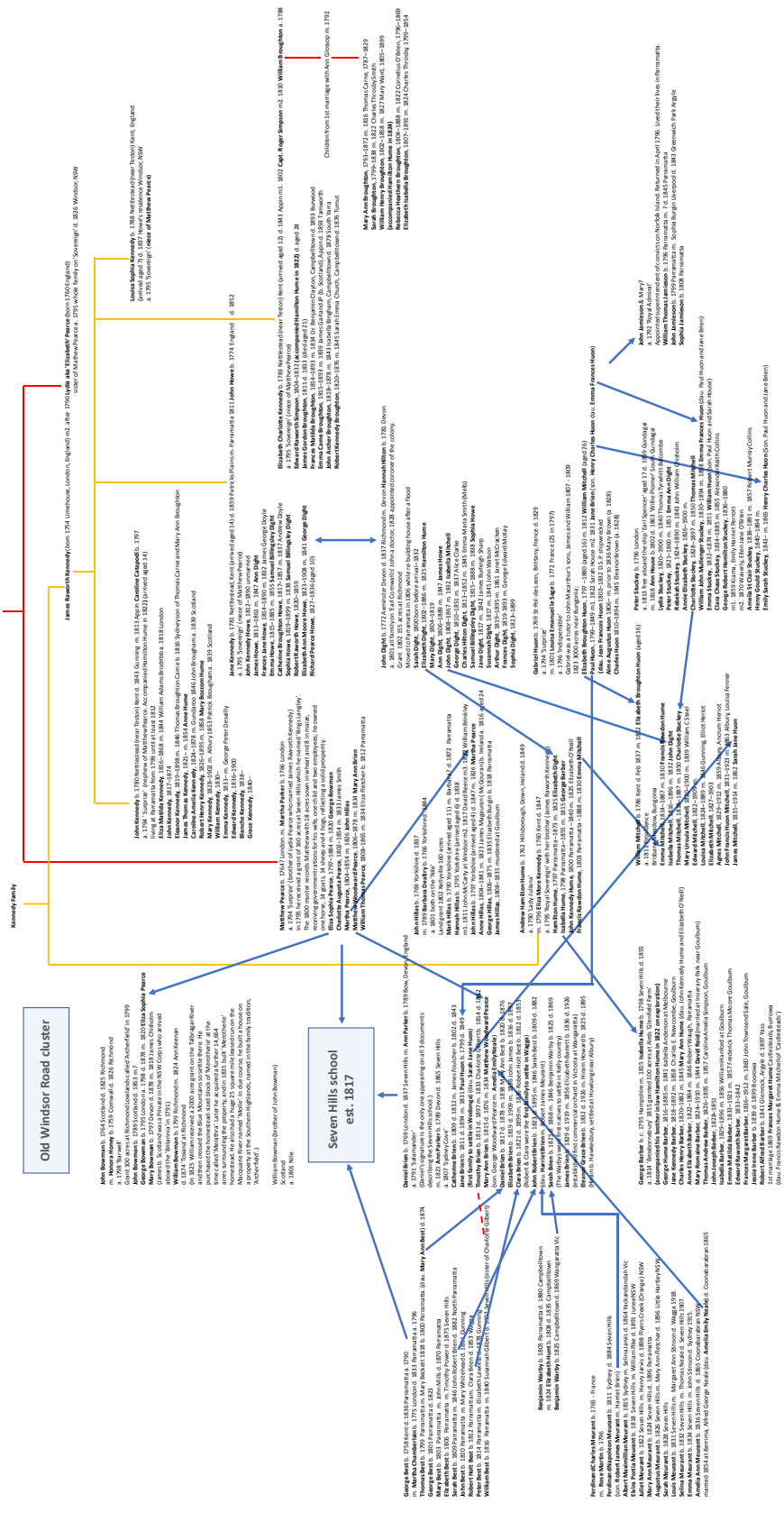


Appendix 13 Our ancestors who arrived in Australia from overseas

Name / Ship / Arrival date * indicates Convict

James Beckett* - “Surprize” 26th June 1790
Ann Calcut* - “Neptune” 28th June 1790
Daniel Brien* - “Salamander” 21st Aug 1791
George Best* - “William and Anne” 28 Aug 1791
Martha Chamberlain* - “Indispensable” 30th April 1796
Michael Ryan* - “Atlas 2” 2nd Oct 1802
John Hangan* - “Calcutta” and “Ocean” arrived Hobart 20th Feb 1804
Jane Johnstone - “Calcutta” and “Ocean” arrived Hobart 20th Feb 1804
Ann Parker* - “Sydney Cove” 8th June 1807
Elizabeth Moody* - “Sydney Cove” 8th June 1807
James Cook* - “Brampton” 1823
Bridget Cook - “Mariner” 1825
Rosina Smith* - “Mermaid” 15th Feb 1828
Patrick O’Keeffe - “Roslin Castle” 1836
Thomas Chapman - “Cornwall” 1839
Mary Ann Clout - “Cornwall” 1839
James Cornwell - “Lady Raffles” 1839
Johanna Dwyer - “Jane Gifford” 1841
George Chilvers - “James Gibb” 1849
Sarah Dixon - “James Gibb” 1849
William Farrell (aka Sparrow) - “James Gibb” 1849
Thomas Hammell - “Digby” 1849
Mary Cahill - “Digby” 1849
James Hickey - arrived Sydney 1863
Bridget Mary Beston - arrived Sydney 1863
Florence Annie Miller - "Abyssinia” 1887

Appendix 14 Old Windsor Road families



References

[1] Paraphrased from Cascading Over The Falls web site
[2] Irish Type 3 web site Dennis Wright
[3] Annals of the Four Masters
[4] Wikipedia, History of Ireland (1169–1536)
[5] A description given to me by Sir Conor O'Brien, Baron of Inchiquin
[6] The Dal Cais is one of the six tribes of Leth Mogha.
[7] Some of the genealogy is questionable
[8] Henry VIII, Derek Wilson 2015
[9] Irish antiquites Museum of Archeology
[10] Celtic to Irish migration scenario i.e. after the fall of the Roman Empire and during the expansion of "Anglo Saxon" tribes into Celtic territories in northwestern Europe displacing the native Celts.
[11] The YDNA marker for the Dál gCais is L226. There is mounting evidence that L226 may not have originated in Ireland but soon after this mutation the tribe carrying L226 probably moved to Ireland.
[12] Dál gCais or "The Dalcassians of Thomond" 2008
[13] A history of Ireland, Eleanor Hull 2009
[14] FTDNA Discovery. Y DNA for DC310 and K-YSC0000186
[15] Our Y DNA includes the marker K-YSC0000186 which is also shared with indigenous peoples of New Guinea, Australia, Bougainville and Solomon Islands. This marker evolved approx. 55,000 to 35,000 years ago
[16] Composite map generated from Gene by Gene Y DNA data base, displayed via FTDNA Discover Dec 2022
[17] Gene by Gene Y DNA data base displayed via FTDNA Discover. Y DNA marker K-YSC0000186
[18] A genomic history of Aboriginal Australia Malaspinas, A S; Westaway, M C; Muller, C; et.al. 2016
[19] Rasmus Nielsen, a professor with the University of California, Berkeley, USA and the University of Copenhagen, Denmark co-author of "A genomic history of Aboriginal Australia" published in Nature 21st September 2016
[20] When did modern humans get to Australia, Fran Dorey, updated 09/12/21
[21] Gene by Gene maintain a global Y chromosome data base and are world leaders on Y DNA sequencing
[22] Who we are and how we got here by David Reich, published by Oxford University Press 2018
[23] L226 Project group & Irish Type III, Dennis Wright
[24] Early Irish laws and institution Eoin MacNeill, 1934
[25] Wikipedia The derbfine (English: /dɛrɪˈviːnɪ/, Irish: dearbhfhine Irish pronunciation: [dʲaɾˠəˈvʲinʲi]
[26] O'Brien of Thomond, Ivar O'Brien 1986
[27] The Dalcassian Gaelic Social Structure, Patrick M. O'Shea
[28] History of Clare and the Dalcassian Clans, P. White 1893 P 159
[29] A cantred was a subdivision of a county in Anglo-Norman Ireland between the 13th and 15th centuries
[30] Rural Settlement in Medieval Ireland, Barry Terry 2000
[31] Irish Post, March 2018
[32] A Dictionary of Irish Mythology, Peter Ellis 1987
[33] A Folklore Survey of County Clare, Taylor & Francis
[34] Celtic Myth and Spirit, Patricia Monaghan 2004
[35] Megalithic Ireland web site
[36] The Adventures of the Sons of Eochaid Mugmedón, Mary Jones
[37] The History and Topography of the County of Clare, Frost 1866
[38] "Culture and Religion in Tudor Ireland, 1494–1558 Jefferies, Dr. Henry A. Sourced from Wikipedia 'Battle of Glenmama'
[39] Ó Corráin, p. 200
[40] Brian Boru and the Battle of Clontarf, Seán Duffy
[41] Ó Corráin, p 123
[42] This date is prior to the introduction of the Gregorian calendar in 1582, hence appears as an anomaly.
[43] Ó Corráin, p 123
[44] An Illustrated History of Ireland. www.libraryireland.com. Retrieved 10 March 2009. Cusack, Margaret Anne
[45] Battle of Glen Máma Wikipedia
[46] Tadg Mór Ua Cellaig and the Battle of Clontarf, Joseph Mannion
[47] McNamara Reagh web site
[48] A history of Ireland, Eleanor Hull 2009

[49] The story of an Irish sept : their character & struggle to maintain their lands in Clare' Nottidge Charles McNamara
[50] Visions of the past web site
[51] Voices of the Dawn web site
[52] Cycles of the Kings Web Project
[53] Historical memoir of the O'Briens John O'Donoghue (p. 40) states that Teige; son of Brian Boru was the elder brother of Donnchad. Seán Duffy of Trinity College, Dublin states Teige was the younger son so there is some conflict here
[54] Historical memoir of the O'Briens John O'Donoghue
[55] Historical memoir of the O'Briens John O'Donoghue (p. 40)
[56] History of the O'Briens, Donough O'Brien 1949
[57] Donnchad (d. 1064), Oxford Dictionary of National Biography, *Bracken*
[58] History of the O'Briens, Donough O'Brien 1949 p. 28
[59] Library Ireland
[60] The exact date is unclear but 1060 is used for continuity
[61] Some texts say this was Pope Urban II but the dates clearly align with Pope Alexander II
[62] According to The History of the O'Briens, Donough O'Brien 1949 Donnchad O'Brien received absolution
[63] History of the O'Briens, Donough O'Brien 1949
[64] Foras Feasa ar Éirinn Volume III, Geoffrey Keating
[65] The text says "Prince of Thomond" but the area was known as Munster until 1118
[66] History of the O'Briens, Donough O'Brien 1949
[67] Donnchad (d. 1064), Oxford Dictionary of National Biography, *Bracken*
[68] History of the O'Briens, Donough O'Brien 1949
[69] See Rome and die: the burial-place of Donnchad mac Briain. Seán Duffy lectures in medieval history at Trinity College, Dublin
[70] Santo Stefano Rotondo in a painting by Ettore Roesler Franz in the 19th century
[71] The usual spelling in Ireland is Connacht although the anglicised version Connaught is sometimes used
[72] Early Medieval Ireland, p. 278; Bracken. (Connacht pronounced "Con-et")
[73] Annals of Ulster, 1086
[74] The Medieval life of Gruffudd Ap Cynan. University of Wales Press
[75] The Welsh Academy Encyclopaedia of Wales
[76] Annals of Innisfallen
[77] The Vikings in Ireland 795–1014 Weapons and Warfare web site
[78] History of the O'Brien clan, Martin Breen
[79] Pye O'Malley, 2014
[80] Insular Manuscripts: Sixth to Ninth Century. London: Harvey Miller. 1978
[81] Sigurd was the first European king to personally participate in a crusade
[82] Annals of the Four Masters
[83] Førsund (2012)
[84] Magnus Barefoot's saga, chapter 18. Førsund
[85] Early Medieval Ireland, Ó Cróinín, D 2013
[86] Desmond: the early years, Jefferies, Henry A. 1983
[87] O'Brien of Thomond, Ivar O'Brien page xv introduction
[88] Annals of the Four Masters, ed. John O'Donovan, Dublin, 1856
[89] Medieval Ireland An Encyclopedia. Duffy, Sean. p. 58.
[90] Martyn, 2016
[91] Henry was also King of other places including Maine, Normandy, Aquitaine
[92] Wikipedia Marcher Lords
[93] A History of Ireland from Earliest Times to 1922, Curtis Edmund 2002
[94] Annals of the Four Masters
[95] Annals of the Four Masters
[96] Tipperary historical society web site.
[97] Ireland's Wars: Henry II's Expansion
[98] Giraldus Cambrensis, 1174
[99] Normans in Thomond, Joe Power
[100] History of the O'Briens, Donough O'Brien 1949
[101] Archdiocese of Cashel Website.

[102] Warren, p.36
[103] St Mary's Limerick web site 'History page'
[104] Holy Cross Abbey web site
[105] History of the O'Briens, Donough O'Brien 1949
[106] Holy Cross Abbey, Thomas Morris 1986
[107] Historical details of the first founding of the royal monastery of holy cross.
[108] From a web site describing the history of Holy Corss Abbey. The head gear does not match the period in which Donald Mor O'Brien lived. However this does not preclude it from being an effigy of Donald Mor. We know it was carved in a later period, and the artist may only have been familiar with head gear of the period he/she lived in.
[109] Killone Abbey, Robert O'Byrne
[110] The same Dermot that eloped with Derbforgaill and initiated the Norman invasion of Ireland
[111] History of the O'Briens, Donough O'Brien 1949
[112] History of the O'Briens, Donough O'Brien 1949
[113] History of the O'Briens, Donough O'Brien 1949
[114] Anglo-norman settlement in connacht in the thirteenth century, helen peros 1997
[115] The Anglo-French (Norman) Invasion web-site
[116] The Wild Geese web site, 2013
[117] The Annals of Ulster
[118] MacNamara Reagh web site
[119] The History and Topography of the County of Clare by James Frost 1866 Chapter 12
[120] History of the O'Briens, Donough O'Brien 1949
[121] The History and Topography of the County of Clare, Frost 1866
[122] History of the O'Briens, Donough O'Brien 1949
[123] The Battle of Dysert O'Dea and the Gaelic Resurgence in Thomond by Katharine Simms
[124] Annals of the Four Masters
[125] John Magrath, son of Rory Magrath, bard of Thomond
[126] General Ireton, 1650
[127] Historical Memoir of The O'Briens, John O'Donoghue 1860
[128] History of the O'Briens, Donough O'Brien 1949
[129] Ireland under the Normans Volume III, Goddard Henry 1920
[130] Annals of Innisfallen
[131] Princes of Ulster web site
[132] Wars of Turlogh, Edmond Curtis
[133] The Normans in Thomond, Joe Power
[134] Wars of Turlogh, Edmond Curtis
[135] Wars of Turlogh, Edmond Curtis
[136] The Battle of Dysert O'Dea and the Gaelic Resurgence in Thomond by Katharine Simms
[137] Wars of Turlogh, Edmond Curtis
[138] Wars of Turlogh, Edmond Curtis
[139] Thomas Johnson Westropp, Clare County Library
[140] Wars of Thomond - aughty.org
[141] Wars of Turlogh, Edmond Curtis
[142] Historical Memoir of The O'Briens, John O'Donoghue 1860
[143] Wars of Turlogh, Edmond Curtis
[144] History of the O'Briens, Donough O'Brien 1949 p40
[145] History of the O'Briens, Donough O'Brien 1949 p40
[146] The Normans in Thomond, Joe Power
[147] Turlogh Mór describes William de Burgh as his cousin, but there are insufficient records to determine if this relationship is paternal or maternal.
[148] The Battle of Dysert O'Dea and the Gaelic Resurgence in Thomond by Katharine Simms
[149] Wars of Turlogh, Edmond Curtis
[150] Wars of Turlogh, Edmond Curtis
[151] Wars of Turlogh, Edmond Curtis
[152] Wars of Turlogh, Edmond Curtis
[153] Annals of Inisfallen
[154] The Four Masters.

[155] The history of King Turlough's castles, The Corofin View 1982 p22-23.
[156] Wars of Turlogh, Edmond Curtis
[157] Wars of Turlogh, Edmond Curtis
[158] The Normans in Thomond, Joe Power
[159] John O'Hart,"Irish Pedigrees or the Origin and Stem of the Irish Nation", Volume 1, 1892, page 159
[160] The Irish landed gentry when Cromwell came to Ireland, John O'Hart p. 125
[161] O'Hart Pedigrees O'Brien (No.1) family genealogy
[162] Collectanea de rebus hibernicis, Volume 1
[163] Mac Carthaigh's Book CELT Project, University Collage Cork. MCB1311 A.D. 1311. "Donnchadh son of Toirdhealbhach son of Tadhg son of Conchobhar na Siúdaine [Ó Briain] was treacherously killed by Murchadh son of Mathghamhain son of Connachtach Ó Briain in Boireann."
[164] Wars of Turlogh, Edmond Curtis
[165] William Liath de Burgh, Ronan Makay, in Dictionary of Irish Biography
[166] The Great Famine of 1315–1317 Lucas, Henry S
[167] The Battle of Dysert O'Dea and the Gaelic Resurgence in Thomond, Katharine Simms
[168] The Bruce Invasions of Ireland, 1996
[169] A New History of Ireland, volume IX, Oxford, 1984
[170] William Liath de Burgh, Ronan Ma.k.ay, in Dictionary of Irish Biography
[171] Discover Ulster Scots web site
[172] The Geopolitics of Anglo-Irish Relations in the Twentieth Century, Geoffrey R. Sloan
[173] BBC series The Three Kings
[174] The Bruce Invasions of Ireland, 1996
[175] From the BBC "War of the three Kings"
[176] Wikipedia Edward II
[177] The Battle of Dysert O'Dea and the Gaelic Resurgence in Thomond, Katharine Simms
[178] The Battle of Dysert O'Dea and the Gaelic Resurgence in Thomond, Katharine Simms
[179] Wikipedia Edward II
[180] Annals of Clonmacnoise, Wikipedia article on the Battle of Faughart
[181] Historical Memoir of The O'Briens, John O'Donoghue 1860
[182] Wars of Turlogh, Edmond Curtis
[183] The History of King Turlough's Castle
[184] The History of King Turlough's Castle
[185] Ireland's Wars: Dysert O'Dea And the Native Resurgence, 2012
[186] A Folklore Survey of County Clare, Taylor & Francis
[187] Battle location and description provided by Clare library
[188] The Battle of Dysert O'Dea and the Gaelic Resurgence in Thomond, Katharine Simms
[189] This is about more than Novak Djokovic COVID and tennis, its about borders and sovereignty. Stan Grant 2022
[190] The Battle of Thomond Wikipedia
[191] Dictionary of Irish Biography O'Brien (Ó Briain), Muirchertach
[192] List of monarchs of Thomond Wikipedia and House of Brian Boru
[193] Quondam et Futurus; Cadwaladr. Also states that the association between Cadwaladr and the Red Dragon is a traditional one, without a firm historical provenance.
[194] Vikings, Neil Oliver 2015
[195] Politics and Legend in the Viking Age McGuigan, Neil March 2015
[196] Max Planck Institute for the Science of Human History Bubonic Plague research 2022
[197] The prime author of the statutes was Lionel of Antwerp, better known as the Duke of Clarence, and who was also the Earl of Ulster. Lionel was the 3rd son of King Edward III
[198] Paul MacCotter gives an extensive description of this period on his web site
[199] O'Briens of Thomond, Paul MacCotter, 2016
[200] Inchiquin Papers, Ainsworth
[201] Thomas Johnson Westropp, Clare County Library
[202] Thomas Johnson Westropp, Clare County Library
[203] Thomas Johnson Westropp, Clare County Library
[204] Inchiquin Papers, Ainsworth
[205] Clare County Library
[206] Historical Memoir of The O'Briens, John O'Donoghue 1860

[207] Richard II Wikipedia
[208] Historical Memoir of The O'Briens, John O'Donoghue 1860 p. 133-134
[209] Historical Memoir of The O'Briens, John O'Donoghue 1860 p. 138 - 141
[210] Historical Memoir of The O'Briens, John O'Donoghue 1860 p. 141
[211] Historical Memoir of The O'Briens, John O'Donoghue 1860 p. 142
[212] Historical Memoir of The O'Briens, John O'Donoghue 1860 p. 142
[213] Donough O'Brien was also the Bishop of Killaloe
[214] Wikipedia Tadhg an Chomhaid Ó Briain
[215] The Journal of the Royal Society of Antiquaries of Ireland, vol. 31, no. 4
[216] Library Ireland Alfred Webb 1862
[217] Mac-Firbis annals
[218] Wikipedia
[219] Leath Cuinn (Conn's Half) and Leath Moga (Mugh's half) are legendary ancient divisions of Ireland.
[220] Annals of the Four Masters
[221] Historical Memoir of The O'Briens, John O'Donoghue 1860
[222] Ordnance Survey Letters of Galway 210-212
[223] Wikipedia Gerald FitzGerald, 8th Earl of Kildare
[224] Historical Memoir of The O'Briens, John O'Donoghue 1860
[225] Sixteenth-Century Ireland, New Gill History of Ireland 2
[226] Robert M Chapple Knockdoe Hill
[227] Annals of Ulster
[228] http://www.geograph.org.uk/
[229] Sixteenth-Century Ireland, New Gill History of Ireland 2
[230] Sixteenth-Century Ireland, New Gill History of Ireland 2
[231] Ballyporty.ie web site
[232] Ballyportry Castle web site
[233] Historical Memoir of The O'Briens, John O'Donoghue 1860
[234] Irelands Eye web site – restored Irish castles
[235] Photo taken at Bunratty information center Co. Clare 2018
[236] Geni web site, Lady Ellen Fitzgerald
[237] Wars of the Roses Wikipedia
[238] Historical Memoir of The O'Briens, John O'Donoghue 1860
[239] O'Brien of Thomond, Ivar O'Brien, 1986
[240] Library of Ireland. Wikipedia names him incorrectly the 10th earl of Desmond
[241] There is a story that the dish 'French Toast' was invented by the Spaniards to feed Francis
[242] The History and Topography of the County of Clare, Frost 1866
[243] National Inventory of Architectural Heritage, Ireland
[244] The Dal Cais is one of the six tribes of Leth Mogha. There are a futher six tribes in Leth Cuinn
[245] Silken Thomas Fitzgerald, 10th Earl of Kildare", Webb Alfred
[246] Historical Memoir of The O'Briens, John O'Donoghue 1860
[247] The history of Clare and the Dalcassian Clans P. White 1893 p. 169
[248] Historical Memoir of The O'Briens, John O'Donoghue 1860
[249] Gerald had a younger brother, Edward
[250] The history of Clare and the Dalcassian Clans P. White 1893 p. 169
[251] Lives of illustrious and distinguished Irishmen, Wills, James
[252] Age of Atrocity: Violence and Political Conflict in Early Modern Ireland, David Edwards 2010
[253] Letters and Papers of the Reign of Henry VIII
[254] Age of Atrocity: Violence and Political Conflict in Early Modern Ireland, David Edwards 2010
[255] The History and Topography of the County of Clare, Frost 1866
[256] Historical Memoir of The O'Briens, John O'Donoghue 1860
[257] The History and Topography of the County of Clare, Frost 1866
[258] O'Brien of Thomond, Ivar O'Brien, 1986
[259] Statutes of Kilkenny Wikipedia
[260] Historical Memoir of The O'Briens, John O'Donoghue 1860
[261] These include the O'Brien History and Memoir as well as History of Co Clare, Frost.
[262] The Annals of Kilfenora or Ye Citie of the Crosses, Charles French Blake-Forster

[263] Historical Memoir of The O'Briens, John O'Donoghue 1860
[264] This doesn't add up as Donald was aged about 25 at the time
[265] History of the O'Briens, Donough O'Brien 1949
[266] Historical Memoir of The O'Briens, John O'Donoghue 1860
[267] Historical Memoir of The O'Briens, John O'Donoghue 1860 p. 183
[268] Historical Memoir of The O'Briens, John O'Donoghue 1860 p. 183
[269] Information from Sir Conor O'Brien to Neville Brien at their meeting in 2018
[270] Photo taken of painting hung at Dromoland Castle 2018
[271] "primogeniture, n.." OED Online. September 2019. Oxford University Press.
[272] Burke's Irish Family Records. London, U.K.: Burkes Peerage Ltd, 1976
[273] Historical Memoir of The O'Briens, John O'Donoghue 1860
[274] Murrough's other sons Dermot and Torlogh had died by this time
[275] The Mulvihill Voice Summer 2007 Issue Number Six
[276] Historical Memoir of The O'Briens, John O'Donoghue 1860 p. 188
[277] Historical Memoir of The O'Briens, John O'Donoghue 1860 p. 190
[278] Hy-Regan was the tribe name, of the O'Dunnes of Offaly.
https://sites.rootsweb.com/~irlkik/ihm/ireclans.htm#regan
[279] Historical Memoir of The O'Briens, John O'Donoghue 1860 p. 191
[280] Irish Dictionary of National Biography p.309
[281] Historical Memoir of The O'Briens, John O'Donoghue 1860 p. 191 & P. 193
[282] Historical Memoir of The O'Briens, John O'Donoghue 1860 p. 192
[283] The site was known as "Knockrughil" in the 1842 map.
[284] Historical Memoir of The O'Briens, John O'Donoghue 1860 p. 193
[285] Historical Memoir of The O'Briens, John O'Donoghue 1860 p. 196 & P. 197
[286] Historical Memoir of The O'Briens, John O'Donoghue 1860 p. 197
[287] History of Thomond. James Frost
[288] "Clare, Clere, and Clères" Keith Briggs, 2009
[289] Irish Dictionary of National Biography
[290] Historical Memoir of The O'Briens, John O'Donoghue 1860 p. 214
[291] "Barony of Ibrickane." Parliamentary Gazetteer of Ireland. 1845.
[292] "O'Brien, Donough (d.1624)." Dictionary of National Biography. London: Smith, Elder & Co.
[293] O'Brien of Thomond, Ivar O'Brien p. 34
[294] Ivar O'Brien in O'Brien of Thomond p34 lists this as Ibrickan Castle, Kilmurray which appears today to called Tromore.
[295] O'Brien of Thomond, Ivar O'Brien p. 34
[296] "Barony of Moyarta." Parliamentary Gazetteer of Ireland. 1845
[297] Spain 1474–1700:The Triumphs and Tribulations of Empire. Bristol: Heinemann. p. 286
[298] Making Ireland British 1580–1650, Nicholas Canny
[299] The Flight of The Earls, Dr John McCavitt
[300] History of the O'Briens, Donough O'Brien 1949
[301] Penn, William, Hannay David 1911
[302] According to O'Brien of Thomond 1986, p. 95 Ivar O'Brien Daniel O'Brien married Catherine the daughter of Gerald Fitzgerald the 14th earl of Desmond. This is at odds with The Peerage of Ireland John Lodge, 1789.
[303] The Inchiquin Papers state that Daniel had always been Catholic
[304] This is an example of our line not using the "O" in O'Brien
[305] According to O'Brien of Thomond 1986, p. 51 Ivar O'Brien, Daniel O'Brien was probably knighted in 1604 by Sir George Caret Lord Deputy of Ireland.
[306] The Irish story – Election day 1613
[307] Historical Memoir of The O'Briens, John O'Donoghue 1860
[308] History of the O'Briens, Donough O'Brien 1949
[309] "The Eleven Years War 1641–52 – A Brief Overview"
[310] Wikipedia Thomas Wentworth, 1st Earl of Strafford
[311] Wikipedia Thomas Wentworth, 1st Earl of Strafford
[312] Wikipedia Thomas Wentworth, 1st Earl of Strafford
[313] This Dermot was the son of Teige O'Brien who betrayed our ancestor Sir Daniel O'Brien at Tromore Castle
[314] This Daniel O'Brien of Dough Castle was Sheriff of County Clare in 1643

[315] Clare County Library web site. The History of County Clare, James Frost 1866
[316] The History of County Clare, James Frost 1866
[317] The History of County Clare, James Frost 1866
[318] An Irish term for an enclosure beside a castle in which crops are stored
[319] British Civil War Project web site, The Confederate War: Campaigns of 1641-2
[320] Irish Republican News 13 Aug 2016 Murrough of the Burnings and the massacre at Cashel
[321] British Civil War Project web site, The Battle of Knocknanuss
[322] British Civil War Project web site, King Charles I
[323] Wikipedia Charles I of England
[324] Wikipedia Cromwellian conquest of Ireland
[325] The History of County Clare, James Frost 1866
[326] British Civil War Project web site, Murrough O'Brien
[327] History of the O'Briens, Donough O'Brien 1949
[328] Rijks museum in Amsterdam
[329] Historical Memoir of The O'Briens, John O'Donoghue 1860
[330] British Heritage web site. The reign of Charles II and the Restoration
[331] 1666 Plague, War and Hellfire, Rebecca Rideal 2016
[332] 1666, Rebecca Rideal – diaries of Evelyn and Pepys
[333] Wikipedia
[334] The Irish Times 23rd April 2015
[335] Burkes Peerage, 1863
[336] Donough O'Brien in The history of the O'Brien is highly critical of O'Harts pedigree.
[337] The History and Topography of the County of Clare, Frost 1866
[338] O'Brien of Thomond. Ivar O'Brien 1986 p. 234
[339] John Kelly Co Clare web site http://johnkellycapelstreet.ie/
[340] Limerick Castles, Limerick library
[341] Burke's Irish Family Records. London, U.K.: Burkes Peerage Ltd, 1976
[342] Kew archives London UK
[343] Kew archives London UK
[344] The Second Siege and Treaty of Limerick (1691-1695) library Ireland
[345] This event inspired the traditional Irish song 'Siúil A Rún' written during this period. It appears on Peter Paul & May's album 'Moving' (1963) under the name 'Gone the rainbow'.
[346] Clare History: The Jacobite Era, 1685-1702, Clare library
[347] Historical Memoir of The O'Briens, John O'Donoghue 1860 p 353
[348] Burke's Peerages 1866
[349] Provided by Clare library to Neville Brien in 2015
[350] Fitzgerald v Peacock legal proceedings 1681/82 held in Limerick Ireland
[351] Four shillings in the Pound tax records and Papist records
[352] See Wikipedia entry for Matthew Bryan Jacobite minister who died in 1699
[353] Matthew Bryan Wikipedia
[354] Mary O'Bryan was interred with Matthew Bryan (no relation) minister of a Jacobite congregation meeting in St. Dunstan's Court, Fleet Street.London Dictionary of National Biography. London: Smith, Elder & Co. 1885–1900.
[355] St Dunstan in the West pepysdiary.com
[356] London Lives data base. The four shillings in the pound tax was collected in order to finance the wars fought by King William of Orange between 1689 and 1697. The records of this tax effectively provide us with a 'head of household' census of London in 1694.
[357] Irish Catholics and Their Networks in Eighteenth-Century London John Bergin 2015 University College Dublin
[358] Irish Catholics and Their Networks in Eighteenth-Century London John Bergin 2015 University College Dublin
[359] Burkes Peerage and Peerage on-line
[360] 1746 London map by John Rocque
[361] A photograph of the original survey document was provided to me by Sylvia Dibbs of the Catholic Family History Society in London. The document had some damage but was remarkably clear for its age.
[362] Britroyals
[363] Wikipedia Queen Anne
[364] Library Ireland The Pretender James III
[365] Irish Catholics and Their Networks in Eighteenth-Century London John Bergin 2015

[366] National library of Scotland, The 1715 Jacobite rising
[367] BBC History Extra web site 5 things you didn't know about the secret spying arm of the Post Office
[368] BBC History Extra web site 5 things you didn't know about the secret spying arm of the Post Office
[369] In 1715 Charles 6th Viscount Clare visited London and met with King George I. Burkes Peerage documents at the time recorded Dennis O'Brien's existance, so it is possible they crossed paths.
[370] Affidavit, London Metropolitan Archives, MJ/SP/1718/09/003
[371] London Lives search under Dennis O Brian
[372] Kew Archives Reference: SP 35/23/33
[373] Espionage, Diplomacy & the Lodge: Charles Delafaye and The Secret Department of the Post Office
[374] Kew Archives Folios 206-208 Reference: SP 35/61/99
[375] History of the O'Briens (1949) p. 91
[376] Kew Archives Folios 69-70 Reference: SP 35/66/135
[377] Kew Archives Folios 206-208 Reference: SP 35/61/99
[378] London Lives
[379] John Fitzgerald will of 1673 and Limerick legal proceedings Rice v Fitzgerald July 1682
[380] Four shillings in the pound tax records 1693-94
[381] This is mentioned in the Stepney Parish records 1734, so I assume it was a parish pension
[382] London Lives 1690-1800. Hitchcock and Shoemaker, 2015
[383] Age can vary, but those aged 40 and over were far more likely to receive a parish pension
[384] We know that Donough O'Bryan was born after the Limerick legal proceedings of 1682 as his parents were still unmarried in July 1682, and the time he left Ireland in 1694
[385] British History On Line Stepney: Churches
[386] A History of the County of Middlesex: Volume 2
[387] Wikipedia entry for Oliver Plunkett
[388] Moorfields Catholic transcripts CDs Vol 1 & Vol 2 2008
[389] London Lives October 1753
[390] St Mary Moorfields Catholic transcripts Vol 1, 2008
[391] History of St Mary Moorfields web site
[392] St Mary Moorfields Catholic transcripts Vol 1, 2008
[393] London Lives Marine Society records.
[394] From the "London Lives" data base
[395] Kew Archives
[396] Workhouses.org.uk
[397] Australian Royality web site
[398] Daniel Brien notes, William Cahill
[399] Female Convicts Research Centre. https://femaleconvicts.org.au/pre-transportation/british-justice-system-18th-and-19th-centuries
[400] Museums of History NSW. Unfortunatly since this web site was updated in 2023 most of the links are useless and data is far more difficult to find
[401] ABC web site, Jon Fearon, Thu 25 Jan 2018
[402] There is much contention regarding the exact number of convicts, soldiers and other people who arrived on the first fleet. Watkin Tench records 1,238 in total whilst Phillip King gives a greater number. Australia in the making. Orlando William Hunt reprint 1969 p. 18
[403] The British Grand Union flag dates from 1606 and consisted of the red cross of England superimposed on the white cross and blue field of Scotland. In the 18th century it was commonly known as The Union Jack as it was flown on the jack staff in the bows of war ships, hence this was its proper name
[404] Australia in the making. Orlando William Hunt reprint 1969 p. 17
[405] Australia in the making. Orlando William Hunt reprint 1969 p. 20
[406] Australia in the making. Orlando William Hunt reprint 1969 p. 30
[407] The Dictionary of Sydney, State Library of NSW
[408] The name of a book "The Grim Convict Armada", Michael Flynn 1993
[409] State Library of NSW, The convict experience
[410] State Library of NSW, Robert Jones, recollections of 13 years in Norfolk Island and Van Diemans Land
[411] Free Settler or Felon - Convict Ship Britannia 1797
[412] Australia in the making. Orlando William Hunt reprint 1969 p. 36
[413] Australia in the making. Orlando William Hunt reprint 1969 p. 35

[414] State Library of NSW, The convict experience
[415] State Library of NSW, The convict experience
[416] Hyde Park Barracks web site.
[417] Historic maps of NSW available at https://www.nswlrs.com.au/Parish-and-Historical-Maps
[418] Wikipedia 'The Sydney Gazette'
[419] TROVE https://trove.nla.gov.au/newspaper/?q=
[420] See Appendix 14 Investigation into the origin of the Australian accent
[421] Speaking our language – The story of Australian English. Bruce Moore p. 67 onwards 2008.
[422] Appendix 14 Investigation into the origin of the Australian accent
[423] Convict Daniel Brien and William Smith O'Brien were 4th cousins three times removed. Their most recent common ancestor was Conor O'Brien 3rd Earl of Thomond who in Daniel's case was 5 generations back, and 8 generations back in William's case
[424] New South Wales Parliament web site. www.parliament.nsw.gov.au/about/Pages/1856-to-1889-Responsible-Government-and-Colonial-.aspx
[425] Conviction Politics web page
[426] Australia in the making. Orlando William Hunt, reprint 1969
[427] National Gallery of Ireland
[428] Wikipedia 'The Shark' launched 1776
[429] NSW Art Gallery
[430] Wikipedia Arthur Phillip
[431] Pocket Oz Guide to Sydney
[432] Pocket Oz Guide to Sydney
[433] A complete account of the settlement at Port Jackson. Watkin Tench, 1788
[434] This appears on a family history web site on GENI, but I can't find the original record
[435] There is an anomaly here. In his will of 1832 Daniel Brien refers to the Vardys Road property being 10 acres in size, but all of the survey documents on which the property appears show it as 30 acres.
[436] convictrecords.com.au/convicts/parker/ann/71549
[437] Wikipedia
[438] John Macarthur and Garnham Blaxcell were both owners of Paramatta. Garnham Blaxcell was the original land grant holder of the area known today as Granville. Blaxcell Street was named after him
[439] Australia in the making. Orlando William Hunt reprint 1969 p. 49
[440] Australia in the making. Orlando William Hunt reprint 1969 p. 49
[441] We have other examples of this in our family history. Eg. The Hangans of Tasmania changed their name to Thomas to break a connection with their convict past.
[442] St John's Cathedral, Parramatta Wikipedia and https://stjohnscathedral.org.au/about/history/
[443] Daniel Brien notes, supplied by William Cahill who wrote a book about Daniel Brien and Ann Parker
[444] A complete account of the Settlement at Port Jackson, Watkin Tench, 1793 p. 67
[445] A Million Wild Acres. Eric Rolls p. 16
[446] A Million Wild Acres. Eric Rolls p. 21
[447] Photo from Dairy Breeds web site, google.co.za
[448] This story is consistantly told across a number of our family branches
[449] Australian Royalty - Ferdinand Charles Meurant, 1765–1844
[450] Office of Environment and Heritage
[451] Australian Royality web site
[452] Pastoral Review 16 May 1923 , pp 205-06
[453] As per letter from Richard Murray to Neville Brien dated 22nd Feb 2021
[454] Australian Royalty web site
[455] Courtesy Michael Brookhouse who photographed St Paul's Castle Hill in 2011
[456] Banaby is located near Taralga NSW. See NSW Land Registry map for Argyle County, Banaby Parish
[457] Appin Parish map and Macquarie's journals
[458] Photo and details from Michael J Barritt's Flikr page. Additional information from the State Library of NSW
[459] According to research by Colin Brien as per letter from Veronica to George Brien dated 28th July 1997
[460] Veronica was the wife of my uncle Colin Brien. She sent this article to me in 2010.
[461] Courtesy Michael Brookhouse who photographed St Paul's Castle Hill in 2011
[462] M.W. Best in WWA June 1, 1901 p.2 C8 & Dec 12, 1905
[463] GH & Gormly Exploration & Settlement p109f

[464] My Genealogy Home Page:Information about Robert Holt Best, Terry-J-Murray
[465] Accounting concepts in the construction of social status and privilege: a microhistorical study of an early Australian convict; Jayne Bisman Charles Sturt University, Australia 2007
[466] Australian Royalty entry for Ferdinand Charles Meurant, 1765–1844
[467] COBUNGRA STATION and other mountain stories 1985
[468] This story appears in lots of places including Cahill's book on Daniel Brien
[469] Photo provided by Jenny Callaghan which appears on the Wangaratta Family History Facebook page.
[470] Glenrowan, Victoria – The Heart Of Kelly Country
[471] There are numerous stories linking the Warbys and Ned Kelly, but these are difficult to substantiate
[472] Macquarie Uni Accent project has this story told on one of its recordings
[473] Pinterest. The story of Ann Jones, Ned Kelly and the Glenrowan Inn
[474] Campbelltown Council web site
[475] Campbelltown Council web site. Additional information from Lachlan Macquarie's journals titled: Journal of a Tour to the Cow Pastures and other parts of the Interior
[476] Australian Royalty. Elizabeth Barrett
[477] Wangaratta Threads. Family History Society Inc Edition No. 108, November 2016
[478] Wangaratta Heritage Study Volume 1, May 2004. C. & M.J. Doring Pty Ltd & Michele A. Summerton. Prepared for the Council of the Rural City of Wangaratta
[479] Tungamah and Lake Rowan Express Thu 15 Oct 1885 Page 2
[480] Wangaratta Threads. Family History Society Inc Edition No. 108, November 2016
[481] People of the river, Grace Karskens
[482] Wikipedia: Toongabbie Government Farm Archaeological Site
[483] History of Seven Hills, Jack Brook
[484] NSW Spatial Services
[485] Colonial Secretary papers dated 13th Jan 1824
[486] History of Seven Hills, Jack Brook
[487] Convict Records web site www.convictrecords.com.au
[488] State Records NSW, 4/322A, Clergy & Schools Lands Corporation, Letters Received
[489] Colonial Secretary's Papers 1788-1825. Note: Michael O'Brien's signature is hard to read. I cross checked with the Colonial Secretary's papers index and found his name listed in relation to this exact petition
[490] State Records NSW, 4/322A, Clergy & Schools Lands Corporation, Letters Received
[491] Accounting concepts in the construction of social status and privilege: a microhistorical study of an early Australian convict Jayne Bisman Charles Sturt University, Australia p. 9
[492] The Dictionary of Sydney
[493] The Dictionary of Sydney: https://dictionaryofsydney.org/index.php/entry/seven_hills
[494] Composite made up from sections of historical maps for the Prospect and St John parishes
[495] Census of New South Wales - November 1828 Edited by Malcolm R Sainty & Keith A Johnson.
[496] 1828 census return for Daniel Brien
[497] Census of New South Wales - November 1828 Edited by Malcolm R Sainty & Keith A Johnson.
[498] HRNSW Vol. 5 https://hawkesburyriver.com/the-history-of-the-hawkesbury-river/
[499] State Library New South Wales
[500] Macquarie journals 1811
[501] People of the river Grace Karskens
[502] Dictionary of Sydney
[503] This based on my own research in 2024, Neville Brien
[504] People of the river, Grace Karskens
[505] People of the river p. 326, Grace Karskens
[506] Parramatta the cradle of Australia P. 38, Frances Pollon 1983
[507] Parramatta history and heritage web site
[508] Parramatta history and heritage web site
[509] Australian Royalty web site entry for Daniel Brien b. 1842
[510] Papers provided by Win Sinden
[511] NSW Library
[512] City of Parramatta historical collection
[513] Parramatta History and Heritage web site
[514] Duck La mentioned in "St Patrick's Primary School Patter" 12th February 2015

[515] Western Sydney Library – Blacktown history
[516] Hornsby Advocate August 21, 2015
[517] The Old Great North Road Conservation Management Plan, March 2004
[518] The Old Great North Road Conservation Management Plan, March 2004
[519] Hornsby Advocate August 21, 2015
[520] Hornsby Advocate August 21, 2015
[521] Goulburn Post (NSW) Local news March 8 2017
[522] Accounting concepts in the construction of social status and privilege: a microhistorical study of an early Australian convict; Jayne Bisman Charles Sturt University, Australia 2007
[523] Toongabbie story Parramatta Historical Society
[524] A History of Australia Vol 1 1981, C. M. H Clark
[525] A microhistorical study of an early Australian convict, J. Bisman 2007
[526] A microhistorical study of an early Australian convict, J. Bisman 2007 and Colonial Secretary's papers
[527] Notice of departure The Sydney Gazette Thu 25 Dec 1823 Page 2
[528] Museums of History NSW, Land grants guide 1788-1856
[529] A microhistorical study of an early Australian convict, J. Bisman 2007
[530] A microhistorical study of an early Australian convict, J. Bisman 2007
[531] A microhistorical study of an early Australian convict, J. Bisman 2007
[532] History of Wagga Wagga 1989, Wagga historical society
[533] Accounting concepts in the construction of social status and privilege: a microhistorical study of an early Australian convict. Jayne Bisman Charles Sturt University, Australia 2007
[534] The Sydney Herald Thu 21 Mar 1833 P. 3
[535] Web site: John Macarthur (wool Pioneer) - Establishing His Flock of Sheep
[536] A Million Wild Acres, Eric Rolls p. 25
[537] Australia in the making. O. W. Hunt reprint 1969 p. 90
[538] Web site: John Macarthur (wool Pioneer) - Establishing His Flock of Sheep
[539] A Million Wild Acres, Eric Rolls p. 26
[540] A microhistorical study of an early Australian convict, Jayne Bisman 2007 Charles Sturt University P. 7. (Col Sec papers 1807) (Study of George Best)
[541] A microhistorical study of an early Australian convict, J. Bisman 2007
[542] Eric Rolls mentions the small breeders contribution to the grading-up of Australia's sheep flocks pre 1820 in A Million Wild Acres p. 27
[543] Wikipedia, John Macarther.
[544] Camden History notes https://camdenhistorynotes.com/2017/04/16/bella-vista-farm/
[545] "Who was on the new decimal banknotes?". Reserve Bank of Australia. Retrieved 15 April 2019 by Wikipedia
[546] Bigge report No. 3. Convicts were fed, clothed and housed only. Who said said slavery never happened in Australia?
[547] Various family documents Inc. Cahill's notes on the family of Daniel Brien
[548] Ecology of Pyrmont peninsula 1788 – 2008 John Broadbent
[549] Australian economic development in the nineteenth century, R. V. Jackson 1977 p. 12
[550] Power House Museum web site; Industrial Revolution in Australia – impact on the wool industry
[551] Australian economic development in the nineteenth century, R. V. Jackson 1977 p. 4
[552] Australian economic development in the nineteenth century, R. V. Jackson 1977 p. 7
[553] Australian economic development in the nineteenth century, R. V. Jackson 1977 p. 21
[554] Australian economic development in the nineteenth century, R. V. Jackson 1977 p. 133
[555] Attributed to J. W. McCarty Australian economic development in the nineteenth century, R. V. Jackson 1977 p. 5
[556] George Best (1854-1923) biography supplied by Blacktown City Council (Blacktown Memories web site)
[557] Blacktown Memories web site
[558] Airscape web site
[559] National Library of Australia
[560] 1788 The brutal truth of the First Fleet, D. Hill 2008
[561] Most of the information in this section came from an article by LJ Charleston 3rd December 2018
[562] The Dictionary of Sydney entry for the Neptune
[563] LJ Charleston 3rd December 2018
[564] Australia's tragic beginnings: The grotesque story of The Second fleet LJ Charleston
[565] The Grim Armada, Michael Flynn

[566] The Dictionary of Sydney entries for the Neptune and Surprize
[567] Australian Royalty entry for William Dean, 1774–1847. Also mentioned in 'Australia in the making' Orlando William Hunt 1967
[568] A complete account of the settlement at Port Jackson, Watkin Tench 1791
[569] AUSTRALASIAN HISTORICAL ARCHAEOLOGY, 26, 2008. New evidence for local manufacture of artefacts at Parramatta, 1790–1830, Robyn Stocks
[570] The Conversation, article from 61st edition of Griffith Review.
[571] An account of the English colony in New South Wales. Vol. 2. p. 27. Collins, David
[572] Parramatta convict hospital, NSW. Denise Donlon, Mary Casey, Wolfgang Haak and Christina Adler
[573] Parramatta History and Heritage web site
[574] Sydney art gallery web site dated to about 1812
[575] The Toongabble Story, Doris Sergeant 1991
[576] The Second Fleet – Britain's Grim Convict Armada of 1790 p. 158 Michael Flynn
[577] New South Wales Colonial Secretary's Papers 1788-1856 - "Particulars of Arms in Possession"
[578] The Toongabble Story, Doris Sergeant 1991
[579] Parish and Historical Maps, NSW Land Registry Services
[580] The Toongabble Story, Doris Sergeant 1991
[581] GENI Ann (Calcut) Beckett [Convict "Neptune" 1790]
[582] The Toongabble Story, Doris Sergeant 1991
[583] Will of Daniel Brien 27th December 1832
[584] Parramatta History and Heritage web site
[585] Pocket Oz Pocket guide to Sydney
[586] Museums of History NSW. Land grants guide, 1788-1856
[587] Convict Daniel Brien and William Smith O'Brien were 4th cousins three times removed. Their most recent common ancestor was Conor O'Brien 3rd Earl of Thomond who in Daniel's case was 5 generations back, and 8 generations back in William's case
[588] Australian Dictionary of Biography, Volume 2 , 1967
[589] Death or Liberty. Tony Moore 2010 p. 301
[590] Historian Dr Tony Moore
[591] Historian Dr Tony Moore
[592] Principles of Government, William Smith O'Brien. UK version published in 1855, American version published by Patrick Donahoe, Boston 1856
[593] The convicts who shaped Australian democracy as we know it ABC Radio National 2019
[594] Conviction politics: How convicts shaped Australian democracy web site https://lens.monash.edu/@politics-society/2019/09/03/1376101/conviction-politics-how-convicts-shaped-australian-democracy
[595] The convicts who shaped Australian democracy as we know it ABC Radio National 2019
[596] Conviction Politics web site
[597] The convicts who shaped Australian democracy as we know it ABC Radio National 2019
[598] Australian Royalty web site Daniel Brien born 23 Sep 1842
[599] The Meredith story, by Pat Meredith, Bankstown library NSW
[600] Catholic Rookwood Deceased Search web site
[601] Cumberland City Council - Heritage Inventory Sheet 2019
[602] https://www.geni.com/people/Michael-Ryan/6000000002334243778 Ryan family reference Managed by: Darren Charles Hawkins
[603] The Meredith story, by Pat Meredith, Bankstown library NSW
[604] Australian Police web site https://www.australianpolice.com.au/frederick-meredith/
[605] Green Left web site
[606] By the time of The Battle of Vinegar Hill in 1804 our ancestor George Best had left his job at the Toongabbie gonernment farm
[607] Vinegar Hill (Castle Hill) convict rebellion of 1804 Wikipedia
[608] Australia in the making. Orlando William Hunt, reprint 1969 P. 36. The rebels from the Vinegar Hill rebellion were the first to be sent to Newcastle in March 1804. Wikipedia entry for Newcastle.
[609] Green Left web site
[610] Ancestry convict notes 1823
[611] Ancestry

[612] Jenny Parrott, 'For the moral good?: the government scheme to unite convicts with their families 1818–1843', M Humanities thesis, UT, 1994.
[613] The Australian Star Friday 8th June 1894 - Page 3
[614] Cumberland Argus Saturday 21st April 1906
[615] The map shows the George Street steam tramway built in 1881, but also shows the "proposed gas works bridge" over the Parramatta river which was completed in 1885. So the map appears to have been produced between these dates.
[616] Vineyard story, A Strachan 1990
[617] Vineyard story, A Strachan 1990
[618] Riverstone Historical Society
[619] Remembering the Second Battle of Bullecourt. Australian Government Dept of Veterans' Affairs
[620] Ernest Edward Brien is buried at Cairns Cemetery Queensland, Australia in Plot Sect.: BES; Row: Y5; Site 9795. Cairns Council have him listed as Ernest O'Brien with the incorrect age of 77, he was 74 when he died.
[621] Graham Lum gave me this address, he was given it by his mother Annie Lum (Floyd).
[622] Charles was the son of Charles Henry Hill and Mary Jane Brien (Farrell). Anomalies include Mary Brien and Charles Hill's ages and marital status.
[623] Memories of Parramatta web site John Taylor, undated painting of Parramatta river.
[624] William Farrell's birth certificate says he was born 25th Jan 1846 under the name William Sparrow. Supplied by Yasmin Brennan.
[625] Wikipedia entry for Bathurst NSW
[626] The other path is via the Bel's line, a third via the Cox's river which cuts right through the Blue Mountains may have been possible, but now runs through the Warragamba dam water catchment area
[627] (Col Sec papers 1807)
[628] State Library of NSW. Significant individuals: Blaxland, Wentworth and Lawson
[629] A Million Wild Acres, Eric Rolls 1981 p. 41
[630] The mountains appear blue from a distance due to Eucalyptus oil droplets emitted from the forests combine with dust particles and water vapour, scattering short wavelength rays of light which are predominantly blue in colour. scenicworld.com.au/article/why-are-the-blue-mountains-blue
[631] The New Buckenham Chilvers web site: http://freepages.rootsweb.com/~chilvers/genealogy/Newbuckenham.htm
[632] The Australia Gold Rush Patrick Taylor (2005)
[633] The Australia Gold Rush Patrick Taylor (2005)
[634] Ballarat Educational Expierence web site
[635] The New Buckenham Chilvers web site: http://freepages.rootsweb.com/~chilvers/genealogy/Newbuckenham.htm
[636] Photo from New Buckenham Chilvers web site
[637] William Street, Bathurst, east side, looking south from Howick Street, Bathurst (collection of Mitchell Library, State Library of New South Wales)
[638] Mr Auchmuty, the Temporary Poor Law Inspector for the Castlerea Poor Law Union, 1849, Trevor McClaughlin, blog 2022
[639] Trevor McClaughlin, blog 2022
[640] Trevor McClaughlin, blog 2022
[641] Trevor McClaughlin, blog 2022
[642] Australia in the making. O. W. Hunt reprint 1969 p. 131
[643] Parragirls web site 2022
[644] Parragirls web site 2022
[645] Benevolent asylum description in Wikipedia
[646] Sydney Benevolent asylum website. Data base managed by Heather Garnsey & Martyn Killion
[647] See My Heritage DNA data base, Myself, my brother Alan Brien and our 1st cousin Keith Brien all match with other descendants of Mary Hanill
[648] This test was conducted by Ancestry DNA in 2021
[649] NSW art gallery web site, painted by Alfred Tischbaue
[650] Sands directory for Newtown 1877
[651] Benevolent Asylum records on-line
[652] Provided by Graham Lum
[653] Graham Lum remembers his mother Annie Floyd telling him her mum (Ethel Hammell) this story
[654] Flotilla Australia web site
[655] Newcastle Morning Herald Sat 12 Aug 1893 P. 7

[656] Newcastle Morning Herald Sat 12 Aug 1893 P. 7
[657] The History of Steam Boats on Paterson River, ABC radio broadcast Fri 16 Oct 2020
[658] Wikipedia East Maitland–Morpeth railway line
[659] Newcastle University – Living History photos
[660] The History of Steam Boats on Paterson River, ABC radio broadcast Fri 16 Oct 2020
[661] Hunter Steam Ship wharf taken from Pyrmont Bridge about 1920 by Graeme Andrews City of Sydney Archives
[662] The Maitland story from 'Flotilla Australia' and 'Australian Maratime Museum'
[663] Flotilla Australia web site
[664] Maitland and District Historical Society, Bulletin dated November 2014
[665] Glen Innes and Severn Shire Council honour roll
[666] Information provided by Graham Lum
[667] Ashkenazi Jewish DNA is easily identifiable, roughly 2% of my DNA is Ashkenazi, my brother & cousins have an even greater percentage
[668] The Jews of Ireland – from the earliest time to the year 1900, Luis Hyman 1972
[669] We know this from a Kiama news paper article dated 2nd November 1883
[670] Story told by Graham Lum
[671] An ad for the cottage appeared in the Cumberland Argus newspaper
[672] The idenity of the Southleigh property was confirmed by the Hills District Historical Society
[673] Part of a photo collection taken of the Castle Hill tramway
[674] Discussion with Graham Lum
[675] Copied from a book of Castle Hill historic houses at Castle Hill library
[676] Myself my brother Alan and 1st cousin Keith (on our father's side) all match closely with the Duggans of Tasmania, among others
[677] The names "Osborn" and "Cody" were mentioned in stories Sarah told about her childhood
[678] Electoral rolls available from the State Library in Sydney.
[679] Information came from Graham Lum
[680] NSW art gallery web site by Robert Johnson, 1927
[681] Provided by Graham Lum
[682] Information came from Graham Lum
[683] First Fleet Fellowship Victoria web site
[684] Martin / Ryan family trees on Ancestry.com
[685] John Hangan 1779 – 1826 Convict to Free Man, David Noakes
[686] Claim a Convict web site
[687] NSW art gallery web site. Hobart in 1832 by John Glover
[688] John Hangan 1779 – 1826 Convict to Free Man, David Noakes
[689] Martin / Ryan family trees on Ancestry.com
[690] John Hangan 1779 – 1826 Convict to Free Man, David Noakes
[691] John Hangan 1779 – 1826 Convict to Free Man, David Noakes
[692] Hanigan book pics grp 1
[693] Hanigan book pics grp 1
[694] Nowra Leader 20th May 1910
[695] Provided by Chris Duggan
[696] From My Heritage web site. Additional information from Winsome Duggan
[697] The Federation Drought from 1895 to 1903, Digital Classroom
[698] Note from Veronica Brien 1997
[699] Wikipedia
[700] Parramatta History and Heritage web site
[701] Parramatta History and Heritage web site
[702] Parramatta History and Heritage web site
[703] State Library of NSW
[704] Parramatta History and Heritage web site
[705] National Library of Australia
[706] William Ewart Hart - An Aviator's Life. YouTube
[707] Australian Dictionary of Biography, Volume 9 , 1983
[708] State Library of NSW
[709] William Ewart Hart - An Aviator's Life, Youtube

[710] National Library of Australia
[711] William Ewart Hart - An Aviator's Life. YouTube
[712] Airscape web site
[713] Letter from Veronica Brien 1997
[714] Letter from Phyllis McKeon to Colin Brien
[715] Australian Navy war records
[716] Supplied by Lester Brien
[717] Photos from The Battle for the Mediterranean web site
[718] Australian War Memorial HMAS Napier information
[719] Ransley Ballet and Dance web page
[720] Fairfax media image
[721] The story of the possum and the swing was told by Maisie Hickey to Neville Brien
[722] SMH April 1970
[723] William Hickey NSW Railway Loco Register Folio 1215 NSW Archives Employee No. 20467
[724] The Great Strike of 1917, Wikipedia
[725] The Dictionary of Sydney
[726] Pyrmont History Group, Australian General Strike, https://pyrmonthistory.net.au/australian-general-strike-1917
[727] The Great Strike of 1917, Wikipedia
[728] William Hickey NSW Railway Loco Register Folio 1215 NSW Archives Employee No. 20467
[729] From Sid Hammell's web site. Sid quotes the source as "Brian de Breffny, Irish Family Names: Arms, Origins and Localities, Gill & McMillan Ltd, Dublin, 1982, p.114"
[730] Merimbula Advocate
[731] "A history of Lismore." Lismore City Council. Fielding, Lloyd D
[732] This was Margaret's first marriage, her second was to Cornelius O'Brien
[733] Burke's Peerage 2003 volume 2, page 2034.
[734] soc.genealogy.medieval disscussion thread on Fitzgerald ancestry, 2013
[735] The O'Brien Genealogies (1762) web site
[736] Clare Library
[737] Perry McIntyre historian and genealogist, 2007.
[738] Cliffs of Moher tourist information
[739] History of the O'Briens, Donough O'Brien 1949
[740] Westminster Abbey burial register
[741] History of the O'Briens, Donough O'Brien 1949
[742] Historical Memoir of The O'Briens, John O'Donoghue 1860
[743] Dictionary of National Biography, Lee, Sidney 1903
[744] Historical Memoir of The O'Briens, John O'Donoghue 1860
[745] History of Thomond. James Frost
[746] "Clare, Clere, and Clères" Keith Briggs, 2009
[747] History of the O'Briens, Donough O'Brien 1949
[748] The OBriens of Dough and Ennis, by P.I.D. O'Brien
[749] The O'Davorens of Cahermacnaughten, Burren, Co. Clare, part II. By George U. MacNamara
[750] Clare places - Doolin, Clare County Library
[751] The OBriens of Glencolumbkille, by P.I.D. O'Brien
[752] Inchiquin Papers, Ainsworth
[753] O'Brien family tree charts Donough O'Brien, 1937
[754] The History and Topography of the County of Clare, Frost 1866
[755] Inchiquin Manuscripts 1702
[756] History of the O'Briens, Donough O'Brien 1949
[757] Louth Papers National Library of Ireland
[758] History of the O'Briens, Donough O'Brien 1949
[759] Historical Memoir of The O'Briens, John O'Donoghue 1860
[760] Historical Memoir of The O'Briens, John O'Donoghue 1860
[761] Historical Memoir of The O'Briens, John O'Donoghue 1860
[762] History of the O'Briens, Donough O'Brien 1949
[763] This arrangement was finalised by Edward IV
[764] History of the O'Briens, Donough O'Brien 1949

[765] History of the O'Briens, Donough O'Brien 1949
[766] History of the O'Briens, Donough O'Brien 1949
[767] British Civil Wars Project Murrough O'Brien, 1st Earl of Inchiquin, 1614-74
[768] Cromwell in Ireland, Scot-Wheeler, James 1999
[769] History of the O'Briens, Donough O'Brien 1949
[770] History of the O'Briens, Donough O'Brien 1949
[771] History of the O'Briens, Donough O'Brien 1949
[772] An anecdote from Sir Conor O'Brien
[773] History of the O'Briens, Donough O'Brien 1949
[774] Inchiquin Papers, Ainsworth
[775] Historical Memoir of The O'Briens, John O'Donoghue 1860
[776] Clare Heritage & Genealogy Centre, Church St., Corofin
[777] History of the O'Briens, Donough O'Brien 1949
[778] Lucius O'Brien (died 1717) Wikipedia
[779] These My Friends and Forebears: The O'Briens of Dromoland, Grania O'Brien, Balinakella Press
[780] Leigh Rayment – Irish House of Commons 1692-1800
[781] History of the O'Briens 1949 P. 217-219
[782] Fitzgerald, James Edward (FTST837JE)." A Cambridge Alumni Database. University of Cambridge.
[783] Australian dictionary of Biography
[784] Historian Dr Tony Moore
[785] Principles of Government, William Smith O'Brien. UK version published in 1855, American version published by Patrick Donahoe, Boston 1856
[786] The convicts who shaped Australian democracy as we know it. ABC Radio National Sun 29 Sep 2019
[787] Australian dictionary of Biography
[788] The Bayeux Tapestry, Boydell Press 2005
[789] Blog "To the Past" web site Alfred the Great
[790] The Plantagents "The Kings who made England" Dan Jones 2013
[791] The Plantagents "The Kings who made England" Dan Jones 2013
[792] 1066 A new history of the Norman Conquest, Peter Rex 2011
[793] The Plantagents "The Kings who made England" Dan Jones 2013
[794] The Plantagents "The Kings who made England" Dan Jones 2013
[795] The Plantagents "The Kings who made England" Dan Jones 2013
[796] Women of the English Nobility and Gentry 1066–1500, Jennifer C. Ward 1995.
[797] From a poster on wall at Grananh Castle B&B Waterford, 2018
[798] The Peerage of Ireland John Lodge, 1789
[799] Web site: megalithicireland.com
[800] Genealogy research by Mark Humphrys, 1983-2018
[801] The Peerage of Ireland John Lodge, 1789
[802] Inchiquin Papers, Ainsworth
[803] Flower Of Finae by Niamh Parsons released on the album Blackbirds & Thrushes
[804] History of the O'Briens 1949 p. 91
[805] The date of 1715 for this event sounds a bit to early to me as Charles O'Brien would only have been aged 16 years at the time. But I can find no other reference to check against.
[806] Riches of Clare: Clare's Wild Geese, Clare Library
[807] History of the O'Briens 1949 p. 91